

Gc
974.401
Es7h
v.1,pt.2
1830658

M. L.

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 00825 1750





4484

HISTORY

OF

ESSEX COUNTY,

MASSACHUSETTS,

WITH

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

OF MANY OF ITS

PIONEERS AND PROMINENT MEN.

COMPILED UNDER THE SUPERVISION OF

D. HAMILTON HURD.

v. 1, pt. 2

VOL. I.

ILLUSTRATED.

PHILADELPHIA:

J. W. LEWIS & CO.

1888.



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

https://archive.org/details/historyofessexco12hurd_0

Lowell Howard, 5 acres tillage and 2 cows.

Elbridge S. Upham, 8 acres tillage, 8 cows and 2 horses.

Isaiah Longfellow, 10 acres tillage and 4 cows.

These last three farmers give attention to strawberry culture, and furnish great quantities for the market.

John Gillon, 13 acres tillage.

Arthur Watson, 10 acres tillage, 20 acres pasture and 9 cows.

J. Henry Howard, 8 acres tillage and 8 cows.

Saugus Centre.—The Town Farm, 40 acres tillage and 18 cows.

William H. Penny, 20 acres tillage, 39 acres pasture, 30 cows and 2 horses.

John M. Berritt, 10 acres tillage, 15 acres pasture and 4 cows.

Lewis J. Austin, 7 acres tillage, 14 cows and 2 horses.

Charles M. Ames, 11 acres tillage and 5 cows.

Heirs of Samuel A. Parker, 12 acres tillage.

Harrison Wilson, 10 acres tillage, 7 cows and 2 horses.

William Fairchild, 9 acres tillage and 2 cows.

Cliftondale.—Walter V. Hawkes, 10 acres tillage and 2 green-houses.

George N. Miller, 24 acres tillage, 10 cows and 5 horses. He bought this farm in 1870.

A. & J. R. Hatch, 20 acres tillage, 10 cows and 5 horses.

George W. Winslow, 19 acres tillage, 7 cows and 2 horses.

These last four farms are largely for market-gardening for Boston and Lynn.

East Saugus.—William A. Trefethen, 9 acres tillage, 16 acres pasture, 2 cows and 2 horses.

John W. Blodgett, 31 acres tillage, 15 acres pasture, 22 cows and 6 horses.

Mr. Blodgett runs his farm for market-gardening almost entirely. He has owned it since 1854.

Charles H. Libbey, 7 acres tillage, 3 cows and 2 horses.

Frederick Stocker, 30 acres tillage, 3 cows and 12 horses.

Henry W. & A. Dudley Johnson, 48 acres tillage, 34 acres pasture, 15 cows and 3 horses.

CHAPTER XXXI.

SAUGUS—(Continued).

MILITARY RECORD.

IN the late War of the Rebellion our town nobly showed its patriotism by an early and prompt response to the country's call for volunteers. One hundred

and sixty-three men enlisted, and of these, eight served in the navy.

The larger number of these were in the Seventeenth and Fortieth Massachusetts Regiments.

The following are the names of the soldiers:

Bimsley P. Guilford.	Noah G. Harriman.
Abel Wilson.	Charles A. Kidder.
Jesse Hitchings.	Charles W. Sweetser.
Willard Edmunds.	William T. Ash.
David H. Cheever.	Bimsley P. Guilford, Jr.
John H. H. Wilson.	James Roots, Jr.
George H. Penney.	George McAllister.
Joseph W. Flye.	Daniel Flye.
William Chambers.	William L. Stocker.
William Noble.	Reuben R. Coates.
Edwin A. Reed.	John H. Copp.
John F. Carlton.	Samuel T. Langley.
Nathan J. Thoms.	Watson J. Thoms.
Charles A. Newhall.	John W. Seward.
Thomas McDowell.	John H. Twisden.
Edward Hitchings.	M. Porter Newhall.
William M. Stocker.	John H. Hone.
George H. McClary.	John Powers.
Warren P. Copp.	Edward Charlton.
Hiram H. Newhall.	George Childs.
Charles F. Pearson.	James Herk.
Joseph Newhall.	Charles H. Williams.
Europe R. Newhall.	John A. Whittemore.
Joseph Wiggin.	Kenedy McElroy.
Henry Baker.	Augustus W. Bruce.
Thomas Twisden.	Benjamin E. Morgan.
Isaac Perkins.	John E. Stocker.
Daniel Kidder.	A. James Parker.
John W. Howlett.	Otis A. Foster.
James Charlton.	Edwin Mansfield.
Oliver F. Childs.	James A. Parker.
Thomas Gibbons.	Stephen Stackpole.
Philip F. Floyd.	Charles Walwick.
William H. Fuller.	Charles A. Hobbs.
William S. Copp.	George H. Newhall.
Marcus M. Sullivan.	Elbridge S. Upham.
George A. Mansfield.	Thomas Twisden, Jr.
Abijah S. Boardman.	James Eaton.
Elisha Bragg.	Henry Kidder.
Charles Osgood.	John Timony.
Lorenzo Mansfield.	William Cheney.
William H. Rich.	Benjamin P. Coates.
E. Herbert Downing.	William H. Amerige.
Francis H. Dizer.	George S. Williams.
Edward A. Jeffers.	Frederick A. Trefethen.
Isaac B. Schofield.	Tristram Goodale.
Robert Harrison.	H. Clay Cross.
John L. Andrews.	James R. Goodwin.
Henry P. Nichols.	James Hughes.
Thomas Florence.	William J. Love.
Theodore Houghton.	Porter Newhall.
Elliott W. Oliver.	Walter E. Rhodes.
Reuben B. Prince.	Alfred B. Roots.
Jacob E. Newhall.	William Fish.
Benj. N. Trefethen.	Frederick Lewis.
Wesley Stocker.	Marcus M. Sullivan.
David Brierley.	Moses Spofford.
William Murray.	Willard W. Burbank.
George W. Fairbanks.	William Blanchard.
William S. Copp.	Charles S. Hicks.
William E. Gabriel.	Moses E. McAlpine.
Charles H. Mansfield.	James L. Pike.
Frederick Dearborn.	George Campbell.
Benjamin Homan.	Harrison E. Stocker.
Willard Edmunds.	William C. Richards.
George V. Carleton.	William W. Brown.
William Halliday.	Luther Harriman.
Stiles F. Sherman.	Charles Maloney.
Samuel A. Guilford.	John A. Whittemore.

I have been thinking about you a great deal lately, and wondering how you are getting on. I hope you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I always find time to think of my friends. I am sure you are doing well, and I am glad to hear from you. I am sure you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I always find time to think of my friends. I am sure you are doing well, and I am glad to hear from you. I am sure you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I always find time to think of my friends. I am sure you are doing well, and I am glad to hear from you.

Yours truly,

John Doe

For the love of the world, I am sure you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I always find time to think of my friends. I am sure you are doing well, and I am glad to hear from you. I am sure you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I always find time to think of my friends. I am sure you are doing well, and I am glad to hear from you.

I am sure you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I always find time to think of my friends. I am sure you are doing well, and I am glad to hear from you. I am sure you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I always find time to think of my friends. I am sure you are doing well, and I am glad to hear from you.

I am sure you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I always find time to think of my friends. I am sure you are doing well, and I am glad to hear from you. I am sure you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I always find time to think of my friends. I am sure you are doing well, and I am glad to hear from you.

James H. Kent.
William E. Oliver.
Samuel S. Wornstead.
George H. Oliver.
Willard L. Fiske.

Henry A. Oliver.
George Kidder.
Frank Peterson.
Albert Eaton.
George H. Brown.

Those whose names do not appear on the above list were credited to some other town or State.

Among these soldiers, serving as they did in a great many different regiments and in almost every arm of the service, strange as it may seem, yet we cannot certainly name any who were killed in battle, although many were seriously wounded, some to die from these wounds, and some from exposure and disease in the service.

Some few were unaccounted for.

Their brave deeds and patriotic service are recorded on a more enduring tablet than any earthly scroll, and our town feels proud of the men who bore her escutcheon through the War of the Southern Rebellion.

The veterans of Saugus, in June, 1869, organized as the *General E. W. Hinks Post 95, Grand Army of the Republic*, with Charles A. Newhall as their first Commander.

The post held their meetings at first in the old Town Hall, afterwards in Flye's Hall, and later in the new Town Hall, until they moved into their own new hall in 1886.

Their new building is situated near the railroad depot, and was purchased of William T. Ash in the early part of 1886. The building was remodeled and an assembly room for the Post provided in the second story of ample dimensions, and elegantly furnished throughout.

The Post is now in a very prosperous condition, having a membership of some sixty, owning their building and having nearly a thousand dollars in their relief fund.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN NEWHALL.¹

Benjamin Franklin Newhall was born April 29, 1802. His father was Jacob, son of Landlord Jacob Newhall. His mother was Abigail, daughter of William and Ruth Makepeace, of Norton, Mass.

She was a woman of noble presence, of exemplary Christian character, pious without ostentation, and devoted to her family, which consisted of three sons and five daughters, for whom she labored day and night and lived to see her prayers answered in their behalf.

Benjamin Franklin was her first-born child, and so very naturally upon him fell early the burdens of the family. Passionately devoted to his mother, he gave

his whole energies to her assistance in the support of the family, the father being of little help the greater part of the time.

Brought up in a tavern in his earliest years, he was exposed to great temptation. In his autobiography he thus speaks of these days and experiences: "What saved me God only knows. But I was saved. I remember I always resisted, and often heard the exclamation, 'What ails the child that he will not drink!' Some spiritual guardian was about me to watch my infantile footsteps and keep me in the path of rectitude." After writing of the many beauties of his birth-place, he speaks of his mother thus: "And better still, the glowing vision of that angel form, who every day supplied my infant wants, and whose voice was sweeter to me than the sweetest music."

He writes again, "How well do I remember, in the late hours of the night, when her husband was away and her dear ones were sleeping, that she would come to my bedside and, kneeling with overflowing heart, pour out her soul in prayer that God would preserve her darling boy from the snares so thick around him. She thought I was asleep, but I was awake and still, and the silent tear moistened my young cheek, and I vowed before God that a mother's prayers should not be in vain. How often she kneeled at my bedside when I was asleep I know not, no doubt often." Again he writes, "My mother, in her extreme anxiety for my welfare, never tired in giving me good advice. She felt that there was great danger of my giving way to the use of the dreadful cup, and so there was."

Again he writes, "When about four years of age my mother had bought me some picture books, and she commenced learning me to read. About the same time the school-house, afterwards called the "Rock," was in process of building. My mother took me into it one pleasant summer's eve, and, pointing out to me the smallest and lowest seat, saying at the same time, 'there, my son, is your seat.' This in a few days I found to be literally true, for on my first entrance into the school I was appointed to the little seat."

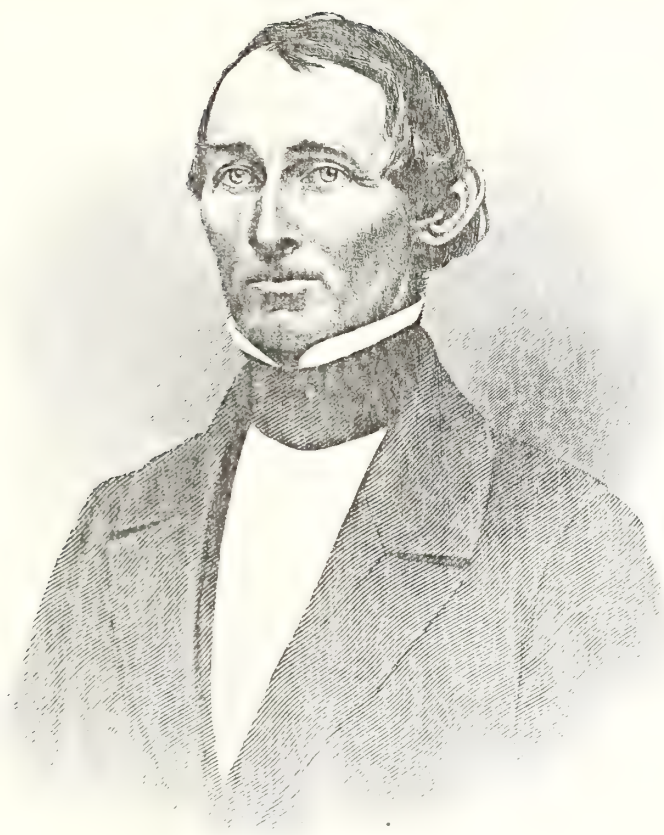
It was here that he attended school during its uncertain sessions, until about fourteen years of age.

It was at this early age, in the autumn before he was fourteen, that he commenced work for Mr. Childs in the chocolate mill, often working day and night.

He writes again in his autobiography, "I could scarcely endure it. I sometimes declared, 'this shall be my last night;' but when the beautiful sun shone in the morning I felt better and was encouraged to go on. I hated shoemaking and was yet determined to earn something for my mother. If I could earn eighty-three cents a day for work night and day it was to me a great sum. But with all the hard work and suffering I got through my first winter in the mill. How I bore the fatigue God only knows. Some unseen hand supported me, and when I was just on the

¹ Written by his son, Wilbur F. Newhall, Esq.





Wm. D. Newhall



point of giving up several times some impulse of mine forbade it. "God helped me."

Such were his early labors that it might almost be said he had no boyhood, so early was the yoke fitted to his youthful shoulders. But he bore it with courage. He writes, "When I had nothing to do I could read, and used always to keep a book in the mill always ready." He soon also engaged in teaming for Mr. Childs. He writes of himself when eighteen years old, "I had so much per day for driving the team and twenty-five cents to buy me a dinner. I always managed to carry my dinner, and thus save and lay up twenty-five cents. This I continued for two years or more. I generally took my book with me and studied while I was driving; so I turned my labor into amusement." Of this same period he writes, "This season I found religious impressions growing more and more in my mind. I felt more and more the need of Divine strength to enable me to resist successfully the evil temptations of the world. I read the Bible, prayed often and frequently went to meeting. I began to hear with new ears, because I felt an interest in the subject preached. Night and day religious matters were in my thoughts, and I was looking forward to a period of church membership as a kind of bulwark of defense."

He identified himself at once with the Methodists and labored zealously with them. When twenty years of age he was baptized by immersion in the pond at Melrose.

He was now making his plans for more schooling, just as soon as he was twenty-one years of age, and for this object he laid some money aside until he had one hundred and seventy dollars. He reached his freedom year, and away he went to New Market Academy, in New Hampshire. We wish we had space to give his account of his start in the stage. He says of his studies: "I pored into the grammar with all my energy, but it was all darkness to me; I knew nothing about it. My boyhood's studies of grammar were but a parrot performance, as I now found by experience. What would I not have given for some one to explain to me the first principles, and know the meaning of the Parts of Speech. But I had no one and so I delved alone. I read and then thought, meditated and then studied. One night, while I was trying to penetrate its mysteries, I instantly saw it all clearly. As the sun suddenly bursts through the obscuring clouds and shines upon the earth, so a knowledge of English grammar burst suddenly on my mind. I saw it all in a glance, simple as my A, B, C. I could pass the most difficult passages instantly." He writes again: "I soon procured some French books, and commenced that language. I learned five thousand words in about a week, and in two weeks could translate the New Testament pretty well."

He remained at the Academy about six months. He then returned home and immediately procured a school in Stoneham and began teaching. As an in-

stance of his remarkable memory, he states that while teaching this school he committed to memory the whole New Testament in thirty-seven days. This was in 1824. He taught this school six months. April 25, 1825, he married Dorothy Jewett, daughter of David and Sarah Jewett, of Standstead, Lower Canada. This explains why, soon after this, he, in company with his brother-in-law, opened a store in Canada. But this business proved disastrous and left him in heavy debt. He then returned to Saugus for good, wiser from experience, if poorer in purse.

We have thus dwelt upon his early life experiences to show the difficulties, the privations, and the hardships he met and subdued. He was stronger than all of these, even making them his servants for discipline and preparations for his remaining life's work. On his return from Canada, already in debt, he borrowed money and commenced the shoe business in earnest. His untiring zeal, his strict business rules, his steadfast integrity, his keen foresight, and his rigid economy, brought him rapid success. He never swerved from these paths, so early chosen. They brought him competence, if not wealth; respect and honor from those who knew him best.

The very poor privileges of the village school in his early youth, ending at thirteen years of age, adding a six months' term at New Market Academy when twenty-one years of age, constitute his scholastic equipment; but these were a small part of his endowments. His mind was always inquiring, extremely receptive, and, what was far more important, it grasped with a tenacity never to be loosed and never to be forgotten, everything that could be of value, benefit, use, or help to him. He might be called a self-educated man, in the best sense of that term. His heart and nature were sympathetic. Having had so many difficulties in his youth, he knew how to sympathize with young men, and many there are of these, to-day, who will testify to his personal assistance in their time of need. What he espoused was with his whole heart. Interested from his youth in the temperance cause, having witnessed the direful effects of intemperance, he never relinquished his warfare against the demon, but, with sledge-hammer blows, on the platform, in the pulpit, as well as in business and social walks of life, he lifted up his voice for total abstinence, and labored in every way to save the youth from this destroying vice, and to make of the inebriate a sober and useful man.

He showed the same characteristics in politics. Always an anti-slavery man, his home and heart were ever open to the fugitive slave, who found a shelter at his fireside, and a God-speed in his journey or mission. He saw in the old Liberty and Free-Soil party the cloud no bigger than a man's hand; he entered its ranks, fought beside its standard, and lived long enough to see the hydra-headed monster slain and buried.

He very early united with the Methodist church in

East Saugus, to which his ardent, sincere nature rendered no half-hearted service.

He had no place for hypocrisy in his heart, and he could brook nothing of the kind in others. He became an exhorter, and then a local preacher, in the Methodist Church. We may well imagine that no grass was allowed to grow under his feet. As well bid the torrent cease its flow as to curb his powers of mind and heart from progress and growth. His warmth in moral reforms often led to some friction with the stereotyped ideas of the Methodist clergy, some of whom could not allow interference with their denominational tenets and labors. The church did not, at that time, stand where it does to-day in relation to these movements. If it had, he probably would never have severed his union with the people of his early choice.

He entered the Universalist Church because he found there a more congenial atmosphere, where he could exercise more freedom of thought and action. He became a very regular preacher for this denomination, and even amid his multiplied business labors he found leisure nearly every Sabbath, for many years, to supply gratuitously some pulpit either near or far away.

He also served his native town of Saugus in nearly every official capacity. As town clerk, selectman, overseer of the poor, school committee and representative to the General Court. In the Legislature he strongly opposed capital punishment. He was chosen one of the commissioners of the county of Essex for two terms, from 1844 to 1850, when the labors of that office were as abundant and onerous as to-day, and, perhaps, far more so.

He organized the Saugus Mutual Fire Insurance Company in 1852, and was its secretary and treasurer until incapacitated by disease, in 1861.

These were but a few of his labors. From his awaking in the morning until his sleeping at night, his fertile brain was always active. He gave himself little rest or recreation. Like a locomotive, steam was always on. His style was simple, chaste and clear. He wrote much for the newspapers, among which contributions were his interesting "Historical Sketches of Saugus," which have furnished me much material for my "History of Saugus" in this work. He also wrote a great deal of poetry, indeed his writings in both prose and verse would, if printed, fill volumes.

The last ten years or more of his life were full of pain and suffering. He was afflicted with chronic rheumatism, which never loosed its grip upon him; his limbs became swollen, his joints distorted and dislocated. When walking was difficult, he rode; then was wheeled about in his invalid chair; then was confined to his house, then to his room, then to his bed for two years, until his naturally iron constitution gave way. During all these years he was busy reading and writing, and his fortitude and cheerful-

ness never failed him. He died October 13, 1863, aged sixty-one years.

His widow survived him twenty-three years, dying October 7, 1886. They had seven children, two of whom died in infancy; Benjamin, their eldest, a graduate of Harvard and a lawyer, died in Milwaukee, Wis., at the aged of twenty-nine years; two sons and two daughters still survive, and are residents of East Saugus.

The following verses were written by him just before his death, September 17, 1863:

For many years my prayer hath been,
That I might end this mortal race
Without severe and torturing pain,
And, calm and easy, die in peace.

And now the Lord hath heard my prayer,
Assuaged my pains, so oft severe,
And given my frail body rest
The little time that I am here.

I'll give Him praise while life and strength
Shall let me speak my gratitude,
And with my last expiring breath
I'll calmly breathe, The Lord is good.

CHAPTER XXXII.

DANVERS.

BY ALDEN P. WHITE.

OLD SETTLERS OF SALEM VILLAGE—INCORPORATION OF DANVERS.

IN that part of the town which, a few years ago, belonged to Beverly, the most conspicuous feature of the landscape is a long, high hill, known as Folly Hill. On its summit once stood the lordly mansion of a colonial grandee. The cellar is still distinctly marked, and portions of the building are still in use as residences a mile or two removed from the original exalted situation. This building experiment, never since repeated, was known as "Browne's Folly;" hence the name of the hill. From its top the view includes very much of the original limits of Old Salem. Far beyond the islands of the harbor the ocean fills a wide space of the eastern horizon, while close in the western foreground lie the farms and villages of Danvers.

Many years ago three boys were together on Folly Hill. One of them is living still; his name must be often mentioned in any history of his native town, and his portrait is presented by the engraver at the close of this sketch. The second was one who reached such an eminence in the science of botany that his name will be found conspicuous in that chapter of this book which treats of the natural history of the county. The third, not a Danvers but a Salem boy, became known wherever English is read,

for he wrote the "Scarlet Letter;" he it was, indeed, who, writing of this hill long after, described its outline as a whale's back rising from the calm sea, and in one of those stories into which his wonderful pen wove much of the history of our Puritan forefathers, he told how John Endicott cut out the red cross from the banner of England.

Not long afterwards there was a military muster at Salem. Every able-bodied man in the town and neighborhood was there. All were well armed with steel caps upon their heads, plates of iron upon their breasts and at their backs, and gorgets of steel around their necks.

Endicott was the captain of the company. While the soldiers were expecting his orders to begin their exercise, they saw him take the banner in one hand, holding his drawn sword in the other.

"And now, fellow soldiers, you see this old banner of England. Some of you, I doubt not, may think it treason for a man to lay violent hands upon it. But whether or no it be treason to man, I have good assurance in my conscience, that it is no treason to God. Wherefore, I have resolved that we will rather be God's soldiers than soldiers of the Pope of Rome, and in that mind I now cut the Papal cross out of this banner."

And so he did. And thus in a province belonging to the crown of England, a captain was found bold enough to deface the king's banner with his sword.

Governor John Endicott was the pioneer of Danvers. As he sailed from Cape Ann by the rocky hills of the north shore and brought the "Abigail" to anchor off the few cabins of the "old planters," near Collin's Cove, doubtless his eyes followed the course of the river far inland, where, in the midst of the primeval forest, he was in a few years to hew out a home and found a town.

Endicott landed at Salem in September, 1628. Nearly four years later the company, who by their charter, claimed absolute disposal of all lands therein conveyed, made him a grant in these words:

"1632, July 3. There is a necke of land lying about 3 myles from Salem cont. about 200 ac. of land graunted to Capt. Jo: Endicott to enjoy to him and his heires forever called in the Indian tongue Wah-quanesshook, in English Birchwood, bounded on the south side with a ryver called in the Indian tongue Sowampemessett, comonly called the Cowe-hawsey ryver, bounded on the North side with a ryver called in the Indian tongue Connamaspuoncant, comonly called the Ducke ryver, bounded on the East with a ryver leading upp to the 2 former ryvers, which is called in the Indian tongue Orkhussunt, otherwise known by the name of Wadeston ryver, bounded on the West with the maine land."

Very soon the Governor entered with characteristic energy upon the work of clearing his grant. He came up in his shallop bringing men well equipped with tools, of which the ax was all important. Within a year seven thousand palisades were cut, and ground was broken for Indian corn. Very early the grant took the name of the "Orchard Farm," and the extent to which the Governor carried the raising of fruit trees may be judged from the fact that some fifteen years after he began his attack on the wilderness he gave five hundred of them to Captain Trask for two hundred and fifty acres of land. For some years the only neighbors were wolves and Indians, and until his men opened roads there was no thoroughfare to town except by water. Just where the Governor is supposed to have made his original landing a high railroad bridge spans the river, and on the slope be-

tween the river and the site of the homestead there may be seen from the car windows the famous Endicott pear tree. Just exactly how it came there, whether from the seed or by transplanting, is not known, but tradition clings with the firmest grip to the assertion that the Governor's own hands in some way had to do with this very living tree, which now for two hundred and fifty years has each spring put on the verdure of fresh youth. The Orchard Farm was a sort of training school to which presently the sons of well to do settlers were glad to come to learn the Governor's methods of agriculture which they later applied to their own farms. The little army of defence within the "palisadoes" received a supply of equipments on the 27th of the fourth month, 1636.

"This day was brought into town and carried up to Mr. Endicott's these corslets following, viz.: eighteen back peices, eighteen belly peices, eighteen peices of tassets, eighteen head peices of three sorts and but seventeen Gorgets. Ittm sixteen Pikes & nineteen swords."

On the 27th of the eleventh month, 1636, John Woodbury, Captain Trask and John Balch were directed to "lay out 200 acres for Mr. Endicott next adjoining the land which was formerly granted him." This was a town grant—the simple but all important act of March 3, 1635, giving jurisdiction to towns over their own lands having then been passed—and was called "The Governor's Plain." It is that which lies at the foot of Hog Hill,—its more deserving and euphonious name, Mount Pleasant,—and includes Felton's Corner, the Collins House property and the adjacent lands.

The river which makes up from the ocean to Danversport there divides into three branches, much as one may spread the first three fingers of the hand. These rivers, beginning with the lowest, are known as Water's, Crane and Porter's. The Orchard Farm comprised the peninsula or neck between Water's and Crane; that between Crane and Porter's, upon which the principal village of Danversport is, was granted contemporaneously with the Orchard Farm, to the Rev. Samuel Skelton, a minister of Salem, in these words:

"There is another necke of land lying about 3 myles from Salem cont. about 200 ac. graunted to Mr. Sam^l Skelton to enjoy to him and his heires for ever, called by the Indians Wahquack, bounded on the South upon a little ryver, called by the Indians Connamaspuoncant, upon the North abutting on another ryver called by the Indians Pono-menneucant, and on the East on the same ryver."

For a long time the land included in this grant was known as Skelton's Neck, but it will be seen that until the middle of the last century it remained utterly unsettled.

The land next adjoining the Orchard Farm and northerly of the Governor's Plain, was thus disposed of on the 11th of the eleventh month, 1635.

"Granted by the freemen of Salem the day and year above written unto Mr. Townsend Hyshep of the same his heirs and assigns forever one farm conteyning three hundred acres butting upon Mr. Endicott's Farme on the East and four hundred poles in length and six score poles in breadth, that is to say six score and four at the west end and one hundred and sixteen at the East end, bounded by the water between the

farme of the Executors of Mr. Skelton, an (?) him at the North east corner of his farme, and hath there allowed from Mr. Endicott's Farme Eight acres for an highway, is bounded again at the southwest corner by the Brook, provided always that in case of sale, the Town of Salem to have the first proffer of it before any other.

John Endicott.
Thomas Gardiner.

Roger Conant.
Jeffrey Massey.
Edm. Batter."

This was the grant in the midst of which was the famous Rebecca Nourse house, which is still standing. The house was Bishop's mansion, built when he first occupied the land. He was one of the judges of the local court and was otherwise honored, but he fell from grace on the question of infant baptism, and after a few years he concluded to sell out, perhaps to seek a place where he could think as he pleased. He sold to Henry Chickering, who held it from 1641 to 1648, and then sold it to Governor Endicott who, with this purchase, owned about a thousand acres, running from the iron foundry to beyond the Collins Street station. The price was one hundred and sixty pounds. The Governor settled the Bishop farm upon his oldest son, John, when he was married, 1653 and gave him the deed in 1662. After the death of the Governor, in 1665, there was a controversy over the settlement of his estate regarding this property, but the deed held, and instead of passing to Zerubbabel, the surviving brother, when John died without issue in 1668, it was adjudged to have been John's in fee, and he, by will, left it to his widow. She mourned from February to August, then married a Boston minister, Rev. James Allen, and died in five years, leaving the farm to him. Five years later Mr. Allen sold out to Francis Nourse for four hundred pounds. This was April 29, 1678; the real estate had more than doubled since the Governor bought it. Very likely the price was governed somewhat by the terms of the sale, which gave the grantee twenty-one years in which to pay the whole purchase money. During this time a series of long and bitter disputes and law-suits arose as to the boundaries of the farm which, though resulting favorably to the Nourses and adversely to the owner of the Orchard Farm, doubtless had its influence in the disaster which befel the family when the aged mother was taken away to die on the gallows, a condemned witch. In a little grove just west of the historic house, where are other family graves, a substantial monument marks her resting-place. It was erected a few years ago as the result of a movement began in 1875, by which her descendants organized the "Nourse Monument Association." The inscription contains these lines written by Whittier:

"O Christian Martyr,
Who for Truth could die,
When all about thee
Owned the hideous lie!
The world redeemed
From Superstition's sway
Is breathing freer
For thy sake to-day."

Just outside the northwestern corner of the Bishop-

Nourse farm, near the angle of Prince Street, at "Muddy Boo," were to be seen, until quite recently, certain depressions which were the remains of ancient wolf-pits.

Having mentioned the two sons of Governor Endicott, let here a word be said of his descendants. John left no children. Zerubbabel, who lived on the orchard farm, was a physician. His second wife was a daughter of Governor Winthrop, and he had five sons, of whom John went to England and there followed his father's profession; Zerubbabel and Benjamin lived in Topsfield; Joseph went to New Jersey, and Samuel remained at home and married Hannah, a daughter of Nathaniel Felton, of Felton's Hill. The widow, Hannah Endicott, married Thorndike Proctor, who in 1764 bought the little old building which was the first meeting-house of Salem, moved it to his land near Boston Street, where it was used first as a tavern and later as part of a tannery until 1865, when it was restored and moved to the rear of Plummer Hall by the Essex Institute, and has since been visited by thousands. Samuel Endicott had four children, but he died when thirty-five years old, leaving his only son, Samuel, a boy of seven, the only representative of the name in the vicinity of the home of his fathers. But this boy lived to re-establish the family, and died an old man and "captain" in 1766, and was buried in that Endicott family burying-ground, which is plainly in sight across the river from the Danversport railroad station. One of his sisters married Benjamin Porter, the other Martin Herrick. Captain Samuel had a dozen children; of his sons John, the oldest, kept the orchard farm; and of his wife, Elizabeth Jacobs, it is related that she was at the South Meeting-house when Colonel Timothy Pickering halted his men on the way to Bunker Hill, and cried out in patriotic zeal: "Why on earth don't you march; don't you hear the guns at Charlestown?" The farm passed next to another John, oldest son of John and Elizabeth, one of whose brothers, Robert, married a daughter of Minister Holt, of South Parish, and established an Endicott family in Beverly. The oldest son of this last John was Samuel, who married Elizabeth, daughter of William Putnam, of Sterling, Mass., in 1794, and was the father of the wives of Francis and George Peabody, of Salem, and of William Putnam Endicott, who was born in 1803, graduated at Harvard in 1822, and is still living in Salem, and the father of William C. Endicott, Secretary of War. The orchard farm is retained in this branch of the family, its present owner being William Endicott, of London, England, and is this summer (1887) undergoing extensive improvements at his hands.

Elias Endicott, son of Captain Samuel, was christened in 1729; married Eunice Andrews; died in 1779, was buried in the Plains burying-ground, and left six children: Anna, married Israel Putnam, and became the mother of Hon. Elias Putnam; Elias Endicott, Jr., who was one of the early shoe manufac-

turers, and lived where his grandson, Elias Endicott Porter now lives; Israel, who was a mason, lived in the brick house at the Port, which descended to his son, William; Mary was the wife of Zerubbabel Porter, whose son Alfred was the father of Elias Endicott Porter; and Margaret ("Aunt Peggy") died unmarried.

The first and most distinguished name in our early annals has become, in the male line, utterly extinct. In the Danvers directory the name of Endicott appears but once,—“Lydia W., widow of William.” The late William Endicott was one of the early anti-slavery men, was one of the last of the Danversport sea-captains, often served as moderator of town-meetings, and was otherwise prominent in local affairs; his daughter, Mrs. H. G. Hyde, resides in Danvers, and two sons in Haverhill.

Ante-dating the Bishops' grant by a month was one of three hundred acres to Robert Cole. This covers the region back of Hog Hill, including Proctor's corner and extending a mile or more towards West Peabody. After a short time Cole sold to Emanuel Downing, a brother-in-law of Governor Winthrop, a lawyer, a man of such high repute and so desirable an acquisition to the colonists that before he arrived a grant of five hundred acres was given him by the town. This he sold to John Porter; it included the Bradstreet farm near the Topsfield line.

Downing's son George, who was one of the first graduates of Harvard, became Sir George Downing, a prominent figure in the history of the Old Country in Cromwell's time. The old Ipswich road, the first highway connecting Lynn and Boston with the northern settlements, was laid out through this land, and in 1648 one of his tenants was allowed to keep an "ordinary" to accommodate travelers. For a time the Downings let the farm, and in 1666 it was occupied by John Proctor, who subsequently bought a part of it. Proctor, who came from Ipswich, was a strong man in every sense, and he was one of the conspicuous victims of the witchcraft delusion. Many of his descendants have been prominent citizens of South Danvers, where the family is still well represented.

The land next east of Downing's, in the midst of which is the beautiful Rogers estate, was granted, three hundred acres, to Thomas Read, who, with others, went back to England to bear a hand in the coming revolution. In 1701 it was sold to Daniel Epps, the famous school-master, concerning whom it was in 1671 "Voated that the selectmen shall take care to provide a house for Mr. Epps to keep skoole in." The honor of his name was preserved through several generations by men distinguished in our local annals.

The long, high hill south of the Governor's plain was from the first the home of the Feltons. The old homestead at the end of the road which runs from the Ipswich road along the top of the hill was built more than two hundred years ago, and the Na-

thaniel Felton who now owns and occupies it comes near to being the seventh Nathaniel in direct line. A Jonathan in the third generation is the only break. Besides the inclosed burying-ground, where the Ipswich road makes its steep climb, in which old stones and new contain the names of Proctor and Felton, there are here and there on the hillside traces of more ancient and unmarked graves.

The tract adjoining the Bishop-Nourse farm on the north, covering the village of Tapleyville and extending from Ash Street to a little beyond the meeting-house, at the Centre, was granted to Elias Stileman. The latter sold in 1648 to Richard Hutchinson, who came over in 1634, with his infant son, Joseph. Hutchinson was also one of the grantees of the large tract which included Whipple's Hill, named for the husband of his granddaughter, and in 1637 he was granted twenty acres on the meadow back of the meeting-house, on condition that he should "set up plowing." He died in 1681 at the full age of four score, "a vigorous and intelligent agriculturist and a man of character." It will be seen presently how the lower portion of his estate descended through his son-in-law in an unbroken line of Putnams—the Judge Putnam farm. The upper portion fell to Joseph Hutchinson, who was, like his father, a prominent and influential man, of sound sense and plain words. He it was who out of his homestead lands gave one acre for the first meeting-house and later contributed several more towards a home for the first preacher. The family name is still well represented in the neighborhood. The most distinguished name in the family history is that of Colonel Israel Hutchinson, of Revolutionary fame, of whom a notice appears elsewhere. He was the son of Elisha, who died before 1730. Elisha was the son of Joseph, who outlived the son some twenty years; Joseph was the son of that Joseph who was brought over from England in his infancy. A brother to Colonel Israel's father was Ebenezer; Ebenezer's son was Jeremy, who married a daughter of Asa Putnam, and lived from 1738 to 1805; one of Jeremy's sons was Joseph, who was born in 1770, married Phebe Upton, of North Reading, and died in 1832, leaving two sons to become heads of families—Deacon Elijah Hutchinson and Benjamin Hutchinson, both now deceased. The home of Deacon Elijah was the house just west of Nathaniel Ingersoll's training-field, formerly "the home of the widow Eunice Upton, inholder." Three fine residences just beyond are those of Deacon Elijah's sons, Warren, Alfred and Edward.

Next west of the Stileman-Hutchinson land was the grant of Francis Weston, which covered the land extending westerly from the church towards the turnpike. Weston was such a man as to be chosen one of the three Representatives of Salem in the first House of Deputies, but like Bishop he was too tolerant for the age, and was invited to leave, in 1638, and his wife was treated to an experience in the stocks.



Six years later it was sold by one John Pease to Richard Ingersoll and his son-in-law, Wm. Haynes. Ingersoll had come over in 1629, and was granted eighty acres at Rial Side. January 12, 1636-37, "Richard Inkersoll is to have 1d. for every person he may carry over the North Ferry, during the town's pleasure." He was for a time lessee of the Bishop-Nourse farm, and shortly after this purchase of the Weston grant he died. He was another of the right sort of men, and his son, Nathaniel, was one of the brightest characters of our early history.

Nathaniel was but eleven years old when his father died. His mother married again, and soon the lad found a home with Governor Endicott, not that he was driven to this step, but probably only as other boys and young men were glad to be educated in the practical agricultural college at the Orchard Farm. "I went to live with Governor Endicott as his servant four years." He was nineteen when he went back to the land which his father had left him, and near by the present parsonage of the First Church, he built a house of more generous proportions than were common. Here, to the end of his three-score and ten, he was mine host of an open house, the resting-place of weary travelers, the meeting-place on all sorts of occasions of the villagers. Its ample public-room was at once town-house, church and military headquarters, and the whole-souled landlord was looked upon as the natural arbiter of neighborhood quarrels. He was a just man, whose guide of life was the golden rule, and the love and respect universally accorded him were but the natural tribute to his worth. There is nothing out of harmony with such a character in the following permit granted in 1673, though at present men of his stamp are not found keeping bar: "Nathaniel Ingersoll is allowed to sell bear and syder by the quart for the tyme whyle the farmers are a building of their meeting-house and on Lord's days afterwards." When his only child, a little girl, died, he and his wife took and brought up Benjamin, one of the sons of his neighbor Joseph Hutchinson, who was "an obedient son until he came of one and twenty years of age." Ingersoll was not rich, but he gave the young man a liberal marriage gift out of his comparatively small farm. This was but one of a series of gifts of land. When the church was organized, as will hereafter appear, Nathaniel Ingersoll and Edward Putnam were colleagues as first deacons. It will be seen that Deacon Putnam's farm was on the Middleton line two or three miles from the church, and in 1714 he had reached a time when a man sees old age approaching. Ingersoll desired his dear friend to pass his declining years in the comfortable proximity to the church which he had himself ever enjoyed. Therefore, "for the good affection" which he bore to him, he freely gave Deacon Putnam "a piece of land bounded northerly upon the land of Joseph Green (the minister) next to his orchard gate, westerly on the highway, and southerly

and easterly on my land," and thither, it is thought, Deacon Putnam came to dwell. When pipes were laid for the water-works, an old well was dug into, thought to have been his. Long before this he had given four acres and a half to Rev. Samuel Parris. By his will he gave the church fifty shillings "for the more adorning the Lord's Table, to be laid out in some silver cup." He gave a life estate in the lands of which he died possessed to his wife, with remainder to his adopted son, except one piece, "a small parcel of land of about two acres, that lyeth between Mrs. Walcotts and George Wyotts by the highway, which I give to the inhabitants of Salem Village, for a training place forever." Forever! What better monument can a man leave to his memory than a reservation of land for the use of the public, forever. The pleasant common at Danvers Centre, bounded on one side by a street which bears the giver's name, is the old training-field of Nathaniel Ingersoll. These words are Mr. Upham's: "Within its enclosure the elements of the military art have been imparted to a greater number of persons distinguished in their day, and who have left an imperishable glory behind them as the defenders of their country, a brave yeomanry in arms, than on any other spot. From the slaughter of Bloody Brook, the storming of the Naragansett Fort and all the early Indian wars; from the Heights of Abraham, Lake George, Lexington, Bunker Hill, Brandywine, Pea Ridge, and a hundred other battle-fields, a lustre is reflected back upon this village parade-ground. It is associated with all the military traditions of the country, down to the late Rebellion."

About a mile northwest of the training-field is the high hill, upon which is situated the Danvers Lunatic Hospital, ten great buildings in one, whose roofs and pinnacles and central tower are seen for miles around, and form a landmark for fishermen far out in the harbor. This hill was in the midst of a grant to Captain William Hathorne, soldier, lawyer, judge, legislator, whose "many employments for towne and countrie" were publicly recognized. A well-preserved old house in which Francis Dodge lived, when he sold the farm to the State, stood just south of the main building. Two hundred years ago it was the home of Joshua Rea. The hill retains the name of Hathorne.

Thus the line of original grants swept inward from the Orchard Farm. Still to the westward three hundred acres near the crossing of the two turnpikes were owned as early as 1650, by Job Swinerton, whose brother was a physician in Salem town. Job Swinerton had formerly lived on the place now owned by Andrew Nichols, Jr.; he sold this to John Martin, and Martin to Dale. From the latter, who was the ancestor of Surgeon General Dale and of those of the name in Danvers, came the name "Dale's Hill." Swinerton died in 1689, nearly ninety years old. One of the old Swinerton homesteads stood where Daniel



P. Pope lives, and some parts of the original estate are still owned and occupied by Swinertons. The tract between the Swinerton grant and the Ipswich River, on both sides of the Andover turnpike, was granted in 1648 to Captain George Corwin, a rich merchant of Salem. William Cattlebury purchased three-quarters of this land. "Buxton's Lane" perpetuates the name of John Buxton, a son-in-law of Cattlebury, and a man whose name appears with Nathaniel Ingersoll's and a few others, on a bond which saved the Rev. George Burroughs from unjust imprisonment. Some five hundred acres south of Corwin's grant, and covering much of West Peabody, came, by numerous conveyances, to be owned by Robert Goodell, some of which is still owned by descendants of the same name.

The present residence of Rev. Willard Spaulding, in West Peabody, stands on the site of the first Pope homestead. The land about it was first granted in 1649, to another man of the cloth, the Rev. Edward Norris, pastor of the First Church of Salem. It was bought by Joseph Pope in 1664, and his homestead, which remained in the family until 1793, when it was sold to Nathaniel Ropes, of Salem, was standing thirty years ago.

Joseph Pope came over in the "Mary and John," in 1634. He and his wife Gertrude were both in sympathy with the Quakers, and were excommunicated. He died about 1667, leaving nine children. Three sons founded families,—Joseph, Benjamin and Samuel. Samuel married Exercise Smith, whose parents were persecuted Quakers in Governor Endicott's time. It is through Joseph that most of the Popes in this vicinity trace their ancestry. Joseph's wife, Abiah Folger, of Nantucket, was an aunt of Benjamin Franklin. They had four sons to grow up. Three of them,—Enos, "clothier;" Eleazer, "cordwainer;" and Nathaniel, "blacksmith," went to Salem. In 1813 the third Enos, who followed the business which the first began, died at the age of ninety-two, the oldest man in Salem. Joseph, oldest of the four sons of the second Joseph, was born in 1687, married Mehitable Putnam, and died in 1755. While he was in occupation of the homestead young Israel Putnam, afterwards major general, came and married his daughter Hannah. Israel Putnam went to Pomfret, Conn., and so did his wife's oldest brother, Joseph. The sons of another brother, Ebenezer, were of Salem, while Eleazer's descendants are found principally in Vermont. Another brother, Nathaniel, kept alive the family name at the village. He lived from about 1724 to 1800, married first, a daughter of Jasper Swinerton; second, a daughter of Peter Clark, the minister. Among his children were Mehitable, wife of Caleb Oakes, and mother of the distinguished botanist, William Oakes; Amos Pope, the father of Zephaniah; and Elijah. Elijah died in 1846, eighty years old; the last of his sons, Jasper, died while yet these notes are unfinished, June, 1887,

having reached an age some five years greater than his father's. Jasper leaves no children living. The Popes now living here are the children and grandchildren of the late Nathaniel and of the late Elijah.

Going back to Skelton's Neck, the territory just north thereof, aptly called the Plain, or, more commonly, the Plains, was originally granted to Samuel Sharp, "the godly Mr. Sharp who was ruling elder of the church of Salem." It will later appear what became of this and other lands reaching toward the Topsfield line. East of the Topsfield road, one hundred and sixty acres, of which Augustus Fowler's farm is a part, was granted to Daniel Rea, who first came to Plymouth and then to Salem. He died in 1662, and his only son, Joshua, founded an influential and widely connected family, though the name has passed out of the voting lists. Daniel Rea, son of Joshua, was living in Mr. Fowler's house two hundred years ago. To the eastward of the Reas, the Birch Plain region, the Rev. Hugh Peters had a grant of two hundred acres, which, after his execution, was sold by Captain John Corwin's widow to "Henry Brown, Jr., of Salisbury, yeoman." Browns are still living on a part of the estate. Far to the east, in what is now North Beverly, the land including Cherry Hill was one of the first grants. It was given to William Alford in 1636, and the hill was long called after his name. He sold to Henry Herrick, a younger son of Sir William Herrick, of Beau Manor Park, and the good blood of the ancestors showed itself in the sterling character of many of the descendants. The land between Cherry Hill and the Burley Farm, originally granted to John Holgrave, was later occupied by two Reas, two Bishops, a Watts and Captain Thomas Raymond. The latter was of a family of military renown; Colonel J. W. Raymond, now one of the County Commissioners, is a descendant. Three Raymonds were in the Narragansett fight, and one, John, was the first to enter the narrow pass to King Phillip's redoubt, which proved fatal to so many who went out from this vicinity, among others to Captain Joseph Gardner, son-in-law of Emanuel Downing, and to Charles Knight, Thomas Flint and Joseph Houlton, Jr., members of his company.

Covering the Burley Farm, east of Frostfish Brook, were some two hundred and fifty acres originally belonging to Charles Gott, Jeffrey Massey and others, a neighborhood for some time called "Gott's Corner." To the southward of the Ipswich road were the farms of the Barneys and Leaches, through which runs the road to Beverly town. Folly Hill was then Leach's Hill, and its length was bisected by the division line between the farms of the two families. Both names have passed away from the locality; in the little burying-ground by the highway in which doubtless are nameless graves, one is marked with the name of Martha, wife of Richard Leach, who died in 1756.



From the head of canoe navigation at Frostfish Brook, by the way, there began a well-defined Indian trail, leading, Mr. Nichols says, as far north as Canada. A glance at the county map shows that the location was well-chosen as a terminus of such a trail.

All of this region from Beverly to Reading was known in very early times as "Salem Farms," and the early settlers and their descendants were commonly called "the Farmers." The settlement which grew up along the brooks, which come together near Peabody Square, was at first called Brooksby, later as the Middle Precinct, and became the South Parish of Danvers. Since 1855 it has been a separate town, and an account of its early settlers and growth belongs to the history of Peabody, and will there be found.

Hints of the character of some of the Farmers have been given. As a whole they were a sturdy, intelligent set of men, with the energy and vigor requisite to convert the wilderness into pleasant homes, jealous of their rights, too prone to lawsuits, fair types of New England yeomanry.

Presently, children who had been born upon the lands, intermarried, established themselves on farms, carved out of the ancestral acres, and took the places of the aged fathers. A feeling grew that they were separated, alike by distance and by manner of life, from the dwellers in the town. It was far to go to church over rough roads and in all weathers, and the church was the centre of all things. They wanted to be a parish by themselves and provide their own minister. In 1670 this desire was expressed in a petition to the town, and some two years later the town's consent was ratified by an act of the General Court. October 8, 1672, the parish known as Salem Village was established; October 8, 1872, the first church of Danvers observed the two hundredth anniversary of that event.

"All farmers," so ran the vote of the town, "that now are or hereafter shall be willing to join together for providing a minister among themselves whose habitations are above Ipswich Highway, from the horse bridge to the wooden bridge at the hither end of Mr. Endicott's Plain, and from thence on a west line shall have liberty to have a minister by themselves and when they shall provide and pay him in a maintainance, that then they shall be discharged from their part of Salem minister's maintainance." The bounds of Salem Village, though a source of grievous dispute, especially between the farmers and "the Topsfield men," substantially included all of the present town except the two necks of Danversport, a part of North Beverly, considerable of West Peabody and much of the town of Middleton.

This Middleton land was an original grant of seven hundred acres to Governor Richard Bellingham, made by the General Court in 1639. It was bought for two hundred and fifty pounds by two poor men, Bray

Wilkins and John Gingle, who paid down a ton of iron and one pound in money, in all twenty-five pounds, and gave a mortgage back for the balance. They paid off the debt, Wilkins and his sons bought up the Gingle interest, and, in 1702, Wilkins died at great age, a patriarchal land-owner, in the midst of the farms and homes of his descendants. Though beyond the six mile limit, these lands were by special act of the General Court, in 1661, made a part of Salem.

There were within the village, twenty years after its establishment, some hundred and fifty houses. Among the farmers not already mentioned were Daniel Andrew, himself sometimes a school-master, and founder of a family in which a number have followed that calling; the Flints, some of whom remain on the lands of their ancestors in West Peabody; Joseph Houlton, the honored head of a fine family, most conspicuous among whom is Samuel Holten, whose name will often appear in these annals; the Kettels, a name now extinct here; the Needhams, whose farms were divided by the village line, are still represented in West Peabody by descendants of the family name; Robert Prince, of whom the late Moses Prince was a descendant in the fifth generation, the latter a man who was eminently distinguished for the extent and accuracy of his knowledge of local history. The Prince farm contained about one hundred and fifty acres and the house which Robert occupied and probably built, is still standing on the estate of J. E. Spring. The widow of Robert married Alexander Osborne, and under that name she was one of the first three arrested for witchcraft, and was taken from this very house to Boston jail, where she died May 10, 1692.

Lying partly within the Village limits and partly in Topsfield, was the land of William Nichols, a large farm which he had bought about 1650, of Henry Bartholemew. "Nichols Brook" which flows through these lands perpetuates his name. He lived to be very old and from his only son, John, came an extensive family. One of the most prominent figures in our local history during the first half of this century was Dr. Andrew Nichols, a son of Andrew of the sixth generation, and were it not for the fact that a notice of his life from the pen of his son Andrew will be found accompanying the engraving at the close of this sketch, it would be fitting at this point to pay a tribute to his worth. Andrew Nichols, civil engineer, son of the doctor, whose home is not far south of the old Nichols farm and whose land includes a part of the Prince land, of which latter family he is a descendant through the marriage of John Nichols and Elizabeth Prince, has written a genealogy of the Nichols family and has collected a rich store of material for local history. Abel Nichols, a brother of the doctor, was the father of the late Abel Nichols, artist, father of Mrs. William E. Putnam and Lewis A. Nichols, and brother of the late Mrs. E. G. Berry.



In the extreme southeastern corner of the town, pleasantly situated on the southern bank of the river below the confluence of its three branches, is a very old and interesting house. It has always remained in the Jacobs family, whose ancestor, George Jacobs, was another of the victims of the witchcraft delusion, and, according to tradition, was hung on an oak tree on his own land and there also buried. It was his great-granddaughter, Elizabeth Jacobs, who married John Endicott and spoke out loud to Colonel Pickering as before related. She lived to be over ninety and died in 1809. Her ancestor had received from Salem a grant of a few acres and six "cow leases," on Rial Side, and it is recorded that the old lady used to tell how, before her marriage, she used to paddle a canoe across the river to milk the cows on this very land, and when the tide was out she would go across the flats on stepping-stones and wade the channel. It must be explained that the channel was much less deep then than now, and, although years ago it was written that "the stones are to be seen to this day," they are out of sight now beneath the mud.

One of the sons-in-law of Francis Nourse was Thomas Preston, the ancestor of a family which has always had representatives prominent in local affairs. Much more space deserves to be here given them than can be afforded. The present Massey estate was long in the Preston family. There, a hundred years ago, lived Levi Preston, who married Mehitable Nichols, and was the father of eleven children. One of these, Levi, built the present meeting-house of the First Church; Mehitable married Ebenezer Berry, inn-keeper; Polly married Nathaniel Felton; Sukey and Eliza, the brothers Asa and Nathan Tapley; Daniel was the father of Major D. J. Preston, deputy sheriff and tax collector, recently deceased; Abel, Hiram, William, John and Samuel—not in the order of their birth—all of these went out from the house on the hill. John went not far. He married Clarissa, the only daughter of Joseph Putnam, the next neighbor, and building an addition to her father's place, they lived there. John Preston died May 28, 1876, in his eighty-sixth year. He was the oldest Free-Mason in town; was many years a selectman; representative to the General Court; for many years chorister at the First Church in the days of 'cello and double-bass; was one of the early shoe manufacturers, and, after he gave up that business, a good farmer. His widow still survives, and her great age is mentioned in connection with the Putnams. His son, Charles P. Preston, resides on the site of the old house in which his father and grandfather, it might be carried farther, lived. According to the Directory of 1887, but three men in Danvers to-day bear this family name, two of whom are C. P. Preston, just mentioned, and his son.

Deacon Samuel Preston, brother of John, was one of the most distinctive figures, especially in the history of the First Church, of the past half-century. In his later

years, as he came regularly to the ancient place of worship, there was coupled with a venerable form and appearance a youthful, elastic step. "There was no good service which he was not prompt, eager and faithful to render. He was of robust mind, of pure tastes, and he had a firm grasp of spiritual and eternal things." He read much and the best books, and it is not strange that in his family there is to be found a highly developed taste for literature. Miss Harriet W. Preston, the well-known authoress and magazine contributor, is his daughter. Something more of him in connection with the shoe business.

Present space permits only this brief and incomplete mention of the first settlers. Until 1752, when the district of Danvers was incorporated, the history of the parish of Salem Village is practically the history of that part of the town which still retains the name of Danvers, and its outline will be found in the chapter of church history. In the mean time some families thus far purposely omitted in the mention of the early settlers will here be somewhat more fully noticed.

THE PUTNAMS.—One of the most beautiful estates in Danvers is that known as Oak Knoll, which owes much of its attractiveness to the taste of its former owner, William A. Lander, Esq., of Salem. It is in the midst of pleasant surroundings, a mile's drive from the Plains, and passers-by peer through the trees to the unostentatious but comfortable mansion which will ever be memorable as the home of one who now for a number of years has been a member of the family of its present owners—the poet Whittier. But this very estate is, in itself, of deeper historical interest. It is the home of the first Putnam, the ancestor of that family which not only is to-day the largest and most distinctive of Danvers, but has its representatives far and wide, and has illuminated our national history with the names of many of its illustrious individuals.

John Putnam, this progenitor, came from Buckinghamshire, England, when well along in years. The land upon which he settled lay just north of Elder Sharpe's grant. This latter, resting on Skelton's Neck, and covering the whole of the present central village of the Plains, ran northwesterly to a point at the little pond at Beaver Dam. Putnam's land, including his own grant of a hundred acres, made in 1641, and previous grants to Ralph Fogg, Thomas Lathrop and Ann Scarlett spread out easterly from this point, so as to cover nearly the whole territory west of the Topsfield road from Lindall Hill to beyond the Putnam-villeschool-house.

John Putnam had three sons, all born in the old country. Thomas, the oldest, was a young man of twenty-six at the time of his father's grant in Salem farms; he seems to have first struck out for himself in Lynn, where his character and good education qualified him to act as magistrate, and where he married Ann Holyoke, sister to the grandfather of President Holyoke of Harvard College. Nathaniel who was



just then arriving at his majority, and John, a lad of fifteen, probably came with their father to the new home at Beaver Dam. The father was one of the most energetic and successful of the pioneers, and became a very large land-owner. A few months before he died he bought, in company with John Hathorne, Richard Hutchinson and Daniel Rea, two very large tracts, the one including Hathorne's Hill and the surrounding territory; the other Davenport's, afterwards Putnam's Hill, and the surrounding territory. It would seem as though the lion's share of these lands fell to the Putnams.

John, the youngest son of the pioneer, married Rebecca Prince, and remained on the father's homestead.

Thomas, who had moved from Lynn to Salem town and married, some four years after his father's death, for his second wife, the rich widow of Nathaniel Veren, receiving as his double inheritance a portion of the original grant to Captain William Hathorne, built at the foot of the easterly slope of the hill which perpetuates the grantees' name, a house which, with subsequent additions, still remains, not only in perfect preservation, but in the hands and occupation of Putnams, who are lineal descendants of the builder, and who cherish, with fond interest, the history and traditions of their family. This house is about a mile due west from Oak Knoll, and, according to the location of modern roads, is at the intersection of the highway to Middleton and the Newburyport turnpike, and is directly opposite a fine avenue, which at this point begins its winding climb of Hathorne's Hill to the new lunatic hospital.

Nathaniel, the other son of the pioneer, married Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Hutchinson, the man who bought the original grant covering the whole region of Tapleyville, from Walnut Grove Cemetery to the site of the first village church. It was on a part of this tract which came to him by this marriage that Nathaniel built his home. Though not itself standing, another house of respectable age stands on or near its site. Mr. Nichols thinks the original house stood near the town gravel-pit, on Hobart Street. Notwithstanding the laying out of streets and house-lots in the most thickly settled portion of the town, including the grounds of the town-house, the Peabody Institute and the cemetery, some of the original farm remains about the house which, long the home of Judge Samuel Putnam, a lineal descendant of Nathaniel, has of late years been owned by other Putnams collateral to the Judge, but running back to the same ancestor. This Putnam estate, also very familiar, is on the main thoroughfare from the Plains to Tapleyville, something over a mile in a straight line, nearly south of Oak Knoll. It is on the banks of the stream which drains the meadows of Beaver Dam, and a short distance below the house the stream is met by another which drains the meadows far to the west and south. This confluence takes place in a

natural basin easily and effectively dammed for water-power, and from very ancient times these Putnams have utilized this power for milling, just where Otis F. Putnam is to-day sawing, grinding and storing ice at the old stand.

From these three homes, then,—of Thomas, near Hathorne's hill; of Nathaniel, near the mill-pond; of John, at Oak Knoll,—came the three great families of Putnams.

a. The family of Thomas.—Thomas had three sons who became heads of families, —Sergeant Thomas, Deacon Edward and Joseph. The two former pushed up a mile toward Middleton, and established themselves close together on what is now Dayton Street, near the railroad station at Howe's crossing. Joseph remained on the home place.

No male descendants of Sergeant Thomas are left here. A short time ago William Putnam, an old man, died in his ninetieth year, in the old farm-house on the lower hill, directly in front of the hospital. He was the son of Deacon Eben Putnam, and grandson with three "greats" of Deacon Edward; and of the two living sons of this old man, one, James Warren, keeps the place, and, rare in these days, has a fine family of eight children, six of whom are boys, to keep the good deacon's name alive at home. The brother of William, Deacon Ebenezer, was the father of Rev. Hiram B. Putnam, now at Derby, N. H., and of Harriet Putnam. One of Deacon Edward's sons, Elisha, moved away to Sutton, Mass., and thus Danvers claims some of the honor which belongs to the name of General Rufus Putnam, son of Elisha, and a native of that town.

No history of this town will be complete without a full account of the part which Danvers took in the settlement of the Northwest Territory. The earliest wagon-train, under command of Captain Haffield White, a Danvers man, started on its long journey from here. Invitations have just been received by descendants of these pioneers to join in the great centennial celebration, to take place at Marietta in 1888.

General Rufus Putnam, Washington's friend, a famous engineer of the Revolution, presided at the convention in Boston, March 1, 1786, at which the Ohio Company was formed, and April 7, 1788, he laid out at Marietta the first permanent settlement in Ohio. Major Ezra Putnam, his cousin, also a grandson of Deacon Edward, was another of the Ohio pioneers. Nearer home, another descendant of Deacon Edward, Oliver Putnam, honored the family-name by establishing at Newburyport the Putnam Free School. Another descendant was the late lamented Professor John N. Putnam, of Dartmouth College.

Both the second and third generations, and, indeed, at least one of the fourth generation of Putnams, played prominent parts, and some of them very unfortunate ones, in the terrible witchcraft tragedy which



spread over this neighborhood. Nearly all of them were deluded. How otherwise, when one of the worst afflicted of the "afflicted children" was the daughter of Sergeant Thomas Putnam, recorder of the parish, and oldest son of the richest man in the village? It struck the proud and powerful family to the centre, and they were not so superior to the unreason of the age as to see that spanking was much more needed than hanging. The sad, dark days of 1692! None who have grasped from the wonderful monograph of Mr. Upham anything of their reality will speak in jest of Salem witches. They were taken, most of them, from Danvers homes, homes still standing in our midst, and, condemned by blind terror in the name of Law, after mockeries of trial their necks were broken on the gibbet. The Putnams had a hand in this business, save one. Against the black background there stands one grand stirring picture. It is of a young man twenty-two years of age standing at his farm-house door, with loaded firelock and saddled horse, ready to resist arrest or flee from overpowering force. It is Joseph Putnam, youngest of the sons of the first Thomas, who, in the face of brothers and uncles, from the first denounced the proceedings through and through. Such a course was almost sure death, and for six months gun and horse had been ready day and night. He had been married but a year to a young bride of less than seventeen, a granddaughter both of old John Porter and Major William Hathorne, and she was a worthy wife of a noble husband. It was this son who remained on his father's place, the one opposite the entrance to the hospital.

They had three sons, this young couple, Joseph and Elizabeth, whose names were William, David and Israel. There is a little chamber in the oldest part of the old house, which, through the kindness of the occupants, is often visited with great interest. Perhaps here all three of these boys were born, but, alas for the heroes of peace, it is the heroes of war whom men most idolize, and as one enters beneath the oaken beams of the low ceiling, and sees in the quiet room the ancient furniture, the fire-place and other relics of long gone years, the mind strives only to grasp the strange reality that in this very spot that favorite hero of the Revolution, to whom tales of bravery and courage seem as commonly attributed as to the demi-gods of old, "Old Put," Major General Israel Putnam, Washington's "uncut diamond," actually kicked and cried just like any other baby. The wolf's den, the rapid ride from the plow to the Lexington alarm, the tender of the first commission at Boston from the hands of Washington, the dashing plunge at Horseneck, the long service of one of the most trusted commanders, these and all other events of his distinguished life, had a sort of potential existence in this same little room.

He was a little more than twenty-one years old when the event happened to which this item found in an old memorandum book refers: "July ye 19

1739 Israel Putnam and Hannah Pope were married together." Immediately the young couple struck out, took a farm at Pomfret, Conn., and returned thither no more. The descendants of the general are numerous in the State of his adoption, in New York, and especially so, through his son, Colonel Israel, an officer with his father in the Revolution, about Marietta, O.; and some also in Kentucky and other Southern States.

William, the oldest brother of the general, had no sons. David, the next son, remained on the home place. It was a mistake to insinuate that Israel monopolized the military spirit of the family. David, so Mr. Upham says, was a celebrated cavalry officer, but, being much older than Israel, flourished in the period anterior to the Revolution. Colonel Timothy Pickering used to mention as one of the recollections of his boyhood, that David Putnam "rode the best horse in the province."

To follow briefly down the old house which may now understandingly be identified by the name it commonly bears, the "Old Put" house, David had these sons,—William, Joseph, Israel and Jesse. Joseph was "Deacon Joseph" of the Village Church, for whom David built that other Putnam house a short distance from his own, known as the "Colonel Jesse house." Of Colonel Jesse and his children, a few words farther on.

William, eldest son of David, moved to Sterling, Mass. A daughter of his became the wife of Captain Samuel Endicott, of Salem, and their son, William P. Endicott, who married Miss Crowningshield, is the father of Hon. William Crowningshield Endicott, President Cleveland's Secretary of War. Another descendant of William Putnam, of Sterling, was the Rev. George Putnam, D.D., long and well known as pastor of the First Church of Roxbury.

Jesse, the youngest son of David, was a graduate of Harvard, and a well known merchant of Boston, whose earlier residence was on Summer Street, near Trinity Church. His daughter Catherine was that lady of fine culture and patriotic spirit who, in her eighty-fifth year, presented a silk banner to the Putnam Guards of Danvers as they went out to war.

Israel, the third son of David, the fourth in line of ownership, remained on the old place, and from him it descended to the only one of his three sons who married,—Daniel. Daniel married the daughter of another Putnam, Stephen, whom we shall meet in the family branch of Nathaniel, and of his twelve children, two, Miss Susan and her brother Ansel W., are the present occupants of the historic house. The youngest daughter Julia, widow of Hon. John D. Philbrick, of whom something is written in connection with our schools, resides nearly opposite. Allen, the oldest, and Benjamin Wadsworth, the youngest son, reside in Boston. Daniel and Ahira manufactured shoes in a shop still standing within the yard of the old house; the widow and a granddaughter of



Daniel, who reside here, are his only living representatives; Ahira's son, Granville B., is a well known teacher in Boston, and the name of his other son, Major Wallace A. Putnam, stands first on the monument erected to the Danvers men, who lost their lives in the late war. Deacon William R. Putnam tilled his ancestral acres some thirty years, removed, to reside with his children at Redwing, Minn., in 1874, and there died in 1886. The male lineage of the old General Putnam house runs back then thus,—Ansel, Daniel, Israel, David, Joseph, Thomas. There are now living but five grandsons of Daniel in the male line, and none of them live in Danvers.

A few words concerning the family of Jesse, "Col. Jesse" before alluded to. He was himself one of the prominent and widely known citizens of his day, one of the foremost advocates of the early temperance reform and one of the strongest opponents of slavery. In his manner he was somewhat brusque, and, like his grandfather, he was fond of a good horse.

He died in 1860, but his widow, Elizabeth, daughter of Dr. Silas Merriam, of Middleton, whom he married in her twentieth year, still living, celebrated November 14, 1884, her *one hundredth birthday*. Rare event; fitly celebrated. The "tribe of Jesse" were six sons and six daughters, a family in all respects to be proud of. Four of the surviving five were present with their mother on the occasion just mentioned. These twelve children were, in order, Catherine, Andrew, Elizabeth, Francis P., Henry F., Calvin, Mary J., Martha A., Sarah W., Charles, Emily A. and John M. The latter lives on his father's place, and in his family is another Jesse. The other survivors are Calvin; Sarah, widow of George W. Fuller; and Emily, widow of Rev. Richard T. Searle. Francis died at his home near by his father's a few years ago, much respected. Henry and Charles died in the West, the latter having been superintendent of schools in St. Louis. (Mrs. Putnam died September 20, 1887, at the age of 102 years, 10 months, 6 days.)

b. The family of Nathaniel.—Nathaniel, "Lieutenant,"—military titles were common in the family—had two sons, Benjamin and John. The latter went beyond the westerly slope of Hathorne's hill and established himself near the Log Bridge over the Ipswich River, on the farm now owned by George H. Peabody. He was known as "Carolina John," and this name occurs on a rough diagram of a division of land drawn in ink on the parchment binding of one of the old volumes of records in the registry, of deeds at Salem. The site of his home is marked by a very old but well preserved house, situated beneath ancient elms, where the high land begins to slope to the river meadows. It was in the immediate neighborhood of the other river farms upon which the brothers Deacon Edward and Sergeant Thomas Putnam, cousins of this John, were settled. John had these sons,—Josiah, John, Amos, Samuel and Daniel. A grandson, Daniel, was a deacon of the village church

and lived close by his grandfather's place on one of the Peabody farms, and died in 1801, aged sixty-three years. Neither of the brothers, except John, leave descendants of the male line in Danvers. A descendant of Josiah, Hon. Harvey Putnam, born at Brattleboro, Vt., in 1793, was a prominent lawyer in Schenectady, N. Y., a member of Congress, and his son, Hon. James O. Putnam, of Buffalo, has long been one of the most distinguished men of western New York. John, brother of Josiah, had three sons,—John Amos, Edmund. An eccentric old man well-known some years ago, published a rambling autobiographical sketch called "The Life and times of Peter Putnam." Peter's grandfather was the brother of Amos and Edmund, just mentioned, and their estate was on the turnpike, south of Hathorne's hill.

Amos Putnam was a physician, and one of the active patriotic spirits of Revolutionary times. His name often occurs in honorable connection on the records of the town. His residence was the brick house near Felton's corner, where afterwards the late Daniel Tapley lived. A son of Dr. Amos, James, also a physician, is to be remembered with his estimable wife who long survived him, as the parents of those two teachers "Hannah and Betsy," names always spoken together because they always taught together, and fondly cherished by many of our older people. Recently a number of the survivors of their old scholars met with Mrs. Harriet P. Fowler to consider the erection of a memorial over their hitherto unmarked graves. Something further of them will be found in the chapter on schools.

Edmund Putnam, brother or rather half-brother of Dr. Amos, was "Deacon Edmund," whose name is revered by Universalists as the pioneer of the departure of that denomination from the old faith. He served as deacon in the village church from 1762 to 1785, and died in 1810, aged eighty-six years. He lived in the old house standing between the Topsfield road and the railroad, a well preserved relic of witchcraft times, now owned by Augustus Fowler. Deacon Edmund's sons were Andrew, Israel and Edmund. Israel was the father of Elias Putnam, "Squire Lias," a name at which the pen halts to find words of fitting tribute and then passes altogether, on the announcement that a distinguished son, Rev. Dr. Alfred P. Putnam, is to contribute a sketch of his father's life, to appear in subsequent pages of this book. In the number and character of descendants the line of Edmund, Israel and Elias is well represented at home and abroad.

Poplar and Locust Streets cross each other a third of a mile above the Square at the Plains. Both are ancient roads; the former, the old "Dyson Road" from Beverly to Andover; the other, the "Topsfield Road." At this corner was the old homestead of Judge Timothy Lindall. Speaking roughly, the roads cross at right angles, the Topsfield road running north, the Andover road running west. Another road,



now called Summer Street, starts from the Andover road about a half mile west from the Lindall corner, and runs north parallel to the Topsfield road, till it meets a fourth road, now called North Street, which, starting from the Topsfield road a mile and a half above the Lindall corner, runs west, the "back road" to Topsfield. About the sides of the parallelogram which, still roughly speaking, is formed by these four roads, are a number of old Putnam homes. Oak Knoll, the family starting-point, is itself on the easterly side of Summer Street, about midway of its length. The first Putnam to push much northward was Benjamin, elder of the two sons of Nathaniel. He was "Deacon Benjamin," who settled on the place now owned and occupied by Miss Goodhue, the very old house standing on or near the ancient site, being on North Street, midway between Summer Street and the Topsfield road. Deacon Benjamin died in 1714, fifty years old. By will he gave his son Daniel "one hundred and fifty pounds for his learning." Daniel went to Harvard, and among his college mates during the last year of his course was Joseph Green, son of the village minister. Daniel graduated in 1717, the first of a long list of subsequent graduates of the same name. He became a minister in North Reading, and died there, leaving descendants.

Nathaniel, oldest son of Deacon Benjamin, moved back south to his grandfather's, Nathaniel's, place by the mill-pond. He, likewise, was a deacon, serving twenty-three years, dying in 1754, and he was the father of still another deacon, Archelaus, who at one time lived where the late Gilbert Tapley died, and of whom the story is elsewhere told how he was the pioneer of Danversport.

Tarrant Putnam, next son of Deacon Benjamin, and the first of a number of other Putnams to bear that peculiar name, was the father of Gideon, still another deacon, who died in 1811, eighty-four years old. Gideon was a store-keeper, who lived and carried on his business at the well-known corner where subsequently Jonas Warren, Daniel Richards, and the sons of the latter, succeeded him. It was Deacon Gideon who, by selling cheese in Revolutionary times at nine shillings per pound, was declared an enemy of his country, though he so far regained popular favor as to be sent soon after to the General Court. He will be remembered as the father of that distinguished citizen whose name has been already mentioned—Judge Samuel Putnam, who died about thirty years ago on the homestead estate of the original Nathaniel. He is remembered as an old gentleman courtly and refined, of the manners of the old school, esteemed and respected by all who knew him.

After a highly honorable and extensive practice at the bar, in which his severe application showed itself in the fruits of exact and comprehensive legal learning, he was appointed in 1814, on the death of Chief

Justice Sewall, to a seat on the bench of the Supreme Court. This he held until January 26, 1842. The late Alfred A. Abbott thus spoke of him at the celebration of the centennial of the town, 1852: "For more than a quarter of a century did he fulfill, ably and faithfully, the duties of his high station, doing his full part to sustain and elevate that reputation of our Supreme bench which has made its decisions standard and indisputable authority throughout the land. Our reports contain a great number of his opinions, elaborate and rich, than which few are cited with more frequency, or held in greater respect. At length, when the weight of increasing years began to oppress him, Judge Putnam voluntarily put off the judicial ermine, with a rare delicacy and commendable good sense resigning his lofty trust while yet his mental vigor was unabated, and retiring from his well-earned and still fresh laurels to the joys and comforts of private life. No one has illustrated the family name with a purer life, higher virtues or juster fame." He was the grantor of the lands of the Walnut Grove Cemetery, Peabody Institute and surrounding estates. He carried on the milling business before alluded to, and numerous documents are on file in the Town-House showing with what courteous firmness he asserted and maintained his rights whenever the mill privilege was in danger of being infringed, as when Sylvan Street was laid out in 1842 over his dam. As early as 1820, so wrote an aged citizen a few years ago, Judge Putnam was the only man in Essex County who laid in ice for market. Then the ice was cut from the pond with an axe, loaded upon sleds without tools, stored in a cellar built for that purpose and was delivered to consumers with the naked hands. A load was driven twice a week to Salem. This cellar held but a hundred tons; the present harvest is more than five thousand tons. The descendants of Judge Putnam reside chiefly in Boston. A son, Samuel R., married a sister of James Russell Lowell, and their son, Lieutenant William Lowell, fell bravely fighting at Ball's Bluff in 1861. His mother was the writer of a remarkable series of sketches on Hungary at the time of the struggle of Kossuth and his compatriots for liberty. Dr. Charles G. Putnam, second son of the judge, was an eminent practitioner in Boston, president of the Massachusetts Medical Society, and through his generosity the town possesses a substantial memorial of the family in the reservation known as Pickering Park, at the meeting of several streets laid out through the old farm. This was presented to the town by Dr. Putnam in 1875.

Deacon Tarrant Putnam, uncle to Judge Samuel, was the father of Dr. Israel, of Bath, Me., and Tarrant, a New York merchant of great wealth. A son of Dr. Israel is Hon. William L. Putnam, ex-mayor of Portland and a leading lawyer there, at present prominent as representing the United States in the fishery controversy with the Dominion.



Just opposite the junction of Summer and North Streets, situated on a high hill at the northwest corner of the parallelogram and looking directly south-erly to Oak Knoll is a pleasant old farm-house known as the Wallis farm. This was the home of Benjamin, one of the seven sons of Deacon Benjamin and the ancestor of Benjamin C. Putnam, now of Danvers, the sixth Benjamin in line. The fourth son of Deacon Benjamin, and the last to be here mentioned, was Stephen. He pushed around to the easterly side of a long high hill which monopolizes much of the north-erly portion of the land included by the roads spoken of and which fittingly bears the name of Putnam's Hill, and established himself on the site of the pres-ent residence of Henry A. White. The descendants of Stephen have been more conspicuous and are at present more numerous represented than any others of this branch of the family. The old house is still remembered by some, standing under a great willow, beneath which was a large horse-block. Here, as well as on some other estates, slaves were kept; one, "old Rose," was bought in Jamaica by the pound.

The sons who grew up on this hill-side farm in-cluded Timothy, a Tory, who went to Nova Scotia; Moses, a Harvard graduate of 1759, who went to Wil-son, N. H.; Phinehas, Aaron and Stephen, Jr. Phinehas went westward and established his home a half a mile north of the "Old Put" house; of his five sons, Joseph remained at home, and Charles P. Preston, a son of his only child Clarissa, widow of John Preston, now in her ninety-fifth year, is the present owner and occupant of the premises. Mat-thew, another son of Phinehas, went south to the Rebecca Nourse homestead of witchcraft history, which place has come down through another Matthew and Orrin to the heirs of the latter. Timothy, an-other son of Phinehas, came to the Plains and lived long on the site of the present residence of his grand-son, Otis F. Putnam; he was the father of Elbridge, Willard, Adrian and Gustavus, of whom the latter only survives, and through these sons, except Willard, numerous descendants of "Uncle Timmy" are living in the town.

Pushing south from his father's home, Stephen's son Aaron went to the southern slope of Putnam's hill and probably built the pleasant old house which one can see through the leafy lane lead-ing in from the Topsfield road near the residence of Israel H. Putnam. Aaron had two sons to estab-lish families, Simeon and Rufus. Simeon's sons were Simeon, Aaron, Augustus, Edward B. and Israel H., the latter retaining the ownership of the old place; the well known face and figure of the former, "Uncle Sim," for many years tax-collector, will be long re-membered; he died April 14, 1889, in his seventy-fifth year. Rufus, soon after his marriage, struck out into a new quarter for the Putnams, and bought one of the old Leach homesteads, under the easterly slope of Folly Hill; William, the survivor of his two sons, is

still living near the site of the old house in his eighty-fourth year; the other son, Rufus Putnam, after a long and honorable service as teacher in the higher schools of Salem, built about thirty years ago on his portion of his father's farm, the house in which he died in November, 1875. He brought back to his native town the ripe wisdom of mature years and the benefit of his counsel was often sought, especially in the settlement of estates. He was long president of the Savings Bank, and long on the school committee; he was quiet in his life, of unspotted character, and greatly respected.

To go back a step now to the farm of Stephen: Stephen, Jr., the youngest brother of Phinehas, Aaron and the others, just mentioned, remained at home. Stephen, Jr., was a carpenter who built or helped to build the village meeting-house of 1786, and he was the father of these children,—Stephen, Moses, Jacob, Susanna, Ruth, Samuel, Eben, Hannah and Sally. The first and the last two died unmarried. Moses and Samuel established themselves close by their grandfather's home, and each built up a large and successful shoe business in the neighborhood, which as an involuntary tribute to the energy and worth of these brothers has for some forty years borne the name of Putnamville. The old name of this locality to the Topsfield line was Blind-hole, after a swamp. Jacob learned the tanner's trade at Elias Endicott's, bought the old Frye's Tavern, between Peabody and Salem, and built up a successful business there. George F. Putnam, of Salem and Boston, is his son. Eben, the last survivor of the children, came early down to Danvers Plains, in the days when there was no village to speak of, where now is the business centre of the town. Of the daughters, Susanna married Daniel Putnam, lived in the "Old Put" house, and was the mother of the present occupants. Ruth was the wife of Andrew Batchelder, and lived in the old Lindall house. A number of old clocks bear his im-print as "clock-maker;" by a second wife his de-scendants are likewise numerous and respectable.

The three sons who remained at home all lived to a good old age, to be popularly known as "uncles"—Uncle Moses, Uncle Sam and Uncle Eben—and were fathers of very large families. Uncle Moses was ac-cording to the tax-list of 1847 the richest man in town. Those next approaching him were Daniel P., Jonathan and Samuel King, Gilbert Tapley, Benja-min Porter, Samuel Putnam and Elias Putnam. He died September 10, 1860, in his eighty-fifth year. Four of his children are living,—Harriet, the wife of Deacon S. P. Fowler; Susan, widow of Daniel F. Put-nam; Moses; and Emeline, wife of Charles A. Put-nam, of Boston. Of Samuel's children, these,—Mary, widow of Elbridge Trask; Thomas, Albert, Charles A. and Henry. Of Eben's children, these,—Edwin F.; Elizabeth, wife of William Cheever, of Staten Island; Margaret, widow of Joseph W. Ropes; and Mrs. Hannah Bomer, in the west.



C. The family of John. It was "Lieutenant," afterwards "Captain" John, youngest of the three sons of the pioneer, who remained on the original Putnam homestead at Oak Knoll. He was impetuous, rough, ever ready to stand by his rights if need be with force and arms, but when the farmers realized that education was lax among them, it was this same man whom they selected "to take care that the law relating to the catechising of children and youth be duly attended," and to see "that all families do carefully and constantly attend the due education of their children and youth according to law." In his family the minister, George Burroughs, and his wife lived nine months in the year 1680, and on these beautiful premises where the poet is passing his declining years, the minister gave evidence of that great strength which twelve years later was credited to the devil and cost him his life.

John Putnam had four sons,—Jonathan, James, Eleazer and John. Stretching eastward from Oak Knoll a broad fertile plain lies between Lindall Hill and Putnam's Hill. Skirting the northern limits of this plain was an ancient road, traces of which are yet visible, which coming from Wenham passed by Oak Knoll and so on through a part of the pleasant avenue which leads by the old Prince house, a relic of witchcraft times, which is now the farm-house of J. E. Spring's place, around Beaver Dam to the village church, a road over which, without doubt, many sad and anxious hearts passed to trial and condemnation in the terrible days of 1692. Just opposite the residence of the late Nathaniel Boardman, and included within his estate, is an old well-preserved house, the oldest in Putnamville. It marks the point at which a traveler coming across the meadow from Oak Knoll would strike the Topsfield road, and thither Jonathan Putnam pushed out and built, it is thought at least a part of this very house. Jonathan's son Jonathan is the ancestor of Nathan T. Putnam and the descendants of his son David in town are the Boardman family.

James, second son of John, seems to have taken the homestead, Oak Knoll. To follow down this interesting estate, it probably passed next to James' son Jethro, at any rate Jethro's son Enoch lived there. Colonel Enoch Putnam was one of the distinguished men of his time. He was forty-three years old when the Revolution broke out, and as a lieutenant in Colonel Hutchinson's Minute-men went to Lexington; by good service in the war he won his higher title of colonel. It was the two daughters of Colonel Enoch whom two sons of Phineas Putnam, Joseph and Timothy, married, and as Mrs. Preston, the aged lady before referred to is the daughter of Joseph, she is likewise the granddaughter of Colonel Enoch, and to a young lady, her own granddaughter, has passed a plain gold ring, worn quite smooth, but with this inscription legible,—*"Remember the giver.—E. P."* The giver was the colonel and the wearer

was the great-great-grandmother of the present owner. The only son of Colonel Enoch, Jethro, married a daughter of the distinguished Dr. Holten, and of his family the representatives of his son Philemon still live here. As Jethro went to live on the Holten place it is probable that about that time the old homestead went out of the Putnam family. Some fifty years it was owned by Nathaniel Smith and wife, and was sold with sixty-five acres of land to William A. Lander, April 9, 1841. By subsequent purchases Mr. Lander became owner of nearly as much more adjoining land. The old house was allowed to stand two or three years after the present residence was built. It stood on the level field where now is the pear orchard and not far from the old well and the large elm which was dug and planted by slave labor. Mr. Lander lived on the place which his own taste has made so beautiful until 1875, when he removed to Salem, and the place then passed to its present owners, the family of the late Colonel Edmund Johnson, of Boston, who died in 1877. Mr. Whittier is a relative of the family, and has spent most of his time at Oak Knoll, a name which he himself gave the estate.

But another and later Putnam homestead, just this side of Oak Knoll, remained in the family much longer than the original homestead. It was probably built by James Putnam, an uncle of Colonel Enoch, and passed down through Archelaus to his son, Doctor Archelaus, then to his son, James A., whose heirs sold it to Mr. Lander.

John A. Putnam, of Danvers, is one of the children of James A. Hon. James Putnam, of whom Chief Justice Parsons said, "he was the best lawyer in North America," an uncle of Dr. Archelaus, was undoubtedly born in this old house. He practised in Worcester, and among his students was John Adams, the second President; he succeeded Edmund Trowbridge as Attorney-General of the province, was raised to the bench and held other high positions. But he threw the weight of his powerful influence and character in favor of the Royalists and was proscribed as a Tory.

Two (Jonathan and James) of the sons of Lieutenant John have been thus mentioned. The next (Eleazer) went over to the site afterwards occupied by Phineas Putnam, of the branch of Nathaniel, and now owned by Charles P. Preston, Eleazer being of the third generation and Phinehas of the fifth. One of the sons of Eleazer, Henry went to Medford, and it will be read elsewhere how he followed his sons to Lexington and was killed. Samuel, another son, established his home where the late Sylvanus B. Swan died, which was long the home of Samuel's son, Eleazer, "Squire Ely," pronouncing it with the "E" long and the "ly" short, widely known and trusted as magistrate, surveyor and conveyancer. Of the 'Squire's three sons, Rev. Israel Warburton Putnam, D.D., born in 1786, was a very distinguished clergy-



man, who was settled twenty years at Portsmouth, N. H., and thirty years at Middleboro', Mass.; Archelaus, a physician, practised in Windham, N. H.; and Samuel was for many years a distinguished teacher of Brooklyn, N. Y.

Reference has been made to the fact that Henry, son of Eleazer, son of Lieutenant John, was killed at Lexington. One of his sons, also Henry, was wounded in the same engagement. Allen Putnam, a young son of this Henry, is said to have been the first to leap ashore of the colonists who went out to found Ohio. The Danvers home of Allen's grandfather seems to have been the old Amos Wilde house, on Locust Street, opposite Chestnut Street.

It was John, another son of Lieutenant John Putnam, who, in connection with his father, is supposed to have built the "old Clark house," still standing, not far north of Oak Knoll. Among his descendants the name of Caleb often occurs; none are known in Danvers.

At a gathering of the descendants of Deacon Benjamin Putnam, held a few years ago, one of our oldest citizens, as orator, recalled how, in his childhood he sat in the old brick meeting house when the familiar faces of the Putnams were in every part of the church, their titles, positions and scriptural names all objects of veneration. There were, he said,—

"Benjamin and Joseph, Timothy and Eleazer,
Philemon and Hiram, James and Ebenezer,
Amos and Stephen, Seth and Simeon,
Israel and David, Peter and Gideon,
Phinehas and Matthew, Edward and Nathaniel,
Moses and Samuel, Jesse and Daniel."

No genealogy of the family has been published, though Dr. A. P. Putnam has collected a rich store of material, of which, doubtless, he will some day give the public the benefit. For what is here given the writer is indebted to certain members of the family and others in Danvers, and to Dr. Putnam for a number of interesting notes which have been mainly incorporated in the manuscript.

THE PORTERS.—Among the records of old deeds at Salem is an agreement made the 10th day of the Third Month, 1643, between Samuel Sharpe, of Salem, and John Porter, of Hingham:

"The sd Samuel doth hereby sell unto ye said Jno. his farme lying North of Mr. Shelton's farme Deceased with ye meadow ground thereto annexed & all appurtenances thereto belonging for ye summe of one hundred & ten pounds to be paid in money Cattle & corne at such rates as 2 or more indifferent men shall apprise them to be paid at 3 several payments that is to say fifty pounds the 29th of this present month being 3rd month 1643 and thirty pounds of ye 3d mo 1644 & other thirty pounds on the first day of ye 3d mo in 1645. In witness whereof the parties abovesd have hereunto set their hands the day and year aboves written

"SAMUEL SHARPE
"JOHN PORTER"

The deed, acknowledged before Governor Endicott, conveyed all the land now covered by the central village of Danvers, "the Plains." The purchaser, John Porter, came from England and settled at Hingham, where he was in 1635. He was sent from

Hingham as a deputy to the General Court in 1644, and that same year moved his family and his goods, probably by water, to make a new home at Salem Farms. According to the family tradition, he lived in the old house which was standing in the field near the present location of the Unitarian Church within the memory of living persons. He was a tanner by trade, and some remains of his tan-yard were discovered many years ago near the old house. An ancient well is still to be seen close by. John Porter was a man of energy and influence; he was well known throughout the colony, held many official positions,—selectman, deputy to General Court, etc.,—and he became probably the largest individual land-owner in what is now the town of Danvers. He and John Putnam stand together as prominent figures in our earliest history. Both were the ancestors of a very numerous and honorable line of descendants. If the Porters at first owned the most acres, certainly the Putnams came next, and the two families together held fully two-thirds of the present town and extended beyond its limits. Their farms were adjacent, inter-marriages, of course, occurred, and many now living here and elsewhere trace back their ancestry, often in more ways than one, through Porter-Putnam unions to the two Johns.

John Porter's oldest son, John, was a distinguished exception to the "honorable line" above referred to; he was a reprobate. He abused his parents till they appealed to the law. He was punished condignly, and were it not for his mother's forbearance would probably have been hung. Later his case became very conspicuous, because upon his appeal for redress made to the four commissioners of Charles II., sent over in 1664 to curb the liberties of the colonists, occurred a memorable struggle, in which the General Court had every advantage of position, and used it, to the final rout of the royal emissaries. The elder John refers in his will to his "sonne John Porter, who, by his Rebellious & wicked practices, hath been a great grief to his parents, & greatly wasted my estate." The man left no descendants to be ashamed of such an ancestor. Three other sons, like the three sons of John Putnam, became the heads of great families,—Samuel, Joseph and Israel.

Samuel, "mariner," settled in Wenham, on the easterly shore of the lake, and a part of his original farm is still occupied by his descendants. His only son, John, did much to wipe out the dishonor with which his uncle had stained his grandfather's name. This John was of high respectability, representative to the General Court and moderator of town meetings during the first quarter of the last century, and he married into another eminent family, the Herricks, of Alford's—now Cherry Hill. From the single thread of an only son the line now branched out in the families of five sons, they being of a family of eleven children, whose ages at death aggregated nine hundred and fifty-five years. Of these five sons,



Samuel, the oldest, lived on the lake-side homestead, and he, too, married well, his wife being a granddaughter of Governor Simon Bradstreet. Samuel's grandson Isaac was the father of Colonel Paul Porter, commander of the Ipswich regiment of militia in the war of 1812, and a very prominent citizen of Wenham, through whose children to the third and fourth generation the name is preserved in that town. One of the younger of the five sons just mentioned was Jonathan, an inn-holder of Wenham, who was also sent to the General Court. His oldest son was Benjamin, and with him the name returns to Danvers, and adds to our list of military heroes one of the most distinguished. On the pleasant southern slope of the first hill which one meets in driving from Danvers Plains to Topsfield is a well-preserved gable-roofed house, once one of the Rea homes. In a portion of this old house Zerubbabel Rea lived, a hundred and twenty-five years ago, more or less. Through his marriage with Sarah, widow of Bartholomew Brown, and daughter of Zerubbabel Rea, the place thenceforth became the home of Benjamin Porter, who had four sons. Of these, Moses was the oldest,—General Moses Porter, of whom a sketch appears in what is written concerning the Revolution. He was never married. The homestead passed to the third son, Zerubbabel. He, too, was a tanner, and certain stone door-steps in the vicinity are relics of his bark-mill, which stood in the rear of Augustus Fowler's residence, itself a well-preserved relic of two centuries ago. Zerubbabel Porter was also the very first shoe manufacturer of Danvers, the pioneer of that industry for which the town soon became noted. Until within a few years ago the little square shop was sitting in the angle between the highway and the drive to the Rea-Porter house, hugging close to the hill, which was the cradle of our shoe business. Of the men who were there employed, and of the growth of the business from the beginning, a few words will be found elsewhere. Zerubbabel Porter was one of the early Universalists, "was of rare intelligence, a ready speaker at town-meetings, wrote much and well for the newspapers, especially upon political subjects." The writer happened to come across this letter in the files of old papers at the Town-House:

"GENTLEMEN ASSESSORS OF DANVERS:

"I lately received my tax bill for 1839, find addition to my former taxes for many years past about fifty per cent. I think, gentlemen, you must have wrong conceptions of my property and circumstances. I am bordering on eighty years of age and feeble health, . . . as to property, not five dollars has been added to my estate the year past. . . . Perhaps you think I have stock in the Village bank, by the advice of friends I gave my note on Interest for five shillings and have paid the interest ever since, you of course will judge the value of such property. . . . It has always been my fortune to labor hard, at the age of twenty-one it was my fortune to lose one of my hands, of course it made work extremely hard, now I am done, think of these things and do what is right—if you can consistently with your feelings I think will abate some of my tax—I am gentlemen myself some acquainted with assessing taxes. I very well know it is a difficult office to perform, but

certainly we ought feel for the sick and feeble, for they are not in a capacity to gain property.

"I am Gentlemen, your friend and Servant,

"Z. PORTER."

Zerubbabel Porter died November 11, 1845, in his eighty-seventh year. He left two sons, Warren and Alfred. The former was lieutenant in the War of 1812, and afterwards was commissioned lieutenant-colonel. Three males only of the next generation are living in town, Elias Endicott Porter, son of Alfred; and Dr. Warren Porter and John W. Porter, attorney, sons of Colonel Warren, and upon one little boy, the son of the latter, at present depends the preservation in Danvers of this branch of the family name.

Of the male descendants of pioneer John Porter's next son, Joseph, there are none at all left here. They early scattered. One—Samuel, son of Eleazer, son of Samuel, son of Joseph—graduated at Harvard in 1763, became an eminent lawyer in Salem, was proscribed as a Tory, went to London and died there, after revisiting this country in 1798,—“a gentleman of culture and refinement, who contributed greatly to the enjoyment of the band of refugees at the weekly meetings of the New England Club in London during the war.”

One of the purchases which the first John Porter made, was that of the Emanuel Downing grant of five hundred acres near the Topsfield line. This farm he gave to Joseph upon his marriage with Anna, daughter of Major William Hathorne, and for many years it remained in the family, probably longer than any other in Danvers. It went down to the fourth consecutive Joseph, who died in 1805, and then passed to Captain Dudley Bradstreet, who married this last Joseph's daughter Polly, from whom it descended to his son, Major John Bradstreet. This is why this old Porter farm is commonly called the “old Bradstreet farm.”

To Israel, who established the third and last branch of the Porter family, his father by will bequeathed “my new mansion-house, with all ye housings there-upon, orchards and lands adjoining, so much as was by me purchased of Mr. Sharpe, also I do give him sixty acres of Skelton's necke, i. e. that pt wh I purchased of Mr. Skelton's daughters,” also “my interest in the Saw-mill near Skelton's neck.” By purchase from his brother Benjamin, who was unmarried, and otherwise, Israel retained all the southern portion and, as now settled, by far the richest, of his father's great landed property. One of these deeds from Benjamin to Israel, dated January 23, 1700, conveys “a certain parcel of land given unto me by will of my dearest father, and by him purchased part of it of Mr. Gott, part of Jacob Barney, Jeffry Massey, William Watson, John Pickard and Pasco Foot, all which parcels are commonly called Gott's Corner.” This “Gott's Corner” included a part of the beautiful estate which is known as the Burley Farm, now owned by George A. Peabody, Esq., and also the Proctor farm, and



other lands eastward. It was on or near the site of Mr. Peabody's residence that Israel Porter himself was living in witchcraft times. Israel died in 1706, leaving by will to his oldest sons, John and Israel, all of Sharpe's farm above the Ipswich Road. A deed of partition was made between John and Israel in 1809. John was a "mariner," and probably died in Boston. By virtue of a power in his will his widow Elizabeth, in consideration of twelve hundred and ten pounds, "good bills of credit on the Province," sold to Timothy Lyndall, of Boston, gentleman, four tracts embracing about two hundred and fifteen acres, July, 1715. The old Lindall house, which stood at the corner of Locust and Poplar Streets, has been referred to in what has been said of the Putnams.

Israel Porter's second son, Israel, one of the clerks of the Village parish, was the father of Ginger, a name now somehow gone out of fashion, who married Elisha Hutchinson and became the mother of another Danvers military hero, spoken of later, Colonel Israel Hutchinson.

William, the third son to leave descendants, seems to have lived east of Frost Fish Brook, then Beverly, now East Danvers; but, April 19, 1750, he sold his farm of two hundred and forty-six acres to "King" Robert Hooper, and thus another great slice of the Porter lands passed out of the family.

Benjamin, the fourth and last son of Israel to leave descendants, was the father of John, an inn-holder, and Benjamin, potter. One of the latter's sons was Israel, who lived during the last half of the last century, and was the father of Abijah and Benjamin. Abijah lived and died in the old house, on High Street, nearly opposite Aaron Warren's. This his son Isaac inherited, and, in a little cottage close by, the widow of Isaac, Eliza Jocelyn Porter, is living, in her ninetieth year. Abijah's brother, Benjamin, was well known as "Cap'n Ben," who made a fortune in the fishing business at Marblehead, came back to Danvers about 1835, and bought the Nathan Read mansion, near the Iron-Works. His son, Benjamin F. Porter, with his children, now live on the same estate; and it depends solely upon the young grandsons of Capt. Ben and the lawyer's little boy, before alluded to, whether the family-name shall be longer preserved where once it was so numerous and powerfully represented. A few other Porters in town are not of this stock.

The Mudges.—Though this family cannot be reckoned among the early settlers, they have been prominent in town for more than a century. Their ancestor was Thomas Mudge, who was born in England, about 1724, and came to Malden, where he was in 1657. His oldest son was killed at Bloody Brook in 1675, and two others were in Captain Moseley's company. His son John was one of the grantees to whom land was given for services in King Philip's War. John's son was Deacon John, and the deacon was the father of another John, who was a Malden farmer

and died in 1762. This last John had a number of sons, the eldest of whom was killed in his nineteenth year in the French War, under General Amherst; the youngest died from the effects of service in the Revolution; Simon, the fifth of a family of nine, is of especial interest here.

Simon Mudge was born in Malden, April 8, 1748. He was a carpenter, and he came to Danvers to live two years before the Revolution. The farm which he bought is the one now owned by Amos Pratt, on Centre Street. Subsequently, his widow went to live with her brother, William Whittredge, on the farm at the corner of Dayton and Newbury Streets, where her son Amos continued to live and bring up his family. Simon Mudge also served in the Revolution, and, in July, 1776, marched away with a Danvers company for Ticonderoga. A diary which he kept of his march is preserved in the family and extracts have been printed. Very likely its custodian, who is one of the most zealous of temperance men, fails of being touched by this pitiful complaint:

"August the 6, 1776. Last night lay in tents the town being so full that we could neither get vituals nor lodging till this morning there and Rum sells for nine Shillings and fore Pence a gallon and the most miserable stuff I ever Drank. Drawd for 62 men but no sauce recd. Orders to march to Ticonderoga to-morrow."

He was at Lexington in Captain Flint's company. His wife was Elizabeth Whittredge, of Danvers, who died in 1836, ninety years old; he died in 1799, in his fifty-second year, leaving six children. Of these, two were sons,—Simon and Amos, and but one daughter married,—Nancy, wife of Elijah Hutchinson, of Middleton. Simon was like his father, a farmer and carpenter, and lived and died, 1775–1853, on his father's homestead. His wife was a daughter of Silas Merriam, of Middleton, and the family of Amos Pratt are their only descendants in town; a son, William Whittredge, married a daughter of Jonathan Perry, and moved to Bedford, Mass., in 1856.

Simon's son Amos, born in 1782, was also a carpenter and farmer, and died April 7, 1853. His wife was Sarah Wilson, and they had six children, four sons and two daughters. Josiah, the oldest son, to whom the double occupation descended, is represented by the families of his son Albert H. Mudge and by those of George H. Peabody and Walter T. Martin. Otis, the next son of Amos, received a good academy education, for several years was a successful school teacher, and then began the manufacture of shoes, a business in which he was successfully engaged until the close of his life. He died in 1862 in his forty-ninth year, on the old homestead, leaving no children. He was in the Legislature of 1851, and helped to elect Sumner; was on the school committee and a selectman.

Edwin and Augustus Mudge sons of Amos, are among the most respected and influential citizens of the town. Both have represented their fellow-citizens at the State House, the former in the House, the latter in the Senate. Edwin Mudge's contribution of



his legislative salary towards the erection of the Soldier's Monument is mentioned in the chapter on the Civil War. Augustus is president of the savings-bank. In 1849 the partnership of E. and A. Mudge, shoe manufacturers, was formed, which, with the addition of Edward Hutchinson, in 1858, has remained since unchanged. Of this business something further appears in the sketch of the shoe industry of the town.

The two daughters of Amos Mudge,—Nancy and Caroline, married, respectively, Zephaniah Pope and James Marsh.

INCORPORATION.—The municipal individuality of Danvers begins January 25, 1752. For a considerable time previously there had been a growing desire for separation from Salem both at the Village and the Middle Parish. During the preceding summer a special committee, consisting on the part of the Village, of Samuel Flint, Cornelius Tarball and James Prince, and on the part of the parish, of Daniel Epes, Jr., Malachi Felton and John Proctor, considered the matter, and in anticipation of securing their end proposed that plan which, for more than a hundred years, was substantially lived up to, namely,—“Ye major part of ye selectmen and assessors shall be Chosen one year in one parish, and ye next year in ye other parish successively.” The committee were instructed at once “to labour,” both at old Salem and in the General Court,—a mild sort of lobby, perhaps, which was successful in obtaining desired legislation. The full text of the act of incorporation is as follows :

“Anno Regni Regis Georgii Secundi Ac., Vicesimo Quinto.

“An act for erecting the Village parish and middle Parish so called, in the Town of Salem into a distinct and separate District by the Name of Danvers.

“Whereas, the Town of Salem is Very Large and the Inhabitants of the Village and Middle parishes so called within ye same (many of them at least, live at a great distance from that part of Salem where the publick affairs of the Town are Transacted and also from the Grammar School which is kept in ye sd first Parish.

“And Whereas, most of the Inhabitants of the sd first Parish are either Merchants, Traders or Mechanicks & those of ye sd Village and Middle parishes are chiefly Husbandmen, by means whereof many Disputes & Difficultys have Arisen and May hereafter arise in the managing their publick Affairs Together, & Especially touching ye Apportioning the Publick Taxes, For preventing of which Inconveniences for the future.

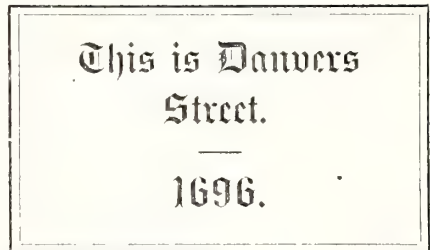
“Be it Enacted by the Lieut. Governour, Council, and House of Representatives, That that part of ye sd Town of Salem which now constitutes the village and middle parishes in sd Town according to their boundaries and the Inhabitants therein, be Erected into a separate and distinct District by the Name of Danvers, and that said Inhabitants shall do the duties that are Required and Enjoyed on other Towns, and Enjoy all the Powers, Privileges and Immunities that Towns in this province by Law Enjoy, except that of separately choosing and sending one or more Representatives to Represent them att ye Genl Assembly, &c.

“Jany ye 25, 1752.”

A “district” differed from a “town” only in the matter of sending representatives to the General Court. A district could not do that; it sent a “delegate.” And so jealous was the King of that body

28½

that the Governor was charged to consent to no division of territory which would add to its members. The act was considerably more than half a loaf, and the rest soon came. As to the origin of the name “Danvers,” there is yet some doubt. “D’Anvers” is an old English family name, evidently of French origin. In one of the numbers of the *London Art Journal* an article on ancient street tablets gives a cut of one in Chelsea with this inscription :



The conclusion accepted by S. P. Fowler, who has made the subject a study, is that “in some way not yet discovered the name came from Sir Danvers Osborne, Bart., the unfortunate Governor of New York, in 1753.” Mr. Rice has added: “I think it must have been through Lieutenant-Governor Phipps.”

It is believed that there is but one other town of the same name in the country, and that one, in McLean County, Illinois, is a namesake of the first. The western town was laid out about fifty years ago “and it was agreed to call it Danvers, out of regard to Israel W. Hall, who came from Danvers, Mass.” A speaking acquaintance is maintained between the two towns through the medium of local papers.

It may be interesting to see the record of the first meeting of the district, verbatim :

“At a Legall Meeting of ye Inhabitants of the District of Danvers, March ye 4th, 1752, in ye first Parish in sd District—

“Voted Daniel Epes, Esqr., Moderator for sd Meeting, Voted Daniel Epes, Junr., Esqr., Clerk, & Mr. James Prince Treasurer.

“Voted to Chuse Seven Selectmen for this present year, viz. : four in ye first Parish & three in ye Second Parish, & to chuse by written Votes, & chose Mr. Archelaus Dale, Mr. John Andrew & Mr. Henry Putnam, to tell ye Votes Chosen Selectmen, Daniel Epes, Junr., Esqr., Captain Samuel Flint, Dea Cornelius Tarball, Mr. Stephen Putnam, Mr. Samuel King, Mr. Daniel Gardner, & Mr. Joseph Putnam; & the above Named Persons were chosen Assessors and Overseers of ye Poor.

“Voted to Chuse four Constables, viz. ; Two in ye first and Two in ye Second Parish; & Chose Mr. David Goodale for ye West Ward in ye first Parish, & Mr. Samuel White for ye East Ward in sd first Parish, and Chose Mr. Roger Derby Constable in ye East Ward, and Mr. Jonathan Twiss Constable in ye West Ward in ye Second Parish.

“Voted to Chuse five Tithingmen, & Chose Mr. Samuel Putnam, Junr., and Mr. Archelaus Putnam, Junr., for ye first Parish, & Chose Mr. Samuel Osborn, Junr., Mr. James Upton & Mr. Timothy Upton, for ye Second Parish.

“Voted Mr. John Andrew, Mr. John Preston, Mr. Francis Nurse, Lieut. David Putnam, Mr. Jacob Goodale, Mr. George Gould, Surveyors of High ways for the first Parish.

“Voted Ensd John Procter, Mr. Andrew Mansfield, Mr. Jasper Needham, Mr. Jonathan Russell, Mr. James Gould, Mr. James Buxton & Mr. John Southwick, Junr., Surveyrs of High ways for ye Second Parish.

“Voted Mr. Jonathan Putnam and Mr. John Osborn Haywards.

“Voted Israel Cheever and Mr. James Upton, Sealers of Leather.

“Voted Mr. Samuel Holton, Mr. Benjamin Putnam, Mr. John Osborn and Mr. Ebenezer Marsh, fence Viewers.



"Voted Jonathan Putnam & Mr. David Goldthawyt, Clerks of y^e Market.

"Voted Mr. Daniel Rea to take Care that y^e Laws Relating to y^e Preservation of Deer be observed.

"Voted Mr. Henry Putnam & Mr. David Goldthawyt Survr of Lumber.

"Voted Mr. James Chapman, Mr. Ebenezer King, Mr. John Brown & Mr. Gideon Foster, to Take care that y^e Laws relating to y^e preservation of alewives be observed.

"Voted Mr. Walter Smith, Mr. John Vinne, Mr. George' What, Junr, Mr. Israel Hutchinson, Mr. John Oaks, Mr. Ebenezer Goldthawyt, Mr. David Marble, Junr., Mr. Jonathan Osborn & Mr. Jonathan Trask, Junr. Hog Reeves.

"Voted Mr. Hugh Kelly, Mr. David Foster & Mr. Ebenezer Boyce, Pound keepers.

"Voted that y^e Selectmen be Hereby fully Impowered to agree with the Town of Salem concerning our proportion of the poor in the Alms House, to Settle y^e Number, and take care of them as they shall think best, and make Report of their doings att the Adjournment of this meeting.

"Voted To mend the High ways in s^d District by Days' works, and that Surveyors be chosen in Different parts of y^e Distr., & that y^e selectmen shall appoint y^e surveyors their Respective Wards, and the selectmen to Tax y^e Polls & Estates, and such persons as chuse to pay their s^d Tax in Labour, shall have free Liberty so to do; and such persons as will not pay their Tax in work on y^e s^d High ways, shall be obliged to pay the same in money, according as they are Taxed, and the Surveyors are Hereby fully Authorized and Impower'd to Collect and Gather the s^d Taxes in there Respective Wards, & to be accountable for y^e same, to the Selectmen, & the Allowance shall be, Two Shillings and Eight pence p. Day for a man, & that keys & Teams be left to y^e Surveyors to sett y^e Value, & y^e Surveyors shall give Timely Notice to the Persons Taxed in their Lists, not Less than three days and the High way work shall be done, some time between the first day of April & y^e first Day of November, and at no other Times, Except in Cases where it may Happen that there may be Necessity.

"Voted That this meeting be Adjourned to y^e 18th Instant, att one of the Clock in y^e afternoon, to this Place.

"DANIEL EPES, Junr., Dist. Clerk."

"The Inhabitants met according to Adjournment.

"Voted to Excuse David Goodale from being Constable this year.

"Voted John Swinerton Constable in y^e room of David Goodale.

"Voted Jonathan Twiss Surveyor of high ways in y^e room of James Goodale.

"Voted Samuel Osborn, Junr, Surveyor of high ways in y^e Room of James Goodale.

"It being put to Vote whether y^e Inhabitants will raise Two Hundred Pounds Lawfull money, to Defray y^e Charges of y^e District, & the County Tax, Exclusive of high ways for this present year It passed in y^e Affirmative.

"It being put to Vote whether y^e Inhabitants will raise one Hundred & Fifty pounds Lawfull money, to Defray the High way charges. It passed in the Affirmative.

"Voted That y^e Swine may go att large, provided that they are yoked & wringed, &c., according to Law.

"Voted That Meetings of the District shall be warned for y^e future, by posting attested copies of y^e Warrants for Calling s^d Meetings, on the Meeting-House in y^e first parish, & on y^e Meeting-House in y^e second parish.

"Voted That y^e Selectmen take y^e Care of our Interest in y^e Almshouse in Salem.

"Voted That y^e Selectmen be Hereby fully Impower'd to Settle with y^e Town of Salem, Relating to y^e School money, & all other accounts, and to Receive y^e Money that may be Due from s^d Salem to us.

"Voted that y^e Selectmen be Impowered & Desired to Agree with some meet Person to keep a Gramer school in y^e District as soon as may be.

"Voted Ebenezer Jacobs Constable in y^e Room of Roger Derby.

"DANIEL EPES, Junr., Dist. Clerk."

Within two years boundaries were run between the district and all the adjoining towns, and many other measures taken, but the more the inhabitants acted after the manner of towns, the more impatient they grew to become a town. So on the 3d of February,

1755, they passed a vote "that it be the minds of the Inhabitants that the said District be erected into a separate Town Ship, & that the said Daniel Epes, Junr., Esq., be and hereby is desired and impowered to prefer a Petition to the Great and General Court, and to use his Endeavours to get the same affected."

The act which conferred the full powers of a town upon Danvers, was not, however, passed until June 9th, 1757, and then only after persistent demands and against the protest of Thomas Hutchinson, Governor.

The population of the town at its incorporation was not far from 2000. The first State census, 1765, gives it then 2133. Subsequent figures may, for convenience, be given here:

1776.....	2,284	1840.....	5,020
1780.....	2,425	1850.....	8,106
1790.....	2,643	1860.....	5,110
1810.....	3,127	1865.....	5,114
1820.....	3,616	1870.....	5,600
1830.....	4,228	1880.....	6,598

In 1759 this memorandum was entered on the town records:

"Recd of Daniel Epes, Junr, a Province Note of twenty pound For supporting the French Neutrals the year past, Being the Charge the Town was at for the Same."

It recalls the melancholy event of Longfellow's "Evangeline." The English expelled some thousand of these inoffensive people from Acadia in 1755, and in the scattering a few came to Danvers. The only other mention of the unfortunate people is eight years later, when, on the question of supply, "they being gooing off," these votes were passed:

"Voted: to give the French Neutrals something.

"Voted: that the Overseers of the Poor shall allow the French people what they shall think just, and to be drawn out of the Treasury, and then the moderator dissolved the meeting."

It is common to find in the town records of a hundred years ago assessors' returns of the "Number of Coaches, Chaises, etc., in the Town of Danvers." There is an air of aristocracy in these lists, containing the names of those rich enough to "ride in chaises." But twenty-three persons in the whole town owned these vehicles in 1784. Those owning "fall back" chaises were Hon. Samuel Holten, Israel Hutchinson, Esq., Nathaniel Pope, Arch. Rea, Colonel Jere. Page, Joseph Flint, Widow Mercy Porter, Daniel Jacobs, Jr., Samuel Gardner, Captain Timothy Orne, Widow Elizabeth Poole. Nathaniel Putnam owned two "standing-top" chaises, and the following, one each: Benj. Putnam, Zorub. Porter, Colonel Enoch Putnam, Captain Wm. Shillaber, Jos. Southwick, Jr., John Dodge, Ebenezer Dale, Arch. Putnam, Phinehas Putnam, Amos Putnam, Gideon Putnam.

Regarding maps of the town, as early as 1794, the selectmen were directed to take a plan of the town in accordance with a Legislative act. No further action was taken until 1830, when the same instructions were repeated, and the next year the selectmen were

¹ Town divided in 1855.



authorized to publish a map if they should think proper. After some sixteen years, three lawyers, Northend, Abbott and Proctor, were directed to make a complete survey of the town for the correction of the plate. The maps of the old town of Danvers, now somewhat rare, embellished with cuts of "The Naumkeag House, North Danvers, E. G. Berry," "Moses Black, Jr., Wood and Coal-Yard, Danversport," "Third Congregational Church," and a few scenes in South Danvers, are printed from this plate.

For about half a century, commencing with 1816, it was the custom of Danvers people to be reminded of the dinner-hour and of bed-time by the ringing of church-bells. In the year mentioned it was first voted "that the Bells be rung at 12 o'clock at noon and at 9 o'clock A. M. (P. M.), provided it does not cost more than \$25 at each Meeting-House."

In 1832 Moses Black and others succeeded in adding the music of "the Bell at the Neck." The practice has been discontinued since 1863, except for a single year (1874), when the sextons rang its final knell. The dinner-hour seems likely to take care of itself, but if the later alarm could shorten the average "evening out" it might be well to bring it back again.

There were at least two flourishing local military companies a half a century ago. These were the Artillery Company and the Danvers Light Infantry. Doubtless much of interest might be written concerning both. This requisition was found among the old papers in the town-house.

"DANVERS Oct. 4th, 1816.

"GENTLEMEN :

"Having been ordered to parade the company which I command for the purpose of inspection and review of arms on the 10th day of the present month, it is my duty to request you, Gentlemen, and I do hereby request you, to provide a quantity of *good* powder sufficient for 100 men (that being the number born on the company roll) agreeable to the 23d section of Massachusetts Militia Law.

"Yours with respect,

"DANIEL PRESTON.

"Gentlemen Selectmen for Danvers."

Captain Felton presented a similar requisition for blank cartridges for his company of forty-five; and Captain Asa Tapley, Jr., for seventy men.

By-laws respecting fires, "better to promote the more populous part of the town" against danger, were formulated as early as 1819.

At the annual meeting of 1840, the need of a more complete system of by-laws was met by the election of Dr. Andrew Nichols, J. W. Proctor, John Page, Eben S. Upton and Elias Putnam as a committee of revision and construction, which committee reported to the meeting which elected them that "on examining the existing by-laws, they find them so imperfect and incomplete as to demand an entire revision and new arrangement. . . . They would recommend that a committee of one from each school district, together with the selectmen and clerk prepare such a system of by-laws as in their judgment the interests of the town require, etc." and that the same be printed, distributed and acted upon the next year.

This committee were: No. 1, John W. Proctor; No. 2, Moses Black, Jr.; No. 3, Elias Putnam; No. 4, John Preston; No. 5, Jeremy Hutchinson; No. 6, Nathaniel Felton; No. 7, Daniel P. King; No. 8, Samuel Brown, Jr.; No. 9, John Mansfield; No. 10, Elias Needham; No. 11, Andrew Nichols; No. 12, Henry Poor; No. 13, Samuel Preston.

Eight years afterwards the subject was revived, and John W. Proctor, Dr. Nichols, Moses Black, Jr., A. A. Abbott and Nathaniel Pope were appointed to draft a new code. At the first annual meeting after the division of the town, that is, in 1856, it became necessary to take a fresh start, and Moses Black, Jr., Edwin Mudge and Francis Dodge were appointed to perform the duty. In 1874 important revisions were made at the suggestion of a committee chosen for the purpose, namely, Rev. C. B. Rice, Israel W. Andrews and Henry A. Perkins. The last revision, 1883, was made by a committee consisting of Rev. C. B. Rice, D. N. Crowley, I. W. Andrews and George Tapley.

The part which Danvers took in the Revolution which came soon after the incorporation of town has been spoken of separately. During and some time after the Revolution the people of the town were concerned about small-pox, which in October, 1773, seemed "to spread in several of our neighboring Towns," and Ebenezer Goodale and Dr. Joseph Osgood were chosen to take preventive measures against its appearing here. Though in some respects an unpleasant topic to write of or to read of, nevertheless much may be learned from the records of these years, before Jenner's great discovery, of the way in which inoculation, which preceded vaccination, was regarded. In the spring of 1777, Benjamin Porter and others petitioned "to see if the town will grant Leave to inoculate for the Small-pox in that part of the Town called the Neck from the house of Benja. porter to the Bridge By Abel Watterses, the Town inhabitants only unless their should not so many of the inhabitants appear to Be Inoculated as could be convend in that case to take in persons From other towns; also to choose a committee to regulate the affair;" and another committee to apply to the General Court for their approbation. The record of the meeting which considered this petition is short and to the point:

"At a Leagel meeting of the inhabitants of Danvers, may 19th, 1777, Voted, Dr. Amos putnam moderator; Voted not to Act on the Request of Benja. porter and others; Voted to Dissolve sd meeting, the moderator Declared sd meeting Dissolved."

The next year, measures were taken for suitable quarters "for the reception of those persons belonging to this Town who shall be taken with the Small Pox the natural way." Another move was also made for "Liberty to Inoculate such persons as shall chuse to take the Small Pox that way belonging to this town;" it had a momentary success:

"Voted to Inoculate in the Town for the Small Pox.

"Voted to reconsider the vote respecting Inoculation.

"Voted to dismiss the clause in the warrant respecting Inoculation: Voted that this meeting be Dissolved."



In May, 1778, the advocates of inoculation gained more substantial yet temporary success. It was then voted "that Captain Derby's house be set apart for the Inoculation in this Town," and three men, whose names signify the interest taken in the matter, Captain Daniel Jacobs, Major Caleb Low and Major Samuel Epes, were appointed "to regulate said affair." In less than a fortnight Ezekiel Marsh and others brought to the selectmen their petition to put a stop to inoculation at the Derby farm, though when the selectmen issued their warrant it contained also another petition, of Benjamin Balch and others, for inoculation "in that part of the town called the Neck." The former petition was granted; the latter, refused.

Feeling ran high on the subject. This last meeting, held on the 8th of June, set the seal of its condemnation unequivocally upon the new and absurd idea. But it was not enough; it should be killed and buried beyond resurrection. Therefore, four days later another warrant was posted at the meeting-houses giving notice of a meeting on the 15th of June to take into consideration the desire of Mr. Arch's Dale and others for a final stop of the business, and it seems worth while to quote at length from the record of this meeting. Mr. Dale was himself moderator.

"Voted to put a final Stop to the Small Pox by Inoculation in Capt Derby's House, that was allowed of by the Town during their Pleasure; voted that the Stop take place this Day; voted no person be allowed to enter into Said Derby's House after the 15th of June, 1778, for Inoculation; voted if any Doct^r or any other person after the Said 15th Day of June, 1778, Shall Inoculate any Person whatever with the Small Pox in ^{the} House or Territories thereto belonging, Shall be liable to pay the Same fine that they would have been liable to have paid had they Inoculated without leave from the Town, and incur the Town's Displeasure; voted if any Person whatever Shall, after the Said 15th of June, 1778, Enter the Said House or territories thereto belonging and be Inoculated contrary to the True Meaning of the Town, Shall pay the Same Fines & Suffer the Same Penalties, which by Law they are liable to as those Persons that Inoculate in their own Houses.

"Voted that all the votes and orders of the Town respecting the Stopping of the Inoculation that have or Shall pass be fairly Copied of by the Clerk and immediately Sent to the Docters and others Concerned; voted to Choose a Committee; voted the Committee to Consist of three; voted Capt William Stillaber, Stephen Needham and Aaron Osborn be Said Committee, whose business Shall be to duly Inspect into and See that every Vote and order of the Town respecting the Stopping of Said Inoculation be faithfully Complied with, and to prosecute any and every Person if need be, that doth not Comply with the Same. Voted to Dissolve this Meeting, and the Moderator declared the Meeting Dissolved accordingly.

"Attest: STEPHEN NEEDHAM, Town Clerk."

Thus the matter remained for twelve years. Not till 1792 was any proposition bearing upon the subject brought before the town, and then public opinion had so far changed as to allow "persons to inoculate in proper places," under the superintendence of another committee of solid men.

At the annual meeting of 1793 the town was asked to consider if any allowance should be made "to some of the Persons that have had the Small pox that are poor;" and three pounds were voted to Nathan Upton, who was an unfortunate victim of the "natural way."

More than twenty years later "vaccination" was for the first time the subject of public action. General Gideon Foster's name was at the head of a petition for a town-meeting, held in July, 1815, for the especial purpose of considering the expediency of accepting certain proposals offered by one Dr. Fansher. They were as follows:

"Dr. Fansher begs leave respectfully to propose to the Town of Danvers that he will (in case it meets the approbation of the Town) Vaccinate at such places in the different Neighborhoods throughout the Town as shall be designed by a Committee for the Children to assemble for that purpose, and attend and examine his patients at the proper time to see that each individual are secure from the danger of the small Pox at 25 cents per head, and he believes that no person can possibly do this nice business and do it justice for a smaller fee and be the gainer."

These proposals were accepted with the provisions reserved—there must be some Yankee to the trade—that all above six hundred were to be treated gratis. And if any one doubts that this Dr. Fansher was an important man just at this time, let him read the names of the committee chosen to inspect him, "two from each district and three in the districts where the clergymen reside:" No. 1, Rev. Samuel Walker, Squires Shove, Fitch Pool; 2, Rev. Jere. Chaplin, Nath'l Putnam; 3, Zerub'l Porter, Eben Putnam, Jr.; 4, Eleazer Putnam, Daniel Putnam; 5, Rev. Benj. Wadsworth, Joseph Hutchinson; 6, Nathan Felton, Jonathan Proctor; 7, Jesse Upton, Asa Gardner; 8, John Marsh, Amos King, 3d; 9, John Mansfield, John Douty; 10, Jona. Walcut, John Jacobs; 11, Gideon Foster, Elijah C. Webster; 12, Rich'd Osborn, Nathan Poor.

The following resolutions passed also at this time are well in advance of the times:

"RESOLVED, That this Town entertain a high opinion of Vaccination, and consider it (when conducted by skilful and experienced hands) a sure and certain substitute for the small Pox.

"RESOLVED, That this Meeting deems it the indispensable duty of a community to make use of the means that Divine Providence has given us to guard against every impending evil to which we are exposed, especially those which involve the health or the Lives of the Inhabitants."

CHAPTER XXXIII.

DANVERS (Continued).

REVOLUTIONARY HISTORY.

NOT long after the incorporation of Danvers, began the muttering of discontent all through the colonies because of the hardness of heart of the Pharaoh beyond the seas, and his oppression of his people. Long, long years was the storm brewing, and only the few saw with prophetic eye in the play of lightning on the distant cloud the outlines of that fearful word, Revolution. These years sifted out the hearts of men with crucial test, and when from the nearing cloud rolled out the thunder of war, patriotism had heroes for leaders.

The "writs of assistance" were issued in 1761; the



odious stamp act passed in 1765, when Franklin wrote, "The sun of liberty is set," and American merchants agreed to non-importation until its repeal. In that year the Colonial Congress met in New York at the invitation of Massachusetts, which formulated the rights of colonists, beginning "No taxation without representation." New taxes and the act for the enforced quartering of troops by citizens in 1767; the refusal of Boston to furnish quarters; the order for the arrest and transmission to England of leaders of the opposition; three years of constant irritation and a massacre in the streets of Boston, March, 1770; the tea-party, December, 1773; the Boston Port Bill; the first Continental Congress; John Hancock's Provincial Congress at Cambridge and its measures for committees of safety and minute men, 1774; then Lexington, war, independence, the United States of America.

Danvers kept pace with these events. How well its citizens grasped the situation of the times and how forcibly and well they expressed themselves, it has been left on the records for any to read who will. They came together after the passage of the stamp act; Thomas Porter was their representative in the General Court, and these are the words in which they instructed him:

"*St, we the Freeholders and Other Inhabitants of said Town of Danvers, in Town Meeting assembled the Twenty-first of October, A. D. 1765, Professing the Greatest Loyalty to our Most Gracious Sovereign and our Sincere Regard and Reverence for the British Parliament as the Most Powerfull and Respectable Body of Men on Earth, yet being Deeply Sensible of the Injustits and Distresses to which that August Assembly's Late Exertions of their Power in and by the Stamp Act, must Necessarily Expose us, Thinks it Proper, in the Present Critical Conjunction of affairs, to give you the following Instructions, Viz: That you Promote and Readily Joyn in Such Dutifull Remonstrances and Humble Petitions to the King and Parliament and Other Decent Measures as may have a Tendency to Obtain a Repeal of the Stamp Act or alleviation of the Heavy Burdens thereby Imposed on the British Colonies.*

And in as Much as great Tumults Tending to the Subversion of Government have Lately Happened & several Outrages Committed by some Evil Minded People in the Capital Town of this Province, you are therefore Directed to Bear Testimony against and do all in your Power to Suppress & prevent all Riottous Assemblies and unlawful Acts of Violence upon the Persons or Substances of any of his Majesty's Subjects; And that you do not give your Assent to any Act of Assembly that shall Injoy the Willingness or your Constituents to Submit to any Internal Tax that are or shall be Imposed on us Otherwise than by the Great and General Court of this Province, according to the Constitution of this Government, and that you be carefull not to give your Assent to any Extravagant Grants out of the Publick Treasury.

Other Matters we leave to your Prudence, Trusting you will Act with Honour & Justice to your Constituents and Due Regard to the Publick Welfare.

"Attest:

ARCT. DALE, T. Cler.

On the 20th of September, 1768, a meeting was held at the North Meeting-house to "see if the town shall send one or more persons to joyn committies of Boston and other towns in a convention to be holden at Faneuil Hall on the 22nd instant," and by unanimous vote Mr. Samuel Holten, Jr., was desired to represent the town in the convention. In December following he was voted two pounds and fifteen shillings for his service. Dr. Holten was charged "to look well to the rights of the people," and so con-

spicuous was his service among the "Sons of Liberty" that, as will be seen, they were in constant requisition wherever there was work for a mind ready for wise counsel and a heart full of untiring devotion. Let a few words be here written of him, just as his name first appears, though it be partly in anticipation of events which should follow later.

Samuel Holten was born June 9, 1738; he died January 2, 1816, in the seventy-eighth year of his age, and is recalled as an old man by a few very old citizens. He was of the third generation from Joseph Houlton, an original settler of Salem Village, and one of the honored heads, the line being Joseph, Henry, Samuel, Samuel. Samuel, Jr., studied medicine with Dr. Jonathan Prince, whose home was on the southern slope of the Asylum hill. He began practice when quite young in Gloucester, but soon returned here. In his thirtieth year he was chosen representative to the General Court. His services in the convention of 1768 have been alluded to. He was in the Provincial Congress of 1775, an active member of the general Committee of Safety, a member of the Executive Council under the provisional government, and soon his profession and all other interests, save those of his country, were abandoned. He was a delegate in 1778 to the Congress which framed the Articles of Confederation, being forty years old when his sphere of usefulness so broadened, and at some time he presided over the body, thus occupying temporarily "the first seat of honor in his country." He was five years in Congress under the confederation, and two under the constitution. Ill-health prevented his longer acceptance of the willing suffrages of his constituents. At home, he was five years in the Senate and twelve years in the Council. Though he seems to have made no special study of law, his reputation for probity and good sense was such that he was appointed as early as 1776 a judge of Common Pleas for Essex County, a position which he held about thirty-two years. From 1796 to 1815 he was judge of probate for Essex County. Duties to the State and the country did not, however, alienate him from the small affairs of his own town. His name will appear most conspicuously in the lists of town officers,—selectman, town-clerk, moderator, treasurer for twenty-four years, even hog-reeve. In the church and parish he was equally useful, being often instrumental as an arbiter in matters of difference and delicacy to bring them to a happy issue. His home was the somewhat ancient and stately house where the street which bears his name makes, after passing through Tapleville, a sharp bend to the Village church,—now owned by Thomas Palmer. A reminiscence of his early practice as a physician has been preserved,—

MR. JEREMIAH PAGE to SAM'L HOLTEN, JUN., Dr.

1763.

Jan 28 to Feby 3d. To eleven visits & divers preparations of medicines for your first child 1 17 10



Feb 16 to March 7. To 15 visits & sundry medicines prepared
and exhibited for your last child 2 12 0
28th. By medicines returned 2s. 8d.
March 14. By cash to make change.
Errors Except'd SAM'L HOLTEN JR
four shillings and 13d. gave in.

The Holten High-School and the Holten Cemetery, wherein he is buried, also bear his name. He was one of the incorporators of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1781, and of the Massachusetts Society for Promoting Agriculture in 1792. He is described as majestic in form, yet graceful, of pleasing countenance and engaging manners. "He was not a brilliant man, and perhaps not a great man in ability for any one line of action; but he was great in capacity for general accomplishment, in balance of mind and in the easy and regular and effective working of all his faculties upon whatever service they might be employed. He was faithful, too, in every trust. All things considered, he was the most remarkable man the town has ever produced." He left two daughters, one of whom married Dr. George Osgood, the other, Jethro, son of Colonel Enoch Putnam, and the descendants of Jethro's son, Philemon, are still living near the old homestead. Having in mind the traditional dignity and courtly appearance of the doctor, it occasioned a smile to come upon Gideon Putnam's record of a certain very lively meeting over the Water's River Bridge, when, "there being a Considerable Noise, the moderator got up on his seat and Called for order and made a Speech to the people." This was the doctor.

The men of Danvers were warned to meet May 28, 1770, "to see what methods said inhabitants will come into, in regard to the Publick Grievances the Province Labours under at this Day, in Particular, In regard to a Duty on Tea, etc., for the sole purpose of Raising a Revenue out of America, and to Act upon said affair what may be thought most proper." Dr. Holten, Arch. Dale, Captain William Shillaber, Dr. Amos Putnam and Gideon Putnam were instructed to consider and report, and what they reported was thus adopted:

"Voted that this Town Highly Approve of the Spirited Conduct of the Merchants of our Metropolis, and the other Maritime Town in this Province in an Agreement of Non Importation well calculated to Restore our Invaluable Rights and Liberties. Voted that we will not ourselves (to our knowledge) or by any person for or under us, Directly or Indirectly Purchase of such Person or Persons any Goods whatsoever, and, as far as we can effect it, will withdraw our connection from every Person who shall Import Goods from Great Britain Contrary to the agreement of the Merchants aforesaid.

"Voted that we will not Drink any foreign Tea ourselves, and use our best Endeavours to prevent our Families, and those Connected with them, from the use thereof; from this Date until the Act imposing a Duty on that Article be repealed, or a general Importation shall take place, Cases of sickness Excepted.

"Voted, that the Town Choose a Committee of Twelve men to carry a Copy of these votes to every Householder for him to sign, and in case any Person refuse to sign; as above said, he shall be Looked upon as an Enemy to the Liberties of the people, and shall have their Name Registered in the Town Book.

"Voted, that a copy of these votes be printed in the Essex Gazette, that

the Publick may know the sentiments of this town. The foregoing report being several times read, voted to accept the report by a unanimous vote.

"Voted, John Nichols, Arch. Dale, Benjr. Putnam, Dr. Amos Putnam, Capt. Flint, Benja. Russell, Junr., Samuel Gardner, Jona. Tarbel, Jesper Needham, Wm. Shillaber, Joseph Seccomb & Deacon Benja. Sawyer; Be a Committee for the purposes mentioned in the foregoing report. Then the Moderator Dissolved the Meeting.

"Attest: SAM'L HOLTEN, JUNR., T. Cler."

In this connection a story is told of the wife of a distinguished patriot who, not quite able to forego the luxury of enjoying with a few callers a sip of the forbidden beverage, kept within the agreement not to drink a drop within the house, by entertaining them on top of the house. The incident has been charmingly told in the verse of Lucy Larcom. The old house is a conspicuous figure on the Plains, and one can easily imagine, within the low railing which still surrounds the easy slope of the upper portion of the gambrel roof, that little party enjoying their innocent rebellion. A story is told, too, of the suspicion of certain husbands of the south parish that a large coffee-pot "several sizes smaller than a common lighthouse," was surreptitiously used by their wives at quiltings and such gatherings, for tea-drinking, and the practice was effectively broken up by the discovery, one night when the grounds were being concealed as usual behind the back-log, of what remained of one of those little creatures which inhabit gardens, hop well and look ugly.

A number of years after, licenses to sell tea were issued, in this form:

"Mrs. Mercy Porter is permitted to sell Bohea and other India Teas by Retail for one year to commence from the Day of the Date hereof.
"Danvers, Feb'y 20, 1782.

"SYLVESTER PROCTOR. } Selectmen
"DANIEL PUTNAM. } of
"STEPHEN NEEDHAM. } Danvers."

Similar permits were at the same time granted to Major Samuel Epes, John Dodge, Eben'r Sprague, Captain Gideon Foster, Zach. King, David Foster, Nathan Proctor and Captain Samuel Page.

In the middle of January, 1773, the worshippers at the North Meeting-House and at the South Meeting-House, found posted conspicuously a warrant under the hand of Gideon Putnam, town clerk, calling upon the freeholders and other inhabitants to assemble in town-meeting at two o'clock on the afternoon of the following day at the South Meeting-House "to see what method said inhabitants will take in order that our civil Privileges may be Restored and transmitted Inviolable to the latest Posterity." At the meeting so called Joseph Southwick was moderator. A motion was carried to choose a committee to take into consideration our civil privileges and to "Draw up something proper for the town to act." It was voted that Francis Symonds, Benjamin Proctor, Gideon Putnam, Captain William Shillaber, Doe'r Amos Putnam, Tarrant Putnam, Jun., and Wm. Pool be this committee. In two weeks the committee presented this report:

"The Freeholders & other Inhabitants of the Town of Danvers Legally assembled, by adjournment ye 1st Day of February, 1773, Taking into Consideration the Unhappy Situation of our Civil Privileges,—Proceeded to Pass the Following Resolves—(viz.):

"I, that we will use our utmost Endeavours that all Constitutional Laws are Strictly adhered to, and Faithfully Executed, believing that Next to our duty to God, Loyalty to our King (in a Constitutional way) is Required in Order to the wellbeing of the Community.

"II, that when Government becomes Tyrannical & Oppressive we hold ourselves bound in Duty to ourselves, & Posterity, to use every Lawful Method to Check the Same, least it Deprive the Subject of Every Privilege that is Valuable.

"III, that it is the Opinion of this Town, that the Rights of the Colonists in General, & this Province in Particular, have of late been greatly Infringed upon by the Mother Country by unconstitutional Measures which have been Adopted by the Ministry, tending wholly to Overthrow our Civil Privileges, Particularly in Assuming the Power of Legislation for the Colonists, in Raising a Revenue in the Colonies without their Consent, in Creating a Number of officers Unknown in the Charter, and investing such Officers with Powers wholly unconstitutional, and Discriminative to the Liberties we have a right to Enjoy as Englishmen: in Rendering the Governor Independent of the General Assembly for his support, and by Instructions from the Court of Great Britain the first Branch of our Legislature has so far forgot his Duty to the Province, as that he hath Refused his Consent to an Act imposing a Tax for the Necessary support of Government, unless Certain Persons Pointed out by the Ministry were Exempted from Paying their just Proportion of said Taxes, and hath Given up the Chief Fortress of the Province (Castle William) into the Hands of Troops, over whom he Declared he had no Control: in Extending the Power of the Courts of Vice Admiralty to such a Degree as Deprives the People of the Colonies (in Great Measure) of their inestimable Rights of Tryals by juries, & in that we have Reason to fear (from Information) the Judges of the Superior Court & c., are Rendered independent of the People for their Liberties.

"III, that an act of Parliament intitled an Act for the better Preservation of his Majesties dockyards & c. in consequence of which, Commissioners have been Appointed to inquire after the Persons, Concerned in bearing his Majesties Schooner, the Gaspee, att Providence) has Greatly Alarmed us that we are very far from Pretending to justify the Act, yet we Apprehend such Methods very Extraordinary, as the Constitution has Made Provision for the Punishment of such Offenders—by all which it appears to us, that in Consequence of Some Unguarded Conduct of Particular Persons, the Colonies in General, and this Province in Particular are, for our Loyalty, Constantly receiving the Punishment due to Rebellion Only.

"V, that we will use all Lawful Endeavours for Recovering, maintaining & Preserving the invaluable rights & Privileges of this People and Stand Ready if need be to Risque our Lives & fortunes in Defence of those Liberties which our forefathers Purchased at so Dear a Rate.

"VI, that the Inhabitants of this Town do hereby Instruct their Representatives, that he use his Influence, in the Great & General Court, or Assembly of this Province, & in a Constitutional way Earnestly Contend for the just Rights & Privileges of the People that they may be handed down undiminished to the Late & Posterity, and as this depends in a Great Measure on the Steady, firm and United Endeavours of all the Provinces on the Continent, we further Instruct him to use his influence that a Strict Union & Correspondence be Cultivated & Preserved between the Same, and that they Unitedly Petition his Majesty & Parliament for the Redress of all our Publick grievances; we further Instruct him, by no Means to Consent to give up any of our Privileges, whether Derived from Nature or Charter which we has as just a Right to Enjoy as any of the Inhabitants of Great Britain; also that he use his Endeavours that ample and Honorable Salaries be Granted to his Excellency, the Governor, and to the Honorable judges of the Superior Court & c., adequate to their Respective Dignities.

"The foregoing was Put to vote Paragraph by Paragraph and they all pass in the affirmative.

"Voted, that a Committee of three men be appointed to Correspond with the Committee of Correspondence of the Town of Boston and Other Towns in this Province as Ocaion shall or may Require.

"Voted, Doctor Samuel Holten be one of Said Committee.

"Voted, Tarrant Putnam, Junr., be one of Said Committee.

"Voted, Capt. William Shillaber be one of Said Committee.

"Voted, that the above Committee be Desired to Send an attested Copy

of the Resolves of this Town to the Committee of Correspondence of the Town of Boston."

"Voted, that this meeting be Dissolved & the moderator Dissolved it accordingly.

"Attest, GIDEON PUTNAM, T. Clerk."

Early in June, 1774, the Royal Governor, General Thomas Gage, finding Boston too hot to be comfortable, came out into the country and made his residence in Danvers. The place thus distinguished, not far from the present division line of Danvers and Peabody, called the "Collins House," the residence of Francis Peabody, has been kept in repair and preserved with fine taste in colonial style, and with its approach bordered by lines of ancient over-hanging trees, is one of the finest old mansions to be seen anywhere. It was built by Robert Hooper, a magnate of literal "codfish aristocracy." He was the son of a poor man but rose to great wealth, and for a time nearly monopolized the fishing business of Marblehead. Partly from the grandeur of his mode of life and equipages, but more especially because of his personal honor and integrity he was commonly called "King Hooper." It is a tradition among the fishermen that he, rare exception to men similarly engaged, never cheated them or took advantage of their ignorance. He built this house in Danvers about 1770. While Governor Gage resided here he was attended by a strong detachment of the Sixty-Fourth Royal Infantry, who were encamped on the opposite plain. The presence of these soldiers was to the growing hostility of the people, what the color of their uniforms is to the animal typically representing English character. They were under good discipline and generally behaved themselves well. The grandmother of Deacon Fowler, a daughter of Archelaus Putnam, remembers that one day two officers surprised her in Colonel Hutchinson's, her stepfather's, orchard at New Mills. To one who commenced to climb the fence, the other said, "Wait till the girl goes away; do not frighten her." Mrs. Fowler used to relate of Governor Gage that he often conversed with Colonel Hutchinson, was affable and courteous, and once, while sitting on a log before the door, he said, "We shall soon quell these feelings and govern all this," sweeping out his arm with an expressive gesture. The camp was watchful against surprise, realizing how unwelcome was its presence, and of what a lively spirit of rebellion they were in the midst. "Part of the Sixty-Fourth Regiment encamped near the Governor's, we hear, were under arms all last Friday," reads a contemporaneous newspaper item. Some pranks were played on the troops; at the drum-call to arms, a man so well disguised as to make his identity uncertain, but said to have been Aaron Cheever, dashed in on horseback shouting "Hurry to Boston! the Devil is to pay!" Early in September the regiment departed. There was a large oak on the plain which had been used for a whipping-post in the camp. The timber of this tree was afterwards used in



building the frigate *Essex* at Salem. The iron-staple to which the British soldiers were strung up for the lash was found imbedded in the wood, which, by a singular turn, became the stern-post of the frigate.

As one passes the old Collins house it is common to hear of a bullet-hole which has been preserved in the door, and there are various stories as to where the bullet came from. Hon. Daniel P. King stood sponsor to one of which this is the substance: On the gate-posts were large balls, ornamented with lead. A party of patriots going to join the army helped themselves to this precious material. The owner came to the door and remonstrated with such abusive epithets that a man hinted that his presence could be dispensed with by firing pretty near where he stood. "King Hooper" was supposed to be tainted with toryism. At a town-meeting in May, 1775, "a letter was read from Mr. Hooper, voted not satisfactory to the inhabitants." Later he made, in Marblehead, a more public recantation, and was received again in public favor, but he died, in 1790, insolvent. The house passed to the hands of Judge Benajah Collins, whose name it commonly bears. At one time it was in the Tapley family, and again owned and occupied by Rev. P. S. Ten-Broeck, who kept a girls' boarding-school there. It is said there were but two native born Danvers tories,—Rev. William Clark, son of Rev. Peter Clark, who, in 1768, was an Episcopal minister in Quincy, and was afterwards confined in a prison-ship in Boston harbor; the other, James Putnam, went to Halifax, became one of the council and a judge of the Supreme Court, and died at St. Johns in 1789.

In the winter of 1774-75 the clouds grew very black, the mutterings more unmistakable. On the 21st of November the town turned its back to England by voting to adhere strictly to all the resolves and recommendations of the Provincial Congress. Early in January each man was supplied with "an effective fire-arm, bayonet, pouch, knapsack, thirty rounds of cartridges and ball," and discipline was required three times a week, and oftener as opportunity may offer. Before long something happened.

One of the characters of New Mills was Richard Skidmore, a drummer at the siege of Louisburg, a soldier and privateersman in the Revolution, and, as will be noticed, a member of the alarm list of 1814. At the head of the latter company, an old man, he vigorously beat the same drum which he had used at Louisburg. A barrel of rum once fell to his share of a prize; as long as it lasted, he said, he heard "How do you do, Mr. Skidmore?" but as soon as the rum was gone, it was "How are you, old 'Skid?" again. Skidmore was a wheelwright, and had made several vehicles of a pattern not commonly seen in village shops, gun-carriages. The guns themselves were concealed somewhere, it is supposed, at the North Fields. Information of their existence reached Boston, and Colonel Leslie's regiment was sent to effect

their capture. Of the bloodless repulse at North Bridge, the persistent yet prudent conduct of Colonel Leslie, the valiant resistance of the men who blocked the march, the story belongs to Salem, and will there be found. Danvers men flew to the spot as the alarm spread swiftly over the country. Had one shot been fired, right there would have begun the war. This was the 26th of February, 1775.

Some seven weeks later a similar search party stealthily moved out from Charlestown to seize stores reported concealed at Concord. Paul Revere was out that night. Then followed Lexington, and Liberty entered upon her baptism of blood.

It was between five and six o'clock on the morning of April 19, that the engagement took place on Lexington common. The British moved on and arrived at Concord, some six or seven miles beyond, about nine o'clock. By that time the rapid alarm had reached Danvers, sixteen miles away. It met with instant response. Two companies of minute men and three companies of militia, from one hundred and fifty to two hundred men, hurried to the scene of action. Learning of the retreat from Concord, the objective point was to reach Cambridge soon enough to cut off the British from effecting a return. To do this they went on a run, and in a few hours they were in the midst of action. Few well men could be found in Danvers that day; at New Mills not one.

The women who were left alone at New Mills gathered at the house of Col. Hutchinson to watch and wait together. To their anxious vigil news of the fight came on the evening of the nineteenth. Were the men safe? Most of them. Were any hurt? Some. Were any —? Yes, young bride of a few weeks, your husband, Jotham Webb, was one of the first martyrs to Liberty. Six others, only one more than twenty-five years old, lost their lives, of the men who went out from Danvers,—Henry Jacobs, Samuel Cook, Ebenezer Goldthwaite, George Southwick, Benjamin Daland, Jr. and Perley Putnam. Nathan Putnam and Dennison Wallace were wounded; Jos. Bell, missing.

On the evening of the twentieth, several men on horseback drove up to the house where the women waited, escorting a horse-cart which bore a precious burden. On the kitchen floor of that house which is still standing, the dead were unrolled from the bloody sheets, and the next morning were taken away for burial. Danvers suffered more than any other town after Lexington. The corner-stone of the monument at the corner of Main and Washington Streets, Peabody, was erected in commemoration of the dead, April 20, 1835, the sixtieth anniversary of the fight. Gen. Gideon Foster, who led the way to Lexington, took part in the exercises, and a number of survivors of the fight were present.

Of the five Danvers companies which took part in the fight, two, commanded by Captains Samuel Epps and Gideon Foster, were composed mostly of south



parish men, and their muster rolls will be found under the history of Peabody. The three other companies were composed of the following men, most of them then living within the present limits of Danvers:

HUTCHINSON'S COMPANY.—*Captain*, Israel Hutchinson; *Lieutenants*, Enosh Putnam, Aaron Cheever; *Ensign*, Job Whipple; *Privates*, Samuel Goodrich, Eliphalet Perley, Nathaniel Cheever, Eben Andrew, James Burley, Samuel Chase, Nathaniel Dutton, Henry Dwinells, John Francis, William Frodoe, Nathan Putnam, James Porter, Tarrant Putnam, Thomas White, Samuel Baker, Samuel Fairfield, Benjamin Porter (3d), Jonathan Sawyer, William Towne, W. Warner, Perley Putnam, Benjamin Shaw, William Batchelder, Jotham Webb. Also twenty-four men from Beverly.

PAGE'S COMPANY.—*Captain*, Jeremiah Page; *Lieutenants*, Joseph Porter, Henry Putnam; *Ensign*, Richard Skidmore; *Privates*, Samuel Stickney, James Putnam, Benjamin Putnam, Sr., Daniel Bootman, David Bootman, John Nichols, Jr., John Brown, Jethro Putnam, Jeremiah Putnam, William Fenn, John Ward, Michael Webb, Benjamin Kimball, Benjamin Keat, Stephen Putnam, Joseph Smith, Eliza Hutchinson, Benjamin Stickney, Mathew Whipple, Enosh Thurston, Phillip Nurse, Robert Endicott, David Felton, Daniel Verry, David Verry, Archelaus Rea, Jr., James Goody, Nathan Porter, Samuel Whittenore, Nathan Putnam, Peter Putnam, Samuel Fowler, Samuel Dutch, Eben Jacobs, Jr., Samuel Page.

FRINT'S COMPANY.—*Captain*, Samuel Flint; *Lieutenants*, Daniel Putnam, Joseph Putnam; *Ensign*, Israel Putnam; *Privates*, Asa Upton, Abel Nichols, Thomas Andrew, Amos Tapley, William Putnam, Joseph Daniels, Joshua Dodge, Jonathan Sheldon, William Goodale, Benjamin Russell, Mathew Putnam, John Hutchinson, Jr., Aaron Tapley, Levi Preston, Peter Putnam, John Preston, Daniel Lockman, Israel Cheever, Eleazer Pope, Jr., Aaron Gilbert, Nathaniel Smith, Jonathan Russell, Daniel Russell, Jethro Russell, John Hutchinson, Stephen Russell, Geo. Small, Jr., Nathaniel Pope, Jr., Joseph Tapley, Simon Mudge, William Wentbridge, Josiah Whittridge, Eben McIntyre, John Kettel, Benjamin Nurse, Eleazer Goodale, Amos Buxton, Jr., Reuben Barthirk, James Bunch, Michael Cross, Israel Smith.

There was another Danvers man killed at Lexington, the only one credited to Medford,—Henry Putnam. He was the youngest son of Deacon Eleazer Putnam, and sold his father's homestead about 1745 to Phineas Putnam, great-grandfather of Charles P. Preston, the present occupant of the estate. Of this Henry, it is related that, while on a journey from Medford to Connecticut, he stopped over night at Bolton, fell in love with his host's daughter, proposed in the morning, was immediately married, and, with his bride, drove back her dowry, consisting of two cows and twelve sheep. He was captain of a company at Louisburg, and was exempt by age from duty, when he followed his five sons to Lexington.

The record of the next town-meeting after the battle, held on 1st day of May, is expressive of the watchfulness of Danvers:

"Voted that there be two watches kept in the town of Danvers. Voted that one watch be kept on the road near the new mills and the other watch at the crook of the road near Mr. Francis Symonds. Voted that each watch consist of fifteen every night. Voted, to choose a Committee of seven to regulate the watches. Voted, John Nichols, Benjamin Proctor, Benj. Porter, Capt. Shillaber, Nathaniel Brown, Stephen Needham and Deacon Asa Putnam be said Committee. Voted that if any person refuse to watch, if warned by the Committee (or any one of them) his name shall be returned to the Committee of Inspection for this town, and if no reasons are not judged sufficient he shall be posted in the newspapers. Voted, to choose a Committee of three persons to procure teams to cart stones to Watertown. Mr. Arch Dale, Capt. John Putnam & Mr. Jonathan Tabbie was chosen. Voted, to be concerned with the neighbouring towns in establishing a post between the towns of Newbury Port and Cambridge. Doctor Putnam, Mr. Stephen Needham & Capt. Epes be a Committee to settle the affair with the neighbouring towns. Voted,

as the sense of this Body of people that we Disapprove of Firing any Guns except in cases of alarm or actual engagement."

A minute may here be made, that in 1850 Danvers received a courteous invitation to be present at the 75th anniversary of the "Concord Fight," and the delegation sent were John W. Proctor, John Page, Robert S. Daniels, Samuel Preston, Henry Cook, Moses Black, Dr. George Osborne, Daniel Putnam, Jonathan King, Samuel P. Fowler, Eben Sutton, Elias Savage and Fitch Poole. At the centennial anniversary our selectmen added to the occasion the dignity of their presence.

After Lexington the yeomanry suddenly found themselves a besieging army about Boston. The second Centennial Congress met May 10, 1775, recognized the actual existence of war, appointed Washington commander-in-chief and commissioned four major-generals; but the only commission delivered, and that by the hands of Washington, was to Israel Putnam, a son of Danvers, whose biography is a matter of national history.

The watch, which had been maintained since Lexington, was discontinued July 17, 1775, Congress having provided a guard for sea-port towns. In September following, Colonel Benedict Arnold camped at Danvers on his march to Quebec.

And now that which at first was the dream of only the most daring of the leaders, became moulded into a great popular idea—Independence. On the 7th of June, 1776, Lee, of Virginia, offered in Congress the resolutions of freedom, which were not adopted until the 2d of July. But two days after its introduction, and irrespective of it, for news did not travel by lightning, the citizens of Danvers were warned to meet at the South meeting-house, June 18, to consider a resolve of "the late House of Representatives passed on the 10th Day of May, 1776," to the effect that each town should come together to instruct their representatives in the next General Court whether, in case of a declaration of independence by Congress, "they, the said inhabitants will Solemnly Engage with their Lives and Fortunes to Support them in the Measure."

Captain William Shillaber was moderator of the meeting at which these votes were passed:

Voted that if the Hon^{ble} Congress for the Safety of the United Colonies Declare them Independent of the Kingdom of great Britain, we the Inhabitants of this Town do Solemnly Engage with our live and Fortunes to Support them in the Measure.

Voted that the Town Clerk be, and hereby is directed Immediately to Deliver an attested Copy of the Proceedings of this Town Respecting Independency, to Majr. Samuel Epes Representative of said Town, for his Instructions how to Proceed in Case the Important question of Independence should come before the Hon^{ble} House of Representatives of this Colony.

The Town taking into Consideration the Paragraph in the Warrant Respecting giving a bounty to their minute men voted to give a Bounty to one quarter part of the militia that shall be Drafted out and stand at a minutes warning Provided they March voted that the Bounty or present Given shall be one pound pr month to Each minute man so long as they Continue in the Province Service, voted to dissolve this meeting and the moderator declared this meeting dissolved accordingly.

"Att STEPHEN NEEDHAM, T. Clark.



When, on the nation's birth-day the Declaration was finally adopted by Congress, it was eagerly welcomed in Danvers, adopted without a dissenting vote, and spread for all to read upon the clerk's records. The Articles of Confederation were likewise unanimously approved, February 9, 1778, but the Constitution proposed for Massachusetts that year met an unanimous vote the other way. From the summer of 1777 consideration was from time to time given to enforcing the "acts respecting the prices of goods and all other articles in the Town." A meeting was called July 5, 1779, "to have the proceedings of Boston of the 17th of June last communicated, and to know the minds of the Inhabitants of the Town respecting a convention of Delegates from the several committees of correspondence, etc., in the State proposed to be held at Concord on Wednesday, the 14th instant."

On this it was resolved "that the town will do all in their power to reduce all the Exorbitant prices of the necessities of Life, and Desire one of the Committee of Correspondence, etc., to attend at the said convention at Concord if they shall think proper."

Dr. Amos Putnam was moderator of the meeting, which, August 2, 1779, heard and considered the action of the convention. Deacon Edmund Putnam, Colonel Hutchinson, Archelaus Dale, John Epes, and Dr. Putnam withdrew, and, after a short adjournment, reported "that the resolves and addresses of the convention are well planned for the Public Good," and on their recommendation this vote was passed:

"(Viz.): Resolved, That we will Exert ourselves and do all in our power to carry the Same with all the wholesome Laws heretofore made for the Like Purpose into Execution, and in Testimony of our Sincerity therein we recommend that the Inhabitants of this Town here unto Set their hands by Subscribing their Names from Twenty one years old and upwards and that the Committee of Safety be Directed to offer ye same to the Inhabitants, aforesaid furnished with all that refuse to Sign the Same (if any) should be, as Directed in the Resolves aforesaid, and that the Town Clerk be Directed to Give out Copies to the Several members of the Committee aforesaid for the Like Purpose."

Dr. Putnam, Aaron Cheever, Captain Shillaber and Archelaus Rea were added to the Committee of Safety. At a later time it was voted that "the prices Set by the Selectmen and Committe of Saftie to the Several Articles now read with Several resolves accompanying the Same be acceptable to the Town Voted Saml. Epes be a Committe to git a Seftien Number of the above Prices and resolves Printed."

There was one conspicuous instance of violation of these regulations. In the record of a meeting, 13, 1779, appears this:

"Voted Mr. Gideon Putnam has Violated the resolves of the Convention at Concord by selling cheese at nine shillings per lb., as by evidence fully appeared."

"Voted Mr. Gideon Putnam be posted in one of the Public Newspapers of this State for Breaking one of the resolves of the Convention at Concord, as an enemy to his cuntry."

"Voted not to excuse those persons who have not subscribed their names to carry the resolves of Concord into Execution. Voted to Post

the Several Persons in the public prints for not complying with the vote of the Town, as by a List from the Committee of Safety will appear."

Cheese at \$1.50 per pound seems rather high, but scarcity and inflated currency account for it. Rum was quoted at from \$20 to \$25 per gallon; molasses, £3 19s.; Bohea tea, £5 6s. per lb.; iron, £30 per cwt., and other things in proportion. An idea of the purchasing power of continental money may be had in the appropriations made by the town in October, 1880, for "beef for the army." It was voted that the sum of thirty thousand pounds be raised and assessed upon the inhabitants for the purpose of procuring beef, and Enoch Putnam, Jona. Sawyer and Timothy Patch were appointed a committee to carry out the vote. The vote to procure beef was then reconsidered, and, instead, it was voted to send the money direct to the county committee, of which Samuel Osgood, Esq., of Andover, was one. The following January, 1781, it was voted to raise eighteen hundred pounds in silver or an equivalent in paper money "for the use of the town to procure Continental soldiers." The recruiting committee were Ezra Upton, John Dodge and Capt. Samuel Page, who were instructed not to exceed one hundred and eighty silver dollars for each man for three years or the war, "exchange of paper money for silver money at seventy-five for one." At the same meeting these votes were passed:

"Voted that this Town be formed into as Many Classes as there are Soldiers to procure for the Town for three years or During the War. Voted that the Friends be Excused from being Classed with the rest of the Town. Voted to reconsider the vote respecting not Classing the Friends, and that the Friends be subject to be Classed with the other Inhabitants of the Town."

Thus all through the war those who remained at home helped to uphold the government and supply the army. There were brave patriots, then as ever, who never fired a musket, but were none the less devoted and useful.

During the eight terrible years Danvers was represented at the front as well among the leaders as in the ranks. On the roll of honor the names of some of her sons are written very high. Ranking highest were three Generals, Israel Putnam, Moses Porter, Gideon Foster; next, three Colonels, Jeremiah Page, Israel Hutchinson, Enoch Putnam; two Majors, Caleb Lowe, Sylvester Osborn; six Captains, Samuel Epes, Samuel Flint, Jeremiah Putnam, Samuel Page, Denison Wallis, Levi Preston, Johnson Proctor.

Some of these men will be mentioned in the history of Peabody, and others are noticed in other connections in this sketch. Of two of them, Porter and Hutchinson, something will here be said:

Moses Porter, was an apprentice, eighteen years old when the war broke out. He helped to work one of the guns at Bunker Hill, and stuck to his piece when most of the men had fled. His country never allowed him to quit it afterwards, says Mr. Upham, whose words also are these: "From that day he bore a commission in the army of the United

States. He was retained on every peace establishment always in the artillery, and at the head of that arm for a great length, and until the day of his death. No man who fought at Bunker Hill remained so long a soldier of the United States. After the Revolution, in which he was wounded, he served with Wayne in the Indian campaign, and was at the head of the artillery when the War of 1812 took place. He was in active service on the Niagara frontier, and on the 10th of September, 1813, was breveted for distinguished services. He defended Norfolk, Va., in 1814, with great ability and vigilance, and saved that most vital point of coast defense. At successive periods after the war he was at the head of each of the geographical military divisions of the country." He died at Cambridge in 1822, and was buried on his father's farm, from which his remains have been removed to Walnut Grove Cemetery. A letter preserved from Captain Simeon Brown to General (then Lieutenant) Porter, 1781, says, "I went yesterday to Salem to get a Dictionary, but there are none to be had, therefore I cannot send one this time, but will try at Boston the first opportunity, and if one can be obtained I will send it on." Though a reflection on Salem as a literary centre, the letter speaks well for the young artillery officer who wanted a dictionary. Moses Porter never married.

The house which Colonel Israel Hutchinson built, the one in which the women gathered during that nineteenth of April and saw laid out on the floor the dead heroes brought back from the fight, is still standing at Danversport, close by the "new mills" which Archelaus Putnam built. Indeed, Hutchinson's second wife was the widow of Archelaus Putnam. For many years this house remained in the family as the residence of Briggs T. Reed, who married the colonel's granddaughter, Betsey; it is now owned by the Eastern, or Boston and Maine Railroad Company, and before long may give place to a much needed new station. Colonel Hutchinson was a descendant of the fifth generation from Richard Hutchinson, the emigrant, who came from Arnold, England, in 1634, and with his wife Alice and four children, settled near Hathorne's hill. He was born in 1727 and was living on the Plains in 1762, moving soon after to New Mills. His long and honorable military record began when he enlisted as a scout in Captain Herrick's company, in 1757. The next year, in the Lake George and Ticonderoga campaign he was a lieutenant in Captain Andrew Fuller's company; the next year a captain, he led a company, under General Wolfe, up the Heights of Abraham. A man with this experience was naturally enough chosen as a leader of the minute-men of '75. Soon after Lexington he was commissioned a lieutenant-colonel in Colonel Mansfield's regiment, and soon was promoted to full rank of colonel. He was at the siege of Boston, and his regiment was one of those detailed to fortify Dorchester Heights. He went to New York, commanded Forts Washington and Lee,

and was with Washington throughout the memorable retreat through New Jersey. On his return from the war he was conspicuously honored by his fellow-citizens, who sent him repeatedly to the General Court and elected him to other offices, until politics entered more into consideration, and Federalists carried the day against the colonel and his fellow-Democrats. In his old age he kept busily engaged at his business, which had been interrupted by the war. He worked in his saw-mill until he met there the accident which, in his eighty-fifth year, caused his death, March 16, 1811. He is buried in the Plains Cemetery. His son, Israel Hutchinson, Jr., was a deacon of the Baptist Church and long clerk of the society. The colonel's orderly-book, from August 13, 1775, to July 8, 1776, is in possession of the Massachusetts Historical Society. It contains a "descriptive list of non-commissioned officers and privates enlisted in the county of Essex to serve in the army of the United States," comprising five hundred and twenty-two names, including thirty from Danvers.

Colonel Hutchinson is recalled by Deacon Fowler, who was a boy of eleven when he died, as a smart old man, small in stature, clad in a white frock, working in his saw-mill. He was accustomed to call the boys in from the street to help him roll logs. He had not himself a lazy bone, and he abhorred laziness in others and despised loafers. His son, the deacon, entertained visiting ministers, and when one of these guests strolled in to look over the mill, the old man, taking him for a loafer, threatened to throw him into the pond.

How gladly the townspeople welcomed the close of the war, and withal, how vigilant they were for the preservation of the rights so dearly bought, may be judged from instructions given Colonel Hutchinson, June 9, 1783. After alluding to his conspicuous services during the war and at the General Court, the instructions proceed,—“The contest is over and a complete Revolution is happily accomplished. This town, sir, congratulates you on so glorious a period. . . . As the Independence depends solely (under Divine Providence) in the Union of these United States, you are to consider the confederacy of the States as Sacred and in no point to be violated. . . . You are to use your endeavor that no Absentee or Conspirator against the United States, whether they have taken up arms against these States or not, be admitted to return, and those persons that have returned, you are not to suffer such persons to remain in this Commonwealth. . . . In any matters that turn up, which you think militate against your Constituents, you are to apply for further Instructions.”

Danvers was represented in the march of Colonel Wade's Essex County Regiment, to suppress Shay's Rebellion. An orderly-book, now in possession of Dr. A. P. Putnam, gives the names of sixty-eight men of the company of Captain (afterwards Colonel) John Francis, fourteen of whom were from this town,



including four officers,—Daniel Needham, lieutenant; Daniel Bell, drummer; Josiah White, sergeant; Moses Thomas, corporal.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

DANVERS—(*Continued*).

ECCLESIASTICAL.

THE FIRST CHURCH.—By the terms of the act already referred to, which constituted Salem Village, all the farmers within the Village limits were to contribute "to all charges referring to the maintenance of a minister and erecting a meeting-house," and five persons were to be appointed "among themselves or town of Salem," to collect rates and levies, the constable of Salem to have power to make distress on the goods of any neglecting to pay. At the first meeting of the Farmers, about a month after the establishment of the Village, namely, November 11, 1672 (old style), five persons were chosen "to carry along the affairs according to the court order,"—Lieutenant Thomas Putnam, Thomas Fuller, Joseph Porter, Thomas Flint and Joshua Rea.

The first preacher at the Village was then also formally engaged,—Rev. James Bayley. He was a young man, but little over twenty-one years of age, a native of Newbury, and a graduate of Harvard in 1669.

For some seventeen years there was no separate and independent church. The condition of things was anomalous. While a considerable number of the members of the church of Salem Town worshipped, for convenience, at a place nearer home than formerly, but yet were not allowed to sever their connection with the parent church, there was, on the other hand, a complete parochial organization, corresponding somewhat to the modern "society," in which, contrary to the usual Puritan polity, the franchise was not confined to church members. From this half-and-half state of things came, from the very first, trouble. The householders far outnumbered the church members. It can easily be imagined that certain non-church members, from the natural inclination to exercise newly acquired power, took too prompt and vigorous a part to suit those who had hitherto not been obliged to consult them. However that may have been, the young minister soon found his congregation divided into very marked factions for and against himself. A majority favored him, but the other side was a good instance of a "strong-working minority." Mr. Bayley was employed from year to year, and each renewal of his engagement added to the determination of the opposition. That he had the courage to stay some seven years, as he did, speaks better of his grit than of his wisdom. But, after appeals to the parent church from both

sides, and a thorough investigation by the General Court, out of which Bayley came triumphant, "orthodox and competently able, and of a blameless and self-denying conversation," he at last, about the beginning of 1680, gave up. He continued to remain in the village for some time after his resignation on land given him by certain parishioners, among whom was his most conspicuous opponent, Nathaniel Putnam. The land consisted of about forty acres, situated in part on the meadow and hill east of the meeting-house. The deed, though dated after his resignation, seems to be in confirmation of a gift promised or actually given soon after his engagement to preach. The recitation that "the providence of God having so ordered it, that the said Mr. Bayley doth not continue amongst us in the work of the ministry, yet, considering the premises, and as a testimony of our good affection to the said Mr. Bayley," goes far to show that, after all, the spirit of fair play prevailed. Mr. Bayley eventually studied medicine, practiced in Roxbury, and died January 17, 1707.

In the latter part of 1672 it was determined to build a meeting-house "of 34 foot in length, 28 foot broad and 16 foot between joists." The first meeting-house stood on the acre which Joseph Hutchinson donated for that purpose; its site is the northern side of Hobart Street, a little east of the old Hook house. Part of the meagre furnishings of this building consisted of the "old pulpit and deacons' seats" taken from that very meeting-house preserved in Salem by the Essex Institute, the parent church having about this time built a new meeting-house, and bestowed these things on the Farmers.

Mr. Bayley's successor was George Burroughs. He was engaged in November, 1680, having then been out of college ten years. He came from a rough experience in the wild district about Casco, where life was in peril from Indian assaults, but after three years stay he went back among the woods and savages, and, doubtless, preferred the certain dangers of the frontier to the treatment he received at Salem Village. The farmers voted sixty pounds for his first year's support, one-third in money, the balance in provisions at stated rates, but they neglected to fulfil their agreement, and compelled him to run in debt to pay his wife's funeral expenses. The unjust suit brought against him by John Putnam, in whose family he had boarded has been mentioned.

The third minister was one Deodat Lawson. Gift of God, his name implied, but Mr. Rice pithily says he could not have been divinely given to this people, save in the way of bare allowance. He remained from early in 1684, and left in the summer of 1688. Daniel Epps, the famous school-master who lived on the present Rogers estate, supplied the pulpit as a layman before Lawson was finally settled.

On the 19th of November, old style, 1689, a church was at length organized, and on that day began the pastorate of a man whose name will ever stand out



most conspicuous in the blackest chapter of New England history, the Reverend Samuel Parris. For in his family broke out and by him was fostered to its direful end, the Salem Witchcraft Delusion. In Mr. Upham's book the events of the preceding years which had a bearing in the accusations and trials, especially the divisions and animosities which, commencing with the Bayley troubles, grew from bad to worse through Burroughs' and Lawson's stay, are all collected and told with the skill of a novelist unfolding his plot to the climax of the catastrophe. Elsewhere in this book appears a summary of the sad story. Only here let it be said that to Danvers, this very town, and not to the present limits of the city of Salem, belongs the melancholy distinction of being the place in which the delusion had its origin. A little back from the present parsonage there is a distinct depression which marks the cellar of Parson Parris' house; here and there "witch houses" are still standing and lived in; and about the present meeting-house of the First Church, in some manner as of lineal descent, centre those associations of the scenes of 1692 with which the whole region is filled.

The covenant "agreed upon and consented unto by the Church of Christ at Salem Village, at their first embodying on y^e 19 Nov., 1869," was subscribed by these twenty-seven persons:

Samuel Parris, pastor.	Eliz. (wife to Sam.) Parris.
Nathaniel Putnam.	Rebekah (wife to John) Putnam.
John Putnam.	Anna (wife to) Bray) Wilkins.
Bray Wilkins.	Sarah (wife to Joshua) Rea.
Joshua Rea.	Hannah (wife to John, Jr.) Putnam.
Nathaniel Ingersoll.	Sarah (wife to Benjamin) Putnam.
Peter Clowes.	Sarah Putnam.
Thomas Putnam.	Deliverance Walcott.
John Putnam, Jr.	Persis (wife to William) Way.
Edward Putnam.	Mary (wife to Sam.) Abbie.
Jonathan Putnam.	
Benjamin Putnam.	
Edward Clowes.	
Henry Wilkins.	
Benjamin Wilkins.	
William Way.	
Peter Prescott.	

Parris rid the church of his ill-fated presence on the last day of June, 1696, having doggedly hung on to a position where he served but to perpetuate and keep alive the troubles for which he was so largely responsible. It is human nature to feel one's blood boil at the thought of the part this man, a minister of God, took in the murder of innocent people, but greater than he were not great enough to rise above the accepted ideas of their time. Through these poor instruments One that is greater than all was working in a way they knew not of. Only such a sacrifice could arouse mankind to the horror of their own unreason. The rocky summit of Gallows Hill bears witness that never again under civilization shall human life be imperiled by such superstition.

With the departure of Parris, a leaf was turned on the record of the dark days of the earliest history of the parish and church, and brighter days appeared,

when after much effort to fill the vacancy, an invitation to Rev. Joseph Green was accepted. He was a Harvard man, and was not quite twenty-three years old when he was ordained, November 10, 1698. Before this he had preached many months, the people had ample opportunity to know him and to become settled in their own minds. It was with unanimity that he was called, and the response which he made he entered in the church book: "I gave an answer to the church and congregation to the effect that if their love to me continued, and was duly manifested, and if they did all study to be quiet, I was then willing to continue with you in the work of the ministry." As an evidence of the new peace brought about by his ministry, certain members who had had nothing to do with the church since the witchcraft days, came to communion February 5, 1699, a red-letter day in the history of the church.

Two years later, and a day of thanksgiving was observed for continued peace and prosperity. The change, says Mr. Rice, was permanent. "Nothing, scarcely, before the settlement of Mr. Green, had been done by a united people. Nothing of importance, scarcely, since, in the space of a century and three-quarters, has been done in any other manner. No minister has been settled except with a practical unanimity; and in each case but one, I think, there has been no dissenting vote in church or parish. Nor has there been, in all that long period, a single serious and obstinate contention among the members of this church and society."

With the beginning of a new century the people determined to have a new meeting-house. Very likely more room was needed, but there were plenty of reasons why the old building should be abandoned. It might well have been dragged where the gibbets had stood and there burned to ashes, but with less poetic justice it was taken down and set up again as a barn on the opposite side of the road, where it stood, Mr. Upham says, "until, in the memory of old persons now living, it mouldered, crumbled into powder-post and sunk to the ground." The new building was erected on "Watch-house Hill," the site of three succeeding meeting-houses, including that now in use. The hill had been leveled considerably and otherwise cleared; it can easily be seen that the spot was wisely chosen by the earliest settlers for the location of a block-house defense against the Indians. The meeting-house of 1701 fronted north, facing Deacon Ingersoll's house. It was first occupied July 26, 1702. From the thirty-four by twenty-eight of the first building the dimensions were increased to forty-eight by forty-two. The building committee were Captain Thomas Flint, Joseph Pope, Lieutenant Jonathan Putnam, Joseph Herrick and Benjamin Putnam. The cost was about three hundred and seventy pounds, part of which was raised by subscription among persons outside of the village limits. Mr. Green contributed liberally and the town people helped somewhat.



A diary kept by Mr. Green has been preserved and printed by the Essex Institute, with notes by Deacon Fowler. It reveals the lovable character of the writer and gives many a glimpse of life in Salem Village during his pastorate. On the 26th of November, 1715, having just reached the age of forty years, and having completed eighteen years of ministry among his people, Joseph Green died, and was buried in the old cemetery which bears the name of one of his successors. Good and just man, the greatness of his work far exceeded the length of his life. Deacon Edward Putnam made this minute in the church-book.

"Then was the choicest flower and greenest olif tree in the garden of our Lord hear cut down in its prime and flourishing estate at the age of forty years and 2 days; who had been a faithful ambassador from God to us 18 years, then did that bright star set and never more to appear her amongst us: then did our sun go down, and now what darkness is come upon us. Put away and pardon our Iniquities, o Lord, which have ben the cause of the Sore dispensure and return to us again in mercy, and provide yet again for this thy flock, a pastor after thy one heart as thou hast promised to thy people in thy word, one which promise we have hope, for we are called by thy name; o leve us not."

June 5, 1717, a year and a half after Mr. Green's death, the Rev. Peter Clark was ordained. He was also a Harvard man, five years out, and about twenty-five years old. Hobart Street is named for Peter Hobart, the father of Mr. Clark's wife, who came here to live about 1730. Mr. Clark's pastorate lasted fifty-one years. Mr. Rice says of him: "Mr. Clark was a man very unlike his predecessor, and yet well fitted to serve the people among whom he came. He had a sharp and vigorous mind, with a taste for theological discussions." A modern congregation would find it hard to sit through a single sermon such as the Rev. Peter's people had to endure every week. A delegation once went to him to suggest that he administer his teaching in less heroic doses; but he said "No; any could leave when they had heard enough, but the sermons must go on to their appointed ends." Two volumes of his works, as well as a number of scattering sermons have been published. One of these, which Mr. Rice seems successfully to have analyzed back to its original plan, presents a scheme of heads and sub-heads, fearfully and wonderfully made—in all, eighty-four separate divisions. No wonder he was widely known as a stalwart preacher, and was called upon to deliver choice specimens of his literary and oratorical skill on special occasions in Boston and elsewhere. Once he had neglected for some reason to join in the prayers of neighboring ministers for the cessation of existing drought, but having been formally requested so to do, he also the next Sabbath prayed for rain, and it soon rained. His negro man, who knew well his master's character, said "he knew that when Massa Clark took hold, something would have to come."

During Mr. Clark's pastorate the first church bell was hung, in 1725; the town of Middleton was incorporated, 1728, and a church there organized in 1729 oc-

casioned the withdrawal of twenty-four members of the Village Church; and in 1752 the Village was separated from Salem and became a part of Danvers.

This entry in the church book, made by Deacon Asa Putnam more than half a century after Deacon Edward Putnam entered his touching obituary of Mr. Green, tells its own story:

"Now, it has pleased God in his holy Providence to Take away from us our Dear and Rev'd pastor by Death, Mr. Peter Clark, who departed this Life June ye 10, 1768—in ye Seventy-Sixth Year of his age, and on ye 15th day was his funeral. Itt was attended by Great Solemnity; his Corps was Carried in to ye Meeting-house; a prayer was made by ye Rev'd Mr. Diman, of Salem; a Searman Delivered by the Rev'd Mr. Barnard, of Salem, from Galatians, 3 Chap., 14 verse. Then Removed to his Grave with ye Church walking before the Corps, assisted by 12 Bears, with a great Concours of People following. . . . Now he is gone, Never to see his face no more in this world, no more to hear the Presious Instructions and Examples out of his mouth, in Publick or in Private, any more; that ye God of all grace would be pleased to sanctifie this great and Sore bereavement to this Church and Congregation for good, and in his own Due Time Give us another Pastour after his own heart to feed this People with Truth, Knowledge and Understanding, that this Church may not be Left as Sheep without a Shepherd, &c."

It was not until after more than four years that the vacancy occasioned by Mr. Clark's death was filled. The church repeated its action of a half century before. It took to itself another young man fresh from his studies, and relinquished the services of his life-work only when death called him to the fullness of his years. More than fifty-three years was Dr. Wadsworth pastor of this people. Over more than a hundred years the two pastorates of himself and his predecessor extended. It was but twenty-five years after the witchcraft times—they seem far back in our annals—that Mr. Clark was settled. The Missouri Compromise had been effected some years before Dr. Wadsworth's death. What chapters of history were enacted while these two men preached at Salem Village and the First Parish of Danvers.

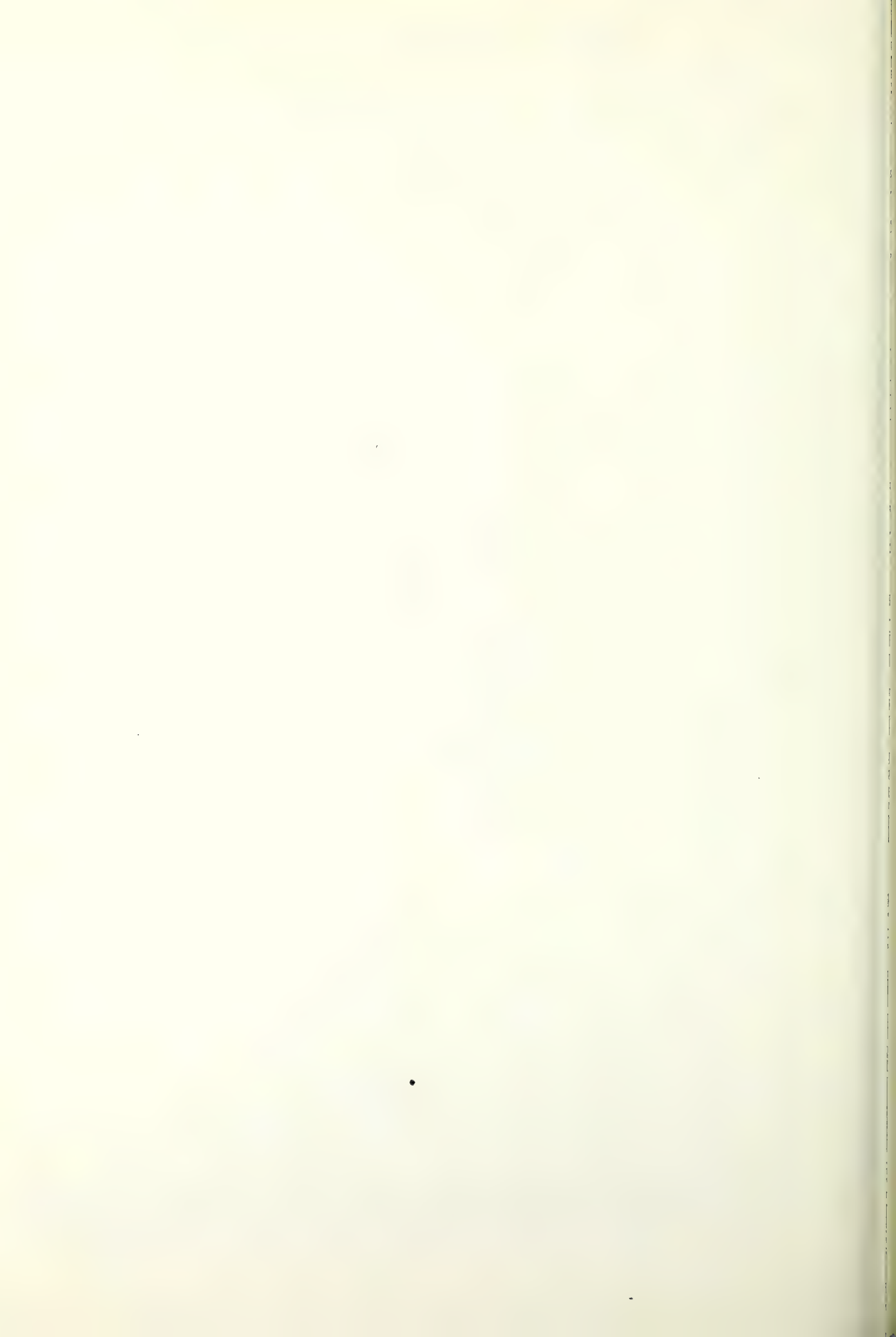
Benjamin Wadsworth was born in Milton, July 18, 1750, graduated at Harvard in 1769, and was licensed to preach a few months before his ordination in Danvers. This event occurred December 23, 1772, and it was an especially great time for the parish. Certain festivities incident thereto have been the subject of local tradition which gives some hint of the nature of the liquid refreshment dispensed by some of the villagers to numerous guests from out of town. Judge Holten made this minute:

"The utmost decency was preserved through the whole of the Solemnity and the Entertainment consequent, was generous and elegant, reflecting great Honour upon the Parish."

Among the items of the bill of costs for the "Entertainment," are:

"For Bisket, £2 5s. 0d.; Pork, Beef, Salt (?) and Rye and Injun Meal, £20 17s. 0d.; about one Ton of Good Hay, £25; for Turkeys, £8 14s. 0d.; for Malt, £0 7s. 6d.; for Rum, £0 8s. 0d.; Syder about half a Barrel £0 15s. 0d.; New England Rum, £0 16s. 0d."

Mr. Wadsworth's salary was at first fixed at ninety pounds. Not long after his coming, came the stirring times of the Revolution. The young minister was among the Danvers men who flew to the North Bridge



at Salem to repel Colonel Leslie's march. About 1784, by way of compromise for a new parsonage, the parish gave Mr. Wadsworth an acre of land on the road west of the old parsonage lot, upon which he erected the rather stately mansion which still bears his name. At this time, too, the square hip-roofed meeting-house which had stood the use of some eighty-four years, was considered too old and small, and in 1786-87 a new meeting-house, the third in the history of the parish, was erected. It was sixty feet long by forty-six wide, twenty-seven feet post, with an ordinary pitch roof. A square tower ran up in front, surmounted by a belfry which in turn was surmounted by a tall and slender conical steeple. The old bell of 1725 was hung in the belfry, but in 1802 a new bell was procured weighing six hundred and seventy four pounds and costing \$299.56.

This meeting-house was burned on the morning of September 24, 1805. "It was supposed to be set on fire by some incendiary," wrote the parish clerk. The accused person was so evidently insane that he "was therefore sentenced to receive no punishment but that of confinement as a lunatick." The greater part of the plate was stolen and suspicions were strong and well grounded that the real criminals were certain persons who used the poor imbecile for a cat's-paw, but through lack of evidence they escaped conviction. The ruins had not ceased smoking when the standing committee,—Amos Tapley, Asa Tapley and Jonathan Porter, Jr.—issued their warrant for a meeting to be held the next week at the Upton Tavern, to consider rebuilding. It was voted to rebuild, that the new building should be of brick, that it should have a dome. The dimensions of the "Brick Church" were sixty-six feet by fifty-six feet, twenty-eight feet to the eaves, and the tower was "sixteen feet four inches square, having two wings, covered with a cupola, and terminated with a vane ninety-six feet from the foundation,"—Dr. Wadsworth's words. The corner-stone was laid May 16, 1806, and the finished building was dedicated November 20th of the same year. Dr. Wadsworth's sermon, then delivered, was published. Its rhetoric, especially in descriptions of the fire, is sufficiently lurid to meet the demands of the occasion. By an act of the Legislature, March 8, 1806, a number of Danversport people were transferred with their estates, from the South Parish to this parish; they had for some time maintained a practical connection here, though the territory of Danversport was never within the original limits of Salem Village and its inhabitants, belonged to the Middle Precinct or South Parish. "Ten respectable characters with their families," Dr. Wadsworth calls them. They were Samuel Page, John and Moses Endicott, Nathaniel Putnam, Samuel Fowler, Caleb Oakes, William Pindar, Jasper Needham, John Gardner, Jr., and Amos Flint, the last three being from what is now West Peabody.

A vote was passed in 1819 that the minister might read a portion of the Scriptures at the opening of the

meeting on the Sabbath and on "all other Publick Days, as in his opinion shall be to the advantage and benefit of his hearers."

In March, 1825, Dr. Wadsworth felt the approach of the end. Previous to that time he had scarcely known sickness. On the 18th of January, 1826, he died, in the seventy-seventh year of his life and the fifty-fourth year of his pastorate. In his last sickness he bought the old burial-ground which bears his name and gave it to the parish, and there is his own grave. An outline of his character, as presented by Mr. Rice, is here condensed:

"Dr. Wadsworth was a man of fine personal appearance, and with the bearing of a thorough gentleman of those days. He is described by the late Judge Samuel Putnam as 'of great bodily vigor, with limbs finely proportioned; about five feet ten inches in height, with a handsome and florid countenance.' But there are those of yourselves, with whom the figure of this former pastor is still familiar. 'I can see him now,' says Dea. Samuel Preston, 'precisely at the minute appointed, with a dignified step passing up the broad aisle, dressed in surplice and band, cocked hat in hand, the curls of his auburn wig gracefully waving over his shoulders; slightly recognizing the powdered dignitaries, such as Judge Holtin, Judge Collins and others, as he passed; ascending with an agile step, the stairs of his high pulpit, and taking his seat under the huge canopy or sounding-board which hung suspended over his head.'

"The doctor was formal and ceremonious, but courteous without exception to all, and warm and kindly, withal, at heart. He kept his position, as the manner of those times was with ministers, a little apart from his people. The children looked upon him with a kind of awe; and the feeling extended to his family and the house in which he lived. The lad who drove his cows to their pasture was not expected to enter the yard by the front way. He could keep persons at a distance from him whenever he chose to do so, with wonderful civility and ease. He was reckoned by many to be reserved; and he was so with many, but not with his intimate friends. In his intercourse with his brother ministers he was often facetious and witty, which may be thought a singular circumstance. But even with his brother ministers he was understood to be a person of dignity. By one of them, Mr. Huntington, of Topsfield, it used to be said that 'when any of the brethren called upon Dr. Wadsworth, they were civil enough,' but when they came to his house 'they threw in their saddles at the front door.' The former part of this only should be believed.

"He was conservative in all his tastes and habits, and did not enter readily into new methods. He introduced the observance of the monthly concert near the end of his ministry, held in the afternoon of Monday; but there were at that time no other prayer-meetings.

"The weekly meeting on Friday evening dates from the settlement of his successor. The service of public or social prayer by the brethren of the church had fallen, indeed, considerably into disuse at this period, so that at the establishment of the Sabbath-school there was some difficulty in finding persons who were willing to offer the opening prayer.

"But, if Dr. Wadsworth had the weakness of a conservative temper, he had also its strength. He was steady and judicious in his work. He did little that ever needed to be undone, either by himself or by any one else. He was a lover of peace, and had wisdom to maintain it. He was able in his own life to illustrate, in a good degree, the principles of the religion he taught. He exhibited remarkable patience and calmness in the midst of difficulties, and resignation in time of trial. He had a steadiness of devotion and of trust, the power of which was not lost upon his people. And thus, if in its later years his ministry failed somewhat in general and marked popular effect, it did not lack in thoroughness and beauty of impression upon those that cherished its influences. It was long afterwards to be noticed that among those whose lives had been moulded by his ministry, there was to be found a rare and admirable type of Christian character."

In a little less than three months after Doctor Wadsworth's decease there was another ordination in the village. Once again the church took unto itself a young man who, in his turn was to grow old in its service. The young man, Milton Palmer Bra-



man, had preached somewhat during Doctor Wadsworth's sickness, and was speedily and unanimously called to become his successor. The date of the ordination was April 12, 1826. He resigned March 31, 1851, after a pastorate of nearly thirty-five years. Nearly one hundred and sixty three years before, the revered young Joseph Green came to Salem Village, and only four lives bridge the span between his coming and Doctor Braman's resignation. A single pastorate of half a century is here and there met with in the history of other churches, but a series of life pastorates like this, aggregating so many years, will not be easily paralleled.

The present parsonage property was purchased May 26, 1832, and was first occupied by Mr. Braman January 8, 1833. In 1835 a vestry or chapel was built on Hobart Street, east of the parsonage, where it stood until 1871, when it was bought and removed by G. B. Martin. In 1838 an act of the Legislature incorporated Samuel Preston, Samuel P. Fowler, Jesse Putnam and their associates under the name of the First Religious Society in Danvers, and a month later, April 18, 1838, this act was repealed, and a new act passed, beginning, "The North Parish in Danvers, of which the Rev. Milton P. Braman is pastor, is hereby made a corporation," etc., and slightly altering the provisions of the former act so that the society "may assess the pews in any meeting-house hereafter erected by them or conveyed to them."

The new meeting-house to be "hereafter erected" was not long in coming. Fears were entertained of the safety of the brick meeting-house. "A certain cracking and settling of the walls which had for years been noticed, became too serious, it was thought, to be longer neglected." There was a unanimous vote to pull it down and build once more a new house. The present meeting-house, the fifth in line of succession, was finished and dedicated November 21, 1839. Its cost was about twelve thousand dollars. Jesse Putnam, Samuel Preston, William Preston, Nathaniel Pope, Peter Cross, Daniel F. Putnam (on his decease, Nathan Tapley), and John Preston were the building committee; Levi Preston, master carpenter. Dimensions of the building, eighty-four by sixty feet.

Early in Mr. Braman's ministry, 1832, a Benevolent Circle was formed among the ladies of the parish. Mrs. Braman was its first president. Some interesting reminiscences, written by Harriet P. Fowler, are here condensed:

"Let your readers come with me in imagination to some old-fashioned farmhouse in the North Parish, now Danvers Centre. It is fifty years ago. From one to two in the afternoon the members are arriving, some in chaises, some in wagons; while others walk over the hills and pastures, not much impeded by stone walls or fences, as trains and pull-backs are not in vogue. At two o'clock quite a large company has assembled, the President reads a chapter from the Bible, and business commences. Some of the ladies have brought large bags and boxes. In one corner a smart, energetic woman is dealing out shoes to bind; a trying

order for novices to sit by an old shoe-binder and try to turn off as many as she does. In another part of the room a lady is giving out material for stocks, those elaborate structures of hair-cloth, bombazine and Satin, in which men of that generation arrayed their necks. Wonder they were not stiff-necked for life! Press-boards, holders and flat-irons show that the ladies mean business.

"A group of elderly women are deftly plying their knitting-needles—wise women, who know that cold hands and feet make cold hearts—so they are providing warm mittens and stockings for fathers, husbands, sons. There is a table where shirts and collars are being made for the luckless wights who have neither mother nor wife to provide for them. A bevy of young misses are tastefully arranging patch-work for quilts, to be given to invalids, or sold to increase the funds of the society. At twilight work is suspended, and after a cup of tea and simple refreshments, it is again resumed till nine o'clock. In the evening the men drop in, making themselves useful by holding yarn for the young ladies or perchance threading the needles for the older ones, and generously responding when the collection was taken at the close of the evening.

"With the money earned we relieved the wants of the poor, clothed Sabbath school children, and bought them books; we carpeted the church and helped to build the chapel; we gladdened the heart of the home missionary, and accumulated quite a little fund found useful in subsequent emergencies. In such a meeting in one of these old-fashioned rooms could be seen the graceful and energetic Mrs. Braman, the quiet but efficient Mrs. Kettelle, and many others whom we of the present might be proud to claim as mothers or grandmothers."

At the fiftieth anniversary of this society, celebrated November 8, 1882, ten of the fourteen original members then living were present.

In the year 1844 the church suffered the loss of those of its members, who formed what is now the Maple Street Church, at the Plains. This division occurred chiefly through consideration of convenience. The earlier losses, when Middleton was incorporated, and when the South parish was established, were of the same nature. But from time to time in the history of the church, members have separated from it to accept the doctrines of other denominations. All of the churches hereafter to be mentioned, except the Catholics, have drawn for their organization in a greater or less degree on the strength of the parent church. Yet the numerical strength of the First Church, in 1867, when there were two hundred and two members, was greater than ever before. The congregations were largest just before the withdrawal of the Plains people, a fair attendance on a pleasant Sabbath being about four hundred.

March 31, 1861, has been mentioned as the date of Dr. Braman's resignation. He had a number of times previously expressed a desire to be dismissed, but his people would not let him go. This time he had decided. "I have reached that time of life when I wish to retire from the labors which the ministry imposes on me, and when it is usually better to give place to younger men."

Dr. Braman was the son of a minister, Rev. Isaac Braman, of Georgetown, and his mother was the daughter of a minister. The father, in response to an invitation to attend the George Peabody reception in 1856, wrote: "If Barzillai, the Gileadite, when only four score years old, could think himself excusable for not going up to Jerusalem with his King, whom he highly esteemed and loved, much more may one who is in his eighty-seventh year be excused from





William P. Braman



going to South Danvers." The son, Milton Palmer Braman, second in a family of five children, went from Phillips Academy to Harvard, graduated from there in 1819, and after a year's teaching entered the Andover Seminary. He preached his first sermon at Danvers, in December, 1825. He married Mary Parker, of Georgetown, in November, 1826, seven months after his settlement here. He moved to Brookline shortly after his resignation, then to Auburndale, where he died April 10, 1882, in his eighty-third year. He was buried in the town of his birth after a brief service at the home of his aged mother.

Dr. Braman was a strong man. Some have placed him at the head of eminent divines reared in Essex County. He was greatly assisted by his wife, one of the wisest and best of women, who relieved him of family cares, so that he could devote his time to parish duties, and in these she was ever a thoughtful assistant. The son, grandson and great-grandson of ministers, all of whom were exemplars in their generation in the discharge of the pastoral office, he likewise, by his earnest and faithful preaching, made a deep impression upon his hearers, many being led to a saving knowledge of the truth and a devoted Christian life, of whom shining examples yet remain.

The present pastor of the church, Dr. Braman's successor, Rev. Charles B. Rice, was installed September 2, 1863, and is approaching the twenty-fifth anniversary of his settlement. Mr. Rice is a native of Conway, Mass. His father, Colonel Austin Rice, who died July 15, 1880, at eighty-six years of age, was for fifty years one of the leading men of western Massachusetts in religious and educational movements, but a few years before his death was sent to the Legislature, was one of the founders of Mt. Holyoke Seminary and a trustee of that institution at the time of his death. Rev. Mr. Rice has always taken an active interest in town affairs, has served on the school committee almost continuously since 1865, has represented his fellow-citizens in both houses of the Legislature, and has served on the State Board of Education. A permanent monument to the memory of Mr. Rice is the published "History of the First Parish in Danvers," which is an amplification of the address delivered by him at the celebration of the two hundredth anniversary of the parish. This book has been chiefly followed in the preparation of this short sketch of one of the oldest, most historic, and in all respects most interesting churches to be found in this country. Many interesting details have been altogether omitted for the reason that they are there easily accessible. Doctor Braman was living at the time of the anniversary. Something more must here be said of him, and from a sermon delivered by Mr. Rice, April 28, 1882, these extracts are taken:

"His strength was in the pulpit. Preaching stood foremost with him, and it was preaching fit to stand in that place of forwardness. His mind was logical, and thus he went clear of all mist and vagueness,

and his thoughts ran steadily toward some point he meant to reach. But he was not dull and dry in reasoning. Along with his logical movement there went a certain enlivening measure of imaginative and almost poetical fancy. Then he had a clear, shrewd sense concerning common life and common things, so that his style was terse and direct and struck sharply on actual practice. And then, hiding behind this shrewd practical sense, or in it, was a line of humor, ready to come into play where it might, and not coming into sight where it ought not. And then he had a gift of sarcasm at hand for use when it might be called for. By all these means he held attention to what he said, and his hearers were interested and entertained, and sometimes in a manner fascinated, even while they might be severely smitten upon.

"He was forcible, direct, clear and pungent. He laid hold on the intellect and sensibilities of his hearers both together. To an unusual degree his sermons ran close to life. I think this was their most distinguished characteristic. They were apt to concern, in some manner, those that heard them; and thus they entered into their thoughts and clung upon their memory. They were not uniform in strength, a thing not to be expected; but they were apt, all of them, to be in some part thoughtful, and of a quality to move one to some thoughtfulness for himself.

"He preached upon all Christian doctrines, and with frequency upon some. The doctrine of justification by faith was dear to him. He was skilled in depicting the lives of men, and he called often into use the great Scriptural biographies. The dead of those former ages rose up here, with bones and flesh and breath, and lived again under his hand. He dealt in this way with the good and the bad, with Moses and David and Pilate and Judas, and he may seem sometimes to have had a certain guinness of satisfaction in the work he might thus make with the bad.

"Dr. Braman drew great attention upon what are termed 'occasional sermons,' discourses preached upon the occurrence of the Fourth of July on a Sabbath day, or in connection with the death of prominent men, as General Harrison or Daniel Webster, or upon the annual days of Fasting or Thanksgiving. On these days this house was filled. People came sometimes in barges from the neighboring towns, and strangers were here often from a greater distance.

"His sermons were always written. He never spoke in the pulpit without notes. Upon one occasion, as he went to preach at South Danvers, now Peabody, his manuscript was forgotten, and he was greatly disturbed when he made the discovery, and unwilling to attempt to preach; but when the time, in the midst of the service, was come, and while yet he scarcely knew upon what he should speak, he went down to the platform before the pulpit, that he might not seem to preach, and there he did preach and in a manner which seemed to those that heard him to surpass his usual powers. He preached also, though he did not call it preaching, in the prayer-meetings he held in the chapel. It is remembered thus that at the chapel prayer-meeting, held on the evening of the day of Daniel Webster's burial, he spoke for a full hour, dwelling upon the burial scenes of great men, and making emphatic as he drew to a close, the insignificance of all earthly honors to one who had just entered into the presence of the holy angels and the Saviour and Judges of men.

"He spoke usually with little of gesture and nothing of oratorical art. His ordinary manner could not be called graceful. He had a well-known habit of rolling a strip of paper upon the fingers of his right hand, and after a certain established order of procedure, and he might be troubled if this resource failed. But when he was once under way in the pulpit upon a theme that stirred him, and was kindled with his topic, his ungraceful manner was either forgotten or it was changed, he gesticulated often with force and freedom, and the spirit of an orator was upon him.

"Dr. Braman was faithful and utterly fearless in rebuking wherever it seemed to him rebukes were needful. He was a conservative man. He was not changeable. He was not like the Apostle Peter. He was apt to stand for the cool side of things. But he stood for the cool side of things sometimes, it must be admitted, in a hot way, that would not have been unbefitting even to Peter.

"He was a strong opponent of slavery. They have misjudged him who from anything that occurred in his later years have thought of him differently. But in this matter his natural conservatism, and his legal habit of mind, had much force in shaping the course he took. As events moved rapidly forward, he himself advanced less rapidly, and in his dislike of all that seemed revolutionary in its origin or nature, he was led, we may think, too far in distrust or opposition toward those great popular movements which were designed under the shining



providence of God, to bring the gigantic evil he himself deplored—though by ways that did not please him—fearfully and gloriously to an utter end.

"Dr. Brannan was a member of the School Committee of the town for twenty-five years, and Chairman of the Board for a considerable portion of that period.

"He was also a member from this town of the Convention held in 1850 for revising the Constitution of the State, and he bore an active and influential part in its proceedings.

"He went little into general society, and had not a liking for social assemblies."

Mr. Rice reached the twentieth anniversary of his settlement, September 2, 1883. Even then his pastorate was longer than any other in the Essex South Conference. In the twenty years, one hundred and ninety-one had been added to the membership; the number of members was then two hundred and seven; largest number in the history of the church, two hundred and twenty-three, in 1877. In 1882 the ratio of church membership to the population of the parish, was larger than ever before. Nearly one-quarter part of all who had ever been members were then still living. Mr. Rice had married one hundred and twenty-six couples, one hundred being of the parish, had attended three hundred and fifty funerals, preached five hundred and thirty-four written sermons and three hundred and ninety-eight unwritten, of which he says with characteristic humor "all ought to have been better, and some ought not to have been at all." Mr. Rice observed the anniversary by a discourse from the pulpit from which the foregoing statistics have been taken, and the following evening the event was made the occasion of a gathering of his own parishioners, friends from other parts of the town, ministers from neighboring churches, and others, for congratulations and social enjoyment. Augustus Mudge presided, and after remarks reviewing the period, he presented Mr. Rice an envelope containing a very substantial token of the esteem of his people. Among the letters read during the evening was this:

"OAK KNOLL, Danvers, 9th mo., 3d, 1883.

"HON. AUGUSTUS MUDGE:

"*Dear Doctor:* Every much regret that I am not able to be with you at the gathering this evening. I am, it is true, better acquainted with the gentleman whom you so deservedly honor on this occasion, as a kind friend and neighbor, as a public-spirited citizen, than as a minister; but the fact that he has held his pulpit for twenty years is proof that he has done good service in it. During this long period I have never heard that his parish have been troubled by the bodily presence of that evil and disagreeable Personage with whom his predecessor, Parson Harris, fought such a losing battle. As a consequence of this he has had no occasion to spend his time in searching for witches among the elderly ladies of his congregation; and the sound theology of his people under his ministrations has made heresy-hunting so unnecessary that the solitary quaker who has sojourned within the parish limits still remains unchanged!

"Pleasantly apart, I beg leave to add my congratulations to yours, and to express my best wishes for my friend Rice and his family.

"Thine truly,

"JOHN G. WHITTIER."

The Sabbath-school was organized in 1818, in Dr. Wadsworth's pastorate. The names of an even hundred of the first scholars are given by Mr. Rice, fifty-six females, forty-four males. The largest number at

any time connected with the school was in 1867, four hundred and four, with an average attendance of nearly three hundred. The school had its origin at a meeting held at Dr. Wadsworth's house, July 30th of the year mentioned. Those present were the first teachers,—Samuel Preston, Elwin Joselyn, Edith Swinerton, Betsey Pope, Eliza Preston, and Betsey, Hannah, Harriet, Nancy, Eliza and Clarissa Putnam. The latter, Mrs. Preston, now living, has been mentioned in another connection. The idea of having a Sabbath-school seems first to have been entertained by Miss Betsey F. Putnam, who had seen the working of such a school in Beverly, started some years previously. The fiftieth anniversary of the Sabbath-school was observed August 9, 1868. Mrs. Emma Putnam Kettelle, who died the year before, had been a teacher from the first year. The first superintendent was Samuel Preston. His successors have been Porter Kettelle, Nathan Tapley, Samuel B. Willis, John Peabody, Ebenezer Putnam, George W. Endicott, Abira Putnam, Wm. R. Putnam, Moses W. Putnam, Augustus Mudge, Edward Hutchinson, George W. French, Samuel A. Tucker, William Siner.

A number of the above served several different times. The longest consecutive term was that of Mr. Mudge, from 1848 to 1868. There were in 1886, connected with the school three hundred and four members, with an average attendance of one hundred and sixty-seven.

A LIST OF DEACONS.

1690-1719. Nathaniel Ingersoll.	1802-18. Joseph Putnam.
1690-1739. Edward Putnam.	1807-19. James Putnam.
1709-18. Benjamin Putnam.	1818-31. Jonathan Wadcott.
1718-33. Eleazer Putnam.	1820-31. Eben. Putnam.
1731-51. Nathaniel Putnam, son of Benjamin.	1832-61. John Thomas.
1733-40. Joseph Whipple.	1832-44. Frederick Howe.
1741-62. Cornelius Tarbell.	1815-48. Ebenezer Putnam, son of Eben.
1756-57. Archelaus Putnam, son of Nathaniel.	1848-61. Samuel Preston.
1757-62. Samuel Putnam, Jr.	1861-83. Elijah Hutchinson.
1762-95. Asa Putnam.	1861-74. William R. Putnam.
1762-83. Edmund Putnam.	1886. Alfred Hutchinson, son of Elijah.
1785-1804. Gideon Putnam.	1886. Edward A. H. Grover.
1795-1802. Daniel Putnam.	

STANDING COMMITTEES (partial list).

1672.	1775.
Lieut. Thomas Putnam.	Tarrant Putnam.
Thomas Fuller, Sr.	John Swinerton.
Joseph Porter.	Cornelius Tarbell.
Thomas Flint.	Abel Nichols.
Joshua Rea.	John Preston.
1700.	1800.
Lieut. Jonathan Putnam.	Jonathan Porter, Jr.
Benjamin Hutchinson.	Levi Preston.
John Tarbell.	Elijah Flint.
Benjamin Putnam.	1820.
Thomas Fuller, Jr.	Moses N. Putnam.
1725.	Jesse Putnam.
Samuel Flint.	Ainos Pope.
Joseph Fuller.	1840.
John Preston.	Jesse Putnam.
Nathaniel Putnam.	Samuel Preston.
Joseph Putnam.	Nathan Tapley.



1860.

Samuel Preston.
Augustus Mudge.
Sylvanus B. Swan.

1870.

Wm. R. Putnam.
W. B. Woodman.
Augustus Mudge.

1874.

Augustus Mudge.

CLERKS (partial list).

First clerk, unknown.
— to 1699. Thos. Putnam.
1700. Jonathan Putnam.
1702. Daniel Rea.
1703. John Putnam.
1705. Benj. Putnam.
1706. Jonathan Putnam.
1707. Daniel Rea.
1708. Edward Putnam.
1709. Samuel Andrew.
1710. Israel Porter.
1720. Joseph Porter.
1731. Joseph Putnam.
1740. Samuel Holten.

S. B. Swan.

S. Walter Nourse.

1880.

Augustus Mudge.
Alfred Hutchinson.
Samuel W. Nourse.

1887.

Augustus Mudge.
Alfred Hutchinson.
J. Peter Gardner.

1750. John Preston.
1760. Asa Putnam.
1770. Archelous Dale.
1781. Samuel Page.
1790. Ebenezer Brown.
1806. Hezekiah Flint.
Israel Andrews.
1820. Amos Pope.
1832. Daniel F. Putnam.
1836. Wm. R. Putnam.
1837. Franklin P. Putnam.
1838-45. Rufus Tapley.
1846-47. Augustus Mudge.

BAPTIST.—On the authority of a letter written in 1817 by Israel Hutchinson, clerk, the Baptist Society was formed November 12, 1781. The first recorded meeting was November 26, 1781. Captain Gideon Foster was chosen Moderator; Dr. Nathaniel Gott, clerk; and Jere. Hutchinson, Israel Porter and Nathaniel Pope, a committee to supply preaching. On the 10th of December, Nathaniel Pope, Samuel Fairfield and Captain Foster were chosen to procure a spot of land to set a meeting-house upon; later they were directed to "go on the spot or spots and see which is most comodose for the society and what it can be purchased for." Ebenezer Moulton and Benjamin Jacobs were added to the committee and the dimensions of the building fixed, "sixty feet in length and forty-five in wedth." January 9, 1782, it was voted "to Build the Meeting-House on Hooper's Plane, so called." In April this vote was reconsidered, and at a meeting held in Mr. Aaron Cheever's house it was voted to "chuse a committe to purchis the Land for the Meting-House." Captain Foster was retained on the new committee, and Aaron Cheever and Ebenezer Dale were the others. They were directed "to purchis a Land to Sett the meting-House on, and agree for a fraim and Git the underpinning." Charles Hall, Brickmaker, conveyed to this committee the land on which the building was erected, twenty-nine poles, by deed dated September 20, 1783, the consideration being twenty-six pounds.

Early in November, 1783, "Voted to Except of Mr. Henry putnams plan for the pews. Voted, that the pews be Sold at Vandue. Voted to choose a Committee to attend the Vandue and make sale of the pews, and to Notify to attend the Sale in ways and manner the Committee shall think proper. Voted that this committee consist of Seven persons." Colonel Israel Hutchinson, Nathaniel Webb, Jona. Sawyer, Nath. Pope, Ebenezer Moulton, Joseph Osborne and Samuel Fairfield were this committee.

A meeting was called just before the following Christmas at the house of the Rev. Benjamin Boltch, to consider the method of settling the outstanding accounts for work on the new meeting-house; the matter was entrusted to Colonel Hutchinson, Nathaniel Webb and John Felt. Jonathan Sawyer was here appointed the first treasurer of the society; he was already "clark," Dr. Gott having early resigned.

The record of the sale of pews is in this form:

"Mr. Aaron Cheever, Vandue master, Vandue open Jonathan Sawyer Clerk.

"Jona. Sawyer, bid of No. 8 at 82 dollars.

"And sold to Colonel Israel Hutchinson.

"James Richardson, Bid of No. 35 at 81 dollars.

"Joseph Smith, Bid of No. 32 at 77 dollars."

And so on. Other bidders were James Richardson, Henry Putnam, Captain Samuel Page, Nathaniel Webb, Samuel Fairfield, Captain Jeremiah Putnam, Captain Gideon Foster, Nathan Upton, Ebenezer Dale, Samuel Fowler, Charles Hall, Aaron Cheever, Simon Pinder, Richard Skidmore, Nathaniel Putnam, John Felt, John Gammell, Nathaniel Smith, John Chapman, Benjamin Kent.

The first pastor really settled over the new society was Rev. Benjamin Foster, and the society was remarkably fortunate at having such a man at hand. He knew his people and they knew him, for he had grown up among them. His father was Gideon Foster, a native of Boxford; his mother, Lydia Goldthwait, of Danvers. He was born in the house which formerly stood on Lowell and Foster Streets, South Danvers, June 12, 1750. His brother Gideon, about a year and a half older, the hero of Lexington, was one of the founders of the church. Benjamin attended the town schools, and when about twenty years old entered Yale College, from which he graduated in 1774. In college he became a decided convert to the belief that immersion is the only valid mode of administering the ordinance of baptism. After graduating he joined the First Baptist Church in Boston, under Rev. Dr. Stillman, who directed his theological studies. He was ordained pastor of a Baptist Church in Leicester, Mass., October 23, 1776. He evidently had preached somewhat at New Mills as a supply during the latter part of 1783.

January 27, 1784, the society met "at the house where they commonly met on the Sabbath days" to see if they would agree with the Rev. Benjamin Foster to preach any longer. They voted to request him to fill the pulpit for the next Sabbath, adjourned over, and then sent Joseph Osborne, Nathaniel Upton and Thomas Stevens "to waight upon him" with a result thus reported,—"the Rev'd. Mr. Foster will Stay with the Society six months unless something extraordinary prevents." When the six months were out, December 8, 1784, it voted to agree with Rev. Mr. Foster to preach till May next, and he, cautious as before, agreed "if sickness don't prevent."

Mr. Foster remained here two years and then ac-



cepted a call to Newport. Another two years and he was pastor of the First Baptist Church of New York. In 1792 the College of Rhode Island (Brown University) conferred upon him the degree of "D.D.," probably because of the talent and learning displayed in his work, "A Dissertation on the Seventy Weeks of Daniel, the particular and exact fulfillment of which Prophecy is considered and proved."

Dr. Foster was a fighter with arguments, and he stood manfully by the guns of Pedit-baptism. He had a controversy with Rev. John Cleveland, of Ipswich, on the baptism question, and his pamphlet, "Primitive Baptism Defended," published September 3, 1784, was widely noticed and a second edition called for and published in 1788. The introduction to this pamphlet, which is really a letter to Mr. Cleveland, contains a passage revealing the character of the man, which it would be well for every minister in the land to adopt:

"May God grant that my pen be directed by truth, and governed by candor and moderation, while I attempt to correct the mistakes of one whom I trust I shall ever have reason to respect! And the more we imbibe of the happy temper of our divine Master, the greater caution we shall use to suppress language which is bitter and censorious towards Christians who differ from us in those points of religion which are of lesser importance."

In the year 1798, in his forty-ninth year, he died in New York, the death of a hero. Not in that glory of military renown, clothed with which his brother Gideon lived to a very old age, but in a scourge of yellow fever. When panic was everywhere and people fled from the city, he remained at his post and fearlessly visiting the sick and dying, he took his life in his hands and lost it. True heroism! When the general roll is called how these instances of unselfish devotion, untrumpeted from the house-tops, will far outshine and outnumber the brave deeds of war.

Dr. Foster was buried in the Baptist Cemetery, N. Y., and on the marble over his grave are these words written by an eminent Presbyterian clergyman of that city:

"He excelled as a preacher; as a Christian he shone conspicuously; in his quiet life he was fervent; the church was comforted by his life, and now laments his death."

At a meeting, early in 1786, Nathaniel Putnam, Benjamin Kent and Simon Pinder were chosen to provide preaching for that year. A similar committee the next year were Jonathan Sawyer, Aaron Cheever, Nathaniel Webb; 1788, Nathaniel Upton, Nathaniel Webb, Israel Hutchinson; 1789, Messrs. Upton, Hutchinson and Ebenezer Dale; 1790, Israel Porter, Eleazer Wallis, Colonel Hutchinson; 1791, the same; 1792, the latter two and Newall Wilson. But little other business was transacted in these years. A vote, of 1789, that the committee provide preaching once a month and as much oftener as they can, is significant. In 1792 the clerk, Israel Hutchinson, Jr., was directed to draft three subscription papers for the committee to see "how much money they can

gitt sined for the support of the gauspill the present year."

In the fall of 1792, we have a hint of a law-suit in which the Society was involved with the Second Parish in Beverly. Richard Waitt had been representing the society and Joseph Batchelder, Israel Porter and the clerk were chosen to help him fight. March 26, 1793, the society met to see what measures they would take "respecting the Rev. Thomas Green preaching for the present year." Ebenezer Wallis, Israel Porter, Josiah Swett, I. Hutchinson, Jr., and Nathaniel Upton considered the matter, and their report was accepted "Respecting giving the Revd. Thos. Green all the monies that may be Subscribed on the subscription papers, and that he shall Have all the Light Contributions and all other advantages witch may arise by sd society."

"A COPY OF THE SUBSCRIPTION PAPER.

£ s. d.			£ s. d.		
Nathl. Webb.....	2	8	0	John Bushby.....	0 12 0
Israel porter.....	2	8	0	Jona. Felton.....	0 12 0
Israel Hutchinson, Jr.....	2	8	0	Newall Wilson.....	1 4 0
Timothy Fuller.....	1	0	0	Barnabas Conant.....	0 12 0
John Creasey ye 2.....	0	12	0	Peter Woodbury.....	1 4 0
Nathl. Upton.....	1	0	0	Nathl. Prinse.....	1 0 0
Amos Sawyer.....	1	0	0	Jona. Prince.....	0 12 0
Wm. Johnson.....	0	16	0	Wm. Trask ye 2.....	0 18 0
Jos. Swett.....	1	10	0	Jona. Waitt.....	0 6 8
Simon Dodge.....	1	10	0	Israel Hutchinson, Esq.....	2 10 0
Asa Woodbury.....	3	0	0	Moses Endicott.....	0 12 0
E. Wallis.....	2	0	0	Edw. Dodge.....	1 10 0
Charles Dennis.....	0	18	0	Israel Putnam.....	2 0 0
Wm. Trask.....	1	10	0	Richard Waitt.....	0 12 0
John McKentiar.....	1	4	0	Josiah Batchelder.....	1 0 0
Jona. Wilson.....	0	12	0	Joshua Osborne.....	0 12 0
Samuel Dutch.....	1	4	0	Gideon Batchelder.....	0 12 0
Josiah Rayment.....	0	10	0	Seth Richardson.....	0 9 0
Joseph Pettengill.....	0	18	0	Samuel McKentiar.....	0 9 0
Lemuel Childs.....	1	6	0	Richard Skidmore, Jr.....	0 6 0
Rich. Skidmore.....	0	12	0	Wm. Hillbert, Jr.....	0 9 0
Joshua Prinse.....	2	8	0	Joseph Hilbert.....	0 9 0
Daniel Usher.....	0	18	0	Wm. Hillbert.....	0 4 6
Jerem. W. Putnam.....	0	12	0	Eph'm Smith.....	0 6 0
Nathl. Putnam.....	1	4	0	Ebenezer Browne.....	1 4 0
Aaron Cheever.....	1	0	0	Nicholas Browne.....	1 10 0
Saml. Fairfield.....	0	9	0	Sam'l Cheever.....	0 12 0
Jona. Robbins.....	0	8	0	Bartholomew Smith.....	0 12 0
James Burch.....	0	6	0	Elias Endicott.....	0 15 0
Widow Fowler.....	0	12	0	Edmond Putnam.....	0 12 0
Simon Pinder.....	1	16	0	John Hutchinson.....	0 6 0
Richard Elliott.....	0	10	0	Nath'l Batchelder.....	0 12 0
John Endicott.....	1	16	0	Auth. Buxton.....	0 18 0
Thos. Putnam.....	1	12	0	Elisha Fuller.....	1 4 0
John Welch.....	0	8	0	Abigail Broadstreet.....	0 6 0
Gideon Foster.....	1	16	0		
Dennison Wallis.....	2	2	0		
Benj. Jacobs.....	1	4	0		

£69 19 2

A proprietors' meeting was held in April, 1793, to further consider the settlement of accounts and disposal of unsold pews. The committee were directed to hang the pew doors and make the end doors to the house; James Richardson was given a certain time in which "to cap his lot of pews." The next year a subscription paper was again passed around, "to see how much they can get sined for Rev. Thomas Green;" and he was also given the light contribution. It may have been from excessive lightness



that Mr. Green resigned, November 26, 1796. The next March it was voted "to procure sum person who possesseth a good Carriotor to preach for the Society this year, and the committee is to promise the minister all the contribusian that arises by the Society or otherwise all the money that the committee shall see proper." Nothing like having these little financial matters between pastor and people plainly understood. It is not shown in the society records who first succeeded Mr. Green. There was no settled minister for six years. Elder Joshua Young was supplying in the fall of 1800. In December, 1802, the standing committee made a report on Lord's Day evening, after the service that they have agreed with Mr. Jeremiah Chaplin "to preach to the Society one year Exclusive of Two Days the committee agreed to give him; we are to pay 312 dollars, equal to 6 dollars pr. day, wich the Society appeared to be very well satisfied with, and also voted to pay the same."

A minute has been preserved of certain donations to Mr. Chaplin for the society:

"The above money was given by Rev. Samuel Stillman's Church, Mr. Babbins's Church and the church at Charleston, that is to say,

From Dea. Stillman's	\$70.25
From Mr. Babbins's	61.8
From Charleston	20.10
	<u>\$152.15</u>

"By a box of Glass 100 f 8 by 10 Inches.

"Given by Deacon Wutt, of D. Stillman's

"Church cost \$13.75 cents

"1801, Sept. 13, J Reed Eight Dollars of

"Deacon wild, it being a Remmont Not

"paid to Charles for when Mr. Chaplin died

"The above money 8.

\$140.43

Dr. Stillman was the pastor of the First Baptist Church of Boston, with whom Benjamin Foster studied. The society sent grateful acknowledgment of the prompt and liberal assistance thus afforded in repairing the meeting-house.

In 1805 Mr. Chaplin's salary was raised to four hundred dollars, but the ordinary formula of the annual meetings was a vote for a subscription paper, "to see how much could be raised for the continuance of the gospel, as the Revd. Jeremiah Chaplin's time is nearly expired." Contributions were taken, one year every Sabbath; again, by passing the box around twice in every three months to collect the money of the subscribers. To be impartial in this business, in 1816 Samuel Whipple, collector, was directed "to carry Round the Book in the gallery at the time they pass Round below to collect the Subscription."

On the 17th and 18th days of September, 1817, the Salem Baptist Association met with the New Mills people.

There were at this time fourteen churches within the association, namely, the First Haverhill, the pioneer of Baptist Churches in this vicinity, founded in 1765; Chelmsford, 1771; Rowley, 1786; Danvers,

1793; Beverly, 1801; First Salem, 1804; South Reading, 1804; Nottingham West, 1805; Newbury, 1805; Gloucester, 1807; Marblehead, 1810; Methuen, 1815; Lynn, 1816; Reading, 1817.

That the meeting was quite an event may be judged from the preparations. A month before, there was a special meeting of church and society, at which there were appointed to act with the standing committee, a special committee of ten,—Dea. Isaac Porter, Benjamin Kent, Captain Thomas Putnam, William Trask, Captain Thomas Cheever, Captain Edward Richardson, Major Joseph Stearns, James Carr, William Johnson, Israel Hutchinson. They met at Mr. Hutchinson's house, to perfect arrangements. Major Black was made chairman. Messrs. Kent, Porter and Hutchinson were detailed to see that provision was made for the care of horses; Captain Putnam, Major Black and D. Hardy—the latter not of the ten—were directed "to visit the Nabours to see what entertainments they will make both as to provisions and Lodging for the ministers and messengers who may attend the association;" "to Seete the Ladies"—there the ten passed around sly jokes, of course, at the expense of each other, but they settled down with commendable fitness on the three men with handles to their names most suggestive of chivalry,—Captain Putnam, Captain Cheever, Captain Richardson; "to keep the Dores of the meeting-house," Dea. Porter, Messrs. Kent and Hutchinson; "to attend in the galleries and place the people at the best advantage to prevent Disorder," Major Stearns, Mr. Allen Gould; "to examine the meeting-house and report what it will be necessary to do," Captain Putnam, Messrs. Trask and Kent. The general committee met again and "maid a report what they had Dun for the association, as it Respects vitting & Lodging, & Likewise to the Keeping of horses. Rev. Mr. Chaplin, Messrs. Kent and Hutchinson, were appointed to make a division of the guests among the people; it was voted "that Mr. John Dock have the Sole Care of the Singing, & that he may invite what assistance he may think necessary, to assist him." One more meeting the committee had; William Trask and Major Black were appointed "to keep good order round the meetinghouse in Divine Sarvis." The only record which Mr. Hutchinson made of the occasion, which presumably was carried out with pleasure and profit, was in regard to the singing; he himself was called upon to manage this part of the service, owing to John Dock's previous engagement. He employed, he writes, Mr. Kinne, of Salem, Mr. Carey, of Salem, Mr. Timothy Berry, of Beverly and many others attended with them. "Kinne's bill, \$14—Berry's bill, \$50—Mr. Carey came with others gratis."

The Salem Association met with the New Mills Church again in 1836 and again in 1854; in the latter year it was comprised of twenty-four churches.

In April, 1818, Mr. Chaplin's salary was made five



hundred dollars, to be raised by tax assessed on the polls and estates of those persons who are or who may be petitioners for an incorporation act, and as if to give comfort and encouragement to the minister, a copy of the record of this action was sent to him. But a month later he accepted a call to another position. For sixteen years he had lived and labored among this people, how devotedly and with what mutual affection can be judged from the extracts of letters which follow. The meagreness of his salary forced his domestic economy into narrow straits; it is said that he often was seen fishing from Spite Bridge, and whether or not he had a weakness for angling, doubtless the catch was welcome to the frying-pan. It is a pleasant thing to record that his reputation for sterling manhood, conscientious work and scholarly attainments brought to him an invitation to accept the presidency of the institution since known as Bates' College.

May 18, 1818, his release was reluctantly granted, and the unfeigned thanks of the society were tendered him for his long and faithful services. Further, three persons were chosen "to form an address to be presented to him." Their names appear below:

"DANVERS, May 30, 1818.

"REV. JEREMIAH CHAPLIN."

"Rec. & Lea. So.—We are authorized by the unanimous vote of the Baptist Society in Danvers, in behalf of the same, to present you our unfeigned thanks for your long and faithful labors with us as a minister of the Gospel and preacher of morality; and to express our sincere wishes that wherever you may in providence be called the smiles of Heaven may accompany you. You would deem it superfluous were we to enlarge upon the high estimation which we have ever placed on your ministerial performances or the love which we have ever borne toward you as a citizen. The reluctance with which we have lately assented to your dismission sufficiently bespeaks these sentiments. Nothing but a sense of duty in consideration of your present feelings has drawn this assertion from us. Although your removal is to us not joyous, but grievous, yet the consideration of this removal and the circumstances under which you leave us, afford us a very pleasing reflection. We have the satisfaction to believe that no want of attachment to us, love of honor, pecuniary views or sinister motives, of whatever nature, had any part in inducing you to quit a congregation. And much as we regret the loss which we must sustain by this separation, we are not disposed to complain of any injustice on your part. No, Sir! We are rather disposed to feel grateful for the privileges which we have already enjoyed, and to hope that the usefulness of your labors will be more extensive than it could be with us. We should be extremely contracted and selfish in our views were we to wish the general good to be sacrificed to our particular interest. That your removal will be for the general good we have not undertaken to decide from our own knowledge, but have acted with deference to your superior judgment, and so far as self-denial would admit have acted with cheerfulness.

"We request and trust we shall ever have an interest in your supplications at the throne of Him who gave and who taketh away. Be assured dear Sir, we possess the most affectionate feelings for yourself and family. Wishing you may receive a hundred-fold in this time, and in the world to come eternal life.

"FREDERICK EMERSON, }
"JOSEPH STEARNS, } Addressing
"THOMAS PUTNAM, } Committee.

"June 1, 1818. Read in parish meeting and approved.

ISRAEL HUTCHINSON, Clerk.

Many years after Mr. Chaplin's departure, one of his successors wrote: "The parting scenes as they still linger in the memories of the aged, and as rehearsed by them with tearful eye, show how deep a hold he had upon his people."

It was at the beginning of Mr. Chaplin's ministry that the Beverly people withdrew to form a church of their own, and by reason of their dismissal and from other causes, the parent church was left in a low condition, with but thirty-eight members. At the close of Mr. Chaplin's ministry the membership was seventy-four.

On the 21st of June, 1818, the next Sabbath after Mr. Chaplin left, Rev. James A. Boswell preached. Three or four weeks later a meeting was held to see if the society were so "satisfied with the gifts and tallants" of this preacher as to wish to have him supply longer. The meeting left it to the committee and the committee engaged him for three-quarters of a year. A well-known lady who was then a young Miss attending Miss Martin's "Dame's School" at New Mills, remembers being present at his installation, and that the new minister looked very young and small when the old divines were talking to him. Very likely any man would have felt somewhat diminutive on such an occasion.

On the 12th of February, 1819, the act was passed which has been hinted at, incorporating the First Baptist Society in Danvers. The original incorporators were, Andrew Batchelder, Martin Bates, Michael Barry, Moses Black, James Carr, Benjamin Chaplin, Thomas Cheever, Caleb Clarke, Parker Cross, John Doak, George Ellis, Solomon Emerson, Israel Endicot, George Ervin, Levi Fish, Benjamin Foster, William Francis, Elijah Fuller, Timothy Fuller, Daniel Goodhue, Allen Gould, Andrew Gould, Daniel Hardy, Stephen Haynes, Israel Hutchinson, Aaron Jacobs, Ebenezer Jacobs, Henry Johnson, Wm. Johnson, Hercules H. Josselyn, John Kenny, Benj. Kent, Benj. Kent, Jr., Jos. Kent, John Kent, Robert Lefavor, Nathaniel Mayhew, Samuel McIntire, Jonathan McIntire, John Mitchell, William Morris, Amos Osborn, Jeremiah Page, John Page, Benjamin Perry, Allen Peabody, Samuel Pinder, John Porter, Jonathan Proctor, Amos Putnam, Allen Putnam, Andrew Putnam, Jeremiah Putnam, John Putnam, Thomas Putnam, Parker Richardson, Briggs D. Reed, William Shillaber, Samuel Slater, Ephraim Smith, Joseph Stearns, Seth Stetson, Timothy Stevens, Asa Stickney, Thomas Symonds, William Trask, Daniel Upham, Benjamin Webb, Nathaniel Webb, Nathaniel Webb, Jr., Samuel Whipple, Stephen Whipple, Amaziah Whitney, Noah Whittier and Moses W. Wilson.

The first meeting under the new act was held at School-house, No. 2, on Monday, March 29, 1819, at six o'clock, P.M., to choose officers and levy a tax for support of the Gospel and other expenses for the ensuing year. Sixteen votes were cast for moderator, all for Thomas Putnam; twenty for clerk, all for Israel Hutchinson. Thomas Putnam, Moses Black and Benjamin Kent were elected assessors; Joseph Stearns, treasurer; Hercules H. Joslyn, collector. The first votes of money under the new order were in this wise: "Voted to Raise \$400 for the Benefit of



the Gospel; Voted to Reconsider the Vote for \$400; Voted to raise \$350 Dollars for the Benefit of the Gospel; Voted to Reconsider the Vote for \$350; Voted unanimously to Raise \$300 for the support of the gospel in Said Society the present year." Evidently a case of a strong working minority. The sum finally voted was not, however, let it be hoped, the limit of the minister's salary. The old subscription was not abandoned, but the committee were directed to present it to those persons who did not "come under the incorporation act," or any others disposed to help.

In April it was voted without dissent - his "gifts and tallants" had stood the test—to give Mr. Boswell a call to settle. On his acceptance, it was voted unanimously to give him an ordination on the second Wednesday of June, and that the Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth and the Rev. Samuel Walker be invited to attend. Ten dollars was subsequently voted to Benjamin Chaplin to defray expenses of singing on the occasion.

At the beginning of the next church year, March, 1820, there was not a unanimity in the invitation to Mr. Boswell to continue, and after careful consideration he asked to be dismissed. Dismissal was granted, but the fact that both a letter of recommendation and—what was of much greater import, judging from the monetary votes of the society—a present of one hundred dollars, were given him, goes far to remove the idea that any ill-feeling existed between pastor and people.

Rev. Arthur Drinkwater preached more or less during the following spring and summer, and in August the society met to consider his gifts and talents, and requested him "to make them a visit and supply the pulpit for a certain term of time as the Society may think proper." In September advice was received from Dr. Chaplin, their old pastor, "respecting Mr. Drinkwater's character as being a good gospel minister," and he was invited to settle over the church. December 7, 1821, was appointed for installation.

In November, 1822, there were certain votes passed which must have had a meaning to somebody,— "Voted that there be a committee chosen to wait on the man who stole the wood from the Society. Voted that the man that stole the wood be allowed 24 hours to produce the man he bought the wood of, and if he does not he must take the course of the law."

In 1824 Abednego Rust and Nathaniel Tuttle were chosen "thything men to keep the boys still;" about the time of Mr. Drinkwater's installation William Johnson had been empowered to present to the grand jury any persons making any disturbance in or about the meeting-house on the Sabbath; in 1825 Daniel Hardy was deputed to take care of the boys in the galleries, and the thything men chosen by the town were requested "to take cognizance of the boys that throng the porch before divine Service, to the inconvenience of the females that are going into the

meeting-house." Does any grandfather wink slyly to himself?

In January, 1826, Gideon Foster, Benjamin Kent and Briggs R. Read were commissioned to draft a bill and secure its passage by the Legislature, authorizing the taxation of pews; such a bill became a law in the following March. By its provisions a person must own, in order to vote thenceforth in the society meetings, at least one-half a floor pew or the whole of a gallery pew.

The year 1828 is conspicuous in the annals of the Baptist Society as the year of a new house of worship. Though the first house was but forty-five years old, suspicions were entertained as to its strength. An association of subscribers, afterwards proprietors, was formed to build a new house.

The proprietors of the new meeting-house, though composed, of course, of the leading Baptists, were separate and distinct from the society. They held their own meetings and kept their own records, Samuel P. Fowler acting as clerk. At their first meeting, in March, 1828, it was voted, "That if the proprietors of the old meeting-house are willing to dispose of their house and the land on which it stands, for a reasonable consideration we purchase it for the purpose of removing the house and erecting a new one in its place, to be governed by the present incorporation. The property in the house to belong to the subscribers to the new meeting-house. It is understood, in case we purchase the old meeting-house, a new one will be erected on its site within eighteen months." Eben Hunt, Arthur Drinkwater and Moses W. Wilson were appointed to see if the proprietors of the old meeting-house were willing to dispose of their house under such conditions.

The society held a series of meetings about the same time, at which the standing committee were empowered to sell the building "for four hundred dollars and nothing less, and more if they can get it," the purchasers to remove the same before the following June; and the "subscribers" were permitted to erect a new meeting-house on the old lot for the use of the church and society, to be governed by the act of incorporation already in force.

That old church is still in existence. It was bought by John A. Learoyd and removed to the Plains, not far from Lindall Hill, where its timbers grew, and has ever since been used as a currier-shop. It was thought, as has been said, old and unsafe when sold, but as Mr. Rice, with characteristic humor, remarks, "it has upon it at the present time a certain air of breadth and settlement in configuration of such a sort that the eye of the beholder may not readily discern to what end it should ever fall down."

The new building committee were Samuel Fowler, Arthur Drinkwater, Daniel Hardy, Briggs R. Reed, and Ebenezer Hunt. The chairman was directed, among other things, to ascertain whether any compensation could be obtained for the land belonging to



the meeting-house lot, but used as a highway since the widening of the road in 1802, and he found that the society had slept too long on their rights. The proprietors held meetings through the summer and fall, and from time to time instalments of subscriptions were paid in. In December, 1828, they wished to know whether their subscription paper was an instrument sufficiently binding to sue upon for non-payment, and Messrs. Fowler, Hunt and Reed were sent to obtain advice from Rufus Choate, then at South Parish, and Squire Benj. Merrill. The advice was that the paper would hold.

On the 17th of March, 1829, the house was finished, and the committee were directed to "inform the Baptist Society at their annual meeting (when it is understood that the house will have been accepted) that the house is ready for their use, and that they be desired to make arrangements for the opening of the house with appropriate religious services."

May 1st, John Porter, Benj. Kent and Benj. Porter were chosen to arrange for dedication. May 25th Mr. Kent and Daniel Hardy were authorized to sell the pews in the new church at public auction by bidding for choice over and above the appraisal, the appraisal to cover the cost of the house; and they were also directed "to obtain a legal title to the land under a part and adjoining said meeting-house of the family of the late Captain Thomas Putnam, deceased." A summary statement of the cost of the church is this:

E. Felt,	\$135.00
Nathaniel Galusha,	110.80
E. Perry,	20.63
Jona. Perry,	20.00
Israel Embilott,	58.21
Ebenezer Hunt,	2.00
Edmund Needham,	18.90
M. Dolsifer,	100.00
Sam'l. Fowler,	44.27
S. P. Fowler,	3.00
Henry L. Gould,	21.70
M. Wilson,	
W. Francis, } Carpenters,	\$4200.60
J. Ross,	
Total,	\$4825.11

At this time when the people moved out of the old house into the new, the relations of pastor and people and of the people to one another should have been particularly harmonious. Mr. Drinkwater closed his pastorate June 26, 1829. During the last year of his service some very unpleasant differences of opinion arose in the society which resulted in the organization of the Universalist Society, weakening not inconsiderably the society in which the division occurred. Universalism had its beginnings in Danvers much earlier than this, as will hereafter appear. A hint at the feeling which existed in 1829 may be found in a vote that the committee be instructed "to inquire into the story that has gone abroad that the Unitarians want to get the new meeting-house."

Mr. Drinkwater is remembered by certain old peo-

ple as one of the sort of men that Cæsar liked to have about him, not a bit "lean and hungry." He was of a light, florid complexion, of talents not rising high above the average; he made many friends outside of his own church.

In the spring of 1830 the Rev. James Barnabee was by unanimous vote invited to fill the vacant pulpit. He is remembered by old people as a man with a very loud voice. Mr. Barnabee's year commenced on the first of May, and six hundred dollars was voted for his support and incidental charges. His pastorate was short, ending in May, 1832, but very eventful; soon after he came the great revival all through the churches was felt here with so great effect that the membership was increased from ninety-three to one hundred and thirty-nine. At the old church, Dr. Braman's, there were added in the same period one hundred and twelve members, increasing the membership from about one hundred, in 1828, to one hundred and ninety-five in 1833.

July 23, 1832, the society united with the church in giving a call to the Rev. John Holroyd, at a salary of five hundred dollars for the first year. Five years later, November 8, 1837, Mr. Holroyd died while at Providence, R. I.,—the only instance of a vacancy in the pastorate caused by death. During his labors the membership of the church reached its highest limit—one hundred and fifty-five. He was about sixty years old at his death; a quiet, venerable appearing man, greatly beloved and lamented by all who knew him. He left a widow, but no children; she was the daughter of Dr. Benedict, of Providence, a somewhat noted Baptist preacher and writer.

May 26, 1838, Rev. E. W. Dickinson accepted a call of the church and society, at a salary of six hundred dollars. His stay was short. He resigned in October of the next year; in his letter of resignation he wrote: "The causes which lead to this step, it is presumed are already known, and their capitulation at this time is not needed. The subject has long been before our minds, and although the separation, to me at least, is painful, still the feelings natural to such an event are less poignant than if it had been sudden."

For more than a year after Mr. Dickinson's resignation there was no settled pastor.

Rev. J. Humphrey Avery supplied the pulpit some of the time, and in January, 1841, he was invited to become settled. In response he wrote that he would come on the following conditions:

"That I receive the ninety dollars now due for supplying your pulpit, before the close of the present week; that my salary commence the first day of February; that I have seven hundred dollars per annum, to be paid quarterly; that I have two Sabbaths during the year to dispose of as I may think fit; that the church and society have the right to dismiss me at any time by giving me three months notice; that duplicates of this contract be signed by the committee of the church and society and myself, in presence of competent witnesses; that one of the duplicates be left with the clerk of the church or the clerk of the society and the other with me. Should any apology be deemed proper, brethren, for the formality of this statement, I have only to say that in mere business transactions I have but one method."



The business men at New Mills were evidently not displeased with a business-like pastor; the conditions were accepted. After seven or eight months he addressed another letter to the committee in equally plain terms, giving them the choice of accepting his resignation February 1, 1842, or of making his salary six hundred dollars after that date and, in addition, furnishing him "with a good room near the meeting-house, to which he might remove his library," and of giving him a regular installation as soon as might be convenient. And the terms of the latter alternative were promptly accepted. Mr. Avery had been a Congregationalist.

On the 5th of July, 1843, the society voted unanimously to concur with the church in giving the Rev. Joseph W. Eaton a call, at a salary of five hundred dollars for the first year. His letter of acceptance is dated July 17, 1843. The next spring he wrote:

"The satisfaction, which you have been pleased to express with my poor services for the past year has been particularly grateful to my feelings. . . . The union which I am informed pervades your body gives me reason to hope that my labors among you may yet be useful, and so long as this state of things continues I shall be encouraged to exert myself for your spiritual benefit."

But times were hard for the church and society during Mr. Eaton's pastorate. Among the founders of the church, it will be remembered, none were more prominent than Gideon Foster and certain other South Parish men, and for a number of years the New Mills Church was supported by all people of that denomination, far and wide in this vicinity. But we have seen how, in 1801, the Beverly people withdrew to form a church of their own; then, in 1804, the First Baptist Church of Salem was established, and, doubtless, a number of South Parish people who found themselves more conveniently situated to Salem than to New Mills, at once associated themselves with the Salem Church. But in the meantime there had been a growing desire among those parishioners of the New Mills Church who lived in the southern part of the town to have a church of their own. They began to hold meetings in Armory Hall in 1843, settled a minister and built a chapel that same year. This was about the beginning of Mr. Eaton's pastorate at New Mills, during which thirteen of his church-members were dismissed to join the new church. These dismissals, though not great in number, came at a time when the parent church could ill afford any loss of strength. But a much more serious element of disturbance was the storm of the anti-slavery movement which centered on the old church and struck hard. An account of the "Come-outers" appears elsewhere. About the only mention of anti-slavery which appears on the society's records are these votes:

April 4, 1839. "Voted that the Lectors on Peace, Temperance and anti-slavery be free of expense, after having the Consent of the Standing Committee."

April 21, 1840. "Voted it be left with the Standing Committee whether there shall be lectures in the meeting house on the subject of slavery the ensuing year."

It was well understood that Mr. Eaton was to have

six hundred dollars after the first year, but it was not easy to raise the money. They asked him to take five hundred dollars. "On listening," he replied, "to the description you gave me of the financial concerns of the society, I stated that I was at a loss to know exactly what my circumstances were, but promised that if I could do anything to help to extricate the society from its embarrassments, I would cheerfully do it. On looking over my accounts, however, I find myself much more largely indebted to others than I supposed myself to be, and that my salary has been barely sufficient to enable me to meet my expenses. I do not see how they can be reduced. The idea of being in debt without having the means to pay it, is to me distressing, both from the sinfulness of the thing and from its influence on the cause of religion. I have nothing to depend upon for a support but the compensation I receive for my services, and must look therefore to the people whom I serve for the means of a comfortable maintenance. Still, I cannot endure the thought of being a burden to the society; hence, hoping we may have health and strength, considering the dull state of business, and desirous of affording the society what relief I can, I will try, though I know not how I shall succeed, to do this year with five hundred and fifty dollars."

To add to the difficulty of the situation, on the morning of September 6, 1847, the church and vestry were destroyed by fire, and there was no insurance. An adjoining dwelling, owned by Aaron Eveleth, was burned at the same time.

The standing committee pluckily issued a warrant before the close of the day, calling upon the society to take action as to building a new house. In one week from the date of the warrant, the shortest time allowable, the society met and voted "that we feel it our duty to make an effort to erect a new house in place of the one destroyed by fire," and appointed twelve men to circulate a subscription paper for the purpose,—Daniel Goodhue, Jr., Tristram Woodbury, Hiram Preston, David H. Caldwell, William Putnam, Henry Johnson, Benj. Porter, Moses Black, Rev. J. W. Eaton, Abijah Porter, Peter Waitt and Jacob F. Perry. Both the Universalist Society and the new society at the Plains promptly tendered the use of their churches to the Baptists. Arrangements were made with the former.

On the 20th of September, Benjamin Porter, Moses Black and David H. Caldwell were instructed "to select such a model of a house as they think will best suit the society."

On the 18th of October a building committee were chosen to carry out the vote of its society to rebuild,—Benjamin Porter, David H. Caldwell, Moses Black, Henry Johnson and Josiah Ross. The third meeting-house of the society was erected within the next year and is the one now in use. The present church bell was then purchased by certain "proprietors," and was hung in the tower on the following conditions:



"That the bell be rung by the sexton of the Baptist Society on Sundays, the Universalist Society paying one-half the expense; that the bell be rung at any other time by either Society, not interfering with our religious services, by each paying their own sexton; the door to be locked — one key to be kept by the sexton, one to the care of the Fire Department. The remains of the bell, if ever burned, to go to the proprietors of the bell. The bell to be hung on a good substantial bell frame secured to the deck."

The following clipping from an old newspaper is interesting in this connection:

NOTICE.

The Ladies of the First Baptist Society in Danvers will give a Tea Party on Wednesday, Oct. 4th, in Citizens' Hall, New Mills, to aid in furnishing the new house of worship, now erected on the site of the one destroyed by fire last year. Good music will be secured for the occasion, etc., etc.

On the 23d of April, 1849, Mr. Eaton addressed to the society a letter of resignation. Like his other communications it is full of Christian manliness and forbearance; and it gives an insight into the state of things which, by reason of circumstances beyond his control, made his pastorate not a bed of roses. "Just before your former meeting-house burnt, I was led to canvass the question whether I ought not to resign my office, but after the occurrence of that event I concluded it was my duty at any rate to remain with you and aid you in every way in my power until another edifice should be erected." It was after the completion of the new church that he resigned. In explanation he wrote: "I do this not because as great an amount of success has not been realized as could have been anticipated, considering the distracted state of things when I came among you, the adverse influences with which I have had to contend, the disaster you experienced in the burning of your meeting-house, the many removals of whole families from town, the deaths that have occurred among you, some of whom have been your prominent men, the formation of two new societies at the Plains, the excitements of different kinds that have existed in the place, and the low state of religion. If I mistake not, this society is in a far better condition than any one, acquainted with the facts in the case, could reasonably expect it to be in. I take this step not because, could a change be effected which might easily be done, I could not labor on with zeal and hope; but because of the want of that spirit, energy and co-operation, which characterizes new enterprises; which allows nothing to be undone which should be done, and which is essential to success."

In March, 1850, a call was extended to Rev. Aaron W. Chaffin. This was his first pastorate, and he remained here fifteen years, an average preacher and an excellent pastor, greatly beloved not only by his own people but by his fellow-citizens generally, for he took great interest in all that pertained to the good of the town, and especially in the schools. Genial, kind, witty, "everybody liked him." He accepted a call to Manchester, N. H., died at Lynn in 1874, and was buried here in Walnut Grove Cemetery.

Rev. Foster Henry succeeded Mr. Chaffin, and oc-

cupied the pulpit from December 5, 1862, to May 1, 1865. Then followed Rev. Charles H. Holbrook, from November 14, 1865, to September 2, 1870; Rev. J. A. Goodhue, from November 22, 1870, to May 1, 1872; Rev. G. W. McCullough, from June 20, 1873, to April 1, 1876; Rev. Lucien Drury, from August 3, 1877, to April 29, 1883; Rev. Gideon Cole, from July 1, 1884, to the present time.

These notes have treated chiefly of the Society. The Baptist Church was organized July, 1793, with thirty-six members. The first deacons were Eleazer Wallis and Israel Porter. Benjamin Kent was appointed 1823; Hercules Joselyn, 1832; John Hood, 1835; Parker Brown, 1838; Ichabod Sawyer, 1839; Abijah Porter, 1845; Henry Johnson, 1855; James Felton, 1855; Charles H. Whipple, 1855; Monroe B. Brigham, 1859; Francis Bowen, 1874; Wm. A. Jacobs, 1880. Deacons Whipple and Jacobs are the present incumbents.

The committees appointed "to supply preaching" in the earlier years of the society have already been given. They were the precursors of the regular standing committees. A complete list of the latter cannot be given for lack of space, but the names which appear at the beginning of each decade of this century will give some idea of the prominent supporters of the society from time to time:

1800. Deacon I. Porter.	1840. Daniel Hardy.
Nathaniel Prince.	Hiram Preston.
Nicholas Dodge.	1850. Benj. Porter.
Wm. Trask.	James Holt.
Amos Sawyer.	Henry Johnson.
1810. Benj. Porter, Jr.	1860. John Burns
Benj. Kent.	M. B. Brigham.
Richard Elliot.	Elnathan Dodge.
L. Leonard.	1870. Wm. Putnam.
Wm. Trask.	M. B. Brigham.
1820. Benj. Kent.	Wm. A. Jacobs.
Wm. Trask.	1880. C. H. Whipple.
Stephen Whipple.	W. A. Jacobs.
1830. Daniel Hardy.	Geo. H. Perkins.
Jacob F. Perry.	1887. C. H. Whipple.
John Porter.	W. A. Jacobs.
1840. Benj. Porter.	Solomon Fuller.

The first clerk of the society, chosen November 26, 1781, was Dr. Nathaniel Gott, but he did not serve through the successive adjournments of the first meeting, and Jonathan Sawyer, chosen in his place, held the office about five years, until 1786, when Nathaniel Fowler's name appears. Ebenezer Dale was clerk in 1789, Israel Porter in 1790. On April 5, 1792, Israel Hutchinson, Jr., was chosen, and after thirty years of continuous service, his neatly kept records end with the oath administered by him to his successor, Stephen Whipple, April 17, 1821.

Stephen Whipple served but one year.

Hercules H. Josselyn was chosen at the annual meeting of 1822, and he served till April, 1841, nineteen years, when it was voted "that the Thanks of this Society be presented to Hercules Josselyn for his long and faithful services as Clerk of the Society."

Parker B. Francis held the office to April 1843:



Hiram Preston, 1843-45; Charles E. Smith, 1845-53; Maurice C. Oby, 1853-58; Isaac N. Roberts, 1858-62; M. H. Dorman, 1862-64; Josiah Ross, 1864-75; William H. Stetson, 1875-80; Charles A. Gentlee, 1880, to the present, 1887.

Last April, 1887, the Sunday-school observed its sixty-ninth anniversary. The original records, if there were any, are not to be found. John Hood, Peter Waitt and Captain Benjamin Porter were superintendents before 1854, since which time, thirty-three years, Deacon Charles H. Whipple, has been in continuous service. There are now one hundred and sixty connected with the school.

January 26, 1879, the standing committee were instructed "to inquire into the cost of buying the land adjoining that of the society on High Street, and of building thereon such a building as the Society needs." This vote was the beginning of the new chapel which was dedicated this spring, 1887.

"Among the favorable causes under the blessing of God," these were Mr. Chaffin's words thirty years ago, "which have conspired to keep this somewhat ancient church in existence, we should not fail to notice the general unanimity of its members and their steadfastness in sound doctrine and wholesome discipline. Besides, there never has been a time when there have not been some noble, self-denying brethren and sisters whose faith in the darkest hour faltered not. In the early, as well as the later history of this church, especially will the names of Porter, Kent, Richardson, Whitney and Hardy, with others of kindred spirit, now at rest in Heaven, be held in long and sacred remembrance. While living they were known in the churches, and, though dead, their deeds live."

UNIVERSALIST.—The pioneer of Universalism in Danvers was Edmund Putnam. He was born here in 1724, moved to Topsfield in early life, returned when about thirty-five, and occupied the well-preserved old house off Locust Street, afterwards the home of his distinguished grandson, Elias Putnam, and at present owned by Augustus Fowler. Edmund Putnam was for twenty-three years, from 1762, a deacon of the old Church. Probably his changed views of theology led to his resignation in 1785. Dr. Nichols' centennial poem contains this:

"Still people would think, read their Bibles,
Embrace
Other doctrines than those we have named;
Deacon Edmund, with new-fangled views of
God's grace,
Universal salvation proclaimed."

An item in the records of the old church is significant in this connection,—“In 1788 rates were abated of Samuel Cheever, Jer. Hutchinson, James Smith, John Swinerton, Henry Putnam, Nath'l Webb, Wm. Gifford, and Mrs. Eunice Hutchinson, because they entertained religious sentiments differing from those

professed by the church.” Though, as has been seen, this was about the time the Baptists organized their church, some who were thus “differing” are known to have been early Universalists.

It was in the little community at Putnamville—Deacon Putnam's neighborhood—that the new ideas were most thought about and talked about, and where they first assumed organic form.

Rev. Henry P. Forbes delivered a historical address of the society on the occasion of its fiftieth anniversary, October 19, 1879, which is here liberally used in connection with the series of historical letters written by Rev. Dr. Alfred P. Putnam, a great-grandson of Deacon Edmund. Mr. Forbes has thus well and concisely spoken of those families in Putnamville in which Universalism was especially fostered:

“In true Danvers fashion, they were nearly all related to each other. Israel Putnam, 2d (Dea. Edmund's son), married Anna, sister of Elias Endicott, Jr. Zorobabel Porter married Mary, another sister. Elias himself, when a young man, worked at the currier's trade in Gloucester, where John Murray was settled over the First Universalist Society organized in America. He returned to Danvers, and, having married, came to live in the house where dwelt his sister Anna. This family of families—Endicotts, Porters, Putnams—seems to have been of one mind in religious matters. They were all persons of character and influence, and chiefly from them came the impetus toward the formation of an Universalist Society. But they were not alone. The Browns, the Richardsons, the Bakers, and Woodburys of Wenham, with various others, had come to be more or less earnest believers. In the year 1815 the fluid sentiment began to crystalize into an organization. On the 22d of April a company of them assembled, organized themselves into a society, and drew up a *Declaration of Principles*.”

At this first meeting, Israel Putnam, 2d, was chosen moderator and treasurer; Colonel Warren Porter, clerk; John Baker, Joseph and Zorobabel Porter, committee. The committee were instructed “to inquire after a minister as soon as funds can be obtained to pay him, and invite any suitable person that may be willing to preach.” The committee found a very suitable person in Rev. Hosea Ballou, who came up to preach occasionally in the little school-house and gave the new movement the impetus of his powerful help. For a number of years there was slow and quiet progress, the number of members recorded in 1823 being thirty-six; in 1825, forty-four. Besides Mr. Ballou many other ministers came to preach in the school-house, among others Rev. Charles Hudson, who, at the semi-centennial was living, in his eighty-fourth year, at Lexington, Mass.

The last recorded meeting of the society at Putnamville was May 28, 1827. “With this, the ecclesi-



astical stream sinks from the ledges of Blind-hole into the sands of the Plain, and working its way southward bubbles up at the New Mills." This latter place, the thriving commercial centre of quite an extensive territory, by all odds the liveliest portion of the town, having but one church, and that of rigid tenets, seems to have been good ground for the larger growth of Universalism. It has been shown from the records of the Baptist Society how about this time defections were occurring, and how in 1829 a considerable number of Baptists formally withdrew. This withdrawal marked the occasion of the formation of the Danvers Universal Society, which was brought about by a simple agreement of association in the handwriting of Dr. Ebenezer Hunt, dated October 15, 1829, and signed by William Francis, Hathorne Porter, Josiah Gray, John Ross, Moses W. Wilson, Nathaniel Boardman, Joshua Silvester, B. C. Brickett, William E. Kimball, Daniel Woodman, Ebenezer Hunt, Benjamin Potter, Isaac Caldwell, William Rogers. A petition was immediately issued to Dr. George Osgood, justice of the peace, and by him a warrant was issued for a first meeting for the legal establishment of a new religious society. Upon this petition are the additional names of John Hines, Joseph Porter, Sylvanus Dodge and Simeon Pendar. These eighteen men are regarded as the charter members of the present society; five were living at the semi-centennial, 1879, and four were present, but today but one of all the number is surviving, Joshua Silvester. (Since writing, he, too, has passed away).

For some months efforts were made to form a union with certain early Unitarians at New Mills, of whom Capt. Jeremiah Page, Jonas Warren and Maj. Moses Black were leaders. A coalition committee were appointed to agree on a name, but no report was ever made, and March 8, 1830, these efforts seem to have been acknowledged fruitless, and it was voted "that this society be called the First Universalist Society of Danvers."

The first standing committee, William Francis, Eliza Pratt and Joseph Porter, were at once instructed to consider the expediency of hiring the old Baptist meeting-house, which had been removed in 1828, as has been noticed in the sketch of the Baptist Society, to make room for a new house on the original site. The committee hired the old house at forty-five dollars for a year. No clergyman was yet settled, and preaching was irregular; but the society grew, there being one hundred and seventeen males at the beginning of the next year. Though a vote was in the meantime taken "that the contemplated meeting-house be located at or near the Plains so called," the old house was hired again, but the contract was made not without bitterness. Major Black and John Page now owned 11-16ths of the building, and were willing enough to let their part at forty-five dollars, but Deacons Kent and Hardy, of the Baptist Church, owners of the other

5-16ths, charged one hundred dollars for their share. Evidently the latter did not wish the building used by the society at all, and one of them made some remark about wishing to feed pigs in his part, with, it is alleged, a tinge of comparison not altogether complimentary to the Universalists. The society simply took the 11-16ths, and fenced off the remainder. It is not difficult to imagine the feeling of which this little episode is but a hint. It could not be otherwise. Not even Baptist human nature could look with equanimity on what, from their standpoint, was an upstart and heretical body, which, having sapped the strength of the old church by withdrawing a considerable number of its members, had the audacity to set up in their old building and, within ear-shot of their sterner doctrine, to utter the alluring promise of universal salvation.

The first regular pastor of the new society was Rev. F. Hodson, who remained from the spring of 1831 to June of the following year. During this time the old school-house in Putnamville was occasionally used for services, as were also the school-houses at the Centre and at the toll-gate.

The settled intent of the Universalists to have a church of their own came to a head in September, 1832. Forty-eight shares at fifty dollars were taken in a new house "to be erected between Berry's tavern and the Baptist meeting-house," and the shareholders became and remained a separate, corporate body until 1847, when they merged by mutual vote with the society. A building committee, Nath'l Boardman, J. Silvester, Hathorne Porter and Joseph Porter, "fixed on the piece owned by Mr. Israel Endicott as the most eligible," and this lot was purchased. Moses W. Wilson contracted October 29, 1832, to build a house fifty-six by forty-two, twenty-two feet posts, for twenty-five hundred dollars. With alterations and additions the total cost reached thirty-one hundred dollars. The building was dedicated Friday, June 28, 1833. Rev. Hosea Ballou, of Boston, made the dedicatory prayer; Rev. Hosea Ballou, 2d, of Roxbury, delivered the sermon; Revs. L. Willis, of Salem, and S. Streeter, of Boston, also old helpers in the society's infancy, took other parts. An original hymn by Dr. Hunt was sung, beginning

"Eternal Source of Light and Love,
Of all we are or hope to be,
Dwelling in majesty above
We dedicate this house to Thee."

Rev. D. D. Smith was at this time settled over the society, though living in Boston. There were one hundred and thirty-one male members, a number which has since remained as high-water mark. Soon after the dedication of the church, Dr. Braman, from the citadel of his pulpit, preached a strong sermon against Universalism and the danger of its incursions, out of which grew the memorable debate between Dr. Braman and Dr. Whittmore, November 6, 1833, mentioned elsewhere, in which, of course, Danvers



Universalists lent their champion decided aid and comfort.

Rev. H. Knapp was installed as pastor of the society, December 20, 1833, and remained until August 16, 1836; he died in Cambridge in 1878, aged sixty-seven. Rev. S. Brimblecom, of Westbrook, Me., succeeded him here and remained until 1840; he was an earnest anti-slavery man, was orator of the day, July 4, 1837, at a meeting of the Danvers Anti-slavery Society, and president of the Young Men's Anti-slavery Society. He died in Haverhill, 1879, in his eighty-first year. Soon after his resignation, on motion of Dr. Hunt, it was resolved that the committee procure, if practicable, the services of laymen in conducting Sabbath worship; accordingly Moses Black, Jr., Joseph Merrill, John Hines, Dr. Hunt, and perhaps others officiated as occasion required. In July, 1840, Rev. A. A. Davis, then recently from Ohio, accepted a call and was settled at a salary of six hundred dollars. He gave an impetus to all departments of the society's work, and in his pastorate the church was organized. The church was first publicly recognized October 21, 1840; it numbered about sixty members. John Hines was chosen clerk; M. Bodge and Eben Putnam, deacons. Mr. Davis' pastorate was brief, closing in October, 1841, when he went to Jamaica for his health, but it was especially important, happening in the height of the anti-slavery storm which burst upon the community and the churches at this period. Something is said of anti-slavery troubles elsewhere. Rev. D. P. Livermore supplied during the following winter; and in the spring of 1843, Rev. S. Bulkley, of New Market, N. H., was chosen pastor. Rev. J. W. Hanson succeeded him in 1846. Mr. Hanson was a young man of active mind, a ready debater, inquiring and critical. Though here but two years, he has left a memorial behind him in Hanson's "History of Danvers," a book accustomed to be spoken of as containing many inaccuracies, but as the work of a stranger, on short preparation and with scarcely any previously printed material to rely on, it is remarkable that the book is as valuable as it is. Mr. Hanson resigned in 1848, went to Norridgewock, then to Gardiner, Me., was editor of *Augusta Gospel Banner* six years, then settled at Haverhill, and was chaplain of the Sixth Massachusetts Regiment; removed to Dubuque, Iowa, and in 1870 to Chicago, where, in 1879, he was living, and had then been D.D. for three years, editor of the *New Covenant* for nine years, and author or editor of some thirteen volumes.

The next pastor here was Rev. J. W. Putnam, who came in 1849, a pupil of Rev. Dr. Sawyer, at Clinton, N. Y., and remained in this his only pastorate till his lamented death, November 4, 1864. He left a widow and two children, a daughter and a son, all living. Throughout his pastorate "he grew in mental stature and in favor among the people" to the end. His townsmen honored him, his people loved him. He

would not leave his society; his parish would not let him go. In the noon of his manhood they gave him to the messenger from whose call there is no appeal. As a scholar, thinker, writer, speaker, pastor, he ranked high in his profession.

It was during Mr. Putnam's pastorate that, in 1858, it was decided that the "new church" was no longer new,—in fact so old that another building was demanded. There was not, at first at least, a unanimous concurrence in this opinion, but after several meetings it was decided to build nearer the Plains, which had by this time usurped the former distinction of New Mills as being the principal village of the town. A building committee was chosen, consisting of Joshua Silvester, J. W. Ropes, W. J. C. Kenney, George Porter and Moses Black, Jr. A lot of land was purchased of Eben G. Berry, and the present house was erected under a contract with Josiah Ross for four thousand three hundred and thirty-seven dollars. The church was completed in July, 1859, and was dedicated August 18th. From many of the surrounding heights and from many of the approaches to the town, the twin Gothic towers of the Universalist Church present one of the most prominent and picturesque views of a landscape beautiful in many respects. It is one of the many monuments of Joshua Silvester. The society formally tendered him their thanks "for the energy and assiduity with which he has labored in this work,—to him more than any one else, perhaps more than all else combined, do we owe the valuable suggestions and services resulting in this beautiful edifice."

The basement of the church was soon fitted up as Gothic Hall, and until the day of the Peabody Institute was the best hall in town and much used for lectures, entertainments, and for the graduating exercises of the High School.

The society bid farewell to the old meeting-house, July 31, 1859, which was then sold at auction for twenty-five hundred dollars, and soon was converted to the use of the new Catholic Church, in whose hands, much enlarged and remodeled, it still remains.

The vacancy in the pastorate caused by the death of Mr. Putnam was filled by Rev. H. C. Delong, of Binghamton, N. Y., who served from 1865 three years, and was succeeded by Rev. G. J. Sanger, who, as faithful pastor and eloquent preacher for six years and business man for several more, was one of our best known and worthiest citizens, upon whom his fellow-citizens bestowed political honors with a generous hand. A few years ago he decided to return to the ministry, and accepted a call to Essex. Rev. Henry P. Forbes was installed November 22, 1875,—a man of scholarly tastes and fine literary ability, a pastor much loved and respected, and a citizen especially useful on the school committee. He resigned after five years to accept a professorship in the St. Lawrence University, Canton, N. Y. Rev. F. A. Dillingham, his successor, was installed in the spring

of 1881, and remained until February, 1885, when he in turn was succeeded by Rev. Winfield S. Williams, whose pastorate extended from June, 1885, to October, 1886. The church is at present (June, 1887) without a settled pastor. (July 5th, a call was extended to Rev. C. B. Lynn, of Boston, accepted.)

In the old days of the Putnamville school-house, it is said that Abijah Richardson sustained the burden of worship in song, singing four parts at once. A permanent choir was organized after the society built a church of their own, of which William Black was chorister. For twenty years he did not miss the preaching service, and to his own and his brother Moses' family the society were continually indebted for important musical services. Among the earlier singers were Henry and Augustus Fowler, Philip Smith, W. J. C. Kenney, Moses Black, Jr., Mrs. Benjamin Osgood, Mrs. Sawyer and Louisa Hines. Later, Mrs. S. E. Howe led the soprano for twenty years. The organ was purchased some time in the forties, over which Miss Hattie Black first presided. Before that, was the customary church orchestra, in which Mr. H. Dwinell played the violin; Aaron Putnam, viol; J. Sawyer, clarionet; assisted sometimes by W. J. Kenney and M. Black, Jr., on the clarionet and viol.

The Sunday-school was organized in 1830. Among the earlier superintendents were I. W. Andrews, Aaron Eveleth, Henry Fowler, Edwin F. Putnam and Moses Black, Jr. In 1840 there were eighty-eight members, including nineteen teachers. Among the later superintendents were John Hines, William E. Putnam, William Rankin, Andrew W. Trask, Edward Tyler, John H. Elliott, Ezra D. Hines, Rev. George J. Sanger, and, at present, Howard R. Burrington. The school now numbers about one hundred and fifty. In December, 1880, a successful effort was made to raise a debt of two thousand five hundred dollars against the society, and the event was celebrated by a supper early in January.

Maple Street Church.—On the 15th day of March, 1844, Nathaniel Silvester, Moses J. Currier, Henry T. Ropes, Benjamin Henderson, Aaron Bateman, Gustavus Putnam, represented to George Osgood, a justice of the peace, that they were about to form themselves into a religious society for the worship of Almighty God, and requested him to issue a warrant for the calling of a meeting to be holden at the school-house on Danvers Plains on Monday evening, March 25th, to organize such a society under the name of the Third Orthodox Congregational Society of Danvers. Dr. Osgood issued his warrant accordingly to Nathaniel Silvester to warn a meeting according to the terms of the petition. At this meeting Henry T. Ropes was chosen the first clerk of the society; Winthrop Andrews was chosen moderator; Moses J. Currier collector; Benjamin Turner, Samuel Brown, Nathaniel Silvester were the first parish committee; George Osgood, Henry T. Ropes, and Benja-

min Turner were appointed committee on by-laws; Nathaniel Silvester, Samuel Brown, and Henry T. Ropes, to take into consideration a more suitable place of worship; M. J. Currier, W. Andrews and John A. Learoyd, to solicit subscriptions for preaching.

At the adjournment of this first meeting, by-laws were presented and accepted; the house committee reported in favor of a subscription in shares of one hundred dollars each, the cost not to exceed four thousand dollars; the same committee were instructed to see what land could be obtained in several parts of the plains; Rev. Mr. Thayer was employed to preach for six months at seven dollars per day; Watts' Select Hymn Book was adopted; John A. Learoyd was "authorized to procure a Bass Vial." At a further adjournment a building committee of eight were chosen, as follows: Samuel Putnam, John A. Learoyd, Henry T. Ropes, Benjamin Turner, Joseph Adams, Samuel Brown, Daniel Richards, Samuel P. Fowler.

April 29th it was decided to purchase the lot of land offered by Ezra Batchelder, "8 Rood front by 11½ Roods deep, for \$800." The committee was instructed to build a basement story of rough granite of suitable dimensions for a hall. The material subsequently suggested the name, Granite Hall. Rev. Loren Thayer was employed "to supply the desk until the meeting-house is completed." Benjamin Turner, Gustavus Putnam and Moses J. Currier took into consideration the expediency of organizing a choir of singers. Daniel Richards and Mr. Currier were instructed to purchase a bell not to exceed twelve hundred pounds. The new house was dedicated Wednesday, January 22, 1845, Mr. Thayer preaching the dedication sermon. This year fifty dollars was paid Parker B. Francis for singing, and seventeen dollars was "paid Mr. Stanley for a flute;" later the society purchased "the Bass Vial of J. A. Learoyd" for \$30.75. Moses Putnam was thanked for the handsome sofa and chairs he had furnished the society, as were also the ladies for carpeting the house. The first person called to settle as minister was Rev. F. A. Barton, of Chicopee Falls, who declined on account of ill health. Rev. Richard Tolman, of Dorchester, accepted a call, and was ordained September 17, 1845, the first pastor of the new church and society,—salary, six hundred dollars for the first year, afterwards seven hundred dollars. The ordination sermon was preached by Rev. E. N. Kirk. Mr. Tolman remained until November, 1848. On April 3, 1849, this letter was sent to Rev. James Fletcher, of Acton, then at Andover Theological Seminary:

"DEAR SIR: We, the undersigned, as a committee in behalf of the Third Cong. Church and Society in Danvers hereby extend to you an invitation to become our pastor and teacher. The salary which the society offer you is six hundred dollars.

SAML. P. FOWLER,	} Com. of
BENJ. TURNER,	
FRED'K HOW,	} Com. of
M. W. PUTNAM,	

the Society."

Mr. Fletcher accepted and was ordained June 20, 1849, to a pastorate which lasted nearly fifteen years.

The expense of the new church was about eight thousand dollars, for more than half of which sum indebtedness had been incurred. Strenuous efforts were made to liquidate this debt, and, February 1, 1847, eighteen men entered into a written obligation to contribute, by way of loan or advancement, in four annual payments a total of four thousand two hundred and eighty dollars; of this sum Moses Putnam subscribed eighteen hundred dollars, his brother Samuel five hundred and twenty dollars, Nathan Tapley and Jesse Putnam each three hundred dollars. The other names which appear in autograph in the records are Elbridge Trask, Joseph S. Black, Moses W. Putnam, Samuel P. Fowler, Frederick How, F. Howes, Eben G. Berry, Richard Tolman, Daniel Richards, Stephen Granville, Rebeckah Perry, James M. Perry, John A. Learoyd, Nathaniel Silvester. In May, 1850, but seven hundred dollars of the debt remained, and "whereas Moses Putnam, Esquire, has generously offered to pay the sum of \$250," measures were taken to meet the balance. Upon the very next leaf to that which records this happy state of things appears this memorandum of Deacon Fowler's:

"BURNING OF THE MEETING-HOUSE.

"On the night of July 10th, 1850, the meeting-house of the Third Cong. Society was destroyed by fire. It broke out in the entry of the Hall about 11 o'clock, and was the work of an incendiary. It was insured at two mutual offices in Salem for the sum of \$5,000.

"The house was completely destroyed, but the walls of the basement story were left standing, and by many persons supposed to be not much injured. The sheds and fences around the house are but little injured, in consequence of there being but little wind at the time of the fire. The House, with its furniture, Church plate, and Sabbath-school library, was consumed.

"The Selectmen of the Town have offered a reward of 500 dollars for the detection of the sacrilegious villain who burnt our beautiful House and laid waste our pleasant things. The Sabbath evening after the fire, Wm. Duffee, a young man living on the Plains, was, on the complaint of Geo. Perkins, arrested and lodged in Salem jail, being accused of setting fire to the Meeting-House. He was carried before Justice Bantoul, of Beverly, and, pleading guilty of the charge, he was sent to the Salem jail to await his trial, Perkins being also sent with him as a witness. Both effected their escape in November following. Duffee was retaken, convicted and sentenced to the *State Prison* for life. Perkins who was suspected as an accomplice with Duffee in the burning of the house, some weeks after returned to Danvers, gave himself up, was carried back to jail, and, no one appearing against him, at the term of court following he was discharged.

"On Sunday, July 14th, public worship was held by the Society at the Free Chapel, on the Plains, where an appropriate and interesting discourse was delivered by our pastor. The text was from the 14th chapter of Exodus, 16th verse, "And the Lord said unto Moses, Wherefore criest thou unto me? Speak unto the children of Israel, that they go forth."

"In this discourse our Pastor, in a forceable manner, enjoined upon us the importance of immediately going forward in the work of rebuilding our Meeting-House."

The very next day the standing committee issued their warrant for a meeting to consider rebuilding. It was voted "that we proceed immediately to rebuild our meeting-house—the vote passed unanimously." The offer of the use of the Free Chapel was accepted.

The new building committee were S. P. Fowler, Nathan Tapley, Daniel Richards, Alfred Fellows, J. S. Black, Elbridge Trask, J. C. Butler, Nathaniel Silvester and Stephen Granville. They went to work with six thousand dollars insurance and trusted to raise the balance. The contract was originally given to Boston parties for six thousand eight hundred and seventy-five dollars, but they failed to meet their engagements—"the winter came upon us with its snow and rains with the building completely exposed." The contractors were paid two thousand eight hundred and fifty dollars to leave the job, and Abel Preston's proposal to finish the building for four thousand dollars was accepted. On Sunday, March 9, 1851, services were first held in the new Granite Hall, and the church itself was ready for dedication September 17, 1851. The total cost of the new or present church was \$8485.66; the new bell cost two hundred and thirteen dollars. The present organ was purchased by subscription, as was also the clock in the tower, and at a meeting of the subscribers to both, August 15, 1854, both were "unconditionally presented" to the society. About the same time certain pews were set apart to be sold for the benefit of the eighteen subscribers who assumed the debt of the old church, they suffering a loss of twenty-five per cent. of their subscriptions—the proportional loss of pew-holders over insurance. The new bell was not up to the standard of orthodoxy, and cracked; the present bell dates from 1856.

Moses Putnam, foremost of the friends and supporters of the church and society, a few months before he died, which was September 10, 1860, in his eighty-fifth year, gave up several notes amounting to fourteen hundred dollars, which he held against the society. A communication was sent to him expressive of the heart-felt gratitude of the society for this and former generous donations.

Rev. Mr. Fletcher tendered, May 21, 1864, a letter of resignation.

A call was extended, February 1, 1866, to Rev. William Caruthers, of North Cambridge, who accepted, and was installed April 18th. This call was not nearly unanimous, and after a little more than two years Mr. Caruthers tendered his resignation, to take effect July 31, 1868. On the 22d of February, 1869, by a large and unanimous vote, Rev. James Brand, then a student at Andover, was invited to become pastor, and he was ordained October 6, 1869. Shortly after, December 5th, the church celebrated its twenty-fifth anniversary. In the spring of 1872 the subject of making extensive and radical changes in the house was first brought up, and continued to be talked about and voted upon for two years, when it was finally decided to take the work in hand. Andrew M. Putnam, Winthrop Andrews, Charles H. Gould, John S. Learoyd and Daniel Richards were the supervising committee. An addition was built on the rear of the church, the interior was entirely remodeled, the old



galleries were abolished, the organ and choir-loft moved behind the pulpit, modern black-walnut pews were substituted for the old ones, which are now occasionally seen adorning gardens and back piazzas. With the change in the building came also a change in the organization of the society. It was proposed to abandon the system of individual pew-ownership for a system of annual rental. By act of the Legislature the existing corporation was dissolved March 24, 1874, and a new society was immediately organized under the general statutes, the first meeting of which was held the next day. Under the by-laws of the new society all property was vested in a board of five trustees, three at least to be members of the church. Membership was open to any person renting a sitting and receiving a majority vote at any regular meeting. There have been but three elections of trustees,—

1874.

Charles H. Gould.
Edward A. Lord.
Moses J. Currier.
John S. Learoyd.
John A. Putnam.
1879.
George W. Fiske.
John A. Putnam.

Moses J. Currier.
Charles H. Gould.
John S. Learoyd.

1885.

C. H. Gould.
Samuel L. Sawyer.
G. W. Fiske.
John A. Putnam.
J. S. Learoyd.

Before these changes, however, Mr. Brand resigned his pastorate, to take effect November 1, 1873. He went to Oberlin, Ohio, "to accept a place where my usefulness in the ministry, if I have any, can be more than doubled." He went "with the kindest words to say and the pleasantest memories to carry," and left with his parishioners an abiding love and respect towards himself. He has not failed by reason of "the greatness of the field and the urgency of the call." After nearly two years Rev. Walter E. C. Wright accepted the invitation to fill the vacancy, and was installed October 12, 1875, his brother, Rev. G. F. Wright, of Andover, and Rev. James Fletcher, a former pastor, taking part in the exercises. During his pastorate of seven years he not only endeared himself to his own people, but won and merited the greatest respect of his fellow-citizens by the many manifestations of his active public spirit. Upon him fell most of the responsibility of the re-arrangement and new catalogue of the Peabody Library, a work which will remain a substantial monument to his memory. He was also largely instrumental in lifting from the church a heavy load of debt. He was an able debater, and the occasion in Gothic Hall when he stood alone against an array of advocates of woman-suffrage will long be remembered. His letter of resignation dated August 12, 1882, contains this: "The experience of the past few months has indicated the importance, for the health of my wife and perhaps my own, of a change of residence to a milder climate." An urgent call to take up a congenial and important religious and educational work at Berea College, Kentucky, was there-

fore accepted, and his resignation was tendered, to take effect the last of September, 1882. Rev. Edward P. Ewing, formerly of Enfield, Mass, his successor and the present pastor, was installed November 1, 1883.

The first deacons of the church were Frederick Howe and Samuel P. Fowler; subsequently elected: John S. Learoyd, Samuel P. Trask, Eben Peabody. Messrs. Fowler, Learoyd and Peabody survive in office. The membership of the church at its organization was 42; at present, 1887, 305; total membership since organization, 537.

The moderator of the first meeting of the society, 1844, was Winthrop Andrews. Moderators of subsequent annual meetings have been as follows:—Samuel P. Fowler, 1845, '47, '48, '49; Nathan Tapley, '46, '51, '53, '54, '59, '60; Joseph S. Black, '50, '58; Dr. D. A. Grosvenor, '52; William L. Weston, '55, '56, '57, '61, '68, '74; Rufus Putnam, '62, '63, '64, '65, '67; John A. Putnam, '66, '75, '76, '77; John S. Learoyd, '69; John R. Langley, '70, '72, '73; Moses J. Currier, '71; Samuel L. Sawyer, '78, '81; George W. Fiske, '79, '80, '83, '84, '85, '86, '87.

Until 1882, the offices of treasurer and collector were considered as one, and the persons holding the office were as follows:—Moses J. Currier, 1844; Moses W. Putnam, '45-'47, '51; Elbridge Trask, '48; John C. Butler, '49, '50; James M. Perry, '52-'70, eighteen consecutive years; John A. Putnam, '71-'81. In 1882 the offices were divided. Webster F. Putnam was elected treasurer, and served two years; George W. Fiske, '84, '85; Charles H. Gould, '86, '87. Winthrop Andrews has held the office of collector from 1882 to the present, 1887.

Henry T. Ropes was the first clerk of the society and served for three years. Joseph S. Black succeeded him and served three years. Deacon Samuel P. Fowler began to keep the records in 1850 and has entered on the thirty-seventh year of his service. During the whole period since the organization of the society, the records have been kept admirably.

The list of standing committees is as follows:

STANDING COMMITTEES.

1844.

Benj. Turner.
Saml. Brown.
Nathl. Silvester.

1845.

Saml. Putnam.
Saml. P. Fowler.
Henry T. Ropes.
Nathl. Silvester.

1846.

Nathan Tapley.
Jesse Putnam.
Nathl. Silvester.
Henry T. Ropes.
Benj. Turner.

1847.

Nathan Tapley.
Jesse Putnam.
Moses J. Currier.

Joseph S. Black.
Daniel Richards.

1848.

Nathan Tapley.
Joseph S. Black.
Daniel Richards.
Moses J. Currier.
Samuel P. Fowler.

1849.

S. P. Fowler.
Joseph S. Black.
Moses J. Currier.
Francis P. Putnam.
Samuel Putnam.

1850.

Saml. P. Fowler.
Joseph S. Black.
Moses J. Currier.
Frederic How.
Nathan Tapley.

1851.

Nathan Tapley.
S. P. Fowler.
Moses J. Currier.
Joseph S. Black.
Daniel Richards.

1852.

Nathan Tapley.
Jos. S. Black.
Frederick Perley.
Francis P. Putnam.
Alfred Fellows.

1853.]

N. Tapley.
F. P. Putnam.
S. P. Fowler.
Alfred Fellows.
M. J. Currier.

1854.

Nathan Tapley.
M. J. Currier.
F. P. Putnam.
Wm. L. Weston.
Allen Knights.

1855.

Nathan Tapley.
M. J. Currier.
Allen Knights.
W. L. Weston.
D. A. Grosvenor.

1856.

Nathan Tapley.
F. P. Putnam.
Allen Knight.
M. J. Currier.
W. L. Weston.

1857.

Nathan Tapley.
Moses J. Currier.
F. P. Putnam.
W. L. Weston.
Allen Knight.

1858.

Nathan Tapley.
M. J. Currier.
W. L. Weston.
F. P. Putnam.
Joseph S. Black.

1859.

John A. Learoyd.
Jos. S. Black.
M. J. Currier.
W. L. Weston.
F. P. Putnam.

1860.

Nathan Tapley.
W. L. Weston.
M. J. Currier.
F. P. Putnam.
J. S. Black.

1861.

Nathan Tapley.
W. L. Weston.
M. J. Currier.
John C. Butler.
F. P. Putnam.

1862.

Nathan Tapley.
Rufus Putnam.
M. J. Currier.
F. P. Putnam.
J. C. Butler.

1863.

Rufus Putnam.

Nathan Tapley.
F. P. Putnam.
J. C. Butler.
M. J. Currier.

1864.

Nathan Tapley.
Rufus Putnam.
J. C. Butler.
M. J. Currier.
John R. Langley.

1865.

Rufus Putnam.
Nathan Tapley.
J. M. Perry.
Nathaniel Hills.
M. J. Currier.

1866.

Nathan Tapley.
Rufus Putnam.
M. J. Currier.
J. M. Perry.
J. R. Langley.

1867.

J. R. Langley.
Rufus Putnam.
John S. Learoyd.
M. J. Currier.
Daniel Richards.*

1868.

Daniel Richards.
J. S. Learoyd.
Rufus Putnam.

1869.

J. S. Learoyd.
Robert S. Perkins.
M. J. Currier.
J. A. Putnam.
J. M. Perry.

1870.

Nathan Tapley.
J. M. Perry.
R. S. Perkins.
Charles H. Gould.
M. J. Currier.

1871.

Nathan Tapley.
R. S. Perkins.
M. J. Currier.
C. H. Gould.
J. R. Langley.

1872.

J. S. Learoyd.
R. S. Perkins.
M. J. Currier.
C. H. Gould.
J. R. Langley.

1873.

J. S. Learoyd.
George W. Fiske.
Winthrop Andrews.
M. J. Currier.
E. Warren Eaton.

1875.

John S. Learoyd.
M. J. Currier.
G. W. Fiske.
E. W. Eaton.
Winthrop Andrews.

1876.

Winthrop Andrews.
Addison P. Learoyd.
M. J. Currier.
Samuel P. Trask.
Beverly S. Moulton.

1877.

Winthrop Andrews.
B. S. Moulton.
S. P. Trask.
A. P. Learoyd.
Samuel L. Sawyer.

1878.

Winthrop Andrews.
B. S. Moulton.
S. L. Sawyer.
A. P. Learoyd.
Edward A. Lord.

1879.

Winthrop Andrews.
B. S. Moulton.
A. P. Learoyd.
Amos A. White.
S. L. Sawyer.

1880.

Winthrop Andrews.
A. P. Learoyd.
A. A. White.
S. L. Sawyer.
B. S. Moulton.

1881.

Winthrop Andrews.
A. P. Learoyd.
J. Frank Porter.
S. L. Sawyer.
B. S. Moulton.

1882.

A. P. Learoyd.
J. F. Porter.

S. L. Sawyer.
Eben Peabody.
Webster F. Putnam.

1883.

S. L. Sawyer.
J. F. Porter.
W. F. Putnam.
Alden P. White.
Eben Peabody.

1884.

J. F. Porter.
Eben Peabody.
W. F. Putnam.
Wallace F. Perry.
A. P. White.

1885.

Leroy L. Abbott.
W. F. Putnam.
A. P. White.
W. P. Perry.
Eben Peabody.

1886.

W. P. Perry.
W. F. Putnam.
A. P. White.
Abram S. Beal.
Dr. E. A. Kemp.

1887.

A. P. White.
W. P. Perry.
E. A. Kemp.
A. S. Beal.
Herbert M. Bradstreet.

The Sunday-school in connection with the Maple Street Church was organized December 4, 1844. It then consisted of one hundred and fourteen members and twelve teachers. The first superintendent was Francis P. Putnam. Succeeding superintendents have been Moses W. Putnam, Joseph S. Black, Nathaniel Hills and John S. Learoyd.

By far the longest term of office is that of the present superintendent, Mr. Learoyd, who is now in his twenty-second year of consecutive service. There are at present connected with the school, four hundred and thirty-six members, forty-two teachers, two hundred and seventy-eight scholars in main school, ninety-one primary, and twenty-five in the pastor's Bible-class. The average attendance is three hundred and six. Yearly collection for 1886, three hundred and forty dollars. Number of library books, eight hundred and sixty-five.

CATHOLIC.—Before 1850 there were very few natives of Ireland residing in Danvers. Between 1850 and 1855, or even later, they came here in considerable numbers and made homes for themselves. The first man of Irish birth to settle here, about 1840, was the late Daniel Crowley, whose children are an honor to his name. Another early settler was Edward McKeigue. It was in the latter's house, November 1, 1854, that the first Catholic service was held in Danvers. Rev. Thomas H. Shahan, then of the Church of Immaculate Conception in Salem, officiated. Afterwards regular services began to be held in Franklin Hall, and then a chapel was erected south of the High Street Cemetery. When the Universalists gave



up their church in 1859, the Catholics bought it. This building, since altered and enlarged beyond recognition as to its original condition, is the present church of this denomination. A fine new pastor's house has been very recently erected on a pleasant site in the rear of the church, overlooking the river. It is a fact significant of the increase of the Catholic population since the time above referred to, that in this church worships a congregation by far the largest in town; and it is also significant that while many of the old names, common a hundred or two years ago, have become entirely extinct, and others are in danger of becoming so, the names of Sullivan, Collins, Gallivan, McCarthy and others appear in increasing numbers in each new directory and voting list, and indeed those names mentioned seem already to be more numerous than any other save one. The largest collective settlement of the people of this church radiates from the crossing of Hobart Street and the Eastern Railroad. It used to be called after the capital of the old country. Much of the land was bought by Captain Andrew M. Putnam, and by him was first opened up for building purposes. At his death, May 6, 1881, the family received a touching letter from a committee of Irish citizens, requesting permission to march behind the funeral procession to the grave. Twenty-eight of them did this, and some of their number filled the grave with earth. "No pen can write," such was the tribute, "nor mind describe the love, the veneration, we have for him, who was 'a friend in need and a friend indeed.' The name of Captain A. M. Putnam shall be forever near and dear to us. Many a heart has he made glad, by putting them in a way of having a little home for themselves when every one else seemed against them."

The first resident pastor of the church was Rev. Charles Raioni, who also had charge of the church in Marblehead. Thither he removed on the separation of the parishes in 1872. He was a gentleman advanced in years, and greatly beloved. His successor, Rev. Fr. O'Reilly, remained but one year. Rev. Patrick Joseph Halley was appointed to Danvers in April, 1873, and his pastorate extended to September, 1882; Rev. D. B. Kennedy's, from the last date to April, 1885, when the present pastor, Thomas E. Power, was appointed.

EPISCOPAL.—Calvary Parish was organized on the 14th of April, 1858. Joseph Adams and John S. Pratt were the first wardens. Rev. Robt. F. Chase entered upon his duties as rector, May 9th, 1858, services being held at first in Bank Hall.

The corner-stone of the present church at the corner of Holten and Cherry Streets, was laid by Bishop Eastburn, May 11, 1859, and the church was consecrated by him, May 25, 1860. Mr. Chase resigned in 1862, but was again rector from 1863 to 1865. His successors were as follows:—Rev. George Horvill, rector from 1865–66; Rev. William W. Sylvester, deacon in charge of the parish, 1868; Rev. S. J. Evans,

rector, 1869–71; Rev. William I. Magill, 1872–77. Rev. George Walker, the present rector, took charge of the parish October, 1877.

UNITARIAN.—As was hinted in the sketch of the Universalist Society, there were, many years ago, a number of influential families who had accepted the Unitarian faith. It was not, however, until 1865, that the present society was organized and worship begun, the first service being held in the Town Hall, and conducted by Rev. A. P. Putnam, then of Roxbury.

Mr. and Mrs. P. H. Wentworth, with their family of children, had recently removed to Danvers from Roxbury, where they had been parishioners of Mr. Putnam, and it only needed their presence and earnest zeal in the town, to insure success to the new movement. One or more meetings of the friends were held to consider the matter, previous to the first public service, and arrangements were soon made for regular Sunday worship in the Town Hall until more suitable accommodations could be had. The desk was supplied by different preachers until April 1st, 1867, when Rev. Leonard J. Livermore became the pastor of the infant church, and remained the minister until his death, in the summer of 1886, having his residence throughout at Cambridge, and being the guest of Mr. and Mrs. Wentworth, on his weekly visits to Danvers. The little church prospered, and in a few years erected its present neat and commodious chapel, which is located very near the site of the first house at Danvers Plains, that of pioneer John Porter. The cost of land and edifice was about \$13,000. The building took the name of Unity Chapel, and was formally dedicated as a house of worship on the evening of the 16th of March, 1871. The opening prayer was by Rev. S. C. Beane, of Salem; the reading of the Scriptures by Rev. J. B. Moore, of Lawrence; the sermon by Rev. A. P. Putnam; the act of dedication by the pastor and people; the prayer of dedication by Rev. J. T. Hewes, of Salem; chants and hymns were sung by a quartette and by the congregation. The church suffered a great loss in the death of Mr. Wentworth, about the time of the decease of its first minister. For a fuller notice of these two excellent men and faithful friends, see Dr. Putnam's sketch of Mr. Wentworth on a subsequent page. Mr. Livermore's successor is Rev. J. C. Mitchell, who entered upon his work here during the last winter (1886–87), having previously been the minister of the Orthodox Congregational Church in Wenham.

METHODIST.—This is the only church located in the village of Tapleville, and draws its strength and support largely from that neighborhood.

The first preaching service, preliminary to organizing a church, was held in Lincoln Hall, October 22, 1871. As a result of this and successive meetings it was determined to build a meeting-house. G. A. Tapley gave the lot of land, and he and his father otherwise contributed liberally. The present building was dedicated early in 1873. It cost about fif-



teen thousand dollars. The church was organized March 17, 1872. The first pastor was Rev. Elias Hodge, to whose enthusiastic work much of the first success of the new church was due. He served until 1874, the conference year beginning with April. His successors have been Rev. R. H. Howard, 1875-76; Rev. Garrett Beekman, 1877-79; Rev. W. J. Hambleton, 1880-82; Rev. W. M. Ayres, 1883-85; Rev. C. A. Merrill, the present pastor, came in 1886.

The Sunday-school was organized November 5, 1871; its first superintendent, Oliver D. Ham-

SEVENTH DAY ADVENT.—In the summer of 1877 a very large tent was pitched in the open lot on Hobart Street, opposite the station, and large congregations went nightly to hear Elder Canright's expositions of the doctrines of the above sect. He succeeded in making numerous converts, some from other churches, more from those not previously in the habit of attending church. Notwithstanding the practical inconvenience of keeping Saturday as the Sabbath, a considerable number hold firmly to that way. A chapel was dedicated January 6, 1878. It stands very near the site of the tent. The church was organized December 11, 1877. There has been for some time no settled pastor. Very recently there have been quite a number of baptisms. Charles Hartman is superintendent of the Sunday-school.

CHAPTER XXXV.

DANVERS.—(Continued).

EDUCATIONAL.

ONE of the reasons why the Village and Middle Parishes petitioned to be set off from Salem was because they were so far from the grammar-school. But there were schools, probably of lower grade than grammar, in both the Village and Middle Parishes many years before the district of Danvers was incorporated. The first action taken towards a separate school within the present limits of Danvers and Peabody was in 1701, under a vote entered in the village parish records that "Mr. Joseph Herrick and Mr. Joseph Putnam and John Putnam jun. are chosen and empowered to agree with some suitable person to be a school-master among us, in some convenient time; and make return therefor to the people." The man instrumental in building the first school-house was the minister of the Village church, Rev. Joseph Green. Certain passages of his diary, March, 1708, bear upon the subject:

"March 11. . . . I spoke to several about building a schoolhouse and determined to do it, &c.

"18. I rode to ye neighbors about a schoolhouse and found them generally willing to help.

"22. Meeting of the Inhabitants. I spoke with several about building a schoolhouse. I went into ye Town Meeting (village meeting) and

said to this effect: Neighbors I am about building a schoolhouse for the good education of our children . . . Some replied that it was a new thing to them and they desired to know where it should stand, and what the design of it was. To them I answered that Deacon Ingersoll would give land for it to stand on, at the upper end of the Training field, and that I designed to have a good school-master to teach their children to read and write and cypher and everything that is good. Many commended the design and none objected to it.

"25. Began to get timber for schoolhouse."

The teacher first mentioned by name is Katherine Daland; she taught before Mr. Green's house was finished. In 1714 Samuel Andrew taught and is the first mentioned master.

To pass now at once to the separate existence of the town and the manner in which it managed school affairs. At first the schools were left to the selectmen. The first school-committee, as a distinctive board, were chosen in 1756, under the following votes:

"Voted, to chuse a com'tee to regulate ye Grammar School & to be five men. Voted, Dan'l Gardner Dan'l Purington Dan'l Epes Jun'r Nath'l Felton Sr. David Putnam voted, that the School Com'tee Draw up Something and lay it before ye District on ye adjournment."

In the annual warrant for 1766 there occurred for the first time a proposition for the division of school money between the parishes according to the proportion of their taxes, but no action was then taken. The next year the question of establishing other than grammar-schools came up again. It was four years since the same matter had been referred to the discretion of a committee, and now the growing need of such schools seemed so imperative that it was directly voted "that there be a number of schools provided by the selectmen besides the Grammar School in the winter Season in this Town as the Selectmen Shall think proper, To be at Town Cost." The next year, 1768, "the clause in the warrant" relating to division of the school money between the parishes was dismissed as before, and again the monopoly of public education was restored to the grammar-school; but before winter set in the selectmen were instructed "to set up what schools they shall think proper."

So matters went, at times only a grammar school, at times "other schools set up," until, in the midst of the Revolution, December 1, 1777, on a petition headed by Col. Jeremiah Page, a decidedly progressive step was taken. At a meeting held in the North Meeting-House, Archelaus Dale, Moderator, it was voted that there be Ten Schools set up in the Town for three months each, and that the selectmen regulate the schools and provide proper persons for School-masters.

In 1780 the expression "district schools" is first used; it was then voted "that there be District Schools set up for three months to begin as soon as may be."

In 1783 nine schools were "set up" for two months, but whether or not nine schools were insufficient to meet the law, or the setting-up thereof was too largely on paper merely, the inhabitants found themselves this year presented before the Court of General Sessions for not keeping schools according to law,



and Samuel Cheever was sent to Ipswich to answer for the town on the first Tuesday of April, and he was instructed "to use his influence, that the Town be not fined for their neglect in not keeping schools." The potency of Samuel's endeavors may be inferred from the fact that there is no further mention of the subject.

The 10th of November, 1794, is the beginning of a new epoch, it marks the first step towards the establishment of a systematic district system. It was then voted that the selectmen "divide the town into as many districts as will best accommodate the town;" and the next month the first distinct and separate appropriation of money for school purposes was made,—£90, exclusive of the grammar school. Gideon Foster's record of the laying out of the school districts must here be omitted. There were nine in all; number one including the present central village of Peabody; two, the Port; three, Putnamville; four, Beaver Brook; five, the Centre; six, Felton's Corner; seven and eight, West Danvers; nine, towards Humphrey's Pond. The establishment of division lines caused some uneasiness among those who lived on the outskirts of the respective districts. For instance, Col. Jethro and Dr. Archelaus Putnam, and the dwellers on the Derby Farm, found themselves, by the new dispensation in No. 3, wished to be in No. 4, and evidently succeeded in getting there; for the next year, Aaron Putnam and others of No. 3 petitioned that the lost sheep be brought back again. Daniel Taylor and others soon wanted a division of No. 7 by a North and South line. In 1800 Amos King wished to be set off from No. 8 to No. 6, but the inhabitants said no.

Early in 1802 a special meeting was called, to see if the town would make some general alterations in district lines; the only changes made were in numbers two, three and four, all within the present limits of Danvers.

In 1806 John Jacobs and others presented a petition for the division of No. 7 and, succeeding in obtaining it, the new district, number ten, was the result. In the same year the subject of rules for the government of schools was first considered, and the following code drawn up by Parsons Wadsworth and Walker, and Hon. Nathan Read, David Daniels and Capt. Samuel Page, will prove interesting reading:

DR. WADSWORTH'S CODE.

"1. It is recommended that each Instructor open his School in the morning and close it in the evening with a short prayer.

"2. On every School day except Saturday, each instructor shall employ at least six hours in the instruction of his pupils, and not less than three on that day.

"3. The instructor of each School shall class his pupils in such manner as he shall judge most conducive to their improvement, not making less than two Classes.

"4. To facilitate the acquirement of an accurate & uniform mode of Spelling & pronunciation, Perry's Spelling-book and Dictionary shall be taught in all the Schools; and the following shall be the Catalogue of Books from which the Scholars shall be supplied at the discretion of the Instructor, viz.: 'Murray's English Grammar Abridged,' 'Morse's Geography, abridged Constitution of the State of Massachusetts,' &c.,

'Wakefield mental improvement,' 'Pikes Arithmetic' & the 'holy Bible,' together with such Latin & Greek Classics as are usually taught in Grammar Schools.

"5. To abridge the time commonly consumed by Children in learning to write, the plan described in Jenken's 'Art of Writing' shall be adopted in all the schools; & Copper-plate copies furnished by the Instructors shall be used by those Scholars who are able to write joining hand.

"6. The Scholars shall be taught punctuation notes or marks, interrogation, admiration, accent, emphasis & cadence.

"7. Every Instructor shall establish & maintain order & good Government in his school, not by inflicting cruel & unusual punishment, but by addressing the understanding & ingenious feelings of the youth committed to his care, & by endeavouring to excite a spirit of industry & emulation stimulating them to their duty by the hope of reward rather than by the fear of Punishment.

"To carry these rules & orders (should the Town adopt them) into effect the Committee sensible that the improvement of Scholars depends greatly on the attention & fidelity of instructors beg leave to recommend a particular regard to the moral & literary qualifications of those who shall be employed in that capacity the annual choice of a School committee, faithfully to discharge the important trust reposed in them by law, & likewise to direct the Town Clerk to furnish the Grammar School Master at least with a written copy of the laws of this State respecting the power & duty of the School committee & instructors of Schools prefixed to a copy of these regulations.

"BENJA. WADSWORTH, pr. order."

In 1808 another sub-division of districts occurred; the people living in the western part of No. 1 were set off as No. 11; and within a few months Clark Wilson and others secured a division of No. 11, and a portion thereof was established as No. 12. At the March meeting of 1816 another very important advance towards system was made. Three persons—Nathan Felton, Daniel Putnam and Dr. Andrew Nichols were chosen "to define the powers and duties of School Committee."

Ten years in advance of the law of the State making it the duty of towns to choose a school committee, Danvers accepted the report of these men, which contained, among other recommendations, this,—

"That it be proper and expedient to choose a School Committee, whose powers and duties shall be the same as is given to the ministers of the gospel and the selectmen of the town by the laws of the Commonwealth, excepting such as have or may be given to the school districts by a special vote of the town."

And twenty-two years in advance of the State law requiring school committees to make annual reports, Danvers adopted this recommendation,—

"It shall be the duty of the School Committee to make a report of so much of their doings and such other particulars respecting the several schools as they may deem worthy the consideration of the town at their annual March meeting."

At the same meeting at which this action was taken it was voted "that District No. 2 be divided, agreeably to a Petition of John Page and others; dated April 19th, 1816, and is on Town files." A search among the old papers in the town-house vault was rewarded by the finding of this interesting autograph petition, the origin of the present Plains District, now No. 1,—

"TO THE SELECTMEN OF DANVERS:—

"GENTLEMEN: We, the subscribers, inhabitants of School District number two, request you to insert a clause in your warrant at the May



meeting for the choice of Representatives to this effect: to see if the town will pass a vote to separate that part of District number two. Beginning at Frost fish brook bridge, so called, and from thence following the mill-pond down untill you come to the point of land owned by John Page, thence up a branch of said pond, untill you come to the bridge near brick yards; thence running down by the Salem road untill you come to the east corner of Seth Stetson's pasture; thence running as the fence stands to the south corner of said pasture; thence southerly as the fence runs to Crane river, so called; thence following said river to the Bridge with all the land, polls and estates, to the northward and westward said line now belonging to District number two, with all the powers and privileges belonging to other school Districts in the town of Danvers.

"Danvers, April 19th, 1816.

"JOHN PAGE.
"GEORGE OSGOOD.
"EZRA BATCHELDER.
"EBEN BERRY.
"TIMOTHY PUTNAM.
"EBEN PUTNAM, JR.
"ANDREW BATCHELDER.
"ALLEN PEABODY."

Very soon Benjamin Wellington and Jonathan Perry, with their polls and estates, were set off from No. 3 to the new district, No. 13, and the next year "the land of Wm. Burley, of Beverly, which lies in Danvers" was subjected to the same transfer.

In 1820 the town directed the school committee to return the number of children between five and eighteen, with the following result:

No. 1.....162	No. 4.....51	No. 7.....99	No. 10.....46
" 2.....184	" 5.....104	" 8.....85	" 11.....116
" 3.....53	" 6.....98	" 9.....16	" 12.....120
No. 13.....66.			

About this time it is apparent that the old "grammar school" was being neglected. In the summer of 1821 Dr. Nichols and others petitioned for such a school, and as cumulative evidence of its non-existence this vote appears on the record of the next annual meeting,—

"Voted, To choose a committee to answer a communication received by the selectmen from the county attorney, relating to Grammar Schools. Voted, that John W. Proctor, John Page and William Sutton be said committee."

The spirit of Samuel Cheever seems to have descended on these men, for, as in the case of his mission to Ipswich forty years before, nothing was there-after heard of this threatened indictment.

Since the code of 1816 there had been annually elected three committee-men at large, and each year these three were the ministers of the three churches. After seven years it seems that it was thought well to give laymen a representation, and at a meeting called for that purpose and no other, and on the petition of the school committee themselves, it was voted then and thereafter to add three to the committee at large; and those first added were Dr. Nichols, Nathan Felton and John W. Proctor.

In 1827 the term "at large" was dropped. The body which had been thus distinguished now became, with the addition of one more, simply the School committee; while the committee, chosen as formerly, one from each district, received the new title of Prudential Committee. To further distinguish the "upper house" from the latter, for several years

the phrase "Committee of Superintendence" was applied to it.

In 1831, by vote of the town the Prudential Committee were thenceforth to be elected by the several districts at district meetings.

In 1835 just forty years had passed since the original establishment of districts. In the mean time many alterations, only some of which have here been noted, had taken place in the way of changing individuals and their estates from one district to another, until there might well have been more or less uncertainty about the true dividing lines. They were therefore carefully examined and re-located by a committee of delegates from each existing district, and their report was recorded by Dr. Shed in a volume of school records.

In 1836 occurs the first mention of compensation to the school committee. They were authorized to appoint three of their number to visit all the schools in town, and these three were to receive for their services the same rate per day as other town officers.

The next year, 1837, the Massachusetts School Fund is first mentioned. The manner of disposal of the town's share was referred to the school committee.

The Legislature of 1838 passed an act, changing the authority to employ teachers from the prudential to the general committee unless towns should otherwise order, and Danvers did so otherwise order. But lest the district government should smack too highly of one-man power, it was, the next year, recommended to each district to choose two other persons to act and advise with the prudential man in superintending the concerns of the district.

The year 1839 marks the beginning of our printed school reports. The first school report proper ever made to the town was in 1817, and was committed to the "files." Resurrected from its long repose, this old document, somewhat blotted, scratched and inter-lined, signed "B. Wadsworth, Chairman, pr. order," makes very interesting reading to-day, and shows that school-report literature has departed not far from the standard thus early set,—the very small iron hand in the glove of well wadded velvet. There seems to be a certain familiar sound about expressions such as these:

"The Committee are enabled to report that the schools generally appeared advantageously in comparison with their condition in past years. . . . Notwithstanding the respectable character of the schools generally, there is still room for improvement. In some districts the committee did not find the scholars had made so great proficiency in their studies as might have been reasonably expected. . . . In some districts many of the children have been sent very inconstantly to school, and the efforts of the instructors have not been met with that zealous support from Parents which is essentially necessary to give the desired effect. In some instances the committee did not find that degree of Silence and regular order which is necessary to enable scholars (Ah, Doctor!) to pursue their studies most advantageously. . . . But the committee with pleasure add that in no instance was there discovered any marks of negligence, or want of constant and faithful attention to their laborious employment on the part of the instructors. . . . The committee would close their remarks respecting the several schools



by stating, that they derived the highest gratification in witnessing the regular order and highly respectable attainments of the scholars in the school kept by Mr. Samuel Preston, District N. 4, in the North Parish, and in the school kept by Mr. Amory Felton, District N. 11, in the South Parish.

The Committee conclude by earnestly exhorting all concerned to exert all their influence and abilities to improve their respective schools by employing the best Instructors, by sending the children and youth to school as constantly and as many years as possible, and by affording them all the aid and encouragement in their power to attain at least a thorough acquaintance with the several branches, or, rather, rudiments of science which are taught in English schools."

Following the custom thus set in 1817, reports were for eighteen years annually read at town-meeting and filed away. From 1835 to and including 1838 the reports are recorded at length, together with many interesting returns, in Dr. Shed's book of "School Records."

At the annual meeting of 1839, after Rev. Allen Putnam had read the report of the year then ended, it was recommitted with authority to the committee to cause as many copies of it to be printed as they should think proper for the benefit of the inhabitants. Israel H. Putnam appears in this earliest printed report as a teacher in No. 7; subsequently he was given the much larger school in No. 5. One of his successors in No. 7 was John G. Walcott, and following Walcott, in the winter of '42-43, was a young man from the Village, Augustus Mudge. Of the latter the committee said, "the teacher seemed to feel an active interest, and the appearance of the school justifies us in saying that in his first attempt, he has succeeded in imparting that interest to his scholars." In the sequence of events, Mr. Putnam and Mr. Mudge are now associated the one as treasurer and the other as president of the Danvers Saving Bank.

Oliver A. Woodbury, who became a physician in Nashua, N. H., deceased, taught in No. 10. Among the lady teachers were Elizabeth P. Pope, Fidelia Kettelle, Margaret Putnam, Harriott A. Pope, Emily Gould and Hannah J. Putnam. The mention of the then young men, Putnam, Walcott and Woodbury, calls to mind the fact that just about this time they were themselves attending school at Pembroke Academy, N. H. And this was a thing not uncommon among the ambitious young fellows of Danvers, who desired something more than the meagre education of a few weeks each winter at the home schools. They left their work and their wages not for the fun of a term or two at boarding-school, but to get the most out of it; sometimes spurred on by a friendly word of advice, but as often impelled merely by personal determination. Quite a number went to Bradford, a few to Atkinson, N. H., and perhaps elsewhere, but Pembroke seems to have been the favorite. In the few catalogues which have been preserved the following names appear of North Danvers young men and women who were at Pembroke about 1840: Israel H. Putnam, Oliver A. Woodbury, Israel P. Boardman, Francis Noyes, Charles A. Putnam, Albert Putnam, Elias E. Putnam, Israel E. Putnam, Moses W. Put-

nam, Thomas M. Putnam, William Putnam, John G. Walcott, Joseph S. Black, Charles P. Preston, Aaron W. Warren, Charles H. Gould, Harrison O. Warren, John H. Porter, John Reed, Caroline E. Page, Sarah P. Page, Emiline Putnam, Nancy Putnam, Mary O. Black, Sarah A. Kent.

At Topsfield Academy there were, about 1830, these: Ezra Batchelder, James D. Black, Thomas J. Bradstreet, Moses K. Cross, John C. Page, Charles Page, Ebenezer Putnam, Francis Putnam, William R. Putnam, Henry F. Putnam, Charles H. Rhoades, Asa T. Richards, Richard West, Lydia Bradstreet, Harriet N. Page, Harriet Putnam, Clarissa Putnam, Elizabeth A. Putnam.

A fellow-student with some of these Danvers young people at Pembroke was a young man from Deerfield, N. H., who went to Dartmouth College, and helped to pay his way by teaching, winters. About Thanksgiving time, during his first year, he drove from his home looking for a school, and spent a night in Danvers with Oliver Woodbury, calling the next morning on "Uncle Moses," father of Israel E. Putnam, a young man of great promise who had died at Pembroke, and by Uncle Moses he was taken over to the old General Putnam homestead to the shoe-factory of Daniel and Ahira Putnam, to see in particular the latter who was prudential committee-man, and to Ahira the young man made application to teach the district school, No. 4, the ensuing term and was engaged. Julia Putnam, a daughter of the homestead, helping about the household work which by well-established New England custom falls to Monday morning, noticed the arrival of the young stranger, and was interested in his errand for she was the teacher of the summer school. The young man's name was John D. Philbrick. It is a proud thing for Danvers that a name since so widely and honorably known should find itself connected with her annals. Mr. Philbrick taught the No. 4 school three winters. He became engaged to Miss Putnam, and was married to her after his graduation, and after his great life-work was accomplished came back to these scenes of his early labors and of his early love to die. It is interesting to read in the light of his subsequent career what was said of the young student-teacher by the committee of 1839: "At the commencement of his term we feared that Mr. Philbrick might fail to meet the reasonable demands of the district; but are happy in being able to state that both he and his school made progress that was *highly* gratifying to the committee and creditable to themselves. We have seldom found in school so general and thorough acquaintance with the various marks of punctuation as was possessed here; and as a necessary consequence we found some of the best readers here that we have listened to in town. The various recitations approached to uniformity in character and were very fair."

John Dudley Philbrick was born in Deerfield, N. H., May 27, 1818. He graduated from Dartmouth



in 1842, having some weeks previous to graduation entered upon the duties of a position in the Roxbury Latin School. While at Roxbury he married, August 24, 1843, Julia A. Putnam, of Danvers. He next went to the Boston English High School, was master of the Mahew School in 1845-46, and achieved great reputation for his admirable work as master of the Quincy School, 1847-52. For a few years his labors were then transferred to Connecticut, first as principal of the State Normal School, and again as State superintendent of common schools. In December, 1856, he was recalled to Boston by his election as superintendent of public schools, a position which, except for an interim of a year and a half, he held continuously until March, 1878. His published official reports during this term are a part of the standard literature of education. He was sent by the United States to represent our educational department at the Vienna Exposition in 1873, and again to Paris in 1878. From France he received the decoration of Chevalier of the Legion of Honor, and the Gold Palm of the University of France. St. Andrew's University of Scotland conferred upon him, in 1879, the degree of D. C. L. He was one of the original incorporators of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and remained on the board as long as he lived; was ten years a member of the Massachusetts State Board of Education, and ten years a trustee of Bates' College. In his later years he was especially instrumental in the establishment of free evening schools and the State Normal Art School, and in the enactment of the truancy law and teachers' tenure of office act. He died at Danvers, February 2, 1886. In a private letter to John G. Whittier, I. E. Clark, of Washington, says: "I cannot express to you what a personal grief to me was the news of the death of Mr. Philbrick. . . . He was a great educator, I think worthy to stand beside Horace Mann in the memory of his countrymen." The immediate successor of Mr. Philbrick in this district school, of Danvers, was the man who is now librarian of the Boston Public Library, Hon. Mellen Chamberlain, who also married a Putnam of the neighborhood, a daughter of Jesse.

Mrs. Philbrick has furnished these names of other old teachers in No. 4: Asa Cummings, long editor of the *Portland Mirror*; Samuel, William and Eliza Preston (the latter Mrs. Nathan Tapley), Catherine, Elizabeth, Susan, William R., Francis P. and Julia A. Putnam, Dr. Joseph E. Fiske, Otis Mudge.

Dean Peabody, now clerk of Essex County Courts, taught in Putnamville, beginning in 1843-44.

In the winter of 1846-47 a young man, now widely known as Rev. Dr. Alfred P. Putnam, taught the "senior department" of the Plains School. "This was Mr. Putnam's first experiment in school-keeping. He entered upon the work in his own district, and under peculiar disadvantages. Yet the committee present at the closing examination testified to the general good appearance of the school and its decided improve-

ment during the year." Charles A. Putnam, who became superintendent of schools in St. Louis and there died, taught at No. 4, in 1847-48. Freeman N. Blake, who some years ago became a permanent resident of Danvers, was teaching thirty-seven years ago in No. 12. Harrison Gray taught at No. 7. Rufus Sawyer at No. 10, in 1850. Arthur A. Putnam, brother of Alfred, son of Elias, lawyer, of Uxbridge, began his first experiment, 1852, where he grew up, in No. 3. John W. Sawyer, who recently died at the head of the Butler Insane Asylum, Rhode Island, was teaching in 1852 at the "little border school," in No. 10.

Other well-known names than those already given which appear in the list of teachers from 1840 to 1845 are,—Hannah Pedrick, Sarah A. Osgood, Hannah P. Bradstreet, Sophronia Fuller, Asenath P. Pope, Sarah B. Pedrick, Almira A. Putnam, Eliza W. Preston, Melicent P. Peabody, Matilda Peabody.

From 1845 to 1855,—Elizabeth Hopkinson, Clarissa A. Preston, Mary P. Tapley, Eliza W. Preston, Nancy Perry, Mary J. Sawyer, Adeline F. Bomer, Sophronia E. Tapley, Mary E. Porter, Nancy E. Boardman, Sarah E. Symonds, Susan Putnam, Julia A. Page, Lydia A. P. Tapley, Harriet Felton, Amanda B. Hood, Hannah P. Pope, Harriet A. Putnam, Lydia A. Felton, Mary A. Richards, Sarah J. Putnam, Harriet M. Putnam, S. A. Hyde, M. A. Wilkins, Pamela Needham, Sarah F. Emery, Ann J. Emery, Ellen F. Towns, Cornelia Putnam, Sophia J. Richards.

In the year of the first printed report, 1839, the subject of high schools was first brought up. William D. Joplin, John W. Proctor, Allen Putnam, Samuel Preston, J. M. Austin, Daniel P. King and Benjamin Porter were appointed to consider the propriety of establishing one or more such schools agreeably to the statutes. They reported that a majority at least felt that the credit and interest of the town demanded better and higher schools than those existing. In view of the scattered location of the inhabitants, they said, it would not be practicable to agree upon a site for the establishment of one school to accommodate all, and, perhaps, it would be equally difficult to agree upon two. Although there were wise men on this committee, the concluding paragraph of their report is a bit of that rare wisdom which confesses its own limitations,—

"They are satisfied that something ought to be done, and they hope something will be done; but it requires wiser heads than theirs to determine how it shall be done in a manner that will prove satisfactory."

In the face of such an avowal it is not surprising that high schools remained in the realms of the ideal for many years to come. After three years some determined souls had the courage to bring up the subject again, it was referred to the school committee and that was the end of it. Then after one of the periods of Jacob's courtship, in 1849, it was brought up a third time, and again referred to the school committee. The next year, for the third time in its



history, an indictment hung over the town. High-schools were no longer a matter of choice, but of necessity, and the citizens stirred themselves to get at once out of the unpleasant situation. J. W. Proctor, Samuel Preston, Moses Black, Jr., Andrew Nichols and Fitch Poole were appointed to act in concert with the school committee.

On Monday, the 8th of April, 1850, Rev. Thomas P. Field of the South Church read the report of this committee in town meeting. It was voted that he read it over again. And after various attempts at amendment, it was adopted.

The report begins,—

"It is obvious that the Town is under an absolute necessity of establishing a High School. The Law on this subject is imperative, and we cannot neglect its requisitions, without incurring a heavy penalty. But so extensive is our Territory, and so scattered our population, that one High School will by no means satisfy the desires or meet the wants of our community. If we have one High School, we must have two, in order that all the Inhabitants of the Town, may participate in the benefits of Education, in the higher branches of knowledge. The Committee have considered the subject of uniting the High Schools, in some way with one, or more of the District Schools, in order, if possible, to obviate the necessity of establishing Independent Schools. They have come to the conclusion, however, that no satisfactory arrangement of this kind can be made. It is uncertain whether any of the Districts would consent to it, and if they would, it is thought by the Committee that the plan could not be made to work, in a manner advantageous to the interests of either District or High School education."

The committee proposed certain votes, which by the acceptance of the report, became the action of the town:

"First, That it is expedient to establish two High Schools, independent of the District Schools,—one in the North and one in the South part of the Town, the said Schools to be free to all the Inhabitants, under such uniform regulations for the admission of Pupils as the school committee shall establish. . . . That the School Committee be instructed to provide two suitable school rooms, with Furniture and apparatus, and establish High Schools, according to Law, as early as the first of May next, or as soon after as practicable."

On the third day of June, 1850, the two high schools were opened for the admission of such scholars as should pass the examination. Thirty-eight entered the south, thirty-one the north school. John P. Marshall, now of the faculty of Tuft's College, was the first principal of the north school. The building in which the north school was inaugurated was situated on Conant Street, in a corner of the lot now occupied by the dwelling of Roswell D. Bates. It is described by one of the original pupils as "a long, narrow and low structure, a little back from the road, with two large trees before it. The room was very low studded, at one end the desk and at the other the recitation platform; between were only three rows of double seats. The pupils were of good age and ability." The first examination was awaited with great interest. "In consequence of the desire of so many to be present at this time, it was deemed proper to hold the examination in the new spacious school-house at New Mills. The performances were of a high order, and most gratifying to the committee and the numerous visitors."

After a few months better quarters were found for

the school. On the present town-house lot was the chapel of the Wesleyan Society and, being then little or not at all in use, the real estate was sold to the town, and the meeting-house became a school-house. This chapel had been called the "Quail Trap," and the name clung to it so long as it was used as a school-house. When the town-house was built, the 'quail trap' was moved to Essex Street, where, ever since, it has been a residence in good and regular standing. At the close of the second term of the second year Mr. Marshall resigned to take a better position; A. P. S. Stuart succeeded him, and remained till the close of the fall term, 1853. Mr. Nathaniel Hills, late principal of the high school at Great Falls, N. H., was selected as Mr. Stuart's successor. Rev. James Fletcher succeeded Mr. Hills. The present principal is H. R. Burrington; Miss S. F. Richmond, Miss Annette Sawyer, assistants.

By a letter dated London, 30th November, 1853, addressed to the committee of the Holten and Peabody High Schools, George Peabody, in acknowledgment of the compliment paid him in the name of the south school, stated that he would transmit in the autumn of 1854, and thenceforth annually during his life, the sum of two hundred dollars for prizes as rewards of merit to pupils of both high schools at their yearly examinations, the entire amount to be common to both, and distributed as among the pupils of one school. The school committee determined "that a suitable medal shall be awarded and presented to every pupil who shall pass three years—constituting the entire course—in either of these schools, and whose attendance, deportment and advancement shall have been uniformly satisfactory to the teachers and committee." Later, 1867, Mr. Peabody established a fund of two thousand dollars, the income of which has been annually devoted to the purchase of medals and books for graduates.

The first graduates of the Holten High School to receive the Peabody Medal were the

CLASS OF 1855.

Emily G. Berry.	Addison P. Leavoyd.
Mary A. Black.	Charles Leavoyd.
Harriet G. Bradstreet.	Clarence Fowler.
Susan E. Perley.	Samuel P. Fowler.
Mary F. Putnam.	John H. Parker.
Nancy W. Proctor.	Adrian L. Putnam.
Asenath A. Sawyer.	Daniel W. Proctor.
Elizabeth P. Swan.	

In the spring of 1849 a lively episode occurred in No. 6. There the Rev. Daniel Foster, the preacher at the Wesleyan Chapel, was teaching, and things did not run smoothly between himself and the committee. Rev. Mr. Eaton, one of the committee, went in to examine the school. He undertook to hear a class in geography, but Foster remarked that the time was up, and cut short the committee-man's questions by sending the class to their seats. Mr. Eaton called a meeting of the board and reported what had occurred, and the board voted "that the whole committee pro-



ceed this afternoon to examine the school in District No. 6;" and they all filed into the school-house at half-past one. Foster gave them seats, and went on with his business. In a few minutes the chairman, Mr. Braman, said: "We have come here to examine this school." "It was examined yesterday," said Foster, with the inference that it wasn't to be examined again. Then followed a scene. The committee ordered scholars to stand up and recite, and the teacher told them to sit down. They were more in awe of their teacher than of the committee and they sat still and some cried. The committee finally withdrew as gracefully as they could, leaving behind a note in Foster's hands, informing him that he was forthwith dismissed.

At the adjournment of the annual meeting the matter was piping hot. The committee read a long report, covering nearly four newspaper columns, giving the facts of the case and justifying their action. On a motion to print twelve hundred copies, Foster himself moved to strike out all concerning No. 6; followed his motion by a violent attack on the committee and carried his point. And further, at the subsequent election, he was a successful candidate for membership of the board which turned him out, and the Rev. Mr. Eaton failed of re-election.

By an act of 1850 the Legislature gave towns the option of abolishing the district system. There was an immediate effort in Danvers to take advantage of this act. The larger expenses made necessary by the establishment of the two high schools just at this time gave a special incentive to the movement. In response to instructions to consider the subject of a radical change in the school district system with a view to greater economy and more efficient management, the school committee, through A. A. Abbott, Esq., presented in 1851 a very strong and clear report setting forth the desirability of abolishing the system. But Danvers never voted to abolish the system, though a number of attempts were made to secure this action. On March 24, 1869, the Legislature took the matter into its own hands and broadly enacted that "the school district system in the commonwealth is hereby abolished."

At the annual meeting of 1853 William L. Weston made a motion that a superintendent of schools be employed. Subsequently it was voted that the committee be instructed to hire Charles Northend. Mr. Northend, a native of the northern part of the county, had been long and favorably known as a teacher; his name appears in the first printed report, 1839, as principal in No. 1. His salary as superintendent was at first eight hundred and fifty dollars. The great extent of territory to be covered, from the "Rocks" to "Beaver Brook," from the "Devil's Dishful" to "Blind-hole" must have made the occupation somewhat akin to that of a circuit-rider. Mr. Northend served faithfully a number of years, and was the first and only school superintendent of Danvers.

In April, 1841, a move was first made for the establishment of what is now the Tapleyville district. Gilbert Tapley presented a petition with his own signature and thirty others for a new district to be carved out of Nos. 5 and 6; but inasmuch as his brother, Asa, was on hand with a list of remonstrants twice as long, the petitioners were respectfully given leave to withdraw. They withdrew just five years, and at the end of that time a division of No. 6 was effected on the petition of its own district committee, and the northern part thereof set off as a new district,—the last—No. 14. No record of a dividing line was made further than to adopt the one described in the petition, which has not been found.

With the division of the town it became expedient to readjust the districts. Six districts, namely, Nos. 2 (Port), 3 (Putnamville), 4 (Beaver Brook), 5 (Centre), 13 (Plains) and 14 (Tapleyville), together with a part of No. 6 (Collins House), were left to Danvers. One from each—S. P. Fowler, I. H. Putnam, Francis Dodge, Augustus Mudge, Calvin Putnam, Orrin Putnam and Hix Richards—were appointed to renumber and relocate the districts. No alterations were made in the lines of Nos. 2, 4 and 13. A portion of No. 14 was annexed to No. 5, and another portion to No. 6. No. 5 previously had 141 scholars and lost 7; No. 14 had 193 and lost 49; No. 6, having but 31 left in Danvers after the division of the town, gained 66. The districts numbered 13 and 14 in the old town became 1 and 7, other numbers remaining unchanged.

A short time after the dissolution of the annual meeting at which this report was accepted, dissatisfaction was manifest in the calling of a special meeting to alter the new lines of Nos. 5, 6 and 7. It was then voted to annex all of No. 6 that remained in Danvers to No. 7, and to call the consolidated district No. 6, with the proviso that if a majority of voters residing south of a certain line should within thirty days express to the selectmen their wish to form a district by themselves, they should then be allowed to organize as District No. 7.

The people south of the given line did wish to remain a district by themselves, and did not wish to be deprived of the old number, which had been a familiar designation of their locality for more than sixty years, and in June the numbers were changed back,—No. 6 to the old "Turkey Plain" District, and No. 7 to Tapleyville.

In the mean time the people of the old Village district, No. 5, were having a hot little war. The people in the immediate neighborhood of the church, and so on to Tapleyville, wanted to be a separate district and have a school-house of their own. They were outnumbered in the district, but succeeded in obtaining a vote of the town for the division of No. 5 by a line crossing Centre Street four rods east of the house of John Roberts; and all that portion lying east of the line was established as District No. 8. A

nice large school-house was erected just opposite the church; but the triumph of the seceders was short. Although they had fortified themselves with the opinion of eminent counsel, the division was tested by a suit at law and pronounced illegal. For a time the disappointed divisionists held out, and many of them actually let their places be sold under the hammer for the taxes levied for No. 5, and one man remained in Salem jail six months rather than pay them. But better counsels soon prevailed, the sold property was redeemed, and now only broad smiles wreath the faces of certain town fathers when the nearly-forgotten subject is mentioned.

The school-house stood for a number of years in melancholy emptiness, and was finally moved to the Plains, where it was used first as a shoe manufactory, and was then changed to a fine-looking dwelling, as innocent of anything like neighborhood quarrels as is its respected owner and occupant, Deacon Eben Peabody, of the Maple Street Church.

It was during the ephemeral existence of this No. 8, that the annexation of territory, east of Porter's River and Frost Fish Brook, from Beverly to Danvers took place. This new territory was, February 1, 1858, established as School-district No. 9. But at the March meeting of 1859, there being no longer a District No. 8, it was voted to change the new territory from No. 9 to No. 8, and thus without further change the districts have since remained: No. 1, Plains; 2, Port; 3, Putnamville; 4, Centre; 5, Beaver Brook; 6, Collin's House; 7, Tapleyville; 8, East Danvers.

In 1795 the total appropriation made by the town for schools was four hundred dollars; the proportion received by each district is interesting as showing their relative numerical importance: No. 1, \$111.11; 2, \$50.90; 5, \$46.92; 3, \$43.95; 7, \$43.90; 6, \$43.85; 4, \$33.33; 8, \$15.50; 9, \$10.64.

In 1810 the appropriation had increased to \$1250; 1820, \$1800; 1830, \$2500; 1835, \$3000; 1840, \$3500; 1845, \$3 for each scholar between four and sixteen years; 1855, \$5.50 for each scholar, four to sixteen, \$1 of which amount for each scholar was devoted to high schools,—estimated, 2,400 scholars.

After South Danvers was set off, the first appropriation of Danvers, 1856, for schools was \$3800 for common schools, \$1200 for the Holten High School. In 1865, \$5000 for common, \$1300 for high; in 1875, \$10,000 for common, \$2100 for high; in 1880, \$10,000 for common, \$1750 for high; in 1887, \$15,600 in all. The income on the Massachusetts School Fund and the dog tax have been added, and are not included in these figures.

At the annual election of 1880, next after the passage of the law enabling women to vote for school committee, twenty-seven Danvers women availed themselves of the right. Mrs. Andrew Nichols was the first woman to vote.

At the last annual meeting, 1887, the town voted

an appropriation for evening schools. The first and only previous instance of similar action was in 1850, when some provision was made for evening schools for the poor from the State school fund.

The first school-house at the Plains was brought from Middleton the first part of this century by private enterprise, for the use of primary scholars. Older scholars went to New Mills until the Plains district was established, in 1816. The first district school-house was a small building erected under contract by Stephen Whipple, carpenter, near the spot occupied by the bakery.

The present grammar-school building at the Port was finished in 1849, and was dedicated July 25th, with considerable ceremony. There were addresses by the presiding officer, S. P. Fowler, by Charles Northend, then a teacher in Salem, by J. W. Proctor, Rev. Messrs. Appleton, Fletcher and Braman, Mr. Rust, commissioner of schools for New Hampshire, and "Mr. R. Putnam, an experienced teacher of Salem." The immediate predecessor of this building was the "old brick school," situated on a part of the same lot but much nearer the street. Hon. James D. Black has furnished the writer with some reminiscences of the brick house: "With my brothers and sisters my school days were spent in the district school-house at the Port till we attained the age of fifteen or sixteen years. Andrew Wallace taught most of the time of my earlier school days. I recall among my school-mates Henry and Augustus Fowler; Jeremiah and Timothy Page; John, William and Parker B. Francis; Samuel and Josiah Pender; Warren M. and John Jacobs; William B. and Augustus Read; William and Joseph Lamson; Benjamin, Charles and William B. Chaplin; William Cheever, Edward Stimpson, William Endicott, George Kent, Philip Smith and Seth Stetson. Our schools were not graded; all ages attended the same school, from children in A B C to those in studies now confined to the high school. Quills were used in writing, steel pens came later. Most of Mr. Wallace's pupils made good penmen. He was succeeded by Richard Phillips, of Topsfield."

There was another smaller building called the "green door school-house," near the present railroad station, which was in use some eighty years ago, and was long ago moved by Peter Wait's father to Ash Street, where it has since been used as a dwelling; and of still earlier date was a school-house, close by the First Baptist Meeting-house.

The very first schoolmaster at the New Mills was Caleb Clark, who kept his school in the house of farmer Porter. His writing desks were boards laid upon barrels. Of his discipline, Deacon Fowler has written:

"He was in the habit of whittling a shingle in school and for small offences compelling the disobedient to pile the whittlings in the middle of the room; when this was accomplished he would kick them over, to be picked up again. He would sometimes require them to watch a wire, suspended in the room, and inform him when a fly lighted on it. For



greater offences he would sometimes attempt to frighten them into obedience by putting his shoulder under the mantel piece and threaten to throw the house down upon them. It is said of the worthy pedagogue, when deeply engaged in a mathematical problem that he became so absorbed in the work as to be wholly unconscious of anything transpiring around him, and the boys taking advantage of this habit would creep out of school and skate and slide by the hour together."

At a meeting held in District No. 3, Putnamville, July 6, 1812, a vote was passed to build a new school-house after the plan of the brick house at the New Mills and also "voted to purchase a piece of land of Rufus and Simeon Putnam in this district, being on the northwest corner of the school-house pasture, so called, adjoining the road and Zadoc Wilkins land, and the same land on which the old school-house stood before the present school-house was built."

The "present school-house" was built in 1787, under this vote passed at a meeting of "School ward No. 3," at the house of Zerubable Porter, namely: "voted that there be a school-house erected for the education of children on or near the spot where the old one formerly stood if the ground could be obtained."

Both the original building, the building of 1787, and the brick building of 1812 stood farther up the Topsfield road than the present Putnamville school-house, namely, at the head of North Street.

The second one of these buildings is still in useful existence, having been bought and moved, some half a century ago, by Perley Tapley, to become part and parcel of the little village which bears his name. It forms a portion of the house next west of the late residence of Gilbert Tapley. Among those who taught in this building were Master Andrews, a famous teacher, college educated, Jonathan and Benjamin Porter, Thomas Savage, Charles Wheeler, Charles Kimball, probably Clarissa Endicott, and surely Esther Forsaith, to secure whom Jonathan Porter went up to Chester, N. H. It was in this building, too, that Universalist meetings were first held. Elias Putnam taught the first winter school in the brick house in 1812-13, and his youngest son, Arthur, taught the last in 1851-52. Between them were, among others, Philemon Putnam, Oliver Woodbury, Edwin Josselyn; ladies, Clarissa Endicott (Porter), Nancy Putnam (Boardman), Sarah Rea (Bradstreet), Sally Shillaber.

The old school-house which preceded the present one in No. 5, the Village, both being in the line of succession to that first school-house of Parson Green, has been thus described by a former pupil: "The old brown house stood on a small barren, unfenced, unattractive triangle at the corner of Centre and Dayton Streets. There were three rows of benches on each side of the house, one side for the girls, the other for the boys. At one end there was a large open fire-place, and opposite it stood the master's lofty desk, to which he ascended by two or three steps. The windows were so high that scholars could not look out from the seats, and outsiders could not look in without climbing. No paint or ornament of

any kind was indulged in. My earliest recollection goes back about sixty years, when Miss Edith Swinerton (Mrs. Aaron Tapley) was the teacher.

"The only other lady teachers to whom I went were Hannah and Betsey Putnam. They were sisters, 'solemn sisters.' They always taught together. Though very unlike in temper, they were devotedly attached to each other, and would consent to no other arrangement, no matter if they together received no more than enough for one, as was generally the case. Each had a chair and table, and sat facing each other. Both were very pious. Betsey read the Bible; Hannah opened with prayer. Betsey heard the lesson. She was of a very sweet and gentle spirit, and much beloved by her scholars. Hannah was more fiery and quick, and a terror to evil-doers. They always spoke with punctilious accuracy and dignity. A little girl was sent one day into the clothes-room to get the teacher's hose. Not knowing what was meant, and yet not daring to ask, the messenger brought in, perhaps, a shawl. 'I sent you for my hose, not my shawl.' Again the timid messenger retired and brought in a bonnet, when the exasperated teacher, in a sort of desperation, spoke, in unmistakable terms, 'Well, if I must so speak, bring in my stockings.'

"Betsey's way of showing her regard for a favorite pupil was by calling him out occasionally to read for her entertainment 'The Bears and the Bees,' 'The Beggar's Petition,' 'Procrastination' or some other choice selection from the 'English Reader.' Hannah's attentions were commonly bestowed in a somewhat different way when correction was needed. A reverend gentleman recalls an occasion of this sort, when his young form bent, at an ungraceful angle, over Hannah's knee, and the room reverberated more or less with the emphatic correction applied to that portion of a boy's body by nature designed to receive it. Their prized 'rewards of merit' consisted of little oblong bits of paper with yellow borders, and mottoes written thereon in their own hands. On Saturdays hymns and Bible verses were repeated as a sort of special exercise."

This present summer of 1887 a number of the survivors of the pupils of these estimable sisters have taken steps to erect a memorial over their hitherto unmarked graves in Wadsworth Cemetery.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

DANVERS—(Continued).

VILLAGES OF THE TOWN.

DANVERS is notably a town of many villages. There are in all eight railroad stations, not counting the junction, within its limits and five post-offices.

The first post-offices in Danvers, it may here be mentioned, were established as the result of a town-meeting held in 1828, when Dr. Nichols, Jonathan Shove, Nathaniel Putnam and Samuel and John Preston were chosen "to devise or digest any scheme relative to the Establishment of Post-offices in this Town." The action of the meeting is thus recorded:

"Voted, That there be but one post-office in this Town.

"Voted, That there be one more post-office added in this Town.

"Voted, To reconsider the last, 45 votes for and 45 votes against, the moderator decided the vote."

The committee's report was, however, adopted, in which it was recommended that the town have two post-offices, one between the old South Meeting-house and Pool's Bridge, to be called the South Danvers Post-office, and one at the New Mills, to be called the North Danvers Post-office, and this action was communicated to the Postmaster-General. For many years this office at New Mills or Danversport remained the only one within the present limits of the town. Mail addressed "Danvers" now comes to the Plains. The other offices are Danvers Centre, Tapleyville and Asylum. The latter, established chiefly for the convenience of the hospital, accommodates that locality in the midst of which is the General Putnam homestead, the home of the Prestons, Nichols, Verrys and other well-known names, commonly spoken of as "Number Four." While there is no central village there, the community has always maintained a distinctive identity, and has borne an enviable reputation for the character of its inhabitants. The name Danvers Centre is misleading; its only appropriateness is in the way of reminiscence and lies in the fact that the locality to which it is applied is the seat of the church which was the religious and political center, not only of Salem Village, but, for many years after the incorporation of the town, of all the northern portion thereof.

It is often called "the Village," a name altogether better, inasmuch as it is suggestive of the historic associations with which the locality abounds. Though by the destruction of the Mudge shoe-factory the Village no longer has any manufacturing business of its own, its people are full of life and public spirit. They keep up their end in public affairs, turn out to caucuses and town-meetings, and exercise a strong influence usually on the safe and conservative side of things. The history of this community, most interesting of all the villages of the town, has been given somewhat in the sketch of the early settlers and in that of its church.

Forty or fifty years ago, perhaps more, Putnamville, the name given to school district number three, extending from Porter's Hill to the Topsfield and Wenham lines, was the centre of much wealth and culture; of its people, Rev. Dr. A. P. Putnam has written in a series of very interesting letters. Concerning the Plains, the Port and Tapleyville, something remains to be said here.

THE PLAINS.—About the time Elder Sharpe sold his grant, which included nearly all of this present principal village of the town, to John Porter, the General Court formally laid out, as a great highway connecting the lower and upper settlements of the Colony, "the Ipswich Road." It crossed Farmer Porter's lands at their greatest width,—entering them at some point on Ash Street, and continuing through Elm and Conant Streets to Frost-fish Brook,—and it often served as a fixed boundary in the many subsequent divisions of the Porter estate. Almost exactly midway between the limits of "Porter's Plains," so these level lands were soon called, as measured on the Ipswich Road, another road or path was at a very early date opened northward, which, in due course, became the highway to Topsfield along the line of the present Maple and Locust Streets. The point at which the Topsfield road left the Ipswich road is the present "Square."

This meeting of roads had no immediate effect in the formation of anything like a village. As late as 1692 there was but one house in all the region, and that was the original Porter homestead, near the Unitarian Church. More than a full century had passed, when, in 1755, another road, High Street, was pushed down to the embryo settlement at New Mills and across the river to Salem, and even then the Square was scarcely more than a country cross-roads.

At the head of High Street there is standing a well preserved gambrel-roofed house, which was built about the time the street was laid out. It is the homestead of a family which, though not numerous, has been honorably prominent in the town's history. About the middle of the last century, an Andrews, then living on the Shillaber farm at Putnamville, wanted some bricks, and had to go to Medford for them. Andrews told the brickmaker that there was excellent clay in Danvers, and asked him to send some one to commence working it. "Here's my son," the brickmaker said, "just turned twenty-one, he can go if he wants to." The son came, boarded with Andrews, married his daughter, started the brick business here and built the house just referred to. His name was Jeremiah Page. He died June 8, 1806, in his eighty-fifth year, and is always spoken of as Colonel Jeremiah. At the breaking out of the Revolution he took a very active part, and commanded a company of militia at the fight on the retreat from Lexington, and throughout his useful life he was one of the leaders in town affairs. He had twelve children, three of whom were by a second marriage. His oldest son, Samuel, went with his father to respond to the Lexington alarm, and was where bullets were thickest. Subsequently he joined Washington's army about Boston, with a captain's commission. He was at the crossing of the Delaware, at White Plains and Monmouth, and shared the sufferings of Valley Forge. He was with Wayne at the storming of Stony Point, and to insure success to the bayonet



charge his company were ordered to remove the flints from their muskets. After the war he became a successful merchant at New Mills, Danversport. In the following sketch of that village, which, for a half century after the Revolution, was the commercial centre of the town, Captain Page must be again mentioned, and as a matter of convenience, some further reference to the family will there be made. Capt. Page died September 2, 1814, aged sixty-one, and with his father is buried in the High Street Cemetery. He held many public offices, and represented the town many years in the General Court.

At the beginning of this century there were but twelve dwellings in all the Plains, including two taverns, one store, one blacksmith's shop, one butchery and two brick yards. Until 1816 there was no public school here, and children had to go to New Mills. That year, on the basis of sixteen houses and one hundred and thirty inhabitants, a new school district was formed, as told elsewhere.

Several years before this, however, an effort had been made to educate the smaller children near home, and Deacon Gideon Putnam, Ezra Batchelder and Timothy Putnam bought a small school-house in Middleton and moved it here. Ezra Batchelder's house stood where the Maple Street School-house stands; "Uncle Timmy's" stood where his grandson, Otis F. Putnam, now lives. Deacon Gideon kept tavern and store at Richards' Corner. Deacon Gideon was the father of the courtly Judge Putnam, as has been said, and it is related that when the son was home on a vacation from college, and was obliged to play host to a stranger, he was chagrined at the meagre fare—it was probably washing-day—and paid the price of the meal to the guest "for picking the bones." In 1820 there were but twenty-one houses from the square along the whole line of the Centre horse-car route. The only house on the easterly side of Maple Street between the store at the corner of Conant Street and the Perry farm was the Captain Eben Putnam's house, which was once a part of the mansion on Folly Hill.

The butchery stood on Conant Street beyond Alfred Trask's residence, and was carried on by James Sleeper, who lived in a three-story brick building, which stood on the corner of Maple and Elm Streets, but projected far into the present widened location of Maple Street. This brick building was where the bank was first located. An "ell" fronting on Elm Street was long since moved some distance west, and is now owned by H. M. Merrill. In this "ell" Porter Kettelle did a small store-keeping business. The principal storekeepers then were Jonas Warren, who had bought out the Putnam's, but did not keep tavern, and "Johnny Perley," at Perley's Corner. Great was the rivalry of these two, and great was the business they did. For fair and liberal dealing Uncle Johnny's reputation suffered somewhat in comparison with Mr. Warren's. The former was a

bachelor, of modest and soft speech, but sharp to keep the half cents on his side of the bargain. Amusing stories are told of the way war was waged between the two corners. The amount of goods sold and bartered was enormous. Heavy teams from far back in the country came in loaded with produce, as many as forty in a single day, and generally they went no farther than Danvers Plains, but exchanged their produce here for a long supply of fish, salt, molasses and other staples, including, of course, New England rum. Clerks were sometimes busy till midnight loading for the return trips.

The old hotel on the site of the present one was owned by Ebenezer Berry, who bought it of Jethro and Timothy Putnam in 1804. Mr. Berry came from Andover, and married a daughter of Captain Levi Preston. His two children,—Eben G. Berry and Mrs. Sperry are living, a sketch and portrait of the former appearing in subsequent pages. The building was sold at auction in three sections, 1838, and these were removed to make room for the erection of the present hotel. One of these sections has long been the home of Benjamin Henderson on Elm Street; a second sojourned for a while on Cherry Street, and was finally settled near the soap factory, while the hall was removed to a lot on Maple Street, owned by Amos Brown, was there occupied by Amos Proctor Perley as a dry-goods store, and burned in the fire of 1845. This hall had been originally a part of the mansion on Folly Hill, referred to in the opening lines of this sketch. Its floor was painted to represent mosaic work and its finish was thorough and costly. It was so annexed to the hotel that its length ran parallel to High Street, and the uses to which it was put were many and various. Here the Danvers militia congregated, with their burnished flint-locks and the paraphernalia of destruction, awaiting officers' inspection. Here the North Danvers Lyceum met, as chronicled where other literary societies are spoken of. Here the selectmen and assessors met. Here was the lodge-room of Jordan Lodge of Masons, and here, by no means last to be mentioned, were held those dancing parties at the mention of which old eyes kindle, and limbs, no longer sprightly, beat time to the echoes of the darkey Harry's fiddle, which linger still in their ears.

At both Warren's and Perley's corners grocery business is still carried on. Both are decidedly "old stands." Samuel Preston succeeded "Uncle Johnny" and kept store awhile in connection with the shoe business, then Amos Proctor Perley took it, and subsequently formed a partnership with his brother-in-law, Moses J. Currier, under the name of Perley and Currier. Mr. Currier survives; Mr. Perley, known and respected far and wide as "Uncle Proc," a man of sterling integrity, died a few years ago; his son, Charles N. Perley, present post-master, carries on the store.

Mr. Warren sold out his property at the Plains in



1841, and thenceforth carried on a wholesale business at the Port. Frederick Perley was the purchaser, perhaps a nominal one, for he very soon re-conveyed the whole to Elias Putnam. There were nine acres in all, on which Mr. Putnam built his shoe factory and the house in which he died, and through which he laid out Park Street. One acre on the corner, including the old store buildings, he sold for three thousand dollars to Daniel Richards. Mr. Richards was a native of Atkinson, N. H., who came here as a clerk to Mr. Warren in 1828, two months before he was twenty-one. "It was hard work to be a grocery clerk then,"—these are his own words—"but I weighed one hundred and seventy-five pounds and was pretty strong."

In 1833 the temperance-reform movement was working. The old store-keepers were unwilling to be "driven" to give up the time-honored custom of selling spirits and, as a consequence, Mr. Richards started a new "temperance store" in a building which stood where Beal and Abbott's store now is, and was well supported.

After Mr. Richards' purchase of the old corner, he sold the buildings and built the present store. A part of the old store-tavern is the Dougherty house on School Street, and another part is the Abbott house, corner of Elm and Park Streets. Mr. Richards died last November, 1886, in his eightieth year. He was for thirty years president of the National Bank, was a life trustee of Peabody Institute, and, in addition to the grocery business which is still carried on by his sons, he bought the Fowler mill property at Liberty Bridge, and built the grist-mill, now used for grinding rubber, using as many as one hundred thousand bushels of grain a year.

The open level land at the Plains made it a favorite place for military musters. In 1809 the brigade of General Eben Goodale formed a line nearly a mile long, from Perley's corner to the old house owned by Augustus Fowler. Twenty-five hundred troops, infantry, cavalry, bands, Governor Christopher Gore, a big dinner and a sham fight,—it was something of a day.

In 1813, during the war, another brigade of three thousand men mustered on the same ground, and Lindall Hill was covered with spectators, who nevertheless took themselves out of the way when a fort, which had been constructed on the hill, was stormed and burned. The Plains, too, was the place of celebration on "Lecture Day," the last Wednesday in May, when the Legislature used to first meet. "Who does not remember," wrote Dr. Osgood in his little pamphlet, "how thousands upon thousands congregated on Danvers Plains to see the horses run, the mountebanks tumble, the fandango whirl around and the drinking of egg-pop, punch, and something a little stronger? And then what lots of 'lecture cake, buns, and molasses ginger-bread, rolling marbles and nine-pins, running and wrestling!" A colored man,

Milan Murphy, a veteran of the Revolution, and called "Colonel," a chronic victim of all sorts of pranks, was a prominent figure in these festivities. He marched wearing his old three-cornered hat, a blue coat with brass buttons, and accompanied his voice to an old fiddle on which he played his one tune, "sometimes on one string, sometimes on no string at all." Colonel Milan was great at butting, making nothing of going through the head of a molasses hogshead. He found his match one day in an old ram, presently to be made, after the manner of his kind, into "spring lamb," at the butchery already mentioned. There was but one round, and the details have not been so well preserved as the conclusive fact, that "the ram knocked Milan more'n a rod."

It was about 1830 that the Plains began to be something. Then Samuel Preston was manufacturing shoes on the site of the present bank building; Eben Putnam, in a shop near his house; and others before long came in. Joshua Silvester moved his business from the little shop at the foot of Porter's Hill, and built a large factory and fine residence on the westerly side of Maple Street, in 1837. No man deserves more special mention in a history of Danvers than he, and a word might as well be written here as elsewhere. He was eighty-four years old, July 9, 1887, and is able to be about, though his sight is failing. He was born in Wiscasset, Me.; his family moved to Andover, Mass., when he was a child; he came here when he was eighteen to work at shoe-making; went with Frederick Perley one term at Atkinson Academy; clerked a year or two at Jonas Warren's store; began shoe-manufacturing in the shop at Porter's Hill, with a partner named Brickett, and remained after the dissolution of the partnership until the date of his removal to the Plains, as above. The fire which destroyed the new buildings at the Plains will be noticed. His numerous trips to England in connection with subsequent business enterprises, and his acquaintance there with Mr. Peabody, are spoken of in connection with the history of the Peabody Institute. He has served the town as selectman, in the legislature, and in other capacities, but what he is to be chiefly remembered for, is the far-sighted public spirit which he has always shown in the matter of public improvement, and especially in encouraging the setting out of shade trees. He has lived long enough to see the sticks which he set in the ground by hundreds, years ago, transformed into bowers of beauty, and children, who have grown to manhood as the trees have grown, and who realize the richness of their legacy, rise up to bless this benefactor. Last winter a public testimonial was made to him. (His death occurred, since writing, July 29, 1887).

Mr. Silvester married a sister of Francis Noyes, who had a large factory and dwelling just above Mr. Silvester's. Mr. Silvester's sister Mary married Thomas Bowen, the first post-master at the Plains, and his sister Sarah married John A. Learoyd. Mr. Learoyd



learned the currying trade in Byfield, came here in 1829 and worked as a journeyman for Brickett & Silvester, at Porter's Hill, and boarded with Mr. Silvester. He soon came down to the Plains, bought and moved the Baptist meeting-house of 1783, and began in it the currying business, which he carried on through life, and which one of his sons continues. He was from the first a leader in the Maple Street Church. His own house was planned for the convenience of neighborhood prayer-meetings, when all went to Dr. Braman's church, and when the separation took place the new church was formally organized in his parlors. He died February 1, 1880, and his wife survived him but three weeks. They left a family of children trained after their own hearts, and strong in church work. Among them one son an Episcopal minister; a daughter, the wife of a minister; another son for nearly twenty-five years superintendent of a model Sunday-school.

Amos Brown's wheelwright shop and house were between Noyes' factory and the place where Cherry St. was soon laid out. He and his brother Samuel, mason, came from North Beverly. If the life of wheels depends on sound stock and honest work, every pair which ever came out of Amos Brown's shop is running yet. Right across the street from Brown's shop was Deacon Frederick Howe's house and blacksmith shop. The Deacon was born in Methuen, in 1793, learned his trade of the Wilkinsons, at the Centre, and at length established himself here. He died July 2, 1880, eighty-seven years old. He was a deacon of the First Church when he was made one of the first deacons of the Maple Street Church. He entered from the first into temperance reform, and early attached himself to the anti-slavery movement, without for a moment losing his interest, as many did, in the church. His blacksmith shop was naturally a centre for discussion on such questions, and was one of the rallying-points of the Liberty party. "It is remarkable that a man so occupied and of so laborious a life found time and strength to do so much in so many good causes. Between his anvil-strokes rung out true words that formed opinions of other men, and the tired hand was never too weary to use the pen for the same purpose." None of Deacon Howe's family remain here. One of his sons, Joseph W., is a prominent member of the New York bar, and had a hand in the conviction of Tweed.

Frederick Perley, a brother of "Uncle Proc," lived and manufactured shoes opposite Ezra, Batchelder's. Joseph W. Ropes came here from Salem in 1838, and engaged in the tinware and stove business, which his son carries on. In subsequent pages will be found a sketch of Alfred Trask, who came to the Plains about 1835, and built up a large and prosperous business as a drover.

The establishment of the Village Bank here in 1836 was brought about by the efforts of leading shoe manufacturers, Elias Putnam foremost, and tended very

much to the making of the Plains the business centre of the town. The new church was organized in 1844, there were better and larger schools, lands which had long been used only for farming were laid open for building, and the prosperity of the place may be judged from this clipping from the *Courier*, May 18, 1845, a paper published for a few years at South Danvers:

"But the greatest improvements seem to have been made in North Danvers. New streets have been opened, old ones built up, old houses transformed to new, and the whole village presents a thrifty and go-ahead appearance to the occasional visitor—not appreciated by the constant resident. The beautiful church, the noble public house, the large shoe factories and long ranges of handsome dwellings seem to have arisen by magic. High Street is so filled up that we can hardly tell where the New Mills village leaves off and where the 'Plains' begins. They are fast joining hands, and when they come together they will have quite a city-like appearance."

But a few months later a different story appears in the files of the same paper.

"DISASTROUS FIRE IN DANVERS!"

"A very alarming fire took place in the North Parish, in Danvers, at the Plains, last Tuesday afternoon (June 10, 1845), commencing at 2 o'clock.

"It broke out in an outbuilding belonging to the dwelling house of Mr. Joshua Silvester, and was said to have been occasioned by some children playing with friction matches. The fire spread with great rapidity, and seemed at one time beyond human control. The number of buildings of all sorts destroyed issued to be eighteen.

"These consisted of the dwelling, extensive store and barn of Joshua Silvester; the building occupied by John Hayman, painter, and F. E. Smith, tailor; the large building occupied by Francis Noyes as a shoe manufactory, together with his dwelling and stable; the building occupied by Amos Brown, wheelwright; and Collin & Co., painters; two dwelling houses, shoe manufactory, barn and store house of Samuel Preston, who saved nothing but a couple boxes of shoes; Francis (Frederick) Howe's blacksmith shop; barn and store house belonging to A. Proctor Perley; a new building occupied by the post-office, and Clough's restorator. The Village Bank Building was a good deal injured by fire and water, and most of the furniture of W. L. Weston, the cashier, was greatly injured; but all Bank property was saved. The goods of Henry T. Ropes, who occupied part of the building as a tailor's shop, were saved. Mr. John Page's house was completely emptied, but uninjured by fire. The streets were filled with property taken from the stores and houses. A. P. Perley & Co.'s store was saved by unparalleled exertions, though for a long time in imminent peril. The stock was removed.

"There was a great scarcity of water, it being necessary to connect eight engines to obtain a single stream of water upon the fire. The nearest body of water was Frost Fish Brook, over a half a mile distant, at the Beverly line.

"The alarm reached Salem about a quarter past two o'clock, and several engines and fire companies immediately started, guided by the direction of the smoke, although it was not then known where the fire was, nor how imminent was the danger. Express messengers arrived some time afterwards for assistance, when the alarm was again sounded, and several more engines were despatched, making seven in all from Salem, preceded, accompanied and followed by great numbers of our citizens. The progress over the length of dusty road was exceedingly toilsome, with the almost vertical sun beating down upon their unsheltered heads, at a temperature of 120 to 130 degrees. Some were very much overcome by the exposure and fatigue. One man fell at the brakes of No. 6, and when the engine, having exhausted the water at the cistern where it was posted was withdrawn, he was lying upon the grass insensible, under the care of the physicians belonging to the company.

"The amount of loss is variously estimated, some going as high as \$80,000. There was insurance in various offices—mostly of mutual companies—to the amount of over \$30,000."

The work of rebuilding went speedily on, but, with the exception of the new bank building, there was a



lamentable want of anything like architectural design, and it must be confessed that from this want of foresight our main street presents a shambling and irregular appearance, not worthy of the general appearance of the town. There is not space to speak of the later development and prosperity of the Plains. Suffice it to say that Farmer Porter's fields are so well built up that few desirable house-lots remain unutilized, and, generally speaking, Danvers Plains is a beautiful village, and its residents have many rare advantages.

DANVERSPORT comprises two peninsulas, formed by three divergent forks of tide water, into each of which flow inland streams, known, commencing with the most southerly, as Water's, Crane and Porter's Rivers. As the highway across them runs, the main road to Salem, these rivers are about a third of a mile apart; at each bridge, tide-gates and mills. It is the lower peninsula between Water's and Crane Rivers that formed Governor Endicott's orchard farm, the first settled land in Danvers. The upper peninsula—Skelton's Neck, wherein came to be much commercial activity, and for many years the principal village of the town—was for a long time wild and unsettled. It was quite a hundred and twenty years after the Governor had broken ground on his grant that Archelaus Putnam went down through the woods and selected as a site for a tide-mill the place where the out-curving banks of the Crane River make the stream quite narrow. From his father, Nathaniel's, farm (the Judge Putnam place) he floated down the stream, or moved down its frozen surface, a cooper-shop, landed it about where the railroad station now is, moved it across the point made by the sharp bend of the river, and near the present location of Aaron Warren's brick store he made it into a dwelling, wherein, with his wife Mehitable, he lived, the pioneer of Danversport. Soon after the settlement of Archelaus, his brother John moved down, and together they built a grist-mill. Tradition is that the whole district was covered by a dense thicket, in which foxes abounded. This was a path through the neck to the upper settlements, marked by blazed trees, by which wood was taken to the water-side and boated to Salem. A more respectable way, two rods wide, was soon laid out from Porter's Plains to the mills, the origin of High and Water Streets. In 1760 this road was pushed on over Endicott's Neck, across Water's River, and so on to Salem. It was welcomed by land-owners on the lower side of that river, who conveyed to Samuel Clark, Jeremiah Page, Benjamin Porter and others for the benefit of the public "two rods wide through our land in a straight line as may be from the Bridge when built to North Field Proprietors' way, so called, at the Gate going into said Small's land." But there was almost no end of trouble within the town. The road was strongly opposed. For one thing the New Mills, as the little

community soon came to be called, belonged territorially to the south parish, and the people there were unwilling to see the diversion of business and interest which the short cut to Salem would render inevitable. This is what Colonel Israel Hutchinson meant when he wrote in his private papers, "After they found they could not get it discontinued, they proposed to make it a toll-bridge. We found that would not by any ways do, as those people (of Salem and Marblehead) who had assisted us in repairing the way and building the bridges would be great sufferers, and it would promote traveling that way, which was what the leaders, who were sellers of rum, tobacco, etc., wished to prevent." Application was made to the North Parish "if they were willing to take us with all ways and bridges, but they (the South Parish) would not let us go. We then, after contending in the law more than seven long years, and although we had gained our cause in every case, being almost ruined, were under the necessity of proposing to the General Court that we would take all ways and bridges on ourselves." And the General Court looked on the proposition with favor, and in 1772 passed "An Act for the subjecting the Inhabitants of a Part of the Town of Danvers, called the Neck of Land hereafter described, to the charge of maintaining and supporting certain Bridges and Highways." After reciting the unhappy divisions and controversies, and the final amicable compromise in ratification of which the act was passed, it was provided that the inhabitants of the Neck should constitute an independent highway district to maintain existing highways and bridges therein, and also any others constructed at the special instance and request of the inhabitants. The district, containing about three hundred acres, was bounded by a line commencing at Crane River Bridge on the Ipswich Road (Ash Street); thence following the river channel to Lieutenant Thomas Stevens' land (about at the southerly end of the railroad bridge); then straight across Fox Hill to the high-water mark on the south side of Water's River, a little west of the bridge; thence across the further end of the bridge to Porter's River, up the whole length of Porter's River, to the Ipswich Road again at Frost-fish Brook Bridge; and so on by the Ipswich Road (Conant, Elm and Ash Streets) to the place of beginning. These limits embraced a large tract now included in the Plains. The act remained in force nearly seventy years, until its repeal March 7, 1840. Evidently matters, however, had not been conducted in strict conformity to requirements, for in 1836 the Legislature confirmed the recorded proceedings, giving them the same effect as if the officers had been proprietors and all meetings called by competent authority.

From the beginning made by Archelaus Putnam, other mills were in a few years established on Crane River—wheat-mills in 1764, and a saw-mill in 1768. Associated with him in ownership were John Buxton,



Samuel Clark, John Pickman and Israel Hutchinson.

In the mean time other dwellings were erected along the new highway, the woods were cleared away, and a little village speedily grew up at "New Mills." On the banks of Porter's River sharp-eyed men from the ship-building towns saw excellent facilities for that business. The pioneer of ship-building here was Timothy Stephens, of Newbury, an enterprising and skillful builder. Presently a number of young men came down from the North, worked with Stephens and learned his trade, and permanently established themselves here. Some of these will be mentioned again.

For nearly half a century after the first mill on the Crane River the tide-power on the other two rivers remained unutilized. About 1798 Nathan Read enters into the history of Danvers. He was a graduate of Harvard, 1781, a tutor there of Harrison Gray Otis and John Quincy Adams, and afterwards studied medicine and kept an apothecary store in Salem. There he married, October 29, 1790, Elizabeth Jaffrey, and built the house in which the historian Prescott was born, on the present site of Plumer Hall. Among the achievements of his inventive mind was the first machine for cutting nails. He purchased the water-power on the Water's River, and with associates erected the Salem and Danvers Iron Works. At the same time he purchased part of Governor Endicott's old Orchard Farm, and on a slightly eminence overlooking the river built a mansion, which, after the successive ownership of Captain Crowningshield, Captain Benjamin Porter and the heirs of the latter, still retains much of its original stateliness. When the company were incorporated, March 4, 1800, Nathan Read is described "of Danvers;" seventeen others, of Salem. The corporation was authorized to hold thirty thousand dollars of real and three hundred thousand dollars of personal property, and reference is made in the act to the date of the original partnership, May 5, 1796.

In the mill-pond, in front of his residence, Read experimented by applying steam to the paddles of a small boat long before the Hudson was the scene of Fulton's larger results. He was the first man to apply to the government for a patent, and himself framed the first patent law. He represented the district in Congress, 1800-03. A political *jeu d'esprit* was current at the time of his candidacy for re-election to Congress, when his party, the Federalists, were called "Jacobins" by their opponents, the Republicans, and the candidate of the latter party was the Hon. Jacob Crowningshield:

TO THE FEES.

With disappointment how *you'd* pout,
With joy how *we* should grin,
Should we keep Federal NATHAN out,
And get a Jacob in.

Soon after his service in Congress he removed to

31½

Maine, where he had purchased a large tract of land. He was there appointed a judge of Common Pleas. He died in Belfast, January 21, 1849, in his ninetieth year, leaving a numerous family. Nathan Read's petition:

"To the freeholders & other inhabitants of the Town of Danvers the Petition of Nathan Read respectfully sheweth that he has it in contemplation to build certain Mills near Water's bridge, so called, on Water's river, so called, & requests the Town to grant, convey & quit claim to him, his heirs and assigns forever its consent, license, right & permission to erect a dam or dams on & across said River; to build mills, piers and wharves & to construct a lock & flood gates any where high or adjoining said bridge, & to do every thing necessary for completing & using said mills without any let, hindrance or molestation whatsoever of said Town.

"NATHAN READ.

"Salem, March 9th, 1795.

"At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of the Town of Danvers, March 9th, 1795—voted that the prayer of above Petition of Nathan Read be granted.

"Att.: GIDEON FOSTER, T. Clerk."

The business at the foundry brought up from the towns of the south shore, nurseries of iron-workers, several men who established families here. John Joselyn was one of the earliest of these, among whose children was Edwin Joselyn, who for thirty years was a noted teacher in Salem, and among whose descendants are the wife and children of Hon. Augustus Mudge. John Bates who followed an older brother here from Dedham a few months after he was twenty-one, is still living within sound of the machinery, and on the 20th of this present month May, 1887, will be ninety years old. Besides the foundry on the north bank of the river there was a nail-shop, and also an anchor-shop on the south bank. In the latter were forged the anchors of the frigate "Essex," an occasion celebrated by much punch. Work was steady at the anchor-shop, the plan being to manufacture a supply for some time ahead, mostly of a size for fishermen and coasters, and when the stock was too much reduced, a gang of expert anchor-men were called up from the south-shore who kept the one trip-hammer and the two pairs of bellows busy until anchors were sufficiently plenty again. One of these anchor-men, John Silvester, after a progressively successful career in the iron business, about 1858 bought the works at Danvers, and it is his son Benjamin Silvester who is at present carrying on the business of rolling iron at the old stand. The nail and anchor shops have long since been removed, the former fulfilling a mission of usefulness at Calvin Putnam's lumber yard, the latter now a barn in the neighborhood. Before Mr. Silvester's purchase the works were carried on by Matthew Hooper who built the large brick residence on the Salem side of the river. Within a few years a spur track has been laid from the railroad to accommodate the works.

The old-time ferry between Salem and Beverly, some two miles down the river, gave place to the Essex Bridge, now "Beverly Bridge," the proprietors of which were incorporated November 17, 1787. The people at New Mills were much opposed to the new



bridge for more reasons than one. It interfered somewhat with free navigation, in compensation for which the proprietors were required to pay £10 annually to the town treasurer; then travel from Ryall Side and the back country would naturally be more diverted from New Mills, and for this, while there was no compensation, the energetic inhabitants attempted a remedy. They built a bridge of their own across Porter's River in 1788. The land on the other side of the river then was a part of Beverly. Later, some three years after the incorporation of the iron works at Water's River, Samuel Page, Thomas Putnam, Caleb Oakes, Samuel Endicott, John Page and Hezekiah Flint were, June 23, 1803, incorporated as the Danvers and Beverly Iron Works Company. They were authorized to build a bridge of stone, thirty-two feet wide, for which Captain Burley furnished the material from his land on the Beverly side, to erect and use forever an iron manufactory and any other mills for useful manufacture, and to hold property to the value of three hundred thousand dollars, in two hundred shares. Option was given to Beverly to build the bridge, but the committee of that town preferred to relinquish the right of improving the river for a mill-pond and to pay twenty dollars annually towards the support of the bridge. Both the original structure and the stone bridge were for a long time called "Spite Bridge." Those who built it gave the name of "Liberty Bridge." By an act, February 8, 1811, the company having "lately discontinued their operations," the Salem establishment was sold to the company at Water's River. Nathaniel Putnam was many years agent and manager of the works. Subsequently the works were changed into a grist-mill, were long known as "Fowler's Mills, then "Richards' Mills," and within a few years have entered a new stage of usefulness, that of grinding up old rubber.

A man without a handle to his name must have been at a discount in New Mills. The busy little port was thick with "Cap'ns," with here a "Colonel," there a "Major." It was the home of a considerable number of men who were masters of ships out of Salem, of others who were prosperous ship-owners, merchants and millers. Such families were not numerous, and they naturally became connected and inter-twisted by marriages in a way perplexing to unravel.

Among the young men who were attracted by the ship-building at the new settlement was Samuel Fowler, of Ipswich, born there January 9, 1748-49. He was but seventeen when he came. At that time a young girl was just entering her teens who had the distinction of being the first white child born at New Mills. She was Sarah Putnam, daughter of Archelaus, the pioneer, and step-daughter of Colonel Israel Hutchinson. Two years before the battle of Lexington Samuel Fowler and Sarah Putnam were married. She is said to have been a very handsome woman, "with a snowy complexion and black eyes and hair."

She lived to be over ninety-two years of age, and died November 19, 1847, having survived her husband nearly thirty-five years. Samuel Fowler, shipwright, became a ship-owner, engaged in trade with the West Indies, and is called on the records "merchant."

Captain Samuel Page, the oldest son of Colonel Jeremiah, married Rebecca, daughter of that William Putnam who went to Sterling, Mass., and he came down from Porter's Plains to become one of the first and leading citizens of New Mills.

Simon Pinder (sometimes Pindar, Pendar) was of the same age as Samuel Fowler, and came also from Ipswich. He married here Mehitable Dutch, and probably built the old house on Fox Hill, in which he lived and died, on the site of which is the new house of Mr. Dennett's. He was engaged in the fishing business and also kept a store near his house. He died July 4, 1813. An older house than his, by the way, on Fox Hill is the "Fairfield House," so called for Samuel Fairfield, who married Anna, a daughter of Colonel Hutchinson, and died November 26, 1810, aged sixty-two.

Aaron Cheever, some seven years older than Fowler and Pindar, was a blacksmith. He came early to New Mills from Newburyport.

Nathaniel Putnam was a son of Archelaus and a brother of Samuel Fowler's wife.

Moses Black, a full generation younger than those just mentioned, was born in Haverhill in 1779, and came here at the close of the last century. He was a "wool-puller," and established a prosperous business, was known as "Major Moses," and was the founder of the Black family, than which few in town have been more prominent and influential.

Nathaniel Putnam had a large family, among whom were Nathaniel, known as "Cap'n Nat," Mehitable and Phebe. Aaron Cheever had two sons, both sea-captains,—Thomas and William. Simon Pinder had seven or eight children, among whom were Samuel, Hitty, Hannah and Sally. Jere. Putnam, not previously mentioned, was the father of two other sea-captains, "Captain Jerry" and "Captain Tom."

Captain Nathaniel Putnam married Hannah Pindar; Samuel Pindar married Mehitable Putnam; Moses Black married Phebe Putnam. Captain Thomas Cheever married Sally Pindar; William Cheever married Betsey Waters, and at his death she became the third wife of Captain Nathaniel. Hitty Pindar became the wife of "Captain Jerry" Putnam.

One of Hannah Pindar Putnam's children, Nathaniel, married a daughter of "Captain Tom" Putnam, and subsequently moved to New York; and one of Betsey Waters (Cheever) Putnam's children, Abby, was married to a son of Captain Tom's, Captain Albert. Samuel Pindar lived in the "Mead House" on Endicott Street—a part of his father's estate—and worked at times for Major Black; he



died in 1838, was the only son who had a family here, and the removal of his own sons leaves no one now to represent the family name. A link between the Pindars and Pages was the marriage of a daughter of John Pindar, of Beverly, son of Simon, to Captain Samuel Page's oldest son, Jeremiah.

"Captain Tom" Cheever and his wife, Sally Pindar, lived with his brother, William, in that large house on Water Street which has fallen to such decay that the roof is tumbling in. Captain Thomas sailed forty years for Captain Joseph Peabody, of Salem. Captain William died at Calcutta when but thirty-two years old, and left no children to grow up; his widow re-married as noted. Of Captain Thomas's children, two daughters became wives of Dr. Ebenezer Hunt; William and his wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Eben Putnam, live at Staten Island, N. Y.; and George, Miss Hannah P. and Mary P., widow of William, son of Major Moses Black, live here.

Captain Jerry Putnam, who married Hitty Pindar, lived in the house which he built, now owned by Charles Warren; he was of the fraternity of sea-captains, lived to be about seventy, and his oldest daughter, Mehitable, married into another family, not yet mentioned, well savored with salt—the Johnsons. The Johnson home was a small house which stood near Dr. Frost's residence. The father, William, and three sons, William, Henry and Thomas, were all sea-captains. The son William lived in Salem; Thomas lived in the house next north of Charles Warren's, and of his children, Thomas W., of Salem, is the secretary of the Holyoke Insurance Company, and George was lost at sea, leaving two boys now in our schools. It was Captain Henry Johnson who married Captain Jerry's daughter; he first went to sea when twelve years old as cabin-boy for Captain Tom Cheever, and after he gave up the sea, settled down on his father-in-law's place. His son, the late James A. Johnson, was the last to follow the traditional occupation of the family.

The family trees of the Pages and Fowlers intertwine in various ways. Samuel Fowler, the young man who came from Ipswich, had four children to grow up. Colonel Jeremiah Page was twice married, and his eldest son, Captain Samuel, was much older than the children of the second wife. It is not, strange, therefore, that while Samuel Fowler's son, Samuel, married Captain Samuel Page's daughter, Clarissa, that the younger son, John Fowler, should have married Captain Samuel's half sister, Martha, and that Martha's brother, John, should have married Mary, a sister to Samuel and John Fowler. Samuel Fowler, Jr., born in 1776 and died in 1859, lived in the square brick house on the corner of Liberty and High Streets, and carried on an extensive milling and tanning business about Liberty Bridge. His tan yard, which remained in the family until a few years ago, is one of the longest established in

the country. Of his children three sons survive,—Deacon S. P. Fowler, whose life runs parallel with the century, and of whom a sketch follows this article, Henry and Augustus. A daughter, Rebecca, married Aaron Eveleth; another, Sally Page, James D. Black, a son of Major Moses. The latter and Miss Maria L. are the surviving daughters. John Fowler built the Bates house near the iron foundry, from whom it passed to two sea captains, Captain Edward Richardson and Captain Stephen Brown, and from them to John Bates, its present venerable owner. John Fowler's oldest son, "master mariner," died in the Gulf of Mexico in 1840; another, Jeremiah, was one of the pioneers of California, established the first diary in San Francisco, is still living, a successful old man, in Placer County, that State, and within a few years his family has re-allied itself to Danvers, through the marriage of one of his sons to a daughter of the late Captain Andrew M. Putnam.

John Page and his wife, Mary Fowler, lived in his father's homestead at the Plains. He saw the growth of the Plains village from almost nothing to the business centre of the town, and contributed to this progress. The manner in which he carried on his father's business of brick-making will be noticed when that industry is spoken of. He was an honored and representative citizen of the town. His widow long survived him, and died, lacking a month of ninety years. Like her mother, Sarah Putnam, she was distinguished in her youth for the fine personal appearance, which she retained in a remarkable degree in her old age; she was of more than ordinary intelligence, and read extensively to the latest period of her life. The connection between Major Black's family and the Fowlers has been noticed. A direct Black-Page alliance was made by the marriage of the Major's son, Moses, Jr., to Harriet N., daughter of John and Mary Page. Mrs. Black and four sisters, Mrs. Hunt, Mrs. Edgerton, Mrs. Weston and Miss A. L. Page are the surviving children of John Page. It is unpleasant to know that in the male line this name, which has been so conspicuous in our history, is here extinct.

Beside the children of Major Moses Black already mentioned were Mrs. Sarah L. Holroyd, Mrs. Mary O. Smith, Archelus P. and Joseph S. The latter was a son-in-law of Moses Putnam, and his partner; he died in 1861. William, Moses, James D. and Joseph S. Black were, each in his peculiar way, prominent and leading citizens. James D., the only surviving son, who lives at Harvard, Mass., has furnished the writer with some interesting reminiscences which have been used in the sketch of the schools.

These families here mentioned by no means included all of the "first families" of New Mills. There were Captain Crowningshield, and later Captain Ben Porter, at the Read mansion, Captain Israel Endicott and other Endicotts, Caleb Oakes, Major Joseph Stearns, Deacon Benjamin Kent, ship builder, Josiah



Gray, Captain Jacob Perry, the Webbs and so on. Much might be written of them were there plenty of space and time. Some will be mentioned again in connection with brick-making and other industries, and other representative names than those already mentioned will appear in the sketch of the local church, the Baptist, in the account of the anti-slavery excitement, and especially in the list of the company formed during the war of 1812, an account of which here immediately follows.

In the summer of 1814 nearly sixty men, mostly of New Mills--the solid men of the place in more senses than one, who were exempt from service--voluntarily associated themselves into an independent company of defence. They met in the school-house July 16th, organized by the choice of Captain Samuel Page as moderator, and Captain Thomas Putnam, clerk, and passed, among others, these votes:

"*Vote*, That the Alarm post be the front yard of Capt. Saml. Page's house. *Vote*, That the company meet at their Alarm Post on Saturday next at 4 o'clock P. M., well equipped, including Knapsack, etc.

"*Vote*, That as we have pledged ourselves on the points of Honor to be *Always Ready* and willing to obey the commanding officer of said company, therefore any member who does not at all times (when ordered) attend at the Alarm Post in good season and well armed and equipped shall be liable to be reprimanded for each neglect by the commanding officer."

The muster-roll of the New Mills minute-men:

Samuel Page.....	Captain.
Thomas Putnam.....	Lieutenant.
Caleb Oakes.....	Sergeant.
John Endicott.....	Sergeant.
John Page.....	Clerk.
Richard Sedmore.....	Drummer.
Stephen Whipple.....	Fifer.
Ephraim Smith.....	Engle-man.

Privates.

Thomas Cheever.	Daniel Hardy.
Edward Richardson.	John Sheldon.
Hooper Stimpson.	Reth Stetson.
Stephen Brown.	Michael Saunders.
Samuel Finkler.	Ezra Batchelder.
John Fowler.	Thos. Symonds.
Benjamin Kent.	Ephraim Smith.
Moses Black.	Hercules Jocelyn.
Daniel Putnam.	Jeremiah Page.
Samuel Frickley.	Benjamin Wellington.
William Francis.	William Task.
Samuel Fowler.	Moses Putnam.
Joseph Stearns.	Israel Andrew.
Jonas Warren.	Nathl. Mahew.
Eliot Dale.	John Wheeler.
George Waitt.	David Tarr.
Nathaniel Putnam.	John Russell.
John W. Osgood.	John Kenney.
Allen Gould.	Jacob Allen.
Ebenezer Jacobs.	Daniel Fisher.
George Osgood.	Israel Endicott.
Henry Brown.	James A. Putnam.
Ebenezer Berry.	Israel Hutchinson.
William Cutler.	

Of the *personnel* and appearance of this company fortunately an interesting sketch has been written by Deacon Fowler. Here were men whose age had added breadth to shoulders and rotundity to forms, men who held commissions in the Revolution, shipmasters who had visited foreign climes, skippers and hook-and-

line men; shipwrights, wealthy shoe manufacturers, men who first pressed bricks by machinery and found a mint in the clay-pit; tanners, merchants, farmers, artisans, officers of the town, county, church, State, physicians, and--enough! Truly a company extraordinary in its make-up. They marched, a little stiff in the knee-joints, from their Captain's down to the woods in the lane (River Street) for practice in firing, till "The Girl I Left Behind Me" quickened their energies and warmed them up. Amid generous plaudits it is to be presumed the veterans moved on with taciturn dignity. The young men smiled, but only some sour Federalist growled, "There goes the old ring-bone company." The weapons were of every sort--the King's arm, good for a charge of ten fingers, two balls and five buck-shot; the long heavy ducking gun, requiring liberal allowance of ammunition; the large-calibre "refugee." The firing by platoons was somewhat theoretical--there was too much individuality about it. Blank cartridges being used there was little danger in front. Not so in the ranks, for from the vents of the old firelocks a generous discharge of powder was at each shot directed towards the exposed ear of the man on the right, until the word was passed down, "Turn up your guns when you fire." At one of the numerous false alarms that the British were landing at Salem, the company marched at midnight as far as Gardner's farm. It was noticed that they were divided somewhat peculiarly. The well-fed, heavy, short-legged and short-winded men held the rear, under the lieutenant, while the front rank, composed of the leaner and longer-legged, advanced faster under the captain. The people of Salem were in constant fear of naval attack, and people inland were so alert that it is said a shot from a battery, alarmed by some harmless fishermen, caused quick commotion to the extreme limits of New Hampshire. The escape of the "Constitution" from English ships into Marblehead harbor was witnessed by Danvers men from Folly Hill. Earthworks, mounting two iron four-pounders, were thrown up at Water's River, and several prize vessels laid off the ship-yards during the war. The last survivor of the New Mills minute-men was Jonas Warren.

A school-boy of sixty years ago recalls that then Capt. Samuel Page was the leading merchant, and that his mercantile business was not confined to coasting, but foreign goods were largely imported. His fine mansion, still standing, was regarded as the most aristocratic residence of the village. He had years before erected several large warehouses to accommodate his business.

Capt. Nat Putnam and Capt. Tom Cheever were partners in store-keeping in the brick building until recently occupied by Aaron Warren. Capt. Nat built as his residence the large brick building opposite, known as the Bass River House, and a very fine residence it must have been in those days. After Capt. Page's death, Putnam and Cheever occasion-

ally used the storehouses, and so also Major Black, to store sheeps' pelts. Into one of them a cargo of smuggled rum was surreptitiously unloaded in the dead of night. Though a blacksmith, who had to be aroused to mend the broken cann-hooks, was let into the secret, the vessel got away before daylight, and nothing was for a long time known of the close proximity of so much exhilarating fluid. But the stuff could not be sold, and remained an elephant in somebody's hands until long after its advent somebody else "peached," and a long line of government trucks entered the village and confiscated the whole stock.

The following list of the earliest Danversport vessels was made by Mr. Crowley, of the Salem Custom-House, at the writer's request. The date is that of register. The owner's name follows the name of the vessel.

1780. Schooner "Nancy"	Samuel Page.
1792. Schooner "Sally"	Samuel Page.
1792. Schooner "Alice"	Halbick White.
1792. Brig "Lucy"	Caleb Low.
1793. Schooner "Hawk"	Samuel Page.
1794. Schooner "Clarence"	Samuel Page.
1795. Schooner "Industry"	Samuel Fowler.
1796. Schooner "Sally"	Fowler & Pindar.
1798. Schooner "Bathur"	Samuel Fowler.
1799. Schooner "Eliza"	Samuel Page.
1799. Schooner "Two Brothers"	Samuel Page.
1800. Schooner "Five Sisters"	Samuel Page.
1801. Brig "William"	Samuel Page.
1802. Ship "Putnam" 206 tons	Samuel Page and others.
1804. Schooner "Jeremiah"	Samuel Page.
1804. Schooner "Rebecca"	Samuel Page and Sol. Giddings.
1804. Schooner "William"	Wm. Pindar, Thos. Putnam, Simon Pindar, Caleb & Oakes.
1806. Bark "Wm. Gray"	Wm. Pindar & Thos. Putnam.
1806. Schooner "Polly"	John Fowler & John Page.
1807. Schooner "Augusta"	Caleb Oakes.
1810. Brig "Rebecca"	Samuel Page, J. H. Andrews, Samuel Pellicott.

One of Samuel Page's partners in the ship "Putnam" was the merchant, Abel Lawrence, and her master was Nathaniel Bowditch.

The sturdy ship-wrights at New Mills helped out their country in the times that tried men's souls. Beside the smaller craft, three fine ships,—the "Grand Turk," the "Jupiter," the "Harlequin,"—were built here during the Revolution. Before the war, Pindar, Kent and Fowler took a contract to build a three hundred and fifty ton ship for a London house. Capt. John Lee was sent from England to superintend her building. Impending hostilities prevented the owners from rigging and fitting her, and as long as she remained on the stocks the builders could not, according to contract, demand their pay. Capt. Lee refused to allow her to be launched, but all the carpenters mustered one night and slid

her into the water. The builders might better have thrown up the bargain and make the most of the ship, but they chose to bring a fruitless suit against the American agent of the Englishmen, and in the meantime the good ship, utterly uncared for, floating with the tides, rotted in the river.

Old newspapers which contain "arrivals" at the "Port of Danvers" give an insight into the amount and character of the business here transacted. A few sample entries during the summer of 1848 are here given,—

"June 2d.—Arr. sch. 'Albert,' with frame of Baptist Meeting House.
 "3d.—Arr. sch. 'Henry Chase,' corn and flour, to J. Warren.
 "4th.—Arr. sch. 'New Packet,' lumber, to J. W. Roberts.
 "5th.—Arr. sch. 'Franklin,' lumber, to Asa Sawyer, Jr.
 "7th.—Sld. sch. 'Franklin.'
 "8th.—Sld. sch. 'Aurora.'
 "9th.—Sld. sch. 'New Packet.'
 "11th.—Arr. sch. 'Pilgrim,' corn, to D. Richards.
 "20th.—Sld. sch. 'Minor,' bricks, from Nathan Tapley.
 "22d.—Arr. Sloop 'Lady Temperance,' stone, to M. Black.
 "27th.—Arr. Brig 'Ellen,' corn, to D. Richards. Schs. 'Franklin' with lumber, to A. Sawyer, Jr.; 'Regulator,' wood and sleepers, to E. R. R.
 "30th.—Arr. schs. 'Otter,' lime, to A. W. Warren & Co.; 'Henry,' lumber, to Calvin Putnam."

From April 1 to November 30, 1848, there were 172 arrivals including 58 cargoes of lumber, 31 wood and bark, 43 flour and grain, 17 lime, 3 molasses, 2 salt, 4 coal, 12 in ballast, 2 unknown. Seventeen vessels loaded for shipment to other ports, two cargoes being sent to the coast of Africa. It is said that the first cargo of coal ever landed here was owned by Parker Brown, but nearly as early a venture in this new combustible was that of J. W. Ropes. His advertisement thus appeared in August, 1849.—

"Coal.

"Now landed at Black's wharf, and for sale by the subscriber, a cargo of very superior anthracite coal which will be sold at the wharf or delivered as cheap as can be purchased in Salem.

"JOSEPH W. ROPES."

The following is the summary of the arrivals in 1860:

Jonas Warren, lime, flour, grain, etc.,	44
Joshua Sylvester, iron,	12
Daniel Richards, grain,	16
H. O. Warren & Co., coal and wood,	32
Josiah Gray & Son, wood,	5
Moses Black, Jr., coal and wood,	34
Samuel Low, wood,	1
Beckford, grain,	5
Augustus Tapley, coal,	1
Calvin Putnam, lumber,	25
J. Bragdon & Co., lumber,	10
Aaron Eveleth, lumber,	12
D. Cann, lumber,	1

Whole number of arrivals, 198

The Legislature authorized the town to put down channel poles in the rivers in 1844. Recently the draw-bridges at Beverly were widened to accommodate larger coal vessels than could otherwise come to Danversport. Calvin Putnam established the present extensive lumber business, on the site of Deacon Kent's ship-yard, about thirty-five years ago.



THE TAPLEYS AND TAPLEVILLE. — About the first of this century an old man was driving a heavy load of oak ship-timber, along one of the roads in the western part of the town. There had recently been a very heavy fall of snow, and the roads were so full that turning out was a matter of great difficulty. Suddenly out of the drifts there appeared an approaching sleigh, and behind the driver sat the magnate of whom something has been said, "King" Hooper. "Turn out," cried Hooper. "Can't do it, load's too heavy," said the old man, "let your man take one of these shovels and we'll soon make room." "No, half the road's mine, and I'll wait here till I get it." "All right" was the complacent reply, and slipping out the pin he went back home with his oxen, leaving the load of logs effectually blocking the narrow path. This was Gilbert or, as it more often appears "Gilbord" Tapley, the ancestor of the numerous family of that name in Danvers, many of whom have borne prominent and honorable parts in the quiet annals of the town. He was the brother of John Tapley, from whom Tapley's Brook, in Peabody, derived its name. Another brother located in Maine. Gilbord came up to Salem Village and bought, in August, 1747, of Joseph Sibley, a farm of sixty-seven acres, bounded by Amos Buxton, Joshua Swinerton and others, the river-meadows, and a "way" now called Buxton's Lane. His dwelling on this farm was standing until within thirty to forty years on the Andover turnpike, a few rods south of the Wm. Goodale place. He was married three times; first, to Phebe, daughter of John, and sister to Dr. Amos Putnam; second, to Mary, widow of Nathaniel Smith; third, to Mrs. Sarah Farrington. Phebe was the mother of Amos, Daniel, Phebe, Joseph, Aaron, Asa, Elijah; Mary was the mother of Sally, eight children in all. Through only two of these was the name preserved here, Amos and Asa. Of the daughters, Phebe married Wm. Goodale, of Hog Hill; Sally, Porter Putnam. Of the other sons, Daniel married Mary Tarbell; Joseph went to Lynnfield and left very numerous descendants; and Amos established a family at Wilton, N. H. Amos Tapley's home was in near neighborhood to his father's, the present Joel Kimball place. His wife was Hannah, daughter of John Preston, who lived where George H. Peabody does now, not far away. They were the parents of twelve children, seven sons. Of the sons,—David, Amos, Moses, Aaron, Daniel, Philip and Rufus,—Moses and Daniel were among the pioneers of Indiana; Amos went to Lynn, and was the father of Amos P. Tapley, one of the most respected citizens of that city; Philip died at sea, young; and upon David, Aaron and Rufus depended their father's branch of the family name at home. David's son Alvin was the father of Joseph A. Tapley, of Danversport. Aaron lived close by his father, on the James Goodale place, and left no son. Rufus took his father's home, and later moved next south of the First Church; three of his children went to Saco,

Me., of whom Rufus P. was for seven years a judge of Maine Supreme Court; none of the children are left here. Thus the only lineal male representatives of Gilbord's son Amos, now in town, are Joseph A. Tapley and his sons.

Now of Gilbord's son Asa. It was said that Gilbord's second wife was the Widow Smith; she brought three daughters into the family, two of whom quite conveniently became wives of two of the sons, while a third, Ruth, married Matthew Putnam, and thenceforth presided over the old Nourse witchcraft homestead, and became next neighbor to her sister Elizabeth. For it was Elizabeth Smith whom Asa Tapley married, and their home was the old house which was sold to the late Elisha Hyde, and until within a few years stood on the street which bears that man's name. Asa came to own a great deal of land in that neighborhood. His children were Daniel, Asa, Betsey, John, Gilbert, Sally, Nathan, Perley, Jesse, Mary. Daniel lived first in the brick house which was the old home of Dr. Amos Putnam, near Felton's Corner; Nathan and Asa were brick-makers, the former living first in the house which he built, now occupied by his son-in-law, William H. Walcott; Asa in the house next south; while the house of Hix Richards, who married their sister Betsey, completed the trio of adjoining Tapley houses. The son John settled in Dover, N. H. Gilbert and Jesse established themselves near their father's home; the former in the old Tarbell house, which stood on the corner of Hyde and Pine Streets, where he made shoes and money, the latter at the other end of Hyde, on Collins Street. Perley lived and died in the house into which Gilbert afterwards moved and died, on the corner of Pine and Holten Streets. Looking back at the character and standing which these sons who remained in Danvers maintained, it is using a very moderate expression to speak of them as a remarkable family. Some of them died wealthy, all respected. None now survive. Gilbert reached the greatest age, eighty-five, and was the last survivor, his death occurring October 10, 1878.

Perley Tapley was a famous mover of buildings, and many are the feats which he and his long team of oxen accomplished in this direction. About 1843 he moved a building in which Matthew Hooper had manufactured boxes, near Felton's Corner, to the brook at "Hadlock's Bridge," and in it Perley and Gilbert Tapley began the manufacture of carpets. This building was burned in June, 1845, and another was immediately built. Gilbert Tapley carried on the business alone from 1847 to 1864, when the Danvers Carpet Company was formed. For many years the industry thus established gave employment to many people. In 1876 there were about one hundred employees, who turned out one hundred and fifty thousand yards of ingrain carpets.

About the time the carpet business was started Perley Tapley began moving buildings from far and



near, and converting them into dwellings. Many of these remain, the original settlers of the village, which, thus created, very properly took the name of Tapleyville. A humorous squib which appeared in the *Danvers Eagle* October 30, 1844, was concocted on one of those trips which leading South Parish men used to make to hear Dr. Braman preach Fast-day and Thanksgiving sermons. It was headed "Tapleyville in 1844." "There is one peculiarity," it says, "which we believe is not common to any other place. By the city regulations it is provided that no house or other building shall be erected within the territory, and the city is entirely composed of buildings which have been moved into it, and by this means it is constantly increasing. Nothing is more common than to see houses of all sizes and shapes and of every quaint style of architecture traveling into the place and seating themselves down in some comfortable situation to rest just so long as the mayor will allow them to remain. . . . We had the curiosity to look into the City Hall when the Council was not in session, and found it ornamented with various agricultural implements. Like the rest of the city, it looked like a traveling concern, and was built of rough slabs. We understand it once took a tour of observation through the streets of Salem, and afterwards returned to its native place." The "mayor" was, of course, Perley Tapley. The building last alluded to was a log cabin, which had been conspicuous in the Harrison campaign processions. It was the great feature of a great procession at Salem, when people gazed in admiration at Perley Tapley's skill in managing the forty or fifty yoke of oxen attached to the cabin, especially in turning corners. A glee club sang from the balcony, and a halt was made on Salem Common, where there was a great dinner, and an able and eloquent speech by Daniel Webster.

Mr. Tapley is said to have been the first to move a brick building. Having a church-steeple on his hands at one time, he cut it up sectionally on shoemakers' shops; one is to be seen near the Tapleyville Station. He was moving a building on floats from Boston to East Boston once, and being somewhat out of his element on any other than a solid foundation, was in danger of being blown out to sea; in the crisis he is said to have called vehemently to the pilot to "gee." Wishing a new school-house for his village, he did what he could to make the old Number 6 building "too small" by loading every child of school age in his neighborhood into his ox-cart and filling the room to overflowing. Many characteristic stories of his energetic way of doing things might be collected. He was not forty-eight years old when he died. He leaves no sons, but two daughters in town. In addition to the single family mentioned as the representatives of old Gilbord's son Amos, there are now in town but five other adult male Tapleys,—George and his two sons, of the line of Daniel, son

of Asa, and Gilbert Augustus and his only son, of the line of Gilbert, son of Asa.

Tapleyville is supplied with a post-office and a railroad station. As a school district it ranks among the three largest; as a business and manufacturing centre it is one of the busiest in town. Within a few years a large tract of land bounded by Holten, Pine and Hobart Streets has been opened and is well taken up by new dwellings. The new streets are named for the pastors of the First Church,—Clarke, Wadsworth, Braman, &c. Within the present year, 1887, a fine three-story building has been erected by the Agawam Tribe of Red Men for society and business purposes.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

DANVERS —(Continued).

MISCELLANEOUS.

TEMPERANCE.—It is a fact too well known for comment that a typical New Englander of a century ago loved rum. It was potent at "raisings," it added to hospitality, it lent wisdom to council, eloquence to speech, strength to effort. It was as necessary to settle a minister as to swap a horse. It was the article most often charged on the grocer's day-book; it was absolutely common. And it made men drunk. After the revolution home production greatly increased, and during the first part of this century intemperance became a crying evil.

In the year 1812 a temperance society was formed. It was the first in this State, perhaps the first in the world,—The Massachusetts Society for the Suppression of Intemperance. Three Danvers men were of its members,—Hon. Samuel Holten, Rev. Dr. Wadsworth and Joseph Torrey, at least two of them leaders anywhere. And this accounts for the fact that so early, two years after the parent society, a temperance society was started here. It was called the Danvers Moral Society, and had for its officers a fine set of men who neither shrank from the work nor feared the opprobrium of an unpopular reform,—Dr. Holten, president; Rev. Messrs. Wadsworth and Walker, vice-presidents; Drs. Torrey and Nichols, secretaries; Fitch Pool, treasurer; Eleazer Putnam, Samuel Page, John Endicott, Sylvester Osborne, James Osborne, James Brown, William Sutton and Nathan Felton, counsellors. Deacon Samuel Preston gave in his old age some reminiscences of his early connection with the society, himself one of the early secretaries. The board of managers, he said, met once a month. "As cases one after another came up, to particular members of the board was assigned the duty of visiting and trying to persuade the fallen one to break off his habits and to lead a sober and useful life. This was followed until reform was effected or the case became hopeless, when his or her name was added to a list of



names which were to be handed to the selectmen of the town to be 'posted' as common drunkards, and the dealers in intoxicating drinks were forbidden to sell or give to any person whose name was so 'posted.' Several lists of some eight or ten names were so made out and posted in public places. The process created so much bitter feeling that it was abandoned after some years of trial. The binding principle of the societies was not, in the beginning, total abstinence; other methods had to be tried before." The Moral Society at first went no farther than to declare against the daily use of ardent spirits. It took nineteen years of progress to strike out, in 1833, the word "daily."

The first indication of the new reform upon the records of the town is a vote passed at the annual meeting of 1818, thanking the selectmen (Nathan Felton, Jonathan Walcott, Sylvester Proctor, Daniel Putnam, Nathaniel Putnam), for the measures by them adopted "to prevent those given to intemperance in drinking, from wasting their health, time, and estates by the excessive use of ardent spirits; and that the present board be instructed to pursue the system commenced by their predecessors."

Nine years later, May 27, 1827, Caleb Oakes carried a motion for a committee of nine to enforce the laws and "to give notice to the selectmen of every licensed person known to violate the laws that their approbation of such person may hereafter be refused." This committee consisted of Caleb Oakes, Fitch Pool, Samuel Fowler, John Peabody, Samuel Preston, John W. Proctor, Elijah Upton, Nathan Poor and Samuel Taylor. It was in this year, 1827, that the first public address advocating total abstinence was delivered in Danvers. The speaker was a young physician, Ebenezer Hunt, who thus early took the advanced stand upon this question, which throughout the course of his well-rounded life he fearlessly took on other great questions which later agitated the country.

In 1830 the town were asked to take certain measures "agreeable to a request of the Danvers Moral Society." The next year the overseers of the poor were instructed not to furnish liquors at the almshouse, except as recommended by the attending physician.

Two years later, and at a meeting held at the Brick Meeting-House in the north parish March 4, 1833, public sentiment had been so far affected that the first no-license vote was passed. John W. Proctor, a lineal descendant of the original settlers of that name, a young lawyer whose name must appear often and honorably in any chronicles of his native town, then wrote in lead-pencil certain resolutions which were offered to the meeting by a young man whose birth was contemporaneous with that of the century, and who to-day is still with us, despite his advanced age maintaining the active superintendence of the one of the most important departments of town affairs, of whom more may be learned in the biographical sketch which follows, Samuel P. Fowler. The resolutions were these:

"*Resolved* that the following order be adopted:

"Whereas in consequence of the Change that has taken place in public Opinion in regard to the use of Spirituous liquors, it is very generally believed that the Public convenience does not require licenses to be granted for the vending of Ardent Spirits.

"And whereas it is desirable to discountenance the use of Ardent Spirits in all reasonable and practicable ways, Therefore voted as the sense of the town that it is not expedient to license the Sale of Ardent Spirits within the town, and that the Selectmen be hereby instructed and requested to withhold their Approbation of such licenses."

Col. Jesse Putnam headed a petition for no-license next year, and Daniel P. King, Alfred Putnam, Abner Sanger, Robert S. Daniels and Joshua H. Ward were appointed to correspond with other towns on the question. Women were in no ways backward in the temperance movement. At the annual town-meeting of 1836, this petition signed by about eight hundred of them was presented:

"To the Citizens of Danvers in Town Meeting assembled:—

"We, the undersigned, your Mothers, wives, sisters and daughters, ask your attention for one moment to the temperance cause, as it now exists in this community. We are aware that you are not unkindly of this cause, and that you have heretofore done much in support of it, and the present year have instructed your Selectmen not to approbate the sale of Ardent Spirits within the town. We are also aware that you were among the first publicly in town meeting to denounce the traffic in ardent Spirits and to proclaim its evils. All this is well, but still much remains to be done. Notwithstanding all your efforts, there are many still intemperate, and the means of gratifying their insatiable appetites are still at hand.

"Yes, and they who furnish these means go unpunished and disregarded. Of what are laws or resolutions in word only? Better by far to have no laws, than permit them to be violated with impunity. Have you not again and again resolved that the sale and the use of ardent spirits are destructive of the Peace and well-being of Society? Do you not all feel and see that this is true? Then why permit it? We beseech you delay no longer. Banish the evil from among you. Beseech those who transgress, in kindness to desist. But if they will not, in kindness, compel them to do it. Never hesitate or falter in doing that you know to be right. We your friends, your own consciences, and the God of heaven, will sustain you in the path of duty. As you love us, as you regard your own welfare, both here and hereafter, suffer not the evil of drunkenness to be any longer within your borders; and unite with us in prayer that our neighboring Citizens may share the same blessing."

At a special meeting held April 3, 1837, a committee, in the nature of a temperance vigilance committee, and the first of the sort, was appointed; it consisted of John Peabody, Rufus Wyman, Jesse Putnam, John B. Peirce and Samuel P. Fowler. At this meeting a resolve was passed which reveals a state of things unremedied to this day and which might with greater pertinence than efficacy be at any time re-enacted:

"WHEREAS, this town for several years past, while endeavoring to prevent the sale and use of intoxicating liquors within it, has found its efforts thwarted, and its citizens allured and enticed away to their injury, by the Licensed shops and houses on its borders in the City of Salem. Therefore ———

"Resolved, That the Selectmen in behalf of the town be requested respectfully to beseech the Authorities of the City (if such dram shops shall still be thought necessary in the City) not to locate them immediately upon our Borders; but to remove them as far off as possible."

There followed a period of inactivity for some seven years. Then, in 1844, more resolutions were passed, and another vigilance committee was appointed, on which with others previously mentioned were Joseph Osgood, Elias Putnam, William and Joseph S. Black,



Samuel Tucker and Samuel Preston. Four years later and another committee, another in 1849, several in the fifties, and one, the last, as late as 1871, upon the earlier of which appear as leading temperance men of the day these additional names: Allen Knight, Israel Adams, Deacon Frederick Howe, William Walcott, Gilbert Tapley, Nathan Tapley, Wm. J. C. Kenney, Eben Putnam, Israel W. Andrews, Edward T. Waldron and Moses Black, Jr. In 1849 these rather unique votes were passed:

"That each minister, each Lawyer and each Doctor be requested to deliver to the citizens of the Town, one Lecture at least, each, during the year, on the subject of Temperance and Gambling

"That the Town Clerk send a certified copy of the above vote to each of the gentlemen referred to and to publish it in the *Danvers Courier*.

"That the Gentlemen referred to have the liberty to make use of such language as they please on the evils of using tobacco."

About 1849, too, the subject of lotteries received the attention of condemnation, and committees were especially instructed to prosecute violations of the law.

Agreeable to the law of 1855, the selectmen appointed as the first liquor agent of the town, Needham C. Millett. He was required to keep pure and unadulterated liquors, for medicinal, chemical and mechanical purposes only, at his place of business on Maple Street; to sell for cash only at twenty-five per cent. net profit; to make quarterly returns to the town treasurer; and his compensation was one hundred dollars. His successors as liquor agents were: 1856-57, Olive Emery, High Street; 1858-61, Hiram Preston, Maple Street; 1862-65, Levi Merrill, Maple Street; 1866, Daniel Richard, corner High and Elm Streets; 1867, A. Sumner Howard, Cherry Street; 1869-72, Abram Patch, Jr., Maple Street.

From the stand taken so early, when the resolutions of 1833 were adopted, neither the old nor the present town of Danvers has ever receded. Once only, in 1883, the vote went in favor of license, four hundred and twenty-one to two hundred and eighty-three; but by a singular coincidence, the proceedings of this meeting were technically illegal, through the omission to use check lists in balloting for moderator, and on a subsequent trial the result was reversed by a close vote, four hundred in favor of license, four hundred and thirty-eight against. The first vote under the local option law of 1868 was a negative answer, one hundred and forty-nine to five, to the question "Shall licenses be granted for the sale, to be drunk on the premises, of either distilled or fermented liquors?" Late votes on the license question have been: 1884, 476 no, 275 yes; 1885, 391 no, 233 yes; 1886, 384 no, 183 yes.

Not always, however, has the real state of the temperance question been in harmony with this showing. A dozen years ago the saloon element, for a time, successfully defied the law, and endeavored, by terrorizing prosecutors, to avoid prosecution. At least one extensive fire has been traced to such a source. But the people at length aroused to meet the emergency,

and, under a police who deserve great credit for so well performing their duty, have brought back the town to a place essentially of law and order, where liquor-selling timidly skulks and drunkenness is not common.

Within recent years a number of temperance societies have been organized. Apparently the oldest is the Catholic Total Abstinence Society, whose good work cannot easily be over-estimated. It was organized November 19, 1871, and bought and fitted up its present building some four years later. Its hall was dedicated February 17, 1879. The Danvers Reform Club was organized, January 21, 1876; the Woman's Christian Temperance Union of Danversport, January 17, 1876; a similar Union at the Plains, February 6, 1876.

FIRE DEPARTMENT.—The first action of the town regarding fire-engines was in the first year of this century. On the 25th of August, 1800, Robert Shillaber, Israel Putnam and Edward Southwick were chosen "to purchase two fire engines for the use of the town, whenever a sum of money shall be raised by subscription equal to one-half the cost of said engines, and deposited in the hands of the committee aforesaid for that purpose."

"*Voted:* Said engines shall be kept in repair at the expense of the town and one of them shall be placed near the house formerly called the Bell Tavern and the other on the neck of land near the new mills so called provided the inhabitants who may be likely to receive the most benefit therefrom will at their own expense erect suitable buildings to receive them."

By a law of the Commonwealth, the selectmen of towns owning fire-engines were empowered to nominate "engine-men." At the beginning of 1801, the selectmen made these appointments:

"FOR ENGINE NO. 1.

Edward Southwick.
Nathl. Stairs.
Henry Cook.
Joseph Buxton, Jr.
Dani. Reed, Jr.
Isaac Frye.
Caleb Osborn.
Jona. Osborn.
John Osborn.
Amos Osborn.
George Stone.
John Pierce.
Wm. Woods.
Wm. Reed.
David Osborn.
Saml. Osborn, Jr."

"FOR ENGINE NO. 2.

Thomas Putnam.
Caleb Oakes.
Benj. Kent.
James Carr, Jr.
Joseph Kent.
Willebo Wells.
Nathl. Putnam.
Wm. Trask.
James Gray.
Currier True.
Saml. Pinder.
Wm. Pinder.
Saml. McIntire.
Saml. Fairfield.
Joshua Goodale.
James Carr."

The names of Edward Southwick, William and Daniel Reed, Jr., Caleb Osborn, George Stone, John Pierce and Samuel McIntire were subsequently, for some reason, erased.

Officers known as "fire-wards" were first chosen at the annual meeting of 1801. The persons then chosen were Ebenezer Sprague, Samuel Page, Edward Southwick, Ebenezer Shillaber, Simon Pindar and Israel Hutchinson, Jr. Ten years later Page and Southwick were both on the board, and with them



Samuel Fowler, Jr., Gideon Foster, Joseph and Sylvester Osborne and Benj. Crowninshield.

Some records of the meetings of No. 2, about this time, have been preserved. At Nathaniel Putnam's store certain preparations were made one day in February, 1808, which show that charity went hand in hand with festivity.

Voted, That the company have a supper to-morrow night, as per vote the last meeting.

Voted, The committee be authorized to invite the minister and school-master to sup with us in free cost, and that they invite the fire ward in said district to sup with us in club.

Voted, That the remaining part of the fines that may be had after paying for said supper, &c., be given to the most needy persons in said district.

Voted, That there be a committee to distribute the same and inform them what fund it came from.

Voted, That this committee consist of Mr. Caleb Oakes, Mr. Israel Endicott and Mr. Wm. Trask.

Voted, That the clerk pay over to the committee last chosen the balance that may be in his hands after settling for the supper.

Voted, That the committee make a return of their doings at the adjournment.

At the adjournment the report was accepted and the committee duly thanked. They received from the clerk thirty dollars for distribution, and fourteen persons received from one to four dollars each.

In 1810 the "Columbian Fire Club" is first mentioned in the town records. The club petitioned for an additional number of buckets to be placed under its care. Three good men and true considered the subject,—Jona. Ingersoll, Jas. Foster and Samuel Page; but whether the club secured the buckets or not is a question of distressing uncertainty. A survivor of this club relates that each member was required to keep a fire-bucket, a bed-key and a canvas bag, hanging ready for use in the front entry.

In 1815 there were ten fire-wards,—Sylvester Osborne, Benj. Crowninshield, Caleb Oakes, Thomas Putnam, Joseph G. Sprague, James Brown, Moses Black, John Upton, Jr., Samuel Fowler and Ward Pool. In that year the New Mills engine was thus manned:

Thomas Cheever.	Jacob Jones.
Wm. Francis.	Samuel Pindar.
Hercules H. Joselyn (gone to sea).	Ebenr. Jacobs.
Allen Gould.	Daniel Brady.
John W. Osgood.	Benj. Chapin.
Saml. W. Treasky.	Thos. Symonds.
Andrew Gould.	Nathaniel Putnam.
	Jona. McIntire.

Appropriations, by direct vote, for the fire department were few and far between in the early years of its existence. In 1837 the selectmen were authorized "to furnish the new mill engine company with fire Buckets, as they think proper, provided they do not find those they lost at the late fire" and the only other recorded appropriation for the first twenty years was on a vote in 1819, authorizing the repair of the hook-and-ladders belonging to the town, and the purchase of as many new hooks, ladders, pikes, not to exceed fifteen, as the fire-wards should think proper.

In 1821 Oliver Saunders and others petitioned for

a new engine. The first thing was to inquire into the status and condition of the old engines. It was evidently an important matter. Notice the number and character of the committee of inspection: Ebenezer Shillaber, Andrew Nichols, Nathl. Putnam, John Upton, Jr., John Page, Sylvester Osborne, Caleb Oakes, John W. Proctor, Danl Putnam, Warren Porter and Samuel Fowler. But the committee was considered still lacking somewhat in weight and five more were added,—Briggs R. Reed, Oliver Saunders, Eben Putnam, Jr., Joseph Spaulding and Allen Gould. All these were appointed by the moderator, yet "the inhabitants" were not quite satisfied. They voted "to add two more to the above Committee, the Town to have the liberty of nominating them, and Edward Southwick and Nathaniel Watson were added." Verily, if the old engines were not thoroughly overhauled, it was not the fault of the town-meeting. Subsequently it was voted to procure two new engines and repair the old ones, provided half the cost of the new ones be raised by subscription. Squires Shove, Caleb Oakes, Nathaniel Putnam, Ebenezer Shillaber and Wm. Sutton, were delegated to pass around the hat.

In 1826 two sets of sail cloths were provided at an expense of one hundred and fifty dollars, one set to be located near the south meeting-house, the other at New Mills. The men who ran with the machine this latter year at New Mills were

John Ross.	James Smith.
Josiah Gray.	John Bates.
James Smith.	John Kent.
John Burn.	Andrew Porter.
Hiram Perley.	Moses Wood.
Frederick A. Tufts.	Daniel Woodman.
John T. May.	Franklin Batchelder.
James Haynes.	Daniel Caldwell.
Richard Elliot, Jr.	David S. Barnard.
James Perry.	Jesse P. Harriman.
John Herrick.	Daniel Hartwell.
Benjamin Kent, Jr.	

In 1830 another engine was purchased for the south parish; the same year an act of the Legislature was passed "to establish a Fire Department in Danvers." The act provided for the choice of twelve fire-wards; changed the power of appointment of engine-men from the selectmen to the fire-wards; limited the number of engine-men to forty "for each hydrau-lion or suction-engine, twenty-five to each common engine, four to each hose-carriage, twenty to each sail-carriage and twenty for a hook-and-ladder company;" authorized the engine-men to organize themselves into distinct companies under the direction of the fire-wards; and made the fire-wards custodians of all fire-apparatus. The first board chosen under this act consisted of R. H. French, Lewis Allen, Caleb Low, Richard Osborne, S. P. Fowler, Moses Black, Caleb L. Frost, Benjamin Wheeler, Henry Cook, Edward Upton, Enoch Poor and Jacob F. Perry.

In 1835 the New Mills people petitioned for a new



engine-house, and secured it. The same year "Johnny" Perley, the storekeeper at the little village which was springing up at Porter's Plains, petitioned for a fire-engine, to be located near Berry's tavern, and the next year Philip Osborn and others wanted a new engine-house at the "Pine Tree Corner" (Wilson's Corner), and secured an appropriation of three hundred dollars for that purpose.

Mr. Perley's petition not having met with success, another store-keeper, Daniel Richards, headed a petition in April, 1836, "for a good and sufficient fire-engine to be located at the Plains, and to provide a convenient building for the same." The fire-wards at this meeting presented a report which, doubtless, influenced favorable action,—“The engine Niagara, No. 1, is not suitable or fit to work with the Salem engines, they being suction . . . ; the Forrest, No. 3, is in good order and well manned . . . ; the Erie, No. 2, is in a bad condition and not maul'd, wants repairing and altering . . . ; the . . . , No. 4, a good, new engine, is wanted at the Plains, with hose and a house for the same.” A vote was passed to raise two thousand three hundred dollars for the purpose of purchasing two new engines, one to replace the old "Niagara," the other for the Plains, and for hose, etc., and the repairing of the "Erie." Richard Hood's bill "for finishing the engine-house at the neck" in 1836 was \$102.85.

But the new engine for the Plains was not immediately forthcoming. At the March meeting of 1837 one of the articles was "To inquire of the Fire Department what they have done towards obtaining a Fire-Engine to be located at the Plains, agreeable to the request of Eben Putnam." At an adjournment a committee which had been appointed to consider the report of the fire-wards reported "that it is expedient to procure a middling-sized engine of good construction to be located at the Plains, provided an efficient company of thirty men can be found in that vicinity ready to take charge of the same; that, in case an engine is procured, a suitable house should be built for the accommodation of the same." These recommendations were adopted, and eight hundred dollars appropriated. But the committee added in their report,—“It is worse than useless to expend a thousand dollars for an engine and to have it, when the alarm of fire is given on a cold night, frozen up and unfit to be used.” Two hundred dollars was soon after added to the appropriation of eight hundred dollars.

The election for fire-wards in 1840 resulted as follows, the number of votes each received being given:

Miles Osborne	297	Henry Fowler	299
Francis Baker	309	George Porter	296
Amos Osborne, Jr.	309	Simeon Putnam	190
Jere L. Kimball	297	John Hart	199
Benjamin Wheeler	298	William H. Little	189
Edwin F. Putnam	299	Eben Sutton	186

E. F. Putnam and Simeon Putnam declined, and

Daniel Richards and Ezra Batchelder were chosen to fill the vacancy.

In 1842 Otis Mudge and one hundred and twenty-eight others petitioned for an engine and house, "to be located near the North Parish Meeting-House (Rev. Mr. Braman's);" the matter was referred to Mr. Mudge, Miles Osborne and W. J. C. Kenney, but when a vote was taken—this was a meeting held in the South Parish—only 51 voted for the measure, and 59 voted against it. It was "tried again." Mr. Mudge and John W. Proctor were appointed tellers. They reported 65 in the affirmative and 65 in the negative. Then the house was polled, and the tellers having reported "68 for locating an engine, and 78 against it," it was then voted that the subject be dismissed. In 1843 the engine at New Mills was replaced by a new machine, called the "Ocean," at a cost not exceeding a thousand dollars; and what became of the old Niagara appears in this item of the fire-wards' report for 1844:

"No. 2.—This engine, with its apparatus, is in good order, it having been removed from the Neck to the Tapley Village, and is now under the charge of Perley Tapley, who has engaged to furnish a house for it at his own expense."

In this report the story is told at length of the great fire which swept through what is now Peabody Square, burning the South Meeting-House, the old Essex Coffee-House and many other principal buildings in the vicinity. "The sun, this morning, rose upon a scene of desolation never before witnessed in our town, disclosing more fully to view crumbling walls and smouldering ruins in the place of those buildings which the devouring element had swept from our view. The destruction of property was very large." Further details will doubtless appear under the sketch of the history of Peabody.

Perley Tapley soon requested the town to purchase his engine-house, and the fire-wards were directed to buy it unless they could do better otherwise. In 1849 Tapleyville was given a new engine, and the "Niagara" was finally disposed of.

The number and value of the several fire-engines, houses and apparatus belonging to the town at the time South Danvers was set off as a separate town, will be found in the inventory of town property in this sketch, where the history of the division of the town is given. A few days after the act was passed which incorporated South Danvers, the Legislature amended the act of 1829, which established the Danvers Fire Department, so that the town of Danvers was required thenceforth to choose five fire-wards annually instead of twelve.

The men elected as the first fire-wards of Danvers, after the division of the town, were Winthrop Andrews, R. B. Hood, A. G. Allen, W. B. Richardson and Josiah Ross.

The rising generation knows little of the glory which once surrounded the country fire department.



Only certain grandfathers remember the halcyon days. Now and then an item in old newspaper files recall them, days of reception or visitation, the carefully polished machine, the well-drilled company of choicest young manhood, rivalry not a little, admiration unbounded. There was such a day in the fall of 1849, when a great event happened in Wenham,—its first new engine came. On the shore of the big pond where Hugh Peters preached in the wilderness of Enon, there was a grand exhibition of prowess, and Danvers was there by her board of fire-wards, and the "General Putnam, No. 4;" the company dressed in uniform of white frocks, dark pants and glazed caps.

"They marched under the direction of that pattern of directors, William J. C. Kenney, to the music of Osgood's excellent band, and the way they performed the military evolutions would have done honor to a company of veteran soldiers."

The idea of having a "steamer" first came up in town-meeting in 1866, on the petition of Henry F. Putnam and others. It was then referred and indefinitely postponed. Two years later George W. Bell headed a similar petition, and on the last day of March, 1868, a series of votes were taken on the motion, "that the town purchase a steam fire engine." The first hand vote was declared lost; it was then voted to poll the house; the motion was again put and declared carried, eighty to forty; the minority, not satisfied, doubted the count; the voters passed in front of the moderator, and were counted as they passed, and the motion was finally declared carried, seventy-six to twenty-five. No money was immediately appropriated, but at the annual meeting of 1869 it was voted, after another close fight, sixty-seven to sixty-five, to appropriate five thousand dollars, and the fire-wards, namely, Timothy Hawkes, George W. Bell, Charles T. Stickney, Wyatt B. Woodman and John C. Putnam, together with Winthrop Andrews, William L. Weston, R. B. Hood, H. A. Perkins and Nathan Tapley were entrusted with the weighty business of buying the only "steamer" which the town ever indulged in. Three thousand dollars more was appropriated for apparatus for the new engine and fifteen hundred dollars for accommodations. And, at a final adjournment, each of these votes were reconsidered, and the whole matter indefinitely postponed. Thus it is ever with town-meetings. But the next year and the next the steamer agitation was renewed, three self-acting extinguishers, "soda fountains," having been purchased in the meantime, and so on until in 1873, the first and only steam fire engine came to stay—but a short time. The fire wards, who were entrusted with its purchase, were G. W. Bell, George Kimball, J. C. Putnam, Thomas Curtis and William J. Murphy. The basement of the building known as Bell's hall, on Maple Street, was fitted up as a steamer-house.

But now for some time the advance guard of public

sentiment had been laboring to bring up the rank and file to the belief that Danvers was ready to indulge in the metropolitan luxury, nay, necessity, of a water-supply system. It is now some eleven years since the pure water of Middleton Pond first appeared in our streets and kitchens. Who would part with it? Yet it came only after much agitation and much honest opposition. The matter of water supply was first brought up in town-meeting in 1870, and was referred to S. P. Fowler, Daniel Richards, Oliver Roberts, C. T. Stickney and W. L. Weston. They reported next year, recommending acceptance of certain terms offered by the city of Salem for supply for five years, keeping an eye to Middleton and Swan's Ponds for an ultimate supply. Nothing further until November 17, 1873, when another committee of consideration was appointed. They reported at the annual meeting of 1874 in favor of building a reservoir on Will's Hill, in Middleton, at an estimated cost, with pipes, etc., of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The following April, 24th, the Legislature passed the Danvers Water Act, authorizing the town to take water from Middleton and Swan's Ponds, to issue bonds to three hundred thousand dollars, payable in not exceeding thirty years, to choose three water commissioners, and to provide for a sinking fund. The validity of the act depended upon its acceptance by the town within two years. In the meantime another factor entered into the water question. The State needed a new insane asylum; sites were examined here and there; finally the summit of Hathorne Hill, in Danvers, was fixed upon as the most eligible. The asylum commissioners wanted water and were willing to co-operate with the town. Their hill lay almost in a direct line from the square to Middleton Pond and about midway. They offered the town a part of the hill for a reservoir, thirty thousand dollars towards the cost of works and one thousand dollars annually for their supply. The proposition gave new energy to the water men. A motion to raise two hundred thousand dollars June 15, 1875, received 364 yeas to 314 nays, but, two days before, a law went into effect requiring a two-thirds vote for such extraordinary appropriations, and the proposition thus failed of being carried. They tried again very soon, July 2nd. Then the Water Act was accepted, 506 to 290, but a motion to proceed with construction still failed of two-thirds,—512 to 336.

George H. Norman, the great contractor, in September, 1875, made this offer; to put in the works, including a five million gallon reservoir, twenty miles of pipes and one hundred and fifty hydrants, and keep them as a private speculation or sell them to the town for two hundred thousand dollars. The offer was accepted September 13th. The first water commissioners were elected September 21st; they were John R. Langley, Otis F. Putnam, Harrison O. Warren. Then the question arose as to the authority of the town to transfer its rights under the act to

Mr. Norman, and the matter was dropped. The next month the town of Beverly made a proposition to supply Danvers, and a vote was passed to take water from this source provided a fair bargain could be made, but no bargain was made. In the meantime the asylum people would wait but little longer for further action on their offer. The question was put to vote April 28, 1876, on proceeding to introduce water, in connection with the State, at an expense to the town, not exceeding one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Yeas, 409, nays, 230,—not two-thirds. The water men kept at work. May 13, 1876, they were successful. Then, on the same question, the whole number of votes—the largest number ever cast up to that time—were 933. Of these 637 were yeas; 296 nays. Samuel Waitt, an old man of eighty-four, threw the last vote, a yea.

Early in July following, the water commissioners closed a contract with G. H. Norman for complete works and twenty-one miles of street pipes for one hundred and sixty-two thousand five hundred dollars. The State built the reservoir, paid twelve thousand five hundred dollars, and agreed to pay one thousand dollars annually for twenty years. Thus the net first cost of the water-works to the town was one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, which was met by the issue of five per cent. bonds. The principal main was completed to the square August 17, 1876, and water first appeared, direct from the pond, the reservoir not being completed, Wednesday, November 8th. Early in December the reservoir was ready for use, and on Thursday, December 23d, the entire system was in working order and opened by a formal trial. The head was found to be strong enough to throw a 1½-inch stream, not only over the highest buildings, but well over the flag-staff to a height of over one hundred and twenty-five feet. Fire-engines were immediately at a discount. At the annual meeting of 1877 it was recommended that the steamer be sold, and notices of its sale at auction were sent broadcast to towns and cities. Horse companies have taken the place of the engine companies. Nine of these companies and one hook-and-ladder company comprise the present fire department. Fires have happily been comparatively infrequent, but on more than one occasion the ready presence of Middleton water has prevented what otherwise threatened to the square a repetition of the ruin of '45. Two lamentable and disastrous conflagrations have within a few years occurred in spite of the water.

Benjamin E. Newhall was appointed superintendent of the water-works in September, 1876, while they were in process of construction, and held the office efficiently to his resignation, July 1, 1883. The duties of the office were then divided. Henry Newhall was appointed registrar; David J. Harrigan, superintendent of pipes, and no change has since been made.

In December, 1880, the commissioners were obliged

to defend a suit brought by the Ipswich mills for damages alleged to have been sustained by the diversion of water from Ipswich River by lowering Middleton and Swan's Ponds, they being tributary to the river. The commissioners who heard the evidence, Judge Choate of the Probate Court and Messrs. Frances and Darrascott, engineers, reported in favor of the mills, and awarded five thousand four hundred and ninety-five dollars for the diversion of water from Middleton Pond, and two thousand and five dollars for Swan's Pond, "if in the latter case the petitioners are entitled to an assessment under this award." The Superior Court at the October term, 1881, ruled against the Swan Pond assessment. Another law-suit was the result of a ballot for water commissioner at the annual meeting of 1881. Josiah Ross was declared elected by one vote, five citizens having been appointed to count the votes, and having so reported to the moderator. A motion thereupon made that the votes be recounted by a new committee was carried. The new committee reported that the opposing candidate, Otis F. Putnam, was elected by one vote, and the moderator so declared the vote, stating it so appeared on recount. These are all the facts of record. But it seems that the moderator and town clerk subsequently counted the ballots which had been preserved, and their results coincided with the original count. Under the circumstances the two members of the board recognized Mr. Ross as having been elected. Presently Mr. Putnam brought a petition to the Supreme Court for a writ of mandamus, compelling the two commissioners to recognize him and to refrain from recognizing Mr. Ross. The question was practically the legality of the recount, important and hitherto undecided. Judge Endicott, before whom was the original hearing, dismissed the petition, but by request reported the case to the full court. The case was argued at the bar in November, 1881, and the judges present not agreeing, the court afterwards directed it to be submitted on briefs to all the judges. The final decision reported in One Hundred and Thirty-third Massachusetts Reports was "by a majority of the court" in favor of the petitioner, Mr. Putnam.

At the expiration of John R. Langley's term in 1882, resolutions were passed in recognition of his efficient and valuable services as chairman of the board from its establishment. He was one of the earliest and most zealous advocates of water. The full list of water commissioners is,—

1875-82. John R. Langley.	1882-85. George H. Peabody.
1875-90. Otis F. Putnam.	1883-86. G. A. Tapley.
1875-81. Harrison O. Warren.	1885-88. C. H. Giles.
1880-83. Daniel Richards.	1886-89. C. S. Richards.

LAW-SUITS.—The early records of the town give evidence that the inhabitants in their corporate capacity not infrequently indulged in law-suits, and as usual this species of entertainment seems to have



been rather expensive, especially as the town was commonly at the unsuccessful end of the verdict.

In March, 1767, this action was taken,—

"Voted, Thomas Porter and Gideon Putnam be agents in behalf of the Town and they or either of them be fully Impowered to defend and settle the actions or Pleas of the Case which Benj. Sawyer & Gilbert Tapley has brought against the Town as Surveyors of Highways for the year 1766."

In the following May, this,—

"To see if the inhabitants will prosecute their appeal against Benjamin Sawyer at the next Superior Court to be holden at Ipswich.

"Voted that the appeal shall be prosecuted."

The town was beaten, but in that prime fighting condition when it hated to let go. An article was inserted in the warrant of 1768, "to see if it be the minds of the Inhabitants to Petition the General Court for a Rehearing at the Superior Court on the case of Deacon Benja. Sawyer, and in another County if it can be obtained." But moderation prevailed: it was voted "to dismiss the claws," and—perhaps with no reflection on their efficiency—"also the agents."

In March, 1769, Samuel Holten, Jr., and William Shillaber were appointed agents "to answer at the next Court of General Sessions of the Peace for the County of Essex to a presentment carried into said Court against sd Town of Danvers."

Two years later the two men just named and Gideon Putnam, Jona. Buxton, Benj. Porter, William Putnam and Robert Shillaber were chosen "to take legal advice respecting Mess. Aaron and Enoch Putnam with regard to their taking timber which the town provided to repair the bridge over Water's River and to prosecute them in their discretion." They did prosecute, with what disastrous result the following document shows:

"DANVERS, December 23, 1771.

"Then received of Mr. Gideon Putnam and Samuel Holten, Jun'r. (two of the Select-men of Danvers, the sum of Two Hundred and Fifty-eight pounds fourteen shillings and two pence Lawfull money in full of a judgment of the Superior Court & costs in favour of Mr. Aaron Putnam and Enoch Putnam (two of the Surveyors of Highways in the Town of Danvers for the present year) against the Inhabitants of the said Town of Danvers.

"Witness.

"JEREMIAH PAGE,

"ISSAC DEMSEY."

PEPES, GIDEON PUTNAM,

"ENOCH PUTNAM,

For some time after this law-suits were at a discount. When next the town was sued, by Archelaus Dale, in 1781, he seems to have been satisfied by a conference committee, and when, in 1783, the inhabitants were asked what they would do respecting an action commenced against them by Major Caleb Low, they voted to pay the cost of the action upon his withdrawing it.

Commencing in 1784 and extending over a period of two years there was a long and obstinate series of encounters at law and otherwise between the town and Daniel Prince, on account of taxes collected by him. Concerning the merits of the case it is difficult

now to understand. Prince was committed to Salem gaol, where the town clerk was sent to desire him to send proposals as to his release, but "no proposals were sent by Mr. Daniel Prince in writing." His real estate was taken on execution and agents were appointed to bid off the same for the use of the town. In 1814 the town was indicted for not being sufficiently provided with powder. Several indictments for not conforming to the school laws have been mentioned in connection with the schools.

"The inhabitants of the town of Danvers" have been parties to a number of cases which have gone to the Supreme Court upon points of law. The first, reported, 10 Mass., 514, was on a question of taxing the Iron Foundry Company. In 6 Pickering, 20, there was a question between the town and the county commissioners on a highway matter; in the same volume the case of Joseph Osborne against the town to recover money paid for taxes is reported. A question of a pauper's settlement which arose between Danvers and Boston was decided in 10 Pickering, 513. Another case in which the town and the county commissioners were parties arose on the laying out of a new highway from Haverhill to Salem, through Boxford, Topsfield and Danvers, 2 Metcalf, 185. A case in which John Page was plaintiff, 7 Metcalf, 326, on a question of damages from the laying out of a road over his land, involved the validity of the action of a Topsfield town meeting in selecting a jury-list. In 1860 Gilbert Tapley was sued by School District, No. 6, for "taking and carrying away a school-house," a case in which the real defendant was the new district, No. 7—1 Allen, 49. The injunction to restrain the payment of fifty thousand dollars, voted for bounty, reported 8 Allen, 80, is spoken of in the war history; as the case of *Gustin vs. School District No. 5*, is spoken of in the School History. Putnam *vs. Langley et. al.*, involving a disputed election, has been referred to in connection with the water department.

BURYING GROUNDS.—When Salem filled the North River basin in the summer of 1885, gravel was taken from West Danvers (West Peabody) and on the farm which was owned in witchcraft times by the widow of Joseph Pope, neighbor of old Giles Corey and of the Flints, the steam shovel unearthed some ancient graves, and before the work went on, the remains were carefully removed to a new resting-place. It was one of the many family or neighborhood burying-grounds which are to be seen here and there all over the town, the time-worn head-stones relieved now and then by a fresh marble, signifying that one of the later generation had gone to sleep with the fathers. Over on the old "Boston path" is a lot in which the Popes buried their dead from the earliest times. Here lies Caleb Oakes, his wife, Mehitable Pope, and their son, William, the distinguished botanist; Sarah, "relict of Nathaniel Pope & daughter of the Rev. Peter Clarke, who was more than 50 years the worthy minister of this Parish," 1802, and many others,—the

familiar "Jasper," of which the Popes have been fond, several times appearing.

On the summit of Hog Hill, well worthy of the modern name of Mount Pleasant, the Proctors and Needhams, families from the first occupying the heights, have a private ground. A short distance back of Governor Endicott's old residence, plainly to be seen from the passing train, in a quiet, secluded spot, rest the remains of many of the great pioneer's early and late descendants.

Of the larger, more public burial-grounds, that on Summer Street, known as the Wadsworth Cemetery, is the oldest. It was an ancient burial-place, originally set apart by the Putnam family and purchased by Rev. Dr. Wadsworth of Jonathan Perry, and by him conveyed to the First Parish, to whom it still belongs. The most interesting stone here is that of Elizabeth, wife of Rev. Samuel Parris, the "witch minister," who died July 14, 1696. Judge Holten is buried in the old ground on Holten Street, near his home, as are many others who were honored in their day and generation. The High Street Burying-ground, at the Plains, contains stones a hundred years old or more, many of which are of prominent citizens of New Mills in the earlier part of the century, the Pages, Captain Benjamin Porter, Deacon Benjamin Kent and many others.

These old grounds are now seldom used. By the foresight of certain men whose names, hereafter appearing, are worthy of all honor, a large tract of land, originally twelve acres, and subsequently much increased, was purchased of Judge Samuel Putnam, and laid out as Walnut Grove Cemetery. This tract, extending from Sylvan to Ash Streets, embracing the valley of the two brooks which by their union make Crane River, and the sloping hills on either side, well wooded with walnut, beech and other trees, is of rare natural beauty, and is prized inestimably by the town. The movement for a new cemetery was initiated at a meeting held May 5, 1843, at the Plains school-house. Captain Eben Putnam was chosen chairman; Henry Fowler, secretary. Another meeting was held October 17th, Elias Putnam, chairman. A committee reported a form of organization with by-laws, and recommended the names of fifteen men as trustees: Elias Putnam, Gilbert Tapley, Moses Black, Joshua Silvester, Henry Fowler, Nathaniel Boardman, Thomas Cheever, Eben G. Berry, William J. C. Kenney, Daniel Richards, Nathan Tapley, Samuel P. Fowler, A. A. Edgerton, John Bates and Samuel Preston. The first regular officers were chosen at a meeting held the next day at Joshua Silvester's shoe factory, and Elias Putnam was elected president; Henry Fowler, clerk; Joshua Silvester, treasurer. Samuel P. Fowler was chairman of this meeting. He is now both president and treasurer, and his brother, Henry, has been the clerk from the beginning.

Incorporation was granted at this time. The

grounds were consecrated Sunday afternoon, June 23, 1844. The exercises, beginning at five o'clock, were,—

I. Hymn, written for the occasion by Andrew Nichols, M.D. II. Introductory Prayer by Rev. S. C. Bulkley. III. Hymn, written for the occasion by Rev. James Flint, D.D. IV. Address by Rev. John Brazer, D.D. V. Hymn, written for the occasion by G. Forrester Barstow, M.D. VI. Concluding Prayer by Rev. J. W. Eaton. VII. Parting Hymn. VIII. Benediction by Rev. T. F. Field.

The services were held in the grove, and were attended by not less than two thousand persons. The address of Dr. Frazer was said to have been a very appropriate and beautiful discourse, and that it made a deep impression on the many hearers. It remained unpublished for nearly forty years, when, through the efforts of Dr. A. P. Putnam, the original manuscript was traced to the possession of Mrs. Annie W. Ellis, of Dorchester, who kindly furnished him a copy, which was published in full in the *Danvers Mirror*, December 31, 1881.

April 13, 1885, the corporation was empowered by the Legislature to hold property in trust for the improvement of lots, etc.

Up to quite recent times the town so far cared for the burial of its deceased citizens as to own and provide hearses. They are first mentioned in 1818, when this action was taken:

"*Voted:* to choose a committee of five persons to consider on the clause respecting procuring hearses to make an estimate of the cost of one or more and to make report at the adjournment.

"*Voted:* that Sylvester Osborne, Doctor George Osgood, Jesse Putnam, Caleb Oakes and Sylvester Proctor be of said committee.

"*Voted:* that there be two hearses and two houses for the same provided within in this Town."

In 1842 Moses Black and thirty-five others petitioned "for a Hearse and Hearse-house near the Burying Ground on the Plains, near the house of Joseph Danforth." The petition was referred to the selectmen, with instructions to cause the things prayed for "to be placed in such a location as will best accommodate those who have occasion to use them."

In 1854 similar accommodations were asked for, to be located near Mr. Braman's church. A house was there erected, and remained until 1871, when the selectmen were instructed to sell it. In the appraisal, at the division of the town, these items were charged to North Danvers: house at cemetery, 10 by 15, \$45; house at Braman's 12 by 18, \$120; two hearses, new, \$440; one old, \$20.

THE ANTI-SLAVERY MOVEMENT.—A few slaves were owned in Danvers before slavery was abolished in the State. At the time of separation from Salem there were twenty-five such chattels, sixteen of whom were women. A number of documents such as the following have been preserved:

"DANVERS, April 19th, 1766.

"Rec'd of Mr. Jeremiah Page Fifty Eight pound thirteen shillings and four pence lawful money and a negro woman called Dinah which is in full for a Negro girl called Combo and a Negro girl called Cate and a Negro child called Deliverance or Dill which I now Sell and Deliver to ye said Jeremiah Page.

"Witness. { JONA. BANCROFT.
EZEK MARSH."

"JOHN TAPLEY.



A story has been told that Cudjo, owned by a neighbor of General Israel Putnam, was of fierce and revengeful temper, and having suffered some real or fancied injury at the hands of his mistress, threatened her life. To get rid of him his master sent him on a play-day trip to deliver a load of potatoes on some vessel at Salem. He took his fiddle and played to the sailors, went below to "rosin his bow," and when he reached deck again was far out at sea, consigned to the same southern market as his potatoes.

During the struggle on the admission of Missouri, Danvers addressed to Nathaniel Sillsbee, representative of the district in Congress, a very forcible letter on the subject of slavery, signed by Edward Southwick, William Sutton, Thomas Putnam, Andrew Nichols and John W. Proctor, committee.

The history of Abolitionism is, to a great extent, the biography of William Lloyd Garrison, a native of this county of Essex. For some ten years after the conflict over the admission of Missouri, a sort of lethargy prevailed over the country in regard to slavery. On the 4th of July, 1829, Garrison, then not quite twenty-five, delivered an address which excited much attention from its bold and vigorous assault on the peculiar institution of the South. That fall, as joint editor of the *Genius of Universal Emancipation* with Quaker Benjamin Lundy, of Baltimore, he issued over his initials his distinct avowal of the doctrine of immediate emancipation. He at the same time attacked the colonization societies, and was soon thrown into jail, convicted of libel for characterizing as "domestic piracy" the transportation of a cargo of slaves from Baltimore to Louisiana in a ship owned in Newburyport. Coming North, he lectured in the principal cities, finding all halls in Boston closed against him save that offered by a society of infidels. But to his mind Boston was the best centre from which to arouse the public sentiment of the North to a revolution in favor of emancipation. He issued the first number of the *Liberator* on the first day of the year 1831. "I am in earnest; I will not equivocate; I will not excuse; I will not retreat a single inch, and I will be heard." He was heard. In December the Georgia Legislature offered five thousand dollars for his arrest and conviction under the laws of that State. January 1, 1832, he and eleven others organized the New England (afterward Massachusetts) Anti-Slavery Society, the first based on the principle of immediate emancipation. He continued to be heard to such effect that in October, 1835, to save his life from a mob who were dragging him through the streets of Boston, the mayor jailed him as a disturber of the peace. On the other hand, his burning words kindled here and there sympathetic hearts, and probably there were few earlier and certainly no more ardent and enthusiastic supporters of Garrison and his doctrines than a number of young men of Danvers, chiefly residents of New Mills, and the leading spirits of these young men—

James D. Black, Joseph Merrill, Jesse P. Harriman, William Endicott, Richard Hood, John Hood and John Cutler—came to be called "the Seven Stars."

Of these, Black and Harriman are the only survivors at the time of this writing. Mr. Black, now of Harvard, Mass., was a member of that family of Moses Black, already spoken of as having filled prominent and honorable parts in our town life. When not more than twenty years old he took an advanced position in favor of immediate and unconditional emancipation as the only adequate remedy for the evil of slavery. The occasion was at a meeting of a Lyceum, the first established at New Mills, in 1833, and he made such an impression that he was invited to deliver a fuller address on the same subject on the 4th of July of that year, in the Baptist Church. With the exception of a lecture by the distinguished Oliver Johnson in Mr. Braman's church some time in 1832, the words of this young man, uttered in the face of such circumstances as only the courage of strong convictions would have led him to oppose, seem to have been the first public utterance of such radical and unpopular views in Danvers. To the position thus early taken he remained constant, foremost with his tongue and pen in the hot times which were to follow. Others, who were quick to ally themselves with the Abolitionists, were Hathorne Porter, Alfred R. Porter, William Francis, Dr. Eben Hunt, Rev. S. Brimblecom, Job Tyler, Hercules Jocelyn and a number of ladies. The cause grew by continual agitation. Local societies were formed, the *Liberator* and *Herald of Freedom* went into the shops and the homes. Eloquent and dauntless speakers spoke wherever they could get a hearing, and the seed thoughts grew by earnest talks over the anvil and cobble-stone or by the formal debate of the Lyceum. Among the earlier orators at New Mills was the Rev. C. P. Grosvenor of Salem, in whose parlor was organized the Essex County Anti-Slavery Society. George Thompson, of England, spoke in the Baptist Church in 1835, after a fruitless attempt had been made to procure a church or hall in Salem. The earliest organized society in Danvers was among the women, chiefly of the South Parish, in 1837. Very soon the men at the North Parish, chiefly of New Mills, formed the Danvers Anti-Slavery Society, and this society celebrated the 4th of July, 1838. Alfred Porter wrote a hymn for the occasion; Rev. S. Brimblecom was the orator. A "Young Men's" Society was organized in August following, at the Universalist Church. Joseph Merrill, Thomas Bowen and John R. Langley drafted the constitution. Rev. Samuel Brimblecom was the first president.

The meetings were commonly held in the brick school-house, or in the engine-house at New Mills. Dr. Putnam, who has devoted much attention to gathering up the details of this chapter of local history, has well said, of the records of these early meetings, that they "all attest how these younger citizens



of the town were in the habit of debating and forming opinions in relation to matters of great public interest. Their organization opened to them a school of no little importance, where they learned many valuable lessons, and became fully imbued with the sentiments and principles of Liberty. So it was that the New Mills became in due time a well-known centre of Abolitionism. Thence the influence spread through the town and beyond its limits." Early in 1839 a change was made in the name: "This society shall be called the North Danvers Anti-Slavery Society and shall be auxilliary to the Massachusetts State Society." These are the names of the members at this time: William Endicott, Thomas Bowen, Joseph Merrill, William Alley, J. R. Langley, Samuel Brimblecom, Jonathan Richardson, J. F. McIntire, M. Black, Jr., Elias Savage, J. D. Andrews, J. M. Usher, C. P. Page, Hercules Jocelyn, J. D. Black, John Hines, Hawthorne Porter, Richard Hood, Jesse P. Harriman, Wm. Francis, Oliver O. Waitt, James Kelley, Archibald P. Black, John Hood, John Cutler, Winthrop Andrews, George Kate, Eben Hunt, Joseph W. Legro, Benjamin Potter, I. K. McIntire, Job Tyler, Daniel Woodbury, Henry A. Potter, Josiah Ross, A. R. Porter (withdrew), Edward Stimpson, Jonathan Eveleth, Charles Benjamin, S. P. Fowler, O. O. Brown, A. A. Leavitt, William Needham, E. G. Little, J. R. Patten, Ira H. Clough, Abner Mead and Joseph Porter.

Of these men and others, if any, like them, N. P. Rogers at a later time wrote in his *Herald of Freedom*, "The people of New Mills are mostly working people, and therefore favorable material for the abolition movement. They embrace it readily and it has done everything for them in the way of mental improvement and moral strength. Young men bred to labor and unbred to learning have risen up by intimacy with the Anti-Slavery enterprise to an astonishing degree of mental power and eloquence." From time to time delegates were sent to the State Society, often traveling in the only way they could afford, on foot. On Thanksgiving Day, 1839, the name was again changed to the Danvers New Mills Society. It was the custom of the members to express their feelings in resolutions, a long series of which, more or less spirited, have been preserved. A sample, selected for its brevity, is this:

"Resolved, that it is inconsistent and unbecoming in us as Abolitionists to celebrate the Fourth of July as the Birthday of a free country while nearly three millions of our countrymen are held in most abject slavery."

In a hasty review it is necessary to take long strides. It was not for some ten years after Garrison began his crusade that the excitement of the times reached its extreme in Danvers, in the collision with the churches. In the meantime, the young men here more than kept pace with the forward movement of the Abolitionists. They talked, wrote, agitated. The files of abolition papers abound in letters from Endicott, J. D. Black,

the two Hoods, Harriman and others, sharp and caustic, abounding in flings at the churches, enlivened now and then by a controversy with some minister. Garrison himself came, February 16, 1841. Of the meeting he wrote in the *Liberator*:

"It was our privilege to lecture in Danvers, New Mills, on Sabbath evening last, to a densely crowded audience in the Universalist Meeting House—a house to the praise of its proprietors be it told—that has never been shut against the advocacy of the anti-slavery cause, not even in the troublous times of mobocracy in the Commonwealth."

Other speakers, especially Foster and Pillsbury, showed no such courtesy to the churches, and, indeed, about this time the trouble, which had long been brewing, culminated. The old First Church, Dr. Braman's, did not escape condemnation, but was outside the storm-line. On the Universalist and Baptist churches the storm broke. At first both of these churches opened their houses freely to the anti-slavery meetings, but the speakers so often immediately turned to the open and violent denunciation of the churches themselves, that considerations of self-respect and self-protection forced themselves upon the churches. After sundry experiences of this kind the committee having charge of the Universalist Church called a meeting of the Society for instructions, and a committee was appointed to consider and report upon whether the further use of the church should be allowed. Through the chairman, Elias Putnam, this committee reviewed the state of things and concluded: "We think this Society should pursue a liberal policy in granting the use of their house for moral and religious purposes, but to say that we should give up the house to every one who would please to occupy it, would be in effect to surrender our claim to the house and would leave the Society without the use of the house for any specific purpose," and a resolve was recommended and adopted, allowing the use of the church "on all suitable occasions for the promotion of religion and morality, and that the committee should refuse the house when they have reason to believe that it will not be used for the promotion of these objects." This majority report was accepted, and in a few instances the standing committee refused applications for the church. The sentiments of the more radical reformers were expressed in a minority report by Dr. Hunt. Upon premises of the great liberality of Universalism, and the doctrine it has always taught that truth has nothing to fear in conflict with error, he said that "any action of the Society in closing their meeting-house against the discussion of any question deemed by any one of sufficient importance to gain the attention of the public, and not incompatible with sound morality, would be a gross departure from those principles by which we as a denomination professed to be governed, anti-Republican and anti-Christian."

About the middle of June, 1841, the anti-slavery society passed a resolve "that it is the duty of the Baptist and Universalist Societies to open their meet-



ing-houses for the sacred purpose of pleading the cause of our brethren and sisters in bonds on all proper occasions free of expense to the Anti-Slavery Society as such," and talk began to be common about the duty of anti-slavery Christians to withdraw from or come out of the churches to which they belonged. Richard Hood had asked for and received letters of dismissal and recommendation from the Baptist Church to a church of the same denomination in Wenham, but a private letter prevented his admission to the Wenham Church. Mr. Hood turned upon the home church in vigorous rebuke for its unfaithfulness to the slave, and quoting the text, "Come out from among them and be ye separate. saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing and I will receive you," asked that his name be erased from the church record. Mr. Hood was only one of many who, by similar action, received and were doubtless proud of the name of "Come-outers." At a special meeting of the Anti-Slavery Society August 19, 1841, it was "Resolved that nothing should be allowed to hinder the progress of Abolitionists in their work of deliverance to the slave. If they find themselves attached to a pro-slavery political party or a pro-slavery religious church they should come out from them immediately or we cannot consider them in any other light than loving party and sect more than they love the slave." A week later, Parker Pillsbury in the chair, the church was characterized as "the stronghold of slavery." No wonder that feeling between man and man at New Mills was wrought to a very high pitch. No wonder that conservatives retaliated by calling the disturbers fanatics, "Gab-olitionists," "Long-heels," "the school-house gang" and other epithets even less expressive of endearment. So matters went through the following winter and spring, and if interest had in any respect flagged, a two days' convention of the Essex County Anti-Slavery Society, held at New Mills in the latter part of June, 1842, rekindled the fires to fiercer flames. Wendell Phillips was there, and Rogers, Foster, Pillsbury, Thomas P. Beach and others from abroad. There was no lack of material for rousing meetings. The third Sunday after the convention Rev. Mr. Mansfield, a Baptist "supply," had closed the long prayer, and was proceeding with the service when a man, who was recognized as Beach, one of the convention speakers, rose from his place in the congregation and began an anti-slavery appeal. He was temporarily choked off by a hymn, but when the music ceased he was at it again. Major Black and Captain Caldwell with righteous indignation descended upon the intruder and dragged him out of the house. Beach was accustomed to this sort of thing, was non-resistant, limp as a wet rag, and while the guardians of the churches were struggling to carry his dead weight, he quoted to them texts, "Love your enemies," "If a man smite thee, etc." Worship was broken off. The congregation, or most of them, were thoroughly mad.

The minister called for a sheriff, and certain ones jumped out of a window to run to the Universalist Church for an officer. Something was said about ducking Beach in the horse-trough near by, but the plug was pulled out and no such attempt was made. Service was resumed, but in came Beach at a side door and again interrupted: "Come down from the pulpit, and not stand there like a whited sepulchre." In his own subsequent account, "the committee-man took a vote of the meeting and they decided I should not stay in the house. Whereupon they rushed upon me like tigers and landed me in the street." After church an officer went to arrest Beach at the house of Jesse P. Harriman. Beach assumed his putty state. The officer was unable to handle his weight alone, and commanded his host to keep him. Harriman, an ardent come-outer, refused in the name of God. Dr. Hunt was commanded to assist, and in terse English gruffly declined to obey. Somehow, with the help of prominent Universalists, Beach was put into Salem jail, but back he was at a meeting in the Universalist Church at five o'clock, speaking to a large audience, at which, he wrote, "the Spirit of God was present, and several were convinced of the truth and openly confessed Christ by identifying themselves with the despised and hated Abolitionists." Dr. Hunt was fined a hundred dollars for refusing to assist the officer, and Harriman went to jail for the same offence. Later William Black renewed the complaint, which had been withdrawn, against Beach and united with the Quakers of Lynn in keeping him for some time in the jail at Newburyport, to the freely expressed indignation of his friends.

In September, 1842, Richard Hood was another guest from Danvers in Salem jail. His offence was attempting to speak on anti-slavery at a Friday evening prayer-meeting in Amesbury, against the orders of the minister to desist.

It was through such times as these that the people finally emerged to a calmer consideration of the great principles which soon organized the advocates of universal freedom into a great political party. The New Mills Society disbanded about 1844. Much bitterness and personal feeling could not fail of being engendered by the events of which only the merest outline has been given, but these men were but the skirmishers preceding the awful, inevitable conflict, in which differences were merged in loyalty, and Liberty, unthroned, was re-crowned with the blood of heroes.

Out of this agitation came the beginnings of a great political party, the principle of which was opposition to slavery. These beginnings were very small and the men who first stepped out of the old parties braved not a little unpopularity and opprobrium. The names of some forty Danvers men who voted with the "Liberty Party" in 1840, the first year of its existence, have been recalled. They are Frederick Howe, Jesse Putnam, J. A. Learoyd, Jonathan Perry,



Peter Cross, Elias Savage, Peter Wait, Samuel Wait, Samuel Harris, Jr., Warren Sheldon, Elijah Hutchinson, Otis Mudge, Kimball Hutchinson, Nathan Tapley, Allen Knight, Henry Dwinell, Joseph Danforth, Eben Hunt, Winthrop Andrews, Joseph Verry, Jr., Benjamin Hutchinson, Charles Page, Samuel Brown, Edward Waldron, Amos Brown, Abel Nichols. Of these, Dr. Hunt was perhaps the most active. From interesting reminiscences furnished the writer by James D. Black these extracts are made: "The Free Soil party was not organized until some years subsequent to the earlier struggles of the Abolitionists. We used to vote at the State elections scattering votes for Garrison for Governor, &c. At that time a majority of votes were required to elect, and our scattering votes counted against the regular tickets and made politicians mad, and many times as I approached the ballot-box the epithet, "Long-heel" would be hurled at me. After the Free-Soil party got a foothold the dominant party, the Whigs, were put to their wits ends to retain control of elections."

It was the campaign of 1848, which consolidated the anti-slavery elements. Throughout the summer and fall of that year politics waxed hot. On the 4th of July a social gathering of the Friends of Liberty in Essex County was held in a beautiful grove in the northern part of the town. The convention was attended by from fifteen to twenty thousand persons during the day. Addresses were made by Rev. W. B. Dodge, of Illinois, by clergymen from Salem, Lynn and Boston, Dr. Hunt and Dr. Nichols representing home talent. The Kimball family, of Woburn, sang a number of liberty songs, and a glee club and choir of singers from North Danvers, "by their sweet music added greatly to the enjoyment of the people." Letters were read from Hon. S. C. Phillips and the Hon. D. P. King, breathing the spirit of liberty, and Dr. Nichols' muse was inspired by the occasion.

The voters in District No. 13 who were dissatisfied with the nominations of both the Whig and the Democratic Parties, and were in sympathy with the Convention of Freemen held at Buffalo in August, 1848, at which the Free-Soil Party had its birth, immediately held weekly meetings for free and candid discussion of the candidates and principles of that convention. Early in September they formed a Free-Soil Club, and upwards of eighty out of the hundred and fifty voters of the district signed a

CONSTITUTION OF THE NORTH DANVERS FREE-SOIL CLUB,

with this Preamble: "We, the undersigned, beholding with feelings of deep regret, the disposition of the slave power of this Union, to subvert the spirit of our Government by extending American Slavery over territory now free, and the determination to control the policy and interests of our country, and seeing, as we have seen, that spirit of truckling to the slave power, on the part of the two great parties of our country—the Whigs and the Democrats—as shown by their past acts, but more recently and more clearly in their chosen leaders, we feel called upon as Patriots, as lovers of Freedom, if we would be true to our own interests and the interest of our nation to renounce both these parties; and

"WHEREAS, We behold in the Buffalo Platform, principles to which every friend of free institutions should subscribe, and candidates worthy our support, we do therefore endorse these principles, and that we may act with greater efficiency in the election of the candidates do form ourselves into an organization to be called the Free-Soil Club, and to be governed by the following constitution."

Under the articles which follow, these officers of the club were chosen: President, Elias Putnam; Vice-Presidents, Nathan Tapley, John Hood, Augustus Mudge, I. W. Andrews; Corresponding Secretary, Daniel Foster; Recording Secretary, Jeremiah Chapman; Executive Committee, William Dodge, John R. Langley, Allen Knight, Otis Mudge and William J. C. Kenney.

Who managed the caucuses forty years ago? was a question put to Mr. Black. "I can't tell," he writes, "who ran the Whig and Democratic caucuses. The Free-Soil caucuses had such young men as John A. Putnam, J. R. Langley, Alfred Fellows, Winthrop and I. W. Andrews, Ira Clough, E. F. Putnam, Richard and John Hood, E. T. Waldron and the writer." A clipping from a newspaper of the day gives some hint of the prominent Whigs:

NOTICE.

"The Whigs of Danvers are requested to meet in Union Hall on Monday Evening, August 28th, at 7½ o'clock, for the purpose of forming a Taylor Club, and to adopt such other measures as may be necessary for the thorough organization of the party for the coming election; and to choose six delegates to the Whig Convention at Worcester, Sept. 13.

"A full attendance of Whigs from all sections of the town is earnestly requested.

"WM. D. NORTHEED,	HENRY FOWLER,
"SAMUEL PRESTON,	JOSHUA SILVESTER,
"EDEN S. POOR,	A. A. EDGERTON,
"GEORGE R. CARLETON,	ELIJAH W. UPTON

"Danvers, August 26, 1848."

At this meeting A. A. Edgerton was chosen secretary; George W. French and Joel Putnam, delegates from the north parish; town committee from No. 2, H. Fowler, William Endicott; No. 3, I. P. Boardman, Joseph S. Black; No. 4, Albert Bradstreet, Charles P. Preston; No. 5, Nathaniel Pope, Edwin Mudge; No. 6, Aaron C. Proctor, Jesse Tapley; No. 13, N. Silvester, Dr. Osgood; No. 14, G. W. French, Augustus Tapley. The vote of Danvers at the election of 1848 resulted, 560 for Taylor, 503 for Van Buren, 146 for Cass.

With the formation of the Republican party Danvers promptly wheeled into line. Out of a total vote of 1382 cast in 1856, 1076 were for electors representing the candidates of that party. In 1860 John G. Whittier, elector for this district, received 564 out of 769 votes; in 1864 Mr. Whittier received 592 votes to 125 for S. Endicott Peabody, of Salem. Subsequent presidential elections have resulted as follows:

	Republican.	Democratic.
1868	720 (Grant.)	204
1872	545 (Grant.)	195
1876	701 (Hayes)	335 (Tilden.)
1880	637 (Garfield.)	295 (Hancock.)
1884	565 (Blaine.)	276 (Cleveland.)

In 1880 there were also 227 "Greenback votes;" in 1884, 254 Greenback and 34 Prohibition. The



Greenback party held its first caucus in Danvers in the fall of 1878, when a local committee and delegates to conventions were elected. The party grew with surprising rapidity, enlisting great numbers of active and earnest young men, who developed great skill in political organization, and succeeded in controlling the Legislative elections in 1879, '82 and '83. See lists of Representatives. This party lost much of its cohesive strength after the disappearance of General Butler from politics, and a number of the leaders openly returned to the Republican fold this past spring, 1887.

RAILROADS.—One day in the summer of 1847 two men might have been seen on the summit of the hill which is now crowned by the asylum, eagerly scanning the winding valleys to the south and to the north. Presently they went on, and climbing one of the high hills of Andover followed again the course of the lowland to the great mills in the new manufacturing town on the Merrimac. These two men, Elias Putnam and Joshua Silvester, always progressive, were full of the new idea of steam and iron, which had already begun to revolutionize travel. Following closely the old stage route from Boston, east, were laid the rails of the Eastern Railroad. These men on the hill-tops saw in the valleys the course of an iron highway, which uniting Lawrence to the main line at Salem, would "bring the railroad to Danvers."

And soon it came, but not while Mr. Putnam lived. Cutting through the high ridge south of Water's River, it crossed the stream almost at the little cove, where Governor Endicott is said to have landed from his shallop; passed within a gun-shot of the ancient pear-tree which the Governor planted; bridged the river down which was brought, in a little shop, the genesis of Danversport; entered Parson Skelton's grant close by the old home of the Revolutionary Colonel Hutchinson; pushed on across the old Ipswich road through Porter's Plains; beyond Beaver Dam, almost under the windows of that little room where "Old Put" was born, and so on northward. But the railroad did not come all at once. It seems to have halted on the way. This letter which appeared June 9, 1848, signed "North Danvers," is a sample of other communications:

"Why cannot the inhabitants of North Danvers be accommodated with two or three trains on the Essex Railroad per day? The rails are laid and seem to be in good condition to run upon. The engine and cars now have to remain at South Danvers doing nothing—waiting for time. Cars have been running to accommodate South Danvers for a year and a half while we have waited patiently until now. The people of this part of Danvers labored and toiled, and did what they could to have this road built. The time has been designated repeatedly by one or more of the directors when we should have this accommodation, but thus far we have not seen it."

On the 1st day of July, 1848, the road was formally declared open to North Danvers. There were on the first time-table three trains a day, each way, to and from Salem. On the Fourth of July three thousand

persons passed over the road. Before the end of the summer trains were running to Andover. On the 4th of September the whole line was opened and a train of eight cars filled with stockholders and guests took a trial-trip to Lawrence. It has been recorded that during the passage up a canvass was taken for presidential preferences. While General Taylor was the choice of 401, Van Buren 62, and Cass 41, the inference is somewhat amusing from the fact that on the return-trip, after a first-rate dinner, the number of Taylor's adherents was reduced by 51, while those of his rivals were increased.

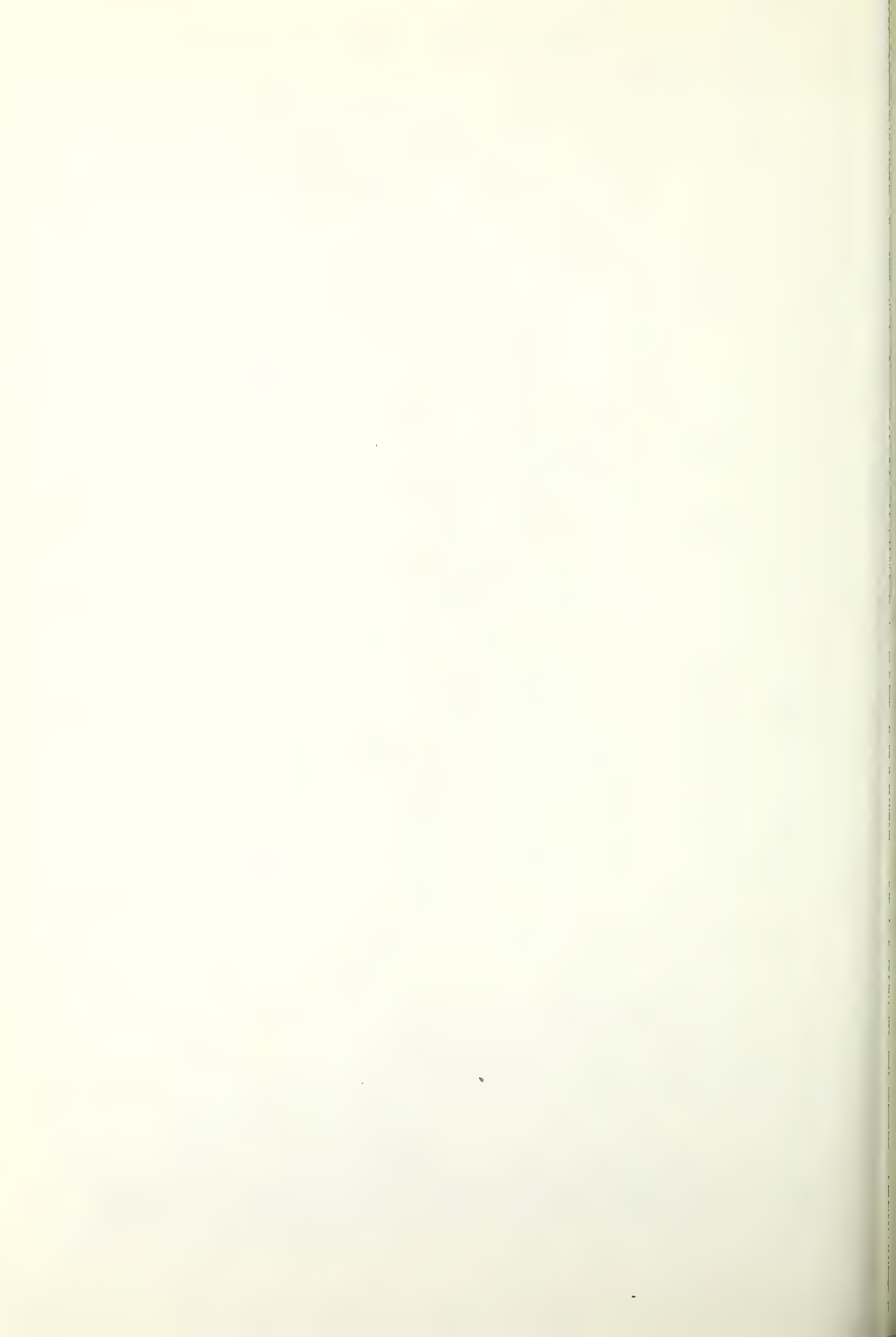
The first station-agent at the Plains was Samuel W. Spaulding. He came here, a young man, from Merrimac, N. H., and worked for John Grout, coaching between Danvers and Salem. Spaulding bought out Grout, and was running the line himself when appointed on the railroad. Not being willing to relinquish the coaching business, he soon gave up the other. About twenty years ago Parker Webber took a half interest in the coach-line, and a few years later Spaulding sold out his interest to Webber, who carried on the business until the latest competitor for public travel—the horse-car—made this business unprofitable. In November, 1878, Benjamin Henderson resigned the position of station-agent, which he had then held twenty-eight years and more. He is still living, approaching his ninetieth year; he was chorister of the First Church, and a famous singer in days gone by.

Danvers has long been provided with double railroad facilities to Boston. Both lines are, by the recent consolidation of the Eastern with the Boston and Maine, under the control of the latter company, and the "know-nothing" has become an important junction. Instead of the "Eastern" and the "Maine," it is now "the eastern division" and "the western division." The latter was originally built and incorporated in several pieces: Haverhill to Georgetown, Newburyport to Georgetown, Georgetown to Danvers, Danvers to Wakefield, and the main line of the present western division of the Boston and Maine. Travel was opened through Danvers in 1854, and by successive changes and consolidations the entire branch became the property of the Boston and Maine.

In 1841 the subject of town clocks was brought before the town. Petitions for clocks, one at South Parish, and one on the Baptist Church at New Mills, met with indefinite postponement.

About ten years later a subscription paper, which had its origin in the grocery-store of Gould and Emerson, dated December 24, 1852, was circulated to raise money "for the purpose of defraying the expense of placing a clock upon the meeting-house (Rev. Mr. Fletcher's), at the plains." These items of expense are summarized on the original paper:

Paid Perkins & Cressey.....	\$ 83.73
Paid Putnam & Kenney's bill, freight.....	3.37



November 19th, paid Howard & Davis, cash.....	1.50
Eben Putnam's bill.....	2.00
Paid balance to Howard & Davis.....	150.00
	\$144.10

The town-clock thus established was soon transferred to the Maple Street Society, and has ever since been maintained by the society. Once only, 1861, a petition was introduced for the town to keep the clock in repair, but the subject was indefinitely postponed.

The "gold-fever" of '48-49 struck Essex County and did not leave Danvers untouched. The local papers devoted much space to the subject, and many heads were filled with dreams of sudden wealth. "At present," so run a sample letter, credited to the Alcalde of Monterey and copied into the *Danvers Courier*, "the people are running over the country and picking gold out of the earth here and there, just as a thousand hogs, let loose in the forrest, root up ground-nuts." An item of January 13, 1849, speaks of several young men of this town who will leave for San Francisco in a day or two. 'About the same time twenty-one members of the Naumkeag Mining and Trading Company embarked in the ship "Capitol," for San Francisco, among them two Danvers men, George K. Radcliffe and Franklin Ward. Early in March following, some thirty men from Salem and vicinity, comprising the "Essex Mining and Trading Company," left Boston for Corpus Christi on the schooner "John W. Herbert." Of this number was Mr. Henry Fowler, whose reminiscences are of experiences far at variance from those depicted by that alluring old Alcalde.

Those who paid the largest taxes forty years ago in North Danvers may be found in the following list, 1848:

TAX OF OVER \$100:		TAX OF OVER \$50:	
Wm. A. Lander.....	\$ 322.38	Nathaniel Boardman.....	\$ 59.74
Nancy Oaks.....	100.80	Ebenezer G. Berry.....	69.82
Moses Putnam.....	382.30	Peter Cross.....	53.20
Samuel Putnam.....	122.48	Daniel Goodhue.....	50.78
Est. Elias Putnam.....	113.68	Charles Lawrence.....	71.50
John Page.....	112.38	James A. Putnam.....	75.98
Benj. Porter.....	176.22	Asa Tapley.....	54.14
Gilbert Tapley.....	194.14	Jonas Warren.....	88.30
Gilbert Tapley, in trust.....	84.00	Stephen Wilkins.....	57.50
Matthew Hooper.....	119.06	John Bates.....	58.02

THE CENTENNIAL.—With the year 1852 a round century had passed since the farmers of Salem Village and the settlers of the Middle Precinct separated from Salem and began their corporate existence as the district of Danvers. Early in the previous fall those spirits who never allow such anniversaries to pass unforbidden were on the alert. At a town-meeting held in Granite Hall, September 22, 1851, a committee of nineteen,—five at large and one from each school district,—were chosen with full authority, to make such arrangements and adopt such measures as in their judgment should seem most appropriate to

the occasion. This centennial committee consisted of the following persons:

AT LARGE.	
Fitch Poole.	John W. Proctor.
Andrew Nichols.	Rev. Milton P. Braman.
Ebenezer Hunt.	

FROM THE SCHOOL DISTRICTS.	
1. Robert S. Daniels.	8. Samuel Brown, Jr.
2. Samuel P. Fowler.	9. Joseph Brown.
3. Aaron Putnam.	10. Leonard Cross.
4. Albert G. Bradstreet.	11. Francis Baker.
5. Nathaniel Pope.	12. Miles Osborne.
6. Moses Preston.	13. John Page.
7. Francis Phelps.	14. Gilbert Tapley.

The day chosen for the celebration was Wednesday, June 16th. The scene of the festivities was the Middle Precinct, South Parish, through whose streets a procession a mile and a half long moved amid a very large and enthusiastic throng and beneath a very warm sun. The committee had half a thousand dollars at their disposal, and this, together with private enterprise in the way of decorations, gave the town a gala-like appearance. There are plenty of men still in their prime who were in that procession; but it was thirty-five years ago; a new generation has sprung up since then and the fathers will pardon a smile as their children read of the pride and pomp of that day. It was the day of days for the engine companies. The choicest young manhood of Danvers tugged at the ropes of their polished machines. Coming at the very head of the line, after the escorting military was General Scott, No. 2, of Tapleyville—ah, Fame, where is the old tub now?—drawn by Captain Calvin Upton's forty-eight men, dressed in fire hats, plaided sacks and black pants. Next the Torrent, and next General Putnam No. 4, of Danvers Plains, Captain Albert G. Allen, with forty men, likewise in plaided frocks and black pants, and carrying a banner on which was emblazoned "General Putnam—I never surrender." This engine also appeared well, says the record. Of course it did; it appeared well on that little occasion already referred to, when Captain Kenney took it over to pump out Wenham pond, and that occasion to this was but a candle to a comet.

After the "Eagle" came the "Ocean," No. 6, of Danversport, Captain Welch, whose thirty-five men, clad in white shirts, black pants and Kossuth hats, were assisted by a pair of roan horses. Seven companies in all there were, nearly four hundred strong.

Then came the civic division headed by Chief Marshall, Dr. S. A. Lord and his assistants. In a long line of open barouches the people saw a live Governor and many distinguished guests. Then came old School Master Epps and other representatives of his time. A "Blind Hole Shoe Shop of 1789," and an ancient up-in-the-lane pottery were both in active operation.

Next followed the schools. Sylvanus Dodge was chief of this division, aided by Jeremiah Chapman,



Edward W. Jacobs, Augustus Varney, Alden Dempsey, James P. Hutchinson, Dr. J. W. Snow, George Tapley, Albert J. Silvester, Loring Dempsey, Abner Mead and Gilbert A. Tapley. Fifteen hundred pupils presented a most beautiful feature of the occasion, but no adequate description—the record again—can be given of the ingenious and admirable designs they displayed. The Peabody High School came first, then the Holten High School, followed by the schools from the different districts.

The last division of the procession was a cavalcade of three hundred horsemen. After great exertions on the part of the chief-marshal and his assistants the streets were so far cleared of the multitude of people and vehicles that the procession was put in motion. Moving down Main Street it countermarched at the Salem line, near the Great Tree," but, alas, the streets then spanned with arches and gay with banners and bunting are not now Danvers streets. At noon the line reached the Square again. The schools moved up Lowell Street to a large tent provided for them, and the rest of the procession entered the Old South, in which the following exercises had been appointed.

1. VOLUNTARY.....By the organ.
2. INVOCATION.....By Rev. James W. Putnam.
3. ANTHEM.
4. READING THE SCRIPTURES.....By Rev. James Fletcher
5. PRAYER.....By Rev. Israel P. Putnam, of Middleborough.
6. ORIGINAL HYMN.....By Fitch Poole.
7. ADDRESS.....By John W. Proctor.
8. MUSIC.....By the band.
9. POEM.....By Andrew Nichols.
10. PSALM, selected from a collection in use one hundred years ago, "Faithfully translated into *English Metre*; for the Use, Edification and Comfort of the Saints in Publick and Private, especially in *New England*."
- PSALM LXVII.
- To the Musician, Neginoth. A Psalm of Song.*
11. PRAYER.....By the Rev. F. A. Willard.
12. OLD HUNDRED.....Sung by the whole congregation.
13. BENEDICTION.

On account of the heat Mr. Proctor's address was abridged, and Dr. Nichols' poem was entirely omitted. At a full town-meeting held shortly after, however, the Doctor was cordially invited to read his poem on an occasion to be specially appointed, and such an arrangement was carried out.

Dinner was served after the exercises at the church in a large canvas pavilion erected near Buxton's hill on the Crowninshield estate. After the feast the Chief Marshal introduced as President of the Day, Rev. Milton P. Braman, and after the Doctor's own remarks there was enough talking, both from men prominent in local affairs and from others of wider renown, to last perhaps another hundred years. The Commonwealth was represented by its Governor, George S. Boutwell, and its Secretary, Amasa Walker. Salem, the mother-town, sent her mayor, Charles W. Upham, afterwards author of "Salem Witchcraft;" Daniel A. White, Judge of Probate for Essex County;

William D. Northend, Esq., who begun his practice in South Danvers; and another young lawyer who to-day sits in the Cabinet as Secretary of War, William C. Endicott. The historian of New England, John G. Palfrey; the annalist of Salem, Rev. J. B. Felt, at this time of Boston; Rev. Messrs. Thayer, of Beverly; Stone, of Providence; Sewall, of Medfield; and Putnam, of Middleboro'; Allen Putnam, of Roxbury; Lilley Eaton, of South Reading; John Webster, of Newmarket, N. H.; and George G. Smith, of Boston, were nearly all present and delivered the contributions which are credited to them. Alfred A. Abbott, Esq., P. R. Southwick, R. S. Daniels, S. P. Fowler, J. W. Proctor, Rev. F. P. Appleton and Dr. Hunt were called upon as representative citizens of the town. Letters were received from the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, Rufus Choate, Robert Rantoul, Jr., Daniel Webster, Edward Everett, Jared Sparks and others.

In the meantime the school children were enjoying themselves at a feast of their own, prepared by a committee on which William L. Weston and Henry Fowler represented the northern districts. William R. Putnam, of the school committee, presided, and to his own remarks and those of the toastmaster, Augustus Mudge, were added addresses from Charles Northend, then recently elected superintendent of schools, and John D. Philbrick, then of the Quincy School of Boston.

The printed volume of something over two hundred pages, containing a full record of the Centennial Celebration, forms an important contribution to the material for local history.

These books are seen here and there in family book-cases, but they are not popular reading. There remain, however, as constant and conspicuous reminders of the day thus celebrated, certain memorials of another sort.

The biography of George Peabody properly belongs to that part of old Danvers which now for nearly twenty years has borne his honored name, and there it will undoubtedly be found. Let a few meagre facts and dates appear here.

He was born February 18, 1795, in a house still standing near the junction of Washington and Foster Streets, on the old Lynn Road, in Peabody. His earliest business experience was as a store-boy for the man whose friendship he cherished to the last, Capt. Sylvester Proctor. At sixteen he became a clerk for his oldest brother, David, in a dry-goods store at Newburyport. Before he attained his majority he was taken into partnership by Elisha Riggs, a wealthy New York dry-goods merchant. In 1815 Riggs and Peabody moved their business to Baltimore and subsequently established branch houses in Philadelphia and New York. In 1827 he made his first voyage to Europe in furtherance of his business. During the next ten years he often repeated the trip, and at



times the United States Government, taking advantage of his business sagacity, entrusted him with important financial negotiations. He went to England for a permanent residence in February, 1837, at the age of forty-five. In 1843 he retired from the American house of Peabody, Riggs & Co., and thenceforth was George Peabody, Banker and Merchant, of London.

It was for fifteen years then, when Danvers celebrated her Centennial, that her illustrious son had been a stranger to his native land, and nearly twice that time since the sixteen-year-old boy went away from the place of his birth to seek and find his fortune.

An invitation had been sent to him. When John W. Proctor arose to respond to the toast in his honor, it was somehow generally expected that something of especial interest was about to be made known. Mr. Proctor held up to the view of all a sealed envelope, and, in explanation thereof, read a letter from Mr. Peabody, regretting his inability to be present, concluding in these words,—

"I enclose a sentiment, which I ask may remain sealed till this letter is read on the day of celebration, when it is to be opened according to the direction on the envelope."

This direction was as follows,—

["The Seal of this envelope is not to be broken till the toasts are being proposed by the Chairman at the dinner, 10th June, at Danvers, in commemoration of the one hundredth year since its severance from Salem. It contains a sentiment for the occasion from George Peabody, of London."]

The seal was broken and the sentiment disclosed, which has long since become as household words,—
"Education, a debt due from present to future generations." It was followed by the announcement of a gift of twenty thousand dollars for the purpose of erecting and maintaining a public library and lyceum.

Among the conditions annexed to the gift was one that the town should accept the gift and choose a committee of not less than twelve to carry out its purposes. Both of these things were done at a town-meeting, June 28, 1852, the action of the town being embodied in a series of resolutions submitted by Dr. Andrew Nichols. The committee of twelve were chosen on such tenure that two vacancies were to be filled by election each year. The committee thus first chosen and their terms of office decided by lot were as follows,—Eben King, Joseph S. Black, one year, to 1853; William L. Weston, Aaron F. Clark, two years, to 1854; Francis Baker, Joseph Poor, three years, to 1855; Elijah W. Upton, Miles Osborne, four years, to 1856; Joseph Osgood, Eben Sutton, five years, to 1857; Robert S. Daniels, Samuel P. Fowler, six years, to 1858. Subsequent elections for terms of six years were as follows,—In 1853, Henry Poor, Joel Putnam; 1854, Philemon Putnam, John B. Peabody; 1855, Francis Dane, Israel W. Andrews; 1856, Franklin Osborne, Isaac Hardy, Jr.

Dr. Nichols' resolves provided also that the committee or trustees should themselves annually appoint a lyceum and library committee from the town at large. The trustees made this latter committee equal to their own number. The first appointees were Dr. Andrew Nichols, who died during his first year of service, Fitch Poole, George A. Osborne, Benjamin C. Perkins, Ebenezer Hunt, John B. Peabody, W. N. Lord, Eben S. Poor, Wm. L. Weston, A. A. Abbott, Philemon Putnam, Eugene B. Hinkley, Wm. F. Poole. The latter is now widely known as the author of "Poole's Index of Periodical Literature."

The corner-stone of the new building was laid August 20, 1853, and after its completion was dedicated September 29, 1854—a substantial brick edifice, eighty-two feet by fifty, bearing on its front the words PEABODY INSTITUTE, situate on the main street from the South Meeting-house to Salem, on the opposite side and a little northwest of the Lexington monument.

Division of the Town.—It is the intention to speak particularly of the Peabody Institute, not of Peabody but of Danvers. It is necessary, therefore, here, as the sequence of events will show, to speak of no less an important matter than the dismemberment of the old town, which had celebrated its hundredth anniversary, and the separation of the southern half of its territory into a new town, leaving to the upper half alone the name of the old town. The separation was no sudden movement. From the very first, the communities north and south of Waters River and the long chain of hills, separated, as they were, by natural barriers, found themselves possessed of different interests and associations. There was no common centre. Town-meetings were held, as has been seen, one year at a meeting-house in the North Parish, the next at the South Parish, and each parish made hay for itself when the time came. A recent letter from a former resident contains something of this sort: "No, Danvers was rich in oratorical talents, while So. Danvers was exceedingly deficient in that material. They had money and votes, but no orators, and when the town-meetings were held at So. Danvers, there all the appropriations in that part of the town could easily pass the ordeal; and when the town-meeting was held at No. Danvers, that was the golden opportunity for appropriations for that part of the town." Before division was finally accomplished the anomaly was presented of two town-houses in one town. The history of the agitation which brought this about goes back to 1772, when Ebenezer Goodale and others prayed that the inhabitants might assemble and make known their minds as to whether meetings for the future should be held alternately in the Village and Middle parishes according to the agreement made between the parishes before incorporation, and "also to see if it be their minds to Erect a House near the Centre of the Town, to hold their Town-Meetings and other Publick Meetings in, &c." "The question was put to



see whether the inhabitants would act anything respecting the holding the Town-Meetings for the future, and, a Poll being demanded, it was determined that way, Ninety-four for acting and Ninety-three against. Voted, not to act upon the paragraph in the warrant respecting the erecting of a House near the Centre of the Town."

At the annual meeting of 1828 a committee was chosen to consider the building of "one or more Town Houses," but whatever their report may have been, it was gently but effectively disposed of by a motion that "the subject subside for the Present."

The matter next came up in 1834. Another large and representative committee was appointed, who were instructed to make estimates for "one or more, designating the place of location of the same." But their report met no better fate than the one of 1828. It was "deferred,"—just twenty years.

In the warrant for the annual town-meeting of 1854 were two articles,—one for the erection of a town-house "near the centre of the population and business of Danvers South Parish," another for the erection of "two school-houses for the accommodation of the Peabody and Holten High Schools."

After much discussion and several special meetings, these two propositions were combined. The High School buildings were a necessity. It was voted "to construct them so as to make each building suitable to convene the town-meetings," and twenty-two thousand dollars was appropriated in all. The report of the building committee was accepted in 1856, and ordered "placed on the file." From this oblivion a part is here brought back to the light of day. It is interesting to know what hands helped to build our temple of democracy and how much it cost:

Net cost of land.....	\$1350 00
Benjamin Moor's bill, contract and extras	7800 00
Architect's bill.....	85 00
John R. Allen's bill for well.....	26 25
Perkins & Cressy, building fence, etc.....	115 63
Clark & Bletcher, stone gate-posts.....	18 50
Hezekiah Dwinell, gate.....	28 00
Smith & Wallis, chestnut rails for fence.....	42 09
William H. Waleott, teaming	2 50
Samuel Putnam, freight.....	12 22
Benjamin Turner, building fence.....	46 84
E. T. Waldron, turning-posts and furnishing same.....	87 00
Calvin Putnam, lumber.....	43 70
Eben Putnam, painting.....	61 40
Eliot & Kimball, masons.....	8 85
Stephen Granville, furniture, curtains, etc.....	174 49
Joseph W. Ropes, furnace.....	380 00
Joseph L. Ross, furniture.....	445 00
William O. Haskell, settees.....	125 47
Total	\$11,148 05
Total cost, South Danvers.....	\$11,803 48

The building committee were Fitch Poole, Joseph Poor, Nathan Tapley, Calvin Putnam, E. T. Waldron, Josiah Mudge. In the summer of 1883 the Danvers town-house was enlarged to its present proportions.

Thus much of the town-house. To take up the broken thread of the division of the town: in Feb-

ruary 16, 1855, a warrant was issued under the hands of Lewis Allen, Leonard Poole and Nathan H. Poor—the names of Benjamin F. Hutchinson and Joel Putnam, North Parish members of the board of selectmen, did not appear—warning the voters to meet at Union Hall, in the South Parish, "to see what action the Town will take on the order of Notice from the Legislature on the petition of Benjamin Goodridge and others, relative to a division of the Town."

Lewis Allen was chosen moderator. Alfred A. Abbott presented the following resolution:

"Resolved, That the time has arrived when the true interests of all portions of the Town of Danvers, and the convenience and well-being of its citizens imperatively demand a division of its extended territory and numerous population into two separate and independent municipalities—that an equitable and convenient division would be made by a dividing-line drawn from the mouth of Water's River on the East, thence westerly through the centre of said River, to Pine Street, and thence straight, in a northwesterly course, to the bend in Ipswich River, the point of intersection of the stream running from Phelps's Mill; all remaining on one side of said line to constitute a town by itself; and all remaining on the other side of said line to constitute another and separate town; and that our Representatives in the Legislature be hereby requested, and a committee of Ten to be appointed by this meeting be and they are hereby instructed to use all fair and honourable means in aid of the prayer of the petition of Benjamin Goodridge and others, and to secure by an Act of the Legislature, the division of the Town substantially in accordance with the plan above indicated."

An adverse amendment offered by Samuel Preston was voted upon four different times, and each time the amendment was declared lost.

Messrs. Hardy and Andrews polled the house, but could not agree in their count.

The South people had the advantage of position. As the day wore away the northern farmers had to think of the cows and the chores. To take off the keen edge of the contest, a motion was interpolated that a committee of ten—five from each section—be chosen "to take into consideration the subject as to see what names shall be applied should a division take place, and report at the next annual meeting." It would take a long time to choose ten men; it was getting really dark; the cows would be suffering, and then the committee just elected were to report at the next annual meeting. So some went—enough to decide the contest against the non-divisionists, for the South people had no idea of deferring the matter. They had come to stay. The main question was put, and this time the work of the tellers was not difficult. At five minutes past seven o'clock the moderator declared the result: one hundred and forty-one opposed to the resolution and two hundred and thirty-five in favor.

By vote of the meeting the chairman nominated as the committee called for by the resolution: Dr. George Osborne, R. S. Daniels, Winthrop Andrews, Henry Poor, Moses Black, Jr., Eben Sutton, Philemon Putnam, Joseph S. Needham, Amos Merrill and Francis Dane.

Within a very short time, March 8, 1855, a special meeting was held in the new town-hall in North Parish, to vote by ballot on the question: "Is it ex-



pedient to have the Town divided agreeably to the petition of Benjamin Goodridge and others?"

Though the polls were kept open from nine o'clock to five, the advocates of division, relying on the vote already secured, wisely let the day go by default, and the count showed but four yeas to four hundred and thirty-six nays. The clerk was instructed to send to the Legislature on the next day a copy of the record of this meeting, and Kendall Osborne, Samuel Preston, Andrew Torr, Daniel Richards, Joseph Poor and Henry Fowler were appointed to remonstrate against division. James D. Black was in the Senate, and Israel W. Andrews was in the house. The latter was the champion of the opposition to division, and by a great effort he succeeded in obtaining an adverse vote in one of the earlier stages of the bill; but on May 18, 1855, the Legislature finally passed "An Act to Incorporate the Town of South Danvers." This act established a division line, but provided that if a majority of the voters of Danvers should by vote express within thirty days their desire to have the line changed, that the Governor should appoint three commissioners to consider, and finally determine the same. The present line was in this manner established by commissioners.

An examination of this line as shown on any good map shows that instead of following the channel of Water's River to the Salem line, it leaves the river and turns southerly, so as to include about fifty acres south of the bridge. Upon this territory is a part of Hanson's Grain-Mill, the large brick-house built by Matthew Hooper, a three-story brick tenement house now owned by John Bates, the old witchcraft house of the Jacobs' family, and several other dwellings. Matthew Hooper and some, if not all, of his neighbors petitioned the Legislature to be set off from Danvers to South Danvers, but Danvers was unwilling to let them go, and nothing came of their petition.

A special meeting of that part of the inhabitants of the territory which still retained the name of Danvers, was called on 28th of May, to take such steps as the new phase of their municipal career demanded. Certain vacancies in offices formerly held by citizens of the new town were filled. In the place of Francis Baker, William L. Weston was chosen treasurer, a position to which he was annually re-elected for eighteen years. Samuel Preston and Zephaniah Pope were elected overseers of the poor in the places of Wingate Merrill and Andrew Torr. Daniel P. Pope was added to the health committee; Aaron Putnam was chosen auditor. There were already three Danvers men on the old board of selectmen, and seven out of twelve on the school committee, and in each case it was voted "to dispense with choosing any more." It was here voted that the chairmen of the several boards and the clerk procure all the books and records remaining in South Danvers, and that the Danvers members of the town-hall building committee provide a suitable place for them.

Another very important subject was considered at this first meeting of Danvers after division. It is sufficiently explained in the vote passed, namely, "that a committee of — persons be chosen to confer with a committee of the town of South Danvers for the purpose of adjusting the division of town paupers, town property, town debts, State and county taxes, the government of the Peabody Institute, the expenses of the bridges now existing in the town of Danvers, and any other matters arising from the division of the town, and if the said committee shall disagree they are directed to apply to the Court of Common Pleas for the County of Essex for the appointment of three disinterested persons to hear the parties and award thereon." At an adjournment a week later the blank in the vote was filled by the appointment of one from each of the old school districts remaining in Danvers, as follows: No. 13, William Dodge, Jr.; No. 2, Henry Fowler; No. 3, Aaron Putnam; No. 4, Francis Dodge; No. 5, Nathaniel Pope; No. 6, Nathan Tapley; No. 14, George Tapley.

South Danvers was represented by George Osborne, Henry Poor, Robert S. Daniels, Francis Baker, Eben King and Abel Preston.

The two committees, acting in conference, first met on June 25, 1855, and proceeded then, and at successive adjournments, to a very systematic appraisal and adjustment of accounts between the two towns. The report, which was accepted in all particulars save that part which referred to the government of the Peabody Institute, on March 2, 1857, and which was finally accepted as a whole on February 1, 1858, covers nearly twenty large-sized pages of record, and, though very interesting reading, is too long to insert here. A few general items may be culled from the report, however. The footing of the appraisal of the property of the old town, on May 18, 1855, the day of division, exclusive of the two town houses, the Surplus Revenue and the Massachusetts School Fund, was \$39,184.50.

The assessors' valuation, 1854, of property north of the division line was \$1,444,900; south of the line, \$2,732,600. Danvers was, therefore, entitled to 34 $\frac{1}{2}$ % per cent. of the corporate property, or the value of \$13,553.14, and South Danvers to 65 $\frac{1}{2}$ % per cent., \$25,691.36.

To the town of Danvers was assigned property scheduled as follows:

Engine General Scott, fixtures and hose.....	\$814 00
Engine General Putnam, fixtures and hose.....	586 50
Engine Ocean, fixtures and hose.....	657 00
Sail car at Danversport.....	15 00
Engine House No. 2.....	275 00
Engine House No. 4.....	200 00
Engine House No. 6.....	350 00
Hearse House at Cemetery.....	45 00
Hearse House at Braman's.....	120 00
Two new hearses, \$140; one old hearse, \$20.....	460 00
Liquors and fixtures at J. W. Snows.....	160 50
Iron safe, 1400 lbs. at 8c.....	112 00
Case for weights and measures.....	5 00
Bookcase, 7, Pound at Whipple's Brook, 33.....	40 00
Five ballot boxes, 3, stereotype maps of Danvers, 1.....	4 00



Reservoir near E. Putnam's	89 25
Reservoir near C. Putnam's	164 00
Reservoir near Village Bank	89 25
Reservoir near Baptist Church (interest in)	1 00
Hooks-and-ladders near Baptist Church	25 00
Hooks-and-ladders near Fox Hill	5 00
Hooks-and-ladders near Berry's Stable	15 00
Hooks-and-ladders near P. Tapley's house	25 00
Total	\$4207 50

The residue of town property, including the town farm and almshouse (appraised at \$22,050, and personal property thereon, \$5,519), the whole valued at \$34,887, was assigned to South Danvers.

The Surplus Revenue Fund (\$10,000), by the terms of the act was to be apportioned according to the number of children between five and fifteen years of age, on May 1, 1855, on either side of the line. The number of children was ascertained to be as follows:

District.	Danvers.	S. Danvers.	District.	Danvers	S. Danvers.
1	.....	359	10	.....	47
2	239	.....	11	.....	359
3	53	.....	12	.....	170
4	71	.....	13	228	.....
5	126	.....	14	181	.....
6	32	44			
7	.....	51	Totals	930	1170
8	.....	125			
9	.....	22	Grand Total	2107	

To Danvers was, therefore, assigned \$4,413.85; to South Danvers, \$5,586.15. The amount of the Massachusetts School Fund, \$862.72, was, on the same basis, apportioned, \$383.45 to Danvers, and \$485.27 to South Danvers.

The cost of the two new town houses was found, as has been already noticed, to be \$22,951.53. The north building cost \$11,148.05. On the basis of valuation, Danvers was entitled only to the $34\frac{587}{1000}$ per cent. of the value of both buildings, namely, \$7,938.24; therefore, Danvers was indebted to South Danvers in this matter, \$3,209.81.

The total tax for 1855 was found to be \$44,698, of which \$15,460.15 was due Danvers, and \$29,237.85 South Danvers; and the balance of accounts showed that Danvers owed South Danvers, \$9,016.98.

The total indebtedness of the old town, on May 18, 1855, was \$95,167.38, of which \$20,000 was held by the Salem Savings Bank, about \$19,000 by the Warren Bank, \$10,000 by the Trustees of the Surplus Revenue Fund, and \$3,500 by the Danvers Savings Bank; and the total assets, \$4,829.18—leaving the balance of indebtedness, \$60,338.20. Of this balance, Danvers was holden to pay, according to the fixed ratio, \$20,869.78; South Danvers, \$39,468.42. And it was decided that South Danvers pay to Danvers this latter amount in full discharge of its proportion of indebtedness, with interest from May 15, 1855, and that Danvers, retaining all the assets, continue liable for the whole amount of indebtedness.

One point the joint committee could not agree upon. The Danvers men claimed that South Danvers was liable to pay its proportion of two roads, Town's

road and Endicott Street; the South Danvers men refused to allow the claim, and the matter was passed unsettled.

After a careful examination of all the bridges in the old town, the committee awarded eight hundred and seventy-five dollars to be paid by South Danvers to Danvers as an indemnity to the latter for the greater burden thenceforth to be borne by reason of their maintenance.

The final balance of all accounts passed upon showed that South Danvers was indebted to Danvers in the sum of \$33,931.86.

It was found that of the thirty-seven paupers at the almshouse, seven had gained or derived a settlement within the limits of Danvers, and the remainder within the new town and mutual releases were recommended from each town to the other from liability for support of those paupers not found to belong to the respective towns.

The relative interests of the two towns in the government of the Peabody Institute were adjusted so that South Danvers should have nine of the twelve trustees, a lion's share, and inasmuch as four of the board were already residents of Danvers, it was provided that the first vacancy occurring among these four should be filled from South Danvers.

Finally, as a matter of courtesy, it was agreed that Danvers should pay its proportional expense of the cost (two hundred dollars), of copying the records for South Danvers, and that the latter town should pay its proportion of J. C. Stickney's bill of one hundred and fifty dollars, for services in behalf of the North people before the Legislature.

And so, now for more than thirty years, there have been two towns where there was but one. Those who went out are richer and more populous than those who are left; but to the latter, within narrowed limits, belong the name and fame of the old town. The question of division gave rise to much bitter feeling, but the fact of division was sooner or later one of necessity. It is only strange that it did not come earlier. Traces of this feeling, it must be acknowledged, might still reward patient research, but the younger generation know it not. While there is little mutually attractive between the towns, but each looks to Salem as a centre, there is nothing repellant between them, and with increased traveling facilities the people are learning to know each other better to the end of a more perfect cordiality and unity.

And, now, to return to the broken thread of the story of George Peabody's benefactions. In the latter part of the summer of 1856 it was known that the man whose name had become so widely honored intended presently to leave London for a visit to this country. On the petition of the trustees of the institute the selectmen of South Danvers called a town-meeting, August 21, 1856, at which resolutions of



welcome were passed, and a committee of twenty, together with the selectmen, were appointed to meet Mr. Peabody on his arrival at New York "to invite him to the home of his youth, and the seat of his noble benefactions; and, if he shall accept their invitation, to adopt such measures for his reception and entertainment as, in their judgment, will best express the love and honor which we bear him." An attested copy of the action of South Danvers was sent to Danvers, with an invitation to unite in the proposed reception.

On September 10th a Danvers town-meeting passed a series of resolutions, thanking "our sister town of South Danvers for the invitation to co-operate with them in the reception and entertainment of Mr. Peabody," heartily concurring in the sentiments of the resolutions adopted by them, and a committee of twenty-one were chosen to act with the South Danvers committee. The gentlemen chosen were,—

Joshua Silvester, chairman.

Samuel Preston.	Philemon Putnam.
Ebenezer Hunt.	Levi Merrill.
Samuel P. Fowler.	Charles Page.
William L. Weston.	Reuben Wilkins.
Matthew Hooper.	William Endicott.
Israel H. Putnam.	William Green.
Augustus Mudge.	Charles P. Preston.
James D. Black.	Benjamin F. Hutchinson.
John A. Leary.	George A. Tapley.
Nathan Tapley.	Arthur A. Putnam, secretary.

The committees of the two towns henceforth acted as a joint committee, and the general expenses of the celebration were borne by the inhabitants of both towns in due proportion, as if no division had taken place. Delegations from the joint committee were sent to New York to welcome Mr. Peabody on his arrival, and, despite numerous invitations to accept of metropolitan honors, he declined to accept any public demonstration except from the hands of his own townsmen. And so on the 9th of October, 1856, the old town gave her son a royal welcome. Because of Mr. Peabody's modest refusal to be honored elsewhere, those who wished to show him their respect were obliged to come to him. "From being simply a village festival, it became almost national in its character."

The day of the reception opened auspiciously—one of the fine Indian summer days. Mr. Peabody had come from Georgetown, driving over the road in a private carriage with his two sisters and a nephew. A salute of a hundred guns announced his arrival at the Maple Street Church, Danvers Plains. Here he was met by the committee, and was seated in an elegant barouche, drawn by six horses, accompanied by Robert S. Daniels, Joshua Silvester and Rev. Milton P. Braman.

"The scene here was very beautiful. The spire of the church and private buildings were gayly dressed with flags and streamers, and in full view was an elegant three-fold arch spanning the wide street, the tent arch rising high above the others, and being

adorned with evergreens, wreaths, medallions, flowers and flags." This arch deserves more than passing notice. One cannot easily imagine its imposing and graceful proportions. It was designed and executed by Mr. Silvester, and coming first in the long series of decorations with which the streets of both towns were adorned, Mr. Peabody personally expressed his surprise and grateful admiration to its designer at his side.

Two cavalcades were drawn up just below the arch; one wholly of ladies, added greatly to the attractiveness of the escort. Each lady threw into Mr. Peabody's carriage, as he passed, a bouquet of flowers. The procession moved on through High Street to Danversport, and so on to South Danvers, "through streets lined with decorated houses and under waving flags and triumphal arches, attended by the booming of cannon and strains of martial music. The shouts and salutations of the people were gracefully acknowledged by Mr. Peabody as he bowed to the throng on either side." The cavalcades and carriages forming as escort about half a mile long, proceeded thus through and out of Danvers and into South Danvers.

At Wilson's Corner Mr. Peabody and his escort found drawn up to receive them the main body of a large and notable procession.

It is unnecessary to enter into the details of the day. The pageant of joy was equalled only by the pageant of sorrow, when through the same streets the great benefactor was years later borne to his grave. On the day following the reception Mr. Peabody went back in company with his sisters to Georgetown. A large crowd was gathered in Danvers Square, intent on having a last hand-shaking. Tired, as he must have been, it was evidently his intention to proceed with only a passing greeting, but he found his way blocked by a barrier he could not resist. A chain of little children stretched, hand in hand, clear across the wide street. He stopped, and the informal reception held from the open carriage, and his expression of pleasure at the enthusiastic welcome accorded him, made a pleasing close of the great reception.

BRANCH LIBRARY AND PEABODY INSTITUTE.—Reference has been made to the fact that Joshua Silvester had partaken of Mr. Peabody's hospitalities in London. Mr. Silvester went to England in the latter part of 1846, the year after the disastrous fire which swept away his business on Danvers Plains. He took with him his brother-in-law, J. M. C. Noyes, and Jacob Cross, Samuel Knights, Chas. Wait, and one Story, of Essex, and introduced the business of making pegged shoes in Manchester. Mr. Silvester came back within a year, the others soon following, except Noyes, who remained and carried on the business until his death, about ten years ago. Between 1850 and 1855 Mr. Silvester made four other trips to England. On one of these, in '53, he took letters to



Mr. Peabody, was invited to attend his annual Fourth of July dinner, and being the only Danvers man in London, was asked much by him concerning the progress of the Institute he had then recently given. This acquaintance thus formed, ripened with later visits.

It was to Mr. Silvester that, soon after the reception here in 1856, Mr. Peabody wrote from Georgetown, requesting a meeting on the arrival of a certain train at the Danvers station. While walking together on the station platform, Mr. Peabody first made known his intention to give ten thousand dollars to establish a Branch Library for Danvers, so that the citizens of this part of the old town would not be obliged to depend on the Institute at South Danvers. He asked Mr. Silvester to bring to him at the Revere House, Boston, a list of suitable persons to receive the gift. Mr. Silvester found him enjoying buckwheat cakes at a late breakfast; and over an informal cup of coffee the list was accepted, with Mr. Silvester's name, which Mr. Peabody insisted upon adding. This letter, soon written, is self-explanatory.

"REVERE HOUSE, BOSTON, Dec. 22, 1856.

"GENTLEMEN:—During my recent visit to the old town of Danvers, I had opportunities of examining into and understanding the operations of the Institute, and of ascertaining to some extent the comparative advantages derived from it by different portions of the town.

"In compliance with my original directions the Institute was located within one-third of a mile of the site of the meeting house formerly under the pastoral care of Rev. Mr. Walker; and while thus the population of South Danvers is within a reasonable distance of the Institute, the population of Danvers is mostly too remote therefrom, and cannot very conveniently share fully in its privileges. It has occurred to me that a Branch Library might be established in Danvers, in some central position, probably the Plains, which would remedy the existing difficulty and would secure to the inhabitants a more equal participation in the benefits which it was my design to confer upon all.

"I therefore propose to make a donation of Ten Thousand Dollars for the purpose of establishing a Branch Library, to be located as before mentioned, provided the suggestions and conditions hereinafter stated are satisfactory to all the parties interested.

"First, the Library shall be called and known as the BRANCH LIBRARY of the PEABODY INSTITUTE, and shall be under the direction and control of the Trustees of the Institute, in the same manner and to the same extent as are the funds of the Institute and its library at South Danvers.

"Second, Three Thousand Dollars of the amount to be expended at once for the purchase of books and the fitting up a room or rooms for their reception; the remainder, Seven Thousand Dollars, to be safely invested by said Trustees, and the income thereof to be used by the Lyceum and Library Committee of the Institute for the increase of the Library, the payment of rent, and for defraying such other expenses as may be incurred in the proper care and management of the same; the whole income to be used for the exclusive benefit of the Branch Library.

"Third, the inhabitants of Danvers are to be still entitled to the full enjoyment of all the privileges and advantages of the Parent Library and of the Lyceum, and the inhabitants of South Danvers are to have the right of participating equally in the privileges of the Branch Library. If, however, it should be found hereafter that this arrangement ought to be modified for the better accommodation and the greater advantage of all concerned, then this last provision, as also either of the others, may be altered by general consent; such alteration being subject to my approbation.

"It is my desire, gentlemen, that you will, as soon after the receipt of this as convenient, confer with some of our friends in Danvers, in which conference it is my wish that the Lyceum and Library Committee of the Institute should take part, as in all proceedings relating to this matter.

"Very respectfully and truly yours,

"GEORGE PEABODY."

Mr. Peabody designated Rev. Milton P. Braman, Samuel Preston, Joshua Silvester, James D. Black, Matthew Hooper and William L. Weston, to act in the conference, suggested by the above letter, with the trustees of the Institute and the Lyceum and Library Committee. Appropriate resolutions were passed at a town-meeting held January 12, 1857; and at the same time it was voted to offer to the trustees for the use of the branch library certain rooms in the Town-House over the selectmen's and town-clerk's offices. And here the library was situated for about a dozen years. The first delivery of books from the branch library was September 5, 1857. It then contained two thousand three hundred and seventy volumes.

But as early as the March meeting of 1857, the town took action towards securing a suitable lot on which some time to erect a library building. The matter was referred with full powers to a committee consisting of the selectmen and Matthew Hooper and Wm. L. Weston at large; and, by districts, Joshua Silvester, Moses Black, Jr., Aaron Putnam, Francis P. Putnam, James Goodale, Israel W. Andrews, George Tapley and Frederick A. Wilkins. This committee purchased, for four thousand dollars, about four and a half acres, fronting on Sylvan Street, of land formerly a part of Judge Samuel Putnam's estate. Mr. Silvester, Mr. Hooper and Augustus Mudge were appointed to lay out the ground in a suitable manner. This latter committee expended \$347.13 in grading, laying out walks, etc., and they set out two hundred and sixty-one rock-maple trees. In their report they say:

"When Mr. George Peabody was riding through these grounds last August, he seemed to inquire with much interest, what grounds they were; he was answered that it was Peabody Park, a lot purchased by the Town for the Branch Library Building site, and as there is no name sanctioned by the Town, the Committee would advise the adoption of Peabody Park as the future name of this lot. . . . The committee would also express their appreciation of the valuable services of one of their number who has been removed by death, Mr. Matthew Hooper, and add their testimony to his worth as a member of the committee and the high estimation in which he was justly held by citizens of the town."

Ten years passed, long, trying years; and after the war was over, in the spring of 1866, it was known that Mr. Peabody intended to visit this country again. At a special town-meeting, April 23, 1866, Rev. Milton P. Braman and Daniel Richards were sent to meet Mr. Peabody at New York, and in concert with a delegation from South Danvers to tender him a cordial welcome in behalf of both towns.

This visit was especially auspicious to Danvers. Not contented with the generous gift of the branch library, Mr. Peabody had come prepared to make a far more notable donation. The endowment of the PEABODY INSTITUTE of DANVERS is contained in the following letter:

"TO REV. MILTON P. BRAMAN, JOSHUA SILVESTER, FRANCIS PEABODY, JR., SAMUEL P. FOWLER, DANIEL RICHARDS, ISRAEL W. ANDREWS, JACOB



F. PERRY, CHARLES P. PRESTON and ISRAEL H. PUTNAM, ESQs., all of Danvers.

"GENTLEMEN:—In a letter to the Trustees of the Peabody Institute at South Danvers, bearing date of the 22d of last month, I expressed to them my purpose of giving, in addition to the Ten Thousand Dollars formerly given by me to them for the foundation of the Branch Library in your town the sum of Forty Thousand Dollars, making in all Fifty Thousand Dollars for the foundation of a separate and distinct Institution in your town; and with the understanding that by the necessary municipal action on the part of South Danvers and Danvers, each town should formally relinquish all rights and privileges in the Library, Lectures or other benefits of the other; and I then also stated that it would be necessary that the fund heretofore placed in the hands of the Trustees of the Institute at South Danvers for the especial use of the Branch Library should be transferred to those who should hereafter have it in charge.

"The Town of South Danvers having taken the municipal action indicated in the letter to which I have referred, I now, with the understanding that the Town of Danvers has taken or shall take like action, designate you, gentlemen, as the persons to whom the funds heretofore held by the said Trustees for the benefit of the Branch Library, shall now be transferred, and give you in addition the sum of Forty Thousand Dollars; which with the amount thus transferred to you, shall be by you held in trust, or expended under the provision of such Trust, for the establishment of an Institute, for the promotion of knowledge and Morality, in the Town of Danvers, similar in its general character to that which now exists at South Danvers.

"Of the amount, I direct that the sum of thirty thousand dollars be and always remain permanently invested as a Fund, of which the annual income shall be expended, under the direction of yourselves and your successors for the maintenance, increase, and care of the Library, and the delivery of such Lectures or courses of Lectures, as shall be conducive to the purpose proposed in the establishment of the institution.

"The remainder of the amount I have placed in your hands as above, shall be used for the erection of a suitable building for the Library and other purposes of the said Institute, which shall be completed within two years from the date hereof. In the event of any and all the vacancies occurring in the number of you, my Trustees above named, by resignation, by death, or in what manner soever such vacancy shall occur, I direct that such vacancy shall be filled by the choice of the Inhabitants of the Town of Danvers legally qualified to vote at Town-meetings, who shall, at a Town-meeting to be called for this purpose as soon as conveniently may be after such vacancy occurs, make such choice; and I further direct that my said Trustees shall annually make and print a Report, which shall be made public and published setting forth the condition of the Library and of the funds invested.

"And wishing as I do to promote both now, and for all coming time a spirit of Peace, unity and brotherly love, I enjoin upon you and your successors forever the same principles and directions for your guidance in relation to party politics or sectarian theology, or any allusion to them whatever in any of the lectures, meetings or transactions of the Institute, which I have already enjoined upon the Trustees of the Peabody Institute at South Danvers, in my letter September 22, 1866, and I beg to refer you specially to that letter, for the rules to be observed in relation to your future course.

"I have further to ask, that you will communicate the contents of this letter of trust to a town-meeting of the citizens of Danvers at as early a day as convenient.

"I am with high respect your humble servant,

"GEORGE PEABODY.

"Oakland, Md., October 30, 1866."

RULES REFERRED TO IN MR. PEABODY'S LETTER.

"My earnest wish to promote at all times a spirit of harmony and good will in society, my aversion to intolerance and party rancor and my enduring respect and love for the happy institutions of our prosperous republic, impel me to express the wish that the Institute I have purposed to you shall always be strictly guarded against the possibility of being made a theater for the dissemination or discussion of sectarian theology or party politics; that it shall never minister in any manner whatever to infidelity, to visionary theories of a pretended philosophy which may be aimed at the subversion of the approved morals of society; that it shall never lend its aid or influence to the propagation of opinions tending to create or encourage sectional jealousies in our happy country, or which may lead to the alienation of the people of one state or section of the Union from another.

"But that it shall be so conducted, throughout its whole career, as to

teach political and religious charity, toleration and beneficence, and prove itself to be, in all conditions and contingencies, the true friend of our inestimable Union, of the salutary institutions of our free government, and of liberty regulated by law."

Some question arose as to the best location for the New Institute. At the annual meeting of the town, 1867, the matter was referred to a committee, of which Wm. L. Weston was chairman, who reported, "There are many considerations which would make it desirable that a building such as is proposed should be more centrally located; but, after conferring with the Trustees, they are nearly unanimous in the conclusion that the interests of the town will be best promoted by its location on the spot originally selected. They therefore recommend the passage of the following vote: That the Selectmen of the town be and they are hereby authorized to transfer to the Trustees of the Peabody Institute the lot known as Peabody Park, for the purpose of erecting thereon, at such time as the Trustees may deem expedient, a Lyceum and Library building."

These recommendations were accepted. Time adds each year to the beauty of the grounds and emphasizes the wisdom of the choice.

Plans for a building were laid before Mr. Peabody and approved by him. On the 10th of February, 1868, a contract was made with Charles H. Smith, of Newburyport, for its construction, for the sum of \$18,500. The institute was completed in January, 1870, at a total cost of \$29,241. It is a wooden building, inclined to the Gothic style of architecture, eighty-six by fifty-two feet, and contains on the lower floor the Peabody Public Library, and on the second floor a large lecture-hall.

Mr. Peabody was again expected from England during the summer of 1870. The formal opening of the institute was deferred to the 14th of July, when he, himself, was present. A permanent record of the events of that memorable day was made by the graphic pen of Dr. Braman.

A few months later, and the world received in sadness the news that George Peabody was dead. He died on the 4th of November, 1870, in London. Once more he was borne across the Atlantic, and the cannon of a noble ship of the Queen of England announced to his native land the arrival of his body.

According to his dying request he was buried from the place where he was born, and the funeral pomp was such as when a king dies.

The citizens of South Danvers had already honored and perpetuated his name by the acceptance of an act passed by the Legislature April 13, 1868, that "the town of South Danvers, in the County of Essex, shall take the name of Peabody."

The people of Danvers hold Mr. Peabody's name very dear. His gift to them was especially generous, for, were his only motive to remember his birth-place, that might well have been satisfied by his original gift to the old town. The Peabody Institute of Dan-



vers is a potent influence for education, which, in the words of the donor, "is a debt due from the present to future generations."

Of the original life Trustees Francis Peabody, Jr., Samuel P. Fowler, Israel W. Andrews and Israel H. Putnam are still on the board.

The first vacancies occurred in 1871, when Mr. Braman and Mr. Preston resigned. It was then voted that the term of office of trustees elected by the town should be four years; and Mr. Preston and Melvin B. Putnam were elected. In 1875 Mr. Preston and Ezra D. Hines were elected. In 1877 Mr. Perry resigned, and Dr. W. W. Eaton was elected in his place. In 1879 Mr. Preston and Mr. Hines were re-elected. At the expiration of Dr. Eaton's term, in 1881, J. Peter Gardner was elected. In 1883 Lucius A. Mudge and William T. Damon were elected. In 1885 Mr. Gardner was re-elected. In 1887 Mr. Mudge and Mr. Damon were re-elected, and Joseph W. Woodman was also elected to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Daniel Richards.

A course of free lectures, concerts, etc., have been annually provided since the winter of 1867-68, at an average expense of about \$500.

By an act of the Legislature, March 16, 1882, the trustees were incorporated to hold property to the extent of \$300,000.

The list of librarians since the opening of the Branch Library,—April 1, 1857, Nathaniel Hills; June 24, 1865, S. P. Fowler, pro tem.; October 9, 1865, Wm. Rankin, Jr.; January, 1867, A. Sumner Howard; April, 1882, Lizzie M. Howard; January 3, 1885, Emilie K. Davis. A few summers ago the library was closed and the books classified and catalogued according to modern scientific methods. The special committee were Dr. W. W. Eaton and Rev. W. E. C. Wright, of the Maple Street Church. A contemporaneous report says that "upon the latter rested the heaviest burden of gratuitous work which he has shouldered, although it was a labor of love, and carried through almost without stopping to rest for six months. With what assistance the doctor could find time to give, Mr. Wright has directed and superintended every detail of its preparation, and performed himself a large part of the most responsible and difficult work."

The whole number of volumes now in the library, 12,024; number of borrowers' cards issued, 2300; average number of books delivered each day, 185.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

DANVERS—(Continued).

INDUSTRIAL PURSUITS—SOCIETIES—PHYSICIANS, ETC.

AGRICULTURE.—Farming has of necessity been most developed within recent years in the line of

market-gardening. Probably nowhere in the county can finer cultivated fields be seen than in this town. Sun and rain, bugs and worms, remain as ever uncertain elements, but there has been a wonderful advance in the application of scientific principles. Very much of that broad plain, up which swept the tide of original settlement, is devoted to this sort of farming. The land here is rich and level, and every acre is worked for all it is worth. The Danvers onion is famous everywhere. Hundreds of barrels are raised within half a mile of the Collins House. Much of this land is comparatively new, "Turkey Plain," as it used to be called, having been covered with bushes within the memory of some living, and a hundred years ago thought to be the poorest land in town. The older farms are generally under thorough and enterprising management. Many of them make a specialty of producing milk.

An article by the editor of the *Massachusetts Ploughman*, in that paper November, 1880, is authority for the statement that the reputation of Danvers exceeds that of Weathersfield, Conn., for the cultivation of the onion, and, further, that "no town in the State is so distinguished for its superior orcharding." This statement will not here be challenged. If it be true, it is well, and fits well to the fact that here on the "Orchard Farm" of Governor Endicott the first fruit trees of any account in New England—perhaps the whole country—were raised. A hundred years ago pear-trees were to be seen near every farm-house. Some had a few plum and peach-trees. These bore abundantly. Most of the apple-trees were then of natural fruit, and the apples were largely consumed in the shape of cider. An old cider-mill which stood on the General Putnam place was thus constructed. A trench was dug, fifteen inches wide and fifty feet in circumference, and flat stones were placed on the bottom; the sides were of brick, eighteen inches deep. Apples were thrown in this circular trench, and a heavy stone wheel, drawn by horse-power and revolving about a central upright, did the squeezing. The apparatus was taken down about 1819. Deacon Joseph Putnam, who owned and carried on this mill, and Abram Dodge, of Wenham, were the first in the county to plant apple orchards of improved varieties for growing winter apples for market. This was soon after the Revolution. At that time farms were valued not so much for their location as for the amount of stock they would keep. The Clark farm was then considered the best farm in Danvers, so Wm. R. Putnam has written. Before the discovery of the uses of coal relieved the fear of a scarcity of wood, every well-appointed farm included one or more peat lots. Here and there peat sheds are still seen in the meadows, but it is not common, as formerly, to see about the farm-buildings carefully piled blocks of this sort of fuel. Its most general use was from about 1780 to about 1830.

The Essex Agricultural Society has from the first



been warmly supported by the farmers of Danvers. Among the incorporators of the society, June 12, 1818, were Frederick Howes and Jesse Putnam. The Danvers men have always taken a good share of premiums at the annual exhibitions, and they now stand at the head of membership. Charles P. Preston was for twenty-five years secretary of the society, resigning in 1885. Some minutes of the exhibition of 1848 show that Elijah Pope received the first premium for ploughing with double team, and Francis Dodge the second. For working oxen, Orrin Putnam, fourth; Francis Dodge, fifth. Working steers, Elijah Pope, second. Fat oxen, Perley Goodale, first. Bulls, Orrin Putnam, second. Milch heifers, Eben Putnam, third. Yearlings, Francis Dodge, first. Sheep, Elijah Pope, gratuity, no premiums given. June butter, Charles P. Preston, first; same, second for September butter.

Jonathan Perry came to Danvers in 1803, when he was twenty-one years old. In 1815 he bought the Towne farm of some fifty acres, which has remained in the family since that time. Mr. Perry was the first farmer in Essex County to raise strawberries and dandelions for the market, and for over thirty years he drove a vegetable wagon to Salem. His sons, Horatio and James, followed the same business, and will long be remembered and missed. Shortly before the death of the former, a few months ago, he furnished the writer with some information in regard to his father, who was a most excellent citizen. In the cause of temperance and liberty he was first and foremost; he was one of the five who first signed the total abstinence pledge and stood alone for more than a year; he labored earnestly to start the first temperance store in town; he was one of the twelve Liberty Party voters in 1840; was captain of the militia company for a number of years.

SHOE BUSINESS.—All over this part of the country, outside of the thickly settled villages, a peculiar type of building may be noticed. It has grown dingy from lack of paint, and cob-webs and old hats have not uncommonly usurped the glazier's work. Here a hospital for decrepit plows and rusty guns, there converted into sleeping apartments for poultry, now freshened up into quarters for a "hired help," again abandoned altogether, sitting cozily by the roadside and near by the home, equipped with a chimney and well supplied with windows, the observing stranger—and it must be considerable of a stranger not to know all about it—struck by the number of its duplicates, could not fail to conclude that it was originally designed for some use to which it is not now put.

The little building is a monument to the departed days of the industry here spoken of. It is a shoe-maker's shop. Here, for many years, the "stock" was brought from some one of the manufacturers, and in the intervals between farm chores was made up. It was a family work shop, the boys learning early to use hammer and awl, and the girls "closing"

and "binding." It was, too, a sort of educational and political exchange. While the pegs flew in at the swift strokes or the black-ball stick coursed round the freshly trimmed edge, ears were open to some one who read aloud what Horace Greeley said in the last *Tribune* about Kansas. Town topics and national legislation were here freely discussed, and the forever unsettled questions, which no man will solve until the mystery itself comes, were likewise earnestly and thoughtfully debated. Pair by pair the finished shoes went back into the stock box, and when the sixtieth completed the "set," the hinged lid was fastened down and the old horse took a trip to town for pay and fresh work. Business was steady, pretty much the year round, and there was always the little land to fall back upon,—no fear of slack times between trades, and no labor troubles.

Machinery has closed the little shops. First a simple roller replaced the old lap-stone. That made no difference. Even when the pegging-machine was successfully introduced "gangs" were formed, and for a time the shops struggled against steam. But steam conquered, and here, as elsewhere, shoes have been made by the hands of many men and women, from cutter to packer, all working under one roof, and, so far as possible, by the aid of power machinery.

Danvers was a representative shoe-town in the days of the old regime, and much business is here done in the modern way. The first shoe manufacturer in town was Zerubbabel Porter, and a little shop at the foot of Porter's Hill, standing until within a few years, was the cradle of the business. Mr. Porter was a tanner by trade, and he commenced making shoes in order to work up leather unsaleable for custom trade. This was about the time of the Revolution. That little shop, which was raised from its first condition so that tanning was carried on in the basement and shoemaking above, became a sort of normal school in the latter art, from which many graduated to success. About the time young Elias Endicott married Nancy Creasy, of Beverly, in 1791, he, likewise a tanner and currier by trade, built a little shop for that business. That shop now forms the parlor of the present residence of Elias Endicott Porter, above Putnamville. The young man presently added a second story, moved into it, and kept at his business beneath.

More additions were made, and about the commencement of this century, in a small shop still used as a woodshed, he too, following the example of his brother-in-law, began to manufacture shoes. Both found markets in Baltimore and other southern ports, packing their goods in barrels and shipping them from Salem on board of coasters.

Jonathan Porter worked for his cousin Zerubbabel as early as 1786, and among his apprentices was Caleb Oakes, who commenced to manufacture in the little shop, and later built up a large and prosperous busi-

ness at Danversport. His widowed mother, who was a Putnam, came here from Portsmouth when he was but two years old. He was brought up by Colonel Enoch Putnam, married Mehitable, daughter of Nathaniel Pope, and is buried with her in the old Pope burying-ground. He was the father of William Oakes, the distinguished botanist.

About 1789 a young boy of fourteen went to Jonathan Porter, to learn his trade, and when he became of age he took out work a year for Caleb Oakes. One day, when he returned a set of shoes and found no stock ready for him, Mr. Oakes sold him a little leather and told him he might cut it up himself. The next set of shoes he made he put into saddlebags and took them to Boston on horseback. From this beginning Moses Putnam continued with patient industry and sagacity until he became, in the neighborhood which bears his name, the chief shoe manufacturer of the town. He followed the business steadily for fifty-seven years, surviving two sons and a son-in-law, all of whom had been associated with him.

Among other early manufacturers were Samuel Putnam, Nathaniel Boardman, Eben Putnam, Major Joseph Stearns, Daniel Putnam, Gilbert Tapley, the Prestons, Elias Putnam and Joshua Silvester. Fifty years ago the business was confined mostly to Putnamville, the Plains and the Port. About that time James Goodale and Otis Mudge began to manufacture at the Centre. In 1854 there were thirty-five firms, making more than a million and a half pairs annually, and giving employment to about twenty-five hundred men and women.

Samuel Preston and Joshua Silvester were carrying on business on opposite sides of the square at the time of the great fire of 1845. About 1830 Mr. Preston was also running a store at Perley's corner. David Wilkins did his teaming, going into Boston four times a week with a pair of horses. He would load up with cases of brogans and start at one or two o'clock in the morning, and deliver the shoes at the various wharves along old Commercial Street. Then, with a load of groceries previously ordered,—molasses, great boxes of sugar bound with raw hide, and with a hundred sides of leather on top of all,—he drove back. One Hartwell at the Port was, at the same time teaming for the Putnamville people, and did a good business. Later Mr. Wilkins, still a familiar figure with his lumber-wagon in our streets, formed a partnership with the late D. J. Preston, and took all the Boston teaming. It was the growing importance of the shoe business and the need of banking accommodation that led to the establishment of the Village Bank in 1836. During the financial crisis of the next year Danvers men lost heavily with others. For twenty years there was prosperity, and then the crisis of 1857 and the demoralization of business occasioned by the breaking out of the war, forced many to the wall. Those who pulled through

or rallied afresh, had prosperous times during the war.

Among those who have contributed to the fame of Danvers as a shoe town within the past twenty or thirty years, and who have either retired, deceased or engaged otherwise in business, are John Sears, Daniel F. Putnam, J. C. Butler, C. H. Gould, Ira P. Pope, Alfred Fellows, J. R. Langley, Amos A. and Henry A. White, Joel Putnam, Aaron Putnam, I. H. Putnam, William E. Putnam, I. H. Boardman, Henry F. Putnam, Phineas Corning, J. M. Sawyer, G. B. Martin, G. H. Peabody.

The oldest established firm still in business is that of E. and A. Mudge & Co. Edwin Mudge, senior partner, commenced manufacturing in 1837, when nineteen years old. From 1840 to 1847 he was associated with his brother Otis. In 1849 he formed the partnership with his brother Augustus, which, with the admission of Edward Hutchinson in 1858, has since remained without further change. After a number of expedients to accommodate their extensive business, the firm erected a large three-story factory, well fitted with all modern conveniences. It was situated close by the residences of its owners, and was the life of the Center, but at present the tall chimney is the melancholy monument of its former existence. It was burned about the first of June, 1885. Its loss has not proved so disastrous to the Center as was feared, for it so happened that the firm were able to move at once into the factory they now occupy at the corner of Pine and Holten Streets, Tapleville, taking their old help with them, and the horse cars make the two villages practically one. Upon the corner mentioned, George B. Martin manufactured shoes, and built up a prosperous business in a factory which, by successive additions, had grown to great size, and was occupied by Martin, Clapp and French (W. T. Martin, son of G. B.), when, on the night of February 23, 1883, the whole establishment and five adjoining dwellings were burned. The firm at once rebuilt, but they had not long occupied their fine factory before they experienced serious labor troubles and were induced to move their business to Dover, N. H. Thus the Mudges were enabled to move into it at once after their fire. G. W. Clapp withdrew from the Martin firm at the time of its removal, and with W. A. Tapley commenced the business carried on near the old carpet factory. Other large shoe manufacturers are C. C. Farwell & Co., J. E. Farrar & Co., Glover & Co. and Eaton & Sears; numerous other firms do a smaller business.

BRICK-MAKING.—Danvers bricks rival Danvers onions in their reputation for sterling qualities. Farmer Andrews' trip to Medford and young Jeremiah Page's return with him, the origin of the business here, has been mentioned in the sketch of the Plains. Mr. Page continued the business, of which he was the pioneer, to the close of his life, 1806, and at his decease his son, John Page, and son-in-law, John Fow-



ler, carried it on a few years in partnership. Mr. Page then continued the business alone, and with such energy and success that Page's bricks were widely known and in great demand. He is said to have made the first "clapped bricks," which were really pressed bricks, made before the invention of machinery facilitated this most important feature of brick-making. For many years Mr. Page was a large contractor for government work, and many of his bricks were used in fortifications and light-houses. A very large number were sent to Forts Taylor and Jefferson on the Florida coast. In fact Danvers bricks were the government standard, specifications calling for them or others as good. Mr. Page had yards on both sides of High Street, that on the westerly side extending beyond the location of the railroad and others on South Liberty Street near the Peabody line.

Deacon Joseph Putnam and Israel, his brother, nephews of General Israel, many years ago made bricks near the driving-park on Conant Street. The Webbs, too, were early brick-makers, Nathaniel Webb, grandfather of Putnam Webb, now living at the Port, having a yard near the horse-car stables on High Street. Jotham Webb was just beginning business below the box-mill at the Port, when at the Lexington alarm, he hurriedly donned his wedding suit, and was brought back to his young bride slain by a British bullet.

Josiah Gray was born in Beverly, but his parents moved to Bridgeton, Me., when he was a small boy. He came thither when a young man and learned to make bricks under John Page. He then worked some fifteen years making nails and anchors at the iron works, but on the occasion of a sharp cut in wages he began to make bricks in East Danvers, then Beverly. He virtually made Liberty Street what it is to-day, erecting a number of dwellings and setting out the first shade trees. He died in 1873 at an advanced age, having been a most excellent citizen. The business which he began has continued prosperously in his family for more than fifty years. In 1881 the old yard off Liberty Street, then carried on by S. F. and J. A. Gray was bought by the New England Pressed Brick Company. Expensive works proved, however, a poor substitute for simpler processes and the company failed. J. A. Gray went to Maine, and S. F. Gray, is carrying on the yard off High Street, formerly worked by W. H. Porter.

Asa and Nathan Tapley and Matthew Hooper were early brickmakers in District No. 6. William H. Walcott succeeded Nathan Tapley, and William T. Trask succeeding Mr. Walcott, at present carries on that yard. Isaac Evans, Samuel Low and Moody Elliott were also among the early makers. G. H. Day commenced business in 1861; his sons, G. H. and E. F. Day, later. Samuel Trask, who succeeded Mr. Evans, W. H. Porter, Edward Carr and H. E. Elliott, began about the same time. At some time, John C. Page made bricks on Lefavour's Plain,

South of Water's River, near Kernwood; and Charles Page in the large pasture near Crane River bridge; this latter yard was reopened by the Grays, and some of the bricks for the Danvers Lunatic Hospital, for which they had the contract, were made here.

John Grout had a yard in the rear of his residence on High Street. It is estimated that about five million bricks are now annually made here, divided as follows:

G. H. Day.....	1,500,000
S. F. Gray.....	1,000,000
Edward Carr.....	1,000,000
P. A. Gallivan.....	800,000
Samuel Trask.....	600,000
Wm. T. Trask.....	400,000

Of these, at least, a fifth are of first quality front brick, rated in the market as good as any made in New England.

PHYSICIANS.—With the exception of an uncertain report of a Dr. Gregg, said to have lived at Salem Village in 1692, there is no evidence that the town had any settled physician until about 1725, but depended for medical and surgical services upon the Salem doctors.

Jonathan Prince was probably born in Danvers, and was certainly the first resident physician of whom there is any clear account. He studied medicine with Dr. Toothaker, of Billerica, and was the preceptor of Drs. Amos Putnam and Samuel Holten. He lived on the southern slope of Hathorne Hill, at a spot marked by a cluster of pines. The house was long since removed to the corner of Hobart and Forrest Streets, where it is known as the "Hook house."

AMOS PUTNAM was born in Danvers 1722. He pursued his medical studies with Dr. Prince, and practiced in the town till the opening of the French War, when he entered the service as a surgeon. At the close of the war he returned to Danvers, and followed his profession until he was more than eighty years of age. He was a justice of the peace for many years, and one of the most influential citizens of the town. His grave is in a small inclosure near the Collins House, marked by a plain head-stone, on which is the following inscription: "Sacred to the memory of Doct. Amos Putnam and Hannah Phillips, the wife of A. P." He died July 26, 1807, aged eighty-five. She died Oct. 2, 1758, aged thirty-three.

SAMUEL HOLTEN was more distinguished in our history in other respects than as a physician. An outline of his biography has been already given.

ARCHELAUS PUTNAM was born in Danvers in 1744. His birth-place and residence through life was the old Putnam homestead, near Wadsworth Cemetery. He graduated from Harvard College in 1763, and soon after commenced to practice his profession in town. He was a skillful physician and surgeon, and a man of great influence among his fellow-citizens. His death occurred in 1800, and his remains are buried in Wadsworth Cemetery.



JAMES PUTNAM, son of Dr. Amos Putnam, was born in Danvers about 1760, studied medicine and was associated in practice with his father.

ANDREW NICHOLS was born November 2, 1785, died 1853. See sketch of his life and portrait.

Dr. Shed was a druggist rather than a practicing physician. He was long town clerk, and something is said of him in connection with that office. He lived in the South Parish.

During the first years of this century quite a number of physicians began business in town, but after a brief period removed to other localities. Among these may be mentioned, Drs. Clapp, Cilley, Gould, Porter, Patten and Carleton.

Dr. Carleton located at the Port, and was famous as a "singing-master." Dr. Patten lived in what is now the Bass River House.

GEORGE OSGOOD was born in North Andover, March, 1784. After receiving his medical degree he came to Danvers and commenced practice in 1808. He also joined the Massachusetts Medical Society the same year. His home was for a time near the village bank building, and afterwards near the Essex depot, in the Abbott House. He was in active practice more than half a century, and during this long time he was one of the most familiar figures in the town. He was a son-in-law of Dr. Holten, and is buried near the grave of the latter in the Holten Cemetery. The headstone bears this inscription:

GEORGE OSGOOD, M.D.
He practiced medicine in this town fifty-five years.
Beloved and respected by all who knew him.
He passed to his rest, May 26, 1863,
Aged 79 years, 2 months.

EBENEZER HUNT, whose name has often appeared in these pages, for more than half a century practiced in this town of his adoption. He was born in Nashua, N.H., April 13, 1799; died at Danversport, October 27, 1874. He graduated at Dartmouth Medical College in 1822, and the next year settled here. He was among the earliest and foremost in the temperance and anti-slavery movements, and so ardent was his patriotism that when war came he enlisted as assistant surgeon in the Eighth Regiment. Radical in his views, gruff in manner, he was warm of heart and skillful in his profession, and will long be remembered as a useful citizen.

DAVID A. GROSVENOR, JR., a son of Dr. Grosvenor, of North Reading, was born in Manchester, Mass., 1812. He pursued his medical studies with his father, and also with Dr. Mussey, of Hanover, N. H. He received his diploma as Doctor of Medicine from Dartmouth Medical School in 1835. He commenced practice in Rutland, Mass., in 1836, but three years later came to Danvers and settled. His residence is on Elm Street, near the Essex depot. He became a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1840.

J. W. SNOW, born in Eastham, Mass., October 10,

1820. Studied medicine at Harvard Medical School and Hospital. Graduated at Pittsfield College; commenced practice at Liverpool, Nova Scotia, in 1847; settled in Danvers, January 1, 1850; removed to Saco, Me., in 1867, and shortly after to Boston, where he now resides.

DR. P. M. CHASE was born in Bradford, Mass., May 11, 1828; entered Phillips Academy, Andover, in 1847; attended a medical course at Woodstock, Vt., in 1853; was a pupil of Dr. H. B. Fowler, of Bristol, N. H.; entered the Medical Department at Dartmouth College in 1854, and in 1855 entered Harvard Medical School, and graduated from Harvard Medical College in 1857; located at Danvers as practicing physician in 1857; was commissioned examining surgeon for recruits in the Rebellion in 1861; in 1874 was commissioned United States Examining Surgeon for Pensions; in 1875 was commissioned surgeon in the Eighth Regiment, M. V. M.; was a Democratic candidate for State Senator in 1874-75. He died at his residence, corner of Locust and Oak Streets, January 4, 1887.

LEWIS WHITING, homeopathist, was born in Hanover, Mass., January 24, 1832; he graduated from the Bridgewater Normal School, and taught school till his health failed; began the study of medicine at Bellevue Hospital, N. Y., in 1861; was afterwards two years in the navy as surgeon's steward; continued his studies in 1864 at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, in New York, and graduated in 1865 at the New York Homeopathic Medical College; settled in Danvers August, 1865. Residence on Putnam Street.

WILLIAM WINSLOW EATON, born in Webster, Me., May 20, 1836; graduated from Bowdoin College in 1861; began the study of medicine, in 1860, with Dr. Isaac Lincoln, of Brunswick; took his first and second course of lectures in 1861 and '62, at the Maine Medical School; was a pupil of Dr. Valentine Mott in the winter of '63 and graduated at N. Y. University in 1864; entered the military service as assistant surgeon of the Sixteenth Regiment, Maine Infantry, in 1862; was promoted to surgeon and served three years; began practice in South Reading, Mass., in 1865; removed to Danvers in April, 1867; was elected a member of the Maine Medical Association, and of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1865. Residence on Holten Street, near the Peabody Institute. Dr. Eaton has served on the school committee, as trustee of Peabody Institute, and in other public capacities, and has been recently elected president of the Walnut Grove Cemetery corporation.

D. HOMER BATCHELDER, born in Londonderry, N. H., 1811, graduated at Berkshire Medical College in 1840, practiced thirteen years in Londonderry, then removed to Cranston, R. I., from which town he came to Danvers in December, 1876. His residence was at the Port, and after a few years he moved elsewhere and was succeeded by Dr. Frost.



EDGAR O. FOWLER was born in Bristol, N. H., May 7, 1853; graduated at New Hampton Institute; studied medicine with his father, Dr. H. B. Fowler, of Bristol, N. H.; was a student at Bellevue Medical College and Long Island Hospital, N. Y., in 1872 and 1873; graduated at Dartmouth Medical School with the degree of M.D. in 1873; commenced practice in Danvers in 1874; joined the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1875; died suddenly of heart disease, May 1, 1884.

WOODBURY G. FROST was born in Brunswick, Me.; graduated at Bowdoin College in 1860; taught school before and after graduation; received degree of A.M. in 1863, and the degree of M.D. in 1866; was acting assistant surgeon under Farragut in the W. G. B. Squadron; practiced medicine twenty years in Freeport and Portland, Me., and in Danvers, Mass.; served on school committees in Maine, and at present is on the Danvers board.

DRS. F. A. GARDNER and COWLES recently practiced here a short time.

DR. H. F. BATCHELDER, homeopathist, has lately settled.

LAWYERS.—At least three natives of North Danvers have risen to high judicial positions,—Samuel Holten, as probate judge of Essex County; Samuel Putnam, as justice of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts; and Rufus Tapley, as justice of the Supreme Court of Maine. Hon. Nathan Read came also to be a Maine judge. Arthur A. Putnam has been, if he is not still, judge of a local court in Worcester County. Judge Cummings of the Massachusetts Supreme Court; Frederick Howes of the Burley Farm; Abner C. Goodell, long Register of Probate at Salem; and Mellen Chamberlain, ex-chief justice of the Municipal Court of Boston, and now superintendent of the Boston Public Library, have lived in North Danvers. Wm. Oakes was a lawyer, and practiced somewhat in Ipswich, but devoted himself chiefly to botany. Among those who have practiced here and gone elsewhere are William G. Choate, A. A. Putnam and Horace L. Hadley. A few devoted martyrs still remain to pour on oil when life's waters are troubled. Their names,—J. W. Porter, E. L. Hill, D. N. Crowley and A. P. White. Stephen H. Phillips, at one time attorney-general of Massachusetts, has within a few years taken up his residence on a part of the estate which was formerly owned by his father. A number of distinguished lawyers, including Rufus Choate, practiced in that part of Danvers which is now Peabody, and their names, here purposely omitted, will be found in the sketch of that town elsewhere in this book.

THE DANVERS LUNATIC HOSPITAL.—That is the official name, and though it doesn't slide so easily from the tongue as insane asylum it doubtless is professionally more correct. The act of 1873 authorized the Governor to appoint commissioners to select and buy a site for a new hospital for the insane, to

be located in the northeastern part of the State. S. C. Cobb, of Boston, C. C. Esty, of Framingham, and Edwin Walden, of Lynn, were so appointed, and they selected Hathorne Hill, in Danvers, then owned by Francis Dodge, as the best location. From an æsthetic and hygienic point of view, the situation of the great institution is superb, and the beautifully kept grounds on the summit of the slightly hill add much to the attractiveness of Danvers, yet on practical grounds, the wisdom of placing the building so high has been questioned.

Work was commenced on the hill May 1, 1874. The hospital was ready for use in May, 1878. The cost of buildings, land, etc., at the latter date was \$1,599,287.49. The first superintendent was Calvin S. May, M.D., who served from May 13, 1878, to August 9, 1880. William B. Goldsmith, M.D., was appointed superintendent March 1, 1881, and resigned February 1, 1886, to accept a similar position at the Butler Hospital, Providence, R. I. During the year's absence of Dr. Goldsmith in Europe, July 15, 1883, to July 15, 1884, Henry R. Stedman, M.D., was acting superintendent. William A. Gorton, the present superintendent, was appointed on the date of Dr. Goldsmith's resignation.

The first board of trustees were Charles P. Preston, of Danvers, Daniel S. Richardson, of Lowell, Gardner A. Churchill, of Boston, Samuel W. Hopkinson, of Bradford, James Sturgis, of Boston. The present board, 1887, include Messrs. Preston, Richardson and Hopkinson, and also Harriet R. Lee, of Salem, Solon Bancroft, of Reading, Dr. Orville F. Rogers, of Boston, Florence Lyman, of Boston.

Dr. May was treasurer as well as superintendent. After his resignation the offices were separated, and Stephen C. Rose, of Marblehead, was appointed treasurer. He served from August 9, 1880, to September 1, 1882, when his successor, Charles H. Gould, of Danvers, who at present holds the office, was appointed. There are now, July, 1887, in the institution seven hundred and fifty patients. The receipts for the past year were \$151,598.95; payments, \$149,887; balance in favor of the institution, \$1711.95. The coal bill was about \$2500.

The officers at the hospital, 1887, are as follows: superintendent, William A. Gorton; lady physician, Julia K. Carey; first assistant physician, Edward P. Elliot; second assistant, Milo A. Jewett; third assistant, Arthur H. Harrington; treasurer, Charles H. Gould; steward, Nathaniel W. Starbird, Jr.; clerk, C. A. Reed; engineer, G. A. Lufkin; farmer, S. S. Pratt.

LITERARY SOCIETIES.—Probably the first was the "New Mills Lyceum," organized December 24, 1832. Its original members were Wm. Francis, Alfred Porter, J. P. Harriman, Edward Stimpson, Hathorne Porter, Samuel McIntire, Jr., Benj. Porter, Aug. Fowler, Jere. Page, Jr., Wm. Black, Wm. Endicott, Wm. Cheever, Edward Perry, Wm. Chaplin, David



Taylor, John Perkins, Samuel D. Pindar, H. G. Bixby, Moses W. Wilson, Edward D. Verry, Joseph Merrill.

The meetings were held in the school-house or Baptist vestry. Many of the young men who became conspicuous in the anti-slavery movement "learned to talk" in this debating club.

Nearly fifty years ago the North Danvers Lyceum used to hold its meetings in the hall of the old tavern, which hall was part of the mansion once standing on Folly Hill. On one side sat the ladies, on the other the gentlemen. The dignitaries, chief among whom were the ministers, Dr. Braman and others, sat at the head of the hall. Just how long the Lyceum continued its existence cannot be stated, but that for a time its meetings were the scenes of many vigorous and beneficial discussions on all sorts of topics, and by men who were no mean gladiators in such combats there is ample testimony. Mrs. Philbrick has preserved this interesting notice:

"The question for debate on Wednesday evening, December 25th, provided there be no lecture is—

"Will the present pressure in business on the whole be a benefit to the community?"

"DISPUTANTS.

I. P. Proctor,	} <i>Affirmative.</i>	O. A. Woodbury,	} <i>Negative.</i>
J. D. Philbrick,		Otis Mudge.	

"NORTH DANVERS, December 18, 1839.

"MR. PHILBRICK:

"At a meeting of N. D. Lyceum you were chosen one of the Library Committee for coming season.

"I. P. PROCTOR, Secretary."

The BOWDITCH CLUB, which had its origin among the young men of Putnamville, grew to a flourishing and very useful existence, and lived far longer than such societies usually do. Its first meetings were held in the Putnamville school-house in 1857, and one of its original members and most enthusiastic supporters has informed the writer that so earnestly were questions debated that after adjournment certain members who lived at the Port would be accompanied and argued with all the way home.

The club held its meetings at the Plains after 1858 or 1859, and in 1870 moved into very comfortable quarters in the Bank Building. A half-a-dozen years later it died the inevitable slow death of its kind. It has left a fine record, and was long an efficient agency in the promotion of culture. The club maintained an annual lecture course, before the Peabody free course, and brought here the best talent to be had. Its own entertainments were of a high tone and always interesting. The "Bowditch Club Dinner" was long a feature of each winter, and a "picnic" was held each summer. It would be well, indeed, for the town, were just such another society in existence to-day.

The Holten Lyceum, Wadsworth Association, and perhaps other societies, have had their day and ceased to be, at the Centre. A number of others might be mentioned, the Shakespeare Club, the Atlas Society, etc., etc.

The Danvers Scientific Association was organized September 27, 1882, and has held fortnightly meetings at Peabody Institute. The Sawyer Club is an active literary and social organization composed principally of members of the Universalist Society.

THE DANVERS WOMEN'S ASSOCIATION.—On the 18th of April, 1882, a number of ladies met with Miss A. L. Page, under a call to all interested in forming a society among the women of Danvers for consideration of matters of common interest, furtherance of woman's work, general improvement and social enjoyment. One week later, the first regular meeting was held at Miss Shepherd's, where, also, officers were elected and a code of by-laws adopted, under the name of the "Danvers Women's Association;" and until November following, meetings were held in private houses. Then the Grand Army Hall was used until January 1, 1884, when the Association took and fitted rooms especially for its own use, in the Ropes building. Upon the completion of the new post-office building it moved into its present quarters, comprising the whole of both upper floors. The membership of the Association has been for some time necessarily limited to one hundred and twenty, and the number is always full. Meetings have been regularly held on Tuesday afternoons, for seven months each year, at which instructive papers or talks have been given, usually by friends from out of town. Three times each winter "social teas" have been held, to which gentlemen have been invited.

To a remarkable degree the club has been successful in its aim towards "general improvement and social enjoyment," and in tending to break down whatever prejudices or exclusiveness naturally clung to the several religious societies it has been a potent influence in the right direction. Mrs. Harriet L. Wentworth has been its president from its formation. The other officers at present (1887) are: Vice-Presidents, Mrs. E. A. Spofford, Mrs. C. E. Whipple. Treasurer, Mrs. V. A. Burrington. Secretary, Miss Mary W. Nichols. Directors, one year, Miss Maria L. Fowler, Mrs. Sarah D. Merrill, Mrs. Abby Hutchinson, Mrs. Alice G. Richards. Two years, Mrs. Mary L. Ewing, Mrs. Julia S. Spalding, Mrs. Hattie R. Keith, Miss Isabel B. Tapley.

SECRET SOCIETIES.—They are a small legion. Yet let no man with a new "improved" or "ancient" or otherwise peculiar "order" hesitate to come. There are still plenty of "joiners."

Free Masonry goes back nearly a hundred and ten years in Danvers, to the organization of the "United States Lodge," May 1, 1778. It ante-dated the Essex Lodge of Salem by one year. Among the members of the "United States" were Samuel Page, Jethro Putnam, Daniel Squiers and the famous drummer of New Mills, Richard Skidmore.

The latter was Tyler, and the jewels and regalia were destroyed at the burning of his house in 1805. The lodge had ceased to hold regular meetings be-



fore this, its decay being attributed to the enlistment of so many of its members in the Revolution. A new lodge—the Jordan Lodge—was established in 1808, the meetings of which were held many years at Berry's tavern, but during the anti-masonry excitement, from 1825 to 1835, meetings were held in South Danvers, and only often enough to preserve the charter. The furniture, regalia, etc., were moved there, and when regular meetings were resumed the lodge kept and has since retained its establishment in South Danvers (Peabody). Many North Danvers Masons went thither until 1863, when Amity Lodge was established here and provided itself with the comfortable quarters in the Bank building, which are exclusively used for secret society purposes. The first regular communication of Amity Lodge was held October 26, 1863. Seven years later thirty-three of the members petitioned for a new lodge, and the present Mosaic Lodge, which was chartered October 30, 1871, was the result.

The Holten Royal Arch Chapter was constituted March 12, 1872.

There is but one lodge of Odd Fellows,—Danvers Lodge, Number 153. It was instituted September 13, 1870.

The following list of other societies is perhaps not full; the date is that of establishment:

Ward Post 90, G. A. R.	June 8, 1869
Agawan Tribe, Imp. Order of Red Men	Feb. 24, 1875
Fraternity Lodge, Knights of Honor	Mar. 14, 1877
Arcturian Council, No. 249, Royal Arcanum	Feb. 10, 1879
Danvers Union Equitable Aid, No. 28	Nov. 29, 1879
Danvers Lodge, A. O. of United Workmen	May 28, 1881
Tuesday Evening Aid Society	Oct. 24, 1881
Hawthorne Council, No. 755, Legion of Honor	Oct. 1881
State Grand Union Equitable Aid	May 15, 1882
Ward Relief Corps, No. 12 (Women)	April 12, 1883
Waukegan Tribe, No. 16, Imp. Order of Red Men	April 3, 1886
Daughters of Pocahontas	1887

CHAPTER XXXIX.

DANVERS—(Continued).

CIVIL HISTORY.

OLD OFFICERS.—Under the act of February 13, 1789, any town might "give liberty for swine to go at large during the whole or part of the year," provided they were yoked throughout spring and summer, and "constantly ringed in the nose," the legal yoke to be "the full depth of the swine's neck, above the neck, and half as much below the neck, and the soal, or bottom of the yoke full three times as long as the breadth or thickness of the swines." To see that the laws were enforced, officers called "hog-reeves" were regularly elected until 1827. Many honorable and well-known men were incumbents of this office, seemingly not alluring to ambition. Israel

Hutchinson, Jonathan Osborn and Jonathan Trask were on the first board.

Daniel Rea was, in 1752, commissioned "to take care that ye Laws Relating to ye Preservation of Deer be observed." "Deer-reeves" were chosen from 1765 to 1797; the first, William Poole and George Wiatt; the last, Eleazer Putnam and Timothy Fuller.

A Sealer of Weights and Measures was first chosen in 1759, and but for the resignation of Francis Symonds, of the Bell Tavern, his posterity, instead of the descendants of Joseph Pairpont, might now claim the ancestral honor of having first adjusted the pints and pecks of the town to legal standard.

Sealers of Leather were chosen from the very first, and the office was not altogether discontinued until within a few years. Israel Cheever and James Upton were the first leather measurers. Deacon S. P. Fowler has in his possession one of the old iron seals mentioned in this memorandum:

"June 18, 1765. Two Sett of Marks or Seals, was Provided at the Cost of the Town for Sealing of Leather according to the Law of the Province and the same delivered to the Sealers of Leather for the Present year, the Tees are for Sealing of Tanned Loather, and the Cees for Curried Leather. By order of Selectmen.

"ARCH. DALE, T. Clerk."

"Wardens" were elected from 1761 to 1790. The first to hold that office were Jeremiah Page, Bartholomew Rea, Gideon Foster, and Joseph Osborne; and the last, Benjamin Proctor and Oliver Putnam.

The last "clerks of the market," chosen in 1800, were Joseph Osborn, Jr., Gideon Foster, Samuel Page and Nathaniel Putnam, Jr.

Whether or not it was common for the selectmen to appoint sextons, the only record of such appointments is in 1821, the appointees being Isaac Munro, Bartholomew Dempsey and William Johnson.

From 1752 to 1791 "haywards" were annually chosen. Jonathan Putnam and John Osbon were the first; Jno. Dodge and Gideon Putnam the last. That hay-scales were not in existence here earlier than 1770, witness the following interesting petition:

"The Petition of Francis Symonds to the Selectmen of Danvers for the Present year 1770 Signifieth that they grant him the following Request on the following Conditions Namely that he may Erect a Convenient pair of Skails or Stilyards that will answer to way Cart or Sled Loads of hay that are Bought and Sold in our Markets, and that Said Selectmen Enter it in our Said Danvers Town Book.

"That no other Person within two miles of the Petitioner shall have the Liberty or Grant from us to Intercept him by Entering the like or any Skails or Stilyards for said purpose for Twenty year provided and it is understood that said Symonds hath this Grant allowed him by us the said Select Men on those Conditions That he keepsaid Skails or Stilyards in good order and see them well tended and that he Charges no more for his waying hay or anything Ells Then the Comon Price Now Gentlemen as I trust you will Observe the need we have of such a Convenience and how Likely to Bennetit our Nabourwhod for which Reson I trust you will due it as well as this to oblige your hambul Sarvent. Signed Francis Symonds Danvers June 17th 1770.

"WILLIAM SHILLABER.

"JONATHAN BUXTON.

"JOHN PRESTON.

"JOHN PUTNAM.

"The four Persons Above named was Select Men of the Town of Dan-



vers for the year 1770; and I have Recorded the above in the Town Book According to their order.

"Att: SAM: HOLTEN Jun. T. Cler.

Captain Jonathan Ingersoll, Benajah Collins and Samuel Page were chosen in 1811 "to consider the expediency of the Town erecting hay-scales," and their report sets forth the need of such scales near the south meeting-house, "and we also find that a considerable quantity of hay is annually purchased on the road leading from the plains (so-called) to Salem, and that a hay-scale erected in some suitable place on that road would make it very convenient for the inhabitants of that part of the Town, and further, we find from the best information we can obtain that the expense of erecting one hay-scale with all the apparatus thereto will amount to about one hundred and seventy-five dollars."

The acceptance of this report was doubtless the origin of certain massive arrangements of beams, tackle and steel-yards, which, within the memory of older citizens, stood nearly in front of the Baptist Church at Danversport, and which weighed whatever was driven beneath by lifting wagon and load bodily from the ground. The selectmen were, in 1836, instructed to sell "the Hay Scales at the Neck."

Among those who were licensed to knock down the goods and chattels of their friends and neighbors under the auctioneer's hammer in the first quarter of this century were Sylvester Proctor, John Fowler, Benjamin Porter, Captain Thomas Putnam, Eleazer Putnam, Joseph Shed, Porter Kettell and Stephen Upton. Dr. Shed was an auctioneer from 1818 nearly or quite all the time to his death, in 1853. Those who began service in the second quarter were William D. Joplin, Hathorne Porter, Edward Stimpson, Squires Shove, Daniel P. Clough, Thomas Trask; since 1850, Richard Hood, William Dodge, S. D. Shattuck, Alfred Porter, John A. Putnam, Charles H. Rundlett, William B. Morgan, George Faxon, T. P. Conway.

The tax collectors of the early years of the town glad enough doubtless to meet with ready payment in any sort of money, were nevertheless bothered to reduce the several kinds of currency, silver and continental notes of old and new issues, to a common standard. Distraining and tax sales were rare, and abatements common. The assessors left short minutes of their reasons for abatement, such as "Gone," "Poor and dead," "G. P's dam gave way," "Under captivity by the Indians," "Taxed twice," "Taxed wrong," "Old and lost his faculty," "Poor widow," "Being gone to sea fishing," "Being not well," "Broke his leg," "Not 16 years old."

A move was made as early as 1813 towards the creation of a Board of Health. At that time certain persons asked the town to petition the Legislature for authority to elect such officers. The proposition was dismissed, however, and not till nearly twenty years later, 1832, was the first board chosen. Its

members were Benjamin Jacobs, Oliver Saunders, J. W. Proctor, Thomas Cheever, Samuel Preston, Joseph Stearns, Jeremiah Putnam, Robert S. Daniels and Richard Osborn. Since then a Board of Health have been annually chosen.

TOWN CLERKS AND RECORDS.—The records of the town clerks have reached the thirteenth volume. As a whole, they have been kept remarkably well. A good recording officer must have continually in mind the fact that the writing will outlive the writer and must preserve in his records a full and clear statement of events which shall be of use when they can no longer be aided by the memory of any. Such true quality was possessed by our earliest town clerks, and the spirit has been, for the most part, transmitted through the line. In one hundred and thirty-five years of town life there have been twenty different clerks, the average length of whose terms is about six and a half years. Since 1800 there have been but seven, the terms of three of whom comprise seventy-three years. Here follows a complete list of

TOWN CLERKS.

1752-53. Daniel Epes, Jr.	1777. Samuel Flint.
1754-56. James Prince.	1778-86. Stephen Needham.
1757. Benjamin Prescott, Jr.	1787. Jonathan Sawyer.
1758-60. James Prince.	1788-90. James Porter.
1761. Benjamin Prescott, Jr.	1791-94. Gideon Foster.
1762. Gideon Putnam.	1795-1800. Joseph Osborn, Jr.
1763. Thomas Porter.	1801-28. Nathan Felton.
1764-66. Archelaus Dale.	1829-34. Benj. Jacobs.
1767. Thomas Porter.	1835-53. Joseph Shed.
1768-71. Samuel Holten, Jr.	1854-55. Nathan H. Poor.
1772. Gideon Putnam.	1856. Edwin F. Putnam.
1773-75. Samuel Holten, Jr.	1857-85. A. Sumner Howard.
1776. Stephen Needham.	1886. Joseph E. Hood.

Mr. Howard's twenty-eight years is the longest service, and was appropriately recognized by appreciative resolutions when he declined to serve longer. Mr. Poor, who was clerk of the old town at the time of division, has ever since been retained as clerk of South Danvers and Peabody. Before the building of the town-houses the records followed the abode of the clerks. A small projection in front of one of the houses where the old Ipswich Road crosses the Andover turnpike, and begins to climb Hog Hill, is recalled by a few aged people as the headquarters of Nathan Felton, whom they remember as an old man dispensing the rude justice of a country squire. Much of biographical interest might and ought to be written of many of these town clerks, but space here forbids. Perhaps the model clerk of all was Dr. Shed, a man who evidently loved to make his records clear and beautiful. He was a physician of the South Parish, residing on the main street opposite and a little below the old bank building, where he also had an apothecary store. Dr. Shed was a justice of the peace, and he drew and acknowledged most of the deeds by which his fellow-citizens made their real-estate conveyances. His death was formally announced at a meeting in Granite Hall April 11, 1853,



when Dr. Hunt presented resolutions of regret and respect, and the selectmen and other town officers were directed to attend, in official capacity, the funeral.

Up to the annual meeting of 1887, the town has held nine hundred and forty meetings. Of this number, 309 were held in the several meeting-houses of the First or North Church (of which number 25 were in the "Brick Meeting-house," and 22 at "Village Hall," the basement of the present meeting-house), 293 were held in the South Meeting-house, 2 in school-house No. 5, 17 at Liberty Hall, 2 at Chapman's Tavern, 4 at the hall of Benjamin Goodridge, 96 at Union Hall, 39 at Granite Hall (vestry of the Maple Street Church), 172 in the Town-Hall, 6 at places not named. One of the meetings at "Liberty Hall, in the house occupied by Geo. Southwick, Jun., Innholder," was called there in 1828 by reason of the refusal of the proprietors of the South Church to allow the use of their house, and at this meeting a familiar parliamentary form was slightly but pungently varied; it was voted "that the communication from the Proprietors of the South Meeting-house pass under the table."

The first attempt at a systematic index of the records was made in 1832. Then the selectmen were directed to have made a "digested index of the town records from the commencement thereof in a book specially for this purpose, with reference to the volume and page in which the subject may be found." They were to allow such compensation for the work as when completed they should judge it worth. Nine years later, on petition of J. W. Proctor and others, the index was brought up to date, and it was then made the duty of the clerk to make an annual index. Measures were taken in 1846 "for keeping the records in one office, rather than in separate places, as now kept." But the old indexes have been found to be imperfect, and, with the accumulated records of later years, need has been felt of a new index, based upon a thorough and systematic overhauling of the originals. A few years ago J. W. Porter, J. A. Putnam and I. W. Andrews were appointed to take the matter in hand. They consulted at first and from time to time with William P. Upham, an expert in such matters, and obtained the services of Miss Helen Tapley to do the practical work. The town clerk's records have all been thus indexed, and it is safe to say that no other town can surpass the accuracy and general excellence of this work, and but few can equal it. A new vault has been constructed for files and plans in the basement, and the old one for ordinary use has been much enlarged.

MODERATORS.—From 1752 to 1887, inclusive, thirty-five different men have presided over the one hundred and thirty-five annual town-meetings. A list of these moderators arranged chronologically according as their names first appear, with subsequent years of service, if any, given, is as follows, the right

hand column showing at a glance the total service of each:

	Years.
Daniel Epes, Esq., 1752, '53.....	2
Capt. Thos. Porter, 1754.....	1
Daniel Epes, Jr., Esq., 1755, '56, '57, '59, '60, '65, '66, '67....	8
Samuel Flint, 1758.....	1
Thomas Porter, 1761, '62, '63, '71, '72.....	5
Deacon Malachi Felton, 1764.....	1
Samuel Holten, Jr., 1768, '81, '84, '86, '87, '89, '90, 1796-1812..	24
Gideon Putnam, 1769, '79, '83, '85, '93, '94, '95.....	7
Archelans Dale, 1770, '73, '76.....	3
Capt. Wm. Shillaber, 1774, '75, '77, '78, '88, '91, '92.....	7
Amos Putnam, 1780, '82.....	2
Samuel Page, 1813, '14.....	2
Dr. Andrew Nichols, 1815, '16, '17.....	3
Dr. Joseph Shed, 1818.....	1
Dr. George Osgood, 1819, '21, '25, '35.....	4
Capt. Thos. Putnam, 1820.....	1
Nathan Poor, 1822, '23, '24.....	3
Robert S. Daniels, 1826.....	1
Elias Putnam, 1827, '29, '31.....	3
Lewis Allen, 1828, '46, '48, '50, '52, '54.....	6
John W. Proctor, 1830, '32, '34, '36, '38, '40.....	6
John Preston, 1833, '37.....	2
Samuel P. Fowler, 1839, '43.....	2
Abel Nichols, 1841.....	1
Daniel P. King, 1842.....	1
Jonathan Shove, 1844.....	1
Moses Black, Jr., 1845, '47, '51.....	3
James D. Black, 1849, '53, '55, '57, '65.....	5
Israel W. Andrews, 1856, '70, '77.....	3
Wm. Endicott, 1858, '59, '62, '63, '66, '67, '68, '69.....	8
A. A. Putnam, 1860, '61.....	2
Charles P. Preston, 1864.....	1
George Tapley, 1871, '72, '74, '78, '79, '80, '81.....	7
George J. Sanger, 1873, '75, '76, '82, '83, '84.....	6
Daniel N. Crowley, 1885, '86.....	2
Alden P. White, 1887.....	1

It may be noticed with what regularity honors alternated from say, 1826, to division, 1856, the office being held by north parish men odd years, and by south parish men even years.

TREASURERS.—There have been from 1752 to 1887, inclusive, twenty-one treasurers of the town, as follows:

	Years.
James Prince, 1752, '53.....	2
Samuel King, 1754.....	1
Joseph Osborne, 1755, '59.....	2
Cornet Samuel Holten, 1757, '58.....	2
Joseph Southwick, 1759.....	1
James Smith, 1760-69.....	10
Thos. Porter, 1770-72.....	3
Jeremiah Page, 1773, '74.....	2
Stephen Proctor, 1775-83.....	9
Gideon Putnam, 1784-88.....	5
Samuel Holten, 1789-1812.....	24
Samuel Page, 1813, '14.....	2
Ward Pool, 1815-18.....	4
Edward Southwick, 1819-24.....	6
Ebenezer Shillaber, 1825-31.....	7
Robert S. Daniels, 1832, '41-48.....	9
Stephen Upton, 1833-40.....	8
Abner Sanger, 1849.....	1
Francis Baker, 1850-55.....	6
William L. Weston, 1856-82.....	27
A. Frank Welch, 1882-87.....	6

REPRESENTATIVES.—The following men have represented Danvers in the General Court, arranged by consecutive years after 1802, when the town began to send several representatives annually:



Daniel Epes, Jr., 1754, '55, '56, '57, '65, '67.
 Daniel Gardner, 1759.
 Thomas Porter, 1760, '61, '62, '63, '65.
 John Preston, 1764.
 Samuel Holten, Jr., 1768, '69, '70, '71, '72, '73, '75, '80, '87.
 Wm. Shillaber, 1775.
 Samuel Epes, 1776.
 Jeremiah Hutchinson, 1777, '78, '79, '80-83, '85-88.
 Gideon Putnam, 1784.
 Israel Hutchinson, 1789, '91-95, '97, '98.
 Caleb Low, 1799.
 Gideon Foster, 1795, '99, 1800-2.
 1804.—Gideon Foster, Capt. Samuel Page, Dr. Nathan Read.
 1805.—Gideon Foster, Samuel Page, Nathan Felton.
 1806.—Gideon Foster, Samuel Page, Nathan Felton.
 1807.—Nathan Felton.
 1808.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Squiers Shove.
 1809.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Squiers Shove.
 1810.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis.
 1811.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis, Daniel Putnam.
 1812.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis, James Foster.
 1813.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis, James Foster.
 1814.—Samuel Page, Nathan Felton, Sylvester Osborn, Hezekiah Flint.
 1815.—Nathan Felton, Sylvester Osborn, Hezekiah Flint, William P. Page.
 1816.—Nathan Felton, William P. Page, Frederick Howes, John Swinerton, Jr.
 1817.—Daniel Putnam, Sylvester Osborn, Frederick Howes, Thomas Putnam.
 1818.—Frederick Howes.
 1819.—Nathan Felton, Dennison Wallis, Daniel Putnam, Thomas Putnam.
 1820-21.—Nathan Felton.
 1822.—William Sutton.
 1823.—Ebenezer Shillaber, John Page, Nathan Poor, Nathaniel Putnam.
 1824.—Nathan Poor.
 1825.—John Page, John Endicott.
 1826.—Jonathan Shove, Rufus Choate.
 1827.—Rufus Choate, Jonathan Shove.
 1828.—Jonathan Shove, Nathan Poor, Robert S. Daniels.
 1829.—Jonathan Shove, Elias Putnam.
 1830.—Elias Putnam, Jonathan Shove, Robert S. Daniels, Nathan Poor.
 1831 (May).—Nathan Poor, John Page, William Sutton, John Preston.
 1831 (November).—John Page, John Preston, Nathan Poor, Jonathan Shove.
 1832.—John Preston, John Page, Ebenezer Shillaber, Jonathan Shove.
 1833.—Jonathan Shove, Henry Cook, John Preston, John Page.
 1834.—John Preston, Henry Cook, Andrew Lunt, Eben Putnam, Jacob F. Perry.
 1835.—Jacob F. Perry, Andrew Lunt, Daniel P. King, Allen Putnam, Joshua H. Ward.
 1836.—Joshua H. Ward, Jacob F. Perry, Andrew Lunt, Caleb L. Frost.
 1837.—Caleb L. Frost, Eben Putnam, Samuel P. Fowler, Lewis Allen.
 1838.—Lewis Allen, Samuel P. Fowler, Henry Poor, Abel Nichols.
 1839.—Joshua H. Ward, Henry Poor, Samuel P. Fowler, Allen Putnam.
 1840.—Allen Putnam, Fitch Poole.
 1841.—Fitch Poole, Samuel Preston.
 1842.—Daniel P. King, Samuel Preston.
 1843.—Frederick Morrill, Joshua Silvester.
 1844.—Richard Osborn, Henry Fowler.
 1845.—Henry Fowler, Richard Osborn.
 1846.—Henry Fowler, Elijah W. Upton.
 1847.—Elijah W. Upton, Joshua Silvester.
 1848.—William Walcott, William Dodge.
 1849.—A. A. Abbott, John Hines.
 1850.—William Walcott, Otis Mudge, Henry A. Hary.
 1851.—John Hines, Philemon Putnam, Alfred A. Abbott.
 1852.—William Walcott.
 1853.—David Daniels, Philemon Putnam, James P. King.
 1854.—Joseph Jacobs, Francis Dodge, Israel W. Andrews.
 1855.—Israel W. Andrews, Eben S. Poor, Alonzo P. Phillips.

1856.—Arthur A. Putnam, Israel W. Andrews, Richard Smith.
 1857-58.—Francis P. Putnam.
 1859.—Arthur A. Putnam.
 1860.—George Tapley.
 1861-62.—James W. Putnam.
 1863-64.—Charles P. Preston.
 1865-66.—Simeon Putnam.
 1867-68.—Edwin Mudge.
 1869.—Abbott Johnson, of Wenham.
 1870-71.—George H. Peabody.
 1872-73.—George J. Sanger.
 1874.—John L. Robinson, of Wenham.
 1875-76.—Charles B. Rice.
 1877.—Israel W. Andrews.
 1878.—Charles B. Rice.
 1879.—Henry Hobbs, of Wenham.
 1880-81.—Gilbert A. Tapley.
 1882.—Alonzo J. Stetson.
 1883.—Andrew H. Paton.
 1884.—N. Porter Perkins, of Wenham.
 1885-86.—Malcolm Sillars.

To the great convention called in 1820 to make the first revision of the State Constitution, in which Daniel Webster, Judge Story, Leverett Saltonstall, Josiah Quincy and others were prominent figures, Danvers sent Caleb Oakes, John Page, Ebenezer Shillaber and Ebenezer King. At the gubernatorial election of 1851 voters were called upon to decide whether or no a convention should be called for another revision of the Constitution. The citizens of this town said "No," 681 to 556. The next year on the same question, "Yes," 638 to 636; in each case the voice of the town was the voice of the State. Delegates were chosen to meet at the State House, May 4, 1853. In this convention were Rufus Choate, Sidney Bartlett, Nathan Hale, George S. Hillard and others from Boston. Robert Rantoul, Marcus Morton, Jr., Henry K. Oliver, John B. Alley, R. H. Dana, Jr., Asahel Huntington, Otis P. Lord, Charles W. Upham and others from Essex County. John A. Putnam, now of Danvers, represented Wenham. At the election, March 7, 1853, the vote of Danvers was as follows:

Whole number of votes	736
Necessary to a choice	369
Milton P. Braman had	309
Samuel P. Fowler had	397
Alfred A. Abbott had	370
Andrew Nichols had	300
James D. Black had	297
Charles Estes had	289

Sixteen other candidates had from 1 to 39. Messrs. Braman, Fowler and Abbott were elected delegates. Each of the eight propositions submitted by the convention to the people were rejected by this town at the fall election of 1853 by an average vote of about 715 nays to 515 yeas.

Selectmen.—The following is a complete list:

1752.—Daniel Epes.	Captain Thomas Flint.
Captain Samuel Flint.	Cornett Samuel Holten.
Deacon Cornelius Tarball.	Samuel King.
Stephen Putnam.	Lieut. David Putnam.
Samuel King.	Ens. John Procter.
Daniel Gardner.	Jasper Needham.
Joseph Putnam.	1754.—Daniel Epes, Jr.
1753.—Daniel Epes, Jr.	Jasper Needham.

- Samuel Putnam.
James Prince.
Ebenezer Goodale.
1755.—Daniel Epes, Jr.,
Jasper Needham.
Capt. John Proctor.
James Prince.
Capt. Samuel Flint.
1756.—Daniel Epes, Jr.
Daniel Marble.
Capt. Thomas Flint.
Deacon Cornelius Tarble.
James Prince.
1757.—John Preston.
Francis Nurse.
Daniel Gardner.
Benj. Prescott, Jr.
Joseph Southwick.
1758.—James Prince.
Nathan Procter.
Jasper Needham.
Bartholomew Rea.
Benj. Upton.
1759.—James Prince.
Capt. Samuel Flint.
John Epes.
Ezekiel Marsh, Jr.
Ebenezer Jacobs.
1760.—James Prince.
Jasper Needham.
John Epes.
John Nichols.
John Preston.
1761.—Samuel Holten.
Nathaniel Pope.
Abel Mackintire.
Lieut. Saml. King.
Benj. Prescott, Jr.
1762.—Abel McIntire.
Benj. Russell, Jr.
Daniel Purrington.
Gideon Putnam.
Joseph Putnam.
1763.—Thos. Porter.
Saml. Holten.
John Epes.
John Proctor, Jr.
John Preston.
1764.—Benj. Putnam.
Archelus Dale.
John Putnam.
Stephen Procter.
Benj. Moulton.
1765.—Benj. Moulton.
John Putnam.
Stephen Procter.
Jona. Buxton.
Arch. Dale.
1766.—Archelus Dale.
Benj. Upton.
Jonathan Buxton.
John Swinerton.
Jonathan Tarble.
1767.—Samuel Holten, Jr.
John Epes.
Jonathan Tarbell.
Jonathan Buxton.
Ebenezer Goodell.
1768.—Jonathan Buxton.
John Epes.
Samuel Holten, Jr.
Ebenezer Goodell.
Gideon Putnam.
1769.—Samuel Holten, Jr.
Ebenezer Goodale.
Samuel Gardner.
William Shillaber.
Samuel King.
1770.—Saml. Holten, Jr.
Lieut. John Preston.
John Putnam.
Jonathan Buxton.
Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
1771.—Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
Jonathan Buxton.
Gideon Putnam.
Benj. Procter.
Samuel Holten, Jr.
1772.—Samuel Flint.
Wm. Shillaber.
Gideon Putnam.
Jonathan Buxton.
Benj. Procter.
1773.—Samuel Holten, Jr.
John Putnam.
Lieut. Arch. Putnam.
Benj. Porter.
Stephen Needham.
1774.—Samuel Holten, Jr.
Lieut. Arch. Putnam.
Wm. Poole.
Stephen Needham.
Jonathan Buxton.
1775.—Dr. Saml. Holten.
Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
Capt. Wm. Putnam.
Stephen Needham.
Ezra Upton.
1776.—John Epes.
Wm. Shillaber.
Stephen Needham.
Ezra Upton.
Edmund Putnam.
1777.—Capt. John Putnam.
Capt. Samuel Flint.
Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
Stephen Needham.
Phineas Putnam.
1778.—Stephen Needham.
Capt. Wm. Shillaber.
Benj. Procter.
Capt. John Putnam.
Phineas Putnam.
1779.—Colonel Enoch Putnam.
Ezra Upton.
Stephen Needham.
Major Samuel Epes.
James Prince.
1780.—Jona. Sawyer.
Daniel Putnam.
Capt. Joseph Porter.
Ezra Upton.
1781.—Capt. Joseph Porter.
Daniel Putnam.
Stephen Needham.
Samuel White.
Major Samuel Epes.
1782.—Stephen Needham.
Daniel Putnam.
Jonathan Sawyer.
Capt. Jos. Porter.
Capt. Gideon Foster.
1783.—Capt. Gideon Foster.
Daniel Putnam.
John Walcut.
Aaron Putnam.
Stephen Needham.
1784.—Stephen Needham.
Major Caleb Low.
Aaron Putnam.
Capt. Gideon Foster.
Daniel Putnam.
1785.—Jona. Sawyer.
David Prince.
Stephen Needham.
Daniel Putnam.
Col. Jeremiah Page.
1786.—Stephen Needham.
Stephen Putnam.
Daniel Putnam.
Capt. Jona. Procter.
Capt. Gideon Foster.
1787.—Jona. Sawyer.
Samuel Gardner.
Amos Tapley.
David Prince.
Timothy Leech.
1788.—David Prince.
Capt. Samuel Page.
Amos Tapley.
James Porter.
Stephen Needham.
1789.—David Prince.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Amos Tapley.
James Porter.
1790.—David Prince.
Capt. Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
James Porter.
John Brown.
1791.—Stephen Needham.
Gideon Foster.
John Kettell.
David Prince.
Amos Tapley.
1792.—Gideon Foster.
David Prince.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Stephen Needham.
1793.—Gideon Foster.
David Prince.
John Kettell.
Joseph Putnam.
Stephen Needham.
1794.—David Prince.
Stephen Needham.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Gideon Foster.
1795.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Stephen Needham.
David Prince.
John Kettell.
Zerubbabel Porter.
1796.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Stephen Needham.
Daniel Putnam.
1797.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Nathl. Webb.
Zerubbabel Porter.
Amos Tapley.
Elijah Flint.
1798.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Daniel Putnam.
Nathan Felton.
1799.—Nathan Felton.
Daniel Putnam.
John Kettell.
Amos Tapley.
Joseph Osborn, Jr.
1800.—Joseph Osborn, Jr.
Daniel Putnam.
Samuel Page.
John Kettell.
Nathan Felton.
1801.—Samuel Page.
Joseph Putnam.
Nathan Felton.
Zerubbabel Porter.
Elijah Flint.
1802.—Nathan Felton.
Johnson Procter.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jona. Walcut.
John Fowler.
1803.—Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Osborn.
John Preston.
Jona. Walcut.
John Fowler.
1804.—Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jonathan Walcut.
Johnson Procter.
John Fowler.
1805.—Nathan Felton.
Amos Tapley.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jona. Walcut.
John Fowler.
1806.—Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jonathan Walcut.
Thomas Putnam.
John Fowler.
1807.—Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Osborn.
Jonathan Walcut.
John Fowler.
Amos Tapley.
1808.—Thomas Putnam.
Nathan Felton.
Sylvester Procter.
Daniel Putnam.
Amos Tapley.
1809.—Nathan Felton.
Amos Tapley.
Levi Preston.
Thos. Putnam.
Daniel Putnam.
1810.—Nathan Felton.
Nathaniel Putnam.
Sylvester Procter.
Daniel Putnam.
Peter Cross, Jr.
1811.—Nathan Felton.
Levi Preston.
Jona. Walcut.
Daniel Putnam.
Andrew Nichols, Jr.
1812.—Nathan Felton.
Jona. Walcut.
Richd. Osborn.
Daniel Putnam.
Nathl. Putnam.
1813.—Nathan Felton.
Jona. Walcut.
Daniel Putnam.
Nathl. Putnam.
Richd. Osborn.
1814.—Nathan Felton.
Jonathan Walcut.
Nathaniel Putnam.
James Brown.
John Page.
1815.—Nathan Felton.
Nathaniel Putnam.



Jonathan Walcut. John Page. Sylvester Procter.	Jesse Putnam. Benjamin Jacobs.	1846.—Wingate Merrill. Kendall Osborn. Nathaniel Pope. William Dodge, Jr. Lewis Allen.	1864.—Jacob F. Perry. John A. Putnam. William Dodge, Jr.
1816.—Nathan Felton. Sylvester Procter. Nathaniel Putnam. Jonathan Walcut. Daniel Putnam.	1831.—John Preston. Benjamin Jacobs. Jacob F. Perry. Eben Putnam, Jr. Joseph Shed.	1847.—Lewis Allen. Wingate Merrill. Nathaniel Pope. William Dodge, Jr. Moses Black, Jr.	1865.—Jacob F. Perry. William Dodge, Jr. John A. Putnam.
1817.—Nathan Felton. Jona. Walcut. Sylvester Procter. Daniel Putnam. Nathaniel Putnam.	1832.—Benjamin Jacobs. Kendall Osborn. Lewis Allen. John Preston. Jacob F. Perry.	1848.—Nathaniel Pope. Wingate Merrill. Moses Black, Jr. Lewis Allen. Kendall Osborn.	1866.—Jacob F. Perry. William Dodge, Jr. John A. Putnam.
1818.—Joseph Shed. Israel Putnam, Jr. Thomas Putnam. Jesse Putnam. Moses Preston, Jr.	1833.—John Preston. Kendall Osborn. Jacob F. Perry. Benjamin Jacobs. Nathaniel Pope.	1849.—Otis Mudge. Elias Savage. Abel Preston. William Dodge, Jr. Eben S. Upton.	1867.—William Dodge, Jr. Simeon Putnam. Henry A. Perkins.
1819.—Israel Putnam, Jr. Thomas Putnam. Jesse Putnam. Joseph Shed. Moses Preston, Jr.	1834.—John Preston. Joseph Tufts, Jr. Benjamin Jacobs. Nathl. Pope. Kendall Osborn.	1850.—Lewis Allen. Richard Osborn. Samuel Preston. Kendall Osborn. Francis Dodge.	1868.—William Dodge, Jr. Simeon Putnam. Henry A. Perkins.
1820.—Israel Putnam, Jr. Thomas Putnam. Jesse Putnam. Joseph Shed. Moses Preston, Jr.	1835.—Nathaniel Pope. Samuel P. Fowler. Eben Putnam. Lewis Allen. Henry Poor.	1851.—Kendall Osborn. Francis Dodge. William Endicott. Daniel Emerson. Aaron F. Clark.	1869.—William Dodge, Jr. Simeon Putnam. Henry A. Perkins.
1821.—Thomas Putnam. Joseph Shed. Jesse Putnam. Moses Preston, Jr. Elias Putnam.	1836.—Lewis Allen. Nathaniel Pope. Eben S. Upton. Samuel P. Fowler. Joseph Tufts, Jr.	1852.—Kendall Osborn. Richard Osborn. William Endicott. Aaron F. Clark. Edwin Mudge.	1870.—William Dodge, Jr. John A. Perkins. Josiah Ross.
1822.—Jesse Putnam. Elias Putnam. Nathan Felton. Moses Preston, Jr. Joseph Stearns.	1837.—Nathaniel Pope. Abel Nichols. Samuel P. Fowler. Joseph Tufts, Jr. Ebenezer Sutton.	1853.—Kendall Osborn. Leonard Poole. Edwin Mudge. Aaron Putnam. Elias Savage.	1871.—William Dodge, Jr. Henry A. Perkins. Josiah Ross.
1823.—Jesse Putnam. Joseph Stearns. Elias Putnam. Moses Preston, Jr. Jonathan Shove.	1838.—Samuel P. Fowler. Elijah Upton. Joseph Tufts, Jr. Eben Sutton. Nathaniel Pope.	1854.—Lewis Allen. Leonard Poole. Joel Putnam. Benj. F. Hutchinson. Nathan H. Poor.	1872.—William Dodge, Jr. Henry A. Perkins. Joshua Bragdon.
1824.—Jesse Putnam. Joseph Stearns. Elias Putnam. Moses Preston. Jonathan Shove.	1839.—Elijah Upton. Nathaniel Pope. Samuel P. Fowler. Joseph Tufts, Jr. Abel Nichols.	1855.—Abel Preston. William Walcott. Nathaniel Dodge. Moses J. Carrier. Augustus Fowler.	1873.—Henry A. Perkins. Joshua Bragdon. Samuel W. Spaulding.
1825.—Jesse Putnam. Elias Putnam. Joseph Stearns. Moses Preston. Jonathan Shove.	1840.—Elijah Upton. Nathaniel Pope. Andrew Torr. Andrew Lunt. Samuel P. Fowler.	1856.—William Dodge, Jr. Augustus Fowler. Charles P. Preston.	1874.—Joshua Bragdon. Henry A. Perkins. Otis F. Putnam.
1826.—Jesse Putnam. Jonathan Shove. Joseph Stearns. Elias Putnam. Moses Preston.	1841.—Henry Poor. William Black. Nathl. Pope. Elijah Upton. Joshua Silvester.	1857.—Augustus Fowler. Charles P. Preston. William Dodge, Jr.	1875.—Henry A. Perkins. Joshua Bragdon. Otis F. Putnam.
1827.—Jesse Putnam. Elias Putnam. Jonathan Shove. Robert S. Daniels. Nathan Felton.	1842.—Elijah Upton. Joshua Silvester. William Black. Joseph Poor, Jr. Wingate Merrill.	1858.—Rufus Putnam. Chas. P. Preston. Otis Mudge.	1876.—Henry A. Perkins. Joshua Bragdon. Otis F. Putnam.
1828.—Jesse Putnam. Jonathan Shove. Robert S. Daniels. Nathan Poor. Elias Putnam.	1843.—Wingate Merrill. Joseph Poor, Jr. Joshua Silvester. William Black. Perley Goodale.	1859.—Rufus Putnam. Chas. P. Preston. William Dodge, Jr.	1877.—Henry A. Perkins. Joshua Bragdon. Otis F. Putnam.
1829.—Jesse Putnam. Elias Putnam. Jonathan Shove. Nathan Poor. Daniel P. King.	1844.—Wingate Merrill. Joshua Silvester. Joseph Poor, Jr. Henry Fowler. Eben King.	1860.—Rufus Putnam. Chas. P. Preston. James M. Perry.	1878.—Charles H. Adams. Otis F. Putnam. Josiah Ross.
1830.—Elias Putnam. Jonathan Shove. Nathan Poor.	1845.—Wingate Merrill. Lewis Allen. Henry Fowler. Nathaniel Pope. William Dodge, Jr.	1861.—Francis Dodge. William Dodge, Jr. Charles Chaplin.	1879.—Henry A. Perkins. Josiah Ross. Harrison O. Warren.
		1862.—William Dodge, Jr. Charles Chaplin. Augustus Fowler.	1880.—Henry A. Perkins. Harrison O. Warren. Daniel P. Pope.
		1863.—James M. Perry. Jacob F. Perry. John A. Putnam.	1881.—Henry A. Perkins. Daniel P. Pope. Josiah Ross.
			1882.—Daniel P. Pope. Otis F. Putnam. Joshua Bragdon.
			1883.—Daniel P. Pope. Otis F. Putnam. Joshua Bragdon.
			1884.—Daniel P. Pope. Joshua Bragdon. Otis F. Putnam.
			1885.—Daniel P. Pope. Joshua Bragdon. Otis F. Putnam.
			1886.—Daniel P. Pope. Joshua Bragdon. Otis F. Putnam.
			1887.—Daniel P. Pope. Joshua Bragdon. Otis F. Putnam.



One of the propositions for disposing of the new school building in the short-lived district No. 8 was to convert it to a lock-up and tramp-station, but the town then refused to believe itself sufficiently advanced in modern civilization to need a separate building devoted to such uses. Soon, however, 1864, accommodations for guests of the public, voluntary and otherwise, were fitted in the basement of the town-hall, and there for ten years some sin and vagrancy retired behind the bars. When in 1874, better conveniences were demanded, a part of the basement of Bell's Hall, on Maple Street, was fitted up. This past year, 1886, a considerable addition was made to the old brick school-house on School Street—the original building being now occupied by two companies of the fire department—and ample and respectable police headquarters have there been established, with plenty of room above for a local court,—when it comes. Michael J. Mead has been for some years chief of the small police force, which is efficient much beyond its numerical strength. William O'Neil presides over the station and dispenses the town's hospitality to certain of the traveling public.

CHAPTER XL.

DANVERS—(Continued).

THE CIVIL WAR.

AT twenty minutes past four o'clock on the morning of April 12, 1861, a shell from Sullivan's Island aimed at Fort Sumter announced the open defiance of rebellion. The loyal cities and towns of the North were alert for such tidings. About a week previously two of the selectmen of Danvers, William Dodge, Jr., and Charles Chaplin, had issued their warrant for a town meeting "to hear an act on the petition of A. A. Putnam and others to see if the town will raise or appropriate any money in aid of the families of such citizens of the town as may enlist to serve in the Volunteer Militia of the Commonwealth or take any action thereon." This is the first intimation on the town records of preparations for probable war. But the news from Sumter brought the citizens together sooner than the day appointed for town meeting. The first "war meeting" was held in the town hall, April 16th, and was crowded with earnest and enthusiastic men. Arthur A. Putnam, Esq., presided. In some recently written reminiscences he says, "the meeting, though stormy in applause and verbally bellicose, was very aimless and likely to end in talk alone until a modest and unfamiliar voice in the town hall reminded the assemblage that the meeting was not for eloquence, but enlistment." The voice was that of Nehemiah P. Fuller, who stepped forward to sign the company roll which Nathaniel A. Pope had received

permission from the State Department to recruit. At least one other name preceded Fuller's, that of Ruel B. Pray, who has the distinction of being the first recruit in a Danvers company; others followed that night, and in six days the roll was full and ready for organization. As the company was soon given the name of the Danvers Light Infantry, it will be spoken of by that name. Election of officers resulted as follows: Captain, Nehemiah P. Fuller; First Lieutenant, William W. Smith; Second Lieutenant, Ruel B. Pray; Third Lieutenant, William W. Gould; Fourth Lieutenant, D. W. Hyde. Captain Fuller, who was promoted during the war to major of the Second Heavy Artillery, was a son of Putnam Fuller, of this town, and a descendant of Lieutenant David, brother of General Israel Putnam, being a grandson of Major Ezra Putnam, one of the founders of Ohio. He had seen service in the Mexican War, and was just the man to command a company of willing but raw recruits. After the war he removed to Missouri, but returned here in broken health in the fall of 1880, and died February 3, 1881.

Immediately after the meeting of April 16th, some young men at the Plains took steps to organize another company. In the course of a week the number, fifty, were recruited, and met in the unfinished rooms of the Maple Street School-house, where the first lessons in drill were given by Benjamin E. Newhall. Organization was effected in due form, April 30th, in the Bank Hall, where the following officers were elected: Captain, Arthur A. Putnam; Lieutenants, Benjamin E. Newhall, Charles H. Adams, Jr., William J. Roome, George W. Kenney. Mr. Newhall not qualifying, the other lieutenants were each promoted one degree, and Elbridge W. Guilford was added.

Captain Putnam, then a lawyer here, now of Uxbridge, Mass., was a native of Danvers, a son of Hon. Elias Putnam. This year, 1887, he delivered the Memorial Day Address before an audience which included many survivors of his old comrades, and later published in the *Danvers Mirror* a full and interesting account of the history of his company up to the time of leaving for the front. Mr. R. B. Pray had previously printed a short sketch of Capt. Fuller's Company. A newspaper clipping says of Capt. Putnam that he had no previous military training, "but possessing that energy and spirit noted in the Puritan blood, will soon make himself a proficient commander."

No sooner had the two companies organized than the ladies of the town devoted their energies to the making of uniforms and other necessary clothing. Gothic Hall was the busy scene of their labors. The men who enlisted expected active service at once, and were eager for it. But the time which ensued between organization and final acceptance by the State authorities and assignment to a State camp extended from days to long weeks, and made it serious business



keeping the men together. Many of them had families to support, and while patriotism did not flag, the bread and butter question at home was quite as vital as the question of slavery a thousand miles away. There were no bounties at this time; it was only by constant and generous contributions of money and provisions that the men were encouraged to hold out. But by dint of much patient forbearance both companies were kept intact, and maintained thorough drill. Long practice marches were taken through neighboring towns, and charges were occasionally made at double-quick to dislodge an imaginary enemy on the top of Folly Hill. For some time the Light Infantry went into camp by themselves, at East Gloucester, such a move being deemed expedient. Captain Putnam's company used Berry's pasture, now the Trotting Park, for a training-field. The local newspapers of the day contain such items as these:

"On Sunday morning, May 19th, the two Danvers companies marched with drum and fife to the Maple Street Church, and in the afternoon they attended the Universalist Church.

"The appearance of the men, one company in grey, and one in blue, is described as having been remarkably fine."

"Tuesday, May 28th. The Putnam Guards, a well ordered company of 79 men, of an average age of 27 years, passed through our place this afternoon, on their way to Salem. Their motion was nimble, their action strong and their eye quick and piercing. They have been accustomed to toil and moderate fare without luxuries, and will do the State good service when summoned to the field."

Of the origin of the name of "Putnam Guards," Captain Putnam thus writes:

"Of visitors at Gothic Hall while the ladies, as before mentioned, were immersed in the manufacture of the uniforms, there came one day Mrs. Julia A. Philbrick, of Boston, who, warmed at the sight of the scene, went away carrying it as an impressive picture in mind. A few days later she addressed an appreciative letter to one of the chief workers, Miss Anne L. Page, and in it embraced a proffer in these pleasant words:—

"I have used my pen in your behalf, and to-day have the pleasure of informing you that, if your Company is called the *Putnam Guards*, they shall have a Banner worthy the name they bear. There is living in Peterborough, N. H., a most noble and patriotic lady, who bears that honored name, whose father was born in Danvers, yes, beneath the very roof with the old General (that dear old home, the home of my childhood)—to this lady, Miss Catherine Putnam, you are indebted for this proffered benefaction."

"The proposition for the name was duly submitted to the Company, unanimously adopted and the Flag at once became a matter of joyous anticipation."

The presentation of the flag, May 22, 1861, was an event of great interest. A stand draped with the national colors was reared in front of the Bank Building, and during the exercises the Square and all the surrounding buildings were densely crowded with spectators. Mr. Nathaniel Hills, principal of the High School presided, and Hon. John D. Philbrick, then superintendent of schools in Boston, to whom this honor had been assigned by the donor of the flag, made the presentation speech. On the same occasion Rev. A. P. Putnam, then of Roxbury, a brother of the commander, presented each member of the company with a Bible, accompanying the act with an impressive address. The flag was of heavy silk, and a silver plate upon its oaken staff was thus inscribed:

"PRESENTED
to the
PUTNAM GUARDS
of
DANVERS, MASS.,
BY
MISS CATHERINE PUTNAM,
Daughter of a Son
of
DANVERS.
Our Birth-right is Freedom
and God is our Trust.
MAY, 1861."

It is now, and has been for many years, in the custody of John G. Weeden, one of the original members of the Guards. The Danvers Light Infantry were also given a reception before their departure for the State camp, on which occasion Rev. J. W. Putnam presented them with a silk banner in behalf of the citizens, and Allen Putnam, of Roxbury, in behalf of Miss Putnam, presented an elegant sash and sword to Captain Fuller. Side-arms were also presented to the officers by certain citizens.

It was nearly two months after the organization of the companies that they were finally called for by the State authorities. On June 11th, 1861, the Danvers Light Infantry were ordered to report at Camp Schouler, Lynnfield, and on June 24th the Putnam Guards reported at Fort Warren. The Light Infantry were assigned to the Seventeenth Volunteer Infantry, three years' men, as Company C, were mustered into the service of the United States July 22, 1861, and left for the front August 22d.

The Putnam Guards became Company I of the Fourteenth Volunteer Infantry, were mustered into service of the United States July 5, 1861, and left for the seat of war August 7th. The regiment was changed, January 1, 1862, to the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery. It saw hard service and participated in engagements at Spottsylvania, North Anna, Tolopotomy, Cold Harbor, Petersburg, Strawberry Plains, Deep Bottom, Poplar Spring Church, Boydton Road, Hatcher's Run, Vaughn Road. The original members of both these Danvers companies may be determined by inspection of the list of soldiers which follow later on.

The first military funeral of the war, in Danvers, was that of Thomas A. Musgrave, of Captain Fuller's company, who died August 9, 1861, at the Lynnfield camp hospital. The whole regiment marched to the Universalist Church, where the services were held. Private William F. Guilford, a member of the Salem City Guards, was buried under arms a few weeks later from Dr. Braman's Church.

At the town meeting of May 25, 1861, which had been already called when news came of the attack on Fort Sumter, A. A. Putnam presided and Dr. Ebenezer Hunt presented a series of resolutions, which were adopted, one hundred and eighteen to three, in the following form,—the clergymen of the



town having first been added to the committee therein called for:

"WHEREAS, War has been forced upon us without justifiable cause by traitors whose avowed object is the subversion of the Government and the dissolution of the Union by armed resistance to Law, and whereas our Patriotic fellow-citizens have been barbarously slain while hastening to the defence of the Capitol at the call of the Chief Magistrate in pursuance of his solemn Oath of office, and whereas our flag has been insulted, and our existence as a nation put in peril, therefore,

"Resolved, By the citizens of Danvers, in town-meeting assembled, that we will co-operate, to the fullest extent in our power, with all the good citizens throughout the whole country, in prosecuting the war with such vigor as to bring it to a speedy close.

"Resolved, That animated by the glorious memories of the past, our duty to posterity, our love for the Union, our reliance upon a just God, in a righteous cause, we will devote our whole energies in the accomplishment of the object, regardless of its cost in treasure or in blood.

"Resolved, That in this Contest there can be no neutrality; whoever is not for us is against us; and that all bearing arms and not ranged beneath the flag of the Union, wherever found, shall be dealt with as traitors.

"Resolved, That the Treasurer of the town be authorized to borrow a sum, not exceeding Ten Thousand Dollars, for the uses of the town for the above purposes, which shall be designated as a War Fund. In order to carry out the above Resolutions it is further

"Resolved, That a committee consisting of the Selectmen of Danvers, together with Daniel Richards, John R. Langley, C. P. Preston, E. Hunt, S. P. Fowler (a committee appointed by the citizens to disburse the fund raised by Voluntary Contribution), and five other gentlemen be appointed to take into consideration all applications for aid consequent upon our citizens being called upon to enlist in the service of our Country, either during the time of Drilling in anticipation of being enrolled, or while in actual service, and the said Committee are hereby authorized and empowered to render such aid to the families of any such citizens as in their judgment is needful, by a draft on the Treasury of the Town, on the War Fund, signed by such a sub-committee as said Committee shall select; that said Committee shall hold stated and regular meetings as often as once in two weeks, of which due notice shall be given, and they may hold meetings at such other times as they may deem necessary and may make all such rules and regulations in reference to the disbursing of the money appropriated as a War Fund as may from time to time be deemed expedient.

"They recommend to fill the blank in the committee, by selecting the following gentlemen, who together with those above named will distribute the Committee in the various parts of the town, viz.:

"Jesse W. Snow, Philemon Putnam, Nathan Tapley, Josiah Gray and John A. Sears. All of which is respectfully submitted."

Seven months after the first town meeting, another was called for December 19, 1861, to provide for aid to the families of soldiers agreeable to an act of the special session of the Legislature. Information was first desired as to the disbursement of the ten thousand dollars raised in May, and the committee were prepared with a report containing these items:

"There has been paid out for drilling \$1091.37. There has also been paid to one hundred and seventy-three families as aid in various sums of from one dollar to five dollars and a half per week, making in the gross amount \$2900.26. There is now due to families and undrawn one hundred and thirty-nine dollars, making the amount drawn from the Treasury \$2947.73. Of this sum your Committee estimate that the sum of five thousand eight hundred dollars will be received from the Commonwealth."

"The Committee will also say that the number of families assisted at the present time is one hundred and forty-three, the amount now paid each family is from one to four dollars per week. Your Committee would further say, although the amount of money expended is a large sum in the aggregate, yet, when we consider the condition of many of the families of the Volunteers owing to the stagnation of business and the want of employment for several months previous to their enlistment, we think the wonder is that so little has answered for the purpose. If by even a greater sacrifice of property the Government of the Country is

rescued from the unscrupulous attacks of a widespread and atrocious rebellion, which threatens our very existence as a Nation, we ought to be exceedingly thankful:—at any rate, the tax-payers of the Town will have reason to feel that the old Town of Danvers, by encouragement of the enlistment of her patriotic sons, has not fallen from the reputation acquired in the times of the Revolution.

"And may God grant us a speedy and honorable peace. All of which is respectfully submitted. In behalf of the Committee.

"EDEN HUNT."

At an adjournment of this meeting \$5000 was appropriated for soldiers' aid, in accordance with the act of May, 1861, and \$500 additional to be expended under the authority of the committee appointed May 3d.

At the annual meeting, 1862, the finance committee recommended the adoption of annexed votes proposed by the chairman of the relief committee, which were, first, that a relief committee, like that of last year, be chosen for the ensuing year to aid in the distribution of the War Fund; second, that the sum of \$15,000 be raised and appropriated for aid to soldiers' families, under the statutes; and, third, that \$500 be placed at the disposal of the relief committee. These measures were all passed and the committee re-elected. \$1000 was at the same time added to the appropriation for the town's poor.

At a meeting held in midsummer, July 25, 1862, the Governor's call for one hundred and four volunteers was considered, and, agreeable to the expressed desire of a mass-meeting of citizens held ten days before, the matter of bounty was the chief object of action. The first offer of bounty here made by the town was on the adoption of J. D. Black's motion, 96 to 1, to pay \$125 "to whatever person may report himself to the selectmen of Danvers, upon his being or having been accepted into the United States service, as furnishing a part of our quota."

On August 4, 1862, the first draft was ordered, for 300,000 nine months men. Early in that month a town-meeting was held, at which it was first voted to continue the payment of bounty until our quota of volunteers was full, and to include also drafted men; but this action was reconsidered, and Henry Fowler, Wm. E. Putnam and the Selectmen were appointed "to wait upon the Governor and to ascertain if our quota can be reduced, to get further information in regard to the draft, and to report at the next town-meeting."

On the heels of this meeting came Lincoln's call for 300,000 more men. Immediately another warrant was posted, calling upon the citizens of Danvers to meet on Monday, August 25th, to consider the call. A motion that the selectmen open a recruiting office and pay \$100 bounty to each recruit volunteering and making one of the quota under the call, was successfully amended to \$125.

The committee appointed August 12th, to attempt to secure a reduction of the quota, presented a letter to the Adjutant-General in the following forcible and direct terms:



"To HON. WM. SCHOULER, Adjutant-General.

"DEAR SIR,—We, the undersigned, would represent that the town of Danvers has furnished the following volunteers for the war :

3 months men.....	37
3 years men, to June 1st, 1862.....	285
Salem Cadets, Fort Warren.....	10
Salem Light Infantry, Co. B.....	6
Under General Order No. 26.....	70
	398
3 months men re-enlisted.....	17
	381

"The Town has paid to Volunteers under General Order No. 26 Eight Thousand Seven Hundred and Fifty Dollars (\$8750). By the Adjutant-General's Report to the Leg. of 1862 the town of Danvers had furnished for the war Eight officers and Two hundred and fifty-six privates, giving one Volunteer to fifteen inhabitants of the town, under the State census of 1855.

"This proportion exceeds that of the towns of Beverly, Gloucester, Haverhill, Ipswich, Lawrence, Lynn, Mablehead, Newburyport, Salem and South Danvers, from 9 to 57 per cent.

"The ninety-nine Volunteers received and put into the service of the United States since last December makes the same disproportion between the town of Danvers and the towns above referred to, hold good.

"The assessor, of 1861, in Danvers, mistaking the law on this matter, returned aliens on the Militia Roll, which materially increased our number liable to do military duty.

"The town of Danvers does not shrink from any duty imposed on her in this great crisis of our Country, neither will she fail to do her part in furnishing men to crush out this rebellion, but knowing from the above facts that the town has furnished more men in proportion to her inhabitants than the other large towns in the County, and feeling that the payment of the bounty to the thirty-four Volunteers required to fill the quota for Danvers of 164 men, will be burdensome beyond what strict equality would require of us, we ask, therefore, that the town, by furnishing seventy men under General Order No. 26, may be considered as having filled her quota."

Respectfully submitted,

WILLIAM DODGE, JR.	} Selectmen of Danvers.
CHARLES CHAPLIN.	
AUGUSTUS FOWLER.	

Danvers, August 14, 1862.

Approved,
WM. SCHOULER,
Adjt.-General.

In seventeen days, another meeting to act on propositions for more bounties, for three-years' men and drafted men, principals or substitutes. A motion made by Samuel Moore in the afternoon failed of passing, because but fifty-four voted for it, less than the by-laws required—it was hard work to get the requisite number together, so many were away during the war—but in the evening it passed, eighty to twelve, namely to pay one hundred and twenty-five dollars to each person, resident in town, who had enlisted for three years of the war, and was not already in receipt of a bounty, "provided said person has served nine months, or has been earlier discharged on account of injuries received in service; said bounty to be payable at the end of said volunteer's service." It was immediately voted to extend the bounty to drafted men.

Busy times, these, for selectmen and voters. While this meeting of the 11th was in session a warrant for still another meeting had already been two days posted, the special object being the consideration of a matter, which was disposed of by the unanimous adoption, eighty-six voting, of these resolutions presented by W. L. Weston :

"WHEREAS, at a legal meeting of the town on the 25th day of August last, it was voted 'to pay a bounty of \$125 to each recruit volunteering in the service of the United States, and making one of the town's quota under the call of the President for 300,000 military for nine months service,' and

"WHEREAS, acting under the belief that the town might be called upon for a considerable number of recruits to fill this requisition, a successful effort has been made to raise a Company under Capt. A. G. Allen—said Company having made arrangements by which it is to form a part of the 8th Regt. now being recruited under Col. Coffin, and have already placed themselves in Camp, and

"WHEREAS, it now appears to be uncertain whether the men so raised will be required as part of the town's quota, thus rendering said vote inoperative,

"Therefore, in view of the patriotic action of the young men composing said Company, and that the faith of the town has been pledged to them and also in view of the fact that other calls for men may be made upon the town, it is hereby

"Voted, that the town will pay a bounty of 125 dollars to each resident of Danvers who has volunteered, or may volunteer as a member of Capt. A. G. Allen's Company, upon his having been accepted and sworn into the United States service.

"Voted, that the town Treasurer be and is hereby authorized to hire a sum of money sufficient to pay the bounties mentioned in the above vote."

The names of the company here referred to, Company K, Eighth Regiment, nine months' men, mustered in October 1, 1862, and discharged August 7, 1863, will be found further on. The regiment sailed from Boston November 7, 1862, under Colonel Coffin, of Newburyport, for Newbern, N. C., and in June, 1863, was transferred to Baltimore, thence to Maryland Heights and experienced hard service in the pursuit of Lee after the battle of Gettysburg.

The adoption of the resolutions in regard to Captain Allen's company was the only business this meeting could in strictness consider. But there was a man present with something in his pocket to read, the man who in the first war town-meeting had voiced the determination of his fellow-citizens to stand by the government, who, long years before, had stood up to strike the first blow for temperance, and had been foremost in every reform and the uncompromising foe of wrong in whatever guise, and who, with the courage of his convictions, entered active service in the war despite his advancing years—Doctor Ebenezer Hunt. There is a ring to his words not unlike certain resolutions already quoted which came from the ancestors of these very men, citizens of Danvers in town-meeting assembled, in those other days which tried men's souls :

"WHEREAS—The town of Danvers has already furnished more than her full quota of men, and is ready and willing to send more if necessary, and to expend her last dollar in defence of the Common Country, Therefore—

"Resolved, that the citizens have a right to ask and do ask the Government for a vigorous prosecution of the war and that nothing shall be permitted to stand in the way of the progress of our armies in crushing out the rebellion and restoring to our country a speedy and permanent peace.

"Resolved—That had there been no slavery, there would have been no rebellion, and as the rebellion will continue so long as slavery exists, we, the citizens of Danvers, in town meeting assembled, ask, that the war forced upon us by the rebels in defence of slavery, shall be so prosecuted as to leave no vestige of that accursed institution."

The first of these resolutions was passed unanimously; three voters could not accept the second. At the fall



election, 1862, John A. Andrew received four hundred and twenty-six votes to one hundred and fifty for Charles Devens, Jr. February 9, 1863, five thousand dollars was appropriated for military aid.

At the annual meeting of 1863 the relief committee which had been at work during the previous year, reported that they had assisted two hundred and fifty-one families. "At the present time," they say, "the number is reduced to one hundred and ninety families receiving aid in various ways from one dollar per week to twelve dollars per month." A relief committee for the ensuing year were chosen,—Drs. Hunt and Chase, William Dodge, Jr., Nathan Tapley, John A. Sears, C. H. Gould, Josiah Gray, C. P. Preston, S. P. Fowler and Philemon Putnam.

At this time S. D. Shattuck and others petitioned for the purchase by the town of a lot in Walnut Grove Cemetery for the burial of deceased soldiers, and the selectmen were instructed to purchase the lot which has been used for this purpose.

The vote of September 11, 1862, as to bounty for three years' men was prospective; no appropriation was then made. It became necessary to think about a large appropriation. If at any time after nine months' service the war should end, these bounties would be at once payable. So in midsummer, 1863, a special meeting was called to see if the town would raise money to defray the expenditure contemplated by the vote of September 11th. This meeting, held first July 3d, after several adjournments unanimously voted to appropriate fifty thousand dollars for the purpose, a sum so large that Mr. Howard underlined the words when he entered the vote on the permanent records of the town. This amount was never paid nor raised, for the reason that certain citizens petitioned for an injunction, on the ground that such an appropriation was illegal, prohibiting the borrowing or payment of money under said vote. The case came before the Supreme Court in January, 1864, and is reported in Massachusetts Reports, 8 Allen 89, under the title "Samuel P. Fowler and others vs. Selectmen and Treasurer of Danvers." The decision turned on the interpretation of the statute of 1863, ch. 38, entitled "An act to legalize the doings of towns in aid of the war," and the court held that the statute while covering appropriations for bounties to induce enlistment, did not legalize a vote to pay money to persons who had already enlisted in the service of the United States.

There was a light vote for Governor in the fall of 1863,—Andrew receiving two hundred and seventy, Henry W. Paine forty-seven. At the March meeting of 1864, Dr. Hunt was again on hand with a report from his relief committee; two hundred and forty-five families, he said, had received State aid.

"Your committee propose to make no prediction in relation to a speedy peace. This subject is still a question of time. We can only say the omens are auspicious, and that if the people of the Loyal States shall do their duty in sustaining the Government in a vigorous prosecution of the war, and in following the leadings of Providence in the path

of Justice and Humanity, and if the heads of the Departments and other Politicians at the Capitol interest themselves as heartily in crushing out the Rebellion, as in making a new President, our honored flag will at length wave in triumph over a regenerated and glorious Union, inhabited only by Freemen."

At this same March meeting of 1864, fifteen thousand dollars were appropriated "for families of volunteers who have enlisted or may enlist during the present war." Once only in the summer of 1864 was there a special meeting, occasioned by the President's call for five hundred thousand more men, and at this time an appropriation of eleven thousand two hundred and fifty dollars was made for the purpose of filling our quota under this call.

At the presidential election in the fall of 1864, the Lincoln electors received five hundred and ninety-two Danvers votes against one hundred and twenty-five for the McClellan electors; John G. Whittier, of Amesbury, whom Danvers is now so proud to claim among its residents, was chosen elector from the Essex District over S. Endicott Peabody, of Salem. For Governor, John A. Andrew received five hundred and ninety-six votes; H. W. Paine, one hundred and twenty-five.

December 19, 1864, another call. "We're coming, Father Abraham, three hundred thousand more!" On the day after Christmas men read a warrant, summoning them to meet on the fourth day of the new year to face a demand for still more money. Voters were slow of coming forward, and, as on some other occasions during the war, adjournments and rallying-committee tactics were necessary; but finally, by a large vote, it was decided to pay another bounty of \$125 to each volunteer going to fill the town's quota under the new call.

Before November the men whom the majority of Massachusetts citizens had kept at the head of the State Government in these years of trial, had done with life. At the election of 1865 Danvers helped to elect his successor, Alexander H. Bullock, of Worcester, by a vote of 588, to 64 for Darius N. Couch, of Taunton.

Recruiting was ordered to be discontinued on April 13, 1865. Danvers furnished in all seven hundred and ninety-two men for the war, which was a surplus of thirty-six over and above all demands. Forty-four were commissioned officers. The total amount of money raised on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was \$36,596. The amount of State aid raised during the war for soldiers' families, 1861-65, amounted to \$66,068.11. The appropriations for aid made subsequently were,—1871, \$5000; 1872, \$4000, also \$200 for special cases not within the law; 1873, \$2000 and \$200 special; 1874, \$4000, \$200 special; 1875, \$3500, also \$150 special; 1876, \$2500, \$150; 1877, \$2500, \$150; 1878, \$150; 1879, \$100; 1880, \$800; 1881, \$1000; 1882, \$1000; 1883, \$800; 1884, \$600; 1885, \$600; 1886, \$700; 1887, \$700.

Of the voluntary contributions all through the years of the war, of money, materials, labor, amount-



ing in value to perhaps thousands of dollars, and cheerfully given, no record has been kept.

In the warrant for the annual meeting of 1868 appeared this article: "To see what action the town will take on the petition of S. P. Cummings and others to appropriate a sum of money for the purpose of erecting a suitable monument or tablets whereon shall be inscribed the names, age and date of death, of all Danvers soldiers and sailors who fell in the late war for the union." The matter, when reached, was referred to a committee, one from each school district: No. 1, William Dodge, Jr.; No. 2, E. T. Waldron; No. 3, J. F. Bly; No. 4, William R. Putnam; No. 5, Dean Kimball; No. 6, George Andrews; No. 7, Timothy Hawkes; No. 8, Rufus Putnam. S. P. Cummings was added.

At an adjournment, this committee reported recommending the erection of a monument at a cost of not less than three thousand dollars, that fifteen hundred dollars be appropriated by the town and the balance by subscription, through a committee of one from each district. The committee already appointed were made a subscription committee, to report at a meeting specially called when they should have secured the required sum.

At the March meeting the next year, 1869, the committee reported that they "have attended to their duty, and by the patriotism and generosity of our citizens we have been enabled to raise the required sum. The committee would, with the consent of the Trustees of the Peabody Park, recommend that place as the most appropriate for the erection of said monument."

The old committee were elected for the ensuing year, with the addition of the selectmen. But the question of location was not easily settled. At the next March meeting, 1870, a motion was introduced to place the monument in front of the Town House, but was withdrawn to give place to the proposition that, at the adjourned meeting a ballot-box be so placed that citizens might informally express in writing their preferences for location. The result of this ballot showed ninety-three votes for Peabody Park, and sixty-six for the Town House yard.

May 2d, Simeon Putnam was added to the committee. On that same day it was reported that the Trustees of the Peabody Institute had declined, on account of some legal objection, to allow the monument to be erected in the park. In the meantime, March 21st, an additional appropriation of sixteen hundred dollars was voted.

In June a special meeting was called to consider several important subjects, first of which was the report of the monument committee. Those who strongly favored the park as a location disliked to accept the decree of the trustees as final. Some one, to fame unknown, succeeded in getting recorded a pithy motion "that the Monument be paid for and stored until consent be obtained of the original

grantors and the Trustees," but not in getting it passed.

Mr. Augustus Mudge moved that the committee be instructed to place the monument on the Common at Danvers Centre. The motion was declared carried, was doubted, and on division was declared carried, one hundred and thirty-five to eighty-five. To clinch the matter, a vote was taken to re-consider, and lost.

This seemed decisive. Doubtless the inhabitants of the Centre, as they passed old Deacon Ingersoll's training field on some of those summer evenings, saw with no great stretch of imagination certain ghostly monumental outlines rising from the green sod, where soon the substantial shaft would consecrate anew the historic ground. But no. In just one week a warrant was issued to act on a petition for the re-location of the Soldiers' Monument. The meeting was held July 11th. Dr. Hunt moved for a re-location within half a mile of the flag-staff at the Plains. On a large vote by ballot the motion was carried,—yeas, 264; nays, 161. The definite location was then left with the committee, who decided upon the Town House yard. The monument was dedicated November 30, 1870. It is of Hallowell granite, thirty-three and one-quarter feet high, and seven and three-quarters feet square at the base; its total cost, \$6298.20, towards which sum Edwin Mudge contributed the larger part of his two years' salary as the Representative in the Legislature of the district composed of Danvers and Wenham, the remainder being presented to the latter town for a similar object. The names inscribed upon the monument are these:

MAJOR WALLACE A. PUTNAM,

LT. JAMES HILL.

Hector A. Aiken.	Daniel H. Gould.
Henry F. Allen.	Samuel S. Grout.
James Battye.	Ambrose Hinds.
Edwin Beckford.	Levi Howard.
Isaac Bodwell.	James J. Hurley.
Sylvester Brown.	Thomas Hartman.
James R. Burrows.	Abiel A. Horne.
Lewis Britton.	James H. Ham.
John H. Bridges.	Everson Hall.
William H. Croft.	Charles Hitter.
Simeon Coffin.	T. C. Jeffs.
H. Cuthbertson.	William W. Jessup.
Thomas Collins.	James W. Kelley.
Wm. H. Channell.	Moses A. Kent.
Charles W. Dodge.	James E. Lowell.
George H. Dwinell.	Samuel A. Lefflau.
Moses Deland.	Joseph Leavitt.
William C. Dale.	Charles H. Lyons.
George A. Ewell.	Charles E. Meador.
George W. Earl.	John Merrill.
Reuben Ellis.	T. A. Musgrave.
George A. Elliott.	James Morgan.
William S. Evans.	Michael McAuliff.
Nathaniel P. Fish.	William Metzgar.
Benj. M. Fuller.	Allen Nourse.
Eph'm Getchell.	William H. Ogden.
E. I. Getchell.	William H. Parker.
William F. Gilford.	George W. Peabody.
John Goodwin.	J. Frank Perkins.
C. W. C. Goudy.	George W. Porter.
Alonzo Gray.	Samuel M. Porter.



Alfred Porter.	Milford Tedford.
Robert W. Putnam.	Patrick Trainer.
Isaac N. Roberts.	Wm. F. Twiss.
S. P. Richardson.	John N. Thompson.
S. A. Rodgers.	Austin Upton.
Israel Roach.	Angus Ward.
Isaac Smith.	William Ward.
Henry A. Smith.	Joseph Woods.
Wm. E. Sheldon.	C. E. M. Welch.
Charles W. Sheldon.	George Woodman.
John Shackley.	John Withey.
Frank Scampton.	Nathan I. K. Wells.
Cornelius Sullivan.	George T. Whitney.
Patrick F. Shea.	Joseph F. Wiggins.
Joseph T. Smart.	Charles H. Young.
Edward Splane.	

A special meeting was called a week before Decoration Day, 1872, to see if the town would appropriate a sum of money in aid of Post 90, G. A. R., for the expenses of Memorial Day, and by a vote of eighty-four to two, two hundred dollars was appropriated. Each subsequent year at the annual meeting an amount varying from one hundred and fifty to two hundred dollars has been devoted to this purpose. Ward Post, 90, G. A. R., was organized June 8, 1869.

The list of Danvers volunteers which follows is made up chiefly from the official lists of Massachusetts volunteers compiled by Adjutant-General Schouler. These two large volumes contain a hundred and fifty thousand names, more or less, arranged only according to organization, and not according to towns, and therefore a close scrutiny of the entire list has been necessary to ascertain every Danvers volunteer credited to the quota of the State. It is thought that no omissions have been made. Some errors have been noticed and corrected; if others appear, the responsibility must rest on the official authority, referred to. The figures opposite the names give the age of first enlistment.

The members of the Danvers Light Infantry and of the Putnam Guards were not the first volunteers from Danvers. A number enlisted in the two Salem companies assigned to the Fifth Regiment, three months' men, mustered in May 1, 1861. In Company A, known as the Salem Mechanic Light Infantry, were these:

Age.		Age.	
James H. Sleeper, corporal.....	32	James Hill.....	20
Charles W. Allen.....	20	John H. Howard.....	19
Edwin Bailey.....	25	William Lufkin.....	25
Henry T. Briggs.....	21	Joseph C. Munsey.....	19
William Burroughs.....	28	James D. North.....	21
Joseph Burton.....	25	Chas. H. Phrippen.....	22
Lynnan D. Crosby.....	23	Chas. W. Ricker.....	18
George M. Crowell.....	20	Henry Sloper.....	29
George H. Fuller.....	25	Robert Smith.....	20
John T. Gilman.....	19	Mendall S. Webber.....	23

In Company H of the same regiment, the Salem City Guards, were these:

Age.		Age.	
Wm. F. Bickford.....	23	Henry H. Richardson.....	20
Charles W. Chase.....	20	Wm. H. Richardson.....	22
David A. Gifford.....	36	Edgar M. Riggs.....	24
John M. Hines.....	21	John N. Thompson.....	30
Edward Kelley.....	25	Herbert W. Very.....	22
James W. Lowe.....	19	George Webster.....	23

These men arrived at Annapolis April 24th, and were mustered into United States service as stated. They bore an honored part in the disastrous battle of Bull Run, July 21st, exactly three months after the regiment left Faneuil Hall. Henry T. Briggs was there taken prisoner, and was exchanged in 1862.

A list of Danvers volunteers in the three years' regiments:

Second Regiment.			
Age.		Age.	
David A. Fuller, Co. C.....	28	John Smith, Co. I.....	28
Levi E. Goodale, Co. C.....	19	James Patterson, recruit.....	32
John Stonehall, Co. C.....	20		

Ninth Regiment.			
Age.		Age.	
John Fitzpatrick, Co. B.....	26	Abram Yates, Co. E.....	21
James Brown, Co. D.....	23	Jas. McLaughlin, corp., Co. F.....	23
Daniel Buckley, Co. E.....	18	Ulick Burke, Co. F.....	24
Richard Bush, Co. E.....	32	Patrick Shea, Co. F.....	20

Tenth Regiment.			
Age.		Age.	
Wallace A. Putnam ¹	24	George W. Bigelow, 2d lieut.....	32

Eleventh Regiment.			
Age.		Age.	
Alexander Spinney, Co. C.....	29	George A. Ewell, Co. I.....	28
Michael McAuliffe, Co. D.....	22	Henry Beckett, recruit.....	22
Wm. Shackley, Co. G.....	30	James Finnerty, recruit.....	23
Honore L. Hadley, corp., Co. H.....	21	George A. Wilson, recruit.....	27

Fourteenth Regiment.
(See 1st Heavy Artillery below.)

Seventeenth Regiment.			
Age.		Age.	
Robert W. Jessop, Co. A.....	36	Chas. M. Goldthwait, Co. D.....	22
Geo. Putnam, Jr., corp., Co. B.....	18	Dominick McDavitt, Co. D.....	31
James Battye, Co. B.....	43	Thomas J. Shea, Co. D.....	26
Patrick Carr, Co. B.....	33	Artemas Wilson, Co. D.....	34
David Coleman, Co. B.....	44	Joseph H. Coley, Co. G.....	18
Lawrence Fox, Co. B.....	39	Nicholas Congdon, Co. G.....	25
George H. Goss, Co. B.....	22	Ephraim Getchell, Co. G.....	35
Thomas Hartman, Co. B.....	42	Wm. Ober, Co. G.....	27
James McCarty, Co. B.....	47	Seward Sylvester, Co. G.....	18
Andrew Patton, Co. B.....	38	Jas. Smith, sergt., 2d and 1st	
George Pitman, Co. B.....	34	lieut., Co. I.....	30
Reuben H. Coffin, Co. D.....	29		

COMPANY C, SEVENTEENTH REGIMENT.—Those marked with a star were original members of the Danvers Light Infantry.

Age.	
* Nehemiah P. Fuller, capt., promoted major 2d H. Artillery.....	31
* Wm. W. Smith, 1st lieut., promoted capt., major, lieut.-colonel.....	23
* Rud. B. Pray, 2d lieut., 1st lieut.....	24
* Lewis Cann, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut., capt.....	23
* Henry G. Hyde, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut.....	22
* Uriah Robertson, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut.....	30
Timothy Hawks, priv., 2d lieut., 1st lieut.....	44
* Robert Smith, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut.....	31
* Malcolm Sillars, 2d lieut., 1st lieut.....	29
* Andrew Cook, sergt., 2d lieut.....	30
* James Inman, sergt., 2d lieut.....	25
* Joseph G. Martin, sergt., 2d lieut.....	35
* George H. Putney, sergt.....	28
* Richard W. Fuller, pr., sergt.....	19
* Timothy Hawks, Jr., corp., sergt.....	26
* John B. Moores, pr., sergt.....	26
* Allen Nourse, sergt.....	21
* William H. Ogden, pr., sergt.....	21
* John F. Wells, pr., sergt.....	24
* Isaac Bodwell, corp.....	38
* Charles F. Brown, corp.....	27
* James Cochrane, corp.....	23

¹ Enlisted as 1st lieut., promoted major 50th Infantry; died of wounds.



		Age.			Age.			Age.
* David Cook, corp.	.....	35	Matthew C. West, Co. A.	.....	32	Alonzo P. Dodge, sgt., Co. G.	.....	23
* David H. Ogden, corp.	.....	23	Abel N. Tyler, Co. A.	.....	18	Tristram C. Jeffs, corp., Co. G.	.....	33
Patrick Sexton, pr., corp.	.....	20	Daniel Fuller, corp. Co. B.	.....	22	Jacob Bradbury, Co. G.	.....	41
George C. Wilson, musician.	.....	18	Geo. D. Choate, sgt. Co. C.	.....	28	Richard Hood, Co. G.	.....	68
Charles Hartman, musician.	.....	18	Francis S. Dodge, corp. Co. F.	.....	19	Chas. P. Trask, Co. G.	.....	19
<i>Privates.</i>			Francis S. Caird, Co. F.	.....	24	Chas. Annable, Co. K.	.....	34
		Age.			Age.			Age.
* Samuel D. Benson.	.....	23	* Lewis D. Moore.	.....	18	Jeremiah Cook, Co. F.	.....	35
* Charles H. Burchstead.	.....	22	* Archibald Morrison.	.....	25	Geo. H. S. Driver, Co. F.	.....	19
* Joseph N. Burchstead.	.....	29	* George H. Moulton.	.....	28	Charles H. Field, Co. F.	.....	46
* James H. Burrows.	.....	25	Andrew Mullen.	.....	21	George Newhall, Co. F.	.....	20
Simeon Coffin.	.....	21	* John Mundie.	.....	27	<i>Twenty-fourth Regiment.</i>		
* Wm. R. Crawford.	.....	19	Martin Murray.	.....	20	David H. Cunningham, Co. E.	.....	18
Wm. H. Croft.	.....	17	Owen Murphy.	.....	23	<i>Twenty-sixth Regiment.</i>		
John L. Cunningham.	.....	31	Wm. J. Murphy.	.....	27	George T. Welch, Co. B.	.....	20
* James W. Dickey.	.....	19	Edward North.	.....	19	<i>Twenty-eighth Regiment.</i>		
* George H. Dole.	.....	28	* David Pottingill.	.....	31			Age.
* Samuel W. Durgin.	.....	22	* Richard Poor.	.....	19	Jeremiah Murphy, Co. A.	.....	26
Joshua Goss.	.....	43	* Nathaniel W. Pope.	.....	23	John Dowdall, Co. E.	.....	20
* George W. Goss.	.....	18	James Prince.	.....	29	<i>Twenty-ninth Regiment.</i>		
* Rufus Hart.	.....	26	Charles H. Putnam.	.....	21			Age.
* Thomas Hartman.	.....	19	* George F. Putnam.	.....	23	Chas. D. Bedell, Co. D.	.....	21
James A. Holt.	.....	31	* Wm. Reynolds.	.....	23	George W. Field, Co. D.	.....	21
* Daniel A. Hyde.	.....	38	* Michael Riley.	.....	30	<i>Thirty-second Regiment.</i>		
* Thomas Hynd.	.....	41	John A. Roberts.	.....	18	Warren Thomas, Co. D.	.....	28
Andrew Kelly.	.....	40	Frank Scampton.	.....	39	<i>Thirty-third Regiment.</i>		
John Kelly.	.....	35	* George Scampton.	.....	32			Age.
* Jackson Kennedy.	.....	31	Joseph E. Shaw.	.....	18	Jas. Hill, sgt., Co. C.	.....	22
* Ezra D. Kimball.	.....	23	* John Shackley.	.....	33	Geo. O. Smith, corp., Co. C.	.....	40
Michael Kirby.	.....	21	* Daniel Smith.	.....	28	James Hopkins, Co. C.	.....	18
* David P. Lang.	.....	24	* Philip Sullivan.	.....	20	James Reynolds, Co. C.	.....	18
Joseph Leavitt.	.....	42	Jeremiah Toomey.	.....	21	Richard Landers, Co. E.	.....	22
* James Lee.	.....	22	* Patrick Toomey.	.....	23	<i>Thirty-fifth Regiment.</i>		
* James E. Lowell.	.....	22	* Patrick Trainer.	.....	19			Age.
* Melville Maley.	.....	18	* Ezra W. Watson.	.....	24	Daniel J. Preston, 1.	.....	45
John McCreary.	.....	36	Charles F. Wells.	.....	18	Edgar M. Itigges, 2d Lieut.	.....	25
* Alexander Men.	.....	43	Edwin G. Wells.	.....	18	<i>COMPANY F.</i>		
* George E. Moore.	.....	24	Edwin F. Welsh.	.....	38	Jas. H. Ham, corp.	.....	24
* John Moore.	.....	23	* Henry R. Wiggin.	.....	43	Seth S. Stetson, corp.	.....	23
* John B. Moores.	.....	26	* Joseph F. Wiggin.	.....	37	Wm. G. Colcord.	.....	20
John K. Moore.	.....	31	* Frederick Wright.	.....	28	Lewis W. Day.	.....	29
						Henry G. Dockham.	.....	43
						Chas. W. Dodge.	.....	25
						John F. Eveleth.	.....	19
						James A. Green.	.....	21
						Thomas E. Green.	.....	22
						George W. Hanson.	.....	19
						Ambrose Hinds.	.....	26
						<i>Thirty-eighth Regiment.</i>		
						George W. Stanley, unassigned recruit.	.....	24
						<i>Thirty-ninth Regiment.</i>		
								Age.
						Chas. W. Hanson, sergt.-major.	.....	26
						Wm. S. Evans, Co. A.	.....	21
						<i>Fortieth Regiment.</i>		
								Age.
						Patrick Brannan, corp., Co. B.	.....	22
						John Rosenthal, corp., Co. B.	.....	18
						John Withey, corp., Co. B.	.....	44
						Sam'l P. Withey, muc., Co. B.	.....	18
						Joseph E. Annis, Co. B.	.....	32
						Edwin Beckford, Co. B.	.....	19
						Horace Beckford, Co. B.	.....	20
						Chas. W. Benjamin, Co. B.	.....	27
						Wm. H. Channell, Co. B.	.....	29
						George H. Day, Jr., Co. B.	.....	18
						Stephen S. Day, Co. B.	.....	37
						<i>Fifty-sixth Regiment.</i>		
						Wallace A. Putnam. (See Tenth Regiment.)		



Fifty-ninth Regiment.

Thomas Carney, Co. I..... 42

FIRST REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (three years).—Those marked with a star were original members of the "Putnam Guards."

	Age.
* Ellbridge W. Guilford, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut., Co. A.....	33
James Skene, Co. B.....	30
Frank W. Taggard, 2d lieut., 1st lieut., Co. D.....	25
Henry P. Fowler, sergt., 2d lieut., Co. D.....	22
* Charles H. Masury, sergt., 2d lieut., Co. D.....	19
John P. Withey, pr., sergt., Co. D.....	21
William F. Beckford, corp., Co. D.....	24
Charles R. Brown, corp., Co. D.....	21
James Murray, corp., Co. D.....	24
George H. Chaplin, Co. D.....	21
William H. Duckham, Co. D.....	21
Charles W. C. Gentry, Co. D.....	21
Everson Hall, Co. D.....	30
John M. Hines, Co. D.....	21
Charles L. McGill, Co. D.....	21
George O. Shattuck, Co. D.....	34
Daniel R. Usher, Co. D.....	23
Daniel Berry, Co. H.....	21
* Charles H. Adams, 1st lieut., Co. K.....	24
Edward Murphy, Co. L.....	22
Nathaniel K. Wells, corp., Co. M.....	22
Samuel P. Richardson, Co. M.....	34

Company I.

* Arthur A. Putnam, capt.....	30
* Jonathan B. Hanson, sergt., 2d lieut., 1st lieut., capt.....	32
* William J. Roome, 2d lieut., 1st lieut.....	22
* James Mack, sergt., 1st lieut.....	31
* George W. Kenney, 2d lieut.....	22
* Andrew O. Carter, sergt., 2d lieut.....	22
Charles F. Kelley, pr., sergt.....	24
* George G. Clark, pr., sergt.....	26
* Charles A. Shepard, pr., sergt.....	28
* William H. Shirley, pr., sergt.....	28
* George E. Smith, sergt.....	26
Edward Callahan, corp.....	21
William F. Davis, pr., corp.....	23
* Edward W. Thomas, pr., corp.....	27
* Sidney M. Pearson, corp.....	25
Benjamin D. Miles, corp.....	30
* John G. Weeden, corp.....	32

Private.

	Age.		Age.
* Hector A. Aiken.....	32	George H. Jones.....	18
* Chas. G. Ansenberger.....	25	* Frank S. Kittredge.....	23
* George D. Batchelder.....	19	* Samuel F. Leffau.....	24
* Chas. E. Brown.....	23	George S. Low.....	19
* Gustavus Brown.....	23	Thomas Mahoney.....	21
* Henry T. Chalk.....	24	* John Metcalf.....	26
Frank B. Colby.....	21	* John Metzgar.....	27
Wm. Cunningham.....	19	* William H. Moser.....	44
* Oscar F. Curtis.....	22	* Simon Murray.....	25
* William C. Dale.....	22	* Ellbridge G. Pearson.....	27
* James Drysdale.....	35	* Franklin Perkins.....	25
* George W. Earle.....	24	* George W. Perkins.....	29
* Isaac O. Evans.....	18	George Peterson.....	21
* Nehemiah P. Fiske.....	20	* Oliver A. Plummer.....	27
George E. Fleet.....	32	* Charles W. Sheldon.....	26
* Edwin A. Fuller.....	40	* William E. Sheldon.....	27
* Edwin J. Getchell.....	22	Daniel H. Smith.....	26
* John Goodwin.....	37	* David Smith.....	29
* Warren P. Goodwin.....	18	* James C. Smith.....	23
Orlando C. Guppy.....	26	George W. Stevenson.....	25
* James H. Ham.....	21	* Milford Tedford.....	18
* Albert Henderson.....	22	Angus Ward.....	23
John V. Hennessey.....	22	* William Ward.....	26
Charles Hiller.....	22	* Robert Weigand.....	28
* John Hobbs.....	20	* John Westcott.....	26
* Levi H. Howard.....	42	* James F. Whittier.....	21
* Charles Hurd.....	42	* Carlton Woodward.....	21
* George Ingraham.....	22		

Names of original members of the "Putnam Guards" not given above, are Thomas Turney, corp., George Beard, Frank A. Burrill, John F. Dudley, Ezra S. Dudley, George A. Dodge, Edwin E. Dodge, George G. Esty, Charles M. Goodwin, Wm. Johnson, Charles F. Jordan, Albert F. Putnam, Addison W. Putnam, Kendall F. Richardson, Philemon R. Russell, Jr., Wm. Shackley, Ira T. Trask, John E. Tiney, drummer, John Wesel.

SECOND REGIMENT, HEAVY ARTILLERY.

	Age.
Nehemiah P. Fuller, capt., major.....	33
Arthur A. Putnam, 1st lieut., capt.....	25
Charles H. Adams, 2d lieut.....	27
Archelaus P. B. Kelly, Co. A.....	16
George A. Elliott, sergt., Co. B.....	25
Abraham North, sergt., Co. B.....	39
Albert D. Webber, corp., Co. B.....	21
Richard P. Abbott, Co. B.....	25
Samuel D. Benson, Co. B.....	25
George H. Fuller, Co. B.....	26
James H. Kelley, Co. B.....	18
Edwin H. Marshall, Co. B.....	25
Henry Maud, Co. B.....	37
Stephen W. Roberts, Co. B.....	29
William H. Stetson, corp., Co. C.....	29
George D. Goldthwait, Co. D.....	32
Abraham North, Co. D.....	39
Wm. H. Southwick, Co. D.....	26
Joseph G. Whitehouse, Co. D.....	30
Addison W. Fowler, sergt., Co. E.....	22
John McCoy, Co. E.....	39
John Shackley, Co. E.....	44
Henry Sloper, Co. E.....	31
Joseph Leavitt, Co. F.....	43
Edward P. Mayhew, Co. F.....	18
Wm. Brown, Co. G.....	19

Company K.

	Age.		Age.
Charles H. Adams, Jr., sergt.....	26	Geo. W. Jellison.....	18
Daniel P. Clough, sergt.....	19	Franklin Johnson.....	18
Fredk. A. Wentworth, sergt.....	24	Chas. T. Mosier.....	18
Wm. S. Forrest, corp.....	42	Allen Peabody.....	44
Ezra W. Watson, corp.....	26	Jos. S. Peabody.....	18
Henry F. Allen.....	18	Shepard Pierce.....	18
Orion W. Clough.....	18	John F. Pillsbury.....	22
James M. Collins.....	23	Alonzo A. Rackliffe.....	18
Albert A. Fowler.....	22	Amasa L. Ross.....	19
George A. Freeze.....	31	Albert Spaulding.....	18
Andrew J. Goodwin.....	21	Fredk. T. Stone.....	18
Eben J. Griffin.....	18	Robert Tough.....	20
John C. Harris.....	23	Wm. H. Weeks.....	18

THIRD REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY.

	Age.
Edward Mitchell, 2d lieut.....	26
William O. Blake, Co. D.....	26
Edward Mitchell, sergt., Co. F.....	26
Joseph Inman, Co. F.....	23
Benjamin F. Larabee, Co. F.....	28
Frederick Marr, Co. F.....	20
Edwin F. Morrill, Co. F.....	18
Prince W. Nash, Co. F.....	18
Thomas Nugent, Co. F.....	37
John P. Thomas, Co. G.....	21
William H. Chadwick, corp., Co. H.....	27
Henry G. Abbott, Co. H.....	22
Henry T. Briggs, Co. H.....	22
James Finnekin, Co. H.....	35
Joshua Goss, Co. H.....	41
Ezra D. Kimball, Co. H.....	25
Solomon B. Lane, Co. H.....	31
Thomas McKeag, Co. H.....	21
John A. Roberts, Co. H.....	19



	Age.
Douglas R. Wilson, Co. H.....	18
Albert Woodbury, Co. H.....	26
Calvin F. Richardson, Co. M.....	21
John Shea, Co. M.....	40
Ansel C. Smart, Co. M.....	18
John Stowell, Co. M.....	26
William H. Mosier, Co. M.....	44

FOURTH REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY.

Company A.

Age.		Age.	
21	John Ambrose.....	23	Edward F. Gourley.....
25	Thomas H. Bailey.....	23	Benj. F. Grover.....
20	Wallace Bailey.....	23	Charles A. Guppy.....
21	Elbridge Cochran.....	22	John Kelly.....
22	Eben F. Creesy.....	18	Elbridge Kennedy.....
21	Florence H. Crowley.....	25	Charles Newhall.....
18	Timothy D. Crowley.....	36	Albert Parry.....
30	Lewis W. Day.....	18	Joseph F. Pitman.....
41	Stephen S. Day.....	27	John W. Rollins.....
38	Wm. G. Dickey.....	28	William B. Ross.....
19	Thomas H. Dodge.....	21	Jacob C. Spaulding.....
21	John S. George.....	22	John Q. Welch.....
27	Thomas B. George.....	22	Douglas R. Wilson.....

Two companies of sharpshooters, three years' men, were recruited at Lynnfield, and left for Washington in December, 1861. In the first company, which was ordered to report to General Lander near Maryland Heights were the following Danvers men :

Age.		Age.	
40	Chas. N. Ingalls, sergt.....	30	Joseph T. Smart.....
37	Austin Upton, corp.....	21	Alfred M. Trask.....
18	David S. Huse.....	35	Austin Upton.....
34	Horace Kimball.....	28	Samuel A. Waitt.....
37	Joshua Severance.....		

In the second company, attached to the Twenty-second Regiment Infantry, were these :

Age.		Age.	
34	Wm. I. Adams.....	40	Richard Goss.....
35	George Beard.....	36	Hiram B. Kenniston.....
22	Moses Deland.....		

In the Salem Cadets, which organization performed garrison duty in Boston Harbor from May 26, 1862, to October 11, 1862, were these Danvers men :

Age.		Age.	
19	Eben F. Creesy.....	24	Alonzo Gray.....
19	Florence H. Crowley.....	27	Samuel F. Gray.....
19	John G. Dervan.....	23	Arthur C. Kenney.....
18	George F. Lockham.....	32	John T. Ross.....
21	Adrian W. Fowler.....	25	Charles F. Spector.....

In Company B, of the Seventh Regiment Infantry (six months), July 1, 1862, to December 31, 1862, were :

Age.		Age.	
29	Geo. M. Crowell, sergt.....	19	Alexander Caird.....
20	John H. Howard, corp.....	23	Warren P. Dodge.....
29	Henry Sloper, corp.....	19	Richard Poor.....

The company of Danvers men previously referred to as having been recruited in the summer of 1862, was as follows :

Company K. Eighth Regiment, Volunteer Infantry, Nine Months' men.

Age.		Age.	
42	Albert G. Allen, capt.....	43	Lorenzo C. Rogers, corp.....
25	Edwin Bailey, 1st lieut.....	27	Denis W. Regan, corp.....
27	Benjamin E. Newhall, 2d lieut.....	36	Alfred Porter, corp.....
22	Charles W. Allen, 1st sergt.....	21	Frederick N. Putnam, corp.....
37	Thomas Barnett, sergt.....	34	John Proctor, corp.....
22	Henry D. Wallace, sergt.....	32	Abiel A. Horne, corp.....
34	James H. Sleeper, sergt.....	44	Jacob Bradbury.....
24	Samuel P. Fowler, sergt.....	33	William Brady.....

Age.		Age.	
40	Thomas Carney.....	29	Cleveland Gould.....
18	Orion W. Clough.....	17	Daniel H. Gould.....
29	Henry Collins.....	35	James P. Margeson.....
20	Patrick Collins.....	25	John M. Martin.....
22	Thomas Collins.....	30	John McAuliffe.....
18	William Collins.....	38	William O'Neil.....
30	Edward Darling.....	34	Albert Parry.....
29	Judson W. Dodge.....	43	Amos Pearson.....
27	Henry F. English.....	22	Charles W. Peart.....
38	William T. Fay.....	40	Joel F. Phelps.....
18	James L. Fish.....	32	Joseph M. Proctor.....
41	William Fowle.....	21	Albert F. Putnam.....
30	Cyrus Fuller.....	47	William Reynolds.....
26	Solomon Fuller.....	28	John Russell.....
23	Charles W. Giddings.....	19	John H. Sears.....
19	Charles A. Gilman.....	41	Asa J. Spaulding.....
43	Mark Glidden.....	24	Alonzo J. Stetson.....
53	Samuel Glover.....	27	Walter F. Tarleton.....
44	Charles Goocher.....	18	William Webber.....
31	William W. Goodwin.....	18	Douglas R. Wilson.....

In the other nine months' regiments which left for the front, in the latter part of 1862, were these :

Age.	
30	Salmon B. Lane, Co. C, 42d.....
30	Joseph N. Burchstead, Co. I, 47th.....
27	Michael Joyce, Co. E, 48th (deserted).....
22	Wendell P. Hood, Co. F, 48th.....
18	Augustine Upton, Co. E, 50th.....

But four men are credited to Danvers in the cavalry. These are

24	George S. Osborne, asst. surg., 1st Cav.....
21	Charles H. Lyons, Co. E, 1st Cav.....
25	Samuel W. Lewis, 1st sergt, 3d Cav.....
18	Reuben Leighton, Co. G, 5th Cav.....

But two are credited to the light artillery :

23	Daniel P. Avery, 2d Batt., 3 years (deserted).....
28	John L. Edwards, 4th Batt., 3 years.....

FIFTH REGIMENT, (100 days), mustered in July 23, 1864 :

18	William Metzgar, Co. C.....
23	Samuel W. Nourse, Co. C.....
44	Amos Pearson, Co. C.....
33	Gideon Rowell, Co. C.....
19	Samuel P. Trask, Co. C.....
20	Erdix T. Turner, Co. C.....

SIXTH REGIMENT, (100 days) mustered in July 15, 1864 :

34	George M. Crowell, 2d lieut, Co. I.....
25	Warren P. Dodge, corp, Co. I.....
18	Allen W. Badwell, Co. I.....
20	Daniel A. Cuskin, Co. I.....
20	Patrick Collins, Co. I.....
19	William Collins, Co. I.....
22	Thomas Hartman, Co. I.....
21	Orris K. Huff, Co. I.....
18	William S. Inman, Co. I.....
19	Jeremiah Kirby, Co. I.....
19	Frank B. Messer, Co. I.....
18	Hugh Murphy, Co. I.....
21	Edward North, Co. I.....
18	Thaddeus Osgood, Co. I.....
21	Richard Poor, Co. I.....
28	Walter F. Tarleton, Co. I.....
21	John Thompson, Co. I.....
18	Joseph Thompson, Co. I.....
19	Austin Towne, Co. I.....
33	Frederick Wright, Co. I.....

EIGHTH REGIMENT, (100 days) Dr. Ebenezer Hunt, aged 64, mustered in as assistant surgeon July 29, 1864; discharged November 10, 1864.





Andrew Nichols



VETERAN RESERVE CORPS, July, 1864:

	Age.		Age.
Thomas Caldwell.....	36	Wm. Reynolds.....	28
Hiram S. Faye.....	33	W. Shackley.....	28
John M. O'Leary.....	41	Edward F. Welch.....	40
John O'Keefe.....	39		

THIRTEENTH, UNATTACHED COMPANY, INFANTRY (90 days), May, 1864, William Francis, aged 45.

TWENTY-NINTH, UNATTACHED COMPANY, HEAVY ARTILLERY (1 year) George W. Kenney, captain, aged 34.

REGULAR ARMY, Louis E. Goodale, Signal Corps, aged 21; John W. Wiley, Engineer Corps, aged 19.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

DR. ANDREW NICHOLS.

Dr. Andrew Nichols was born in the northern part of Danvers, on that portion of the "Prince Farm" now owned by heirs of Philip H. Wentworth, on the 22d of November, 1785. His father was Major Andrew Nichols, an efficient and progressive farmer. He introduced the Lombardy Poplar into this section of the country, his farm being lined with them. His mother was Eunice Nichols, the daughter of John Nichols and Elizabeth Prince. It was Elizabeth Prince, granddaughter of Captain Robert Prince, who set out the large elm tree now standing near the main entrance to the Wentworth estate. Sarah Warren, of Watertown, wife of Robert Prince, and grandmother of said Elizabeth, who was afterward married to Alexander Osborne, was cried out upon as a witch, and died in jail.

The first of his ancestors to settle in this country was William Nichols, born about 1596, who took grants of land in "Brooksby" (now Peabody), and settled on them in 1638. In 1652, as by his deposition on record in the office of the clerk of courts, he was living on his farm of about two hundred acres, situated between Ipswich River and Salem line. The farm in Middleton, now owned by Walter L. Harris, of Salem, and adjoining lands bounded by Nichols Brook, including the hill called "Ferncroft," were a portion of it. His only son was John Nichols, who married Lydia Wilkins, a daughter of Bray Wilkins, of Wills Hill, Middleton. Their son, John Nichols, by his second wife, had two sons, John Nichols, who married Elizabeth Prince, before mentioned, and Deacon Samuel Nichols, who married Abigail Elliot, and they were the parents of Major Andrew Nichols. They were all well-to-do farmers, and lived within a mile and one half of Dr. Nichols' birthplace.

After the completion of the course at Phillips Academy, in Andover, in 1804, he studied with Dr. Waterhouse, at the famous "Cragie" or Longfellow Man-

sion at Cambridge, and attended the course of lectures at the Harvard Medical School in 1806 and 1807.

He commenced the practice of his profession in the southern part of the town (now Peabody), in 1811; it soon spread to every part of the old town, also to Middleton, Lynnfield and a portion of Topsfield and Salem, where, as the beloved physician, he might be seen early and late, either walking or riding. I think it can well be said, that no practitioner had more names of persons who were unable to pay upon his books than he. He seldom asked twice for the very moderate fee, and never asked for it where he knew or mistrusted it was hard for them to pay. But to rich or poor alike, he always responded cheerfully, and was very sympathetic to all. I have seen him performing surgical operations and appear to suffer more than the patient.

He was admitted to the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1811, and was for many years president of the Essex South District Medical Society. He was always a diligent student, and in the advance guard of his profession, delivering an essay on the irritation of the nerves before the Massachusetts Society in 1836.

He was interested in all that was going on about him. He was a charter member and first master of Jordan Lodge of Masons, and during his whole life an active member, of which his poem on "The Spirit of Free Masonry" in 1831, gave evidence.

He was a distinguished botanist, assisting Dr. Bigelow in his well-known book. He gave the first course of lectures ever delivered upon that subject in Salem in 1818; his keen love of it led him to discover the minute Arctic flower, the *Draba Verna*, on the bleak hills of Peabody, upon the melting of the winter snows. He was the first president of the Essex County Natural History Society in 1836, which, with the Essex Historical Society of 1821, formed the Essex Institute of 1848.

Though in active practice and living in the southern part of the town, he showed a great interest in agriculture. He was intensely interested in the management of his farm in Middleton, some seven miles away next adjoining the old William Nichols farm of 1652, which fell to him through his first wife, Ruth Nichols.

He was one of the founders of the Essex Agricultural Society, and its treasurer for thirteen years. He delivered the address at its first cattle show, held at Topsfield, in 1820.

He was one of the old line Abolitionists, and at the head of the Free Soil party in Danvers. I have seen the poor fugitive slave at his house being fed and instructed on whom to call as he went northward. He carried on the anti-slavery lectures in town, lecturing and entertaining the lecturers of those days, Garrison, Phillips, Pillsbury, Pierpoint, Henry (Box) Brown and many others, and doing all in his power to advance the cause of the oppressed. He did not live



long enough to witness the results. In this connection I would state that his brother, Abel Nichols, cast the first vote in town in the anti-slavery cause, and the only one at that particular election.

The reading and study of the poets, ancient and modern, was a recreation which he thoroughly enjoyed, and which gave him many happy hours. He wrote many poems and hymns, some for special occasions, that have been published, among them the "Centennial" poem of Danvers in 1852.

It was his regular habit to write one every Sabbath, many times quite late at night, as his professional duties would give him no regular hour. Also poems to his wife, mother, children, friends and self, on their recurring birth-days.

He was active in the temperance cause, and as early as 1819 lectured before the "Society for Suppressing Intemperance and other Vices," of which he was a member. He took an active part in the Washingtonian movement in 1840, and in his profession he did all in his power to stay its evils.

He was very inventive, and constantly at work with mind or hands upon something to the advancement of science, as his improvement of Dr. Arnott's Hydrostatic Bed, upon one of which he died. He had, that very week, given instructions to a mechanic for additional improvements to it. The rubber air pillows and beds used at the present day take its place. Tubes for the introduction of fresh air from the window to the bed of the patient. The making of zinc paint. The coupling of railroad cars while in motion. Object cards and letters to place upon the blackboard in our schools while upon the School Committee, of which he was for many years a member. In this connection it is proper to state that he made the first move for the establishment of the High School within the town.

He was one of the founders of the First Unitarian Congregational Society of Danvers (now Peabody), and was a sincere friend and helper to all of its pastors from the first to the last. The Rev. Frank P. Appleton truly said of him, "His heavenly Father was a dear and sacred presence to him." In all the brighter scenes of life he saw that Father's love; and he laid his soul meekly, cheerfully before that infinite Friend . . . His was a guileless worship. He was open-hearted to God, as he was to man. No fear mingled in his communion; his cheerful love cast out all fear, or rather his unselfishness made fear of God impossible. . . . To serve his Father and to help his brethren, this was the aim of his life. He never lost his love for his fellow-beings,—they were always God's children; and the deep interest in others which rose uppermost in his heart during his last sickness, the sacred counsel, "*to live for man, to work for humanity*," which, with faltering lips, but unfaltering soul and faith he gave, were only simple repetitions of what his whole life had said.

His monument in the Monumental Cemetery in

Peabody has the expressive inscription, "Erected by the friends of Humanity to Humanity's Friend."

An intimate friend of George Peabody from his boyhood, in the apothecary shop, when he removed the wen from his forehead, to his success as a London banker, and corresponded with him until the time of his death.

He married his cousin, Ruth Nichols, daughter of Deacon John Nichols, of Middleton, and wife of Sarah Fuller, the 1st of June, 1809; she died without issue, March 31, 1832.

He married secondly, Mary Holyoke Ward, daughter of Joshua Ward, of Salem, and wife Susanna Holyoke, daughter of Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke, the 3d of October, 1833.

He died the 30th of March, 1853, and his widow the 15th of April, 1880.

He left two children, Andrew Nichols, civil engineer, who now occupies the northwesterly corner of the Robert Prince farm, which, to this time, has never been out of the ownership of his descendants, though for one hundred years in the name of Nichols, and a daughter, Mary Ward Nichols.

Of the next generation four sons and three daughters are living children of Andrew Nichols and wife, Elizabeth P. Stanley, of Salem. The eldest Andrew inherits his grandfather's taste for Natural History.

HON. ELIAS PUTNAM.

Elias Putnam, son of Israel and Anna Putnam, was born in Danvers, Mass., June 7, 1789, and was descended from John and Priscilla Putnam, who, in or about the year 1634, as stated in a previous page, came from England to America with their three sons, and settled in Salem village. The second of these sons was Nathaniel, whose son John had a son, also named John, the father of Edmund and grandfather of the above mentioned Israel. Through the various matrimonial alliances of this line of ancestors, Elias might trace his pedigree back to many others of the emigrant colonists whose history has more or less been made known to us, and whose progeny is now very numerous throughout the country. Edmund Putnam dwelt for the greater part of his long life, and died in the year 1810, at the old Daniel Rea house, which still stands at the north of the Plains, and at a little distance east of the direct road from Salem to Topsfield, and which, having been the property and home of four successive generations of this branch of the Putnam family, passed many years ago into the possession of Mr. Augustus Fowler, who now occupies it. He was commonly known as "Deacon Edmund," having served as deacon of the First Church from 1762 until 1785, when he became a Universalist. While holding this office, he was unanimously chosen captain of a Danvers Alarm List Company, March 6, 1775. In 1776 he was made selectman and assessor, and in 1778 was appointed





Elias Peterson.



one of a committee of the town to consider and report upon the New State Constitution then proposed for adoption. Israel, the third of his five children, was born November 20, 1754, at the old Rea place just referred to, and his wife, Anna, was a daughter of Elias Endicott, Sr., and lineal descendant of the old Puritan Governor, John Endicott, whose "Orchard Farm" was her father's native spot. Immediately after their marriage, in 1788, they began housekeeping on another farm owned by the family, situated at a point on the road two miles farther north and about a third of a mile south of the Topsfield line. The house, which is still standing, was built during the last century, and marks the site of one of the earlier Porter homes, which was destroyed by fire. There Elias, and also two of four other children, were born, the family then removing for a time to the *New Mills* (Danversport), and next to the original homestead, where they might have a more immediate care of the grandparents in their declining years. It was here that Elias took his first real lesson in manual work, serving about the house and in the field in such ways as New England lads were then generally expected to learn and practice. Meanwhile, the short winter terms of the rural district schools, located about midway between the upper and lower farms, afforded him about all the opportunities for education, which he enjoyed in his boyhood. Early in 1812, in company with several other young men of the neighborhood, he entered Bradford Academy, but had not long been a student at that institution before he gave much offence to its teachers and officers by a composition which he prepared and presented as one of the required exercises, and in which he ably and boldly advanced views at variance with the theology there dominant and almost everywhere prevalent. Unwilling to remain where he found that he could not enjoy full religious freedom, he withdrew from the school and repaired to Topsfield for private instruction under Mr. Israel Balch, and there finished the one short term that was to end his school-day life. His classmates or companions from Danvers sympathized with him, approved his action, and all joined him at once in his new scene of study and endeavor. Their concurrent and life-long testimony, as well as his own subsequent career, bore abundant witness to the fidelity with which, at both places, he improved his all too limited advantages, and to the rapid progress he made in his work. Desiring to qualify himself especially for the plain, practical pursuits that engaged so many of his fellow townsmen, he devoted himself to the common English branches, and gave particular attention to the art of surveying, which he so mastered that he subsequently made his proficiency in it, very useful to many others as well as to himself. But however much he might have been indebted to books and schools, nature gave him a still better outfit in a strong mind, in excellent judgment, good common

sense, a high moral purpose, indomitable energy and a spirit of industry and activity that never seemed, from first to last, to crave, or even need, relaxation or rest.

He was now twenty-three years of age, and was asked to teach the school of his native district for the following winter of 1812-13, and this he did. The old school-house had been condemned, and a new brick one had just been erected, of whose long line of "masters" he was to be the first, as a youngest son was to be the last, about forty years later. Having married Eunice Ross, daughter of Adam Ross, of Ipswich (who had been a soldier at Bunker Hill and in the Revolutionary War), he and his bride commenced housekeeping, like his parents before them, at the upper farm. His father had offered to send him to college, or to deed to him this estate, as he might choose. Too distrustful, perhaps, of his chances of success in professional life, and fond of agricultural pursuits, he decided to hold to his ancestral acres. Soon after he had served out his single term as a teacher, he concluded to unite with his occupation as a farmer, the business of manufacturing shoes. Amongst the intelligent and sturdy inhabitants of the district and its vicinity, this industrial interest, which was destined to be of prime importance to the town, had already attracted the attention and engaged the enterprising spirit of such men as Caleb Oakes, Zerobabel Porter, Moses Putnam, Elias Endicott, Jr., and a few others of like character. Elias Endicott, Jr., was a near neighbor as well as an own uncle of the subject of our sketch. The latter had learned not a little from him about the art of the "gentle craft," and now wished to set up business on his own account. He bought the old abandoned school-house, moved it up near his own home, reconstructed and enlarged it, and began in it what was to be the chief avocation of his life. Not, however, without serious discouragement at the very outset; for, through the insolvency of a Southern tradesman to whom he had sold a large lot of goods, he lost the first thousand dollars he had earned by hard and patient work. But the misfortune only nerved him to greater exertion, and his shop, as well as his land, became ere long still more the busy scene of labor.

In 1814, or about that time, "Deacon Edmund" and his wife having died, Israel returned with his household to the scene of his early married life to spend the remainder of his days with the son and his family, enlarging the habitation with a northern "L," the future birth-place, it may be noted by the way, of that distinguished soldier and civilian of the West, Major-General Granville M. Dodge. Israel, like his father Edmund, was a Universalist, and soon began, with some of his neighbors, to take the necessary steps for the promulgation of the doctrine within the district. He presided over a meeting, held at the school-house, April 22, 1815, at which the friends of the new movement presented a declaration of their principles and



made arrangements to secure preachers. Here was the origin of the present Universalist Church of Danvers. Israel and Elias, both, were among the signers of the declaration, and the active participants in the enterprise, and they subsequently welcomed to their home many of the early apostles of the faith who came from time to time to expound it to such as were willing to hear, Hosea Ballou, Charles Hudson, the Streeters and many others. As the father was prominent in the society in its infant history, so the son was a staunch supporter of it in its more prosperous years, both of them being identified with its fortunes as long as they lived. Farmer Israel was a deeply religious, as well as a very intelligent man, and in his zeal for Universalism he wrote able sermons in its advocacy and defence, several of which were published in pamphlet form for circulation. He died in the summer of 1820, at the age of sixty-five, and the *Essex Register*, in announcing his decease, referred to him as "a highly respected and worthy citizen." His wife, who was characterized by a full share of the traits and qualities of her race, died long years afterward, at Danversport, at the residence of her only surviving daughter, Mrs. Mary P. Endicott.

In 1832 Elias, finding that shoe manufacturing was, and was likely to be, a more lucrative calling than farming, and that the prospective needs of his family of ten children, to which one other was added in the following year, required him to engage in it more extensively, let out his house and land and moved down once more to the ancient homestead on the lower and smaller farm, where he could be nearer the heart of the town, and enjoy ample facilities and opportunities for the end in view. Building for himself, out by the road-side, a more commodious factory than he had thus far occupied, he embarked more and more largely in business, furnishing employment to increasing numbers of workmen in Danvers and surrounding towns, and supplying with the products of their labor the markets of still other cities in the Middle, Southern and Western States.

The qualities of character which distinguished him had a long time before fixed the attention of his fellow-citizens, and he had already received not a few marks of their confidence and respect. He had again and again been chosen moderator of the annual town meetings, and had repeatedly been a member and also a chairman of the Board of Selectmen, in years when such offices were posts of honor more than they are now. In 1829 and also in 1830 he was elected as Representative to the General Court, and served for the two years. In 1833 he was chosen Senator and served for one term in that branch of the State Legislature. Here he had the great pleasure of renewing his former friendship with that sterling man, Charles Hudson, who had been an inmate of his home while preaching in Danvers ten or twelve years previously, but who had now entered political life, and was destined to high civic honors. The two

men were the members from the Senate of the joint standing committee on railways and canals. It was at an important juncture in the history of such internal improvements in the old commonwealth. The Boston and Lowell Railroad was the only one then in existence in Massachusetts. The eastern company was now fighting, against much opposition and under many difficulties, for a charter. Mr. Putnam was very earnest and active in his efforts in behalf of the measure, and his zeal for it, taken in connection with his acknowledged ability to deal with such matters as these, and his position as a leading member of the committee, and the only member of it from the county which he represented, and in which the line was to have one of its immediate termini, and with the interests and needs of which, so largely to be affected by a successful issue, he was quite well acquainted, enabled him to exert, as the late and lamented Mr. Joshua Silvester and others testify that he did, a very controlling influence towards the favorable result that was finally reached. In like manner he defended and supported other measures of public utility while thus at the capitol.

More and more, as life went on, Mr. Putnam had at heart the prosperity of his native town, and gave to it, in no stinted degree, his thought and care, his time and his means. With that object still in view, he was, as Mr. Silvester again remarks, in a recent biographical sketch of him, accompanied with some personal reminiscences, the first to propose the establishment of a bank in North Danvers. The two men were near neighbors, had already known each other for some years, were both engaged in the same kind of business, and were associated intimately in political, religious and other relations, and were on terms of mutual trust and friendship which continued to strengthen and ripen with each advancing year. "During all this time," says the account or tribute of the revered and veteran survivor of his long since departed companion and co-worker, "scarcely a day passed that we were not together. I can safely say that I knew the man perfectly. One day he asked me if I did not think we needed a bank in North Danvers? I told him, yes, I thought we did. We then called a meeting of the business men of the town at the old Berry Tavern to consider the matter. It was unanimously voted that application should be made for a charter, and that other necessary steps should be taken." The end was at length accomplished. The bank was duly incorporated in 1836, and Mr. Putnam was chosen the first president, and held the office to the close of his life. Mr. Silvester, who was made one of its directors, adds,—“the bank immediately went into a successful business, which was soon checked, however, by the general crash of 1837. Nearly all the banks of the country suspended specie payment, and well nigh all the business houses failed or asked extensions, in consequence of the embarrassments occasioned by the

of the government deposits and by the destruction of the National bank. There followed the greatest depression and stagnation ever known before or since to the industry and trade of the people. But under the management of Mr. Putnam, the village bank was safely carried through it, and to the most perfect satisfaction of the stockholders." And, notwithstanding great personal losses, the business of his manufacturing establishment was conducted with like wisdom and success.

In 1842, with the view of extending still more his operations, he built in the village of the Plains, at a distance of about a mile south from his home, a dwelling-house, and a much larger factory than his last one, on land he had just purchased of Mr. Jonas Warren. Thither he moved his family in the following January, and soon took into business with him as a partner, his son, Elias E., giving to the firm the name of "Elias Putnam & Co."

It was in the summer of 1843 that he united with others to promote the plan of purchasing and laying out the beautiful grounds of the Walnut Grove Cemetery as a new and fitting place for the burial of the dead. In pursuance of the object, a suitable organization was formed at successive meetings of citizens, and on the 18th of October, the first regular officers of the corporation were chosen, Mr. Putnam being elected president. The consecration services took place June 23, 1844.

He was a warm friend of the cause of education. While in the Legislature he had made the acquaintance of Horace Mann, then and for a long time a member from Dedham, and was deeply interested in the better system of common schools which the future renowned philanthropist had already there advocated and urged. He became a diligent reader of his writings upon the subject, and especially of his long-continued and most useful *Common School Journal*. Some trace of this influence may perhaps be seen in the part which he took in causing the large amount of surplus revenue that was apportioned to Danvers in 1838, to be set apart as a permanent fund for the benefit of her schools. The proposition encountered much opposition, but it was finally carried a few years later, and John W. Proctor, Esq., in his Centennial address of 1852, says,—“Considering the many jealousies brought to bear on this topic, the act whereby the investment was made will ever remain most creditable to the town. No man did more to bring this about than the late Elias Putnam who, in this as in all his other public services, showed himself a vigilant friend of Danvers.” If, in the same connection, Mr. Proctor, long after Mr. Putnam's death, allowed himself to indulge so publicly in a less just and generous word, those who were then conversant with affairs, were not slow or mistaken in referring it to the old frequent controversies between the northern and southern sections of the town, in which these two men not seldom

stoutly and uncompromisingly antagonized each other, and in which the able and distinguished lawyer, as he could but remember, was not always successful, even as he was not always in the right.

Mr. Putnam was also among the very first to devise and agitate the project of a railroad that should connect Danvers and other towns north of it with the seaboard and more populous and commercial places at the south. One of his sons-in-law recalls a ride which he was early invited to take with him through Middleton to Andover, and the pleased interest with which the latter sought out and discovered a feasible route for the proposed line. Along that way the Essex Railroad, extending from Salem to Lawrence, was constructed at length, but comparatively few to-day are aware what a protracted and determined struggle it cost to give it that direction, and thus to ensure to Danvers the increased facilities and advantages for transportation and inter-communication which she has consequently so long enjoyed. The road was chartered in 1846, though not opened until 1848, and Mr. Putnam was one of the several persons in whose names the grant of incorporation was vested, and subsequently, at the organization of the Board, was made one of the directors, though he was not to live to see fully completed the enterprise which had commanded so much of his interest and energy, and which he had done so much to put into the way of success.

Among the numerous offices which he held at one time or another, was that of county commissioner, and on various occasions he was appointed a delegate to county, State and National political conventions. He was a member of the Whig party, and few felt more keenly disappointed than himself at the defeat of Henry Clay in 1844. As a personal friend, he had often taken counsel and been much associated in these relations, with such men as Daniel P. King, Rufus Choate, Leverett Saltonstall, Stephen C. Phillips and others of like repute in Danvers, Salem and vicinity, sharing fully their Whig principles and sympathies, and working with them to supplant the Democracy. He had a deep and abiding interest in political and national affairs, and kept himself well informed in regard to what was going on at Washington, as well as to matters of legislation nearer home. He had a natural and instinctive abhorrence of the system of slavery, and greatly desired to see it brought to an end, but he was opposed to all rash and violent measures to compass the result, and was persuaded that the best good of the country and the higher interests of freedom itself, would most surely be realized through the triumph and continued supremacy of the party with which he was connected and whose illustrious leaders and statesmen he sincerely trusted and honored. He was fond of argument, had debated similar questions long before in the old Danvers Lyceum, and still liked to discuss subjects of this kind with his friends and neighbors, and such



was the intelligence and candor of the man that they were equally ready and glad to exchange views with him, however much they might differ with him in opinion. Whatever his prepossessions, he was a lover of the truth, had an inquiring mind, aimed to get at the reasons of things, and was most conscientious and deliberate in arriving at his convictions. We quote again from Mr. Silvester,—“He had supreme control of himself under all circumstances, and was a deep thinker and reasoner. Every question, or new movement, presented to him he traced out in all its bearings to the end, after which he was ready to express his feelings on the matter, and when you got his opinion on any subject, you could rely on it as his best candid judgment and most likely to be correct.” Nor is it difficult to say where he would have stood had he lived somewhat longer, only to see his old party utterly recreant at last to its better principles and high trusts, and men taking sides anew for the momentous conflict at hand.

Mr. Putnam was, moreover, a person of rare inventive skill. As he was one of the early shoemakers of the town, so he was one of the very first in the country to invent machines to facilitate the various processes of the art, and to economize, in connection therewith, labor, time and material. It is a curious circumstance that when, in 1833, his neighbor, Mr. Samuel Preston who, like Mr. Silvester, was engaged in the same business, had invented a machine for pegging shoes and had got out a patent for it, Mr. Putnam had at the same time and in the same quiet or secret way, been studying and toiling to accomplish a like result, and had actually constructed a machine of his own that did the work. In a letter which he addressed to a friend, and a copy of which, in his own handwriting, lies before us, he manifests a desire to know more fully the principle of Mr. Preston's invention, having received an intimation that it was essentially the same as that of his own, yet suspecting his own might have certain merits which the other had not. Doubtless the discovered resemblance was such as to discourage him from applying for a patent in his own case, since, as a matter of fact, the two machines worked about equally well, though poorly at best. But neither of these gentlemen followed up his advantage so as to make his achievement practically useful to himself or others. It was reserved to men of a later time to bring to wonderful perfection what they had created as only humble beginnings. Mr. Putnam turned his attention to other contrivances, and a few years later obtained a patent for a machine which he had invented for splitting leather, and which was found to be of so much benefit to the manufacturers, that it commanded a brisk sale amongst them, far and near. Two others, of like utility, were soon afterward invented and patented, both ingenious, yet simple in plan. The inventor had connected with his shop a private apartment to which few were admitted, and in which, amidst a

promiscuous array of drawings, mouldings, castings and patterns of great variety, he beguiled in such studies or pursuits as these whatever hours he could snatch from his busy and stirring life in the world without. In such, as in so many other ways, he advanced the chief business of the town and wrought for the general good.

It has always and justly been said of him by those who knew him that he was one of the most public-spirited of men, and he was not less disinterested and benevolent in motive and feeling than he was honest and upright in thought, word and deed. His worldly possessions might have been abundant, indeed, had he not given himself so constantly and freely to the service of others. He was the helper and not the hinderer of men around him, and many were those, in Danvers and elsewhere, to whom he gave a good start in life, or whom he assisted in their worthy struggles by generous advances of money, or by other not less valuable forms of encouragement and aid. He was a prodigious worker himself, and he had a decided liking for men who had in them the very spirit of work, who were industrious and virtuous, and showed signs of thriftiness and prudent living, and it was a genuine pleasure to him to extend to them his sympathy and support whenever they chanced to get into a hard place and needed a friendly hand. In other words, he was ever quick to help those who tried to help themselves, and also those who were helpless, indeed, yet were really deserving. He had small patience with the lazy and shiftless ones, even as the vain, the double-minded and the false-hearted found him an uncongenial presence. It was pleasant to see what a wide reputation he had in Essex County for wisdom, goodness and rectitude, and in what varied and numerous ways the feeling of absolute trust, on the part of families or private individuals in the region round about, was wont to manifest itself. He was constantly called upon to arbitrate between contentious parties, to compose difficulties, to give advice, to settle estates, to readjust boundary lines and to be himself a sort of savings-bank for widows and orphans and others at a time when no legally incorporated institution of the kind existed in the town. Such depositors felt that their little all, principal and interest both, was safe for them beyond all question in the hands of “Squire Lias,” as he was popularly called, and so it was. It was often at no little inconvenience and sacrifice that he rendered these different kinds of service to strangers and acquaintance alike, but he never declined the request if it was in his power to fulfil it, and so to discharge an act of kindness. We can hardly refrain from quoting once more from the simple and heartfelt tribute of Mr. Silvester,—“His personal character,” he says, “was the noblest.” He was frank and generous, sincere in all he said and did, scorned a trick or an unworthy act, and was incapable of either, and he bore about with him wherever he went that



Alfred P. Putnam



deportment and dignity which secured for him the perfect confidence of every man with whom he came in contact. He was one of those who believe that there is a pleasure beyond that of benefiting one's self—the pleasure of doing good to others, and this he practiced. Selfishness was the last trait which the spirit of truth and goodness could have imputed to him."

In person he was tall, large and well proportioned of stature, was of reddish brown hair and fair florid complexion, with full blue expressive eyes, and was of great physical strength and of remarkably good health through all his life until his last, lingering and fatal sickness. He was generally of grave aspect, yet was not without a native element of humor and not seldom indulged in more hearty sportive moods, was marked by a certain puritan simplicity of manner, and was plain in his dress and frugal in his habits. He was a member of one of the earliest temperance societies in Essex County, and was a total abstinence man all his life, even at a time when it was well nigh a universal custom to make use, in some form or another, of spirituous liquors. He was an early riser, and was early to bed, filling the waking hours with incessant work, and while he was so faithful to all the many interests which we have enumerated he had a supreme and loving care of home and kindred.

After months of severe suffering, occasioned by a wrench or a strain of the side, which finally proved the cause of his death, he passed peacefully away, July 8, 1847, at his village home and in the presence of his family and other loving friends. The trustees, or directors, and officers, of the various institutions with which he had been prominently connected, such as the village bank, the Essex Railroad Company and the Walnut Grove Cemetery corporation at once met, passed resolutions expressive of their respect for the memory of their deceased associate, and of their deep sense of the great worth of his character and services, and of their own private as well as of the public loss, and voted to attend, each brand as a body, his funeral obsequies. The local and other papers contained just tributes in his honor, voicing the general sorrow of the hour and the sentiments of high esteem and grateful regard entertained towards him by all who had known him. We copy from one or two of these journals the following extracts. Said the *Salem Gazette*, of July 12, 1847,—"It is with sincere regret that we are called upon to chronicle the decease of the Hon. Elias Putnam, of North Danvers, a gentleman of great worth, and a highly influential and useful member of the community where he dwelt. Mr. Putnam was much respected wherever he was known. Enterprising, sagacious, of comprehensive views and upright action he was foremost in all schemes for the promotion of the general good within the sphere where his influence could be felt, and filled many offices of public trust, from a State

Senator to those more immediately local, with unswerving fidelity and acknowledged usefulness. His death cannot but be regarded as a public loss by his own community, and he will be sincerely mourned by a very large circle of neighbors and friends." And the *Danvers Courier*, of July 10th, said,—“For many years he has been looked to as the counsellor and friend of all around him. Ever ready to lend his aid to all who asked it, ever cool and considerate in his judgment,—the want of his judicious advice will be deeply felt in the circle in which he moved. For the last thirty years he had been repeatedly called to the discharge of duties of trust and confidence by his fellow-citizens, and uniformly met them to their entire satisfaction. He never sought office, but never refused it when he thought he could be useful in the fulfilment of its duties. There are none among us who have done more to promote the prosperity of the town than Mr. Putnam. Discriminating in his judgment, persevering in his industry and efficient in his operations, the influence of his example will long be remembered with admiration.”

The funeral services were held at his residence, July 10, and were attended by a large assemblage of people, and the burial took place on the same day at the grounds which he had been so much interested in having set apart and consecrated as a receptacle of the dead. Shortly after, Rev. Mr. Hanson, the pastor of the Universalist Church, preached an eloquent sermon in which he bore touching testimony to the virtues and usefulness of his departed friend and parishioner, and to the conspicuous exemplification which his life and character had given of the value and power of the faith he had cherished.

Mrs. Putnam survived her husband twenty-six years. Of their eleven children, seven are still living. Of the other four, Emily died in 1843, and Elias Endicott, Israel Alden and Louisa Jane, in 1848.

REV. ALFRED P. PUTNAM, D.D.

Alfred Porter Putnam, the eighth child of Elias and Eunice (Ross) Putnam, was born January 10, 1827, in Danvers, Mass., in the house in which also his father was born thirty-eight years before. He was the lineal descendant of the famous John Putnam, who immigrated to this country in 1634, and whose death, eighteen years later, simultaneous with the appearance of a great comet, was publicly proclaimed, by the clergymen of the time, as affording this “very signal testimony that God had then removed a bright star and shining light out of the heaven of his church here into celestial glory above.”¹ In the female line he traces his pedigree to some of the ablest founders of our New England civilization, such as Governor John Endicott, Francis Peabody and William Hawthorne, men who have made their

¹ See Morton's "Memorial," pp. 271, 252.



impress on every succeeding generation in Essex County to the present day. Educated in the common schools of his native town, he first turned his attention to mercantile pursuits. After a short apprenticeship in the village bank of which his father was president, and, subsequently, a year's study at the Literary Institute at Pembroke, N. H. he entered, as book-keeper, a dry goods establishment in Boston, where he at once discovered an uncommon aptitude for a business career. The intellectual and reformatory movements of the time, however, soon engrossed his attention; and seeking a wider field and a higher aim for his life work, he determined to fit himself for college, and thus acquire a mental equipment with which, in the mighty contests then impending, he might do some service in behalf of his fellow-men.

Accordingly, in 1848, at the age of twenty-one, he began his preparatory studies at an academy in Vermont, and the next year entered Dartmouth College. Attracted by the new elective system under President Wayland at Brown University, Providence, he transferred his membership to that institution in 1850, where he was graduated with high honors in 1852, delivering, at the spring exhibition, the valedictory oration of his class on "Religion and Art." Thus, in the brief period of four years after leaving his desk in Boston, he had won his A. B.

During the following autumn, as in the preceding winters, he was engaged in teaching, and then he entered the Divinity School at Cambridge, under Drs. Noyes and Francis. Approbated in due time to preach by the Boston Association of Unitarian Ministers, he delivered his first sermon in the Unitarian Church at Sterling, Mass., December 17, 1854. The next year, and while yet a student he received unanimous calls to settle at Sterling, Bridgewater, Watertown and Roxbury, the latter of which he accepted. He was graduated at the Divinity School July 17, 1855, and was ordained to the ministry and installed as pastor of the Mount Pleasant Congregational (Unitarian) Church, Roxbury, December 19th, Rev. Dr. George W. Briggs, of Salem, preaching the sermon.

His ministrations at Roxbury continued, to the great acceptance of his people, nearly nine years, interrupted only by a visit to Europe, Egypt and the Holy Land in 1862-63. Perhaps the most notable incident, connected with his travels abroad, was the speech made by him at the dinner of Americans in London, on the Fourth of July, 1862. It was at one of the darkest periods of the Civil War. Banks' campaign in the valley of the Shenandoah had just culminated in disaster, and the Army of the Potomac, the focus of every loyal heart, seemed to hang on the perilous edge of annihilation, between the Chickahominy and the James. Under these disheartening circumstances and in the midst of a people flaming with prejudices, the assemblage of Americans to celebrate the anniversary of their national independence

was an event that gained wide publicity on both sides of the Atlantic. Called upon to respond to the toast, "The Constitution of the United States," Dr. Putnam rose to the full height of the occasion. It was a speech long to be remembered by those who heard it. Of commanding form and with a voice of extraordinary richness and power, he roused his audience to the highest pitch of enthusiasm. The following extract (which we copy from a London journal), referring to our flag, may afford some conception of the speech and the effect it produced at that critical juncture of our affairs:

"And then, sir, that old flag of the Union which so fittingly symbolizes what the constitution makes a reality—that, too, shall go down to those who are to come after us, more precious far than ever it has been before—more significant in its meaning—glowing with brighter radiance—not a single star erased from its field of blue—a thing of beauty and a joy forever. Baptized anew into ten thousand deaths, that azure field takes on a deeper blue for the faithfulness unto the end of all who have fallen martyrs to the righteous cause—those crimson stains wear an intenser red for the blood that has been shed so freely in our behalf—and every line and star of light upon that banner of our love is whiter still for the purity of the souls that have mounted from the battle fields of the Union up to God. Oh! within these few past months, how many brave men has that national emblem made braver! How many a struggling host it has inspired and led on to victory! How many a noble fellow has been called upon to sleep his last sleep, enwrapped in its sacred folds! How many of our Southern brethren have wept like children as they have caught once more a glimpse of its stars and stripes! And what a promise it seems to give us of the hour when the great deliverance shall come to us all, freeing us not only from the hand that has been lifted up against our country, but also from that evil and scourge of our land which is the source of all our woe. Yes, sir, it is the flag of our pride and our affections, growing richer in associations and more terrible in might with every passing day. As new Stars shall be added to its already splendid constellation, it shall continue its mission of beneficence and power. It shall mean peace and love forever to all who befriend it—defiance and war to those only who insult it."

Returning home in 1863, Dr. Putnam delivered before various Lyceums lectures on "The Nile," the "World's Indebtedness to Egypt," and other topics suggested by his tour abroad, all of which added to his reputation and enlarged the sphere of his usefulness.

From time to time, while in Roxbury, urgent calls came to him to settle elsewhere,—from Salem, Boston and Chicago churches,—all of which, however, were declined. In the spring of 1864 the First Unitarian Church of Brooklyn, N. Y., presented a strong claim for his services. This was everywhere recognized as one of the most important posts in the denomination. To hold its ground in the City of Churches, it needed an exceptionally able and vigorous champion of the faith it professed. Considerations of duty, strongly urged upon him by leading men of the denomination, finally induced Dr. Putnam to sunder the peculiarly tender and affectionate ties that bound him to the hearts of his people in Roxbury. He accepted the call, and on the 28th of September following he was installed as pastor, Rev. E. S. Gannett, D.D., of Boston, preaching the sermon.

In the long and eventful pastorate that ensued, Dr. Putnam made his pulpit a centre of wide influence in the city.

His own society testified their appreciation of his pastoral work by the erection, in 1866, of a beautiful chapel for the use of its Sunday-school, and, at the same time, responded generously to his appeals for the religious instruction of the children of the poor, so many of whom he had observed spending the sacred hours idly in the streets and alley-ways of the crowded city.

For this class, accordingly, a Sunday-school was immediately opened in a room over the Wall Street Ferry-house, and after a time passed under the superintendency of Mr. A. T. White an active member and efficient co-worker in Dr. Putnam's Church. Six children only attended the first session, but by the persistent and indefatigable exertions of the founder and his willing assistants, the numbers rapidly increased, until now [1887], it is a large and flourishing institution, with a fine, commodious chapel, erected for its use, a permanently settled missionary to carry on its beneficent work, and a constituency of about a hundred families to share its blessings and send down the stream of its influence, it is to be hoped, to many succeeding generations.

Another philanthropic enterprise, to which Dr. Putnam directed his attention at this time, was the founding of the Union for Christian work, since become one of the most important and influential charities of Brooklyn. The first conferences of the projectors were held in his study. At a subsequent meeting, already large and enthusiastic, he presented the report, as chairman of the committee on constitution and by-laws, which was adopted, and, by request, delivered an address on the love, pursuit and practice of truth, striking the key-note of the organization and enlisting still broader sympathy in its behalf. From these beginnings, the Union has grown to be a recognized power in the community. Nobly endowed and established in a beautiful edifice of its own, with its library, reading and lecture rooms, its labor bureau and schools of industrial art, it stands to-day a worthy monument to those who, in the providence of God, laid its foundations deep in human brotherhood and love.

In 1867 Dr. Putnam again signalized his pastorate by the establishment of the Third Unitarian Church, in the suburbs of the city. The rapid growth of Brooklyn toward the East, which he foresaw, has abundantly justified the wisdom of the movement, though, at the time it was undertaken, there were not wanting among well-tried friends some misgivings of the result. Sunday services were opened at first in a small hall over a fish-market, and conducted there regularly, with ever deepening interest, for about a year, when Dr. Putnam, appealing to his people, secured the sum of ten thousand dollars for a house of worship. The building was dedicated December 9, 1868, Dr. Putnam preaching a powerful sermon on the "Freedom and Largeness of the Christian Faith." Latterly the society has again out-grown its accom-

modations, and has purchased and fitted up anew the ample and attractive structure it now occupies. Professor Foster, in his published sketch of the new church, thus testifies to its paternity: "Above all other human sympathy and aid, does it cherish the friendship and services of Rev. Alfred P. Putnam. It is simply just to affirm that the Third Unitarian Society of Brooklyn is the offspring of his hope and zeal."

During his ministry in Brooklyn Dr. Putnam delivered, from time to time, to his people courses of lectures on a variety of important subjects, such as the Great Religions of the World, the History of the Bible, the History of Sacred Song, the Doctrines of Liberal Christianity, the History of Unitarianism, the History of Universalism, the Religious Aspects of Europe, and on Egypt, Sinai and Palestine.

Two of these courses, on the Great Religions and the History of Sacred Song, were subsequently repeated to the students of the Meadville (Pa.) Theological School. Out of the latter series grew Dr. Putnam's "Singers and Songs of the Liberal Faith," a work which required the finest taste and most extensive research, and which gives biographical sketches of nearly one hundred Unitarian hymn-writers, with selections from each, and copious illustrative notes. This work was published in 1874, and received with high encomiums by the press, religious and secular, and by critics and reviewers of every sect. The late Dr. Ezra Abbott said of it: "It seems to me in every respect admirably edited. I find unexpected richness in the book every time I open it." Indeed, that a work like this, avowedly denominational in its scope, should yet, by the sweetness of its tone and the catholicity of its spirit, win universal praise, is almost without a parallel in our literature.

The terrible conflagration at the Brooklyn Theatre December 5, 1876, was an event that called forth the profoundest sympathies of every class in the community. In obedience to a common impulse, the citizens at large promptly organized a Relief Association for the benefit of the surviving sufferers and the families of the deceased. From this was formed an executive committee, and Dr. Putnam, who had delivered the address at the burial, in one common grave, at Greenwood Cemetery, of the unrecognized dead, was appointed a member to represent the churches and charities of the city. His capacity for hard work, combined with a practical knowledge of affairs, brought him at once to the front. The special disbursement of the fund among the beneficiaries for whom it was intended largely devolved upon him. The burden was cheerfully and faithfully borne. It may afford some conception of the extent of his labors in this cause, if it be stated that the sums disbursed, mostly in small checks about once a week and covering a period of two years, amounted to nearly fifty thousand dollars, and that the families receiving aid,



all of whom required personal visitation, numbered one hundred and eighty-eight. At the close of the trust, Dr. Putnam was requested by his associates to draw up the final report. This he did; and its publication in the daily papers and in pamphlet form was followed by a popular verdict of approval as spontaneous and hearty as it was well-deserved.

One of the most interesting events of his life in Brooklyn was the celebration of the centennial anniversary of Dr. Channing's birth, April 7, 1880. It may well be deemed a landmark in the history of the Christian Church in America. Representatives of every denomination took part in its impressive ceremonies. To Dr. Putnam, who conceived, and, as chairman of the committee, carried out the novel arrangements for the occasion, it was truly a labor of love, for Channing's spirit and teachings were greatly instrumental in leading him into the ministry and are still very dear to his heart.

A memorial service in the evening, at the Academy of Music, presided over by Mr. A. A. Low, brought the exercises to a fitting close. It was a brilliant assemblage. Five thousand people, including men eminent in every walk of life, filled the auditorium. Henry Ward Beecher, George William Curtis, Rufus Ellis, Robert Collyer and others made addresses, in which the dawn of a new and better era of Christian fellowship was confidently proclaimed. Dr. Putnam published the unique proceedings in a volume, entitled "The Brooklyn Channing Celebration," containing the addresses and letters of sympathy from distinguished theologians and publicists in all parts of the world.

He has also published during his ministry a considerable number of his sermons in pamphlet form, such as those on the "Death of Rev. George Bradford," 1859; the "Life to Come," delivered in 1865 at the Cooper Institute in New York and afterwards printed as a tract by the American Unitarian Association; "Edward Everett," 1865; the "Freedom and Largeness of the Christian Faith," 1869; "Unitarianism in Brooklyn," a historical address, preached on the twenty-fifth anniversary of the dedication of the First Church edifice, 1869; the "Unitarian Denomination, Past and Present," 1870; "Broken Pillars," 1873; "Christianity, the Law of the Land," 1876; a "Tribute to the Memory of Mrs. Elizabeth Frothingham," 1877; "William Lloyd Garrison," 1879; "The Whole Family of God," 1884. Also biographical memorials of Mrs. Josiah Q. Low and Mr. Ethelbert M. Low, 1884; and of Mr. and Mrs. Ephraim Buttrick, 1885.

For many years, and until he removed from Brooklyn, Dr. Putnam was a director of the Long Island Historical Society, and much of the time chairman of its executive committee, writing its annual reports for publication during the period of 1876-81, and giving to its interests, at all times and in full measure, a firm and loving support. He was also correspond-

ing secretary and member of the invitation committee of the Brooklyn New England Society from the date of its organization, and at one of the annual dinners he gave an account of a visit made by him, in 1883, to Scrooby, the original seat of the Pilgrims in England.

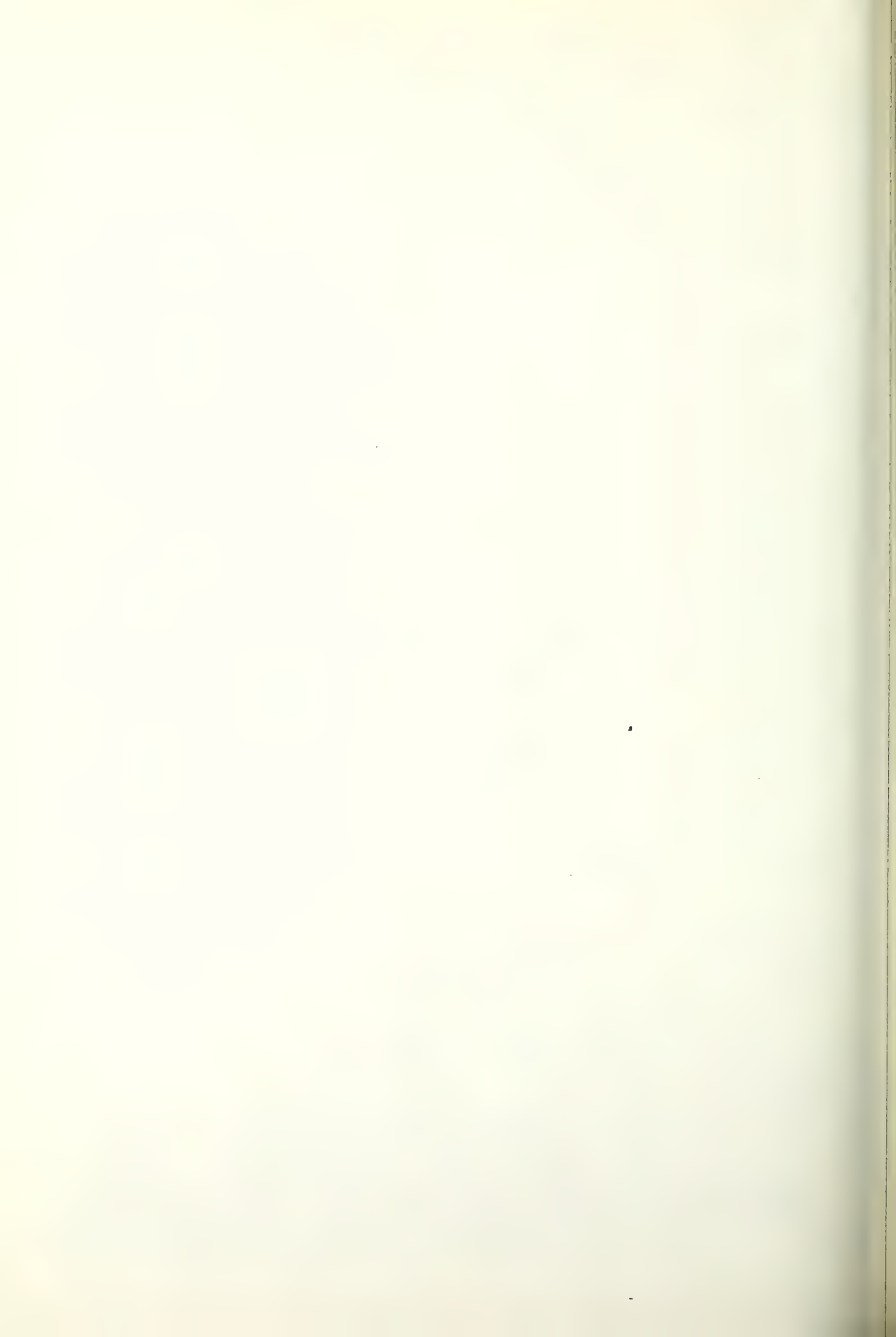
In the line of historical investigation, which he pursued in intervals of leisure, *con amore*, we owe to his fruitful pen, strong articles, published in denominational and other magazines, on "Hosea Ballou," "A Visit to Haworth," "The Origin of Hymns," "Helen Maria Williams," "A Story of Some French Liberal Protestants," and "Paul's Four Great Epistles and his Visits to Jerusalem," etc. He also contributed one of the chapters in Judge Neilson's volume, "Memories of Rufus Choate."

Scores of extended articles in the *Danvers Mirror* on local history and traditions, running through a series of years, attest his fondness for this sort of literary work. Future historians will find in them a rich thesaurus of materials, historical, biographical and genealogical, carefully collated for their use.

In 1882, under the pressure of his long-continued and laborious pastorate, Dr. Putnam's health began to decline. His robust constitution could no longer resist the strain to which his multifarious cares and engagements subjected it. Promptly and affectionately, his church voted to give him a year's leave of absence, that he might revisit foreign shores, to continue to him his salary, and to supply his pulpit. He was also generously supplied with funds to defray his personal expenses abroad.

Removing his family for the year to Concord, Mass., the ancestral home of his wife, he sailed for Europe on his birthday, January 10, 1883. After a delightful winter in the south of France, where his restoration to health and to the natural elasticity of his spirits was, as he thought, assured, he visited London in May, and was a welcome guest at the Unitarian Conferences, then in session in the city. Here, before various bodies, he delivered several addresses, one of which, by special request, was on the Aspects of Unitarianism in America. Its decidedly conservative tone awakened at once a profound interest among his hearers, and at its close drew a running fire of criticism, for and against the positions assumed, from the eminent scholars and divines who were present. Subsequently, the discussion was taken up by the religious press, on both sides of the Atlantic, Dr. Putnam publishing trenchant articles in his own defence.

He sailed from Liverpool for home July 4, 1883. With some misgivings, confirmed indeed by medical advisers, he immediately returned to his pulpit, and re-assumed all the burdens his versatile talents had hitherto imposed upon him. The struggle, however, was in vain. His enfeebled constitution soon admonished him that a longer period of rest was imperatively necessary. Accordingly, early in April, 1886,



he resigned his pastoral office, with regretful sympathy on the part of the church he had so long and so faithfully served, and heartfelt sorrow on his own. A testimonial from his grateful parishioners, accompanied by the munificent gift of fifteen thousand dollars, fitly expressed their appreciation of his high character, and the esteem and affection in which they held him. Resolutions of similar import were passed by the other organizations with which he was officially connected; and the papers of the city made warm, eulogistic mention of his life and labors in Brooklyn.

The Long Island Historical Society generously put on record "the deep sense entertained by all its members of the value of the service which Dr. Putnam has cheerfully rendered it for many years, by his wise counsels, by his faithful and intelligent participations in its discussions, and his generous and efficient assistance in accomplishing its plans," Rev. Dr. Storrs, president, adding that "the highest regard and esteem of all the members of the board will follow Dr. Putnam to his future home, wherever that may be, with their best wishes for his speedy and complete restoration to health, and for his continued enjoyment and usefulness in the service which they do not doubt he will render elsewhere, as he has so signally rendered it here, to the cause of good letters, of historical enquiry, and of the best social culture."

The opening words of a *Brooklyn Eagle* editorial were as follows: "The resignation of the Rev. Dr. Putnam, of the First Unitarian Church, will occasion regret beyond the boundaries of the society. He has been a faithful and devoted pastor, and this implies a good deal in a term of service of twenty-two years, including, as it does, not merely the delivery of sermons, but the personal work which brings the minister into intimate relations with many people in the sharp crisis of life and death. Dr. Putnam, during that period, has been also an active and useful citizen, bearing an interested part in those public enterprises which in Brooklyn know no denominational lines. An unanimous expression of good will, with hearty hope for his restoration to health and his prosperity everywhere and at all times, will accompany him in his retirement."

The *Brooklyn Union* closed an article with this: "His name has been connected with many benevolent movements. He was an earnest worker for the Union for Christian Work, the Mission School and many other charitable enterprises. He was a conspicuous figure in helping to relieve the distress of those who were made widows and orphans by the destruction by fire of the Brooklyn Theatre. He also did much towards familiarizing people of all denominations with the life of Dr. Channing in the services which were held in his commemoration. Apart from his ministerial work Dr. Putnam has filled a large space in the public mind by his untiring labor in forwarding the great and growing interests of the city

in which, as pastor and citizen, he has spent the best years of his life."

Rev. Almon Gunnison, D.D., pastor of the All Souls' (Universalist) Church, in Brooklyn, wrote to the *Christian Leader*, of Boston, of which paper he has long been the regular correspondent:

"We record with great sorrow the resignation of Rev. Dr. A. P. Putnam, the pastor of the First Unitarian Church in Brooklyn. He has had a long and triumphant pastorate of over twenty years, and gives up a successful work on account of ill-health. He has gone South, and it is expected that freedom from care and rest, will bring complete restoration. Dr. Putnam is well-known in our denomination, as he is of Universalist parentage, and has always been in thorough sympathy with our faith and the genius of our church. He has been outspoken in his utterances and fraternal in his fellowships. A preacher of large ability, a gentleman of noble instincts, he has been identified with every good work in the City of Churches, and his strong personality has counted for much in educational, philanthropic, reformatory and religious work. He has been the most helpful of yoke-fellows, ready always for neighborly service, quick in his sympathy in sickness, swift to speak the appreciative word and to do the kind act. His resignation will be regretted not only by his own people, but by all liberal believers, and, in fact, by all of every faith, who can appreciate the influence of a strong, sweet-souled, consecrated Christian worker."

Of the various biographical sketches of him which have appeared from time to time, and to which we have been greatly indebted for our materials here, we copy the following extract from J. Alexander Patten's "Lives of the Clergy of New York and Brooklyn," as showing his character as a preacher and his theological position:

"Dr. Putnam preaches with much effectiveness. There is great comprehension in his thought, and he is able to give expression to it in terms of rare conciseness, and not less of beauty. All that he says has this vigor of meaning and force of application, and much of it is delivered in the most classic and glowing picturings of eloquence. In his argument, he addresses himself to an elaborate and practical consideration of his subject, and you are led along with him, without tediousness, but rather allured by the attractive interweavings of a warm and chaste fancy. And herein is it that this gifted preacher excels. Your attention is instantly riveted by the smoothness of his periods and the elegance of sentiment which usher you to profound discussion and lofty imagery. He belongs to the Channing school of Unitarianism. Holding to his particular tenets with all the strength of his intellect and his love, he stands prominent among their ablest exponents, and in a pure, consistent life seeks their practical illustration before his fellow-men."

One of his sermons, delivered in Roxbury in 1861, at the outbreak of the civil war, on the Flag of our Country, has become widely known, and is published in text-books, as a model of fine diction and impassioned eloquence.

Dr. Putnam received his degree of D.D., from his *alma mater*, Brown University, in 1871.

In 1877 he was invited to become the pastor of the Unitarian Church in Quincy, Mass., but he declined the call. While in Roxbury he was elected president of the Unitarian Sunday-school Society. After his removal to Brooklyn he was made vice-president of the New York and Hudson River Unitarian Conference, and was also elected as its president, but the latter position he declined. For a time he edited the *Liberal Christian*, a Unitarian weekly paper, published in New York City. When, years ago, the project was on foot to remove the Meadville (Pa.) Theological School to Chicago, Ill., and there enlarge



and endow it, the leading man of the denomination who had charge of the enterprise asked Dr. Putnam to become president of the new institution, but the friends at Meadville could not be reconciled to the loss of the school, and the plan was therefore abandoned. Dr. Putnam was a member of the Century Club in New York, and also of the similar organization, of later origin, in Brooklyn, the Hamilton Club, as well as of the Brooklyn Art Association. He is also a member of the New England Historical and Genealogical Society, and of the American Historical Association.

In politics Dr. Putnam was an ardent Free-Soiler in old anti-slavery days, and often preached from the pulpit and spoke at political meetings in behalf of the slave and the cause of liberty. While a student in the Divinity School in 1854, he was sent, as a delegate from his native town, to the convention at Worcester that founded the Republican party and gave it its name. He has generally acted with that party since, but not seldom has on occasion assumed a more independent attitude.

In his pleasant retirement at Concord, whither he has again removed his family, he is now rapidly regaining his health. Surrounded by his books, and by many beautiful works of art which are the mementoes of loving friends, or which have been gathered by him in his extensive travels at home and abroad, he is devoting his leisure to favorite literary pursuits.

In person Dr. Putnam is tall and imposing. His well-proportioned form, his cultivated bearing, his classic, intellectual face in which strength and benignity combine, make him always a marked man among men.

His voice, sonorous and flexible in a high degree, is also wonderfully sympathetic. It can touch the tenderest chords of feeling, or express in thunder tones, as so often wont to do, hatred of wrong and oppression. The courage of his convictions is invincible. No man has hurled more scathing anathemas against intolerance, or held up to public scorn corruption in high places, more fearlessly than he. Courteous, affable, open-hearted, blessed with hosts of friends, he has preserved in its freshness and integrity, through all the vicissitudes of a laborious and useful life, the charming personality with which nature so richly endowed him.

Dr. Putnam was married to Miss Louise P. Preston, daughter of Mr. Samuel Preston, of Danvers, January 10, 1856. She died in June, 1860. For his second wife he married, in 1865, Eliza K. Buttrick, of Cambridge, daughter of Ephraim Buttrick, Esq., long a prominent member of the Middlesex bar. Their five children are Endicott Greenwood, Alfred Whitwell, Helen Langley, Ralph Buttrick and Margaret Ross.

JONAS WARREN.

The man whose portrait accompanies this short sketch, one of the best business men who ever lived in Danvers, was not a native of the town. His an-

cestor, Joshua Warren, emigrated from Dover, England, and settled in Watertown. Joshua's son, Daniel, married Rebecca, daughter of Captain Benjamin Church, the famous Indian fighter. Daniel had fifteen children, and one of his sons, Phinehas had a family of the same number, of whom five sons were in the battle of Bunker Hill. Phinehas' youngest son, Jonas, married, first, Apphia Stickney, and they were the parents of the subject of this sketch, who was born in North Beverly July 29, 1787. In his early boyhood the family moved to Boxford, and there, when he was still quite young, the mother died. He was brought up by his uncle, Ancil Stickney, and when he reached the age when young men struck out for themselves, he came to Danvers, and soon found a place of usefulness in the store kept by Deacon Gideon Putnam in his old tavern, which stood at the corner of High and Elm Streets. Before many years he bought the whole establishment of the late Judge Samuel Putnam, son of Deacon Gideon. "Jonas," said the judge, "here you will live and here you will die." Though the prophecy was not fulfilled as to his death, Mr. Warren did live many years, full of activity and thrift, on the old corner, and he built up there a business more extensive than can be easily appreciated at this time. Some days, a half a century ago, as many as forty great teams came into Danvers Plains from surrounding towns and far back into the country, to dispose of their produce and take back a season's load of staple groceries. It was chiefly Mr. Warren's fair treatment and broad and far-sighted manner of doing business that transformed a mere country cross-roads into a busy commercial centre. The amount of goods handled thus in the way of sale and barter was enormous, and it was no rare thing for clerks to be obliged to work till midnight, loading these teams, so that customers could start away bright and early in the morning. His policy was to offer such inducements that there was no object to farmers to carry their produce four miles farther to find a market in Salem, and, as a consequence, he and "Uncle Johnnie" Perley, on the opposite corner, so controlled the situation that Salem dealers often had to come to Danvers to buy at second-hand, and, of course, at the seller's price. In all this there was no trickery or meanness on the part of Mr. Warren. Mr. Joshua Silvester, just deceased, was in his early days a clerk in the old store, and a few weeks before his death he was speaking of Mr. Warren: "For an up and down square dealer he had no superior."

In 1841 Mr. Warren sold out at the Plains and removed to the Port, where he became the pioneer of the wholesale flour and grain business, entering into the larger field with the same energy and sagacity which had characterized his previous operations. He was the first to bring grain to this port by water, and from the cargoes of the many vessels in his employment he supplied a very extensive inland trade.





James Warren



W. H. L. & C. 1872

Samuel T. Fowler



Mr. Warren was one of the earliest Unitarians of Danvers, and was always a steadfast supporter of that denomination. Long before the establishment of the church here, he regularly attended the church in North Beverly. Rev. E. M. Stone, long the pastor of that church, has written of Mr. Warren,—“He was a parishioner whose constant attendance on public worship greatly cheered my ministry. During the thirteen years of my pastorate there I do not recollect of his being absent from church for a single Sabbath, unless detained at home by sickness, and I do remember of his being present after heavy snow storms and before the roads were broken, when persons living near the church excused themselves from attendance for the same reason. He was an attentive hearer, a devout worshipper, and an unostentatious Christian believer.” He was much interested in the building of Unity Chapel in this town, and attended there as long as advancing age would permit, contributing always liberally towards its support.

He married Hannah, daughter of Enoch Kimball, of Boxford. She died the year following Mr. Warren's removal to Danversport. Mr. Warren was himself nearly ninety years old when he died. The date of his death was November 18, 1876, and the place, the home which he built, now occupied by his only daughter, on High Street. Besides his daughter, two sons survived him—Aaron W. and the late Harrison O. Warren. Mr. Warren was a director of the Naumkeag National Bank of Salem from its organization to near the close of his life. He was the last survivor of New Mills Alarm List of 1814.

Though Mr. Warren kept aloof from politics, and rarely, if ever, held office, his business relations were such that scarcely any man was more widely known in the county. His strict integrity secured the confidence of all. He wronged no man intentionally, and his word could always be depended upon. In his family, too, he was just and kind, a true husband, a wise father. He left to this community the priceless example of the life of an honest man, and to his family the legacy of an unspotted name.

SAMUEL P. FOWLER.

Samuel Page Fowler was born in Danvers New Mills (now Danversport), April 22, 1800. His parents were Samuel Fowler and Clarissa (Page) Fowler. Among his ancestors are to be found the names of men, who, by their patriotism, military genius, business activity and enterprise commanded the respect of their contemporaries, and left their impress upon the times in which they lived.

The first of the name who came to this country was Philip Fowler, born in Wiltshire, England, in 1590, settled in Ipswich, 1634. Joseph, his son, born in 1629, married Martha Kimball. Philip, their son, born in Ipswich, December 25, 1648, was “a man of superior ability, and as a merchant, deputy-marshal

and attorney, left a good record. He strongly opposed the witchcraft delusion, was employed as attorney by the Village Parish in its lawsuit with Mr. Parris, and in 1692 conducted the proceedings in Court against the head and front of the witchcraft prosecution.” He married Elizabeth Herrick, daughter of Henry and Editha (Laskin) Herrick, and died 1715. Their son Joseph, born August 7, 1683, married Sarah Bartlett, died December 25, 1745. Joseph, born October 9, 1715, married Mary Prince, died February 1, 1807. Samuel, their son, left Ipswich in 1765 and became one of the pioneer settlers of “Danvers New Mills.” A shipwright by trade he assisted in building many vessels, both before and after the Revolution, some of which he partly owned; he was a private in Captain Jeremiah Page's company, at the battle of Lexington. He married Sarah, daughter of Archelaus and Mehitable (Putnam) Putnam. Deacon Putnam, in the spring of 1754 moved a small building used as a cooper's shop from his father's farm, now known as the “Judge Putnam farm,” by floating it down Crane River to the bank of the river at what is now Danversport. He fitted it up as a home for his family, and here his daughter Sarah was born, September 14, 1775. She was the first white child born in that part of the town, which was then covered with woods, where she was often lost when a child. She lived to see the small hamlet a prosperous village, and died in 1847, aged ninety-two years, having had six children, twenty-seven grand-children and sixty great-grand-children. Deacon Putnam built grist and chocolate mills near his house, which gave to this section of the town its name of New Mills.

Samuel Fowler, the son of Samuel and Sarah (Putnam) Fowler, was born in Danvers, September 15, 1776. He was a man of large enterprise and carried on the business of his grandfather, having a grist mill, a mill for pulverizing spices, as well as one for grinding bark, besides pursuing the occupation of a tanner. He died February 22, 1859. He married Clarissa Page, the daughter of Captain Samuel and Rebecca (Putnam) Page. “She was greatly endeared to a large circle of relatives and friends by her social and domestic virtues.” She died April 14, 1854. Captain Samuel Page was the son of Colonel Jeremiah Page and Sarah (Andrews) Page, born in Danvers, August 1, 1753. “He enlisted in the cause of his country at the breaking out of the Revolutionary War, and was engaged in the battles of Lexington, Monmouth, and Stony Point. He was with Washington at the crossing of the Delaware, and in the severe winter of 1777 shared in the sufferings of the American army at Valley Forge, and he, with his company, was present when Wayne stormed Stony Point. After the close of the war he successfully engaged in commercial pursuits.” He married Rebecca, the daughter of William and Elizabeth (Putnam) Putnam. William was a son of Lieutenant David Putnam (brother of General Israel Putnam) and Rebecca (Perley) Put-



nam. David was the son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Porter) Putnam. Joseph the son of Thomas Putnam and Mary Veren. Thomas was the son of John Putnam, 1st. Samuel Page's father, Colonel Jeremiah Page, was an officer in the Revolutionary War, and was the son of Samuel Page, who was the pioneer settler of Fitchburg, having been found there with his wife and family by the surveyors, sent out by the General Court, to lay out the town in 1719. Captain Page died in Danvers, September 2, 1814.

Descended from so worthy and patriotic an ancestry, we might reasonably expect that Mr. Fowler would inherit their many virtues and worthy traits of character, and in this we realize our expectations. In boyhood he attended the district school, where he read from the well-known books: "The Columbian Orator," and "American Preceptor," also "Jedediah Morse's Geography," then a popular reading book. He learned the rudiments of grammar from the "Young Ladies' Accidence," and mastered the difficulties of "Walsh's Popular Arithmetic," but the best advantages the town then furnished its children, were meagre when compared with those enjoyed by the youth of the present day.

New Mills at that time was the home of ship-owners and sea-captains, who, on their return from their voyages, would tell their listening townsmen of the lands they had visited, so that the boys of that period were made familiar with foreign countries and the characteristics of their inhabitants. Another factor which helped to develop a desire for knowledge and a taste for reading in the subject of this sketch, was the New Mills Social Library, formed in 1808, with the best books then to be found in the range of English literature, selected by Jeremiah Chaplin, D.D., pastor of the Baptist Church.

In the War of 1812 the inhabitants of Danvers shared in the excitement and the patriotic spirit of their more maritime neighbors, and Mr. Fowler, then a lad of twelve years, readily imbibed that love of country, and hatred of oppression, which he has shown through a long life.

He has always manifested a deep interest in everything pertaining to the welfare of the town, and has often been chosen to fill important offices, and to represent his fellow-citizens in many ways. Before the division of Danvers, he held the office of selectman and assessor from the years 1835 to 1840, was auditor in 1833, 1841 and 1842, moderator of town meeting in 1839, was a member of the school committee for seven years, and one of the board of health for three years. He was one of the fire-wards of the town upon the first organization of the fire department, and continued so for several years. He was elected representative to the General Court in the years 1837-38-39, and with the Rev. M. P. Braman and Hon. Alfred A. Abbott, represented the town in the Constitutional Convention held at Boston in 1853. He was one of the committee appointed to make arrangements for the cele-

bration of the One Hundredth Anniversary of Danvers, on the 16th of June, 1852, and at the dinner on that occasion responded to the following toast: "The Women of Danvers in Revolutionary Times—like the staple manufacture of the town—firm, tough and well *tanned*, but *unlike* it, as they were not to be *trampled* upon."

He was, also, one of the trustees elected by the town to hold the surplus revenue funds, and one of the members of the first committee chosen to confer as to the best methods of introducing water into the town. But it is as overseer of the poor, a position which he still holds, that Mr. Fowler's tenure of office has been the longest, extending over a period of forty-four years, with only one year's exception, and a greater part of the time he has been chairman of the board. His knowledge of the poor-laws is complete and exhaustive, and his decisions are undisputed in the settlement of the many vexatious questions which arise in the administration of these laws. His faithfulness to the interests of the town, and his kindness and consideration to the poor have given him for many years the nomination of all parties. Although taking such an active part in all town matters, Mr. Fowler has never been a politician, was a member of the old Whig party, and has been a supporter of the Republican party since its formation.

He was one of the trustees of the Peabody Institute, appointed by Mr. George Peabody, served as a member of the building committee, and upon the resignation of Rev. M. P. Braman, was chosen president of the board of trustees, which office he held till March, 1879. At the present time he is chairman of the committee on buildings and grounds, and in connection with Mr. Joshua Sylvester, has done much toward the laying out and beautifying of the park about the Institute, making it one of the most attractive places in the town. He has also been chairman of the lecture and library committee, and in the latter capacity gave much time and thought to the selection of those books which would instruct and elevate their readers, and cultivate in them a desire for useful knowledge, having the experience gained by many years of reading and study, to help him in this work. From his youth he has shown a great taste for natural history, and during his long life has been a close observer of nature, in all her varied forms. By constant observation and study, he made himself thoroughly conversant with the notes and habits of our native birds, and contributed a series of most interesting and instructive articles to the *New England Farmer*, on "The Birds of New England." A lover of flowers, he has always taken great pleasure in their cultivation, and has had equal success with plants from widely separated localities, so that in his garden the variously-tinted blossoms of our woods and fields grow side by side with the more gorgeous flowers of China and Japan. Nor is he selfish in the enjoyment of his garden, but freely gives its treasures to all—

from the little child, who timidly asks for a few flowers, to the learned botanist, who solicits specimens for analysis. It has been his pleasure for many summers to arrange a bouquet each week for the church, and the ladies of the Parish showed their appreciation of this work by presenting him with a beautiful engraving. He has not devoted his attention exclusively to the cultivation of flowers, but has also studied the characteristics of our native trees and shrubs. The results of his close observation in this direction are apparent in various articles written by him on our "Native Trees and Shrubs," published in the *New England Farmer*, in which he shows himself a nice and accurate observer in this department of nature. He has carefully noted the habits of the various insects injurious to vegetation, and in an essay read before the Essex County Agricultural Society, gives many valuable suggestions as to the best methods of destroying the numerous insects, which infest the orchards and gardens of the county. Possessing these tastes it might be expected that when the Essex County Natural History Society was formed, Mr. Fowler would be one of its first members. He is now the only one living of the founders of this organization. At its fiftieth anniversary, held at Topsfield, in June, 1884, he was present, and in an address delivered on that occasion, alluding to the first meeting of the society, says: "After dinner a stroll was taken in the woods and fields, and among the plants gathered was a fine specimen of Blood Root (*Sanguinaria Canadensis*) which was taken up with a spade, and upon our return it was placed in the middle of the table, with a newspaper under it, when we pledged ourselves to sustain the Essex County Natural History Society, and promote its interests." When the Essex Institute was formed by the Union of the Essex Historical and Essex County Natural History Societies in 1848, he was chosen curator of Natural History, and vice-president in that department in 1861, and remained so for several years; he was also on the Field committee as early as 1857.

Fond of historical research, the rich field of his town, county and State has furnished him abundant material, so that he has not his equal as a local historian, and has given especial time and thought to the study of the witchcraft delusion, and the causes which led to its origin and continuance. He has published an "Account of the Life and Character of the Rev. Samuel Parris, of Salem Village, and of his Connection with the Witchcraft Delusion of 1692," and edited an edition of "Salem Witchcraft, by Robert Calef, published by H. P. Ives and A. A. Smith, in 1861." He has also made a large manuscript collection bearing upon this subject, copied from the church and court records of that period. Upham, in speaking of Philip Fowler, of Ipswich, and the bold stand taken by him in 1692 against the decisions of the clergy and magistrates, says: "It is an interesting circumstance that one of the same name and

descent, in his reprint of the papers of Calef, and other publications, has done as much as any other person of our day to bring that whole transaction under the light of truth and justice." It is largely due to his research and interpretation of Mr. Parris' conduct in the affair, that has led to a more favorable construction of the motives which actuated him and the neighboring clergy in their treatment of those persons accused of practising witchcraft. Mr. Fowler has published in the Historical Collections of the Essex Institute the following articles: "Journal of Captain Samuel Page, in the Campaign of 1779, with Notes;" "Biographical Sketch and Diary of Rev. Joseph Green, an Account of the Life of Rev. Peter Clark and Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth, Ministers of Salem Village," (now Danvers Centre); "Records of Overseers of the Poor of the Old Town of Danvers for the years 1767 and 1768, by the Chairman of the Board, Captain Elisha Flint, with Notes." "Craft's Journal of the Siege of Boston, with Notes."

He is thoroughly conversant with the early history of the town, and often contributes to the columns of the local paper articles full of historical facts, which will yield a rich harvest to the town's future historian.

He became a member of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, in Boston, in 1862. His literary work has been performed in the midst of his regular occupations, for Mr. Fowler learned the trade of a tanner, and carried on the business in the same establishment formerly owned and occupied by his father, on Porters river.

He was one of the incorporators of the Danvers Savings Bank, incorporated in 1850, and one of its first trustees; he was also actively engaged in the formation of the First National Bank, and has been one of its directors since 1863. He was admitted to Jordan Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons, March 26, 1823, and is at present an honorary member, and one of the oldest masons in the State.

He has always shown a deep interest in the temperance cause, more especially before it became so intimately connected with the political questions of the day. At the annual meeting of the old town of Danvers, on the 4th of March, 1833, the subject of intemperance in the town being under consideration, an order and vote to be presented to the moderator was drawn up by J. W. Proctor, Esq., instructing the selectmen to prohibit the sale of intoxicating liquors in the town, which vote was presented to the meeting by Mr. Fowler, who is now the only one living of that band of temperance workers, who, in one of the square pews in the brick meeting-house at the Centre, conferred together as to the best means to arrest the drunkenness in their community. The passing of this vote made Danvers the first town in the State that took action in its corporate capacity against licensing the sale of intoxicating liquors, and it has ever since maintained the same position. Before the general awakening of the public mind to the subject,



Mr. Fowler was keenly alive to the fact that our burial-places were neglected and unattractive, and it was largely through his efforts, and that of his brother, Mr. Henry Fowler, that a tract of land was purchased to be laid out as a cemetery, and the Walnut Grove Cemetery Corporation formed, of which he has been president for many years.

In the year 1832, he joined the First Church during the pastorate of the Rev. M. P. Braman. When the Maple Street Church was organized in 1844, he became one of the original members, was chosen one of its first deacons, which office he still holds, and has ever been mindful of all that concerned the temporal and spiritual welfare of the church. He was a member of the building committee to erect the first meeting-house, and when this new and beautiful edifice was destroyed by fire only a few years after its completion, he was one of the members who bravely took up the work of building the present house of worship. He has been clerk of the parish for more than thirty years, and the distinctly written pages of this record will be a pleasure to the society's future historian. Before his advanced years he was a constant attendant upon the prayer-meetings of the church, contributing to their interest by his words of instruction and wisdom, and was for many years an efficient Sunday-school teacher.

Although in his eighty-eighth year, Mr. Fowler possesses the physical and mental activity of a man of much younger years, filling with acceptance and fidelity the various offices bestowed upon him by his townsmen. The reading of his favorite books, the cultivation of his garden are as great sources of pleasure to him as they ever were, and his interest is unabated in whatever concerns the public goods.

The record of such a life shows what a man can accomplish for himself and others by habits of industry and patient thought, combined with a desire for the best good of those who are associated with him as fellow-citizens. The public favors he has received have not been obtained at the sacrifice of truth and honor, for in all things he has shown himself an honest man, just and upright in his dealings with others.

Mr. Fowler was married December 3, 1833, to Harriet Putnam (who was born in Danvers, May 11, 1806) daughter of Moses and Betsey Putnam. Like her husband, she retains in a remarkable degree her youthful feelings, possessing those virtues which make her a devoted wife, a good mother and an earnest Christian.

Their children are, (1) Clara Putnam, born March 20, 1836, married November 25, 1856, George E. DuBois, of Randolph, Mass., who died November 3, 1859; their child, Ellen Tucker, born December 16, 1857, married, April 22, 1886, Nathan Putnam Proctor, of Danvers; they have a son born June 7, 1887. (2) Samuel Page, Jr., born December 6, 1838. (3) Harriet Putnam, born July 25, 1842.

CHARLES LAWRENCE.

Mr. Lawrence was among the thirteen children of Abel and Abigail (Page) Lawrence, of Salem, Mass. He was descended in the seventh generation from John Lawrence, of Wisset, England, who came to this country and first settled at Watertown, but removed to Groton in 1662, where he died.

The subject of this notice was born October 7, 1795, and was graduated at Harvard University in the class of 1815.

About 1833 he married Miss Lucy A. Ward, sister of Thomas Ward, the banker of Boston. Delicate health prevented him from studying a profession or entering upon a business career. He made several voyages to India in early life, and spent a winter or two in the West Indies and Florida to combat dangerous symptoms of lung disease.

With his brother and sisters he afterwards left Salem and established a home upon what was then known as the Phillips Farm, Danvers. There for nearly forty years Mr. Lawrence resided and found occupation in open air pursuits, which no doubt were the means of prolonging to eighty-four years a life which was never robust. Gardening was a favorite occupation, and he had a passion for flowers, which always flourished under his care.

Combined with these pursuits was a love of literature, which did not fail him while life lasted.

Though mixing little with the world, he was always acquainted with the best and newest books, and wholly alive to the political questions of his time.

In November, 1820, he was made a member of the Salem East India Marine Society, and was elected corresponding secretary January, 1828, remaining in that position till January, 1838. He was also an original member of the Essex Institute, and through life he felt a strong interest in the welfare and success of that society.

A warm friend, a kind neighbor, a genial and pleasant companion; his charity to the unfortunate was only fully known to the many recipients of his benevolence. He died December 21, 1879.

GENERAL GRENVILLE M. DODGE.¹

Essex County has given birth to but few more remarkable men than General Grenville M. Dodge, now, and for many years, resident at Council Bluffs, Iowa. Perhaps no one of her sons has wrought a wider, and more varied and important public service than has he. He is not yet an old man, but is still in his prime, and is as active and busy as ever. Yet, as civil engineer, military commander, member of Congress, projector of many of the great railroad enterprises of the West and Southwest for the last thirty years or more, and as president or director of most of the companies established to forward and

¹ By Rev. A. P. Putnam.

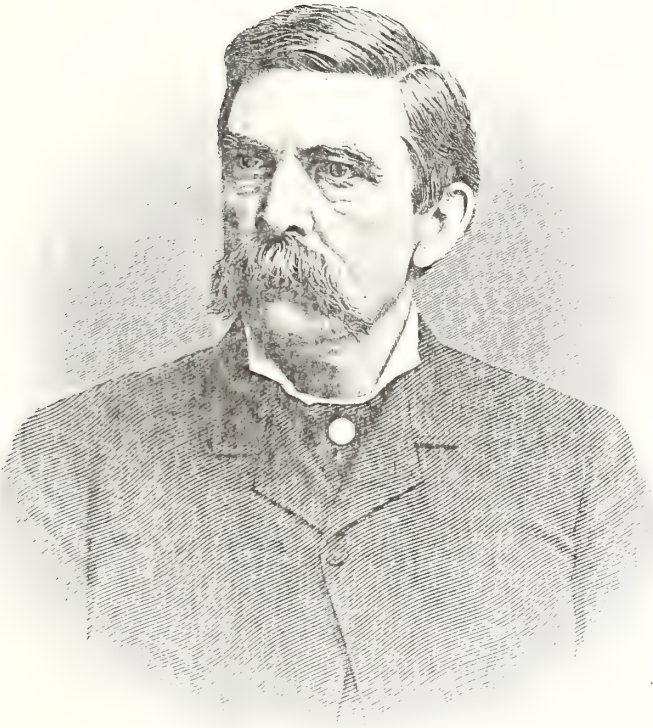




W. A. R. 1860

Charles Lawrence





Eng. by H. W. H. & C.

G. M. Dodge



complete these vast works of internal improvement and national development, he has done quite enough for fame, and quite enough to entitle him to the lasting gratitude and honor of his country. The story of his career, however much it has to do with practical matters, is yet invested with a wonderfully romantic interest, and we are glad to learn that a more extensive biography of him than we can give here, or than has ever been written of him, is in course of preparation by Mr. N. E. Dawson, of Washington, for a large, voluminous work to be entitled, "Iowa in the War." To Mr. Dawson's kindness we are indebted for some of the advance sheets of his full and excellent sketch, from which we have culled many of the facts of our hero's maturer life.

General Dodge is a native of Danvers, Mass., and was born April 12, 1831, in a farm-house which was situated a short distance south of the Topsfield line, and which was then the home of the family of Elias Putnam, who was himself born there more than forty years before, as stated elsewhere in this volume. Israel Putnam, the father of Elias, having removed his household, about the beginning of the century, several miles down the road, the premises were let to Captain Solomon Dodge, who had lived in Rowley, Mass., and was a descendant of one of the two brothers of the name who early emigrated from England, and settled in Essex County. There came with Solomon a son, Sylvanus, who had been born, November 25, 1800, at the old Rowley home, in what has long been known as the "Old Dodge House." Not long after the family had taken possession of their new quarters, the mother of Sylvanus died, and by and by, it is said, the surviving members returned to the ancestral seat whence they came. The son was married, November 22, 1827, at New Rowley (now Georgetown), by Rev. Dr. Isaac Braman, to Julia T. Phillips, who was born in that town January 23, 1802. The same evening the nuptial pair rode to Danvers, to enter there upon their early wedded life on the farm where the husband had lived as a little child, and in which the Putnams, who had themselves long before returned to the place, had attached to the northern side of the house. Their first child was born to them September 23, 1829, but died about two weeks afterward. The second was born April 12, 1831, as we have said, and received the name that had been given to the other, Grenville M. Dodge. He first saw the light in the chamber of the L to which reference has been made, and which, many years later, was detached from the main part of the building and removed to a point about an eighth of a mile further south, on the other side of the road, where it was enlarged, and has since been tenanted by various families. The Dodges remained on the farm about six years, and then went to Rowley, where they lived for a year or two, at the expiration of which time they returned to their Danvers abode, which Mr. Putnam and family had recently left to fix their home two miles below, in the

old house now occupied by Augustus Fowler. While Sylvanus Dodge and his family came back to live again in one part of the farm-house, there came from Wenham, Benjamin Dodge and his family to dwell in the other. Sylvanus was then a butcher, and many of the present inhabitants of the town will recall his regular visits at their doors, as, arrayed in his clean white frock, he rode about in his well-covered and amply-supplied wagon and ingratiated himself into the favor of his patrons by his genial spirit and honest dealing. The slaughter-house was a barn which stood at the foot of the hill, a little distance north of the house, where there is now, if there was not then, a beautiful grove. Long afterward it was moved to the plains, and then again outside of the village, where it was finally burnt.

The second sojourn of Mr. Sylvanus Dodge and his family upon the farm continued for only about one year. Thence they proceeded to Salem, where also they spent a couple of years, and next went to Lynn, where they remained one year, living during the twelve-month in three different houses. In April, 1837, they found a home in South Danvers, now Peabody, where, August 20, of the same year, was born a third child, Nathan P. Dodge. In 1840 they removed to the north part of the old town, and settled for a time in Tapleyville, the native place of their fourth and last child, Julia M. Dodge, now Mrs. J. B. Beard, born January 14, 1843. During their stay at Tapleyville, Mr. Dodge was made postmaster for South Danvers, and accordingly returned thither with his wife and children, and there continued to reside until they all emigrated to the distant West. He held the office to which he was thus appointed for ten years, and through various changes in the national administration, securing the confidence and favor of both political parties and of his fellow-citizens generally. In politics he was a Democrat, and was an active and earnest friend of such men as Robert Rantoul, Jr., N. P. Banks and George S. Boutwell. In due time he came to be much interested in the organization of the Republican party, and was henceforth to the end of his life its sincere and efficient supporter.

Grenville, the eldest of the three living children, sought his fortunes in the West as early as 1851. Between the ages of ten and sixteen he had worked at gardening, had been employed as a clerk in a store, had attended the common schools, and had also improved his leisure hours in fitting himself for college. He entered the Military University at Norwich, Vt., in 1847, and there completed his course of education just before he set out to seek his fortunes in a more distant part of the country. He first settled in Peru, Illinois, as a civil engineer. He participated in the construction of the Chicago and Rock Island, and Peoria and Bureau Valley Railroads; and in 1853 he was appointed assistant engineer of the Mississippi and Missouri Railroad of Iowa, now the Chicago, Rock Island and Pacific Line. In the same year,



having removed to Iowa City, he explored and examined the country west of the Missouri, and became convinced that the great Pacific Railway would have its starting point where it now is, at Council Bluffs, or Omaha, on the Missouri river. At Council Bluffs, therefore, he decided to fix his permanent residence. He had married Miss Annie Brown, of Peru, Ill., at Salem, Mass., May 29, 1854, and in the following November he left Iowa City, where his brother Nathan from the East had already joined him, for his future home, accompanied by his wife. During the same month he made a claim, and opened a farm in the Territory of Nebraska, on the Elkhorn river, occupying it in February, 1855, but staying there only six months, the Indians driving him away, and obliging him to return with his family to Council Bluffs.

Early in 1855 his father, Sylvanus Dodge, went on from South Danvers, followed in the autumn by the mother. They lived, in the winter of 1855-56, at Omaha, which the reader will remember is on the western bank of the Missouri, directly opposite Council Bluffs on the eastern; and in May, 1856, they, too, sought a home on the Elkhorn, but at the expiration of eighteen months they returned to be with Greenville, and Council Bluffs has been the home of the family from then until now. The father had taken an active part in settling the territory and organizing the government of Nebraska, and was subsequently made the Register of the United States Land Office for the district where he had lived. He died about sixteen years ago, surrounded by his wife, children and grandchildren, and greatly respected and beloved by all who knew him, while his last days were made happy with the thought that, after all the toils and struggles, changes and pilgrimages of seventy years, his household was finally established in a secure home, and had risen to prominence and prosperity.

Greenville, after his return from the Elkhorn to Council Bluffs, in 1855, busied himself for several years in civil engineering, banking, real estate and mercantile business. He was active and influential in advancing the interests of the rising town, and organized for it a military company, known as "The Council Bluffs Guards." He was chosen its captain, and at the breaking out of the war he tendered the services of this company to the Governor of the State, as the nucleus of the First Iowa Infantry. The Governor deemed it best that this organization should remain where it was, in order to protect the exposed western frontier border; but accepted the individual services of Captain Dodge himself, and sent him to Washington to arrange for the arming and equipping of the Iowa troops. The result was that Captain Dodge, gaining the confidence and favor of Mr. Cameron, Secretary of War, was remarkably successful in his mission, and at once returned to raise the Fourth Iowa Infantry Regiment, of which he was duly commissioned as the colonel, and also the Second Iowa

Battery, which took his own name. With this command he marched, in July, 1861, to Northwestern Missouri, and drove out thence a considerable force of insurgents, who were under the lead of Poindexter. During the next month he reported with his regiment and battery to General Fremont at St. Louis, and, in October, was ordered by him to the frontier post at Rolla, Mo., where he was placed in command. At the head of the Fourth Brigade of the Army of the Southwest, he advanced upon Springfield, in the same State, and captured it. Pursuing the enemy southward, he led the advance, was in the engagements at Cane and Sugar Creeks, in February, 1862, and on the 27th of the same month, defeated Gates at Blackburn's Mills, Ark. He bore a very prominent part, and stubbornly met the very brunt of war, in the famous battle of Pea Ridge, where the rebel power was broken in Missouri and North Arkansas. Here he had three horses shot under him, and was severely wounded; and for his gallantry in this fight he was made brigadier-general, at the request of Major-General Halleck, who had succeeded Fremont in charge of the Western Department. After recovering from his wounds he reported by telegraph to the War Department, and was assigned to the command of the District of Columbus, Ky. Soon after receiving this appointment, he accomplished with great vigor and success the rebuilding of the Mobile and Ohio Railroad, which had been wholly destroyed by the rebels, and then, in June, he had a sharp skirmish with a body of the enemy, handling his forces with such skill and effect as to call forth the hearty commendation of both Halleck and Quimby. In further recognition of these services, he was honored with the command of the Central Division of the Mississippi, with headquarters at Trenton, Tenn. While here his troops captured various towns, and defeated Villipigne on the Hatchee river, after which his command was enlarged, and his headquarters were again established at Columbus. He signalized his return to this post by another signal victory, capturing General Faulkner and his forces near island No. 10, and taking many prisoners.

In the autumn of 1862, immediately after the battle of Corinth, he was charged with the Second Division of the Army of the Tennessee, in the district organized and commanded by General Grant. Perhaps it was here that began the strong friendship which, for so many years, has subsisted between our hero and the great chieftain. General Dodge was soon assigned to the command of the District of Corinth. In the spring of 1863 he defeated the Confederate forces under Forrest and other conspicuous rebel officers. He raised and equipped large numbers of colored troops. His education and experience as a civil engineer proved of invaluable service to him and the cause in rebuilding the railroads destroyed by the enemy. But he knew how to smash things as well as to repair them, as when he shortly conducted the im-

portant campaign up the Tennessee Valley to the neighborhood of Decatur, in the rear of Bragg's army, breaking up its connections and cutting off and wasting its supplies, and aiding in the rout and destruction of that general's forces. The Confederate government estimated the stores and property of various kinds which he thus destroyed at many millions of dollars. On July 5, 1863, he was appointed to command the left wing of the Sixteenth Army Corps, with headquarters at Corinth, Miss. In connection with a movement from Vicksburg, he made a raid on Grenada, of that State, which drove the enemy south of the place, and resulted in the capture of an immense number of cars and locomotives. While at the head of the Sixteenth Army Corps he joined General Sherman in his march to Chattanooga, and wintered with his men on the line of the Nashville and Decatur Railroad. "He is an able officer," wrote Grant to Sherman, "one whom you can rely upon in an emergency." And the reliance was to be on his skill and energy as an engineer, as well as on his sagacity and prowess as a warrior. Grant could not subsist his forces at Chattanooga except as the Nashville and Decatur Railroad should be rebuilt; and this herculean task was fulfilled by General Dodge with amazing despatch and efficiency. Within about forty days he reconstructed and completed the whole line, including one hundred and eighty-three bridges, trestles and other structures, while in the same period he captured Decatur, Ala., with all its garrison, in a well-planned night attack. In the spring of 1864 he was entrusted with the advance of the Army of the Tennessee, one of the three armies consolidated for the Atlanta campaign. As the mighty host moved forward, Dodge drove back the enemy on their railway at Resaca, and participated in the battle at that place a few days later. He repulsed a dangerous night attack of the foe at Nickajack Creek, Dallas, and it was his men who reached nearest the rebel lines on the crest of Kennesaw Mountain. At Ruff's Mills he defeated a strong force from General Hood's Corps, and shortly afterward constructed, with his usual lightning speed and wonderful skill, a substantial double-track bridge across the Chattahoochee, seventeen hundred feet long and twelve feet high, over which the entire Army of the Tennessee, with all its trains and artillery, marched with safety. For his brave and faithful and effective services in this campaign he was made major-general by the government at Washington. When the Confederates under General Hood made the fierce attack under which McPherson fell mortally wounded, Dodge's corps bore the brunt of the encounter, and through his skill and intrepidity, rescued the Army of the Tennessee and turned the tide of battle, capturing eight flags and a very large number of prisoners. Says a competent authority: "It was one of the fiercest-fought contests of the whole war. It is not too much to say that here, as at Pea Ridge, General Dodge saved the Union army from terrible disas-

ter. Riding rapidly up and down his lines, he encouraged his men to hold their ground or die in the attempt. This corps was in all the battles in the march to Atlanta, and no one, in proportion to its size, in the whole consolidated army, lost so many killed and wounded."

During the siege of Atlanta General Dodge was himself again wounded, receiving a gun-shot in the forehead while he was standing in the rifle-pit on the skirmish line, superintending an advance. This was on the 19th of August, 1864. The writer of this sketch contributed some account of the hero and this peril to his life, together with a narrative of occurrences that took place immediately afterward, to the *Danvers Mirror*, in 1877; and the following extract from his communication may not be amiss here:

"The papers, I remember, reported him killed, and some of them gave obituary notices of him, which the general must have read some time afterward with a lively interest. Our sorrow was, however, soon turned to joy, for it was soon announced that he was not dead, but was still living and would doubtless recover. In his weakened condition he was granted a furlough, and took the opportunity to visit his friends at the East and there recruit his strength. I met him on his way to Boston, on board one of the Sound steamers. It had been many years since I had seen him, but I readily recognized him among the passengers who swarmed the deck, and we had a long chat about the recent occurrences, and the great events of the war, and about old personal friends and associations. I told him that Edward Everett was to speak on the afternoon of the next day at Faneuil Hall, in advocacy of the re-election of Abraham Lincoln, and that he ought certainly to be present. He said he had never heard Mr. Everett, and expressed a desire and purpose to be there. On our arrival at the Parker House early the next morning, I looked into the first-issued papers and ascertained who were the committee of arrangements for the meeting. The notices made mention of various distinguished men who were expected to grace the occasion, but the name of General Dodge was not in the list, for none knew of his coming. I immediately despatched a messenger to one of the committee, and informed him that General Dodge had just arrived in town. The general was speedily waited upon and invited to a place on the platform, with other eminent men, at the approaching meeting. The hour of assembling came at length, and I was with the crowd on the floor. By and by the long line of State and city officials, and of the gifted sons of Massachusetts who usually surrounded the matchless orator whenever he spoke in public there in Boston, began to file up from below and to appear upon the stage, where they seated themselves as best they could. The general was there, occupying a place at the left of the speaker and near the front of the platform, and arrayed, like certain other army officers who were with him, in his military costume.

Charles G. Loring presided, and in his opening and well-prepared address, referred to some of the renowned heroes of the war and friends of the country. I doubt whether he knew that General Dodge was close at hand. Certainly the thousands before him did not. But Mr. Everett did, and I shall never forget the thrilling effect which his words and action produced, when, on being presented to the vast multitude, he came forward in his most spirited, yet ever graceful manner, and said, with eloquent voice, that the chairman had given us the names of not a few who had deserved well of the nation, and whom they all delighted to honor, but he had forgotten to mention one who was present with them, who was fresh from the battle-fields, and who could tell us that all was well at the seat of war—*Major-General Dodge, of the Army of the West*. The enthusiasm was very great, and cries immediately came from all parts of the hall—"Dodge!" "Dodge!" "Dodge!" until the modest soldier was obliged to rise and allow himself to be seen of the assembled thousands. The applause that greeted him was simply tremendous, and the scene which was there witnessed, as the Western warrior with his ghastly wound, and the polished and silver-tongued orator of the East, stood side by side before the excited multitude, only lacked one thing to make it beggar all description. A master of the art like Mr. Everett could not fail at such a moment. "Yes! fellow-citizens," he exclaimed, with deepening emotion and ringing tones, as he pointed his quivering finger at the brow of the hero—"Yes, fellow-citizens, and wearing upon his forehead honorable scars, which he gained while imperiling his life in the defence of the Union!" This was the needed climax, and it was perfect. I think I do not say too much when I add that what I have here described was the most interesting and inspiring incident of the occasion, and I felt quite satisfied with the success of my little plan, and the reception which was extended to the Danvers soldier boy. The honors which were showered upon him a few days later, in his native town and its vicinity, your readers all remember."

Concerning the terrible wound which the general had received, a writer said: "The ball struck the forehead at the upper edge over the left eye, tore off a portion of the scalp, and then, passing backwards, tore a gutter two or three inches in length through the scalp. The skull is not fractured, though it received a severe stroke. He was immediately conveyed to his quarters, where he now lies. He will be sent North as soon as practicable."

As soon as he was again fit for duty, General Dodge once more reported to General Sherman, who thought he was still too weak to continue the great march to the sea, and President Lincoln, at the instance of General Grant, assigned him to the Department of the Missouri, where he relieved General Rosecranz. The national troops in Missouri had become quite demoralized, and the State was run over by guerillas

and marauders. General Dodge brought order out of anarchy, notwithstanding he had been called upon to send the great body of his organized troops to General Thomas at Nashville, who, by this timely aid, was all the more enabled to win the glorious victory he gained immediately afterwards. At the same time, Kansas and Utah were merged into his command, adding greatly to his cares and responsibilities. Winter had come, and the States and Territories which were entrusted to him were vast in extent; yet he set in motion the fresh forces he had raised from the loyal men in each county, broke up the bands of guerillas and marauders, and compelled the Indians, who were warring on the settlements from the Red River of the North to the Red River of Texas, to sue for peace. He received the surrender of four thousand of Kirby Smith's army in Missouri and of the Confederate General Jefferson Thompson, with eight thousand officers and men in Arkansas. His experience and observations in these parts of the country led him to advocate the handing over of the Indian tribes to the War Department, to be treated as wards of the nation and as no longer independent and treaty-making powers.

Of the military merit and the patriotic services of this gallant and battle-scarred soldier of the Union, it is meet that we should here let those testify who have been most competent to judge and from whose words there is no appeal. Among them are the greatest of the generals and not a few of the war Governors and other illustrious leaders of the nation's cause, to say nothing of the concurrent and unanimous voice of subordinate officers and privates in the armies which he commanded. He continuously and abundantly shared the trust and admiration of General Grant, through whose influence or direct appointments he was repeatedly promoted to higher positions and honors, as has already been sufficiently indicated. Their strong friendship for each other remained unbroken, and is a matter of history. Ex-Governor Noyes, of Ohio, himself a maimed and noble veteran of the war, says: "We all regarded General Dodge as one of the best officers of the army, —a man of great practical, common sense, of distinguished gallantry, of a patriotic spirit and of military genius." General Sherman writes: "General Dodge is one of the generals who actually fought throughout the Civil War with great honor and great skill, commanding a regiment, brigade, division, and finally a *corps d'armée*, the highest rank command to which any officer can attain." General Sheridan acknowledges the timely and effective aid he received from him while he himself was chief quartermaster and chief commissary, and says that he "did splendidly" at Pea Ridge, and was "spoken of by officers and men of the army in the very highest terms." Governor Kirkwood, of Iowa, writes: "General Dodge is one of the very best military men from this State. He is emphatically a fighting man. There is not a



nor gallant soldier in the army, nor one more worthy or capable." Said the excellent Senator James: "There are very few officers the equal, and none the superior, of General G. M. Dodge, of this State, now and for a long time in command at Corinth, Miss. He has always been selected for the most responsible posts, and has always filled the highest expectations formed of him." Judge Dillon, the eminent jurist, testifies: "No officer in the service from Iowa has acquired more just and deserved distinction; no one has been more faithful, and I may and should add, more useful and efficient;" and in the same connection he speaks of "his great experience, his sleepless vigilance, his unconquerable energy, and, above all, his solid judgment and great practical talents." Major General Oglesby, anxious to serve the country's best interests, urged on President Lincoln his nomination as major general, saying: "I know of no officer at this time more deserving, nor of any who seeks the honor less. I am willing to be held responsible for his official acts." But it is not necessary to proceed further with such tributes, which might easily be multiplied to whatever extent.

Another momentous service was entered upon by General Dodge after the war was ended. Soon after he first went to the West, and while yet a youth, he wrote to his father a prophetic letter, which was published in the local paper in his native town, and in which he indicated a plan or route for a transcontinental railway. It was a cherished dream which one day he was to see realized, and that, too, very largely through his own instrumentality. To this end, extensive surveys and reconnoissances were made by him as early as between the years 1853 and 1858. The Union Pacific Railroad was chartered by the United States Government, July 1, 1862, and the next year the first regular organization was effected, General John A. Dix being elected President. Other surveyors were in the field, and the work was in process of construction during the war. When the bloody conflict was well over, General Dodge was unanimously chosen by the directors as the chief engineer of the line. This was on the 1st of May, 1866. The service was most congenial to him, and he readily accepted it, General Sherman, who was in command of the vast department beyond the Mississippi, yielding his consent as General Dodge resigned for the purpose his commission in the army. The latter entered upon his new undertaking with all his accustomed courage and zeal, and "organized a systematic exploration of the country from the Arkansas River on the South to the Sweet Water on the North, and developed the country with preliminary lines from the mouth of the Lodge Pole through to the California State line." His judgment, long years before, as to the best practicable route for the road, was confirmed by these fresh and extensive surveys, and the Union Pacific of to-day follows very nearly the line which he himself was the first to mark out.

Scarcely had he begun thus to superintend this colossal enterprise, when his grateful and admiring fellow-citizens in Iowa, while he was absent from home, nominated him, in July, 1866, as representative to Congress. Although he had been and still was an ardent Republican, and had been a warm friend and supporter of President Lincoln and other great men of the party, it would have been strange if his name should have failed to win the sympathy and favor of men of other political associations. Consenting to be a candidate, he was triumphantly elected by about five thousand majority over a very popular competitor; but after serving for a single term at Washington, he declined to allow his name to be used again in this connection, choosing rather to return to a more uninterrupted, personal supervision of his responsible and gigantic interests and cares in the West. As a member of the National House of Representatives, he served on the Committee on Military Affairs, secured the reimbursement of Iowa for her expenses during the war, gave special attention to the re-organization of the army and to the defence of the border against the Indians, and advocated the claims of the Union Pacific Road upon the country's favor and support. He was not a frequent speaker on the floor; but whenever he felt called upon to address the house, his words were pertinent and weighty, and were listened to with marked attention. Yet his influence was more particularly exercised in a practical direction, and his exceptionally large and intimate acquaintance with military matters and with the immense Territories of the West, with all their native tribes and boundless resources and capabilities, enabled him to be a most valuable counsellor and helper in many important questions of legislative or governmental action.

From May, 1866, until May, 1869, the corps of engineers under the direction of General Dodge had run not less than fifteen thousand miles of instrumental lines and made as many as twenty-five thousand miles of reconnoissances, so as thoroughly to develop the country and determine the location of the road. Impressive or astonishing as may seem the bare statement, it yet fails to give any adequate idea of the toil and the hardships that were endured, and the difficulties and perils that were overcome, in this three years' service. The engineers were frequently exposed, not only to severe inclemencies of the weather and to much scarcity of food and water, but also and especially to the hostility of the Indians, whose roving bands or more formidable organized forces beset them and threatened them from beginning to end. Nothing could be done without the protection of troops; but even with this safeguard, members of the corps were often killed, and their parties dispersed. Again and again General Dodge and his men were obliged to give battle to these wily and savage foes, and rout them, and pursue them to a distance, so that the work could go on. It was not

alone that his explorers and surveyors had to find their hazardous way across streams, and through forests, and along deep valleys, and over high mountains, and amidst heavy falls of rain or snow; but at every point the location of the line had to be determined, with the utmost scientific skill, with reference to the extraordinary natural features of the territory, its climatic influences and the grade and protection necessary to guard the road against the effects of storms and floods. Not only was the general the chief engineer of the road, but he was also the agent and trustee of the company, to secure its right of way, to receive and dispose of the lands granted to it by the United States government and to lay out and locate the towns and town sites along the route. If he was brave to fight and strong to scatter the Indian bands that molested him, he knew well how to treat with them, dealing with them equitably and never betraying their confidence. So far as his engineering achievement was concerned, the chief difficulty was to be met in carrying the road over the Rocky Mountain range. But this Titanic work was accomplished at length. The tracks of the Central Pacific and the Union Pacific finally met on Promontory, and as the lightning flashed the intelligence to the nations, "swiftly the telegrams of congratulation began to pour in upon the then most conspicuous engineer in the world." General Sherman sent word to him: "All honor to you, to Durant, to Jack and Dan Casement, to Reed and the thousands of brave fellows who have wrought out this glorious problem spite of changes, storms, and even the doubts of the incredulous, and all the obstacles you have now happily surmounted." General Dodge was immediately charged with the delicate task of adjusting the relations between the two roads, and this, too, after much negotiation, was successfully done. And so another great victory was won in the brilliant and eventful career of this gifted and enterprising son of old Essex. In the prosecution of the undertaking, other difficulties than those which have been particularly referred to had to be met. There were unfriendly criticisms, and unfounded accusations, and nameless hindrances on the part of politicians and newspapers. But the general knew what he was about. The government saw, as well as himself, the unspeakable importance of this transcontinental railway to the nation then and in all the future. While he was in Congress and while he was out of it, he commanded the entire confidence of Lincoln and Johnson, Grant and Sherman, and all the leading men at Washington, as well as the officers of the company whose salaried servant or agent he was. Such was his influence with them that, in connection with others whose names will ever be honorably associated with the work, he was instrumental in securing the constantly favorable action of Congress, and so making sure the end in view. More and more, as the years go on, the vastness and beneficence of this service will be appa-

rent, and the approving words of the several successive committees appointed by Congress to examine, investigate and report in relation to it will find a still ampler justification.

While General Dodge still held the position as chief engineer, the famous Chinese embassy, with Anson Burlingame at its head, visited America, passed over the Union Pacific Road, and made known their desire to secure the services of some one who should take charge of like public works in their own vast empire. President Grant at once recommended to them General Dodge, who signified his readiness to accept the position, willing to serve for a limited time and desiring to see the country; but Burlingame died shortly after, and the plan was abandoned.

In 1868 General Dodge was elected a director of the Union Pacific Railroad Company, and has since remained in that relationship. The same year he was delegate-at-large from Iowa, and the chairman of the Iowa delegation to the National Republican Convention at Chicago, and was very influential in determining the results of the proceedings of that occasion. When, in 1870, the Iowa Legislature passed a law for the erection of a new State-house, he was made a member of the Board of Capitol Commissioners, and was charged with the duty of supervising the work. It was in 1870, also, that he tendered his resignation as the chief engineer of the Union Pacific, and received the "very hearty thanks" of the company for his "eminent services," Oakes Ames, the president, writing to him a letter in which he said, "When we consider the great difficulties and dangers that beset you on all sides while locating the road through an uninhabited country, and the rapidity with which the work was accomplished, we are gratified and surprised that you should have finished this work in so perfect and acceptable a manner." Early in April, 1872, he became the chief engineer of the company which had contracted to build the Texas and Pacific Railway, and has continued for ten years to develop the wild regions, and bring to light the hidden resources of the territory south of the Red River, as before he had rendered a like, yet larger, service north of it. A portion of the latter line was built by the Pacific Railway Improvement Company, a corporation which he organized, and of which he became the president. Of other such companies he has also been president: the American Railway Improvement Company, the International Railway Improvement Company, the Texas and Colorado Railway Improvement Company and the Missouri, Kansas and Texas Railway Company, and he is, at present, the president of the Pan Handle Construction Company and the Colorado and Texas Railway Construction Company. These lines have been projected with the view of connecting together the most important and widely-separated points in the West and Southwest, and of opening the vast interiors to the tide of immigration and



P. M. Wentworth



travel, and to the commerce of river, gulf and ocean. One has but to study a little the advancing railway system that is spreading over all those immense tracts of territory, to see what an inestimable service General Dodge is still rendering to his country and to the future.

Of all his pioneer life, and his explorations into every part of this mighty domain; his personal ventures, perils and escapes; his extensive banking and stock operations and connections; his active participation in political conventions and campaigns, and in reunions of military organizations; his repeated visits abroad and tours in other lands; his business interests at Council Bluffs and vicinity, and his domestic relations, there is not space here for us to write as we gladly would. In character he is modest, earnest, faithful and true. He is quiet, but forcible in conversation, using no superfluous words, but expressing his thought in language that is simple and direct. Possessed of a friendly spirit toward all, and most affectionate in his relations to family and kindred, he is an object of great regard and pride at home, and amongst all who know him. In person he is of medium height, of spare build and agile frame, with strongly marked features, indicative, in every line, of the patience and perseverance, the intelligence, courage and energy, that have crowned his career with such success.

The general's family consists of his wife and three children. Again and again, when he was sick or wounded during the war, Mrs. Dodge travelled great distances to be at his side, and to tenderly and faithfully nurse him into health and strength once more for his country's service. The children, who have received their education abroad as well as at home, are Lettie, Ella and Annie. The first is the wife of Mr. R. E. Montgomery, a lawyer of Fort Worth, Texas; the second married Mr. Frank Pusey, son of ex-Congressman Pusey, of Council Bluffs; the third lives with her parents, and "has displayed considerable literary talent, being an occasional contributor to some of the magazines." The family mansion is one of the finest and most attractive in the city, elegant in its appointments and beautiful for its situation. Nathan P. Dodge, the brother of the general, is a banker, and a prominent and very highly esteemed citizen of Council Bluffs. Julia, sister of the two brothers, married, as previously stated, Mr. J. B. Beard, and they also reside in the same place with their two sons. Living amongst this circle of her children and descendants of two or three generations is the venerable mother, Mrs. Sylvanus Dodge herself, now in her eighty-sixth year and much burdened with the infirmities of old age. From this remarkable woman the renowned engineer and soldier inherited no small share of his fortitude, energy and determination. In all her changeful and checkered life, and amidst all its manifold struggles and solicitations, her devotion to her family, and her faith in their

brighter future, have never flagged or wavered. For many years she has seen her hopes for their prosperity and usefulness pass into fulfillment, and she still survives to receive the grateful care and undying affection of the objects of her maternal love and service.

PHILIP H. WENTWORTH.

Philip Henry Wentworth, though not a native of Danvers, was a valued citizen of the town during many of the last years of his useful life, and there ended his days. He was born in Boston, July 6, 1818, and was the son of Philip Wentworth, who was born in the same city, in 1787. His mother's name, previous to her marriage, was Eliza Orrok. While yet very young he was sent to a boarding-school in Dorchester, kept by a Mr. Vose, and afterward to school at South Hadley. Subsequently, he attended the English High School in Boston. At the age of sixteen he entered the dry-goods commission house of Sayles & Hitchcock, better known in later years under the name of Sayles, Merriam & Co. Of this firm he became a partner when but twenty-one. In 1841 he married Mary M. Loing, of Newburyport, but formerly from the State of Maine. A twelve-month or more afterward he went to New York and accepted a partnership with Mr. C. Langley, in that city; but in 1848 returned to Boston, and thenceforth was prominently known as of the house of Stanfield & Wentworth, or, still later, Stanfield, Wentworth & Co. He had been for some years a resident of Roxbury, when, his wife having died, he was again married, June 4, 1856, to Miss Harriet Lucetta Daniell, daughter of the late Mr. and Mrs. J. N. Daniell, also of Roxbury, and both of blessed memory. Mr. Daniell will be remembered as having long been at the head of a large dry-goods establishment in Summer Street, Boston, and all who ever dealt with him or knew him, gratefully call to mind the purity, rectitude and loveliness of his character. Mrs. Daniell was a worthy helpmeet of such a man; possessing a singularly sweet and beautiful spirit, and richly adorned with the virtues and graces of Christian womanhood. The influence of such a parentage found a new sphere for its exercise as the new bride entered the home of the husband and his four motherless children. Early in 1865, he removed, with his family, to Danvers, and established himself on a large and valuable estate which, with its elegant mansion and charming grounds, continued to be the place of his residence to the end of his life. It was after four other children had been born to him under his second marriage and while yet he was pursuing still his successful business in Boston that the great fire which devastated so extensive a portion of that city and swept away in an hour the fortunes of so many of its merchants visited, with the rest, the house of Stanfield, Wentworth & Co., with its destructive fury. Like so many others, Mr. Wentworth never quite re-

covered from the terrible effects of the calamity. Says an obituary notice of him, which appeared in the *Commercial Bulletin*, shortly after his death,—“He met with heavy reverses at the time of the great fire; but, having the undiminished confidence of his business connections soon reinstated himself, and was for several years in active business in the firm of Wentworth & Case. Of late, he had withdrawn to a large extent from active business, spending much of his time at his home in Danvers, retaining, however, an office in Boston, where he was to be seen during business hours.”

Among the most marked features of Mr. Wentworth's character were his indomitable courage, energy and perseverance. Not even the appalling disaster that had befallen him, and that has just been referred to, had any effect to frighten or paralyze him. It only nerved him to more heroic exertions, and it was quite touching to see with what manly patience and determination he bravely strove, through successive years and against fearful odds, to retrieve his shattered fortunes. Thoroughly honest and just, he could not bear to owe a debt which he could not pay, and if ever one purposed and labored that none should be losers by any mishap or calamity of his own, it was he. It was quite wonderful what victory he wrung from the jaws of such defeat. His losses were great, but his gains were greater.

Whatever his discouragements, his cheerfulness never forsook him. His fine face was always lighted with its glow of good feeling and of the joy that was within and that was too deep to be much disturbed by change of outward circumstances. He was habitually hearty and cordial. His welcomes were warm and free, and his hospitality was genuine and bountiful. He was one of the most generous of men and was one of the truest of friends. He scorned things that were false or base, and impressed all who knew him or had to do with him with a sense of the nobleness of his nature. Nothing was more characteristic of him than his straightforwardness and transparency of mind and conduct. It was an element that revealed itself in every word, look and deed. He was just what he seemed, and no one could for a moment mistake his thought or motive, or misinterpret his action or life.

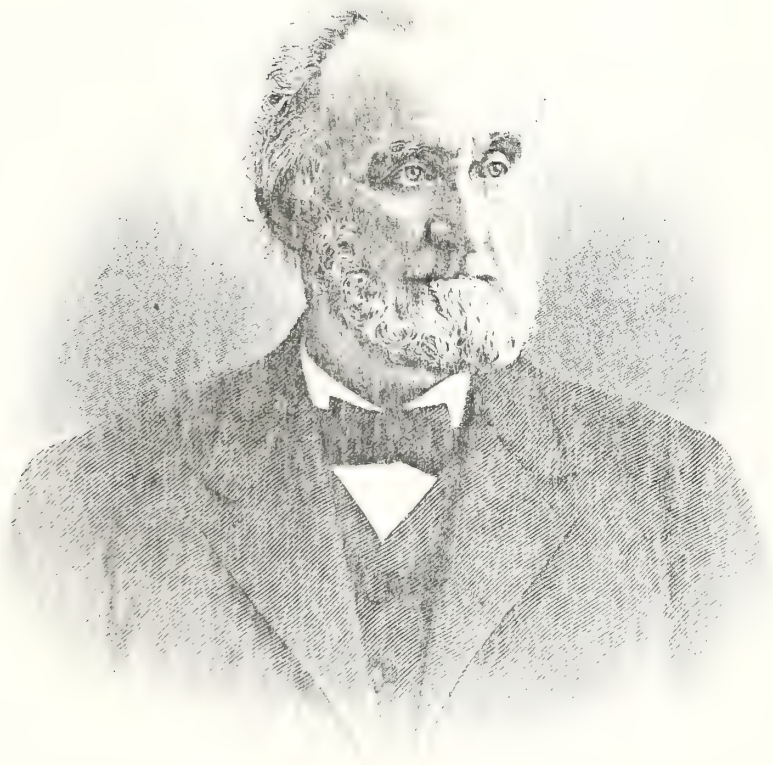
Full often the child is the father to the man, and a pretty story is told of Mr. Wentworth as a lad, that goes to show how the truthfulness and frankness that marked him in all his mature years, was with him even at the very first. It seems to us as good as the story of young George Washington and his hatchet, and we venture to say it is much more authentic. The boys of the neighborhood where “Phil,” or “Harry,” as he was also called, lived, were once on a time at their winter play on the Common in the vicinity of Tremont Street. There was then no fence, as now, between the mall and the thoroughfare, and where to-day extends along the

eastern side a row of shops and stores, there was a continuous line of handsome residences of princely merchants, “Harry” threw a snow-ball that went directly through a window of one of these fine mansions. The little urchins all knew very well that the proprietor was a hot-tempered and violent man, and at once cried out, “Run, Harry, run!” And run he did; not away, as doubtless many a boy would have done, but straight up the steps to tell the family within just what he had done. Before he had a chance to ring the bell, the old gentleman of the house appeared at the door in a furious state of mind, but at once grew calm and gentle as the little fellow openly acknowledged himself to be the offender and offered a manly apology. The affair was instantly treated as of no consequence, and “Phil's” companions were quite amazed at the friendly consideration which was accorded to him.

Very soon after their removal from Roxbury to Danvers, Mr. and Mrs. Wentworth were foremost in starting a new Unitarian Church in their adopted town. The history of this enterprise is related elsewhere in these pages, yet the briefest sketch of Mr. Wentworth's life would be defective, indeed, without a conspicuous reference to his agency and activity in this work and to all which such a beneficent service implies. It is no disparagement to the efforts and zeal of others who were associated with them to say that he and his wife were exceptionally prominent in the movement, watching and guiding faithfully the fortunes of the young society, and giving to it their time, means, energy and constant sympathy and presence for more than twenty years, and until their common devotion to it was broken by death. It was at their beautiful home that Rev. L. J. Livermore, who was so long the pastor of the church, and the many others who from time to time supplied its desk, were most heartily welcomed as guests and there found strength and encouragement in the work of the ministry. Both and all had the satisfaction of seeing that their unselfish labors and care were not in vain. A tasteful and convenient house of worship was ere long built and paid for, and it stands as no unfit monument of the earnest and unflinching fidelity of those who ensured its erection, but especially of him who was the one main reliance in “the day of small things,” as also afterward in seasons of greater prosperity. In such relations or interests Mr. Wentworth was ever ready and prompt to discharge any task or duty which seemed to be required of him, or in which he might be useful to the cause. Nothing here appeared to be menial or trivial. No matter what the service, it was to him important, and he was glad to do it, as unto the Lord. He made small pretensions or professions, but he was a man of deeds, and his whole soul was in what he wrought.

He died in the fulness of his manhood, April 10, 1886. His funeral obsequies took place on the 14th, at the church he had done so much to erect and in





Alfred Trask

which he had so often worshipped. The services, consisting of the reading of the Scriptures, by Rev. Mr. Hudson, of Peabody; prayer by Rev. Mr. Israel, of Salem, and an address by Rev. S. J. Barrows, editor of the *Christian Register*, were very appropriate and impressive, and a memorial pamphlet has since been published, giving just and eloquent tributes, from Mr. Barrows and others to the noble qualities of the departed. One who knew him perfectly has written of him,—"His spiritual and religious life grew and deepened to the end. He so loved to think and talk of the future life that, when the summons came, he was only happy in the thought of exchanging his faith in the unseen to the light of the glorious reality. It was such an accustomed thought that the change, though it came so suddenly, did not disturb his peace more than a summons to take a day's journey would have done."

Mr. Livermore, his beloved pastor, survived him just seven weeks. In death, as in life, they were not divided. Their friendship for each other was peculiarly strong and affectionate, and the trust and admiration which the minister is well known to have cherished towards his parishioner could not have been warmer or profounder than the same sentiments entertained toward him by the writer of this sketch, who knew him even longer, had sustained like relations with him, had seen him much in the church, in the home and in society, and can only think of him as one who was, indeed, a man, in the true sense of the word.

ALFRED TRASK.

Alfred Trask was born in Newport, N. H., December 7, 1811, his father, John Trask,¹ having moved from Beverly, Mass., the previous year. He was the youngest of nine children, five sisters and three brothers. Mrs. Benjamin Woodbury, Mrs. John Moulton and Mrs. Andrew Boker resided in North Beverly; Mrs. Timothy Endicott, Mrs. Nathaniel Bachelder and a brother, John Trask, residents of Newport and Sunapee, N. H. Another brother, Israel Trask, settled in Gloucester, Mass.

From boyhood blest with perfect health and great energy, he early displayed good judgment and executive ability, developing in manhood sagacity in business affairs. He was repeatedly urged to accept positions of honor and trust, thereby proving the confidence and esteem reposed in him by his fellow-men, but preferred, with his retiring disposition, to see others enjoy the honor, and rely on his helping hand to sustain them in keeping it. With equal generosity is he ever interested in matters pertaining to the public welfare of the town.

At twenty-one, with an extremely limited school education, he started in life to make his own fortune

without a farthing. His mother gave him the *making* of a freedom suit, the cloth being afterwards paid for from his own earnings. For two summers he hired out for ten dollars a month, and the rest of the season logging and wood chopping engaged his attention. His twenty-third year, in company with others, he worked a farm on shares, clearing one hundred dollars profit. At twenty-four, tired of farming he left Newport and came to what was then called Danvers Plains, resolved to try his hand in business as drover. With the small amount of money saved he made short trips into the country, buying pigs and cattle, selling and trading them on his way home, where he arrived after two weeks' absence, usually with a profit that was an incentive to continue in this line of business, the same in which his father before him had engaged.

His indomitable will and self-reliance gained for him the encouragement he craved from business men who recognized his ability, and an offer of money to execute his plans was kindly tendered from an old resident of his boyhood home. The indebtedness of one hundred dollars was promptly paid and a continuance of the favor politely declined, but, with an energy redoubled and a renewed will to do and dare, he pluckily kept on. At twenty-eight years of age, on the 5th of March, 1839, he married Mary J. Blackey, of Sandwich, N. H. Of this union nine children were born.

Alfred Moulton Trask, born June 25, 1840; Julia Ann Trask, born December 15, 1841; Charles Wesley Trask, born February 14, 1844; Mary Elizabeth Trask, born February 26, 1846; George Edward Trask, born February 6, 1848; Sarah Bachelder Trask, born September 1, 1850; Nancy Ellen Trask, born January 18, 1853; Henry Woodbury Trask, born November 10, 1856; Frank Boker Trask, born February 12, 1859.

Realizing how much he lacked from his own limited amount of schooling, it was his greatest desire that his children should enjoy the advantages of a liberal education, and to further the project no expense was spared. After completing their education, with rare forethought and generosity, he established each in a good business and also purchased homes for those who were married.

The eldest, Alfred M. Trask, attended school at New London Academy, N. H., and afterwards was started in the stock business in Canada, and some years later settled in Brocton, where a house was presented to him.

The eldest daughter, Julia Ann, was graduated at Tilton Academy, N. H., but died September 7, 1862, in her twenty-first year.

Charles Wesley Trask, after graduating at the Danvers High School, also attended school in Tilton, and for a business was started in a fine market in Waltham, but for several years has been living on an extensive farm given by his father in Sandwich, N. H.

¹ John Trask was a major and fought at Bunker Hill, also used his own oxen, horses and teams to throw up the earth works at the building of the entrenchments.



Mary Elizabeth Trask married quite young, but died when only twenty years of age, leaving one son, William Alfred Patch.

George Edward Trask was graduated from Danvers High School and afterwards attended a Commercial College in Boston. A house was given him in Western, and he started in the slaughtering business.

Sarah B. Trask attended school at the Female Academy in Ipswich, Mass., and on her marriage with Roswald D. Bates, was presented with a house on Conant Street, Danvers.

Nancy Ellen Trask was a graduate from the High School in Danvers and later from the Abbot Academy in Andover, and on her marriage with Henry W. Swett, was given a house in Haverhill, Mass.

Henry W. Trask also graduated at the Danvers High School and then attended the school of Technology in Worcester, Mass. At present he is unmarried and living in the State of Colorado.

The youngest son, Frank B. Trask, is the only member of the family residing in the old home. He learned the upholstery trade, and has recently opened an extensive furniture establishment on Maple Street, Danvers.

Aside from the benefits conferred on his own family, to numerous others has his helping hand been extended. By some the confidence has been abused, while others have profited by the aid rendered, to the mutual pleasure of all concerned. It is well to note the prominent characteristics that mark Alfred Trask one of the most successful self-made men of Essex County.

His business of drover was carried on for a period of thirty years, then he changed it to a wholesale butcher for ten years more, when he concluded to retire from active business and attend to private affairs and the care of his spacious house and grounds,—the realization of his boyhood's hopes, acquired by years of constant toil, backed by energy and courage, which the rising generation would do well to emulate.

June 8, 1872, he met with a great loss in the death of his wife who, with marked energy and frugality, had ever been a ready helper in amassing a competency for the future.

His second marriage occurred September 1, 1873, to a very estimable woman, Dora T. Webster, of Lawrence, Mass., who has made herself much beloved by all those who enjoy her acquaintance, and for the many Christian acts of unostentatious charity and kindness. To do good for others is the one thought uppermost, having great sympathy for young and old, and their good and welfare. The esteem in which she is held by the little flock of grandchildren must indeed be flattering to her, with her keen appreciation of the beautiful in all things in life.

May the Angel of Peace and Contentment hover for many years over the home of Mr. and Mrs. Alfred Trask, is the heart-felt wish of their numerous friends and acquaintances.

EBEN GARDNER BERRY.

For many years no man has been more familiarly associated with Danvers Plains than Eben G. Berry, and no portrait will be more generally recognized, not only by Danvers people, but by many others throughout the county, than that of him which here appears. For a period extending from 1808 the site of the present Hotel Danvers has been sufficiently identified by the name of "Berry's Corner." In the year named Ebenezer Berry, who had come down from Andover, bought out the old tavern and began inn-keeping. He married Hitty Preston, a daughter of Captain Levi Preston, of Danvers. The subject of this sketch, the son of these parents, was born February 19, 1809. He was the only son, and about the time of his coming of age he succeeded to his father's business. Since then, for nearly sixty years, both in the old tavern and in the new hotel which he himself built, he has either himself or by lessee entertained such of the public as sought his hospitality.

The hall of the old tavern was the scene of many events of great local historical interest, concerning which Mr. Berry has contributed many reminiscences, which have been incorporated in the sketch of the Plains in previous pages. These reminiscences, very properly a part of his biography, Mr. Berry modestly insists are sufficient to accompany his portrait. He has been twice married—first to Elizabeth J. Abbott of Andover; second to Mrs. Sarah (Nichols) Page. The latter died recently. He has but one surviving child—Mrs. Emily B., wife of Deacon John S. Learoyd. Another daughter was Caroline, wife of the late Captain James A. Johnson, who left two children, now living in Danvers. He has a sister, Mehitable, widow of Henry Sperry, living in close neighborhood to him. A few years ago he built the fine dwelling in which he resides, on Conant Street, next east of the hotel.

CHAPTER XLI.

IPSWICH.

BY M. V. B. PERLEY.

PRE-HISTORIC.

DISCOVERIES.

1. *Phœnicians and Norwegians.*—This territory, once the abode of the red man, and known to him by the name of Agawam, was settled by our ancestors some more than two hundred and fifty years ago. It was, however, known to the white race, no doubt, at a very much earlier period. The learned suspect



Engraved by J. H. Smith.

Eben. G. Berry.

that the Phœnicians visited our New England shores in ancient times, and that Norwegian adventurers sojourned here about nine hundred years ago. Certainly, their annals treat of voyages of adventure and discovery, and it only remains to find the places they describe. Their "vinland," Mr. Fewkes, a summer sojourner with us, and an archæologist, declares to be located here, citing the ocean beacon, the changed channel, the cellars and foundations of nine houses, and the remains of three wells, which evince a greater antiquity than do any known works of a similar nature of Puritan origin.

2. *Mops.*—In the eagerness of navigators to find a short northwest route to the East, Canada was well and very accurately mapped, while New England's "cartography," says Kohl, "remained very defective through nearly the whole of the sixteenth century."

3. *Champlain.*—In 1604 Champlain, who afterwards attached his name to the beautiful lake at Vermont, explored the coast from the St. Lawrence River to Plymouth Bay, following the sinuosities of the shore. At Saco Bay he observed a marked change in Indian habits, mode of life and language. The tribes at the East were nomadic, living wholly by fishing and the chase. At Saco and at the West they were sedentary, and subsisted mainly on the products of the soil. Around their settlements were fields of Indian corn, gardens of squashes, beans and pumpkins, and a generous patch of tobacco. At the headland we call Cape Ann, the land of Masconomet, of whom we are soon to speak, the natives were cordial and highly intelligent. Furnished with a crayon, they made an accurate outline of Massachusetts Bay, and indicated their six tribes and chiefs by as many pebbles.

4. *Hardie et al.*—In 1611 Captain Edward Hardie and Nicholas Hobson were kindly received here. In 1614 the famous adventurer, John Smith, found "a multitude of people." He explored and mapped the territory, naming it Southampton, at the suggestion of Prince Charles, and thus described it,—“Here are many rising hills, and on their tops and descents are many corne fields and delightfull groues. On the east is an isle of two or three leagues in length, the one halfe plaine marish ground, fit for pasture or salt ponds, with many faire high groues of mulberry trees. There are also oaks, pines, walnuts and other wood to make this place an excellent habitation.” A mere mention of these must suffice; though they may have left traces of their handiwork, they embalmed no thought or feeling.

INDIANS.

1. *Territory.*—The Atlantic Ocean on the east, Cochichawick (now Andover), on the west, the Merrimack (Sturgeon) River on the north, and the Naumkeag (now North) River, at Salem, on the south, enclosed the beautiful territory of one hundred and eighteen thousand five hundred acres, called Agawam. The name signified "Resort for fish of passage," and

was eminently appropriate. With the spring came the myriad-swarming alewife and the bone-burdened shad, and river and brook and pond became an Eden of new life. In late summer schools of mackerel darkened the waters of the bay, as they migrated to their southern sequestered home. Here the blue fish sported and the doughty sturgeon pursued his prey.

2. *Sagamore.*—The name of the Sagamore of this princely domain was Masconomet, sometimes called Masconomo, or John. His exact relation to other tribes is unknown. He may have been a sub-tribe of the Massachusetts, or the Aberginians, a great nation, the power of whose sachem is said to have extended from the Charles River to the Merrimac; but he seems to have been under the leadership of the powerful Pennacooks. His subjects are represented as kind-hearted and tractable. Captain Hardie and Nicholas Hobson, exploring the coast in 1611, testified to kinder treatment by these natives than by others.

3. *His Conversion.*—After Governor Winthrop had arrived in Salem harbor, 1629, Masconomet and one of his men went on board the Governor's ship, Sunday morning, June 13th, and remained all day. The governor's object in coming to New England was to Christianize the Indians. He so far succeeded here that March 8, 1644, Masconomet put himself, his subjects, and his possessions under the government protection of the Massachusetts Bay, and agreed to be instructed in the Christian religion. The purpose of this chief and a few of his friends is shown in the following examination:

1. *Will you worship the only true God and not blaspheme?* Ans. We do desire to reverence the God of the English, and to speak well of him, because we see He doth better to the English than other gods do to others. 2. *Will you cease from swearing falsely?* Ans. We know not what swearing is. 3. *Will you refrain from working on the Sabbath, especially in Christian towns?* Ans. It is easy for us—we have little to do any day, and can well rest on that day. 4. *Will you honor your parents and all your superiors?* Ans. It is our custom to do so. 5. *Will you refrain from killing any man without cause and authority?* Ans. It is good, and we desire it. 6. *Will you put away fornication, adultery, incest, rape, sodomy and bestiality?* Ans. Though some of our people do some of these things, we count them naught, and do not allow them. 7. *Will you put away stealing?* Ans. We answer this as the sixth question. 8. *Will you allow your children to read the word of God, so that they may know him aright, and worship him in his own way?* Ans. We will allow this as opportunity will permit, and as the English live among us, we desire to do so.

4. *Friendly Tokens.*—The examination was satisfactory; they were "solemnly received," and were then presented to the court. They gave the court twenty-six fathoms of wampum, and the court gave to each of them two yards of cloth, a dinner, and at their departure a "cup of sac."

5. *Depopulation.*—At the date of Champlain's and Hardie and Hobson's visits the tribe seemed numerous and valiant, but the pestilence that prevailed among the tribes generally, about 1617, reduced their number and greatly enfeebled the strength of this tribe.

6. *Suspicion.*—In 1642 several tribes were suspected

of an intention of rising against the English, and were, therefore, deprived of their arms for several months. But generally the English experienced no trouble from the Agawams.

7. *Tarratines*.—At the north of Agawam lay the imperial realm of the Pennacooks, and next to them, as allies, were the Pawtuckets on the north side of the Merrimack River, and the Penobscotts in the vicinity of the Penobscott, or, as they called it, Pentagoet River. Somewhere in that territory wigwamed the Tarratines, agile, warlike, blood-thirsty and, as some say, cannibal. It is said that Masconomet had slain some of the tribe, and so had incurred the price of blood, and endangered the safety of the English. Accordingly, July 5, 1631, he was banished from the house of every Englishman for one year, under penalty of ten beaver-skins for every offence. Of the Tarratines the Agawams had a mortal dread. In 1629, and several times after, they applied to Governor Endicott for aid, and received it. Sagamores James and John, of Saugust and Charlestown, often assisted them. One instance of such alliance was August 8, 1631, when the Tarratines, to the number of a hundred, in three canoes, surprised the Agawams, slew seven men, wounded Sagamores John and James and some others, and took, among other captives, the wife of James, who, however, was returned the following September with a demand of wampum and ten beaver-skins for her ransom.

8. *Indian Arts*.—Their arts were simple and their wants were few. Their wild dance and song were the life of the wigwam; tobacco was their solace; they delighted in smoking, or "drinking the pipe;" fishing and hunting were their sustenance, and they exulted in the capture of a salmon, a shad, or a sturgeon, of a fox, a bear, or a deer. In spring their food was largely fish, in summer berries, in autumn harvest products, and in winter clams. They cultivated only the Indian bean and corn, which was always their staple food. Rude granite mortars and pestles served to powder the corn; their tomahawks were stones about the length of a man's hand, with one end fashioned for a handle and with the other end beveled to an edge. Their arrow-heads were of slate, and a lapidary for their manufacture has been discovered near Prospect Hill. Abundance of clam-shells have been found on high ground, which, doubtless, mark the sites of their wigwams. These implements, even now after the flight of two hundred and fifty years, the plow-share sometimes discovers. Their highest art was expended upon the bow and arrow; their proudest skill was in throwing the tomahawk, shooting the arrow and spearing the fish.

9. *Masconomet's Death*.—Masconomet saw his tribe fade away, as a summer cloud; his rich domain became the abode of the pale-face; his scepter broken fall from his nerveless grasp. In 1655, 21st February, the selectmen granted him a life-interest in six acres of planting ground. He died 6th March, 1658.

The 18th of the following June, his widow was granted the same ground during her widowhood. Both were buried on Sagamore Hill in Hamilton. With him were interred his gun, his tomahawk and other implements of the chase. The tribe lived in scattered wigwams, much at the town charge, till it was practically extinct, about 1730.

PLANTERS.

1. *Definition*.—These were such as obtained tracts or parcels of land, and occupied them as fishing stations or for the purpose of traffic with the natives. Two parties principally are concerned in this history, John Mason and William Jeffrey.

2. *John Mason* was a member of the Plymouth Company, whose corporation was incident upon the published maps and description of this section, by Capt. John Smith, about 1615. Sir Ferdinand Gorges was president of the company. They held the land between the Charles and Merrimac Rivers, and had trading posts and fishing stations along the coast as early as 1619. About 1621, Mason obtained from the company the land between the Naumkeag and Merrimac Rivers. Perchance he never occupied the grant, or if he did, he had abandoned it and removed all trace of his occupancy, before the settlement by Winthrop in 1633; for to his claim made, in 1680, the settlers replied: "We have subdued the wilderness with great pains and cost; our lauds have passed through several hands; we were confirmed in our rights by the law of 1657 for settling inheritances, which was not designed against Robert Mason, of whom and of whose claim we were then wholly ignorant. So we continued till surprised by order of the General Court, according to your letter of September 30th, requiring us to furnish agents and evidences, as to our lands." Thus it was; Ipswich had been settled; the lands bought, sold and improved; houses erected; and the bustle of business felt for nearly half a century, when suddenly before the king appeared Mason with his claim. He went before the local court for justice. Litigation continued two years and a half. At last Mason won his case. "The General Court allow John Wallace and Content Mason, relict of John Tufton Mason, to give deeds as her husband had done. Some paid a quit-rent of two shillings a year for every house built on the land of his grant, which was in their possession." Mason's heirs hoped to establish their inheritance, name it Mariana, and hold it "in fee and common socage." Thus the decision, which was against the settlers, was favorable.

3. *William Jeffrey* obtained his title to Jeffrey's Neck of the Indians and presumably of Masconomet. His alleged right to the territory of our Ipswich may have been derived from Mason. He was here very early. Winthrop called him "an old planter." He was probably associated with John Burslin, Edward Hilton and David Thomson, fishmonger of London, in

the employ of the Plymouth Company, and belonged to Robert Gorges' party, who settled at Wessagusset, in September, 1623. Mr. Fewkes' old cellars and wells, evincing to him traces of the Norsemen, referred to above, may have been Jeffrey's trading and fishing station; and so to Jeffrey's diminutive city-by-the-sea the Court of Assistants may have referred, when, in 1630, by warrant, they "ordered those planted at Agawam forthwith to come away." However this may be, William Jeffrey, in 1660, to satisfy his claim to Jeffrey's Neck within the bounds of Ipswich, is granted five hundred acres of land on the south side "of our patent, to be a final issue of all claims by virtue of any grant heretofore made by any Indians whatsoever."

4. *Notice.*—Mr. Jeffrey is referred to in one of the company's letters of instruction as "William Jeffries, Gentleman." He was an Episcopalian; was made freeman May 18, 1637; was one of the proprietors of Weymouth, in 1641-42, where he was commissioned to solemnize marriages. Very early he had property rights at the Isles of Shoals. He and his business associates,—Hilton, Blackstone, Burslin and Thomson's widow contributed to meet the expense of the expedition, that dislodged that "merry, rollicking, scholar, adventurer and scape-grace, Thomas Morton, Gentleman," from Merry-Mount, about 1628. In 1634 Morton called him "My very good gossip." He witnessed the will of William Waltham, of Weymouth, in 1642; and his daughter Mary was born there "20: 1:" of the same year.

CHAPTER XLII.

IPSWICH —(Continued).

MUNICIPAL.

SETTLEMENT.

1. *Pioneers.*—About twelve years after the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth, four and a half years after Captain John Endicott colonized Salem, and three years after Governor John Winthrop established the colony of Massachusetts Bay, a rumor spread in Boston that the Jesuits were about to establish a mission. This it was a part of the Governor's duty to prevent, and he immediately organized a company of thirteen men with his son John as leader, to forestall the movement. Accordingly Mr. John Winthrop, Jr., Mr. John Thorndyke, Mr. William Clark, John Biggs, Robert Cole, John Gage, Thomas Hardy, Thomas Howlett, William Perkins, William Sergeant and three others, in March, 1633, wooed and wed the virgin soil of Agawam.

2. *Incorporation.*—"A Court holden att Newe Towne,—Cambridge—August 5th, 1634, ordered that

Aggawam shall be called Ipswitch," wherefore August 16th, new style, 1634, dates the beginning of our corporate capacity. The name is derived from Ipswich, England, "in acknowledgment of the great honor and kindness done to our people who took shipping there." The House of Commons, in the memorable resolve of the 10th of March, 1642, gave New England the title of *Kingdom*, and *Wonder-working Providence*, in consonance, calls Ipswich an *Earldome*.

3. *Deed.*—The colonial records read that Masconomet sold his fee in Ipswich to John Winthrop, Jr., March 13, 1638, and that he expressed himself satisfied with the consideration, March 5, 1639. The following is the deed:

"I Masconomet Sagamore of Agawam do by these presents acknowledge to have received of Mr. John Winthrop the sum of £20, in full satisfaction of all the right, property, and claim I have or ought to have, unto all the land, lying and being in the Bay of Agawam, alias Ipswich, being so called now by the English, as well as such land, as I formerly reserved unto my own use at Chebacco, as also all other land, belonging to me in these parts, Mr. Dunmer's farm excepted only; and I hereby relinquish all the right and interest I have unto all the havens, rivers, creeks, islands, huntings, and fishings, with all the woods, swamps, timber, and whatever else is, or may be, in or upon the said ground to me belonging; and I do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction from the said John Winthrop for all former agreements, touching the premises and parts of them; and I do hereby bind myself to make good the aforesaid bargain and sale unto the said John Winthrop, his heirs and assigns forever, and to secure him against the title and claim of all other Indians and natives whatsoever.

Witness my hand, 28th of June, 1638.

Witness hereunto:

John Joyliffe,
James Downing,
Thomas Coytimore,
Robert Harding.

Masconomet..

his  mark.

Ipswich is ordered November, 5, 1639, by the Court, to refund to John Winthrop, Jr., the twenty pounds named in the above deed. The town voted February 22, 1705, "That Samuel Appleton, Esq., and our two representatives, Nehemiah Jewett and Nathaniel Knowlton, treat with Hon. Wait Winthrop about Masconomet's deed of Agawam, made to his father, deceased.

4. *Extent.* When the town was settled in 1633, the boundary on the north and west was the boundary of ancient Agawam; on the east the ocean; on the southeast Cape Ann, (Gloucester); and on the south Jeffrey's Creek, (Manchester); Enon, (Wenham); and Salem Village, (Danvers), four hamlets then belonging to Salem. Newbury, 12,300 acres, was set off in 1635, and contributed to the sisterhood Newburyport, 4575 acres, in 1764, and Parsons, 8072 acres, in 1819, which became West Newbury, June 14, 1820. The court, in 1636, established our western limit six miles in the country, the southern and eastern boundaries remaining the same. In 1639, Ipswich with Newbury contributed Rowley, 10,310 acres, for which the two towns received £800, and out of which were cut the towns of Bradford, 4564 acres, in 1675, of Boxford, 14,200 acres, in 1685, of Middleton, in part, about 2500 acres, in 1728, of Georgetown, 7548



acres, in 1838, and of Groveland, 5230 acres, in 1850. In 1650 Ipswich contributed the part of Topsfield, north of the river, part of 7375 acres. The Hamlet of Ipswich, 9440 acres, was incorporated Hamilton in 1793, and the Chebacco of Ipswich, 7839 acres, became Essex in 1819. In 1774, certain families of Ipswich were set off to Topsfield; in 1784 certain others to Rowley; and in 1846 still others to Boxford, and there now remains 25,478 acres, the heart of the grand old town, pulsating strong in her original integrity and enterprise, and in her wealth and pleasant memories.

5. *First Settlers.* These men were largely citizens of wealth and learning, and some were merchants. They were thoughtful, conscientious, heroic, righteous, God-fearing; thoughtful, for they had clear views of the tenets of their religion and of civil life; conscientious, for they could not brook known errors: heroic, for they suffered for principle; righteous, for they made a righteous civil code; God-fearing, for it was their purpose in all things to serve Him.

The Wonder-Working Providence reads:

"The peopling of this towne is by men of good ranke and quality, many of them having the yearly revenue of large estates in England before they came to this wilderness." In Rev. Joseph Felt's history of the town, we read: "A large proportion of the inhabitants possessed intelligent minds, virtuous hearts, useful influence and remarkable character. They well understood how the elements of society should be for the promotion of its welfare, and how such elements should be formed and kept pure from ignorance and irreligion. They were careful of their own example, and thereby gave force to their precepts. They attended to the concerns of society as persons, who felt bound to consult the benefit of posterity as well as their own immediate good."

6. *Citizenship.* The next month after the settlement by Winthrop and his associates, April 1, 1633, it was ordered by the Court of Assistants, that "noe pson wtsoever shall goe to plant or inhabitt att Aggawam, without leave from the Court." This order obtained for some time; there for a considerable period the rule and practice obtained that no one should be admitted as townsman without the consent of the town's freemen. This practice served to preserve the unity of their religious belief and the high standard of their civil and social life, by excluding the immoral and the idle, the ignorant and the contentious.

7. *Names.* The following catalogue has been gleaned from the town records, and, probably, contains nearly all the names of settlers in the town during the first twenty years, arranged in the years when they were first observed:

1633.

Winthrop, John, Jr.	Hardy, Thomas.
Thornelyke, John.	Howlett, Thomas.
Garig, William,	Perkins, William.
Biggs, John.	Sellman, Thomas.
Carr, George.	Sergeant, William.
Cole, Robert.	Shatswell, John.
Gage, John.	

1634.

"Probably some from New Town, now Cambridge, since 'they sent men to Agawam and Merrimack, and gave out that they would move'

to Connecticut; Rev. Thomas Parker and his company of about one hundred, from Wiltshire, England, sojourned here about a year before settling Newbury; there were also,—

Currin, Matthias.	Newman, John.
Dillingham, John.	Parker, Thomas.
Easton, Nicholas.	Perkins, John.
Elliot.	Robinson, John.
Fawne, John.	Sewell, Henry.
Franklin, William.	Spencer, John.
Fuller, John.	Symonds, Mark.
Manning, John.	Ward, Nathaniel.

1635.

Andrews, Robert.	Lancton, Roger.
Bartholomew, William.	Metcalf, Joseph.
Bracey, Thomas.	Moody, William.
Bradstreet, Simon.	Mussey, John.
Bradstreet, Humphrey.	Mussey, Robert.
Bradstreet, Dudley.	Osgood, Christopher.
Cogswell, John.	Perley, Allan.
Covington, John.	Procter, John.
Cross, John.	Suttonstall, Richard.
Denison, Daniel.	Saunders, John.
Dudley, Thomas.	Sayward, Edmund.
Dudley, Samuel.	Scott, Thomas.
Firman, Thomas.	Sherrat, Hugh.
Foster, Reginald.	Short, Anthony.
Fowler, Philip.	Short, Henry.
French, Thomas.	Symonds, William.
Fuller, William.	Treadwell, Edward.
Gardner, Edmund.	Tuttle, John.
Gidding, George.	Varnum, George.
Goodhue, William.	Wade, Jonathan.
Hatheld, Richard.	Wainwright, Francis.
Hassell, John.	Webster, John.
Hubbard, William.	Wells, Thomas.
Jackson, John.	White, William.
Jacob, Richard.	Whityear, John.
Johnson, John.	Williamson, Paul.
Jordan, Francis.	Woodmouse, Mr.
Kent, Richard.	Wyatte, John.
Kinsman, Robert.	Wythe, Humphrey.
Knight, Alexander.	Younglove, Samuel.

1636.

Bishop, Thomas.	Norton, John.
Clark, Daniel.	Norton, William.
Dorman, Thomas.	Peabody, Francis.
Hall, Samuel.	Rogers, Nathaniel.
Harris, Thomas.	Sawyer, Edmund.
Hart, Nathaniel.	Seaverns, John.
Jennings, Richard.	Sherman, Samuel.
Lord, Robert.	Wilson, Theophilus.
Merrill, John.	

1637.

Appleton, Samuel.	Lord, Widow Katherine.
Archer, Henry.	Morse, Joseph.
Averill, William.	Northe, John.
Bishop, Nathaniel.	Perkins, Isaac.
Bixby, Nathaniel.	Pike, ———.
Boardman, Thomas.	Purrier, William.
Browning, Thomas.	Quilter, Mark.
Challis, Philip.	Rawlinsone, Thomas.
Clark, Thomas.	Reading, Joseph.
Colby, Arthur.	Symonds, Joseph.
Comesone, Symond.	Thornton, John.
Cross, Robert.	Turner, Capt.
French, Edward.	Vincent, Humphrey.
Hayes, Robert.	Warren, William.
Heldred, William.	Wattles, Richard.
Hovey, Daniel.	Wedgewood, John.
Jordan Stephen.	Whitred, William.
Kimball, Richard.	Whittingham, John.
Ladd, Daniel.	Williamson, Michael.
Lawson, William.	

1638.

Baker, John.
Brown, Edward.
Burnham, John.
Cochame, Henry.
Castwright, Michael.
Cummings, Isaac.
Cusley, John.
Cramer, Robert.
Dane, John.
Dix, Widow.
Emerson, John.
Emerson, Joseph.
Emerson, Thomas.
English, William.
Eppe, Daniel.
Gibson, Thomas.
Graves, Robert.
Greenfield, Samuel.
Hanchet, John.
Kimball, Henry.
Kingsbury, Henry.

Knight, William.
Lunkin, Richard.
Metcalf, Thomas.
Miller, William.
Morse, John.
Newmarch, John.
Nichols, Richard.
Paine, William.
Scott, Robert.
Sherman, Thomas.
Silver, Thomas.
Stacy, Simon.
Swinder, William.
Taylor, Samuel.
Tredwell, John.
Tredwell, Thomas.
Whipple, John.
Whitman, Robert.
Wilkinson, Henry.

1639.

Andrews, John.
Belcher, Jeremiah.
Bennett, Richard.
Bird, Jathnell.
Bird, Thomas.
Bosworth, Nathaniel.
Butler, Matthias.
Cochame, Edward.
Castell, Robert.
Clare, Lionell.
Davis, John.
Harrison, Ralph.
Hart, Robert.
Firman, Dr. Giles.

Gilvin, Thomas.
Hadley, George.
Hodges, Andrew.
Humphrey, ———.
Hattley, Richard.
Knowlton, John.
Mokey, Robert.
Newman, Thomas.
Pitney, James.
Preston, Roger.
Smith, Thomas.
Storey, Andrew.
Thompson, Simon.
Tangley, Palmer.
Wallis, Robert.

1640.

Bacheler, Henry.
Lee, John.

Paine, Robert.
Utann, ———.

1641.

Hart, Thomas.
Hart, John.

Safford, Thomas.

1642.

Adams, William.
Amable, John.
Bancroft, Robert.
Bancroft, Richard.
Brown, Thomas.
Cusley, John.
Dane, John.
Davis, Richard.
Day, Robert.
Doughlas, William.
Fellows, William.
Green, Henry.
Howe, James.
Knight, Oseph.

Knowlton, William.
Knowlton, Thomas.
Lee, Thomas.
Lamson, Edward.
Lammas, Richard.
Perry, Thomas.
Potts, John.
Pinder, Henry.
Pengry, Moses.
Podd, Daniel.
Redding, John.
Sedgwick, Richard.
Satchell, Theophilus.
Smith, Richard.
Warner, Daniel.

1643.

Andrews, Richard.
Buckley, William.

Low, Thomas.
Windall, Thomas.

1644.

Bridges, Edmund.
Chapman, Edward.
Crispin, Robert.

Roberts, Robert.
Wood, Daniel.
Whittingham, Thomas.

1647.

Burnham, Thomas.
Denison, John.
Heard, Luke.

Hunter, Robert.
Lovell, Thomas.
Silabee, Henry.

1648.

Appleton, John.
Ayers, John.
Betts, Richard.
Birdley, Gyles.
Bishop, Job.
Bosworth, Haniel.
Bragg, Edward.
Cathame, John.
Choate, John.
Chute, James.
Clark, Malachi.
Cogswell, William.
Colburn, Robert.
Dix, Ralph.
Dutch, Robert.
French, John.
Gilbert, Humphrey.
Gillman, Edward.
Granger, Lancelot.
Green, Thomas.
Gutterson, William.
Harris, Anthony.
Hartis, Thomas.
Heiphat, William.
Lancton, Joseph.
Leighton, John.
Long, Philip.

Bixby, Joseph.
Palmer, George.
Potter, Anthony.

Griffin, Humphrey.
Harinden, Edward.

Long, Samuel.
Pierpont, Robert.
Pendleton, Bryan.
Perkins, Jacob.
Pindar, John.
Pengry, Aaron.
Podd, Samuel.
Ringe, Daniel.
Roffe, Daniel.
Roffe, Ezra.
Salter, Theophilus.
Satchell, Richard.
Smith, George.
Smith, Robert.
Stacy, Richard.
Stone, Nathaniel.
Story, William.
Waldene, Abraham.
Waldene, Edward.
Ward, Dr. John.
Warner, John.
Warren, Abraham.
West, John.
Whitred, Thomas.
Woodham, John.
Woodman, John.

1649.

Pritchard, William.
Wood, Obediah.

1651.

Leigh, Joseph.
Walker, Henry.

GOVERNMENT AND OFFICERS.

1. *Object and Origin.*—The object of our early ancestors was religious freedom, and when they had obtained the right and privilege to exercise it, they established governments to protect, sustain and foster it. The Bible was to them the Book of books: it contained the principles of all municipal, moral and religious governments, and was absolute authority in all such matters. Here is the origin of our unique town-government—a pure democracy—a government of the people, by the people, and for the people, which was confirmed and established by law, in 1636, when the General Court conferred upon the towns the power to grant lots of land, to make by-laws for their own common weal, under colonial approval, to impose and collect fines not above twenty shillings, and to elect such officers as necessity required. But March 3, 1635–36, it was ordered that at the next term of the General Court, Ipswich, with other towns, “shall have libertie to stay soe many of their freemen att home for the safety of their towne as they judge needful, and that the saide freemen that are appointed by the town to stay att. home shall have libertie for this Court to send their voices by proxy.” Thus, necessity foreshadowed our present representative form, which was afterwards inaugurated in place of the unwieldy assemblies of the congregated towns. In 1631, it was enacted that only church members could vote, a law which was practically repealed in 1644. In 1692, a voter for representative must be worth a realty of forty shillings a year, or other estate of forty pounds, yet it was practically a government of equal rights.

2. *Sevenmen*.—The highest office in the municipal gift was the committee called The Sevenmen, a title suggested, doubtless, by such scriptures as these: "Wisdom has hewn out her seven pillars," "Seven men that can render a reason," "Look out seven men of honest report to appoint over this business." The Sevenmen are now called the Selectmen. They were entrusted with the concerns of church and town, and managed them; cardinal questions and general principles being settled in town-meeting. The duty of exercising this duplex order, civil and religious, was a most important and responsible one; but notwithstanding the weight of responsibility, the breadth of trust, and the possibility of satisfaction, they, from year to year, acquitted themselves so justly, that they long since received, as a badge of honor, the title: "The Town Fathers." They began their work when the town began. In 1638 they were expanded to eleven men. For 1723 the number was five. After 1740 the *seven* seems to have lost its power. In 1794 one man was *selected* from the north side of the river, one from the south side, and one from Chebacco. In 1798 it was voted to have five selectmen, at a salary of nineteen dollars. Fifteen men were chosen, and all declined to serve. Afterwards the salary was made thirty-eight dollars, and the five were thereupon elected. In 1791 their office was in the school-house chamber. The present chairman of the Board, Nathaniel Rogers Farley, Esq., was first elected in 1844, and this is his nineteenth year of service.

3. *Clerks*.—To be clerk of a town was then, as now, a most important service. His records become history as time advances; they may be the basis of legal investigation, and so be arbiter between man and man; they must approach absolute correctness, to be trustful. It has been the practice of this town to continue this officer for a series of years. Elder Robert Paine and William Bartholomew are said to have been the first elected to this office. Daniel Denison was chosen in 1635-36, and probably was continued till 1639, when Samuel Symonds was chosen. Mr. Symonds was successively chosen till 1645, when Robert Lord succeeded, and served till his death, August 21, 1683. John Appleton appears to have been his immediate successor till 1688. Thomas Wade was clerk, 1688 to 1696-97; Francis Wainwright, 1696-97 to 1699-1700; Daniel Rogers, 1699-1700; John Wainwright, 1719-20 to 1739; Samuel Rogers, 1739 to 1773; Major John Baker, 1773 to 1785; Nathaniel Wade, 1785 to 1814; Joseph Swazey, 1814 to 1816; Ebenezer Burnham, 1816 to 1843; Samuel Newman, one month; Ebenezer Burnham, 1843 to 1846; Alfred Kimball, 1846 to 1855; John A. Newman, 1855; Alfred Kimball, 1856 to 1864; George R. Lord, 1864; Wesley K. Bell, 1865, his twenty-third year to the present time. He has been an obliging and efficient officer.

4. *Constables*.—The early duty of constables was principally the collection of taxes. Their badge of

office was a staff, some five or six feet long, and tipped with brass. A similar badge may now be seen in the hand of the court-crier, an officer who announces the opening of a court. The officer, however, with all its insignia and distinction, often sought the man, and not the man the office. In 1738 Robert Wallis was chosen, and paid a fine of five pounds rather than serve. The records show several such cases at earlier dates. This duty appertains to the officer now if a collector is not chosen.

5. *Tithingmen*.—The General Court as early as 1677 ordered tithingmen to be chosen in the several towns, and Ipswich, December 20, 1677, chose twenty-five. In 1681 thirteen were chosen for the north side of the river, and twelve for the south side. Their duty was to guard the public morals, to note infractions of laws, and cite offenders to justice. But, in the presence of a vigilant police, they were not needed, and so they were not chosen after 1871.

6. *Treasurer*.—The duties of this office were the same then as now. Most, if not all, of them were at the same time county treasurers. The following are confidently named as long time in office: Robert Paine (1665-83), John Appleton, Nathaniel Appleton, Aaron Porter (—1766), Michael Farley (1766—), Nathaniel Wade, William Foster Wade, Jeremiah Lord, and the present genial officer, Mr. Jonathan Sargent, who has served since 1872—sixteen years.

7. *Surveyors*.—These were the guardians of the king's highways—sometimes builders, but commonly only repairers of roads and bridges. The town was divided into districts for the purpose by the selectmen, pretty much as the business is conducted now.

8. *Firemen*.—In relation to fires, our ancestors showed a characteristic caution and precaution. Their houses had wooden chimneys, plastered with clay, and thatched roofs—a condition which rendered care particularly necessary. In 1642 it was voted that "as much hurt hath been done by fire, through neglect of having ladders in readiness at men's houses, and also by the insufficiency of chimneys and due cleaning of them, every householder shall have a ladder in constant readiness, twenty feet long, at his house." In 1649 the town adopted the following order: "Whereas complaint hath been made of the great danger that may accrue to the inhabitants by reason of some men's setting stacks of hay near their dwelling houses, if fire should happen, ordered that whosoever hath any hay, or English corn, or straw by their houses, or hath set any hay-stacks within three rods of their houses, shall remove it within six days after notice, on fine of 20s." In 1681 it is ordered that every house must be provided with a ladder, and the tithingmen were instructed to note infractions of the order. In 1804 smoking in the streets was considered dangerous to buildings, and the practice which had become prevalent was prohibited, on penalty of one dollar for each offence. In 1803 the

town, by subscription, raised money to purchase a fire-engine, and January 3, 1804, the South Parish voted to join with the North Parish and build a house for it. In 1808 the town voted to have four fire-ladders and four hooks with chains, two of each to be kept in the body of the town, one of each to be kept at Chebacco, and one of each at Linebrook." In March 13, 1821, the selectmen were ordered to purchase a fire-engine and to build a house for it. The cost of the engine was four hundred and fifty dollars. The department now is in good, serviceable condition, and is constituted of the Warren Engine Company, a hand-machine, with fifty-five men; the Harricoat Engine Company, another hand-machine, with fifty-five men; and the Hook-and-Ladder Company, of twenty men. The fire apparatus is valued at \$5000; the cost of running the department is nearly \$2000.

9. *Commissioner of Taxes.*—Here is a long name for a short service. The duty was to assist the selectmen in assessing the tax. A commissioner was chosen in 1646, and continued to be for several years thereafter.

10. *Hog-reeves, Hog-Ringers, etc.*—In the primitive days of the town swine ran at large. How naturally they would poke their noses in human affairs. As a badge of their mischievousness, they wore a ring in their snout. In 1640 they should be yoked; in 1661 they were liable to be arrested and impounded, and in 1794 should not go at large at all. Deer-reeves are mentioned in 1739. The woods between Chebacco and Gloucester abounded in those animals.

11. *Hay-wards.*—This word found little favor with us. Our forefathers brought it from England, but seldom used it. It is from an obsolete word "hay," which meant *hedge*, and it signified persons whose duty it was to guard the hedges, and hence to keep cattle from breaking through them, and then to impound cattle running at large. It seems to have combined the duties of our field-driver and fence-viewer.

12. *Fence-viewer.*—It was enjoined by the General Court, October 31, 1653, that all farms of less than one hundred acres be fenced "of pales well nayled or pinned, or of fine rayles well fitted, or of a stone wall three foote and a halfe high at least, or with a good ditch between three and foure foot wyde, with a good banke or two rayles or a good hedge upon the banke, or such as is equivoquant to these." As might be supposed, this order was not complied with in haste. In March, 1663, the town ordered that all "fences general and particular be made sufficient before April 4 next." Fence-viewers, or judges of legal fences, were chosen as early as 1668, and are now annually chosen.

13. *Town-crier.*—This service, by law of the Colony, began in 1642. The office was a walking advertisement to announce sales by vendue, the lost, strayed or stolen, or to give immediately any public notice. The pay was two pence per article cried.

14. *Clerk of the Market.*—In 1637, by Colonial order, the purchase of venison was forbidden unless legalized by the town. Buns and cakes must not be sold except for funeral or marriage occasions. The Indians used to steal the townspeople's swine and then return them by way of sale; and so, in 1672, the English were ordered to mark one ear of their swine. The Indian must not mark his at all, neither must he offer for sale a swine without ears. The medium of exchange in those days was largely the vital commodities. Taxes were paid in them and the minister stipulated to receive a part of his salary in them. The town in its corporate capacity bought and sold them, and thus helped the poor and facilitated business. In the latter part of the eighteenth century there was also the Clerk of the Hay-Market. Other officers, whose duties are obvious, were early mentioned in the records: Sealers of weights and measures, in 1677; Packers of fish, in 1678; and cullers of fish, in 1715; cullers of boards and staves in 1686, and of bricks in 1801; corders of wood in 168-; gaugers of casks, in 1691; surveyors of boards and timber, in 1760, and of leather in 1681; and measurers of grain and salt in 1801.

15. *Inference.*—These various offices indicate somewhat the varied mechanical skill of our ancestors. The town then plied quite all the practical arts that now employ the county. The exchange, now by transportation, was then between townsmen and neighbors. They made their implements of husbandry, converted the raw hide into wearable leather, and the wool of the sheep and the flax of the field into garments. Conspicuous among the common trades were coopers, whitesmiths, cabinet-makers, cloth and leather tailors, millers, mill-sawyers, tanners, curriers, spinners, weavers, fullers.

WAYS AND MEANS.

1. *Roads.*—The early roads were generally laid out one and a half rods wide, but in practice were hardly more than pathways, since walking and horse-back riding were the common modes of traveling. The earliest carriage-roads led to the marshes and meadows, whence our ancestors derived hay for their cattle and peat for fuel; and the earliest of these was the river road which led to the great meadow, and over which Governor Winthrop passed in 1634. In 1637, "all those who have planting-grounds by the river side, beyond Mr. Appleton's, are to take the lot-layers and lay out a highway most convenient for them." The General Court, March 5, 1639, ordered all roads to be laid out. This act gave all roads a legal status and assured proper care of them. It relieved travelers of trespass, and protected them in their public rights. The position of the town laid upon it a vigilant care of its own roads. The town is in the direct communication between Boston and Salem on the south and Newburyport, commercial New Hampshire and Maine on the North; so Haver-



hill and Andover on the west and Gloucester and Cape Ann on the east.

In 1635 a pathway to Newbury was opened; in 1641 the road to Salem was determined; in 1652 the road to Andover. The present Andover road in town was a footpath in 1692. The highway to Essex was laid out about 1651; that from Newbury to Topsfield through Linebrook Parish, in 1717. The bridge in the Salem road, at Mile Brook, was "broken up by the flood" in 1665. In 1667 John, Nathaniel and Samuel Adams, Joseph Safford, Nicholas Wallis and Thomas Stacey had built a bridge over the river and were exempted from highway service "for seven years." In 1730 John Lamson, John Lamson, Jr., Joseph Cummings and Israel Cummings, Jr., ask for an allowance, having built a bridge over the river, and a way having been laid out from the old Lamson house, on the south side, to Gravelly Brook. In 1832 the length of our roads was seventy-two miles. Our public ways are pronounced by bicyclists the best of country roads.

2. *Turnpikes*.—"The Ipswich Turnpike" was incorporated March 1, 1803. The incorporators' names were John Heard, Stephen Choate, Wm. Gray, Jr., Jacob Ashton, Asa Andrews, Joseph Swasey, Israel Thorndyke, Nathan Dane, Wm. Bartlett and James Prince. The road began at the blacksmith's shop of Nathaniel "Batchelder" in Beverly, ran by Nathan Brown's in Hamilton, over the "old road" to the stone bridge in Ipswich; thence through Rowley, over the Parker bridge to Newburyport,—four rods wide, with toll-gates. This road was built in the interest of the town, and it served its purpose well. How long it was a road with pikes, or if it paid well we know not. It certainly was the great thoroughfare for land transit between the east and south, and its width and quality to-day attest the excellence of its construction. The railroad robbed it of its prestige and left it only a county road.

3. "*The Newburyport Turnpike Corporation*" was incorporated March 8, 1803, and the incorporators were Michael Sawyer, William Coombs, Nicholas Pike, Arnold Welles, Wm. Bartlett, John Pittingell, Wm. Smith, John Codman and James Prince. This route was to be the passenger express, the dispatch for freight, the swift mail,—in short, the rapid transit from Newburyport to Boston. Perhaps it was designed to favor Newburyport especially, by setting Ipswich one side, but Ipswich enterprise was equal to the emergency. The Ipswich road was incorporated a week earlier. This route was thirty-two miles long, and so straight, that all the angles together in the first twenty miles increased the distance only eighty-three feet. Many a strange story is told of the drivers' skill, of short-time passages, of equestrian speed, of frightened passengers, and of the fearful, headlong drives down the precipitous hills. Tradition says, that the construction was done with wheelbarrows, and not with dump-carts, as is the

practice in road-building at present. It is further told that the road was ultimately to be straight and level, condition consonant with absolute dispatch. The task was herculean. It was the wonder of the people, the glad era of the laborer, the joy of the proprietors, the hesperian garden of the capitalist. One thousand less five shares were sold. The construction was begun August 23, 1803, completed in 1806, and cost nearly four hundred and twenty thousand dollars. Many of the heaviest capitalists were involved in it. As an enterprise it deserved a better fate, and a generous remuneration; but taste and the exigencies of business led the traveling public over the Ipswich road, through the shires of Ipswich and Salem, and away from this, which is now only a costly monument of the enterprise and perseverance of its proprietors. That portion of the road lying in this county was sold to the County Commissioners May 10, 1849, for two thousand two hundred dollars. Ipswich's share of it was two miles less seven rods, and the town was fortunate; for one mile of it has been very serviceable and none of it very expensive.

4. *The Railroad*.—This is a more satisfactory route than its air-line predecessor. It runs where the people want to go, where business and taste lead the way. It introduced comfort and speed. "The Eastern Railroad Company" was incorporated April 14, 1836. The iron-horse entered the town first in 1839. It was thought to be the beginning of a golden era; general business would be urged forward by steam, workshops enlarged, dwellings erected, wharves extended, vessels multiplied, the streets more populous, manufactories more varied and extensive, farms more remunerative, merchants busier and less exacting, and the whole hive of industry more alive by perpetual endowment. But the corporation has not cultivated our soil, nor built our houses, nor much enlarged our factories, nor removed the river impediments, nor retained our courts, nor fostered our commerce, nor enlarged our fisheries. It has, however, removed "the center" of the county to the extremes, and clustered the various trades around other manufacturing and commercial points. Yet we must not undervalue the road; it has uses peculiarly our own, which the crowded city and summer heat, and our taste and enterprise are developing year by year, and which will bring full compensation.

5. *The Choate Bridge*.—This bridge deserves a particular notice, because it was the first of such construction in these parts, and hence was so wonderful during its construction and has been so serviceable since. The Town and County built it in equal shares of the expense. The width was to be not less than twenty feet, the length between the abutments sixty-eight feet, with one pier, twenty by eight feet, and a water passage beneath each arch thirty feet. The guards were to be three feet high, fifteen inches thick at the bottom, and nine at the top. The building committee were Hon. John Choate, Aaron Potter, Esq.,

and Joseph Appleton, Esq. It was completed in 1764, at a cost of £996, 10s., 6d., 3^d. It was widened, as it now is, in 1837.

6. *The Canal*.—In 1652, 22: 12, Thomas Clark and Reginald Foster were "to have ten pounds for cutting a passage from this river to Chebacco river of ten foot wide and soe deepe as a lighter laden may pass, and making a forde and foote bridge over." In 1669, the selectmen are "to take care that the bargain concerning the cutting of the creek at Castle-hill be forwarded." In 1681, February 7, any townsman has liberty to "perfect the cutting the Cut that comes up to Mr. Eppes, his bridge." In 1694, whoever will cut the Cut through the marsh at Mr. Eppes' shall have liberty,—who pays five shillings towards it "shall have liberty forever to pass as they have occasion;" others must pay three pence a cord or a ton, in money. "The Proprietors of the Essex Canal" were incorporated June 15, 1820. The incorporators' names were William Andrews, Jr., Adam Boyd, Tristram Brown, Robert Crowell, John Dexter, Moses Marshall, Parker, Jonathan, Benjamin, Samuel, Francis, Jacob, Jr., Ebenezer, Jr., and Nathan Burnham: Dudley, George and Joseph Choate; Enoch, Winthrop and Joshua Low; Jonathan 4th, Jacob, Jonathan, Abel, Daniel, Perkins and Epes Story. The canal was opened in 1821; was half a mile long and cost one thousand, one hundred dollars. The stock was twenty-seven shares at forty dollars each, and paid nearly six *per centum*. It connected the Merrimack River with Chebacco River and so let in ship-timber at reduced rates. Late years it has been of little use, and within a year its walls have fallen in decay.

7. *Carriages*.—These were at first the rudest sort of vehicles, a cumbersome hay-rack, or a pair of wheels. Conveyance for business or to church was on horseback by saddle for a man, side-saddle for a female, or saddle and pillion for both. The first kind of vehicle for personal conveyance was introduced about 1725, and consisted of the body of a chaise upon a pair of wheels, and called a curriole. Richard Rogers, Esq., had one in 1733. About 1750, a top was put to the seat, which made it a full-grown chaise, one of which a year or two latter was owned by Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth. Family conveyance to church or social party was upon clean straw in the bottom of the cumbersome dray. In 1762 John Stavers began to run a two-horse curriole between Portsmouth and Boston, making the round trip in five days, and stopping two nights at Ipswich. The advent of the stage with four horses was as early as 1774. This welcome conveyance made two trips weekly between Newburyport and Boston, passing through Ipswich both ways. About 1800, horse-wagons began to be used. Merchandise by horse had formerly been carried in saddle-bags, wallets and panniers. The wagon-body at first set firmly upon the axle-trees, next upon wooden springs, upon the principle of a spring-hole; then

upon long leather straps, or thorough-braces; and, lastly, as now upon steel-springs. Rev. Felt remarked, in 1834: "Should the improvements in journeying be as great for two centuries to come as they have been in the two already elapsed, posterity will as much wonder that we are contented with the present degree of such improvements, as we do, that our ancestors were satisfied with their mode of travelling." This remark was penned five years before the steam-cars entered the town.

8. *The Mail Service*.—The earliest method of forwarding letters was by such means as chance offered. Thus William Jeffrey, "the old planter," brought a letter to John Winthrop, Jr., from Merry Morton in 1634, Jeffrey doubtless having been over to Morton's on business. The earliest stated carrying of the mails was on horseback, and during the early Indian Wars the messengers were watched for with the greatest anxiety and hailed with the greatest earnestness and suspense. *The Essex Gazette*, established 1768, the first newspaper published in Salem, was delivered to the subscribers here and as far east as Newburyport, by a post-rider for that express purpose. One of the most active of the distributors of that paper was Thomas Dimon, doubtless a descendant of our Mr. Andrew Diamond, who died in 1708. Early in 1775, our town chose five delegates to a convention of delegates from the several towns concerned, to establish a regular post between Newburyport and Cambridge. The convention met May 4th in this town; their action was to be binding upon all alike. Immediately following this convention—before May 24th—a post-office was established here by the Provincial Congress, and Deacon James Foster was the post-master. The following is a list of the post-masters that have served since Deacon Foster, with the dates of their respective appointments: Daniel Noyes, October 5, 1775; Joseph Lord, November 25, 1800; Isaac Smith, July 1, 1805; Nathan Jaques, September 14, 1807; Ammi Smith, October 5, 1818; James H. Kendall, August 10, 1829; Stephen Coburn, August 23, 1832; John H. Varrell, April 18, 1861; Joseph L. Ackerman, July 20, 1865; John H. Cogswell, January 3, 1868; Edward P. Kimball, August 2, 1886.

9. *Town-House*.—About two years after the full completion of the church edifice, the people began to desire a town-house and a school-house. They proposed a two-story building, with school-room on the first floor and town-house above. Accordingly, May 11, 1704, the town voted to build "forthwith, if the county would pay half, as it did for the town-house in Salem." Thus their economy devised the triple service of school, town and court-house in one. The same year, December 28th, a committee was chosen to contract for a building "about 32 feet long, about 28 feet wide and about 18 or 19 feet stud, with a flat roof raised about 5 feet." Abraham Felton was the contractor. A steeple was constructed upon it at a cost of £29 7s. 8d., which was voted August 2, 1767.



Another town-house was built about 1794-95. This was also used for a court-house, and the county paid half the cost. Its use as a town-house was discontinued in 1841, when, October 12th, the town sold its interest to the county for twelve hundred and fifty dollars. From that time to 1843 they had no town-house. In that year, January 23d, the town instructed a committee to purchase the unused Unitarian church edifice, if it could be bought at two thousand dollars or less. Early in that year the purchase was made. The building has undergone considerable alteration and enlargement, and now is very serviceable for all the purposes of the town, for which such building is needed.

10. *A List of Voters* in town affairs, made by a committee for the purpose, to be corrected at the next town-meeting." Presented December 2, 1679: Maj. Gen. Denison, Mr. Thomas Corbet, Mr. William Hubbard, Elder Paine, Mr. John Rogers, Capt. John Appleton, Maj. Samuel Appleton, Corp'l. Jo: Andrews, Corp'l. Jo: Andrews, Nathaniel Adams, Nehemiah Abbott, Arthur Abbott, Daniel Bosworth, John Brewer, Sen'r., Tho: Borman, Edmund Bridges, Sergt. Belcher, Henry Bennett, Ens. Tho: Burnam, Thomas Burnam, Jr., Edward Bragg, Moses Bradstreet, John Burnam, Sen., John Caldwell, Sergt. Clarke, Corp. Tho: Clarke, Tho: Clarke, mill, Robert Cross, Sen., Mr. William Cogswell, John Choate, Mr. John Cogswell, Edw. Colburne, Rob't Day, John Denison, Sen'r., John Dane, Sen'r., Mr. Daniel Eppes, Nathaniel Emerson, Philip Fowler, Renold Foster, Sen'r., Renold Foster, Jr., Jacob Foster, Joseph Fellows, Eus. French, Tho: French, Abraham Fitts, Isaac Fellows, Ephraim Fellows, Isaac Foster, Abraham Foster, Dea. Goodhue, Wm. (?) Goodhue, Tho: Giddings, Joseph Goodhue, Mr. Richards, Daniel Hovey, Sen., Daniel Hovey, Jr., Sam: Hunt, George Hadley, Wm. (?) Howlett, James How, Sen'r., James How, Jr., Nehemiah Jewett, John Jewett, Samuel Ingalls, Nathaniel Jacobs, Tho: Jacobs, John Knowlton, Sen., John Kimball, Dea. Knowlton, Rob't Kinsman, Daniel Killam, Sen., Tho: Lull, Robert Lord, Sen., Robert Lord, Jr., John Layton, Thomas Lovell, Edwd. Lumas, John Lampson, Thomas Metcalf, John Newmarch, Sen., Dea. Pengrey, Aaron Pengry, Quart.—Mr. Perkins, Sergt. Perkins, Jacob Perkins, Abraham Perkins, Anthony Potter, Samuel Podd, Samuel Perley, Mr. Samuel Rogers, Walter Roper, Mr. Smith, Richard Smith, Wm. Story, Sen., Wm. Story, Jr., Symon Stace, Wm. Smith, Simon Tuttle, Nathaniel Treadwell, Thomas Varney, Mr. Jonathan Wade, Rob't Whittman, Obediah Wood, Mr. Wainwright, Sen., Mr. John Wainwright, Daniel Warnex, Sen., Nathaniel Warner, Capt. John Whipple, Isaiah Wood, James White, Wm. White, Nicholas Wallis, Corp'l. John Whipple, Twisford Westt, Nathaniel Wells, Rich: Walker, Joseph Whipple, Samuel Younglove, Sen., Samuel Younglove, Jr., Tho: Low, Mr. Jos:

Willson, Nath'l Rust, Simon Chapman, Mr. Wm. Norton, Mr. Thomas Andrews, Joseph Quilter.

11. *Villages*.—The Town Village, with the First Church as a centre, is about one mile from the sea in latitude 42° 41' N. and longitude 70° 50' W.,—or exactly, according to the United States Coast Survey in 1850, the former runs along and crosses High Street from the front of the Lord Mansion to Mineral Street, and the latter crosses Market Street into Union. It is five and a half miles from the Linebrook Church; five and a quarter from Castle Neck or Patch's Beach, and three from the Almshouse. It is 27.8 miles from Boston, the State capital; 11.5 from Salem, the county capital; and 9.5 from Newburyport. Other villages, as reported by the United States Census of 1880, were Argilla, Candlewood, Goose, Ipswich, Linebrook, Mill, Peatfield, Turkeyshore and Willowdale.

12. *Population*.—The population about 1650, according to *Wonder-working Providence*, was "about one hundred and forty-families," which, we compute, was about 700 inhabitants. In 1680 there were one hundred and twenty-six voters, which, we presume, represented about 825 people. The growth has been slow, many decades making little increase, a few slightly retrograding. The population in 1830 was 2951; in 1885, 4207, with a proportion of 47 males to 53 females. The growth in fifty-five years has been 42 per centum, making an average *per annum* of 77-100 of 1 *per centum*. The growth of the last decade has been 12 *per centum*. There are at present, by the Manual of the Legislature for 1887, 1,016 voters. The census of 1880 reports 694 dwellings and 861 families, and a population of 3,699, of whom 3,257 are native-born and 442 are foreign-born; 219 being Irish, 129 English, 54 Canadians, 16 Nova Scotians, 11 Scotch and 6 Germans. There were 25 colored persons of African descent.

SCENERY.

1. *Its Character*.—Our town has no White Mountains, nor Berkshire Hills,—nothing wild, awful, or grand; but our landscape affords an agreeable variety and a peculiar beauty. The diversity of hill and vale, of meadow and marsh, of woodland and field, of river, and pond, and brook,—enhanced by the variety of the seasons; verdure and flower, the cattle upon the hillside and the husbandman in the field, the fruit-setting and the waving grass, the ripening apple and the purpling plum, the yellow corn and the nodding grain, and the enchanting beauty of our frost-painted forests, gratifies the eye, educates the heart and sheds over the mind a soft radiance of perennial joy.

2. *Pond*.—In the Linebrook District is a beautiful sheet of water, called successively Baker's, Pritchard's, Great and Hood's Pond, by which last name it is now known. Its surface is eighty feet above Town Hill, or one hundred and ninety-two feet above sea-level. It might be made an excellent reservoir for



fire or other purpose, for the village of Topsfield, or Ipswich, or perhaps both. Rev. Jacob Hood, of Lynnfield, who died, in 1885, at the age of ninety-four years, surveyed it, in his youth, and computed the area, at nearly eighty acres. In the winter of 1861-62, the writer surveyed it, and made, by traverse-table, sixty-five and nine-tenths acres. A third of the pond is in Topsfield, and a dozen years ago that town stocked it with perch and black bass, thus availing itself of a State law, which, for that purpose, gave that town exclusive control of the waters for fifteen years. On its bosom blooms the fragrant, white-petaled lily; and boats for rowing and sailing invite to healthful recreation; and it lends a charm to the surrounding hills. On the west, rising seventy feet above its surface, is a broad grazing field, where General Israel Putnam, in his boyhood, when in the tutelage of his stepfather, went to find and "fetch" the cows; and on the east is Burnham's Hill, named from James Burnham, who, in 1717, owned the land.

3. *Streams.*—The principal streams are Winthrop's, Norton's, Howlet's, Mile and Bull Brooks, which used to be good fishing for pickerel and trout. Other streams are North, or Egypt River (now Bull Brook), and Muddy and Ipswich Rivers, all of which have been serviceable for fishing, for irrigation and for mill-privileges. The Ipswich River rises in "Maple Meadow Brook," in the town of Burlington, and meanders through Wilmington, North Reading, Middleton and Topsfield, entering our town upon the southwest border. Upon its banks, throughout its length, are saw, grist, paper, cotton and woolen-mills, enhancing its picturesqueness by its utility.

4. *Elevation.*—The seeming discrepancy in the area of the pond, above mentioned, and the subsidence of Egypt River, serve to illustrate the fact of a general elevation of the territory. Old deeds speak of ponds in the vicinity of the West Meadow, which are unknown to the present generation; yet there are swamps which answer to the location and size.

5. *Hills.*—We have two hills more than two hundred and fifty feet high, three more than two hundred, and nine more than a hundred and fifty. A thoughtful view from either is delightful and instructive. It was Heartbreak Hill, one hundred and ninety-six feet high, from which an ancient hunter's fair daughter watched in vain for the return of her sailor-lover, and died of a broken heart. Turner's Hill, two hundred and fifty feet high, shows the State Asylum at Danvers, and the nearer and magnificent view of forest, and farm, and river. The hill is upon the "Bracket Farm," in Willowdale. It is surmounted by a commanding look-out; the grove upon its slope has been prepared for picnic parties, an artificial pond of an acre's extent, drawing its supply from a generous spring above, is furnished with boat for recreation, and a huckleberry field,

from which fifty bushels have been gathered in a day, is near and free to all. Drive-ways, and stables, and pond, and boat, and spring, and field, invite the weary to rest and recuperation, and the grounds which have recently been christened "Mount Turner," are fast becoming a noted public resort for peoples far and near. There is also Bartholomew's Hill, two hundred and four feet high, at whose foot once dwelt William Bartholomew, an early benefactor of the town; Turkey, two hundred and forty feet high; Jewett's, or Muzzy's, two hundred and twelve feet high; Little Turner, one hundred and ninety-seven feet high; Bush, one hundred and ninety-three feet high; Scott's, one hundred and eighty feet high; and Sagamore, one hundred and seventy-two feet high, where, instead of Sagamore in Hamilton, should rest the bones of our Masconomet. Prospect Hill is two hundred and sixty feet above the sea-level, and shows us the White Mountains, Old Monadnock and Wachusett. Town, or Cemetery Hill, is one hundred and eighty-four feet high, and shows the village and surrounding farms, the Pow-wow Hill of Amesbury and the white church spires of Newburyport. Castle Hill, the grand old sentinel of "ye ancient tyme," located on the famous Ipswich Beach, at the mouths of Ipswich and Plum-Island Rivers, rises one hundred and sixty-eight feet, and embraces in her view the winding stretch of the river, the busy mills, the cattle-grazed hillsides, the cultivated fields, the bustling village, far lonely Agamenticus, the island-bound coast of Maine, the Isles of Shoals, the white crests of the ocean, the spreading sails of commerce, the headland and silvery beach and rolling surf of Cape Ann, the villages of Lanesville, Bay View and Annisquam, and the summer homes of Col. French and Gen. Butler, depicting a panorama of exquisite beauty and rare interest. This is the native hill of Mr. John B. Brown, of Chicago, who, after years of absence and success, having never forgotten the haunts of his boyhood, is now grading and terracing it, planting upon it trees and laying out drive-ways, and otherwise beautifying it and making it as attractive as the view from the summit.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

1. *John Winthrop, Jr.*, the founder of this town, was born in Groton, County Essex, England, February 12, 1606. He was a son of Governor John Winthrop of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He graduated at Dublin University, at the age of nineteen; he became a barrister of the Inner Temple; he was a member of the relief expedition to the Huguenots, at Rochelle, in 1627; he came to this country in 1631, and to this town in 1633. He had two houses in town, one on the Essex Road, and one at Castle Hill. Soon after the settlement of the town, his first wife died; he had a second wife, Elizabeth, youngest daughter of Edmund Reade, of Wickford, County Essex, England. She was the mother of all his chil-



dren. After her father's death, her mother married the celebrated Hugh Peters. John visited England many times, and while there was serviceable in many ways to the colony. He was one of the founders of the Royal Society, and so wore the honorable title F.R.S. He was the founder of the Connecticut Colony, and several years its Governor. He was efficient in all his enterprises. He belonged to a highly esteemed family. After the dissolution of the monasteries almost the whole of the parish was given to them as their future domain. Why they resigned their wealth and distinction for the wilderness can hardly be conjectured. Governor Winthrop, the younger, "appears in history without a blemish. Highly educated and accomplished, he was no less upright and generous. In the bloom of life, he left all his brilliant prospects in the old world to follow the fortunes of the new. When his father had made himself poor in nourishing the Massachusetts Bay Colony, this noble son gave up voluntarily his own large inheritance to further the good work." He died in Boston, April 5, 1676.

2. *Governor Thomas Dudley* was born in Northampton, England, in 1576. He settled in this town soon after the settlement, and during or shortly after his first term as Colonial-Governor. He owned land on the north side of the town upon which he built a house, all of which he afterwards sold to Mr. Hubbard. He also owned land near Heartbreak Hill. He disposed of most of his estate in the town about the time of his second inauguration as Governor. He was a resident here some nine or ten years. He was a-sistant six years, Deputy-Governor thirteen years, and Governor four years. He died July 27, 1653.

3. *Governor Simon Bradstreet* was born in Holling, Horbling, Lincolnshire, England, March, 1603. He matriculated, July 9, 1618, as a sizer, Emmanuel College, when he was fourteen years old. In two years he took the degree of Bachelor of Arts, and, in 1624, the Master's degree. When he was about twenty-five years old, he married Anne Dudley, daughter of Governor Dudley, who became the first New England poetess. He came here in 1630. He was assistant forty-eight years, colonial secretary thirteen years, Deputy-Governor five years, and Governor ten years. He was a resident of this town about twenty years. In March, 1658, he was a resident of Andover. He died in Salem, March 27, 1697, at the great age of ninety-four years.

4. *Deputy-Governor Samuel Symonds* came from Yieldham, County Essex, England, and settled here in 1637-38. He was made fireman in 1638, was town clerk from 1639 to 1645, was professor of the Grammar School, deputy to the General Court from 1638 to 1643, then assistant to 1673, when he was elected Deputy-Governor, an office which he held till his death. He was long time a justice of the Quarter Court. He was one of the committee to draft a body of laws in 1645. He addressed Governor Winthrop,

in 1646, urging more activity in the divine purpose in the settlement of New England—Christianizing the Indians. He was of the committee "to pass the articles of Confederation with the United Colonies," in 1643, and to examine the proceedings of the commissioners in May 10, 1648. The Legislature granted him five hundred acres of Pequod land, and in 1651 he was granted three hundred acres of the land beyond the Merrimac. He was one of these several committees: To visit and settle a government at Piscataqua, 1652; to prepare the case of the United Colonies against the Dutch and Indians, 1653; to prepare and present the case of the Colony to Cromwell, 1654; to receive the allegiance of the natives to Colonial authority, July 13, 1658; to consider the matter between the King's Commissioners and the Assembly, in 1665; to revise certain laws annulled by the King, one of which abolished the observance of Christmas, as a relic of Episcopacy, 1667. He held court in York County in 1672; and he often performed such service outside the jurisdiction of the Ipswich Court. He was away from home so much on public business, and his house was so remote from neighbors, that two men were appointed to guard it, during the war, in 1675. In December the enemy burned his mills at "Lampere River."

He died in October, 1678. The Legislature as a token of respect, voted £20 towards his funeral charges. His first wife was daughter of Governor Winthrop, and was living September 30, 1648. His second wife was Rebecca, widow of Daniel Eppes, and died July 21, 1695, aged seventy-eight years. His estate was £2534 9s. His Argilla Farm is a noted district in town at present.

5. *Joseph Metcalfe* was born about 1605; he died August or September, 1665, aged sixty years. He held various town offices; he was deputy eight years between 1635 and 1661. He was a committee to collect gifts made by friends in England, in 1655, and also one of the Essex committee for trade. He owned an estate in the village, and lands in the Linebrook district, which continued in the family name till 1829, when it was sold to Samuel Dane Dodge.

6. *Nehemiah Jewett* was son of Jeremiah, who died in 1714. He was town officer in several capacities, was deputy sixteen years, between 1689 and 1709, three of which he was speaker. He was a justice of the Court of Sessions. He was on a committee to compensate for damages in the witchcraft trials. He was esteemed and respected in every walk in life. He died near the beginning of 1720.

7. *Robert Paine* was born in 1601. He was influential in town affairs. He was professor of the grammar school, and contributed very largely of his estate to its permanent establishment. He was a deputy three years. He was one of the Essex Committee for trade, in 1655; was county treasurer from 1665 to 1683, inclusive; was ruling elder of the First Church. He was an exemplary man. *Wonder-working Provi-*



he says: "A right godly man, and one whose estate hath holpen on well with the work of this little settlement." —

Francis Wainwright lived with Alexander Wright, inn-keeper in Chelmsford, England, and came with him to Ipswich. He was a soldier in the Pequot War, and was greatly applauded for his brave exploits. He became a wealthy merchant. He died suddenly, May 19, 1692.

His son Francis was born August 25, 1664; he graduated at Harvard, 1686. His first wife, Sarah Temple, married March 12, 1686, died March 16, 1722, aged thirty-eight years. He made an engagement with Mrs. Elizabeth Hirst, of Salem, but died before married. He was engaged in commerce and a merchant. He bequeathed five pounds to the First Church. His estate was valued at nineteen hundred and fourteen pounds. He was a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company; was colonel, town clerk, representative, feoffee, general sessions, justice, commissioner and collector of excise for Essex. He died in the strength of ripe manhood, August 3, 1711.

9. Among the early settlers was that Spartan company who met at the Appleton Mansion, the 23d of August, 1687, and settled the question for themselves, that Andros, the King appointed Governor, had no right to tax the people without the consent of an assembly, and who *dared* "render a reason." That miniature Provincial Congress, who counseled for righteousness, principle and honest government, were Rev. John Wise, John Andrew, John Appleton, Robert Kinsman, William Goodhue, Samuel Appleton and Thomas French. The first two were of Chelmsford, the rest doubtless of Ipswich. Goodhue had a house-lot in town in 1635, was afterwards large land owner, was commoner, was a Denison subscriber, was selectman, representative and a deacon. He was a man of rank and influence. He died in 1700, at the age of eighty-five. John Appleton was born about 1622, and came here with his father, Samuel, from Waddingfield, England, in 1635. His parental home in this town was a grant of six hundred acres of land, bounded by the river and Mile Brook, a part of which is still retained in the family name. He married 1651, Priscilla, daughter of Rev. Jesse Glover. She died February 18, 1697; he, November 4, 1699. He had been selectman, militia captain, marine captain, county treasurer, representative to the General Court sixteen years. Samuel Appleton, brother of the above John, was born about 1626. He married, first, Hannah, daughter of William Payne, and had Samuel, born 1644; second, Mary, daughter of John Oliver, of Newbury, December 2, 1656, and had ten children. She was born June 7, 1640, and died February 15, 1697. He was selectman, lieutenant-major, colonel, and with his regiment achieved distinction in the war against King Philip, in 1676. He was assistant six years, and was a member of the first coun-

cil under the charter of William and Mary, 1692. He died May 15, 1696. Of his sisters, Sarah married Rev. Samuel Phillips, of Rowley, and Judith, Samuel Rogers, son of Rev. Samuel, April 8, 1657.

CHAPTER XLIII.

IPSWICH—(Continued).

ECCLESIASTICAL.

THE FIRST CHURCH.

1. *Origin and Methods.*—The church at this time was the object and end of government; and there can be no doubt that the organization of the government here and an organization for religious instruction and worship were practically simultaneous. Governor Winthrop recorded in his journal, November 26, 1633, that "Mr. Wilson (by leave of the congregation of Boston, whereof he is pastor), went to Agawam to teach the people of that plantation, because they have yet no minister." Again, he wrote, April 3, 1634, that himself "went on foot to Agawam, and because the people wanted a minister, spent the Sabbath with them, and exercised by way of prophecy, and returned home on the 10th." There was, therefore, no church organized at that time, but there must have been shortly thereafter; for Mr. Parker came the next month and Mr. Ward the second month. According to James Cudsworth, 1634, "a plantation was made up this year, Mr. Ward P[astor] and Mr. Parker T[eacher]." This was the ninth church in the colony and the third in the county.

The teacher appears to have been an assistant who might or might not be ordained. His service was merged into the duty of the pastor about 1745, though the idea still obtains in many parishes where the minister is installed as pastor and teacher. The Sabbath service ran thus: The pastor began it with prayer; the teacher then read and expounded a chapter; the ruling elders announced a Psalm, which was sung; the pastor read a sermon, and sometimes followed it with an extemporaneous address, consuming frequently an hour or more; singing followed; then a prayer and the benediction. In the afternoon service, just before the benediction, the congregation recited: "Blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it." The singing was peculiar. One of the ruling elders read a single line of the Psalm, then such of the congregation as could sing, rose in different parts of the house and sang it; then other lines were successively read and sung till the conclusion of the Psalm. When elders were not chosen the deacons performed their duty, which gave rise to the phrase, "Deaconing the hymn." About 1790 the whole stanza was read at once, and about three years

later the whole hymn was read at once by the pastor. Singing choirs began to form as early as 1763, when seats were assigned them, but they were not elevated to the gallery till about 1781. A contribution every Sabbath was the rule till some part of 1763. To deposit the offerings, the magistrates and chief men first walked up to the deacon's seat, then the elders and then the congregation. There was also weekly service, which was as carefully observed as the service of the Sabbath. It was called "The Lecture," and was attended each week on Thursday, which was known as "Lecture Day." It consumed the best part of the day, beginning at eleven o'clock. It became monthly, in 1753, and our weekly prayer-meeting is its successor. The old churches had a practice of holding a Fast just before and in reference to calling a pastor. The practice has much fallen into disuse, much to our disadvantage and discredit, for if prayer with fasting means anything, to discontinue it is like cutting the telegraph wires when we need a message of instruction from a friend. It is observable that the various town offices, the status of eligibility to them, the offices in the church, the church services and requirements were a practical, business-like method of securing a punctual observance of religion and a highly moral and religious community. Cotton Mather said, in 1638, that this "was a renowned church, consisting mostly of such illuminated Christians, that their pastors in the exercise of the ministry might, in the language of Jerome, perceive that they had not disciples so much as judges."

The first to come among this people as pastor or teacher was Rev. Thomas Parker. He came in May, 1634, with a colony of about one hundred, who subsequently settled in Newbury. They sojourned here about a year, and Mr. Parker meanwhile exercised the office of teacher. He labored, says Mr. Sewell, "preaching and proving, that the passengers came over on good grounds, and that God would multiply them as he did the children of Israel."

The following will treat the several church societies by pastorates: for in all the work of the church and society the pastor takes the lead, and as is the pastor so are the people.

2. *First Pastorate.*—The first pastor of this church was REV. NATHANIEL WARD. He was the son of Rev. John Ward, and was born in Haverhill, England, about 1570. He was educated at Cambridge; he studied and practiced law, and he traveled on the Continent. On his return to England, he was ordained a minister of the gospel, at Standon, where, for the expression of his Puritan views, he was suspended, till he made a public recantation. He became a Puritan exile, and soon after his arrival here, in June, 1634, became pastor of this church. The early church records were destroyed by fire, and we have no account of him as undershepherd. His great learning fitted him for any of the professions; his want of health was the only impediment to a very

high distinction. His legal attainments fitted him pre-eminently for the important civil and legal service of the colony, wherein he received many appointments, and they served him well in expounding clearly and cogently the immutable law of God, wherein he exercised his gifts of prophecy even after his resignation of his pastorate, which took place February 20, 1637.

3. *Church Edifice.*—It is probable that during the early part of his ministry the first house of worship was built. The earliest record referring to it is found in the public laws of September 3, 1635, which reads that "Noe dwelling house shall be builte above halfe a myle from the meeting-house," (except mill-houses and farm-houses of such as have their dwelling houses in town), in Ipswich, Newbury, Hingham and Weymouth. It stood on the rise of ground where the *Wonder-Working Providence* says it "was a very good prospect to a great part of the town and was beautifully built."

Mr. Ward was appointed March 12, 1638, on a committee to draft a code of public laws. He was the leader and learning of the committee. He handed the result of their labors to the Governor in September, 1639.

About the middle of 1640 he, with assistance from Newbury, formed a settlement at Haverhill, where his son John became the minister. He was granted six hundred acres of land near Haverhill, May 10, 1643, probably, as Mr. Felt expresses it, "for his public services." He was chosen May 25, 1645, on a committee to codify the laws for the consideration of the next Legislature. The laws were printed in 1648. The justice and foresight which the laws embodied, are conspicuous in our present code. Soon after completing the work, he returned to England, and became minister of Shenfield, in county Essex. He once preached before the House of Commons. He published, in New and Old England, several works of a religious character, the most noticeable of which were "The Simple Cobbler of Agawam," and "The Simple Cobbler's Boy." He brought out the former in 1647. It illustrates the length to which good people could go in vindication of intolerance in days when antinomian and aggressive views were troubling many minds. "It is a sparkling satire," says one, "known and appreciated for its keenness and wit. Its character and style were suited to the times, and it served to encourage opposition to King and Parliament, and to moderate party excess."

He died in 1653, at the age of eighty-three years. He was a man, says Mr. Felt, whose "talents, attainments and piety were of a high order; and after an examination of his public and religious service, and with a good knowledge of the public's opinion of him,—since he had probably then left the colony, the *Wonder-working Providence* declared him, a judicious man, a very able preacher, and much desired."

His son John was minister of Haverhill. James



went to England with his father, and became a physician, and Giles Firman married a daughter and followed them over the sea.

Mr. Felt speaks of a REV. THOMAS BRACEY, who resided here in 1635. Cotton Mather did not know him. He probably assisted Mr. Ward a short time, and early returned to England.

4. *Second Pastorate.*—The second pastorate was begun by REV. JOHN NORTON. Rev. E. B. Palmer, of the tenth pastorate, says that Mr. Norton "was settled here in 1636, and continued in his relations to the church till about the year 1653, when he removed to Boston and became pastor of the old church of that place." He was probably a colleague with Mr. Ward, who resigned in 1637, and then became acting pastor till the settlement of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, February 20, 1638, when he was ordained teacher. Mr. Norton was born May 6, 1606, in Starford, county Hertford, England. He entered Cambridge at fourteen years of age, was a brilliant scholar, and took his first degree. On account of parental pecuniary embarrassment, he left college to become usher and curate in his native place. His intellectual promise attracted the attention of many. A prominent Catholic sought to win him to Popery; his uncle offered him a "considerable benefice;" he declined a fellowship at Cambridge; he served meanwhile as chaplain to Sir William Masham. He could not subscribe to the church conformity, and cast in his lot with the Pilgrims.

He arrived at Plymouth October, 1635, and settled here the next year. He expected friends to follow him, and he asked for grants of land to be held in reserve for them. Accordingly, lands were reserved in several parts of the town. His friends did not come, and the lands are now known as the "Norton Reserves." He was an influential member of the Synod that heard the case of Mrs. Hutchinson in 1637; he composed, in 1645, the reply of the New England ministers to the questions on ecclesiastical government, proposed by Rev. William Apollonius, of Middlebury, a work in Latin, the first book in that language printed in this country,—an able *exposit* of the usages of the church fathers. He was influential in the formation of the Cambridge Platform in 1647; and in 1651 he made the reply before the General Court to the treatise of Mr. William Pynchion. Rev. John Cotton, of Boston, who died in 1652, advised his church to call Mr. Norton. They did call him, and his friends and admirers here demurred. The controversy was long and warm, but he, having accepted the pastorate in 1653, was installed July 23, 1656. While of Boston he published several works, and was for two years in England as colonial agent. He was twice married, but had no children. He died April 5, 1663, in his fifty-seventh year.

He is said to have been learned and eloquent, an able disputant and a ready writer, a warm friend, and a pious man. If failing he had, it was a natural iras-

cibility, and a weakening under compliments, of which few men received or merited more. In this ordeal, among the most searching, his good sense and sterling piety kept his mind and heart. When he left England, a venerable minister remarked that "he believed that there was not more grace and holiness left in all Essex, than what Mr. Norton had carried with him." Mr. Felt remarks, "He was, undoubtedly, one of the greatest divines, who ever graced this or any other country. He was emphatically 'diligent in business, fervent in spirit, serving the Lord.' As a result of this, many souls were given him as the seals of his ministry."

The pastor of the church at this time was REV. NATHANIEL ROGERS. He was the second son of John, best known as minister of Dedham, in England, and was born in 1598, while his father ministered in Haverhill, England. He was a lineal descendant of the Smithfield martyr. He had a pious mother, and rewarded her Christian care and instruction with evidence of early piety. He entered Emmanuel College, Cambridge, when about fourteen years old, and was eminently scholarly in his attainments and Christian in his deportment. He began his labors as chaplain, then he was curate, but conformity to the established church troubled him and he must flee its power. He had married Margaret Crane, of Coggeshall, daughter of a gentleman of wealth, who offered to maintain him and his family if he would remain at home. His heart spoke his conviction, and he declined the generous offer. He arrived in Boston in November, 1636, "after a long and tedious voyage."

In 1637 he was a member of the Synod convened in reference to the antinomians; he received a call to settle at Dorchester, but chose to fraternize with Ward and Norton and Winthrop, and he was ordained here February 20, 1638. The same year he took the oath of freeman. Mr. Palmer says that "seventeen male members of his church in England came with him to this town," and that tradition names them,—William Goodhue, Nathaniel Hart, Nathaniel Dav, Robert Lord and Messrs. Warner, Quilter, Waite, Scott, Littlefield, Lambert, Lumax, Bradstreet, Dane and Noyes.

He was long in feeble health, and in consequence was subjected to periods of despondency. Hemorrhage of the lungs was his boding trouble. He was obliged to reduce his manual labors to their minimum, and his later sermons were not written. He, however, kept a diary; but, as he requested, it was burned after his death. He little realized how much value for other days he thus destroyed. He left a manuscript production, in fine, classical Latin, a plea for Congregational church government. He was much exercised in mind and heart when Mr. Norton went to Boston. He was burdened with his infirmity and with cares, and an attack of an epidemical influenza proved fatal. With his latest breath, he ex-



claimed,—“My times are in Thy hands.” Thus the “reverend and holy man of God fell on sleep,” July 3, 1655. During this pastorate, “this church, says *Wonder-Working Providence*, consisted of about one hundred and sixty souls, being exact in their conversation, and free from the epidemical diseases of all reforming churches, which under Christ, is procured by their pious Learned and Orthodox ministry.” It calls the pastor “a very sweet, heavenly-minded man, . . . whose mouth the Lord was pleased to fill with many arguments for the defense of his truth.” Rev. William Hubbard, his son-in-law, says of him,—“He had eminent learning, singular piety and holy zeal. His auditory was his epistle, seen and read of all that knew him.” He left an estate of £1200. His widow died January 23, 1666. His children were John, Nathaniel, Samuel, Timothy, Ezekiel and the wife of Mr. Hubbard.

The amount of all the salaries had been £140 previous to 1652, but was then changed to £160, which in 1656 was paid “three parts in wheat and barley and fourth part in Indian.”

Third Pastorate. From the death of Mr. Rogers till Mr. Cobbett's settlement, the church was without a pastor. This was the REV. THOMAS COBBETT, who was born in Newbury, England, in 1608. He studied at Oxford, then with Dr. Twiss, of his native town, and prepared for the ministry. Soon after his settlement, he was confronted with conformity. He came to this country, arriving June 26, 1637. He was colleague at Lynn, till he was invited to succeed Mr. Rogers. Mr. Palmer says he was settled in 1656.

5. *Church Edifice.*—During his pastorate a new house of worship was built. Ezekiel Woodward and Freegrace Norton contracted, June 10, 1667, to furnish timber, and June 18, 1668, to furnish shingles for a new meeting-house. The steeple was completed October 22, 1667, when the committee was discharged with thanks. In 1673 they voted to repair the house “with speed.” In 1674 seats were put in the gallery. Early in 1677 a committee was to see about keeping the house “tite.” In 1681 it had a “pouder Roome.” It stood where the present First Church edifice stands. In 1665 the salaries amounted to £210.

Mr. Cobbett was a noted public man, sought out for his learning, his diligence, his readiness in debate, the dexterous use of his pen and his stability of purpose and action. Yet amid arduous public labors he found time to attend carefully and dutifully to his flock. In about four months, beginning in December, 1673, nearly ninety were added to the church, some in full communion and some by “taking the covenant.” There were sixty-five males. Twenty-four of the “young generation” took the covenant. He conferred special privileges on the children of his laity in full communion, thus enacting in advance a half-way covenant, like that sanctioned by the synod shortly after and drafted, doubtless, by his own hand; a covenant so noble in purpose,

so mischievous in practice. He was watchful of the needs of the pious poor, and promptly excommunicated the scandalous. His ministry was noted for its Christian fervor.

In 1643 his pen advocated a negative vote for the Assistants; in 1644 he preached the Election Sermon; in 1657 was of a committee of thirteen to answer ecclesiastical questions, proposed by the Legislature of Connecticut; in 1661 was one of a committee on “our patent,” our laws and privileges and duty to His Majesty; in 1668 was one of six ministers to reason several Baptists out of their peculiar views; in 1676 was one of twenty-four to counsel in the case of Gorges and Mason; in 1677 he handed Increase Mather “a Narrative of Striking Events.” He published, in 1645, “Defense of Infant Baptism,” “Prayer,” “First, Second and Fifth Commandments,” “Toleration and Duties of Civil Magistrates,” in 1653, “Vindication of the New England Government,” “Civil Magistrates in Religious Matters,” in 1656, “Duties of Children to Parents and of Parents to Children,” and in 1666 an Election Sermon. “He wrote more books than any man of his generation, yet not one has survived to this day.”

He was a great man. The great and learned and wise of his day regarded him as their noble peer. He was equally at home in matters of Church and State. No invective deterred him, no flattery swerved him; once planted on his judgment of duty and righteousness, he remained firm and garnered success in the end. Says Mr. Felt, “So far as human imperfections permitted, he was a pastor after God's own heart.” He went to his reward November 5, 1685, at the age of seventy-seven. Provisions for his funeral included a barrel of wine, half a hundred weight of sugar, men's and women's gloves, and spice and ginger for “Syder.” His widow, Elizabeth, died the next year. Three children crossed the bound of life before he did and three remained to mourn,—Samuel, Thomas, John, who was located at Newbury at the time, and Elizabeth. His estate was valued at £607. His epitaph, as conceived by the great Cotton Mather, ran thus: “Stay, passenger, for here lies a treasure, Thomas Cobbett, of whose availing prayers and most approved manners, you, if an inhabitant of New England, need not be told. If you cultivate piety, admire him; if you wish for happiness, follow him.”

This was the office of

REV. WILLIAM HUBBARD,

Whose father was William and who was born in England in 1621, and crossed the ocean with his father in 1630. He graduated at Harvard College in 1642, a member of the first class. The same year, 4th July, he was called as colleague with Mr. Cobbett, and, says Mr. Palmer, was “probably settled as such in 1656,” which statement seems corroborated by a vote of the town, recorded in Mr. Cobbett's pastorate. This pastorate he occupied till his death, September 14, 1704, when he was eighty-three.



In 1667 he testified against the "Old South, in Boston, in the settlement there of John Davenport; in 1671 he and fourteen others memorialized the Legislature against the censure of its committee for advising the formation of South Church Society in Boston; in 1675 he was of a council to advise in Mr. Jeremiah Hubbard's case, as minister in Rowley; in 1676 he preached the Election Sermon. About 1677 he brought out his "Troubles with the Indians in 1676-77," to which was appended "The War with the Pequods" in 1637, and also "Troubles with the Indians from Piscataqua to Pemaquid." The works are now known as "Hubbard's Indian Wars." In May, 1680, he had compiled a history of New England. The Legislature voted him £50 for the work. It was then much needed, was done in a commendable manner and has proved to be of great value. He was appointed to "manage" the Commencement of Harvard College, July 1, 1684; and, in June, 1688, he was appointed by Andros acting president at the following Commencement, a high honor which he probably did not accept. In 1699 he arraigned the Brattle Street Church, in Boston, for irregularity in doctrine, baptism and communion. In 1701 his decrepit age was overburdensome and he asked for more assistance; and in 1702 gave up pastoral labors entirely, when his people voted him a gift of £60, and in 1704 he rested from his toils.

6. *Church Edifice.*—In 1686 all the salaries paid were £160, and in 1696 the salaries were paid, one-third money and "the rest in pay." The same year the church edifice was repaired, but November 4th, two years later, Abraham Perkins contracted to build a new house, for £900—£500 money and £400 as money. The house was to be "26 feet stud, 66 feet long and 60 feet wide, with $\frac{3}{4}$ gables on every side, with one Teer of gallery round said house; as far as necessary, having five seats in the gallery on every side thereof, with as many windows or lights as the committee or said Perkins can agree for." In 1700 Abraham Tilton agreed to finish the meeting-house, and Abraham Perkins is released. The house stood where the present First Church edifice stands. The same year the old bell, the gift of "Hon. Richard Saltonstall," was sold to Marblehead for £37, and a new one, weighing 200 pounds, was bought in England for £72. In 1702 a clock was purchased.

Mr. Hubbard's first wife was Margaret Rogers, daughter of Rev. Nathaniel, a lady of rare social worth. Their children were John and Nathaniel, and Margaret, the wife of John Pyncheon, of Springfield. His last wife was Mary, widow of Samuel Pearce, who died in 1691. She was alive in 1710.

He was a judicious adviser, a faithful laborer in the Master's vineyard and righteous in his intercourse with men. John Dunton said of him: "The benefit of nature and the fatigue of study have equally contributed to his eminence. He is learned without ostentation or vanity, and gave all his pro-

ductions such a delicate turn and grace, that the features and lineaments of the child make a clear discovery and distinction of the father; yet he is a man of singular modesty, of strict morals and has done as much for the conversion of the Indians, as most men in New England." He "certainly was, for many years, the most eminent minister in Essex County, equal to any in the Province for learning and candor, and superior to all of his contemporaries as a writer." For his great labors and his moral and Christian worth, he is held in grateful remembrance.

Another minister of this pastorate was REV. JOHN ROGERS, M.D., the eldest son of Rev. Nathaniel, of the second pastorate. He came to this country in 1636, with his parents. He entered Harvard College in his tenth year, and graduated in 1649. He studied medicine and divinity. He wore the title "Rev.," though there does not appear to be any record of his ordination. He was called here to preach July 4, 1656, by Mr. Hubbard, and afterwards became assistant to him and Mr. Cobbett. Tradition assigns to him "The Lecture," as his particular service, and refers to his small salary as commensurate with his duty. He was the while, the principal physician in town. Although his youth was marked with periods of hereditary despondency, the business of active life wore off the sharp angles of his temperament, and made him one of the great men of his day. He was invited to the presidency of Harvard College upon the death of President Oakes. He accepted and entered upon his office August 12, 1683. This was a place of honor and responsibility, for which his dignity and firmness, his deportment and culture, his wisdom and learning, particularly fitted him; but his sun hardly rose above the morning's gray twilight. Just before his first commencement he was prostrated by a "sudden visitation of sickness." Mr. Hubbard, of this pastorate, was appointed to "manage" the commencement, and Mr. Rogers died on the regular Commencement Day, July 2, 1684.

His wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Gen. Daniel Denison, and died June 13, 1723, at the age of eighty-two years. His children were Elizabeth, Margaret, John, Daniel, Nathaniel and Patience. His tomb is in Cambridge, and his epitaph is as follows:

"There is committed to this earth and this tomb a depository of kindness, a garner of divine knowledge, a library of polite literature, a system of medicine, a residence of integrity, an abode of faith, an example of Christian sincerity. A treasury of all these excellencies was the earthly part of Rev. John Rogers, son of the very learned Rogers, of Ipswich, and grandson of the noted Rogers of Dedham, Old England, the excellent and justly beloved president of Harvard College. His spirit suddenly taken from us July 2, A. D., 1684, and in the fifty-fourth year of his age. Precious is the part that remains with us even while a corpse."

Another minister of this pastorate was MR. JOHN DENNISON, whose father was John, whose grandfather was Gen. Daniel and whose mother was Martha Symonds, daughter of the deputy-governor. John fitted for college at the grammar school, and



graduated from Harvard in 1684. Mr. Palmer says that, according to generally received testimony, he became the actual pastor of this church in 1686. Other statements represent him to have been elected to the pastoral office, but on account of failing health, he was not ordained. He was permitted, however, to render pastoral service to this people for quite three years. Mr. Felt says: "He engaged, April 5, 1686, to preach one-quarter of the time as helper to Mr. Hubbard, and the next year one-third of the time. The affection of this people was strong towards him, and their estimation of his merits uncommonly high. They elected him for their pastor, but he was not ordained." He was, no doubt, a young man, of rare attainments and virtue; his ill-health, however, crippled his activity, and finally prostrated him. He slept in Jesus September 14, 1689, in his twenty-fourth year.

His wife was Elizabeth Saltonstall, daughter of Hon. Nathaniel, of Haverhill. She survived him, and married Rev. Rowland Cotton, of Sandwich, and died in Boston July 9, 1726. He left a son John, who was born in 1689. Cotton Mather describes him as "a gentleman of uncommon accomplishments and expectations," and "a pastor of whose fruit the church in Ipswich tasted with an uncommon satisfaction."

7. *Fourth Pastorate.*—This was Rev. John Rogers', son of Rev. John, president of Harvard College, a native of this town, born July 7, 1666. He studied in the grammar school and graduated at Harvard College in 1684, when his father died and when he was eighteen years old. He was called to this church during the service of Messrs. Hubbard and Dennison, March 9, 1686. He complied as early as 1688, and December 24, 1689, was asked to settle. In relation to his salary there was a difference of one hundred acres of land, and for that reason he was not ordained till October 12, 1692. In 1702 Mr. Hubbard was too feeble to preach, and August 13th Mr. Rogers acceded to the full ministerial duty, wherein he continued till the next year, when Rev. Jabez Fitch came as colleague.

During this pastorate, in 1712, the old diminutive turret was removed to give place to a commodious belfry. In 1743 there was a very extensive revival of religion, as a result of the evangelical labors of Revs. Whitefield and Tennant, a full account of which was published by Mr. Rogers in the "Christian History."

In 1726, when he had served his people, he said, "thirty-seven years," he had sold a part of his property and mortgaged the rest to meet the requirements of his family, his salary having depreciated through a depreciated currency. Although depreciation was a common burden, his people promptly lifted his mortgage by a gift of a hundred pounds, and in 1733 they gave him forty pounds to repair his house. He died December 28, 1745, and his society voted a funeral benefit of two hundred pounds old tenor. His portrait is with the Essex Historical Society.

His first wife was Martha Smith, whom he married January 12, 1687. His second wife was Martha Whittingham, daughter of William, whom he married November 4, 1691, and who died March 9, 1759, at the great age of eighty-nine years. His children were John, Samuel, Nathaniel, Richard, Elizabeth (who died an infant), Martha, Mary, William and Daniel and Elizabeth, twins.

Mr. Felt says of him: "Such was the strength of his mind, the amount of his acquisitions in learning and theology, the prominence of his piety and the persevering labors of his ministry, that he held a high rank in the estimation of his people and of the public." Mr. Wigglesworth, of the Hamlet, January 5th, the Sabbath after the funeral, thus referred to him: "If the tree is to be known and judged by its fruits, we have reason to think him as eminent for his piety as learning; as great a Christian as a divine. There are many living witnesses of the success of his ministerial labors, as was a multitude who went before him to glory, both of whom shall be his crown when the great Shepherd shall appear. His old age was not infirm and decrepid, but robust, active and useful, whereby he was enabled to labor in word and doctrine to the last, and quit the stage of life in action."

Another minister of this pastorate was REV. JABEZ FITCH, who was the son of Rev. James Fitch, of Norwich, Conn. He graduated from Harvard College in 1694, was tutor there 1697-1703, and was elected Fellow in 1700. The town voted, October 5, 1702, to call him to the office of assistant to Mr. Rogers. He accepted December 11, 1702, and was ordained October 24, 1703. His settlement was £150 current money. His salary was £60 for the first year; £70 for the second year; and £80 for the third year, "and so to continue." In 1724 he complained that his support was not sufficient, and though the parish tried hard to meet his demand, he began to preach at Portsmouth with a view to settle there, which he did the next year. His claim upon this society was adjusted by referees September 22, 1726.

He assisted Dr. Belknap in the preparation of the "History of New Hampshire. The earthquake of 1727 called forth a sermon which was published. He was a man of great learning, had a strong, clear mind, a cheerful disposition, a benevolent spirit and a pious heart. He was eminently useful during a long life, falling asleep in his seventy-fifth year, November 22, 1746. His wife was Elizabeth Appleton, daughter of Col. John, married June 10, 1704.

8. *Fifth Pastorate.*—This we must call REV. NATHANIEL ROGERS' pastorate. He was son of Rev. John, who then occupied the pulpit, and was born March 4, 1702. He fitted for college at the Grammar School, and graduated from Harvard College in 1721. He succeeded Mr. Fitch, and assisted his father for a year or more, when August 16, 1726, the church gave him a call to settle. In the call the society concurred September 15th, and he was ordained October 18

1771, as colleague. His salary was £130 annually for these years, and £150 annually thereafter.

Church Edifice.—Mr. Rogers built a new meeting-house. The frame was raised April 19, 1749. It was twenty-six feet stud, forty-seven feet wide and fifty-three feet long. On either side of the broad aisle were seats instead of the old box-pews, one row of seats for females, and the other for males. The house was supplied with wood-stoves. Hitherto the fire-stoves had furnished all the warmth. In 1743 there was a fine of fifteen shillings for leaving a foot-stove in church, and of five shillings for the carelessness of them. The weather-cock surmounting the steeple was one hundred and eighteen feet above the base.

In 1739 Mr. Rogers preached a memorial of Col. John Appleton; in 1743 he made with others a written statement "that there has been a happy and remarkable revival of religion in many parts of this land, through an uncommon divine influence, after a long time of great decay and deadness." This was the great awakening that was felt throughout New England. This church invited Messrs. Tennant and Whitefield, and engaged, heart and soul, in the work, with these gratifying results: In the five years following 1741, during the ministry of father and son, one hundred and forty-four persons were added to the church, one hundred and twenty-three of whom are said to have been the result of the Whitefield revival. In 1746 there were more than three hundred members. The same year he refused the assistance of Mr. John Walley as colleague. Mr. Walley had declined pulpit exchanges with a minister who had officiated for a new church, in Boston, composed of members from other orthodox churches. The stand taken by Mr. Rogers caused a deep excitement, and the germination of the South Church. In 1747 he helped to ordain Mr. Cleaveland over a new church in Essex; in 1763 preached the sermon at the ordination of Mr. John Treadwell, of Lynn, and a memorial of Deacon Samuel Williams of his own church, which were printed. In 1765 he gave the right-hand of fellowship to Rev. Joseph Dana of the South Parish; in 1752 he asked for a colleague, and offered to relinquish a third of his salary for that purpose. He had assistance March 30, 1764, because of sickness. His natural infirmities had been to him for many years a cause of anxiety, and they seemed to grow with his years. He owned their power and peacefully submitted May 10, 1775.

Mary Leverett Denison, daughter of President Leverett of Harvard College, and widow of Col. John Denison, was his first wife, married December 25, 1728. His second wife was widow Mary Staniford, married May 4, 1758, and died in 1780. His children were Margaret, Sarah, Elizabeth, Martha, Lucy and Nathaniel.

He was emphatically a strong-minded man; he could state exactly his reason for the hope within

him; he could not brook irregularity in faith or practice. Clearly perceiving his way, he pursued it without fear or favor and with few or many. His object was a clear conscience. He was an industrious man and charitable. The welfare of his church was his pride, and deeds of kindness his solace. Read the record upon the tomb:

"A mind profoundly great, a heart that felt
The ties of nature, friendship and humanity,
Distinguished wisdom, dignity of manners;
Those marked the man; but with superior grace,
The Christian shone in faith and heavenly zeal,
Sweet peace, true greatness, and prevailing prayer.
Dear Man of God! with what strong agonies
He wrestled for his flock and for the world;
And, like Apollos, mighty in the Scriptures,
Opened the mysteries of love divine,
And the great name of Jesus!
Warm from his lips the heavenly doctrine fell,
And numbers, rescued from the jaws of hell,
Shall hail him blest in realms of light unknown,
And add immortal lustre to his crown."

Mr. Rogers' assistant was REV. TIMOTHY SYMMES, who was born in Scituate, graduated from Harvard, and ordained at East Haddam, Conn. He began his work here in 1752, and labored in season and out of season, in whatever his hands found to do, for the stability of the church and the good of souls. He was called to his reward in the midst of his usefulness, and the ripeness of his manhood. He died April 6, 1756, in his forty-first year. His wife was Eunice Cogswell, daughter of Francis and Hannah. He left two sons,—Ebenezer and William, born about 1755 and 1756; his widow married Richard Potter.

10. *Sixth Pastorate.*—This was held by REV. LEVI FRISBIE. Mr. Frisbie was born in April, 1748, at Brantford, Conn. At the age of sixteen he joined Dr. Wheelock's Indian Charity School, at Lebanon, where he became seriously affected, and began a preparation for college, which he completed with Dr. Bellamy, of Bethlehem. He entered Yale College and remained more than three years, but graduated at Dartmouth College, with the first class, in 1771. He was much attached to Dr. Wheelock, interested in the permanency of the school, and was devoted to the cause of Indian education. While a senior at Dartmouth College, he sung the labors, the anxieties and the remarkable occurrences attending the removal of the school and college and their establishment at Hanover. His poem concludes as follows

"Thus Dartmouth, happy in her sylvan seat,
Drinks the pure pleasures of her fair retreat;
Her songs of praise in notes melodious rise,
Like clouds of incense to the listening skies;
Her God protects her with paternal care
From ill's distractive and each fatal snare;
And may he still protect, and she adore,
Till Heaven and earth and time shall be no more."

To prosecute his desire to Christianize the Indians, he and, at the same time, David McClure were ordained missionaries at Dartmouth College May 21, 1772, and the next month proceeded to occupy their chosen field along the Muskingum. But the year



belonged to the decade of war, the country was exercised with questions of statecraft, and agitated with the precursors of war, and, more than all to him, the Indian was inimical to the English. He abandoned his mission, traveled in Canada, labored awhile in Maine, and visited the South. In March, 1775, he became an assistant to Mr. Rogers, and after the death of that venerable pastor, accepted a call to settle, and was installed February 7, 1776. His salary was one hundred pounds. He was patriotically devoted to his calling. His heart and hands were warm and active for his country. He labored for her salvation, and hoped as he hoped for the salvation of souls. As his heart succeeded in his country's welfare, so the Blessed Spirit aided him in the church. Especially was His power manifest in the years 1799 and 1800, when twenty-eight were added to the church. During his ministry there were added eighty of such as should be saved.

In 1781 he published an oration upon the announcement of peace; in 1784 a memorial of Rev. Moses Parsons, of Newbury; in 1799 two fast sermons and a fellowship address at the ordination of Mr. Josiah Webster; in 1800 a eulogy on George Washington and a thanksgiving sermon; and in 1804 a sermon before the Society for Propagating the Gospel among the Indians.

In 1805 his church contributed largely to the formation of a Baptist society in town, which not a little disturbed the well-earned quiet and the tender sensibility of his age. His last official service was to administer the sacrament September 21, 1805. He died February 25, 1806. His parish voted a funeral benefit of one hundred dollars, and Rev. Asahel Huntington, of Topsfield, preached at his interment the 28th.

His first wife was Zevirah Sprague, eldest daughter of Captain Samuel Sprague, of Lebanon, Conn. She was born March, 1747, and she died August 21, 1778, in her thirty-second year. His second wife was Mehitable Hale, of Newburyport; married June 1, 1780, and died April 6, 1828, aged ninety-six. His children were Mary, Sarah, Levi, Nathaniel and Mehitable. In his personal appearance he was, says Mr. Felt, "of light complexion, above the common height, and rather large." Dr. Dana, of the South Church, pays the following tribute to his memory: "His manner was serious, his conception lively, his expression natural and easy. He was interesting and profitable. He read, thought and conversed much. His labors were blessed. In his catechizing and visits he was affectionate. He had great tenderness of conscience. The loss to his family and flock was great. The vicinity was greatly bereaved. The Society for Promoting the Gospel have, in him, lost a worthy member. Zion at large will mourn. But to him it is believed that death was a blessed release."

11. *Seventh Pastorate.*—Mr. Frisbie's successor was Rev. David Tenney Kimball. He was born in

Bradford November 23, 1782, to Lieutenant Daniel and Elizabeth-Tenney Kimball. He united with the Bradford Church November 13, 1803, where his parents had consecrated him in baptism years before. He dated his conversion from a period in his college life. He graduated at Harvard College in 1803, taught one year in Phillips Academy, Andover, studied divinity, or theology, with Rev. Jonathan French, of same place, and was approbated by the Andover Association August 6, 1805. He was introduced to this pulpit by Rev. Mr. Frisbie on the communion Sabbath, September 22, 1805. He was called to settle, without a dissenting voice, June 17, 1806, was ordained October 8th following, and continued in the ministry till 1851, when he withdrew from the activities and responsibilities of pastor, retaining, however, his relationship till his death, February 3, 1860. He had a settlement of six hundred dollars and a salary of six hundred dollars.

Father Kimball's was a long and useful service. He left nearly two thousand fairly written sermons, and the Good Spirit crowned his labors with remarkable success, as appears from his last pulpit utterance—his semi-centennial address, October 8, 1856. At the time of his settlement the membership of the church was twelve males and forty-one females—a total of fifty-three. He had admitted three hundred and fifty—three hundred and twelve by profession, and thirty-eight by letter. The address further states that he had attended more than a thousand funerals, nine hundred and seventy of which were in his own parish; he had united in marriage more than a thousand persons; and that only two of the members of the church when he was ordained were then living.

He was an esteemed and useful member of the Essex North Association of Ministers, was chosen Scribe May 12, 1812, and continued in the office till his death. He survived all who were members of the association when he was settled, and all but two of those who were clergymen in the county at that time. He was a warm friend of the cause of education, a member of the American Educational Society, whose object it was to assist young men preparing for the ministry, and did much to enlist the efforts of the churches in its behalf, and his service for the schools in his own town was valuable.

The following are among his publications: "A Fellowship Address at the Ordination of Messrs. Cyrus Kingsbury and Daniel Smith as Missionaries to the West," in 1815; "Female Obligations and Disposition to Promote Christianity," in 1819; "Sermon before the Massachusetts Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge," "The Installation Sermon to Rev. William Ritchie, of Needham," and "Ecclesiastical History of Ipswich, in 1821; "The Fellowship Address at the Ordination of Mr. Daniel Fitz over the South Church," in 1826; "An Address before the Essex County Foreign Mission Society," in 1827 "An Address before the Essex County Auxiliary



Educational Society," in 1828; "First Church Centennial Sermon," in 1834; "Sermon," in 1838; "Sermon," in 1839; "Last Sermon in Old Meeting-house," in 1846; "First Sermon in the New Meeting-house, in 1847;" "Semi-Centennial of his Ordination," in 1856; "Memorial of Rev. Isaac Braman, of Georgetown," and "Memorial of Rev. Gardiner B. Perry, D.D., of Groveland,"—which he was preparing for the press, when prostrated with his last sickness—in 1860. He also contributed to various religious publications.

He married October 20, 1807, Dolly Varnum Coburn, daughter of Captain Peter and Elizabeth-Poor Coburn, of Dracut, and granddaughter of Deacon Daniel Poor, of Andover. They had seven children and one adopted child. See "Noted Natives" below.

Mr. Kimball was a learned, laborious and eminently useful man; he had a welcome and honored place among the titled and learned men of his day; yet it was not beneath his dignity to recite nightly, with his worthy consort, their cradle hymn:

"Now I lay me down to sleep,
I pray the Lord my soul to keep;
If I should die before I wake,
I pray the Lord my soul to take."

—a practice which seldom outgrows childhood, but which, if continued, would tend to banish dissipation and profanity, to polish speech, and to ennoble character.

Says one who knew him: "The distinct impression which he leaves on the memories of all who knew him, is his fidelity and untiring industry. As the old divines used to say, he was a painful preacher, a painful pastor, a painful scholar, a painful man. This mark pervaded all his performances. His voice was confined in its compass and husky, and yet he contrived to impress on his audience the conclusion of most of his sermons. He always disappointed you on the right side, making a deeper impression than you had anticipated. His sermons were very carefully written. He visited his people with uncommon diligence. He was a respectable scholar in sacred Greek, but began Hebrew after he was forty years old, and by perseverance enabled himself to profit by the exegetical commentaries of the times. O, departed brother! if we have something to forget, we have much to remember; and may thy activity and devotion preach to us forever."

The remains of this worthy man repose in the High Street Cemetery, where a monument is erected to his memory. The shaft is of Oak Hill granite, and is fifteen feet high, surmounted with a cross and crown. The inscription reads:

"Rev. David Tenney Kimball, born in Bradford, Mass., Nov. 23, 1782; graduated at Harvard College in 1803, ordained the eleventh Pastor of the First Congregational Church in Ipswich, Oct. 8, 1806, in which relation he died, Feb. 3, 1860, aged 77 years."

"A free classical scholar, a vigorous writer, a man of unsullied purity

and humble piety, a kind husband and tender parent, a sincere friend, a faithful pastor."

"When the summons came, catching a glimpse of heaven, he said, 'The gates of the New Jerusalem are open, I see within the city.'"

12. *Eighth Pastorate.*—Rev. Robert Southgate succeeded Father Kimball. Mr. Southgate was born in Portland, Me., January 28, 1808. His parents were Horatio and Nabby-McLellan Southgate. He fitted for college in his native city, and graduated at Bowdoin College in 1826, when he was eighteen years old. He dated his conversion from the week of prayer for colleges; he unhesitatingly consecrated himself, as four of his other brothers had done, to the Christian ministry. He completed the prescribed course at the Andover Theological Seminary, then studied a year in the Yale Divinity School, New Haven, Conn. After spending a year in various ministerial labors, he was called to the Congregational Church, at Woodstock, Vt., and he entered upon the duties January 4, 1832. During the winter of 1834-35, he experienced a shower of divine grace, which brought into the churches in the town more than two hundred persons, and the greater part to the Congregational Church. In 1836, his health failing, he resigned, and he was dismissed October 26th. He was settled over the Congregational Church in Wethersfield, Conn., February 7, 1838, as colleague pastor with Rev. C. J. Tenney, D. D., and became full pastor on the resignation of Dr. Tenney, January 10, 1841. He had there three marked seasons of religious interest. The church membership was enlarged by one hundred and seventy-three accessions. He requested a dismissal, which took place November 22, 1843. The church keenly regretted his withdrawal. He was next settled over a young and small Presbyterian Church, in Monroe, Mich., in October, 1845. In two years the society built and furnished a beautiful and commodious house of worship; and while he was there, he experienced many seasons of refreshing and many accessions to the church. Malarial troubles in his family forced him to relinquish the pleasant place and godly heritage for the green hills and healthful air of New England.

In December, 1850, he was called unanimously and urgently to this church, and was installed July 24th following. Here also his labors were blessed with many tokens of divine favor, and one hundred and twenty-five persons became members of the church. In his seventeenth year he tendered his resignation, which was not accepted. He renewed it, and was dismissed March 31, 1867. He then preached a year in Hartford, Conn., while the pastor of the church was in Europe; then a year at Oxford, N. H.; and then a year at Hartford, Vt., where he was called to settle, and was installed December 20, 1871. During his service there, the society repaired and beautified the house of worship, and the church membership was enlarged. In that vineyard of the Lord, "he was not for God took him." He died of apo-

plexity, Thursday, February 6, 1873, while visiting his daughter at Woodstock, and passed

"In the wink of an eye, or the draught of a breath,
From the blossom of health to the paleness of death."

Mr. Southgate contributed forty-two years of earnest Christian labor; five churches were blessed and strengthened by his efficient ministry, and left harmonious and sorrowing at his departure. Says the memorial of him: "He was a sensitive, modest, self-distrustful man, whose full merit was slowly discovered. He was a plain, direct, earnest preacher, glorying in the cross of Christ. He had a tropical exuberance of feeling and language through which he always made Christian truth seem like a garden well-sown and cultured, and bearing precious fruit in abundance. He had an extraordinary gift in prayer, that showed he dwelt in the prophet's own chamber, whose windows looked out upon the glorious heavens. He excelled as a pastor, his heart was quick and sympathetic, and carried on it the burden of his people." That "*he was a good minister of Jesus Christ*" was the people's verdict.

Mr. Southgate married, October, 1832, Miss Mary Frances Swan, daughter of Benjamin Swan, Esq., of Woodstock. She died October 2, 1867. There were five children. One died young, the others are worshippers with the people of God, one of whom is a minister of the gospel; another, a native of this town, is noticed in "Noted Natives" below.

13. *Ninth Pastorate.*—REV. THOMAS MORONG was installed February 5, 1868. His pastorate continued about eight years, closing January 12, 1876, which we believe was a season of general prosperity.

14. *Tenth Pastorate.*—REV. EDWIN BEAMAN PALMER was born in Belfast, Me., September 25, 1833. He fitted for college at North Bridgeton, 1850-52; graduated at Bowdoin College August 6, 1856, and at the Bangor Theological Seminary in 1859. For a year, while studying in the Seminary, he held the principalship of the high and grammar schools in Brunswick. He was ordained, September 20, 1859, over the Second Congregational Church in New Castle, which he resigned because of nervous exhaustion from over work, and from which he was dismissed, February 10, 1862. From October 10, 1862, to March, 1863, he served in the field as chaplain of the Nineteenth Regiment Maine Volunteer Infantry, and from March to October, 1864, the Pine Street Church, Lewiston, when the pastor was temporarily in the army. He was installed, December 26, 1864, at Southbridge, Mass., and was dismissed, May 3, 1869, to accept a call to the Third Congregational Church, Chicopee, where he was installed June 10, following. That pastorate closed March 23, 1875, in which year he was called to this church, where he was installed January 12, 1876. He gave a devoted Christian service, amid many untoward circumstances. "His first year," said a friend, "seemed full of funerals; it seemed as if he had been called to bury the

people." The same year the seminary closed, and some fifty pupils were taken from his congregation. He received eleven members by profession of faith and seventeen by letter. There were two baptisms, and strange enough there were, during the time, but two births where both parents were in the church, and only four where either parent was a member. He solemnized seventy marriages, and attended two hundred and three funerals, forty-one of which were members of his church. He was dismissed, upon his request, May 3, 1885, and June 17th, following, was elected treasurer of the Massachusetts Home Missionary Society, where he now serves, with office in Boston and residence in Winchester.

15. *Eleventh Pastorate.*—REV. GEORGE H. SCOTT is the present incumbent. He is a native of Bakersfield, Vt.; he graduated at Williams College in 1865, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1873. The same year he became pastor at Plymouth, N. H., where he continued with gratifying results till 1881, when he returned to the Andover Seminary to pursue a post-graduate course, during which he received a call to settle over a church at Lawrence, Kansas. There he labored and nourished a healthful growth of the church for two years, when he was obliged to resign and return East. He supplied one year at Rockland, Me. Upon call he was installed here December 30, 1885.

The church and society are practically free from debt, and meet their current expenses without difficulty. The church is heartily united and enjoying a healthful growth, there having been additions at each communion season during the year. There is now, Christmas, 1886, a membership of about one hundred and seventy-three.

16. *Deacons.*—Rev. David T. Kimball has furnished the following list of deacons, which, for want of sufficient records, cannot be made satisfactory:

John Shatswell was a resident in 1634, and served for some time. Deacon Whipple is recorded in 1651. William Goodhue was called deacon in 1658, and his son Joseph some time after. Moses Pingry served 1658 to 1683; Thomas Knowlton, 1667 to 1678; Deacon Jewett, 1677; Robert Lord, 1682; Thomas Low, 1696; Jacob Foster, 1697 to 1700; Nathaniel Knowlton, 1700 to 1723; Deacon Abbott, 1710 to 1715; John Staniford, 1721; Thomas Norton, 1727 to 1737; Jonathan Fellows, 1727 to 1736; Aaron Potter, 1737; Daniel Heard, Mark Haskell, Aaron Potter and Samuel Williams (who died in 1763), 1746; Jeremiah Perkins, 1763-90; Joseph Low, 1763 to 1782; John Crocker, 1781 to 1790; William Story, Jr., 1781 to 1788; Caleb Lord, 1790 to 1804; Thomas Knowlton, 1801 to 1832; Mark Haskell, 1804 to 1825; Moses Lord, 1825 to 1832; Isaac Stanwood, 1832 to 1867. The present incumbents are Zenas Cushing and Aaron Cogswell, chosen April 2, 1866.

17. *Conclusion.*—This church has had fourteen pastors, the present incumbent is the fifteenth. They



served during a period of more than two hundred and fifty years, and during that time rendered a colleague or double pastorate service of more than a hundred years, making an aggregate service of three hundred and fifty-five years. The longest pastorate was Mr. Rogers', 1692-1745, fifty-three years; the average service has been twenty-five years. A double pastorate in the early times seems to have been necessary, because of the extent of territory covered by the parish, including Essex and Hamilton, and the triple labor of catechizing, lecturing and sermonizing. There seems to have been very little colleague service after 1745, about the time the Linebrook and South Parishes were formed.

This church is said to have been, in early times, the most flourishing and vigorous in New England; and probably no element contributed more to give the town the prestige it enjoyed than this church, holding forth such luminous names as Ward and Norton, as Cobbett and Hubbard and the Rogerses, authorities in the church and molding influences in the land. Thus we conclude our notice of this mother of churches.

SOUTH PARISH AND CHURCH.

1. *First Pastorate*.—This church came off from the First Church, during the pastorate of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers. The first effort in that direction was a petition dated November 17, 1745. Little or nothing was done about the request at that time, because of the death of Rev. John Rogers, that soon followed. The petition was renewed the next year. The church then had three hundred and four members, and the edifice was crowded and unfit for its purpose. Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, Rev. John's colleague and successor, opposed the movement. Then came the question of pastoral succession, Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, the late colleague, or Mr. John Walley, of Boston. To effect a compromise, two houses of worship were built, and each minister occupied his own pulpit in the morning and exchanged in the afternoon. The plan failed of its purpose, and December 2, 1746, sixty-eight members of the Parish resolved to petition the Legislature for a new parish. Accordingly a petition, dated December 24th, was sent in to the General Court. The south part, however, made further overtures of settlement January 6, 1747; and again, May 27th, petitioned the Legislature. The new parish was incorporated June 20th, following. The act provided, however, that the parish was to remain intact, if they took "effectual care for building a new meeting-house" on the south side of the river before July 20th, and settled another minister, and supported the two churches out of the common fund, as a joint-stock company,—which they did not do, and so the new parish was established. The church was embodied July 22d, of twenty-one or twenty-two members from the First Church. The following 7th of August, they voted unanimously to call Mr. JOHN WALLEY, at a salary of £150, and a

settlement of £1200, old tenor. Mr. Walley was a son of Hon. John Walley, of Boston, and was born in 1716. He graduated at Harvard in 1734, and was a member of the South Church, Boston. In his letter of acceptance he refers to his feeble health. He was ordained November 4, 1747, the day on which the frame of the church edifice was raised. He labored faithfully more than sixteen years, and was dismissed February 22, 1764, because of sickness.

The meeting-house was first occupied May 22, 1748. It was two-stories high, and sixty feet long by forty feet wide. It was finished and furnished in the usual manner of that period. In 1819 two stoves were added to the furniture, much to the good sense and comfort of the people.

Mr. Walley was installed at Bolton, in May, 1773. He was dismissed to that church in 1784. He died in Roxbury, March 2, 1784. His wife, was Elizabeth Appleton. In his will he says: "I give, as a token of my love, to the South Parish in Ipswich, £13 6s. 8d., the yearly income to be given by them to such persons in the Parish, as they shall judge to be the fittest objects of such a charity." He was a man of average height, and light complexion, of an affectionate disposition and a pious heart; he held the pen of a ready writer, and was an eloquent speaker, and possessed a clear, able and learned mind.

2. *Second Pastorate*.—REV. JOSEPH DANA, D.D.—He was born in Pomfret, Conn., November 2, 1742, to Joseph and Mary Dana. His father was an inn-keeper. His boyhood eyes really looked upon Gen. Putnam's historical wolf.

He graduated at Yale College in 1760, studied divinity with Rev. Dr. Hart, of Preston, Conn., and was licensed to preach before he was twenty-one years old. He preached here several months as candidate, and was ordained November 7, 1765, at a salary of £100 lawful money, and a settlement of £160. "No man entered upon a duty with a more devoted interest." During his pastorate was the struggle for Independence, and in word and deed he displayed a Christian patriotism. Many were added to his church. His sixtieth anniversary sermon reads that all who were heads of families when he was settled, were dead except five; that he had followed about nine hundred of his parishioners to the grave. He was then eighty-three years old.

He was eminently worthy of the doctorate, which, in 1801, Harvard College conferred upon him. Mr. Felt says: In person, he was about the common height and size, quick and active in his movement. In his manner he was kind, accessible and gentlemanly. In morals he was exact, being diligent in business, punctual in his engagements, refined and improving in his conversation and upright in his actions. His intellectual endowments were of a high order, and richly improved with attainments in literature and theology. His style of writing was strong, lucid and sententious. His piety was the same



everywhere, and at all times, bearing the impress of the Holy Spirit and appearing as a sacrifice, acceptable in the sight of Deity. He published twenty or more sermons. He died of lung fever, after an illness of four days, November 16, 1827. His funeral sermon was preached by Rev. Robert Crowell, of Essex.

His first wife was Mary Staniford, daughter of Daniel and Mary-Burnham Staniford, and daughter-in-law of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who died May 14, 1772, in her twenty-eighth year. His second wife was Mary Turner, daughter of Samuel, of Boston, and died April 13, 1803, in her fifty-third year. His third wife was Mrs. Elizabeth-Green Bradford, daughter of Rev. Jacob Green, of Hanover, N. J., and widow of Rev. Ebenezer Bradford, of Rowley, who was married December, 1803, and who died 1824, aged about seventy-five years. His children were Mary, who married Major Thomas Burnham; Joseph and Daniel by first wife; Elizabeth, Samuel, Sarah, Abigail and Anna, by the second. See "Noted Natives."

3. *Third Pastorate.*—REV. DANIEL FITZ, D.D.—He was born in Sandown, N. H., May 28, 1795. He studied in the Derry and Atkinson Academies in New Hampshire, and August 11, 1818, graduated at Dartmouth College. He assisted in the Derry Academy one quarter, was principal of the Salisbury Academy two years and being called to the Academy at Marblehead, Mass., taught there one and a half years. He became converted during a revival in 1819, while principal of the Salisbury Academy, and united with the church in that place in 1820. He then resolved upon a theological course, and graduated at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1825. He was approbated to preach by the "Hopkinton (N. H.) Association," June 15th, the same year, and the next year, June 28th, was ordained colleague pastor with Dr. Dana, of this church, of which he became the sole pastor upon the death of the doctor, November 16, 1827.

He published the following sermons: Memorials of Mrs. Hannah C. Crowell, wife of Rev. Dr. Robert Crowell, of Essex, in 1837; of Dr. Crowell in 1855, of Rev. David T. Kimball in 1860, and the thirtieth anniversary of his settlement. The doctorate was conferred on him by Dartmouth College in 1862. His pastorate closed in 1866; he died September 2, 1869.

Dr. Fitz had a mild, gentle, sympathetic nature, was socially agreeable and public-spirited,—an exemplary man. He was a man of prayer and piety, and delighted in the service of the Master. He had a long, peaceful and useful pastorate.

4. *Fourth Pastorate.*—REV. WILLIAM H. PIERSON.—Mr. Pierson succeeded to the pastorate January 1, 1868. He was born in Newburyport, June 12, 1839; he graduated at Bowdoin College, Me., in 1864, and at the Princeton Theological Seminary, N. J., in April, 1867. This was his first pastoral charge, and

he held it four and a half years. A parsonage was purchased during his service. At the beginning of his ministry a marked revival occurred, which resulted in some fifty accessions to the church. His pastorate was dissolved July 15, 1872, and in the August following he began to serve the church in Somerville, where he remained nearly nine years. During the latter pastorate he saw cause to change his religious views and to become a Unitarian. He accepted the charge of the First Parish, Fitchburg, Mass., and was installed June 7, 1881, and is now serving as pastor.

5. *Fifth Pastor.*—REV. MARSHALL BALLARD ANGIER was born in Southborough, Mass., March 22, 1819. His father was Calvin Angier, a farmer, and his mother, Anna-Parker Angier.

Mr. Angier fitted for college at Leicester Academy, and graduated at Yale College in 1844. He graduated at the Union Theological Seminary, New York City, in 1847. He was resident licentiate at the Theological Seminary, Princeton, N. J., 1847–48. He was acting pastor at Worcester and Orange, Mass., 1848–52, at Hopkinton, N. H., 1852–53, where he was ordained and installed June 8, 1853. During the following twenty years, till 1873,—in addition to his eight years' ministry in Hopkinton—he filled pastorates in Dorchester, Sturbridge and Haydensville, Mass. He preached the first time in this church in March, 1873, and filling the pulpit from time to time during the year, he was installed pastor of the church February 4, 1874. His pastorate continued till August 1, 1878—four and a half years. During the early part of his ministry he enjoyed a refreshing from the presence of the Lord, resulting in accessions to the church, at *one Communion*, of fifty-three persons, varying in their ages from thirteen to seventy-nine years. The whole number uniting with the church during his ministry was about sixty.

During the time, the sum of \$1500 was raised and expended for repairs on the church and parsonage. A debt of \$3500 upon the property of the society was lifted, being raised by voluntary subscription. These make a grand total for repairs and debt of more than \$5000. He is now preaching at New York, with residence at No. 839 E. 168th Street.

He married, September 29, 1864, in Newburyport, Miss Emma S. Brewster, daughter of Wm. H. Brewster, of Newburyport. They have a daughter, born in Plymouth, Mass., June 23, 1868. Mrs. Angier belongs to the tenth generation, in lineal descent, from Elder Brewster, of the May Flower.

6. *Sixth Pastorate.*—REV. THOMAS FRANKLIN WATERS is the present pastor. He was born in Salem, to Thomas S. and Mary A. Waters, April 12, 1851. He graduated at Harvard College in 1872, at Andover Theological Seminary in 1875, and the August following entered the pulpit service at Edgartown, Martha's Vineyard, where he was ordained October 23, 1876. He was installed here January 1,



1879. In 1885 the house of worship was entirely remodeled; the galleries, pulpit and pews were removed, and a portion of the auditorium was cut off by a partition, erected some fifteen feet in front of its posterior walls. The smaller room thus made was furnished with a small vestry and a ladies' parlor on the first floor, and a large vestry and a kitchen on the second floor. The former rooms are both connected with the main audience-room, by sliding sashes, by which the three rooms may be converted into one. In the main audience-room, by a new arrangement of pews, thus economizing the space, there are about four hundred sittings, an alcove for an organ on the left of the pulpit platform and a platform for the choir. The windows were furnished with inside blinds, the walls and ceiling were frescoed, gas was fully supplied and the audience-room newly furnished with pulpit-set, carpet and cushions. They have now a very pretty, convenient and commodious house, and a very pleasant and prosperous pastorate.

LINEBROOK PARISH AND CHURCH.

1. *Incorporation.*—This parish is centrally located with reference to Topsfield, Boxford, Georgetown, Rowley and Ipswich, and is distant from them respectively, from church to church, from three to four miles. It was originally constituted of the last two towns.

Much inconvenience was felt as early as 1738-39 in attending church service at the above places, and thirteen of the freeholders of Ipswich, December 20, 1739, o.s., petitioned the First Church to be set off to Topsfield. The petitioners, March 18th of the same year, were denied the set-off, but were "discharged from all parish rates for the future." Soon after they began to employ a religious teacher. They again petitioned the First Church, and were answered December 2, 1742, that "the West End do not become a parish, but keep up preaching among them."

In 1743 they and freeholders of Rowley erected a meeting-house; April 12, 1744, they all voted to be set off as a distinct parish, and accordingly petitioned the Great and General Court for incorporation. Fifteen Rowley men remonstrated. The committee of court, to whom the matter was intrusted, reported favoring the petition, March 21, 1745 o.s. The act of incorporation is dated June 4, 1746. The first meeting of the parish was held July 7, the same year. The precinct was bounded on the south by Howlett's Brook and Ipswich River, on the east by Gravelly, Bull and Batchelder's Brooks, and on the west by Strait Brook and was therefore by vote January 27, 1746-47, called *Linebrook Parish*.

2. *Meeting-House.*—The church was finished in the following manner, as the parish voted June 27, 1746-47: First, the pulpit and deacon's seat; second, the body-seats below; third, three fore-seats in each gallery; fourth, the gallery stairs, and plaster under the gallery; fifth, a pew for the parish. It was voted May

18, 1747, that the meeting-house be finished by the last of October. It was a two-story, square house, was finished with box-pews, and was entered by a front door and a door on each side. It stood in Rowley-Linebrook, perhaps an eighth of a mile across the Ipswich-Rowley town-line, on the road leading from the Ipswich-Linebrook school-house, a spot now called "up in the woods." The house was removed to the location of the present church, and rebuilt in 1828 by Daniel Searl and Mark K. Jewett, contractors, of Rowley, for six hundred dollars. Rev. David Tullar was present at the raising, and offered prayer. The rebuilding followed the old model. The site was purchased of Miss Mehitable Foster, about a third of an acre, for twenty dollars, May 24, 1828. The house was dedicated January 1, 1829.

The present church edifice was built in 1848. In 1847 the First and South Parishes gave this parish a bell, which was accepted June 23, 1847, when it became a question whether the old house should receive needed repairs and be remodeled to accommodate the bell, or whether a new house should be built. The parish determined, December 22, 1847, to build a new house, and to set it on the site of the old one. The necessary funds were raised by subscription at twenty-five dollars per share. Eighty shares were sold, amounting to two thousand dollars. Charles E. Brackett, who died at Quincy on the night of Easter, 1885, was the contractor, at nineteen hundred and five dollars and the old house, which did not include pay for painting and pews. The whole cost, \$2197.55, for structure, painting, graining slips and hanging the bell. The house was furnished by the Ladies' Sewing Circle. A stockholders' or proprietors' meeting was held December 2, 1848, when they voted not to relinquish any of their rights to the parish; they voted also to adopt the action taken by the parish in relation to the house, and to proceed in the sale of the pews. Forty slips were sold for twenty-four hundred and eleven dollars, one hundred and sixty more than the appraisal. The seating capacity of the house is about two hundred and fifty. It was dedicated November 22, 1848.

3. *Parish Lands.*—The parish leased for nine hundred and ninety-nine years from July 5, 1753, a parcel of land for a cemetery. The land is a few rods north of the site of the old meeting-house in Rowley-Linebrook, and has long been abandoned. The town granted ten acres in Bull-brook pasture to this pastorate November 15, 1790, which subsequently were exchanged for ten acres in Long-hill pasture, which the parish now owns. The site of the old meeting-house was sold to Mr. Joseph B. Perley for twenty dollars.

4. *The Church.*—The church was embodied with twelve or thirteen male members November 15, 1749. They then adopted the belief and polity of the Cambridge platform made the year before. The following is a list of the deacons:

John Abbott, chosen December 13, 1749; died December 18, 1759.

Jona. Burpee, chosen December 13, 1749; transferred to N. B. May 6, 1764.

Mark Howe, chosen May 22, 1760; died February 17, 1770.

Moses Chaplin, chosen October 13, 1765; died October 18, 1811.

Anthony Potter, chosen January 3, 1771; died June 21, 1791.

Abraham Howe, Sen., chosen March 12, 1792; died November 5, 1797.

Isaac Potter, chosen — : transferred to Rowley, October 1, 1809.

Joseph Chaplin, Sen., chosen October 1, 1809; transferred to Byfield October 4, 1812.

Philemon Foster, Sen., chosen October 4, 1812; died May 10, 1818.

William Dickinson, chosen September 30, 1831; resigned November 2, 1844.

William Foster Conant, chosen September 30, 1831; died May 7, 1886, Jacob Symonds Potter, chosen November 2, 1844; transferred to Georgetown November 4, 1876.

John Harrison Tenney, chosen June 9, 1884.

James Davis and George Hibbert were elected *Elders* December 19, 1749; the former died March 11, 1752; the latter April 29, 1750. Deacon John Abbott was chosen January 7, 1752, and subsequently David Perley. Both declined to serve February 1, 1757. Amos Jewett and Jeremiah Burpee were elected February 15, 1757, and were ordained April 19th. Elder Burpee was transferred to St. John, N. B., May 6, 1764, and Elder Jewett to Hamilton August 30, 1789. Abraham Howe was chosen June 11, 1787.

In 1773 "the tuners" of the hymns were Nathaniel Howe and Joseph and Jonathan Chapman. In April, 1791, the singing-school was invited to assist Messrs. Howe and Joseph Chapman in psalmody.

5. *First Pastorate*.—REV. GEORGE LESSLIE was born in Scotland in 1728, and came to this country when about two years old. His father was Rev. James Lesslie. I spell the name as Rev. George spelled it in legal documents. Our subject graduated at Harvard College in 1748, at the age of twenty years. He joined the Topsfield Church March 5, 1749, presumably upon profession of faith. He studied for the ministry with his own pastor, Rev. John Emerson. He began to preach for this parish, in August, 1748, shortly after his graduation, and received six pounds a Sabbath for his services. He began to preach as candidate March 19, 1749, fourteen days after joining the Topsfield Church. His transfer from that church was October 6, 1749. He was ordained and installed here November 15, 1749, the day of the organization of the church. His settlement was £700 old tenor, or \$311.08, and his salary was £100 lawful money and twelve cords of wood. The depreciation of paper money and the failure of the parish to supply the deficiency, and an urgent call to the new society of Washington, N. H., determined him to ask a dismission October 22, 1779. A council convened November 4, 1779, and advised that the pastorate be dissolved November 30th, the date that had been mutually agreed upon by the church and the pastor. His transfer by letter was December 10th. Mrs. Ruth Conant, daughter of Deacon Foster, wife of Esquire William Conant, and mother of Deacon Conant, wrote: "The Church was embodied with thirteen male members. In that year twenty-two members were added. From 1749 to 1770 forty-six

members were added. There is no account of other additions during Mr. Lesslie's pastorate."

Mr. Lesslie, one of the organizers of the Essex North Association of Ministers, at New Rowley (now Georgetown), September 8, 1761, signed the rules of government. The fifth meeting of the association was with him November 30, 1770. He was a learned and serviceable member. About the time of his removal from this place, he was invited to a professorship in Dartmouth College, which he declined, probably because of his promising field at Washington. He preached the ordination sermon of his divinity student, Mr. Samuel Perley, at North Hampton, N. H., January 13, 1765. The sermon was printed. He has also left two sermons written in stenography, preached in 1760. In July 2, 1778, he attended Ezra Ross, at the gallows, in Worcester, and his church kept the day with fasting and prayer. Young Ross was a member of his society, and Ross' parents were members of his church.

He early adopted the following covenant:

"I take God, the Father, to be my chief good and highest end; I take God, the Son, to be my only Lord and Savior; I take God, the Holy Spirit, to be my Sanctifier, Teacher, Guide and Comforter; I take the truth of God to be my rule in all my actions; I take the people of God to be my people in all conditions. I do likewise devote and dedicate unto the Lord my whole self, all that I am, all that I have, and all that I can do. This I do deliberately, sincerely, freely and forever."

He was not only a fine scholar, but, we may judge, an apt teacher. Many students resorted to him for instructions; in modern phrase, his house was a boarding-school. He had students learning the useful sciences, fitting for college, and preparing for the ministry. A few names of them between 1752 and 1759 are preserved: Symonds, son of Capt. Baker, and Asa, son of Samuel Bradstreet; Timothy Andrews and Daniel Fuller; Thomas Stickney, Samuel Perley, Thomas Gowing, Moses Nichols and Samuel Porter. In September, 1757, he went to Cambridge with Asa Bradstreet. Mark Howe of his own parish studied with him six months in 1757, and gave six pounds in payment.

Mr. Lesslie was accustomed to write deeds, wills and other legal documents. He had a wide range of knowledge, and was practically useful to such of his people as sought his service or advice.

In July, 1753, he exchanged land with his parish for "land to set a house on." He built on it a few rods west of his meeting-house a two-story house and a barn. He sold his interest in the property September 13, 1780. The house was burned some dozen years ago; the barn is still standing.

He was a man of mental strength, of studious habits, of correct sentiments, of strict integrity, of conscientious action, was a fine scholar and enjoyed the confidence of the people. He had decided orthodox views, and was a pious and learned minister.

He married, October 26, 1756, Hephzibah Burpee, youngest daughter of his junior deacon. She joined the church June 25, 1756. Their children were



George, David, James, Jonathan, William, Hephzibah, Joseph and Mehitable. This family left Linebrook March 6, 1780, and was nine days making the journey of eighty miles, there being at that time no roads worthy the name. Their privations the first year were great, provisions were obtainable only at a distance of thirty or forty miles. Their first winter was unusually long, a burden of snow lasting from October till late the next spring. Of the people's cattle twenty-seven died of starvation. They lost their only cow, and were the while without salt, a bushel of which in the spring cost five dollars. The society observed a day of fasting and prayer in view of the dismal prospect.

Mr. Lesslie was installed at Washington, July 12, 1780, in a barn belonging to John Safford, his house of worship not being completed till 1789. His salary was fifty-five pounds, payable in eatables and wearing apparel, and his settlement was two hundred acres of land "to him and his heirs forever." He died September 11, 1800, at the age of seventy-two years.

6. *Inter-pastorate.*—During this period of nine years the records are very unsatisfactory. In 1780 Rev. Joseph Motley supplied; in 1783 Rev. Joshua Spaulding who, by vote, March 31st, was requested to "draft rules for the government of the church on the basis of the Cambridge platform; in 1785, Mr. Ebenezer Cleaves supplied. Each one was called to settle.

7. *Second Pastorate.*—REV. GILBERT TENNENT WILLIAMS was invited, December 23, 1788, to preach here six months, and February 18, 1789, the church called him to the pastorate. He was ordained and installed, August 5, 1789, when the membership was nine males and fifteen females. His salary was one hundred pounds lawful money. He lived in the house formerly owned and occupied by Mr. Lesslie. Eight members were added during his pastorate. The society was small and unable to give him adequate support, and April 19, 1813, according to advice of council, dismissed him from pastorate and membership. His farewell discourse, which was printed, was preached May 2, 1813.

He was well armed with "the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God;" was a plain and easy writer; was a man of sound orthodoxy, of pure motives, of lovely temper, of sterling integrity, of deep piety, and an earnest laborer for the common good.

He was son of Rev. Simon Williams, of Windham, N. H., born at Fagg's Manor, Pa., October 8, 1761. He graduated at Dartmouth College, 1784, and studied for the ministry with Rev. John Murray, of Newburyport.

He was installed at West Newbury First Church, June 1, 1814, and labored till a paralytic shock unfitted him for parochial duties. He was dismissed September 26, 1821, and died at Farmington, September 24, 1824.

His wife was Martha Morrison, of Windham, N. H. She left this church, May 25, 1814, and in 1834 resided in Boston. Their children's names and births in Linebrook were: Simon Tennent, 1790; Martha, 1792; Samuel Morrison, 1794; John Adams, 1799; Constant Floyd, 1802.

8. *Inter-pastorate.*—From this time to 1860 this church was without a pastor. It was a period of decay, darkness and trial resulting in a new lease of life. From 1829 the society had pecuniary aid from the Domestic Missionary Society. In 1814, when the membership was only one male and three females, an effort was made to establish a Baptist church. The faction called a *quasi* parish meeting and voted to relinquish the church to the new society every alternate Sabbath. The Congregational Society held to their purpose, REV. JOSEPH EMERSON, of the Byfield Female Seminary, supplied, and the effort was baffled. In 1819 the parish voted to occupy the church to the exclusion of the Baptist brothers. This action augmented the strife, deepened the bitterness, and bandied threats; but legal advice showed that "possession was nine points of the law," and wisdom brought in peace. Rev. Joseph Emerson, in the kindness of his heart, was very serviceable to this society during his four years at Byfield, from 1818.

During these years was the dark period. The society had preaching but part of the time, till 1824, when REV. DAVID TULLAR became the stated supply. In 1818 Deacon Foster died, at the age of eighty-two years; September 3, 1819, Mrs. Martha Perley died, aged eighty years and ten months, and October 8 (6), 1831, Mrs. Mehitable Chapman died, aged eighty-five years. Mrs. Chapman was lame and unable to get about, so Mrs. Ruth Conant was practically alone in the church from 1819 to 1826, when three males and two females joined. Between 1826 and 1831, when, by reason of age and infirmity, Mr. Tullar retired, eight males and nine females became members. The membership, January 1, 1829, was four males and five females. A particular notice of this truly good man belongs to Rowley history, and we will only remark that he was a judicious and faithful undershepherd. He purchased half of the Joseph Holt farm of William P. Kimball, December 14, 1825, and sold it to Jeremiah Ellsworth, December 31, 1835.

REV. MOSES WELCH took charge of this church January 1, 1831, and labored with success. Four males and five females were added in that year, two males and four females the next year, and three females in 1833 and 1834. The membership in 1833 was thirty-four.

Mr. Welch was born in Plaistow, N. H., in 1784, and was son of Colonel Joseph Welch, a Revolutionary patriot. He was a member of the first class of the Bangor Theological Seminary. While there he was licensed a missionary in that State, where he labored several years. He thence came to Amesbury,



where he became a stated supply for five years. Then he returned home to Plaistow, where he was installed and continued five years more. His people were devotedly attached to him, but ill health forced his resignation. Before coming here he preached awhile on Cape Ann, that the climate might help his complaint. His salary here was \$300. Our older people remember him with affection.

REV. JOHN P. TYLER came here probably in the fall of 1834. He continued through the winter; a schism resulted.

REV. JAMES W. SHEPHERD followed. He proved a physician, indeed. After service, May 24, 1835, he asked the church to remain. The question of the schism was discussed, and the 30th instant was agreed upon as a day of fasting and prayer. The day was duly observed and the church voted a Public Confession, on the first Sabbath in June, when accordingly all but two males and one female stood forth in and made public confession." In 1835 three males and four females became members.

REV. SAMUEL HARRIS was the stated supply in 1836. In this year eight males and one female joined. Mr. Harris' father, Deacon Jacob, was a native of this town and born in 1741. Samuel studied divinity with Rev. Seth Payson, D.D. (1809), of Ringe, N. H. He was ordained and installed at Windham, N. H., in 1805. He lost the use of his voice, and was dismissed in 1826, after a long and useful pastorate. A partial recovery permitted a limited parochial service, and he preached in several places, including this parish. He died at Windham September 5, 1848, aged seventy-four years. He had twelve children; ten were learned, influential and useful citizens; five of the six sons were professionally educated.

REV. MOSES DOW was born in Atkinson, N. H., February 4, 1771. He studied in part at the Atkinson Academy, and prepared to enter Dartmouth College. He studied divinity with Rev. Jonathan French, of Andover. He married Miss Hannah Knight, of Atkinson, and had two daughters and one son, who died at the ages of forty-one, forty and forty-four respectively.

He was settled over the First Church, York, Maine, November 9, 1815. Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth, of Danvers, preached the installing sermon, and said,—"We are not strangers to Mr. Dow. We have long known him. We have loved and esteemed him. We believe him to be an able and faithful, a discreet and devoted minister of Christ." He was dismissed in 1829, and he removed to Hampton Falls, N. H., "where he supplied the pulpit, and also in the adjoining town of Kensington." In the spring of 1833 he removed to Plaistow, N. H., and preached in several pulpits, including this. He died at Plaistow, of paralysis, May 9, 1837.

REV. FRANCIS WELCH was the stated supply from 1838 to 1842. He was son of Joseph Welch, a

farmer, of Hampstead, N. H., where he was born March 30, 1805. Rev. Moses Welch above and Rev. Francis Welch, of Amesbury, were his uncles, and sons of Joseph Welch, of Plaistow, who was a colonel in the Revolution. They were lineal descendants of Philip Welch, who was kidnapped in Ireland, and sold in Ipswich as a slave for twenty-nine pounds in corn or cattle in 1654; and Samuel Welch, of Bow, N. H., who was a grandson of Philip, and who died at the age of one hundred and twelve years and seven months, was Rev. Moses' great-uncle.

Francis studied at the Hampton Academy and in Bowdoin College. He was approved a minister by the Haverhill Association May 15, 1833. He preached at Brentwood, N. H., where he was ordained, at Perry, Maine, and in this pulpit. He has for many years resided upon his farm in Topsfield. He married, April 4, 1839, Miss Harriet Atwood Conant, daughter of William, Esq., and Mrs. Ruth Conant, of this parish. She was born March 9, 1818, and died at Topsfield October 22, 1886. She had ten children; nine survive her, one of whom is a lawyer in St. Paul, Minn.

In 1838 and 1839 six males and four females became members, which made the membership between forty and fifty; from 1840 to 1843, inclusive, one male and five females.

REV. JACOB COGGIN followed and continued till 1848. He preached the last sermon in the old meeting-house, and also the dedicatory sermon in the new house, Rev. Isaac Braman making the prayer.

Mr. Coggin was born in Woburn September 5, 1781, to Jacob Coggin, who graduated at Harvard College in 1761, and became a teacher by profession, though he sometimes preached. Jacob, the son, graduated at Harvard College in 1803, studied divinity with his pastor, Rev. Joseph Chickering, of Woburn, and was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church in Tewksbury October 22, 1806, and continued in that relation till his death, serving the last years as senior pastor.

He represented his town in the State Legislature two successive years; he was a member of the convention called to revise the State Constitution in 1853; he was a Presidential elector in 1852; was an inspector of the State Almshouse from its institution, and the chaplain there till his death, from congestion of the lungs, December 12, 1854, at the age of seventy-three.

Mr. Coggin was one of the acceptable preachers of his day, sound in doctrine and faithful in its presentation. He was a careful, wise, social and beloved pastor. He was the author of the Ladies' Benevolent Society here, the fruit of whose earnest, meritorious work furnished the new church in 1848—a society which, after some years' relapse, was revived in the acting pastorate of Rev. Joseph W. Healy. The writer, then a mere lad, now well remembers the tall, erect, manly form of that servant of God, as he

ascended the pulpit stairs, and his polite and genial manner in his visits. His labors here covered a period of some three or four years and were blessed. In the years 1840 to 1843, inclusive, one male and five females became members, and from 1844 to 1852, inclusive, eight males and sixteen females.

REV. ELIPHALET BIRCHARD was the first minister to occupy the new church edifice. He preached here while an undergraduate at the Andover Theological Seminary, and, after completing his course there, became the stated supply here. He was born in Lebanon, Conn., January 21, 1812, and died there September 20, 1854. He was always an invalid; he called his affliction *rheumatism*, but it ended in consumption. He was a great sufferer, but patient and hopeful. His parents were Ariel and Abigail-Metcalf Birchard. He had a brother, Rev. William Metcalf Birchard, born February 14, 1810, died March 20, 1883, and a sister, Abbie Correlia. He graduated at Harvard in 1843. This church voted February 24, 1849, to call him to settle on a salary of four hundred dollars. He did not accept. He drafted a government for the Church, which was adopted May 28, 1849. In 1850 Rev. James Gallagher, a revivalist, labored with Mr. Birchard, and there was a very general awakening. Many indulged a hope; but only four joined the Church. In 1850 there was a membership of fifty-six. He remained here about three years, and afterwards preached at Andover, Conn. In the pulpit he was serious, awakening and effective, and left a very desirable impression upon the people; he was excellent in visitations, a reliable spiritual counselor and a firm friend.

REV. WILLARD HOLBROOK and his wife joined this church April 14, 1851. He began to preach here some time before, and remained about four years. A sketch of him properly belongs to Rowley history. He was one of those noble spiritual workers whom this church must hold in grateful remembrance,—Tullar, Holbrook, Kimball and Dana,—names to be respected everywhere, but here to be revered for their labors, advice and prayers.

REV. JOSEPH WARREN HEALY, M.D., D.D., LL.D., was, by this church, made a life-member of the Foreign Missionary Society, April 10, 1856. He then had been preaching here probably about six months. He was at the time the enterprising, able and popular principal of the Topsfield Academy. This church under his guidance enjoyed a period of harmony and prosperity, and grew in numbers and healthful strength. He remained about three years.

He was born in South Hero, Vt., April 11, 1827, to Nathaniel and Jane-Tabor Healy. He fitted for college at Newbury Seminary and Bradford Academy, Vt. He graduated at the University of Vermont in 1852. He was principal of the Bath Academy, N. H., and afterwards of the Topsfield Academy. He attended lectures at the Andover Theological Sem-

nary, and was licensed by the Salem Congregational Association. After supplying this pulpit, he preached at Royalston, Gardner and Walpole. Then removing to the West, he preached six years in Milwaukee, and four years in Chicago. While there he was called to the pastorate and presidency of Straight University, in New Orleans, La. There he attended medical lectures and received the medical degree. In 1871, Olivet College, Mich., conferred upon him the doctorate of divinity. The same year he was delegated by the American Missionary Association to visit Great Britain, and organize an auxiliary to that society. He resided in London as its secretary for three years. While abroad, he visited the Continent and the East, and lectured in the principal cities of Great Britain. Returning home he was elected professor of English literature and pastoral theology in Maryville College, Tenn. Preferring an active pastorate to the routine of professional life, he returned to Milwaukee in 1878. The death of his wife prostrated him. Subsequently he went to California for his health. In 1853 he was a pastor in Oakland, Cal. Upon the incorporation of Sierra-Madre College, at Pasadena, in 1884, he was selected as the president, a position which he now holds.

The writer remembers him at the academy with sentiments of high esteem. He excelled as a teacher, and readily won the regard of his pupils. He was an exemplary man—one of nature's noblemen. He was magic to untie purse-strings. Several societies regard him as their pecuniary savior. He has risen by his own exertions, and achieved a grand success. His titles are emblems of his character and attainments.

He married, October 8, 1848, Miss Jane Hibbard Clark, who was born in Groton, Vt., May 12, 1830. She studied in the Female Seminary, Burlington, Vt., taught with her husband at Bath and Topsfield, and adorned the place of a pastor's wife wherever he labored. She died at her mother's home in Corinth, Vt., September 12, 1880, beloved and lamented, a pure and gentle spirit. Their children,—Jane Corinne, born March 6th, and died October 8, 1850; and Frank Joseph, born March 4, 1857, studied at Olivet College and London Universities, admitted to the bar, 1878, and is now editor of *The Gazette*, Fort Wayne, Ind.

9. *Third Pastorate.*—REV. EZEKIEL DOW was settled. He was born April 9, 1807. His father was James, of Warren, N. H., and was born in Plaistow, April 23, 1775; his mother was Hannah Merrill, and was born in Warren, May 24, 1781. Ezekiel was the second son of five children, four of whom were sons and became farmers. He studied at the Academy, Haverhill, N. H. He commenced preaching as a Universalist, but early in his ministry changed in his belief, and studied in the Theological Seminary, Andover, for the Congregational pulpit. He preached in Massachusetts, at South Weyfleet, Monument, Chiltonville, Linebrook, Huntington and Becket, where



he closed his labors in 1880. He was settled over this society December 25, 1860, and dismissed November 14, 1866. He was a good-hearted man, socially peculiar yet agreeable, took good care of his pastorate, had a good mind, never overworked, and we may say was fairly successful.

10. *Fourth Pastorate.*—REV. ALVAN MILLS RICHARDSON was born in Woburn—now Winchester—April 30, 1833, to Gilbert and Hannah-Davis Richardson. He had four brothers—Gilbert Brainard, who died February 20, 1883, and Martin Luther—who were ministers, and two sisters. He fitted for college at the Warren and Phillips Academies, Woburn and Andover, and graduated at Amherst College in 1862. He entered the service against the Rebellion for nine months in September, 1862, a member of the band of the Forty-fifth Massachusetts Regiment. He graduated at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1866. He was ordained and installed here November 14th, the same year. He tendered his resignation October 10, 1870, and his pastorate closed when his successor was installed, May 3, 1871. (He left the church with a membership of fifty-nine). Part of 1871 and 1872 he managed for the Lincoln County, Me., Bible Society, and since then has superintended his widowed mother's farm. He was a pious man, scrupulously exact, conscientious, studious, a good writer, but an unsuccessful preacher. He has never married.

11. *Fifth Pastorate.*—REV. BENJAMIN HOWE was a native of this parish, and born November 4, 1807. His parents were Joseph and Mehitable-Stickney Howe. He was eighth in a family of ten children. When a mere lad, he was thrown upon his own resources. Any acquisition he made was wholly his. He commenced his studies at the Topsfield Academy, shortly after the founding of that institution, in 1828, and completed his preparatory course at the Meriden Academy, N. H. He graduated at Amherst College in 1838, and at the Theological Seminary, Hartford, Conn., in 1841.

He married, May 31, 1842, Miss Waty Williams Tyler, born August 27, 1814, a lady of excellent worth, of a gentle and godly spirit. They had two children: Homer, who was born August 16, 1848, and Cecil Putnam, who was born November 8, 1857, and died February 13, 1866.

He joined the Topsfield Church November 7, 1830, and was transferred to the Seminary August 30, 1839. He was acting pastor at Coventry, Conn., 1833-34, and at Wells, Me., 1844, till he was ordained and installed there November 5, 1845. He was dismissed November 5, 1849; was teacher and preacher at Brooklyn, Conn., 1850-55; acting pastor at Meridith, N. Y., 1855-60; without charge, N. H., 1860-66; acting pastor at Hudson, N. H., 1866-67; at Lempster, N. H., 1867-70; and was settled here May 3, 1871. His death October 18, 1883, closed his pastorate. His walk was exemplary. His service for the Master was sincere; he had an exalted and abiding

faith and an earnest love for souls committed to his care. Frowning upon sin as such with the severest rebuke, but charitable to the erring, he was a man of noble and generous impulses. As a neighbor, he was kind, obliging and discreet; as a citizen, intelligent and declared; in his home, gentle and kind, loving and loved. His life, as we knew it, was a perpetual benediction. Taking into the account the severity of his teacher, *Experience*, the quick impulses of his nature, his wise discretion and his godly life, he stands before us a massive character, a grand and noble manhood, commanding our respect and winning our love. He rests in Harmony Cemetery, Georgetown; his widow is living at Hudson, N. H.

12. *Sixth Pastorate.*—REV. EDWARD HOLMAN BRIGGS was installed December 6, 1883. He was born in Boston Highlands, March 8, 1851, to George Washington and Anna Matilda-Ross Briggs. In the autumn of 1857, after the death of his father, he went to live in Columbus, Ga., with his paternal aunt, the wife of John Johnson, Esq., Judge of Probate. His preparatory studies were pursued with a private teacher. He entered the Sophomore class, half-advanced, in June, 1869, in the University of Georgia, at Athens, and graduated there in 1871. His scholarship was excellent. He matriculated at the Presbyterian Theological Seminary, Columbia, S. C., in September, 1871, and completed the course in April, 1874. He was licensed to preach April 19, 1874, by the Presbytery of Macon, Ga. He supplied at Whiting and Newton several months, and at Mount Tabor and Smyrna about two years. In January, 1877, he went to Palatka, Fla., where he was installed July 8, 1877. The pastorate was dissolved in November, 1880. He then labored a few months at Memphis, Tenn., a work he was forced to relinquish, being stricken with malaria. In November, 1881, he resumed his ministerial labors, and served in Good-Water, Hatchet-Creek, Hackneyville and Nixbury, Ala., till the close of 1882. Early in 1883 he returned to Massachusetts, and had no regular ministerial work till his settlement here. In his labors he appears to have been fairly successful. He began to preach here in mid-summer. The circumstances of his settlement were very favorable. The death of our venerable pastor, Mr. Howe, and the memorial service of him left a marked seriousness upon the minds and hearts of all. An awakening among the young was already observed, and in January following his settlement, some fifteen, it was said, were ready for church membership. Eleven joined the first Sabbath, and several others soon after. Such haste against the wishes of older and official members was not wise. From a remarkable unity in his favor at first, he held till there was a remarkable unity against him at last. The church was in a ferment for nearly three years—from the Sabbath he administered the sacrament, of which he did not partake, till he arbitrarily refused to administer it at all,—a usurpation,



which apparently forced his resignation November 1, 1886, to take effect as soon as his successor could be installed.

Mr. Briggs may purpose well, but he reads books better than men, and he is wedded firmly to the Presbyterian Church polity; he will, therefore, succeed better as a Presbyterian clergyman or as a business man, than as a Congregational pastor.

19. Seventh Pastorate.—REV. WILLIAM PENN ALPERT, the present incumbent, was born in Dorchester, July 11, 1838. His parents were William A., M.D. and lecturer, and Phebe L.-Bronson Alcott, who was a student in the Ipswich Academy when Misses Grant and Lyon taught. They are natives of Wolcott, Conn.

The son graduated at Williams' College in 1861, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1865. After his college graduation he taught in the Pittsburgh Female College, Pennsylvania, and in 1867 was elected tutor in Williams' College, and taught chemistry and mineralogy. As minister, he was seven years pastor of the Congregational Church, in North Greenwich, Conn., and two years in the First Church in Boxford. He preached for short periods at Barton Landing, Vt., and at West Newbury, this State. In 1877, he traveled extensively with Dr. Philip Schaff, in the Orient—Palestine, the Sinaitic region and Egypt—and Southern Europe.

During his pastorates, he was accustomed to make scientific studies his relaxation. The practice gradually conducted him into correspondence for the press, and to authorship. His contributions to the press have been principally upon temperance and scientific subjects. He edited the Natural History department of Dr. Schaff's Bible Dictionary, and, as a member of the Lowell Hebrew Club, is interested in the publication of a *de novo* translation of the Book of Esther, with notes and excursuses, exhibiting much careful and patient philological and scientific research and study,—to which he was a liberal contributor. He is now at work upon the Books of Ezra and Nehemiah, to be presented uniform in matter and size with Esther.

He married, in 1868, Sarah Jane Merrill, daughter of Rev. David Merrill, of Peacham, Vt. She died in 1876, and he married, two years later, Lucy R. Davis, daughter of Andrew Davis, Esq., of Boston. He has three children in "the better land," and two, a daughter by the first wife and a son by the second wife, living.

His service began here the last Sabbath in September, 1886, and his installation took place May 4th following.

The notice of this church would be very incomplete without reference to the society's liberal benefactor, JOHN PERLEY, Esq. He died May 11, 1860, and by will placed in trust seven thousand dollars, as a perpetual fund, "the income of which shall be paid to the Orthodox Congregational Society, Linebrook

Parish in the towns of Ipswich and Rowley, for the support of preaching and a Sabbath-school in said society annually, while said society has a settled minister."

Mr. Perley was born September 3, 1782, in Rowley-Linebrook. Becoming of age, he went to live with his uncle (afterwards deacon) Philemon Foster, in Ipswich-Linebrook, where he plied his trade as cordwainer. Upon "breaking ground" for the Newburyport turnpike, he opened a shop in connection with his trade. The enterprise was a success, and he there laid the foundation of his subsequent wealth. He never married. He devoted most of his estate to public benefactions, eleemosynary, educational and religious, among which was an annuity fund of three thousand five hundred dollars for the worthy poor of Georgetown, another of seven thousand dollars for the Orthodox Congregational Society, where he worshipped, and another—the residue of his estate—to found a free school in Georgetown.

This man's body has long since returned to its mother earth, but he still lives. So long as wealth has value, and learning is sought, and charity is kind, his name will be mentioned with praise, and his life will be fresh and fruitful as the dew, and redolent as the lily upon the bosom of crystal waters.

THE BAPTIST SOCIETY.

"This society," says Mr. Felt, "was formed in February, 1806. Their first preacher was Rev. H. Pottle. They occupied the building formerly a woolen factory. Their church contained sixty-eight communicants in 1813. A secession took place from the church, because discipline was not exercised, June 4, 1816. This secession was justified by a council July 16th. The seceders formed themselves into a new church August 27th, and met in a building on High Street, opposite North Main. They were incorporated "The First Baptist Society in Ipswich," June 16, 1817.

The names of the incorporators were Samuel, Samuel G. and Timothy Appleton, Samuel and Robert Stone, Josiah Symonds and Charles Simonds, William Dennis, Frederick Mitchell, Jacob M. Farnum, Daniel, Jr., and Joseph L. Ross, James Caldwell, Moses Graves, John Lord, Daniel W. Low, Nathan Perkins, Major Woodbury, Simeon Spafford, Amos Jones, Francis, John, Levi and Joseph Hovey. William Taylor was their first minister. He continued with them till August, 1818, and took his dismissal, because his people were few and unable to support him. When he left the church, it contained thirty members. Thus, destitute of one to guide them, they continued to hold meetings and have the sacrament administered occasionally till August, 1823. In the course of this year they dissolved. The original Society of Baptists continued, after the secession from them, only one year."



PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH AND PARISH.

1. *First Rectorship.*—The Parish was organized in 1867. The service of the church had been regularly maintained from 1861, and occasional services had been held for some time before that date. REV. HENRY WALL was the first rector, and occupied the office about two months.

2. *Second Rectorship.*—REV. BENJAMIN ROWLEY GIFFORD, the second rector, was born in Falmouth, Mass., October 18, 1819. His parents were Braddock and Mary. He received his education at the Falmouth Academy and Amherst College, leaving the latter institution in 1840. He subsequently went to St. Francesville, La., and pursued his theological studies under the direction of the Rev. Daniel Lewis, D.D., rector of the church in that town. He was ordained to the ministry of the Episcopal Church in Davenport, Iowa, August 28, 1857, by the Right Rev. Henry W. Lee, bishop of that diocese. He was rector of parishes in Cedar Falls, Waterloo, Mount Pleasant and Ottumwa, in Iowa, and in Kewanee, in Illinois. Early in 1866, he returned to Massachusetts, and then traveled extensively in Europe and the East, visiting Palestine, Egypt, Turkey, Greece and other countries, returning the following spring.

He entered the rectorship of this church November 3d of the same year. The services were then held in the *Damon Hall*; subsequently they were held in the *Town Hall*. In 1869, his second year here, October 26th, the corner-stone of the present church edifice was laid, by the Right Rev. Manton Eastburn, bishop of the diocese of Massachusetts, in the presence of a large audience of the people, the bishop making the address.

In the spring of 1870, before the edifice was completed, Mr. Gifford resigned, and in June, 1871, entered the rectorship of Trinity Church, Bridgewater. In 1873 he visited England, and there, September 9th, he married Miss Mary M. Hewett, in All-Saints' Church, near Taunton, Somersetshire. The following March he returned to America and resumed the charge of the Parish of Bridgewater. His connection with the church continued till the next spring, when he went to Natick and became rector of St. Paul's Church there. He continued in Natick five years, when in May, 1880, mainly owing to ill-health, he resigned, deciding not to take regular charge of another parish. In 1882 he and his wife spent the summer in England, when he preached in various parts of the country. Returning to America he took up his permanent residence in Wood's Hollow, a famous summer resort in his native town. In the meantime he has quite frequently officiated in the local church and the neighboring parishes. After Mr. Gifford's resignation, there was a vacancy in the rectorship till 1873, when Rev. B. F. Newton was elected.

3. *Third Rectorship.*—REV. BENJAMIN FRANKLIN NEWTON. He was born October 20th, 1846, in St. Albans, Vt. He graduated at Hillsdale College,

Hillsdale, Mich., in 1870; at the Union Seminary, New York, in 1873; and at the Episcopal Theological School, Cambridge, Mass., in 1874.

This was his first rectorship, and he continued in it till 1877, when he removed to St. James' Church, Texarkana, Texas, whence, in 1881, he went to the rectorship of the Church of the Good Shepherd, St. Louis, Mo., where he is at present engaged.

While he was here the church made steady and substantial progress, increasing in numbers and efficiency, and doing a large amount of missionary and benevolent work. Some progress was made upon the church edifice.

4. *Fourth Rectorship.*—REV. REUBEN KIDNER succeeded, and entered upon the duties of the office January 1, 1878. Mr. Kidner is a son of James Frederic Kidner, merchant, of Bristol, England, and was born March 18, 1848. He graduated at Harvard College in 1875, and at the Episcopal Theological School, Cambridge, in 1878. He resigned the rectorship February 1, 1882, to become assistant minister of Trinity Church, Boston, where he is in active service. He married July 3, 1878, Miss Katharine Clinton Simonds, and has one son, Frederic Clinton. Mr. Kidner's successor is the present incumbent.

5. *Fifth Rectorship.*—REV. JULIUS W. ATWOOD, who entered upon the duties of this office in 1882, was born in Salisbury, Vt., June 27th, 1857. He graduated at Middlebury College in 1878, where in course he took the Master's degree; studied a year in the General Theological Seminary in New York City and in 1879 entered the middle class of the Episcopal Theological School, Cambridge. In 1880-81 he spent a year in study and travel in Europe and the East. Returning in the latter year, he resumed his studies in the Cambridge Theological School, where he graduated in 1882 with the degree of B.D. Shortly after graduation, the same year, he was elected to the rectorship of this church.

In 1883, during Mr. Atwood's rectorship, the church edifice was completed, and was consecrated as the *Ascension Memorial Church*, in memory of the generous contributions and personal efforts of the Rev. John Cotton Smith, D.D., of New York City, who was the principal donor of funds and who, from the organization of the parish, was a warm and devoted friend of the church. Dr. Smith and Joseph E. Bommer, M.D., might be considered the founders of the society and church. Some one has given a very just and vivid description of the edifice:

"It stands forth in all its architectural beauty unadorned by tree or paling. Within it has all the richness and refinement of the costly cathedrals of the old world, which it resembles so much in miniature. Nothing flashy or gaudy can be seen. Its very richness is softened to harmonize with the spirituality of its creations. It has none of the unfinished look which so often mars otherwise elegant church edifices. Its very coloring seems to give a restful, quiet atmosphere to the place. It contains two memorial windows, one given by the citizens of Ipswich to the late Joseph E. Bommer, who did so much in creating and fostering the Episcopal Church in Ipswich. On the lectern we noticed a large Bible presented to the church by his wife, who plays the organ, and who takes



...rest in the church. The other memorial window is dedicated to the daughter of Dr. and Mrs. John Cotton Smith, to whose generosity is indebted for one of the most beautiful church edifices ever have seen in this country. The pulpit used by the late Dr. ... in his church in New York was sent to the Ipswich Church after ... Over the door is a tablet stating that the church is dedicated to the memory of Dr. Smith."

The church organizations are: The Benefit, the Church-Aid, the St. Agnes Societies, the St. Andrew's Guild and the Children's Mission Circle. The officers, teachers and scholars of the Sunday school number about one hundred and twenty-five. The wardens are E. H. Martin and C. S. Tuckerman, Esquires. The society enjoys a harmony of sentiment and a unity of purpose, and has a hopeful future.

6. One of the founders of the church and society was JOSEPH EDWARD BOMER, M.D. Dr. Bomer was born in Beverly, March 14, 1819. His father, of French descent, went, in early life, to Windham, N. H. At the age of twenty-eight years, he removed to Beverly, where he married Abigail Friend, who was descended from the old Puritan stock. He was a farmer and highly respected. He had a family of nine children. Joseph E. was the fifth son. He had a delicate constitution, was unequal to farm labor, was fond of books, and so was devoted to intellectual pursuits. He was a Beverly scholar till he was fourteen years old; then he became a student in the Topsfield Academy, under principal Edmund F. Slafter, who became very much interested in him and soon engaged him as assistant teacher. Leaving Topsfield, he studied in the Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H., and afterwards in the Phillips Academy, Andover. Having completed his course at Andover, he entered Harvard Medical School, from which he graduated in 1848. In February, 1849, he settled in this town, a physician of the old-school of practice. His office was next to the Agawam House, and near the residence of Dr. Thomas Manning, then the oldest and most skillful physician of the town, through whose influence and kindness the young physician soon secured a large and lucrative practice.

In October, 1850, Dr. Bomer married Miss Caroline Elizabeth Hayes, of Gloucester. Soon after this event, Dr. Manning, feeling the burden and cares of business and professional life weighing upon him, and wishing on that account to retire, invited our young doctor to reside with him and assume his practice. Dr. Bomer accepted and lived in reciprocal confidence, till the death of his aged friend.

Dr. Bomer was physician to the House of Correction and the Insane Asylum from 1850 till his death. He was examining surgeon, of the Eastern District, of those who enlisted for the War of the Rebellion, during which time he attended professionally the families of the soldiers free of charge. He was placed upon the school board and served while he lived. A high school graduate gives the following estimate of him: "I refer to him who was so respected and be-

loved among us. The physician who was always welcome in the schools, and for his ready tact in asking questions and eliciting answers, as well as pleasant manner, won the favor of the schools." In politics, in early life, he was a "Webster Whig." He believed in freedom of thought, and was courteous and liberal to all who differed from him in politics or religion. In the latter he was a firm Episcopalian, and an earnest worker. Some years before his day, the service of that church had been started, but failed to succeed for want of interest and funds. Through the doctor's influence and perseverance it was again revived. Dr. Bomer and John F. Clotney, of Marblehead, then a resident and merchant here, secured, through the kindness of the trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church, the use of their church edifice, and then invited the Rev. Robert F. Chase, of Danvers, to officiate. He preached to an audience of devout listeners, and from that service sprung the present church. The doctor continued a firm supporter of the church and society through life. He was a devout, genial, sympathetic and exemplary Christian. He was, too, eminently a public-spirited citizen, and among the foremost in all works of public utility. He bore an unblemished reputation.

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH AND SOCIETY.

Origin.—This denomination of Christians arose in England, in 1729, and derived their name from the exact regularity of their lives, a very pleasing commentary upon their character. In 1741 they divided into two parties, under George Whitefield and John Wesley. The former adopted the views of John Calvin; the latter of Arminius. The followers of Arminius compose the great body of Methodists in this country and Great Britain. In 1830 seceders from the Wesleyan Methodists established a government and discipline of their own and styled themselves "The Methodist Protestant Church." This church differs from its parent church only in certain matters of discipline, particularly those relating to Episcopacy and the manner of constituting the general conference.

Methodism first came into this country with Rev. George Whitefield in 1739, and was an important factor in the deep and extensive revivals that soon after followed. Its power was first felt in Ipswich when that eloquent divine electrified the populace from "the Whitefield-Pulpit" rock near the First Church, and "Pulpit Rock," in Linebrook.

Methodism, as now taught, "was first introduced in New England, in 1789," says Miss Archer, in her excellent and serviceable sketch of this church, and "in Ipswich in the year 1790, by Rev. Jesse Lee, who was sent by the venerable Bishop Francis Asbury, still active and ardent in the cause." The sketch relates that the first convert, by the preaching of Mr. Lee, was the mother of Gen. James Appleton. She



fixed the date August 12, 1791, and ever after remembered the day with adoring gratitude.

Mr. Felt, in 1834, wrote: "The remainder of the first Baptist Society and some Methodists began to have preaching of the latter denomination in 1817" but Miss Archer, discriminating in the call and the doctrine, says "no other Methodist preacher labored in Ipswich till October, 1821, when REV. AARON WAIT (1821-25 or '26) came." His coming was fortuitous. Passing through the town on business, on Saturday, the 6th, he stopped at the "Treadwell tavern." He was invited to preach, and the next day addressed three audiences in "the old woolen factory," in which the Baptists had worshipped, and which stood north of and contiguous to the famous Choate Bridge. In November, he came again and preached three times. In four weeks he came again, and again preached three times, and held a prayer-meeting, when five inquirers came forward. On Christmas, he preached twice, and held an inquiry-meeting. Two weeks later he made a fourth visit, and found the work he had done was "good." Soon after he removed his family to Ipswich, but, like Paul, "coveting no man's silver," he worked at shoe-making during the week and preached on Sundays. Mr. Charles Dodge was Mr. Wait's first convert.

The seed thus sown by Mr. Wait budded and blossomed in the spring of 1822, and was named THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL SOCIETY. The first class-meeting was held in the dwelling of Mr. Aaron Wallace, afterwards of Mr. Amos Jones, on South Main Street. It had twenty-two members, eight of whom came from the Baptists. Prayer-meetings were held in various parts of the town. The first love-feast was had with Capt. William Gould, in the Robbins house, on High Street, near the North Cemetery. The Sunday-school was organized in the summer of 1824, with three classes and twenty members, and Charles Dodge as Superintendent. The first meeting-house was begun in September, 1824, and dedicated the Christmas following, Rev. John Lindsey preaching the sermon. It was built, fifty by forty feet, with galleries, and cost, all finished, less than two thousand dollars, including two hundred and fifty dollars, the price of the land. It stood where now stands the residence of Mr. Robert Jordan. Within six months after this time, the society was called to mourn the deaths of Dr. John Manning, Aaron Treadwell, Sr. and Judge Sutton, three ardently active friends.

In 1825 Mr. Wait joined the New England Conference. Ipswich and Gloucester were made a circuit, and Rev. Aaron Wait and Rev. Aaron Josselyn were appointed Circuit preachers. The first Quarterly Conference for this circuit was held September, 1825, and there were present Rev. E. Hyde, Presiding Elder; Rev. Aaron Wait and Rev. Aaron Josselyn, Pastors; and Charles Dodge and Daniel B. Lord, of Ipswich, and Thomas Hillard, of Gloucester, Stewards.

Mr. Wait was a native of Malden, and was born September 24, 1799. He united with the church when quite young, and with the Conference in his twenty-sixth year. His appointments were to Ipswich, Gloucester, Wilbraham and Ludlow. About 1830 he retired, though he preached, more or less, till his death, September 1, 1864. His personal presence was good; he was an easy, pleasant speaker, had a fair pulpit ability and an unblemished Christian character.

REV. AARON JOSSELYN was born in Pembroke May 4, 1804. He entered the ministry August 9, 1825, and continued twenty years, but preached occasionally till age and infirmity disqualified him for pulpit labor. He was an ardent advocate of Anti-slavery, was a member of the Legislature three years, a justice of the peace fourteen years and held various town offices. He was thirty years a resident of Duxbury, but now resides with his daughter, in East Cambridge. This church had a steady growth during his ministry, and among the number added was Apollos Hale, afterwards Rev. The number returned for this circuit this year was forty-six.

1826. REV. NATHAN PAINE.—The number returned this year for this church was twenty-eight members. Mr. Paine was born in Burrellville, R. I., September 30, 1791. He was converted in his seventeenth year, and soon received a license to preach. He joined the New England Conference in 1815, and continued in active service till 1853, a period of thirty-eight years. In 1853 he took a superannuated relation, and removed to New Bedford, where he lived with his children, till his death, September 9, 1863. Says Rev. Dr. Allen: "He was remarkably cheerful, affectionate and unpretentious; he was wise in counsel, and of unswerving integrity. He was a true, earnest and faithful minister, and accomplished great good, though his pulpit ability was not of the highest order. Few ministers have lived of purer character, of nobler purpose, of more unselfish aims and of greater devotedness to their work. He was a noble specimen of ministerial purity and goodness. The closing years of his life were full of Christian joy and hope."

1828. REV. JOHN THOMPSON BURRELL.—Mr. Burrell was born in Lynn December 25, 1799, and he died in Chelsea September 20, 1885. He qualified for membership in the Conference under direction of pastors, while a local preacher, and entered when he was twenty-eight years old. This was his first pulpit, to which he was returned in 1833 and 1834. He preached in the *Methodist Episcopal Ministry* till 1850, then in the *Methodist Protestant Ministry*. His were among the best pulpits. Rev. J. L. Estey records him as a man "of fine presence, of gentlemanly bearing, of eloquent oratory and faithful instruction. He was, wherever he labored, beloved and successful." He is said to have been one of the most pleasing and talented men ever stationed here. 'The mem-



was returned for his first year number fifty-two, and the number returned for the two years is twenty probationers.

1829. REV. JOHN J. BLISS.—Mr. Bliss united with the Conference in 1826 or '27, and for about seven years was an earnest, active and successful minister. In 1834 he was excluded from the church, upon charges that may not have affected his character, and, it is thought, went West. He was a man of considerable ability, and had been highly esteemed by those who knew him.

His pastorate here was very successful. Rev. John N. Maffitt assisted and preached sixty successive nights. The religious interest was so great that for an entire week business was suspended, most of the stores were closed, the cotton-mills shut down for want of help, and people seemed bent on seeking "first the kingdom of God and his righteousness." The number returned for this year is two hundred.

1830. REV. JACOB SANBORN.—Mr. Sanborn entered the ministry in 1812, and continued fifty-five years. He died March 16, 1867, at the age of seventy-nine. During his pastorate a parsonage was built.

1831. REV. ENOCH MUDGE.—This man was the first native Methodist preacher in New England. He was born in Lynn June 23, 1776. He entered the New England Conference when seventeen, received Deacon's orders when nineteen, and Elder's when twenty. He continued in active service fifty-seven years. His fields of labor were chiefly in Maine. In Massachusetts he was a member of the convention to revise the State Constitution, and was two years a member of the Legislature.

He occupied this pulpit ten months and was called to the responsible charge of the Seaman's Chapel, New Bedford. He remained there as chaplain of the Port Society, abundant in labors and honored by all, till 1844, when failing health compelled him to seek repose. He went to his kindred at Lynn, where he died April 2, 1850. Enoch Redington Mudge, the famous Boston mill-agent, recently deceased, was his son.

1832. REV. EPAPHRAS KIBBY.—He served the church well, and there was a steady growth. He entered the ministry in 1798, and after a service of forty-three years, died, August 16, 1864, at the age of sixty-six years.

1833-34. REV. J. F. BURRELL.—This pastor is noticed in 1828, above.

1835. REV. NEWELL S. SPAULDING.—During this pastorate there was quite an extensive work of grace, and fifty probationers were received. Mr. Spaulding began to preach in 1822, and after a ministry of sixty-two years, died August 17, 1884, at the age of eighty-four years.

1836-37. REV. EDWARD MURPHY BEEBE.—During this pastorate the church edifice was enlarged at a cost of one thousand and forty dollars, and a bell

was purchased at a cost of three hundred dollars, raised by subscription. Mr. Beebe was in the ministry sixteen years. He died March 19, 1845, aged forty years.

1838-39. REV. JOEL KNIGHT.—Mr. Knight continued in the ministry thirteen years. While here forty probationers were received. He died August 13, 1843, at the age of thirty-nine years.

1840-41. REV. DANIEL WISE, D.D.—This church kept the 1st day of January, 1841, with fasting and prayer. It was the beginning of a very gracious revival. The following winter was also a season of refreshing. Eighty-eight were received on probation. Because of failing health, he resigned in March, 1842.

The doctor was born in Portsmouth, England, June 10, 1813. He was educated in the Portsmouth Grammar School, a classical institution, under the patronage of the dean and canons of Christ Church, Oxford. He removed to America in the summer of 1833. He received the Master's degree in 1849, and the doctorate in 1859, from the Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn. He was licensed to preach in 1834, ordained deacon in 1839, and elder in 1843. He has published two books, highly recommended: "Boy Travelers in Arabia," and "Our Missionary Heroes and Heroines." He resides in Englewood, N. J.

1842. REV. DANIEL WEBB.—During this pastorate a steady growth was maintained, and "a few valuable members were added to the church." "Twenty-five members withdrew and joined the 'Methodist Wesleyan Church in the United States.' Some of them soon returned." Mr. Webb was sixty-nine years in the ministry, and died March 19, 1867, aged eighty-nine years.

1843-44. REV. JOHN S. SPRINGER.—In this pastorate the church edifice was re-modeled, and a new pulpit constructed. The expense was about two hundred and fifty dollars. He joined the Conference in 1839, and for seven years was a very successful minister. In 1847, while stationed at Lowell, he withdrew from the church. It is thought he stood well in his Christian and moral character. He was a man of considerable ability, was popular, and filled some of the best pulpits in the Conference.

1845. REV. JOSEPH DENISON, D.D.—Though he left no special vestige of his service here, he was an able and learned man. He was born in Bernardston October 1, 1815. He entered Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, in 1833, and the sophomore class of the Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1837, graduating in 1840. He taught the languages in Amenia Seminary, Dutchess County, N. Y., three years; he spent about twelve years in the ministry, and in 1855 went to Kansas. He was one of the founders of the State Agricultural College, and was its president from 1863 to 1873, and was president of Baker University from 1874 to 1879. He received the doctorate from McKendree College. He is an



ardent and active Prohibitionist. He is now presiding elder of the Atchison District (Kansas) Conference, and resides in Atchison.

1846-47. REV. LORENZO R. THAYER.—During this time a vestry, fifty by forty feet, was built, in the rear of the church, at a cost of four hundred dollars, and about twenty probationers were received. He preached at the dedication of the new church edifice in 1860. He was born in Winchester, N. H., December 2, 1814. He studied for college in the Newbury Seminary, Vt., and in 1841 graduated at the Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn. He joined the New England Conference the same year. He was stationed at Lynn in 1848-49; is now in Newtonville.

1848. REV. STEPHEN CUSHING.—This pastorate was pleasant, and attended with much spiritual interest. Fifteen were received into the church. Mr. Cushing was born in Boston March 15, 1813. He was two years at Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, and took a partial course in the Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1832. He entered the New England Conference in June, 1833. He now resides in Boston.

1849. REV. CHARLES BAKER.—During this pastorate about thirty were received on trial. He was born in Scituate, R. I., April 7, 1798. He did not graduate. After a ministry of forty-three years, he died at Somerville, August 16, 1864, aged sixty-six years.

1850-51. REV. JAMES SHEPHERD.—During the first year of this pastorate the meeting-house was again enlarged, at a cost of seven hundred and fifty dollars. He preached twenty-two years. He died May 22, 1855, at the age of fifty-three years.

1852. REV. MOSES A. HOWE.—With Mr. Howe the New England Conference held its annual session. He died January 27, 1861, aged sixty-one years, after a successful ministry of twenty-two years.

1853-54. REV. JOHN WILLIAM DADMAN.—This was a period of great harmony, in the church and out of it. Mr. Dadman and Mr. Southgate made the first pulpit exchange between the Methodist and Congregational Churches, and the event marked a new era in Christian fellowship among the good people of the town. Mr. Dadman was born in Hubbardston, December 20, 1819. He entered Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, in 1840, and graduated in 1842. Indigent circumstances obliged him to forego a collegiate course, and he at once entered the ministry. He was licensed April 10, 1841, joined the Conference June 29, 1842, and was ordained elder May 3, 1846. His fields of labor have been Boston, Worcester, Lowell, Roxbury and the western part of the State. The last twenty-two years he has been chaplain and superintendent of schools in the city institutions, Deer Island, Boston. One of his children, Luella Jane, was born here June 30, 1853.

1855-56.—REV. JEREMIAH L. HANAFORD. At

this time there was another great outpouring of the Divine Spirit, and one hundred and fifty were received on trial, and Rev. George S. Noyes and Rev. F. G. Morris were among them. Mr. Hanaford was born June 7, 1824, at Northfield, Vt.

1857-58.—REV. WILLIAM CARPENTER HIGH. Mr. High took up the good work and labored earnestly and well. He baptized about sixty. He was born in Waitsfield, Vt., March 30, 1822. He was educated at the Montpelier Academy and the Newbury Seminary. His first appointment was at Danvers (now Peabody). He took a supernumerary relation, and has since resided in Somerville. Mr. High conducted several large revivals, and was generally considered a successful minister.

1859-60.—REV. C. L. EASTMAN. At this time the present house of worship was built, and, marvelous to relate, not a dollar was pledged. The trustees became personally responsible for it. Their names were Joseph Wait, Ezekiel Peabody, Oliver Underhill, Daniel L. Hodgkins, Daniel P. Nourse, William H. Graves, Abraham D. Wait, James M. Wellington, Frederick Willcomb, ever worthy of remembrance. The size of the house is eighty-four by sixty-two feet; chancel, twenty-nine by eleven feet; vestibule, eight and a half feet wide; tower, eighteen feet square; and several hundred sittings. Rev. George Bowler was the architect, and our townsman, William H. Smith, the contractor. The cost was twelve thousand dollars, including the site. It was dedicated January 8, 1861, Rev. L. R. Thayer, noticed above, preaching the sermon. Mr. Eastman was born in Weare, N. H., June 11, 1822. He joined the conference in 1844. His pulpits have been among the most onerous and best. He now resides in Chelsea.

1861-62.—REV. AUSTIN F. HERRICK. Mr. Herrick was born in Otis, June 17, 1824. He entered Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1849; but left before graduation, and entered the Biblical Institute, Concord, N. H. (now the Theological School of Boston University), graduating in 1852. He joined the conference, at the session with this church, April 27, 1853. He came here as pastor on that memorable April 19, 1861. In two or three months, Ipswich's first company for the war, in full military dress, on the Sabbath before marching, worshipped with his church. Those were years of thrilling events, and of general prosperity to this church; some twenty were received on trial.

1863.—REV. JOSEPH CHAPMAN CROMACK. This clergyman was born in Boston, May 11, 1812, to Joseph and Judith Millett Cromack, who were sometime of Amesbury. He was educated at Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, and was licensed to preach in 1835.

1864-65.—REV. I. J. P. COLLYER. This pastor was in the ministry twenty-eight years. While stationed here, twenty persons were received on trial. He died May 7, 1872.

1866-68.—REV. JESSE WAGNER. Mr. Wagner was born in Williamsburg, Pa., August 14, 1835. He graduated at the Methodist Biblical Institute, Concord, N. H., in 1861, and entered the ministry the following year. While here, by his personal efforts, a man was bought at an expense of two thousand dollars, and twenty probationers were received.

1869-70.—REV. CHARLES ATWOOD MERRILL. This pastor is a native of Woodstock, Me. He graduated at the Biblical Institute, Concord, N. H. While located here, twenty persons were received on probation.

1871-72.—REV. CHARLES H. HANAFORD. Mr. Hanaford was born at Northfield, N. H. He was educated at the New Hampshire Conference Seminary, without graduation. He entered the ministry in 1858, and joined the New England Conference in April, 1859. The semi-centennial of the establishment of the church was celebrated in this pastorate, when money enough was raised to liquidate the debt of the society, and also a large part of the cost of the present parsonage. Twenty-eight persons were received on probation the first year.

1873-75.—REV. E. A. SMITH. Mr. Smith is a native of Howard, Pa. He fitted for the Junior Class of Dickinson Seminary, Williamsport. He afterwards taught three years there, filling the chair of natural sciences one year. In 1858 he joined the New Hampshire Conference, and graduated at the Biblical Institute, Concord, in June, 1859. He preached in the chief cities in the State, built the Main Street Methodist Episcopal Church, at Nashua, had extensive revivals in many of the churches, and bought and built several parsonages. He entered the New England Conference in 1873, and while stationed here, the society built and furnished a parsonage, at an expense of nearly six thousand dollars; and, in December, 1873, a great revival began, which continued nearly a year. More than three hundred persons knelt at the altar, and persons of all ages, from seven to eighty-five, were among the converts.

1876-77.—REV. FREDERICK WOODS, D.D. Dr. Woods is a native of St. John's, Newfoundland. He studied in Sackville Academy, N. B., Genesee College, Lima, N. Y., and graduated in 1859, at Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., where he received the Master's degree in 1862. He joined the New England Conference in 1859, and has done very efficient pulpit service. He has published several sermons and addresses. He preached the baccalaureate sermon at Mount Alleston University, Sackville, N. B., 1886, and received the doctorate. His service in this pulpit was efficient and progressive.

1878.—REV. GEORGE WHITAKER. This pastor was born in Boston, May 14, 1836. His father was a government official, son of Rev. Jonathan Whitaker, of Sharon and New Bedford, and nephew of Rev. David T. Kimball, of the First Church. George prepared for college at the Wesleyan Academy, Wilbra-

ham, graduated at Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1861, and entered the ministry the same year. He was presiding elder of the Springfield District, 1874-77. His pastorate here was very satisfactory. The church was repainted, frescoed and generally improved; the society debt of about three thousand and three hundred dollars was canceled; and a gracious revival blessed the church.

1879-80.—REV. P. M. VINTON.

1881-82.—REV. CHARLES NELSON SMITH. Mr. Smith was born in Brookfield, Vt., December 14, 1816. He studied at Newbury Seminary, entered college, but did not graduate. In 1865 he received the Master's degree from Wesleyan University, Middletown. He joined the conference July, 1842, was presiding elder in New Hampshire one year, and in Massachusetts one year; he has had nine two-year pastorates, four three-year pastorates, and was a member of the General Conference in 1856. He has built and repaired several churches, and by the blessing of Heaven has had his full share of success. He reported his full membership to be two hundred and sixty-one.

1883-84.—REV. CHARLES T. JOHNSON. He was born in Lynn—now Nahant—October 16, 1838. His father was a grocer there nearly fifty years, and was postmaster thirty-two years. He studied at Wesleyan Academy, Wilbraham, and graduated at Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., in 1863, and entered the ministry the same year. His pastorate here was blessed, the society prospered, several united with the church. The membership reported was two hundred and seventy-eight full members and thirty-two probationers.

1885.—REV. JOHN GALBRAITH, PH. D. Dr. Galbraith is a graduate of Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., whence he received the Master's degree in 1882. He is also a graduate of Boston University, whence he received the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in 1886. The present church membership is two hundred and thirty-six full members and forty-two probationers.

THE UNITARIAN SOCIETY.

A society of this belief was formed in 1830, the several churches contributing to the membership. Their services were held in the court-house till, at a cost of three thousand dollars or more, they built a church edifice, which was dedicated October 23, 1833. They continued a worshipping congregation some six or seven years, and then formally dissolved. A few years later—1843—they sold their house of worship to the town for a town-house, at a price not exceeding two thousand dollars. The house, with alterations and additions, is the present town-house, and the pews are those of the Linebrook Church.

ST. JOSEPH'S CATHOLIC SOCIETY.

This is a mission society. At first it belonged to Rev. Father Teeling's parish in Newburyport, but in

1871 was transferred to Rev. William H. Ryan's parish in Beverly. They have a very pretty church edifice, which was completed in 1872. The society consists of about five hundred and fifty worshippers.

Conclusion.—The proportion of service, by the various denominations, is about as follows: The First Church, by its double pastorates and colleagues, 355 years; the South, 140 years; the Linebrook, 138 years; the Methodist, 65 years; the Episcopal, 26 years; the Catholic, about 20 years; the Baptist, 17 years; and the Unitarian, 7 years, making a total of more than 750 years for one man, which is equivalent to three pastorates for the actual time. The several pastors and assistants have been, almost to a man, liberally educated. They have brought an apparent zeal to their work, and a good conception of their duty therein. They have been watchful, diligent, laborious, prayerful. A good proportion of them have been dignified, trusty, efficient leaders. They have been able to read the signs of the times, to understand the needs of their people, and to utilize circumstances, as well as actual means. They have watched the ripening grain in their respective fields of labor, and gathered their gracious harvests; their doctrines have been a leaven that has permeated the whole mass of the populace; that has endowed the legislator, the justice, the mariner, the mechanic, the manufacturer, the farmer; that has impeded crime and corrected the erring; that has superinduced a nobler, truer, more earnest and more effective manhood; and has, first, last and midst, been our people's enlightenment and guide. Such is our hope of the future.

CHAPTER XLIV.

IPSWICH—(Continued).

EDUCATIONAL.

Initial Status.—It has been said that the Plymouth Colony had only one University man, the Elder Brewster, while the Massachusetts Bay Colony was noted for its men of wealth, social position and education. Ipswich, in this respect, was a representative town—not a whit behind the metropolis in mental and educational influence and ability. She understood and appreciated the value of a varied learning practical and polite, of a thorough knowledge of home arts and social culture, and of the acquisition of ancient history, literature and tongues; and to this end she was willing to contribute, even to a sacrifice, to obtain them.

Why Latin?—It may be asked why our forefathers so valued a knowledge of the ancient languages, especially the Latin, as to give them immediate attention. Doubtless they studied them for the same reasons we do to-day, but we apprehend that they did

then chiefly because they were intensely English and on that ground anything that did not conflict with or savor of religious tenets must be intensely English also. The Latin language, at that time, was in its old age, only dead in the sense that it had passed the period of its growth. It may be said to have been the language of the time, the English tongue sharply vying with it for the supremacy. It embodied the laws of the realm and Biblical exegesis, and scientific essays and important documents were presented in it. The learned addressed their compeers in public assemblies, and statecraft was orally discussed in its elegant phrases. Queen Elizabeth spoke it, and Lord Bacon, "the great glory of literature," composed most of his writings in it. The devotion, benefactions and labors of our emigrant ancestors in the matter of schools excites not our wonder so much as our gratitude. The kind and degree of learning at their native homes must be the kind and degree here, so far as practicable; and while the exigencies of the occasion made the family a school in the rudiments, and the mother the teacher, a grammar school, in the English sense, was early established for preparing young men for college.

The Grammar School.—According to the records, a grammar school was "set up" in 1636, and Lionel Chute appears to have been the teacher. The record further states that the school did "not succeed." It began some two years after the incorporation of the town, and the young town doubtless made no appropriation for its support. Its success would have been phenomenal. Mr. Chute died in 1641 or '45.

The School Endowed.—This attempt of Master Chute was followed by "several overtures and endeavors among the inhabitants for settling a Grammar School," which failed to realize their object, as did he. The spirit of education, however, had taken possession of the public mind, and when about 1649, Robert Paine, the leading spirit in the endeavor, offered to "erect an edifice for the purpose, provided the town or any particular inhabitant of the town would devote, sett apart or give any land or other annuity for the yearly maintenance of such one as should be fitt to keep a Grammar School." The town accordingly, January 11, 1650, granted to Robert Paine, Mr. William Paine, Major Denison and Mr. Bartholomew in trust "for the use of schools all that neck beyond Chebacco River and the rest of the ground (up to Gloucester line) adjoining to it." Soon after this the land was leased to John Cogswell, his heirs and assigns, for the space of one thousand years, at an annual rental of fourteen pounds. The tenants began to build upon the land as early as 1723, and a part of the village of Essex now occupies a large portion of it, and the rent continues to be paid.

The citizens are now fully awake to the occasion, and give body, shape and purpose to the enterprise by ordaining, January 26, 1651, the following:

The Feoffees.—For the better ordering of the school and the affairs thereof, Mr. Simonds, Mr. Rogers, Mr. Norton, Maj. Denison, Mr. Robert Paine, Mr. William Paine, Mr. Hubbard, Dea. Whipple, Mr. Barlow, were chosen a committee to receive all such sums of money as shall be given toward the building or maintaining of a Grammar School and school-master, and to distribute and dispose such sums as are given to provide a school-house and school-master's house either in building or purchasing the said house with all convenient speed. And such sums of money, parcels of land, rents or annuities as are or shall be given towards the maintenance of a school-master they shall receive and dispose of to the school-master that they shall call or choose to that office from time to time to his maintenance, which they have power to enlarge by appointing from year to year what each scholar shall yearly or quarterly pay or proportionately; who shall also have full power to regulate all matters concerning the school-master and scholars, as in their wisdom they think meet from time to time; who shall also consider the best way to make provisions for teaching to write and cast accounts."

In 1652 Mr. Robert Paine purchased a house, with two acres of land belonging to it, for the use of the school-master, and in 1653, at his own expense, as per agreement, erected an edifice upon the land for the grammar school, and October 4, 1683, he and his wife gave the house and land to the town for the school's use. About the same time Mr. William Hubbard gave about an acre of land adjoining the school-master's house. In 1650 Mr. John Cross "secured" on his farm near Rowley a perpetual annuity of ten shillings towards a free school in the town. In 1686 the town grants ten acres of marsh at Castle Neck. These gifts were sold by order of the General Court in 1836, and netted the feoffees about three thousand two hundred dollars. In 1660 Mr. William Paine gave the land near the mouth of the river called Little Neck. In 1661 "the barn erected by Ezekiel Cheever and the orchard planted by him were, after his removal to Charlestown, bought by the feoffees," as the trustees were then and have since been called, and presented by them for the school-master's use or for rent.

We can hardly say too much in praise of the exertions, devotion, benefactions and leading spirit of the original donor of this school, MR. ROBERT PAINE. He was timely, efficient, provident, public-spirited, noble, wealthy, generous. Of a hundred and fifty-five subscriptions "to encourage Major Denison in his military helpfulness," Mr. Paine's was the largest, to be paid annually. He was a ruling elder in the church, ranking next to the minister. He was representative three years. He was county treasurer from 1655 till his resignation in 1683, the year before he died, at the age of eighty-three years.

WILLIAM PAINE, brother of the above, seems to have been wealthy and active for the public good. He removed to Boston about 1656, where he died October 10, 1660. He was buried in the Granary Cemetery, and his tombstone forms a part of the basement wall of the Athenaeum. Besides his liberal bequest to our Grammar School, he gave twenty pounds to Harvard College.

MR. WILLIAM HUBBARD, another original benefactor of the school, came with the elder Winthrop to

Boston in 1630, and settled in this town in 1635. He was representative six years between 1638 and 1646. In 1651 he was commissioned to solemnize marriages, clergymen at that time being denied such authority. He removed to Boston in 1662, where he died in 1670. He left a large estate. Two of his children, Richard and William, the historian and colleague of Rev. Mr. Norton in our pulpit, were professors of the school.

The Board of Feoffees consisted originally of nine members; in 1662 the town voted that the number be "increased to nine." In 1664 the number was ten, but after the death of Robert Paine, Jr., the number never appears greater than nine. The town by vote, April 7, 1687, ordered the selectmen to obtain deeds of all the school lands, that they may know the power the feoffees have to order the schools; and May 19th, of the same year, voted that the former feoffees now living (Rev. William Hubbard, Robert Paine and Elder and Captain John Appleton) with the selectmen shall manage the schools till further action by the town. If this vote was inoperative or effective we know not. Vacancies in the board seem to have been filled by the remaining members without reference to any action of the town. Their history for the colonial period seems to have been only the routine work of the school.

The First Master.—The first master of the school was Ezekiel Cheever. He kept it ten years. He then removed to Charlestown and afterwards to Boston, where he was master of the Boston Latin School. He was born in London, England, January 25, 1615, and died in Boston August 25, 1708, at the great age of ninety-three years and seven months, after seventy years of tedious labor as school-master.

In six years from the opening of the school this town had six students in Harvard College. They were Robert Paine, son of the founder of the school; John Emerson, son of Thomas, and afterwards minister of Gloucester; Nathaniel Saltonstall, son of Richard, and afterwards minister of Haverhill; Ezekiel Rogers, son of Rev. Nathaniel; Samuel Cheever, son of the master; Samuel Belcher, son of Jeremy, minister of the Isle of Shoals and later of Newbury. Other pupils of Master Cheever's, who were students in Harvard, were William Wittingham, son of John; Samuel Cobbett, son of Rev. Thomas; and Samuel Symonds, son of the deputy-governor.

Mr. Cheever's successor was THOMAS ANDREWS, who began August 1, 1660, and kept it twenty-three years. During this time Ipswich sent to Harvard College Samuel Bishop; Samuel and Daniel Epes, sons of Daniel; John Norton, son of William and nephew of Rev. John; John Rogers, son of President John of Harvard; John Denison, son of John and grandson of General Daniel, and pastor-elect of this church; Francis Wainwright; and Daniel Rogers, another son of the president, and many years master of the school. Mr. Andrews died July 10, 1683, and



left a considerable property to his relatives, probably never having married.

MR. NOADIAH RUSSELL, of Cambridge, succeeded Mr. Andrews, and took charge of the school October 31, 1683. He was a graduate of Harvard in 1681. He continued master of the school till his resignation February 23, 1686-87, when he was succeeded by Mr. DANIEL ROGERS.

Mr. Rogers' mastership completed the colonial period and began the provincial, probably from 1687 to 1715. It was during his service, also, that the old school-house was abandoned, having been the subject of extensive repairs several times, and the new rooms in the court and town-house occupied, which change was made about 1704.

From Mr. Rogers' tuition fifteen pupils entered Harvard College, among whom were John Wade, son of Colonel Thomas; Francis Goodhue, son of Deacon William; Jeremiah and Henry Wise, sons of Rev. John; John Perkins, son of Abraham; William Burnham, who became a minister; Benjamin Choate, son of John; Francis and John Wainwright; John Denison, son of Rev. John; Nathaniel Appleton, son of Colonel John, and afterwards minister of Cambridge; and Francis Cogswell, son of Jonathan.

Made a Free School.—The town and feoffees agreed April 8, 1714, to make the Grammar School for the present year "absolutely free to all such scholars belonging to the town." The town appropriated twenty-five pounds and chose a committee, who with the feoffees, provided a master, who shall attend "constantly in teaching grammar scholars and also English scholars, to perfect them in reading and instruct them in writing and ciphering." Master Rogers is sketched as registrar of probate.

EBENEZER GAY, who graduated at Harvard in 1714, was the next teacher for one year, and had a salary of fifty-six pounds. He was afterwards the celebrated Dr. Gay, of Hingham. He was followed by MR. THOMAS NORTON, who was master in 1716. He was a deacon. His son, Thomas, graduated at Harvard in 1725, and taught this school ten years, 1729-39, under the direction of the selectmen.

BENJAMIN CROCKER took the school June 4, 1717, at a salary of eighty pounds, old tenor, and left it November, 1719 [1718?]. He taught afterwards two years, 1746-47, at a salary of one hundred pounds, old tenor, and again two years, 1759-60. He graduated at Harvard in 1713. He was feoffee 1749-64; he occasionally preached. Deacon John, of the First Church, was his son.

Revolution in School.—At this date began the period of contention and revolution in the school. For the encouragement of the school the town voted, May 8, 1718, to make up sixty pounds to the school, if necessary, after the collection of rents and a tuition of twenty shillings per scholar, for that year. The selectmen, it was voted November 5, 1718, shall provide "with all convenient speed" a master for the rest of

the present year. The town chose a committee February 9, 1719, to eject the tenants of the *great farm*, leased to John Cogswell, and release it for a period not exceeding twenty-one years. Rev. John Rogers and Rev. Jabez Fitch enter their protests. The dissatisfaction seems to be "especially of the younger sort." The town voted June 6, 1720, to hire a grammar school teacher; and also chose a committee to recover the *great farm*, and re-lease it for twenty-one years. The town thus took control of the school and the school property; the feoffees entered their protest in their records and retired. The tenants of the *great farm* took advantage of the quarrel and refused to pay the rent till it might be determined who was entitled to receive it. The town January 4, 1720-21, constituted John Wainwright, Ens. George Hart and Mr. Thomas Boardman trustees, to eject all persons in possession of school lands, but failed in the Court of Common Pleas March, 1722, to establish their claim. An inadvertence of the clerk failed to enter their appeal to the Superior Court, and Sarah, the widow of John Cogswell, still held possession.

In 1721 the town brought an action at law against the tenants of the school farm, and in 1729 Gifford Cogswell is ordered to pay £100 in adjustment of the claims, which sum was apportioned to the several parts of the town according to their proportion of the Province tax, whence dates the beginning of the district school system.

Reading and Writing School.—The above appropriation of £100 probably lasted about three years; but no other is recorded till after the town is required, April 26, 1739, to answer to the Court of General Sessions, for not maintaining a Reading and Writing School according to law. Then, March 4, 1739-40, the town appropriated £150 for both the grammar and the reading and writing schools, put them under one teacher and began the practice of moving them at the judgment of the selectmen. The appropriations were thus applied while the town had control of the school property.

Incorporation.—In 1749 Jonathan Wade was the only survivor of the feoffees, and February 10th, of that year, he filled the vacancies by appointments; but in 1756, the General Court incorporated Thomas Berry, Daniel Appleton and Samuel Rogers, E-qs., with Mr. Benjamin Crocker, on the part of the private persons who granted lands for the school, together with Francis Wash, Esq., Capt. Nathaniel Treadwell and Mr. John Patch, Jr., three of the board of selectmen of the town, a Joint Committee, or Feoffees in Trust, with full power to grant leases, recover rents and annuities, appoint masters, regulate their salaries, appoint clerk and treasurer and if necessary, impose a tuition. The act was limited to ten years; it was, at the end of the period, continued twenty-one years; and at the end of that period, or February 14, 1787, it was made perpetual, the feoffees representing private persons filling vacancies in their

number, while the three senior members of the successive Boards of Selectmen represent the town.

Masters.—MR. HENRY WISE was the first master in the employ of the selectmen. He accepted the trust June 20, 1720, and continued eight years. His salary was £55. THOMAS NORFON, JR., before mentioned, succeeded and continued ten years. After him was DANIEL STANFORD, a graduate of Harvard in 1738, who continued five years, 1740–45. He was master of both schools, at a salary of £80. He was afterwards a successful merchant; and also a Representative three years. His successor was BENJAMIN CROCKER, above mentioned, who taught two years, 1746–47, at a salary of £150. JOHN DENNIS taught in 1753, for the school rents. In 1754 the town claimed to have conducted the affairs of the school for more than twenty years; yet she practically relinquished the school at the close of Mr. Crocker's mastership.

Under the act of incorporation, the first master was SAMUEL WIGGLESWORTH, son of Rev. Samuel of the Hamlet. He graduated at Harvard in 1752, and taught the school two years, 1757–58. His salary was £40. He afterwards practiced medicine. BENJAMIN CROCKER, before mentioned, taught two years, 1759–60. JOSEPH HOW succeeded and taught one year, 1761. His salary was £33 6s. 8d. He graduated at Harvard in 1758, married Elizabeth, daughter of Hon. Thomas Berry and died March 26, 1762, at the age of twenty-five, and his wife May 6, 1759, at the age of twenty-two years. DANIEL NOYES, who is sketched in "Registrars of Probate," kept the school thirteen years, 1762–73 and 1780, at a salary of £46 12s. 6d. THOMAS BURNHAM, a graduate of Harvard, in 1722, kept the school five years from 1774, at a salary of £50, and then entered the army, where he attained the rank of major. After the war he taught six years, 1786–91; then one year, 1793; then eleven years, 1807–17, when, in 1815, the income was \$205.78, a total service of twenty-three years. NATHANIEL DOBELL, a graduate of Harvard in 1777, taught two years, 1779 and '84. JACOB KIMBALL, a graduate of Harvard in 1780, taught one year, 1781. REV. JOHN FREADWELL, a graduate of Harvard in 1758, taught two years, 1783 and '85. DANIEL and JOSEPH DANA, graduates of Dartmouth College in 1788, taught two years, 1792 and '93 respectively, at a salary of £65. SAMUEL DANA, a brother of the above Daniel and Joseph, and son of Rev. Joseph, of the South Parish, and a graduate of Harvard in 1796, taught three years, 1797–99, when, in 1797, the income was \$139.66. JOSEPH McKEN, a graduate of Harvard in 1794, taught three years, 1794–96. His salary was £80. He became a minister and a professor in Harvard College. AMOS CHOATE, a graduate of Harvard in 1795, taught seven years, 1800–6. He was afterwards registrar of deeds for the county. GEORGE CHOATE, a graduate of Harvard in 1818, taught four years, 1818–21. RICHARD KIMBALL taught nine weeks in 1822, "for the income of the school lands." CHARLES CHOATE, son of Hon. John, taught in 1823–24 on the same terms. STEPHEN CORBURN taught in 1825; RICHARD KIMBALL in 1826, when the income was \$165.23; JAMES W. WARD in 1827; NATHAN BROWN in 1828; DANIEL PERLEY

in 1829; DAVID TENNEY KIMBALL, JR., in 1830; JOSEPH HALE in 1831–33, when, in 1831, the income was \$163.61; TOLMAN WILLEY in 1834; DAN WEED, JR., in 1835–40; EBENEZER S. STEVENS in 1841; DAN WEED, JR., in 1842–45; GEORGE W. TEWKSBURY in 1846; EZRA W. GALE in 1847–48; CALER LAMSON in 1849. Arrangements were made with REV. JOHN P. COWLES, of the Seminary, to instruct the grammar scholars, at forty cents a week, *per capita*, 1850; then with the town for a High School, wherein BENJAMIN P. CHUTE taught, 1851–52; JOSEPH A. SHORES, 1853–56; ISSACHAR LEFAVOUR, of Beverly, 1856–74. In 1874, when the present Manning School was established, the feoffees arranged with the trustees and town, to meet the obligation of the encroachment, and *practically* have contributed since then three hundred dollars annually.

Present Value of the Fund.—The condition of this trust, March 28, 1887, according to the treasurer's report, was as follows: "26½ old rights in Jeffrey's Neck, 2 house-lots in Revere, school-farm in Essex, Little Neck, deposit in Savings Bank, town notes, Lynn water-bond and cash, valued at \$11,514, and yielding an income of about \$500."

The school has been practically in the control of the town from a very early period, by right, assumption, or agreement, and since 1851 has been popularly called *the Ipswich High School*. Along near the close of the first century, and again near the close of the second, it was less efficient than at other times; and perhaps, on the whole, has not attained to the very high distinction hoped for by its founders, yet it has been a permanent good always, and most of the time of excellent worth. The trust is now rapidly growing in pecuniary value, and wisely managed, as now, will be in the future a large and efficient educational support.

THE MANNING SCHOOL.

The Founder.—This school was established in 1874. Dr. Thomas Manning, from whom it took its name, was the founder. He was son of Dr. John Manning, who died in 1824, at the age of eighty-six years, after a long, useful, public service, especially given—aside from his professional service—to the cause of education. Dr. Thomas inherited his father's sterling qualities, his generous public spirit, and perchance excelled him. He was devoted to the prosperity of the town, energetic in advancing her business interests, and, when in age he bethought him "to set his house in order," as a crowning service of his life, he devoted the greater part of his ample fortune to the purpose of establishing "a High School in the town of Ipswich, which should be free to the youth of the town of both sexes."

He was born February 7, 1774, and died February 3, 1854. He gave the property to Richard H. Manning, of Brooklyn, Francis C. Manning, of Boston—brothers—and Francis H. Blanchard, of Waltham, in trust, and provided that the school-house should be built and the school begun in the year of the one hundredth anniversary of his birth, the cost not to exceed one-third of the devise.

The Trust.—The doctor's son, however, thought that his father's long and serious illness in his old age had

improperly influenced the making his will, which made what was thought by many an inadequate provision for him, and he contested it, and it was disallowed. The son then paid all the minor bequests, and, to carry out the views of his father, generously gave the trustees, in 1857, about one-third of the remainder, the sum of \$10,000.

Here Mr. Blanchard declined to serve and Mr. Otis Kimball was elected to the vacancy. The board thus constituted made and declared the deed of trust. In 1869 Mr. F. C. Manning died, and Mr. Joseph Ross, of Ipswich, was elected to his place; and in April, 1874, Dr. Y. G. Hurd was appointed a trustee in place of Otis Kimball, who had then died. About this time Otis Kimball, Jr., was elected.

Other Bequests.—When the century was nearly completed and the house was to be built, and the fund was found too small to meet the desired end, providentially came to hand the generous bequest of \$4000 from DR. JOSEPH GREEN COGSWELL, of New York and Cambridge, one of Ipswich's most distinguished sons and a gentleman of unusual scholarly attainments. About this time, too, one of the trustee, MR. RICHARD H. MANNING, contributed the princely sum of \$15,000. The present condition of the trust, exclusive of the buildings and land, which cost \$32,000, is about \$40,000.

The House and Appointments.—The school-house is a two-story, square structure, with mansard roof, and has rooms for cabinets, apparatus and recitations, and, on the third floor, a spacious and serviceable hall. The architectural design was by Edward R. Brown; the interior design, by George W. Archer; the trustee supervision of the work, by Joseph Ross and Dr. Y. G. Hurd; and the design of the furniture, by Joseph L. Ross—all Ipswich men.

The cabinets illustrative of natural history and mineralogy, and the apparatus for chemical and philosophical experiments are excellent. In 1842 Mr. Abraham Hammatt donated to the school his private cabinet of minerals, which, with additions presented by friends of the school, is now large, choice and well arranged.

Its Dedication.—Thus the trustees were enabled to meet the desire of the founder in establishing the school. It was dedicated in the afternoon of Wednesday, August 26, 1874. The exercises were conducted by the trustees and the school committee of the town, and consisted of addresses, the reading of a paper on the Genealogy of the Manning Family, and music. The president of the trustees, in his opening addresses, remarked: "The noble legacies of the dead and more noble gifts of the living have completed and furnished a structure which the citizens of Ipswich may look upon with grateful pride and satisfaction."

Mr. R. H. Manning, secretary and treasurer of the trustees, on the same occasion said, that the equipments of the school were ample to prepare students for professional studies, but its special object was "to lay the foundation, and do what time and opportunity may allow towards the superstructure of a useful education of *all* the children of the town." "The school has but little to do with regularly organized religious matters." It was open for "all who are

qualified to receive its instructions without distinction of sex, color, race or religion." "While, therefore, it will be quite within its province to do much for those who intend to make literary pursuits the business of their lives, its purpose will rather be to provide an education which, through its general influence as well as by its special teaching, shall tend to make all who receive it able to perform the common duties and enjoy the common blessings of life; to make them better observers and thinkers, and consequently better farmers, engineers and men of business; and also, by laying a good foundation, better lawyers and doctors and ministers and statesmen; and above all, better neighbors and citizens; better and manlier men and better and more womanly women."

The Principals.—The teachers have been Martin H. Fiske, 1874-80; George N. Cross, 1881-82; A. M. Osgood, 1883-84; and George M. Smith, the present incumbent. The school has graduated one hundred and twenty-three pupils, and is now, more than ever, growing in popular favor and influence.

The Trustees.—The Board of Trustees, as at present constituted, is Dr. Yorick G. Hurd, president; Richard H. Manning, secretary and treasurer; Joseph Ross, Otis Kimball and Theodore F. Cogswell.

RICHARD HENRY MANNING.¹—The subject of this sketch was born in Ipswich, February 1, 1809. His name at first was Henry. It was after his father's death, which occurred in 1815, that he assumed his name. His mother, whose maiden-name was Lydia Pearson, died when he was only a few months old, and soon after he was taken home by his grandfather, Dr. John Manning, and his wife, Lucy Bolles, with whom his father also lived until his death. The grandfather was a leading pioneer of woolen manufacturing in Massachusetts, if not the first. The father also engaged in this business in the old building which stood where the "Caldwell Block" now stands. A good mathematician and surveyor, he was, for one winter at least, master of the district school, and his little son, six years old when his father died, was subject to his instruction. The death of his grandmother, with whom his early years were very happy, consigned him to the care of his paternal aunts, whose good intentions sometimes failed of meeting the requirements of the sensitive and growing boy. It was probably on this account that he acceded to their plan for sending him to Dummer Academy, in Byfield, where the preceptor was Nehemiah Cleveland, who had married his cousin, Abby P. Manning. But it was a heart-breaking business to leave his grandfather, who had been very kind to him and to whom he was very necessary, and he dared not trust himself to say good-bye, but stole away early in the morning. The experience entered on so painfully was very beneficial, Mr. and Mrs. Cleveland proving admirable directors of his studies and helping the formation of his character with affectionate and judicious guidance of his habits and his tastes. To a period of repression succeeded a period of genial growth. "I have often thought," he wrote not long before his death, "that if I had grown up from

¹ By Rev. John W. Chadwick, Brooklyn, N. Y.



R. H. Manning

early childhood with more sunshine and less wind, I should not have wrapped the cloak of reserve so closely about me, and might have been less censorious, of gentler and more considerate speech, and altogether a more agreeable member of society." But if he ever was censorious, harsh, or inconsiderate, it must have been at a period to which the memory of his later friends did not go back.

In 1825, after about eighteen months at Byfield, his school-days came to an end, and on the day before the laying of the corner stone of Bunker Hill Monument, June 24th, he entered on his business life in Boston, which continued with a single change of employers till he removed to Philadelphia in 1831. At this time his intellectual tendency of mind and earnestness of character had already sensibly declared themselves. With no taste for dissipation, refusing the summer evening punch and winter Sunday toddy proffered by his employer, in whose family he lived, he devoted his leisure hours to the reading of well-chosen books and to various literary exercises under the auspices of the Mercantile Library Association, of which he was a director. He was a lover of the poets as well as of the historians and novelists, and could "drop into poetry" himself upon occasion, once keeping up for some time a tilt of verse, *incognito*, with Mrs. Frances Osgood, not unknown to fame; and he never got to be so practical or scientific but that he could revert to this early habit. He was fond of revising the hymns sung at church in accordance with his scientific predilections, and he often turned a graceful rhyme to bless some birthday festival or other happy anniversary of home and friends.

Within a year after his going to Philadelphia he became a partner in the firm of Farnsworth & Manning, and the confidence with which he had inspired his employer in Boston was evidenced by his willingness to go security for him to the amount of several thousand dollars. In Boston he had not taken kindly to the Unitarianism of his employer, but in Philadelphia, coming under the influence of Dr. Furness, he became an ardent Unitarian, and with increasing liberality and growing satisfaction in rationalistic and scientific methods, he remained a Unitarian until his death, connected for the last thirty-five years of his life with the Second Unitarian Church in Brooklyn, N. Y., of which he was a trustee for several terms, and in which he was always greatly loved and honored for the wisdom of his counsels and the goodness of his heart. It was during his stay in Philadelphia that he made the acquaintance of Frances Augusta Moore, who became his wife Jan. 15, 1835, and died in March, 1839, leaving a daughter Adeline. Mr. Manning was again married, Nov. 7, 1840, to Sarah P. Swan, who died leaving a daughter Sarah, Dec. 21, 1841. The domestic happiness, twice laid in ruins, was again renewed June 29, 1843, when he married Mary D. Weeks, who remained until his death the fit companion of his earnest purpose and generous heart. They never wearied in "devising

liberal things" for those of their own household and for many far and near who were in need of such encouragement and help as they could give. The children of this marriage were Henry Swan and Mary Channing, and their children, with those of the daughter Sarah, were the crowning happiness of Mr. Manning's later life. Through all the vicissitudes of his domestic life, from 1835 until her death, in 1880, his sister Elizabeth was a member of his family, with a mother-heart for all his children and a helping hand for every needful work.

Mr. Manning's business life in New York had hardly begun when the great fire of 1835 and the financial crash of 1836 gave a sudden check to his incipient prosperity. With a courageous heart he set out again, this time alone, as a dry-goods jobber, and he remained in the same business till 1851, with two or three different partners at different times. After a year of leisure, he entered into partnership with William C. Squier, of the New Jersey Zinc Company. In 1855, with the same partner, he took the selling agency of the Passaic Zinc Company, and made no further change for the remainder of his active business life, which terminated only four years before his death. His partner testifies, that in the thirty-two years of their connection, they never had one hour's misunderstanding or one word of anger or reproach. His year of leisure, 1851, was marked by one of the most agreeable and characteristic episodes of his career. For some years he had been deeply interested in the teachings of Fourier and other writers upon social reorganization. With others, he had induced the Rev. William Henry Channing to come to Brooklyn as minister of a society wholly free from any conventional limitations. Mr. Channing was profoundly interested in social questions and stirred up a generous enthusiasm for them in the minds of his hearers. For two or three years there was a series of parlor meetings, at which the times and the eternities were discussed with equal warmth. To these meetings came many able men and women—Horace Greeley not the least among them, and Margaret Fuller, in Mr. Manning's estimation, the greatest; or, at any rate, the ablest talker. For several months she was a member of his family, while on the staff of the *New York Tribune*. In the summer of 1850 Mr. Manning boarded at the North American Phalanx, the New York "Brook Farm," with several friends and their families. The doctrines of social reorganization which he had been brooding on so long, were thus practically tested, and the result was so assuring that in 1851 he built a cottage on the Phalanx grounds and spent the summer there. This was the episode to which we have referred. Mr. Manning always maintained that the failure of the movement was owing more to accidental circumstances than to intrinsic causes, and held to the necessity for changes in our present social order in the direction of co-operative life.

Mr. Manning never forgot his native town and had



at all times relations of kinship and affection with many Ipswich folks; but that which brought him into the closest and most gratifying contact with his former townsmen was his connection with the "Manning School." His uncle, Dr. Thomas Manning, dying in 1854, left nearly all his moderate fortune in trust to him, his brother Francis and Francis H. Blanchard, of Waltham, for the establishment and maintenance of a High School in Ipswich. The will was contested by the only son of Dr. Manning and it was disallowed by the Probate Court. But after the son had paid all the minor bequests of the will, he gave one-third of the sum remaining, about ten thousand dollars, to the trustees named in the will, with which to carry out his father's wishes. As only one-third could be spent for the building, it seemed best not to build until investment had considerably increased the sum in hand. The investment was made by Mr. R. H. Manning, and so successfully, that in 1874 the original sum had increased to more than forty thousand dollars, and then the bonds representing the whole amount were stolen by a thief, who had followed Mr. Manning into his office. The loss of no other money could have been so hard, but though his cheek was for a moment blanched, the next morning (New Year's day) he made his usual round of calls with his habitual cheerfulness. Of the stolen money, he at length recovered the larger part. What could not be recovered, he made up; adding to this a sum which, with a bequest made in his will, constitutes an amount more than double that originally in hand. These were the benefactions of a man of moderate means, of whom a friend has said that "he was wisely economical, in order that he might be nobly generous." But he gave the school more and better than money. He gave a well-selected library, into the choice of which he put hundreds of thoughtful hours. He gave his constant oversight and private counsel, and several times some well-considered public word in furtherance of the cause he had so much at heart.

Mr. Manning apprehended his position as a citizen in the most serious manner. He was always deeply interested in State and national politics and in questions of municipal reform. His anti-slavery sentiments dated from the beginning of the great debate. Horace Greeley had no more honored friend, and he made him one of the administrators of his will. He was a staunch Republican, and when the ordeal of battle succeeded to the strife of words, he was proud to have a soldier-son, and with the co-operation of his wife and sister, did what he could for the alleviation of the suffering and sorrow of the time. His connection with civil service reform was close and earnest from the start, and the last public duty he assumed (but did not live to perform) was that of an examiner under the civil service rules. His last illness began October 25th and he died Nov. 2d, 1887.

There was no more hospitable roof than his in all the land. There was welcome under it not only for

the fortunate and happy who could bring their health and cheer, but for those who had been bruised and maimed in life's hard fray. Madame Zulavsky, an exile from Hungary, the sister of Louis Kossuth, had her last sickness here. The gravity of Mr. Manning's mind and character attracted to him many wise and noble spirits. He had a genius for friendship, and his friends were often persons of exceptional ability and worth. Horace Greeley and Margaret Fuller have been already named. Samuel Johnson, the Salem thinker and reformer, was another. Professor E. L. Youmans, with whose scientific thought he was entirely sympathetic, was perhaps the closest of them all. But he did not demand high culture and ability from all his friends. To be simple and sincere and kind was a sufficient claim on his regard; or to be in need of any help that he could give. He had a gift for doing

"Little kindnesses which most leave undone or despise."

An "advanced thinker" always, he never lost the art of sweet, old-fashioned courtesy. He was remarkable for the comprehensiveness and balance of his powers. With great practical ability he united an admirable gift for speculative thought, and while thus profoundly intellectual, he was pre-eminently a "man of sentiment," without ever being sentimental. His feelings were extremely sensitive and warm. And so it was that, however admirable in every wider sphere, it was in his home-life that he revealed his most essential character. He wrote such letters as men used to write when as yet there was no penny post. They were not often long, but they were always carefully considered and gracefully expressed. For other forms of literary expression he was well equipped. His printed speeches and addresses and the papers that he published upon various subjects, though but few, are evidence that if he had devoted himself exclusively to a life of thought and literary expression, he might have won an enviable fame. But there is nothing to regret. He could have done no better than to show by his example that a life of constant and exacting business cares can be conjoined with intellectual pursuits and noble charities and genial fellowship, and such social usefulness as is still alive and operative when the places that have known us know us no more forever.

THE DISTRICT SCHOOLS.

Origin.—This system has been the growth of years and exigencies. In 1642 the town voted that there be a free school. Such a school was to teach "reading, writing and cyphering." In 1664 Mr. ANDREWS was invited to teach. In 1695 NATHANIEL RUST, JR., taught at Chebacco, and the following year was invited to settle as master. In 1702 Chebacco was allowed to erect a school-house on the common, and in 1713 WILLIAM GIDDINGS was master there. In 1714 the town voted to have a school in the watch-house, and in 1719 it was used for the same purpose. WILLIAM SONE, a fisherman, by reason of sickness, was granted a room in the Almshouse for a school. The

Hamlet voted March 10, 1730, to build a school-house for their accommodation; and on the 30th the town appropriated one hundred pounds for three masters for the First, Chebacco and Hamlet Parishes. This was the sum paid by Gifford Cogswell in settlement of the Grammar School claim. The First Parish had £41, the Hamlet committee £20, the Chebacco committee £20, Mark How for West Parish (afterwards Linebrook) £418s. 9d., Moses Davis for his neighborhood £611s. 10d., and Deacon Fellows for his neighborhood £24s., thus outlining the present district system. The selectmen, May 22, 1732, engaged HENRY SPILLAR to teach, and granted him the use of one end of the Almshouse for that purpose.

Supervision.—The committee of the First Parish agreed with him to teach a quarter for eight pounds. No further appropriation was made till ordered by the Court of General Sessions, when, 1740, the Grammar School (which see) and the reading and writing schools were served together. In 1742 eighteen pounds of the school rents, old tenor, were "adjudged" to each Chebacco and Hamlet, and twenty-eight pounds of said rents, old tenor, "to those parts of the First Parish as have least benefit from the Grammar School," and the same year the selectmen were to visit the schools once a quarter, and invite the minister to attend with them, the germ of our present committee supervision.

In 1743 a committee of five were chosen to visit the schools, as often as they thought proper, and inquire into the conduct of the master and the behavior of the scholars, and report to the town. In 1756 the town appropriated two hundred and fifty pounds, old tenor, for a master who was to be employed three months and two weeks at Chebacco, three months and two weeks at the Hamlet, two months at Linebrook, and otherwise as directed by the selectmen. This amount and plan of appropriation continued a number of years.

In 1761 the General Court authorized the sale of school rights in Birch Island, Bush Hill, Bartholomew Hill and Chebacco Woods, and the next year rejected proposals to sell the school farm. A school house was built at Linebrook, on land two rods front and four rods deep, encumbered by Jeremiah Smith October 30, 1765, so long as used for the purpose of a school. In 1783 the town employed two masters, and raised one hundred and forty pounds for schools, and granted land for a school-house near Joseph Fowler's lane.

Appropriations.—The yearly appropriation, 1785-94, was £160; 1795-96, £230; 1797-1801, \$766.66; 1802, \$900; 1810, \$1200; 1816, \$1500; 1840, \$1600; 1854, \$2000; 1861, \$2500; 1866, \$3000; 1868, \$3500; 1871, \$4000; 1886, \$4400 and \$2300 for High School.

In 1791 the visiting committee consisted of forty members; eleven in the body of the town, seven at Chebacco, nine at the Hamlet, five at Linebrook, two

at Candlewood, two at Argilla, two at Moses Jewett's and two at John Patch's.

The Studies.—The variety, extent and relative importance of the studies a century ago, may best be learned from perusing the committee's instruction from the town April 2, 1792, viz.: "To go with the Latin scholars to the Grammar School, are those who study English grammar, those who are to be taught in book-keeping and after them, the foremost in reading and spelling, until the number in the Grammar School shall rise to a third part of the whole existing number in both. To read well in the Bible and spell should be necessary qualifications for entering as students in English grammar. To be taught in book-keeping, the pupil must have gone through the four first rules of arithmetic, simple and compound; Reductions in both parts; the Rules of Proportion, direct, inverse and compound; and the rules of Practice. The master of the English school shall attend upon all in Arithmetic except the Latin scholars and those in book-keeping as aforesaid. In both schools the Catechism of the Assembly of Divines with Dr. Watts' explanatory Notes and the Catechism by the same author be constantly used as much as three or four times a week according to the different grades of the scholars, until the same are committed to memory." The practice of teaching the Catechism lasted till 1826.

Committees Chosen.—In 1794 a committee of seven was chosen to consider the subject of schooling. They recommended a committee "to regulate and visit the schools, as it is thought it would be an encouragement to the masters and scholars, and consequently would be beneficial to the education of the youth." A committee of nine were chosen. In 1795 five were chosen; in 1796, nine; in 1798, seven; and the same in 1800. The number now is three.

Districts.—Shortly after 1800 the school districts were defined by metes and bounds. Some twenty-five years later, prudential committees were employed. This plan was probably the remains of the old system of parish committees respectively. Still later, by some ten years, the prudential committees were empowered to hire their respective teachers. The prudential system was abolished in April, 1869, when the district property was appraised and purchased by the town.

Expense.—The present number of pupils enrolled is six hundred and eighty, distributed in seven ungraded schools, three primary, three intermediate and one high. The total cost for the year is seventy-six hundred dollars, making a per capita cost of eleven and eighteen-one-hundredths dollars.

Our Schools Free.—The existence and importance of schools was inbred in our ancestors, and the first and leading thought in relation to them was that they should be free. Their first vote declared the sentiment, and along the years circumstances have been made subservient, and pecuniary ability has been

pledged to hasten the grand consummation. With free text-books in the hands of the scholars, as has been the case for the last year or two, our schools are absolutely free. If the spirits of the departed are conversant with the affairs of men, there is a multitude of our citizen benefactors with the Paines, and Hubbard, and Cross, and Burley, and Manning, and Cogswell at their head, uniting with the generous living in one glad acclaim for the fruition of their hope—absolutely free schools for all our sons and daughters.

THE IPSWICH FEMALE SEMINARY.

The Academy.—The institution now or lately known by the above title was incorporated February 28, 1828, by the name of the *Proprietors of Ipswich Academy*. The incorporators' names were Nathaniel Lord, Jr., Joseph Farley, Ammi R. Smith, George W. Hart and Charles Kimball. They could hold a personal estate of ten thousand dollars and a real of eight thousand dollars. The building was completed early in 1826, fifty-six feet long, thirty-five wide and two stories high, at a cost of four thousand dollars. The last Wednesday in the following April, REV. HERVEY WILBUR opened the school and with a female assistant taught one year. In his advertisement he called the school a *Classical Seminary for Young Ladies*. In May, 1827, JAMES W. WARD began, and he continued to March, 1828.

The Seminary.—In 1818 Rev. Joseph Emerson, a descendant of Thomas, of Ipswich in 1642, opened in Byfield the pioneer school for educating young ladies. Two of his assistant pupils, Miss Grant and Miss Lyon, went out and opened schools on the same plan. These designs were not long in maturing; female schools soon became a settled fact, and the proprietors of the Ipswich Academy, imbibing the sentiment, made their school a seminary, and, in the well-chosen words of another,

"Ipswich was favored for nearly half a century with a celebrated school for young ladies. A large and commodious edifice, erected in 1827, was in April, 1828, placed without rent in the hands of Miss Z. I. Grant, then already well and widely known as an instructor. Many of her scholars followed her from the Adams Female Academy in Derry, N. H., where she had taught with great success, and her Ipswich School became at once the resort of young ladies from all parts of the country. Her able associate, Mary Lyon, and other competent assistants helped her to make it one of the best in the land. She arranged a course of study, liberal for the times, established regular classes—junior, middle and senior—to which students were admitted on examination, and introduced the custom of conferring diplomas on those who completed the course. She made education the handmaid of religion, the Bible a daily study, and the school a nursery of character and scholarship. Her scholars were in great demand as teachers, and so known and prized for purity of intention and active usefulness that wherever they went their presence was a recommendation and advertisement of the Seminary.

"Miss Grant's hope of founding a college for ladies at Ipswich was frustrated more by the delicate state of her health than by the want of funds, but her ideas were happily incorporated in the Mt. Holyoke Seminary by her associate, Mary Lyon, its eminent founder. Miss Grant resigned the charge of the school in 1834, having had during her eleven years at Ipswich 1455 scholars, of whom 120 were full graduates, and to that date twenty had become missionaries of the American Board, and 422 teachers in various parts of our own country.

"In 1841 Miss Grant was married to Hon. Wm. B. Barrister, of New-

buryport; she survived in honor and usefulness till 1874. Her memory is preserved in an excellent volume, "The Use of a Life," printed by the American Tract Society.

"In the spring of 1844 the trustees, after various changes and disappointments, installed Rev. and Mrs. John P. Cowles as principals. Mr. Cowles was a graduate of Yale College, class of 1826, and has been professor of Hebrew in the Oberlin Theological Seminary, while Mrs. Cowles, for ten years before her marriage, had been associated either as pupil or teacher with Miss Grant or Miss Lyon. They brought to their work industry, energy and zeal, and with the aid of vigorous and accomplished assistants, mostly of their own training, they not only kept up the previous moral and religious tone of the institution, but raised its classical and literary character to equal, if not surpass, the general advance in the country. Young ladies, from one to two hundred, according to the accommodations for boarding in the village, soon gathered around them, often continuing with them three, four or five years before graduation.

"Although the stockholders had granted the use of their property rent free, yet, for the sake of much needed improvements, the principals bought it and added to it the adjacent Dutch estate, thus extending the grounds to the river, and by means of fencing, terracing, grading and planting fruit and ornamental trees, shrubs and vines, they transformed it into one of the fairest, as it had always been one of the almiest and healthiest, sites of the village. For thirty-two years they continued their onward and upward way, ever teaching and training minds in the line of natural development, faithful study, careful investigation and unshackled freedom and independence of thought. Their students, no less than Mrs. Barrister's, have enrolled themselves as thinkers, toilers, teachers and writers, whose names their country-men and country-women will not soon nor willingly let die."

The school was closed in 1876.

SUNDAY-SCHOOLS.—One of the most powerful educational agencies of the present time is the Sunday-school. Our schools enroll as many scholars as the day schools and even more. They embrace all ages, and although they have one grand central theme there is a correlation of themes, which gives breadth and scope to their work and enhances their influence and importance. The youngest are taught to talk, to read, to memorize; others study geography, history, biography, and still others comparative ethics, and the methods and principles of Christian living, preparing the mind and heart and soul for an intelligent reception of the gift of eternal life. As reported, there are 8,034,478 scholars thus engaged in the United States, seven millions of whom are children and youth. The same report estimates nine million children and youth not yet reached—a glorious work and opportunity. The schools here were organized in the First and South Churches in 1816, and at Linebrook about 1818. In 1832 or 1833 the First Church school had two hundred scholars and three hundred and eighty-four volumes in the library; the South Church school had two hundred scholars and four hundred and fifty volumes; the Methodist Church school one hundred and thirty scholars and three hundred and ninety volumes. The First Church school now has two hundred scholars and three hundred and fifty volumes. The Line Brook Church school fifty scholars and two hundred and fifty volumes. These teachers labor without pay; they give their time and exertions for the love they bear the cause. Their influence upon the moral and social condition of the town is great, and their office deserves a more helpful public recognition.

LIBRARIES.—There were two libraries in town in 1833. They were called the social and the religious, and had each about three hundred volumes. They are now out of remembrance. One was kept in the town house, and unpaid fines and dues excluded one and another of the proprietors till only two or three remained, when the books were divided to each, and the library closed.

The present "Free Public Library" was founded in 1868 by the munificence of Captain Augustine Heard. It was opened to the public, March 1, 1869. Captain Heard donated the building, three thousand volumes, and an endowment fund of \$10,000, making a grand total of about \$40,000. This gift was supplemented by Prof. Daniel Treadwell, of Harvard College, who gave his private library, some valuable paintings and a fund of \$20,000. These princely gifts have made the lives of these gentlemen a perpetual blessing. The trustees are Hon. George Haskell, Zenas Cushing, Joseph Ross and *ex officio*, the principal of the Manning High School and the pastor of the First Congregational Church. Miss Lydia Caldwell has been the librarian from the very first and has proved herself very efficient. The library contains some more than ten thousand volumes, which have been selected with great care, especially the works of fiction, which are scrupulously standard, and which constitute three-fourths of the books loaned.

BOOKS.—New England's first book of poetry was by Mrs. Anna Bradstreet, early of Ipswich. One of the first histories of New England was by an Ipswich clergyman, William Hubbard. The first Latin book printed in America was by Rev. John Norton, of Ipswich. The "Body of Liberties," containing the essence of our civil rights to-day, and the "Simple Cobbler of Agawam," long to be remembered as an old-time classic, were the work of the author, preacher, jurist and scholar, Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich. These are a few of the most illustrious names. For two centuries, Ipswich clergymen and scholars issued many publications; but now the profession of authorship precludes the double vocation that formerly obtained, and clergyman and scholar and author have each his respective province. A little volume of poems, from the pen of Mr. Edward G. Hull, was issued in 1886. Mr. John Patch has published a volume of poems. He was a poet of very high, if not the highest rank. He had genius of a marked character. His compositions evince poetic fervor and keen appreciation of both moral and physical beauty. He had warm partialities for the sea and all that concerns it, and for nature in all her varying moods. Many of his best poems are sea pictures and descriptions of rural scenes. His versification is noble, and his poems in general have worthy completeness. A tone of calm elevation and hopeful contemplation is well sustained throughout. The rhythm is well modulated, and in some of his shorter

poems inexpressibly pathetic. His poems are richly ideal, and abound in detached images of exceeding beauty and of high merit.

NEWSPAPERS.—One of the best popular educators is a carefully edited family newspaper. The first newspaper started here was *The Ipswich Journal*. It was issued weekly by John H. Harris, who began its publication in July, 1827, and discontinued it August, 1828. The next venture was *The Ipswich Register*, edited by Eugene F. W. Gray, and published by Gray & Smith. It was a weekly; it began June 1, 1837, and, we presume, was issued last, May 25, 1838. The next was *The Ipswich Clarion*, begun February 23, 1850, and issued fortnightly by Timothy B. Ross. It was folio and very newsy. The first Saturday in January, 1868, the *Ipswich Bulletin* first appeared. It continued till about August 1st. The proprietor, Mr. Charles W. Felt, of Salem, proposed to furnish a paper to each of several towns, cheaply, by having local correspondents who were to manage their respective localities, and by changing the name of the print to correspond. Thus the *Rockport Quarry* and the *Ipswich Bulletin* were the same with change of name. The plan was new, an advance thought, and had merits, besides being the first deviation from the old method. Soon after came the "patent" sheets, then stereotyped stories and news. The next was *The Ipswich Advance* with Mr. Edward B. Putnam as editor and proprietor. He began July 3, 1871, and continued till March 16, 1872, when Edward L. Davenport and Frederick W. Goodwin, having purchased the establishment, began its publication as *The Ipswich Chronicle*. They ran it about ten months, and Mr. Goodwin sold his interest to his partner, who alone began January 4, 1873, and continued four years, when Lyman H. Daniels bought it and began its publication January 6, 1877. Mr. Daniels associated with him, January 1, 1881, Mr. I. J. Potter, who purchased Mr. Daniels' interest, June 4th, of the same year, and September 9, 1882, changed the large, unwieldy folio to the present neat quarto. Within a year or two, Mr. Potter has associated himself with his brother, J. M. Potter, and is now joint proprietor of the *Ipswich Chronicle*, the *Amesbury Villager*, the *Lynn Reporter*, the *Lynn Bee*, and the *Yankee Blade*, Boston. Recently, September 10, 1886, began *The Ipswich Independent*, a sizable folio, edited by Mr. Charles G. Hull.

THE BURLEY FUND.—Captain William Burley was a native of Ipswich, born January 6, 1750. He died in Beverly December 22, 1822, and left to his native town a bequest of fifty dollars to be paid annually for ten years "for the sole purpose of teaching poor children to read and instructing them in the principles of the Christian religion." The town voted, April 7, 1823, "expressive of their respect to his memory." The executors agreed with the town that the equity should be liquidated in one payment. Accordingly, an act of incorporation, dated June 18,

1825, was obtained, and "Nathaniel Lord, Jr., and William Conant, Jr., Esquires, Josiah Brown and John Kimball, gentlemen, and Daniel Cogswell, merchant," became a "body politic" by the name of "The Trustees of the Burley Educational Fund in Ipswich." The amount of the trust was five hundred dollars, but the Sunday-schools and the Bible societies, and our admirable system of free schools and school-books, are performing the mission of this bequest almost entirely, and the fund only labors to grow. It is now seven thousand five hundred dollars. Some future Legislature may reappropriate it, when, in a maturer growth and strength, it will perform a wider range of service, and the generous thoughtfulness of the donor build wiser and better than he planned.

ABRAHAM HAMMATT.—Among the men who have fostered the educational growth of our town, and deserve a warm sentiment of regard, is Mr. Hammatt. He was born in Plymouth in 1780 of Puritan ancestry, and there learned the trade of rope-making. In 1800 he removed to Bath, Me., and began business for himself. Years of industry and frugality gave him a competence. He then devoted his time and talents to literature and science, for which he had a fine taste. He was said to have been the best scholar in Bath, not excepting the men of any of the learned professions. He died August 9, 1854, aged seventy-four years. About eighteen years before, he removed to this town. He was a member of the New England Historical-Genealogical Society, and was by them considered a true antiquarian and an accurate genealogist. In his death they sustained a severe loss. He was for a long time feoffee of the grammar school and member of the Town School Board. He was an earnest and efficient officer, and his genial presence was always welcome in the school-room. In his later years he prepared "Early Inhabitants of Ipswich," copied the ancient inscriptions in the High Street Cemetery, and wrote a bi-centennial history of the grammar school—all noble, serviceable labors. His death closed a blameless, benevolent and useful life.

ANNE BRADSTREET was born in Northampton, England, in 1612. She married at the age of sixteen, and in 1630 came to this country. Her father was Governor Thomas Dudley, her husband Governor Simon Bradstreet. She resided in Ipswich about twenty years, and then removed with her husband to Andover. She was the earliest poet of New England, and was noble and gifted. Rev. Cotton Mather wrote,—"Her poems, divers times printed, have afforded a grateful entertainment unto the ingenious, and a monument for her memory, beyond the stateliest marble." Rev. John Norton calls her "the mirror of her age and the glory of her sex." The second edition of her poems is said "to be the work of a woman honored and esteemed where she lives for her gracious demeanor, her eminent parts, her pious con-

versation, her courteous disposition, her exact diligence in her place, and discreet managing of her family occasions; and, more than so, these poems are the fruit of but some few hours curtailed from her sleep and other refreshments." She was as much loved for gentleness, discretion and domestic diligence as she was admired for her genius, wit and love of learning. Her death occurred September 16, 1672.

CHAPTER XLV.

IPSWICH (*Continued*).

MILITARY AND MARTIAL.

THE SITUATION.—Although this town had a very fortunate situation as regards the Indians, yet, in the same manner, though not to the same extent, as the frontier towns, our ancestors were obliged to be ever on the alert, and ever ready to meet an active display of the treachery, perfidy and jealousy of the red man. As our later New England ancestors planted the school-house by the church, very truly and wisely our early ancestors planted a fort also. The Eastern Indians were jealous, blood-thirsty and cruel, and any day or night their war canoes might float in our harbor. They were active, among other tribes, in plotting mischief and instilling a spirit of dissatisfaction. At the south—in Eastern Connecticut and Western Rhode Island, and extending from the sea several leagues to the north—were the Pequods, a race, the quintessence of jealousy, cruel mischief and murder. Their emissaries were in every camp; they were a scourge from the very first. Every hamlet, every home, was in jeopardy and fear. The sudden rush of attack and the startling war-whoop were their declaration of war, and whoever was surprised thereby paid the penalty with his blood and scalp.

CAUTION.—This condition of circumstances occasioned a careful carriage, and an adequate protection of some weapon of defence. The musket was the white man's *vade mecum* upon the road, in the field and workshop, and at church and home. To meet this emergency the town's people maintained watches and erected forts; powder was kept in store under penalty; night signals and day signals of alarm were established; companies were formed, and the entire populace were minute-men.

MEANS.—In 1622 it was ordered that Saugus, Salem and Agawam assist Boston in building a fort. The next year the Ipswich assistant is ordered to solicit funds for a movable fort at Boston; every man must be trained for service. Daniel Denison and Nicholas Easton have charge of the powder here. The town was to receive its proportion of muskets, bandoleers and rests, just then imported, and to have

the use of two sakers, if they will provide carriages for them.

In 1635 the company was ordered to maintain its officers; eight swords were added to their equipments. In 1636 the military force of the jurisdiction was divided into three regiments—Saugus, Salem, Ipswich and Newbury making one, with John Endicott, Esq., of Salem, colonel; and John Winthrop, Jr., of Ipswich, lieutenant-colonel. The next year it was ordered that "no person shall travel above a mile from his dwelling, except where other dwellings are near, without some arms, upon pain of 12s. for every default;" each town must have a watch-house, and keep a watch; eight annual trainings were ordered; Daniel Denison was commissioned captain.

THE PEQUOD WAR.—This year occurred the memorable Pequod War, wherein Ipswich was represented by twenty-three soldiers and William Fuller as gunsmith. History depicts the overwhelming disaster of the Indians. Therein Francis Wainwright attacked a knot of Pequods, expended his ammunition, broke his gun over them and brought, in two scalps. John Wedgewood was wounded and taken prisoner, and John Sherman was wounded in the neck. The following-named persons were granted from two to ten acres of land for their services: John Andrews, John Burnum, Robert Castell, Robert Cross, Robert Filbrick, Edward Lumus, Andrew Story, William Swnyder, Palmer Tingley, Francis Wainwright and William Whitred. In 1668 Edward Thomas was granted six acres of land for services rendered at some time, against the Indians.

OTHER MEANS.—In 1639 a reservation is made for a fort on Castle Hill, where the land was granted John Winthrop, Jr. The town has two barrels of powder, and may sell, on the county's account, at two shillings per pound; and the following year the meeting-house was used as a watch-house. In 1642 there was a general suspicion and alarm. It was thought the various tribes of Indians had conspired to annihilate the white man, and Ipswich, Rowley and Newbury were ordered to disarm the Merrimac sachem. Forty men went the next day, and not finding the chief, they took away his son as a hostage. The town record allows "twenty men 12d. each per day for three days." That year a retreat for wives and children must be provided; twelve saker bullets were allowed to the town; the town must have special alarms—sentinels who, going to the houses, shall, in case of attack, cry: "Arm, Arm!" This general suspicion and alarm of the colonists was the precursor of the famous colonial league of March 19, 1643, and its earnest, unanswerable though silent advocate. In 1643 worshippers must go in arms to meeting on Lord's day. In 1644 the counties of Essex and Norfolk—which extended from the Merrimac River and included Exeter, Dover and Portsmouth in New Hampshire, while Essex then extended only to the Merrimac—form one regiment,

and Captain Daniel Denison was commissioned colonel.

In 1645 all lads from ten to sixteen must be drilled in the use of the musket, the half-pikes and of bows and arrows. Thomas Whittingham was lieutenant, and Thomas Howlett ensign of the Ipswich company; every town must set a guard, a pike-man and a musketeer, about sunset, and must keep a daily guard on the outskirts and scour the woods for lurking foes; each company was divided in two-third musketeers and one-third pikemen, who were to wear corselets and head-pieces.

In 1648 boys, allowed by their parents or guardians on the training fields, were to be "exercised" in military discipline. In 1649 each town must provide for each fifty soldiers, one barrel of powder, one hundred and fifty pounds of musket bullets, and twenty-eight pounds of match, which, for a long time, subserved the use of flint.

In 1652 a company was to consist of sixty-four or more privates, and to have at least two drums, and the military affairs of each town were to be administered by a committee of magistrates and three chief officers. In 1653 John Appleton was commissioned lieutenant of the troop of horse for the Essex regiment. General Daniel Denison ordered a squad of twenty-seven men from Ipswich and Rowley, to "desery the distant foe, where lodged, or whither fled; or if for fight in motion or in halt;" for it was reported, as ten years before, that a general conspiracy had been formed to sweep the white man from the soil. Each private was allowed a shilling, the sergeant two shillings, and two troopers two shillings, six pence a day for four days.

OFFICERS.—In 1664 the following were confirmed as the officers of the Ipswich Company: Thomas French, ensign; Thomas Burnam, Jacob Perkins and Thomas Wait, sergeants; and Thomas Hart and Francis Wainwright, corporals; and in 1668, John Appleton, captain, and John Whipple, cornet, of the troop. In 1672 a new fort was built; Gen. Denison wrote the Governor that great fear and alarm prevailed; that the enemy had crossed the Merrimac, and that a detachment of fifty men, under Capt. John Appleton, was proceeding to Andover. The following year Ipswich was required to furnish her quota of one hundred men for service against the Dutch.

PHILIP'S WAR.—The year 1675 is memorable for the beginning of King Philip's War. It was a long, agonizing struggle. Philip was sagacious, crafty, of great native mental strength, and as chief of a civilized people, would have been known as their patriotic defender. He was, with all, a powerful monarch, chief of thirty tribes and the powerful Passaconaway was his ally. His eagle-eye scanned the encroachments of the English upon his lands, their usurpation of his fruitful hunting-grounds, their growth in numbers and power, and in all this and more, the doom of his race, which he could no longer brook.



FURTHER MEANS.—"The Indians lurked in every forest and covert; they watched for the lonely settler as he opened his door in the morning, as he was busy at his work in the field, as he rode out on business or followed the forest path to church." The fearful war-whoop, the deadly tomahawk and the treacherous ambuscade were a terror to every English home. The soldiers of every town were ordered to scour and ward to prevent the skulking and lurking of the enemy about it and give notice of danger; the brush along the highway must be cut up; and the watch must not come in till sunrise, when the scouts go out; the inhabitants shall flee to the garrisons for defense, if invaded.

FEARFUL COST OF THE WAR.—The war cost the Colonial League a million of dollars and six hundred lives, of which Ipswich's proportion must have been about forty. Every eleventh house in the colony was burned, and every eleventh soldier killed. Ipswich was represented in Capt. Prentice's troop, and in the "Flower of Essex," that perished at Deerfield, and she furnished her quota of the four hundred and sixty men levied the next year and led by Maj. Samuel Appleton; of eighty men called for sixty days; and of seventy for service in the East.

FATALITIES.—In this war fell Edward Coburn, Thomas Scott, Benjamin Tappan, Freegrace Norton, sergeant John Pettis. John Cogswell was a prisoner. In the great battle of the war,—with the Narragansetts,—three were killed and twenty-two were wounded in the Ipswich Company. One of the saddest events of the war was "the Deerfield Massacre." Of a company of eighty men, known as the "Flower of Essex," forty perished by one fell swoop of the savages. Here Robert Dutch was prostrated by a ball which wounded his head, was mauled with a hatchet, stripped and left for dead. After several hours he was discovered and restored to consciousness. In a list of the names of the slain the following look like Ipswich names: Thomas Manning, Caleb Kimball, Jacob Wainwright, Samuel Whittridge, Josiah Dodge, William Day, John and Thomas Hobbs.

OFFICERS.—In 1680 Ipswich had three companies; the year following a magazine is kept in the meeting-house, and in 1682 the companies' officers were: Capt. Samuel Appleton, Lieut. Thomas Burnum, En. Simon Stacey; Capt. Daniel Eppes, Lieut. John Appleton, En. Thomas Jacobs, Lieut. John Andrews and En. William Goodhue, Jr. In October, Thomas Wade was cornet in place of John Whipple, promoted to lieutenant in place of Lieut. Appleton, who assumed command of the troop upon the death of Capt. John Whipple; and in 1689 Thomas Wade was captain, John Whipple lieutenant, John Whipple, Jr., quarter-master; and under Maj. Samuel Appleton, Simon Stacey was lieutenant and Nehemiah Jewett ensign. That year wards were ordered to guard the churches, during service.

WILLIAM'S WAR.—This year began King Wil-

liam's War, which, by sympathy, extended to and involved New England. Ipswich contributed her proportion of three hundred soldiers to be raised in the county. The Ipswich troops rendezvoused at Haverhill. The following year she furnished her quota of sixty-five recruits from the Essex Middle Regiment, composed of Ipswich, Rowley, Wenham, Gloucester, Topsfield and Boxford, and her quota of four hundred from the Province. Nathaniel Rust was quarter-master in the expedition against Canada, and in 1691 Samuel Ingalls was lieutenant, and Robert Kinsman quarter-master in Thomas Wade's troop. About 1700 the town voted to purchase three field-pieces; to supply themselves with powder and flints; and to repair the watch-house and fort near the meeting-house. The town's proportion of fourteen men from the Essex Middle Regiment was called for; Maj. Samuel Appleton led sixty men to defend Gloucester; Col. Symonds Eppes was ordered to "empress" a man into the service at York in place of Archelaus Adams, whose time had expired, and the colonel was also to hold his regiment for immediate service. The town furnished her quota of ninety men; she stored her powder in the meeting-house; her troops use carbines. In 1697 William Wade was killed and Abraham Foster was wounded. These particulars, in which we have thus far indulged, serve to show the small beginning, the inadequate means, the slow but steady growth and the peculiar phases of primitive warfare.

ANNE'S, GEORGE'S AND FRENCH WARS.—Queen Anne's War followed; it fell with merciless force upon New England. Ipswich was true to English instincts; she honored every call for men with her quota, and gave a devoted and efficient service. Ipswich was represented at Port Royal, in 1707, where Samuel Appleton had a command. In 1710 William Cogswell was killed, and ten years later Samuel Clark was wounded. In 1737 John Hobbs was wounded, and ten years later asked of the General Court pay for his care of the sick at Cape Breton.

So in the Austrian succession, known as King George's War, wherein Louisburg, the Gibraltar of America, was reduced by four thousand fishermen and farmers of New England, with whom served the strength and support of Ipswich homes.

Peace returned in 1748, but it was of short duration; it served only for recuperation and preparation for an intenser struggle. This was known as the French and Indian War, and was waged for conquest; for long years of conflict had demonstrated that the French and English could not live contiguously in peace. Five points of attack were agreed upon, and Ipswich men served at three, Crown-point, Quebec and Nova Scotia. In 1756 the town appropriated £50 for powder and other military stores. Dr. John Caleffé was surgeon in the expedition to Quebec; Abraham Smith and Philemon How died at Louisburg. Mr. Smith made his will about the time of enlisting, and



the "the residue and remainder" of his property to Lachbrook Parish. In 1760 the town voted that "such private soldiers, as are in the war, exclusive of tradesmen and carpenters, shall be excused from their poll-tax." Besides the town's occasional individual appropriations, she met with promptness every provincial demand for men and tax.

This war solved an old and vexatious problem, which is stated and illustrated in Longfellow's unique and beautiful *Evangeline*, and is called *The French Neutral*. In the distribution of that people, Essex County had about two hundred. Ipswich had the families of Francis and John Landrey and Paul Breau, twenty persons. At the expense of the State, the town rented them a house and furnished them with provisions, in which were included, as the State archives show, items of "Cyder and Rum," at a total cost of about a shilling per week for each person. In June, 1758, the General Court ordered that the "sick, infirm and aged" among them be maintained at the expense of the government, but that others must earn their living. In 1760 the province distributes its entire ward among the various towns according to the rate of taxation. Ipswich's proportion was twenty-three. The original number of twenty had been augmented at the time of the distribution by four births, and there had been one death, or else one was removed, to adjust the proportion. Our next notice of them was August 18, 1766, when the town refused to appropriate money to convey them to Canada, and November 25th following, when £20 was voted for their support for that year. They probably soon after removed to Canada. They were apparently a clever, sober, industrious people, and on the whole desirable citizens.

THE REVOLUTION.—Our narrative has now advanced a century and a quarter. Ipswich has assisted, by her treasures and skill and bravery, in silencing the fierce Tarratines, in annihilating the Pequods, in forcing the Narragansetts to sue for peace, in burying King Philip and four thousand of his brave warriors, in gathering scalps in the North for the bounty, in keeping at bay the powerful Pennacocks, and has fought the allied French and Indians, to defend their homes, their religion and their country. What a fearful cost. "The dear purchase of our fathers." But that, appalling as it was, was only part of the price. The war-whoop had hardly ceased its terror, when the precursor of another ordeal stalked through the land and inaugurated the War of *The Revolution*.

Though occasional irritations from the same source had been felt from the early days of the colony, this contest was unexpected. Our fathers had faithfully labored and hoped; they had "fought and bled and died" with only one purpose in reference to their nationality, and that purpose was to be Englishmen "first, last, midst and without end." But while they were English the same spirit that made them true

and devoted patriots, gave them a deep sense of justice, so that they could not brook a scathing insult or endure a flagrant wrong, though they be inflicted by a brother.

For nearly a hundred years they had fought for their homes and freedom to worship God, in the wildest, most barbarous and bloodiest wars. They had sued for no peace; they had begged no quarter. Their brothers across the sea had furnished few troops, little money, and perchance no sympathy; and when the strife for territorial acquisition came, when the valor of English arms was on trial, and the grand old flag beckoned them by its waving folds to service and duty, they stood shoulder to shoulder in the serried ranks with the confident regular; they fought while he fought; conquered where he fled. Mainly by their spirit and skill was English rule established over these verdant hills and picturesque vales, and English arts and arms extended from the Great River on the west to the ocean on the east, and from frozen seas on the north to the delightful savannahs of the south.

For all this devoted service and baptism of blood, not a word of sympathy, nor an expression of thanks, and only a pittance to reimburse an impoverished treasury. The service and baptism only inflamed old jealousies, fashioned new rigors and forged new chains. History is replete with the mockery of justice, the travesty of righteousness, by which a jealous hatred sought to stamp our ancestors as an inferior class and to bind them to perpetual dependence. But the flinty purpose that brought our forefathers to these shores struck fire upon the steel rigors of the laws forged for their subjugation. Magazines of indignation were fired from Maine to Georgia. Subjugate! Why, as well attempt to draw out Leviathan with a hook or to turn back Niagara by command. The seed sown in the compact penned in the cabin of the May Flower had its fruitage in the Declaration of Independence; and while John Adams and Patrick Henry, in advocating the principles of that immortal document, electrified the people, the stout-hearted yeomanry, in town-meeting assembled, voted and recorded the sentiments, and by their votes pledged money and life to the cause. Ipswich met the issue on the threshold with no uncertain voice. "No representation, no taxation," was a sentiment indigenous to her very soul. She recorded her instructions to her representatives, October 21, 1765: "We must maintain the Charter. When our fathers left their native land, they left its laws, its Constitution and its peculiar institutions and customs,—all but what was secured by their Charter. Three things are necessary to make this otherwise: first, the migrations should have been authorized and regulated by legal authority; second, the expense of the colonization should have been borne by the government; and third, the colony should have been sent to settle some place or territory that the nation had before, in



some way or other, made their own, as was usual—if not always—the case with the ancient Romans. But neither of them obtained in this case. Our only hope of freedom in religion and law, and our only ground of patriotism and manhood, is the Charter.” Again, August 11, 1768, the town recorded a vote of thanks to the ninety-two members of the House who stood firm against rescinding the resolves of the last House, and so declared anew the righteousness of the cause and their determination. The town voted Captain Michael Farley delegate to Convention at Boston, to advise measures for the peace and safety of the people. A meeting was “called for February 28, 1770, to determine upon some satisfactory method to prevent the use of that pernicious weed called Tea,” to advise in the matter of withholding our custom from those merchants who traffic in it. A committee, to whom the questions involved were submitted, reported, “That we retrench all extravagances; and that we will, to the utmost of our power and ability, encourage our own manufactures; and that we will not, by ourselves or any for or under us, directly or indirectly, purchase any goods of the persons who have imported, or continued to import, or of any person or trader who shall purchase any goods of said importers, contrary to the agreement of the merchants in Boston and the other trading towns in this government and the neighboring colonies, until they make a public retraction or a general importation takes place.” It was voted also, “that we will abstain from the use of tea ourselves and recommend the disuse of it in our families, until all the revenue acts are repealed.”

THE CRISIS APPROACHING.—Affairs grew in interest and importance; the situation became more trying; but their brave hearts grew braver and stronger. Learning the action of Boston in the crisis, the town, December 17, 1772, recounted the common grievances at length, complimented the metropolis for the stand she had taken, pledged her support and chose the following “Committee of Correspondence”: Captain Farley, Mr. Daniel Noyes and Major John Baker. In December, 1773, the town was gratified with the action taken by Boston and records resolutions of sympathy and firmness of purpose. The people are now fully aroused. June 29, 1774, Daniel Noyes, Deacon Stephen Choate, Captain Michael Farley, John Choate and Nathaniel Farley were voted a committee to see what could be done “in the distressing state of affairs.” The same year a lot of land, fifty by twenty-five feet, east of the town-house, was granted for military discipline; a committee was chosen to fix the compensation of “Minute-Men;” the proposals and resolves of the Continental Congress were adopted; a committee of eleven members was chosen to see that “said resolves are most punctually observed;” and Colonel Michael Farley and Daniel Noyes were members of the Great and General Court ordered to meet at Salem, and, meeting in the absence of the Gover-

nor, resolved themselves into a Provincial Congress and adjourned to Concord.

The next year was 1775, the ever-memorable one in the annals of the province. In April Ipswich met with other towns, by committee, to plan for coast defences; the town voted to hire money to pay “minute men.” Then came the clash of arms the 19th. In May five men were chosen a committee of intelligence; a watch was set on Castle Hill, lest an armed cutter come and take away cattle; Michael Farley and Dummer Jewett were chosen to represent the town in the Provincial Congress at Watertown. It was now time to put none but Americans on guard. Congress ordered that committees of safety and correspondence be sworn. Hence such committees were dismissed, and these chosen and sworn in their stead,—Daniel Noyes, Captain Daniel Rogers, Captain Isaac Dodge, John Crocker, Samuel Lord, Captain Ephraim Kindall, Major Jonathan Cogswell, Captain Abraham Howe, Mr. John Patch, 3d.

THE ALARM.—It was a beautiful moonlight evening of the 18th of April, 1775, when Governor Gage sent out Lieutenant-Colonel Smith and Major Pitcairn, with eight hundred regulars, to seize the stores at Concord. It was Paul Revere and William Dawes who simultaneously started and gave the alarm. The ringing of bells and the firing of guns told the patriots of their needed presence and valor. Early on the 19th, the day when the bloody die was cast, five Ipswich companies of infantry and a troop of horse left their homes for the scene of conflict. They were led by Captains Thomas Burnham, Daniel Rogers, Abraham Dodge, Elisha Whitney, Abraham Howe and Nathaniel Wade, and Colonel John Baker. As Putnam left his cattle yoked in the field, so no less, if not the same, did Ipswich men. Nearly three hundred stout-hearted yeomahry marched to the defence of righteousness against tyranny, with banner streaming and drums beating and hurried pace, “while their zeal outran their footsteps.”

The following rolls of Ipswich minute-men have been gleaned from the State archives, and will doubtless gratify many a patriotic interest. They marched upon the alarm of April 19th.

COMPANY ONE.

Captain, Thomas Burnham. *1st Lieut.*, Charles Smith.
2d Lieut., John Farley.

Sergeants.

Daniel Lord. John Potter.
Ebenezer Lord. John Lakenham.

Privates.

Nehemiah Abbott, Nicholas Babcock, Samuel Baker, Elijah Boynton, John Brown, 4th, Isaac Burnham, Jr., Jeremiah Brown, Thomas Caldwell, Thomas Chun, Benjamin Cross, Nathaniel Cross, Nehemiah Choate, Nathaniel Dennis, Benjamin Emerson, Ephraim Fellows, John Fellows, Isaac Fellows, Nathan Fellows, John Glazier, James Harris, John Harris, Abraham Hodgkins, Nathaniel Heard, John Heard, Jr., Thomas Hodgkins, Amos Heard, Ebenezer Kimball, Moses Kinsman, William Kinsman, Abraham Lord, Aaron Lord, Caleb Lord, Samuel Lord, John Manning, Elisha Newman, Samuel Newman, Nathan Parsons, William Goodhue, Francis Pickard, James Pickard, Jr., John Porter, Jeremiah Rose, Simeon Safford, Moses Smith, Jr., Henry Spellar,



Henry Spellar, Benjamin Sweet, Daniel Lowe, Richard Shatswell, Philip Lord, Elisha Treadwell, Samuel Wallis, Nathaniel Wells.

Total pay was £26, 9s, 4d. for thirty miles and three days.

COMPANY TWO.

Captain, Nathaniel Wade. 1st Lieut., Joseph Hodgkins.
2d Lieut., William Dennis.

Sergeants.

Aaron Perkins. Jabez Farley.
Michael Farley, Jr. Thomas Boardman.

Corporals.

Asa Barker. Francis Merrifield.
John Graves. Joseph Appleton, Jr.

Privates.

Thomas Appleton, Samuel Barnham, Stephen Dutch, Jonathan Foster, John Fowler, Jr., Joseph Fowler, 3d, John Fitts, Jr., Isaac Giddings, Daniel Goodhue, Jr., William Goodhue, Ephraim Goodhue, Francis Hovey, Benjamin Heard, John Harris, 5th, Nathaniel Jewett, Abiah Knowlton, Nathaniel Lakeman, Nathaniel Lord, 3d, Charles Lord, Samuel Lord, 5th, James Fuller Lakeman, Nathaniel Ross, Benjamin Ross, Nathaniel Rust, Jr., Jabez Ross, Jr., Kneeland Ross, Thomas Hodgkins, 4th, Henry Spellar, Jabez Sweet, Jr., John Stanwood, Isaac Stauwood, Daniel Stone, Nathaniel Souther, Edward Stacey, James Smith, Nathaniel Treadwell, Ebenezer Lakeman, Nathaniel March, John Peters, Nathaniel Brown.

This company was in service as minute-men till May 10th. The distance was eighty-eight miles and their pay £101, 15s, 2d.

COMPANY THREE.

Captain Abraham How. 1st Lieut. Thomas Foster.
Eos. Paul Lancaster.*

Sergeants.

How. Dresser.*
Smith. Chapman.

Corporals.

Fisk. Chaplin.*
Potter. Abbott.

Drummer, Foster.

Privates.—Jeremiah Smith, John Daniels,* Joseph Chapman,* Caleb Jackson,* Amos Jewett, Jr.,* John Perley, Jonathan Foster, Jr., Samuel Woodbury,* David Chaplin,* Moses Chaplin, Jr.,* Moses Foster, Abraham How, 3d, Allen Foster,* Charles Davis, John Fowler, Jr., Daniel Kimball, Jr., Joshua Dickinson,* George Abbott,* James Smith, Joseph Nelson,* Paulson Foster, Timothy Morse, John Fowler, Elijah Foster, Moses Chaplin,* Daniel Kimball, Allen Perley, Ezekiel Potter, Edmund Tenney,* Moses Conant, John Chapman.

The distance for most of this company was eighty miles, and their total pay was £22 6s, 8d. 2f. Those marked with a star (*) belonged to Rowley-Linebrook, and perhaps two or three others.

COMPANY FOUR.

Captain Daniel Rogers. 1st Lieut. Thomas Burnham.
2d Lieut. Abraham Dodge.

Sergeants.

Martin. Wallis.
Wade. Treadwell.

Corporals.

Kimball. Pearson.
Lord. Appleton.

Privates.—John Andrews, William Baker, Philip Abbott, Jonathan Appleton, Samuel Beal, Benjamin Brown, Thomas Caldwell, Abraham Choate, John Cross, Aaron Day, Jeremiah Day, Thomas Day, Ebenezer Caldwell, Joshua Fitts, Ebenezer Goodhue, Barnabas Dodge, Samuel Henderson, Mark Haskell, John Hodgkins, Thomas Hodgkins, Jr., Obed Jewett, Richard Kimball, Jeremiah Kinsman, Israel Kinsman, Ephraim Jewett, Nathaniel Grant, Ebenezer Hovey, Purchase Jewett, John Lord, Daniel Lord, Jr., Gideon Parker, Nathaniel Perley, Daniel Potter, Joshua Smith, Simon Smith, Robert Stocker, Richard Sutton, Moses Treadwell, Asa Warner, William Warner.

Their distance was sixty miles, their time was four days, and their total pay was £28 12s, 6d.

TROOP OF HORSE.

Captain Moses Jewett.
Cornet, John Kinsman.

Lieut. Robert Perkins.
Quartermaster, Elisha Brown.

Corporals.

Nathaniel Smith
Nehemiah Choate.
Trumpeter, John Brown.

Pelatiah Brown.
Nehemiah Brown.
Clerk, John Pearson.

Privates.—Ebenezer Brown, John Bradstreet, Samuel Bragg, Allen Baker, Francis Brown, Joseph Brown, Jonathan Cummings, Pelatiah Cummings, William Conant, Abner Day, John Emerson, Joseph Goodhue, Seth Goodhue, Mark Haskell, John Harris, Nehemiah Jewett, Aaron Jewett, Michael Kinsman, Joseph Metcalfe, Nehemiah Patch, Thomas Smith, Zebulon Smith, Nehemiah Jewett, Jr.

The distance was sixty miles, they served ninety-nine days, and their total pay was £16 9s, 3d. 2f.

Ipswich hamlet furnished thirty-eight minute-men, under Captain Elisha Whitney. They were out three days, and returned to Cambridge, 1st of May.

Captain Abraham Dodge's company did not go into the conflict, except such as volunteered. They were encamped in sight.

THE WAR.—They, however, soon returned; but enlistments immediately began. Captain Abraham Dodge enlisted forty men; Captain Gideon Parker, twenty-two; Captain Elisha Whitney, thirty-nine; Captain Daniel Rogers, fifty-one; Captain Nathaniel Wade, sixty-nine. Our statement is necessarily short. Enlistments were constant. The only business that received first attention was the war. The citizens contributed of their service, their sympathy, their kindness, their money, their prayers for the one great end. They were represented in every department. Our soldiers fought at Bunker Hill, and helped drive Howe from Boston. They fought under Gates at the North, on Long Island, in New Jersey and Pennsylvania and Rhode Island. They helped conquer Burgoyne, and they guarded his troops at Prospect Hill, near Boston. They suffered in the retreat through New Jersey and at Valley Forge.

Colonel Hodgkins wrote February 22, 1778: "What our soldiers have suffered this winter is beyond expression, as one-half has been barefoot and all most naked all winter; the other half very badly on it for clothes of all sorts; and to com Pleat our messery, very shorte ont for provisions. Not long since our brigade drue but an-half days Lounce of meet in eight days. But these defettis the men bore with a degree of fortitude becoming soldiers." The bloody foot-track in the "Flight through Jersey" and the extreme sufferings at Valley Forge are no myth. "These benign institutions, the dear purchase of our fathers, are ours," bought at a price unparalleled. On June 10, 1776, "Voted that this Town instruct their representatives that if the Continental Congress should, for the safety of the said Colonies, declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, they, the said inhabitants, will solemnly engage with their lives and fortunes to support them in the measure." The town had expended November 28, 1777,



£1737 5s. • That year was voted £1000 for recruits. In February the town voted to pay, in addition to Continental and State bounty, £18 for three years, or during the war, or *in lieu* of it, £6 for the first year, £8 for the second, and £10 for the third, if detained so long.

In May £16 was voted for eight months' men. Voted in September that the selectmen supply the families of soldiers, who were enlisted for three years, or during the war. In November a committee was chosen for that purpose according to law, and it was voted to raise £100 for the purpose. In April, 1777, at a very full meeting, the town approved the General Court's order to prevent monopoly and oppression, and instructed the selectmen "not to approbate any innholder or retailer that does not strictly adhere to it." In 1778 the town instructed her representatives to vote for the "Articles of Confederation," and voted to hire £900 to supply the families of soldiers in the Continental Army. In 1779 voted to raise £3000 for town charges and war services, and £12,000 (old tenor) to pay men to be hired, if need be. In 1780 the town's proportion of supplies is 106 shirts, 106 pairs of shoes and stockings, 33 blankets and 31,800 pounds of beef. Voted £1200 for hire of soldiers. In March, 1781, voted £1000 to pay interest,—taxed for that purpose alone. In 1781 voted £500 for soldiers' pay, £220 for Rhode Island service, £400 for hiring four months' men, £200 for clothing, and £300 for beef. On January 1, 1782, the town earnestly desires instruction to be given the Commission for negotiating peace, that they make "the right of the United States to the fisheries an indispensable article of treaty." The town voted £440 to pay four men lately engaged, and old Continental soldiers. These extracts exhibit the town as among the foremost in sustaining the cause and the most discerning in the conditions of treaty. Our fathers hailed with joy the return to the arts of peace and the amenities of home.

BIOGRAPHICAL.—Conspicuous in our Revolutionary history is the name of COL. NATHANIEL WADE. He began as captain of "Minute-Men," in the town during their "discipline" for service. He led his company out on the memorable 19th of April, and commanded them at Bunker Hill, where they rendered efficient service. He was afterwards in the siege of Boston, and participated in the joyous acclamations of the citizens, when Gen. Howe sailed with his army, navy and Tories for Halifax. He was in the campaign on Long Island, participated in the dexterous maneuvering of the troops through New York, and in the noble stands at Harlem Heights and White Plains. He suffered in the "Flight through New Jersey," where "many of the patriots had no shoes and left their blood-stained foot-prints on the frozen ground;" and at Valley Forge, where a paucity of provisions and clothing severely tried their patience and endurance and cemented their patriotism. He attained the

rank of colonel in the Continental Army. He was actively engaged in the whole campaign in Rhode Island. He was president of a court-martial there, December 23, 1777. He was under Gen. Arnold at West Point in 1780, and upon Arnold's defection succeeded to the command of the fort. On this occasion Gen. Washington wrote him, under date of September 25, 1780:

"Gen. Arnold has gone to the Enemy. . . . The command of the Fort for the present devolves upon you. I request you will be as vigilant as possible, and as the Enemy may have it in contemplation to attempt some enterprise even to-night, against those Posts, I wish you to make, immediately after receipt of this, the best disposition you can of your force, so as to have a proportion of men in each work on the west side of the River. You will hear from or see me to-morrow."

Col. Wade was suspicious for some time, that all was not right about Gen. Arnold; but the general was so vigilant and adroit, that nothing could be obtained upon which to base a charge.

The most tearfully joyous occasion of the colonel's life was probably the greeting of Gen. Lafayette, when the latter visited this country in 1824. At a collation provided by Col. Treadwell in honor of the town's distinguished guest at which were delegations from Ipswich, Haverhill and Newburyport, Col. Wade was presented to the general. Their embrace was cordial and "affecting beyond description." They had been companions in arms; they had planned together for success in the noble cause; they had fought for the same purpose; they had hoped together for the fullest realization; and now they rejoiced together in the grand consummation and the glorious fruition of their hope. Their converse was earnest; their theme was familiar and involved points of the deepest interest; and their feelings at times bearing sway "became too strong for utterance."

Col. Wade retired from the army near the close of the war and returned home; but upon the insurrection led by Captain Daniel Shays, he entered the service under Gen. Lincoln and commanded the Middle Essex Regiment. The winter campaign was particularly severe, and he often afterwards spoke of his sufferings. This campaign closed his martial career.

He enjoyed the esteem and confidence of his fellow-citizens, and held many important civil trusts as their gifts. He was town clerk from 1784 to 1814, and Representative to the General Court from 1795 to 1816 inclusive, and was county treasurer twenty-five years. He is said to have possessed a remarkable equanimity and mildness of temper. Says one, "He did not have a blot on his character." He died October 26, 1826, at the age of seventy-seven years.

Another pleasant name of Revolutionary memory is COL. JOSEPH HODGKINS. He was first a lieutenant in Captain Wade's company of "Minute-Men." He was one of the score or more who were voluntarily led by Captain Wade into the battle of Bunker Hill. He was in the siege of Boston, the campaign of Long Island, the battles of Harlem Heights, White Plains and Princeton. He witnessed the surrender of Bur-

boyne's army and guarded it on parole near Boston. He wrote numerous letters to his family while he was in arms, valuable mementos of his noble patriotism and descriptive of his campaigns, his sentiments and his sufferings, to which reference is made in the quotation above. He succeeded Col. Wade as commander of the Middle Essex Regiment, was Representative to the General Court from 1810 to 1816 inclusive, and held various town offices. It is needless to speak of his exemplary character. He died September 25, 1829, eighty-six years old.

Another illustrious man, the Gen. Denison of this period, who deserves an extensive notice, was GEN. MICHAEL FARLEY. He was a man of commanding influence, of varied ability and comprehensive views. He was a tanner by trade. He excelled in Statecraft. He was elected for many years to the principal town offices. He was a long time town treasurer and feoffee of the grammar school. During the Revolutionary period he was vigilant, earnest, active, efficient, in meeting, in behalf of the town, the demands of the government, for men, clothing and provisions. He was a member of the General Court from 1775 to 1779 inclusive, and of the Provincial Congress 1774 and 1775. The General Court according to the Governor's warrant for the election was to convene at Salem October 5th. Gen. Farley was chosen a deputy. Meanwhile the Governor recalled his warrants, but ninety deputies, including Gen. Farley, appeared and after waiting a day for the Governor, resolved themselves into a Provincial Congress and adjourned to meet at Concord the 11th. He was high sheriff, was a major-general of the militia, and a member of the executive council, that administered the government from 1775 to 1780. When Gen. Lafayette came to this country to offer his services to this government, he came to Ipswich and was the guest of Gen. Farley. The general was a very polite man, and "remarkably hospitable." Rev. Levi Frisbie wrote: "He was generous, public-spirited, humane and impartial; a great loss to the town and country." He died June 20, 1789, aged seventy years.

GENERAL DANIEL DENISON.—These annals of the wars would be very incomplete without some notice of General Daniel Denison, the foremost man of the times. He was born in England in 1612, and came to this country with his parents when about nineteen years old. He was at first a citizen of Roxbury, then of Newton, now Cambridge. He married Patience, daughter of Governor Thomas Dudley, and shortly after chose a permanent home in this town, then the home of his wife's father. He entered upon public life shortly after his majority, being elected deputy in 1635. He was deputy the five following years and in 1648, 1649, 1651 and 1652. Three years he was speaker. He was town clerk in 1636, and probably held the office till Mr. Symonds was chosen in 1639. In 1636 he was made captain. In 1638 he, with

others, began a plantation at Merrimack, now Salisbury. In 1641 he was one of a committee to advance trade in the town. In 1643 he had a grant of two hundred acres to encourage him to remain here. Soon after the union of the colonies, March 19, 1643, he was called as a military leader. In May of that year he was one of five who were to organize and equip an army and set up fortifications. He was chosen the leader or drill master of the Ipswich militia, and they agreed to pay him £24 7s. annually. *Wonder-working Providence* calls him "a good souldier, of quick capacity, not inferior to any other of these chief officers."

He was one of three commissioners with full powers to treat with D'Aulney in the *La Tour-D'Alney imbroglio*. In 1647 he was made a justice in the Inferior Court. He assisted in organizing and establishing the grammar school and was one of the feoffees. He was made major-general in 1653, and was appointed several times afterwards. In 1657 he was one of a committee to adjust the claims of Gorges to Kittery, York and other places, which they did with satisfaction. In May, 1658, he was requested by the General Court thoroughly to revise and codify the colonial laws, for which service he received half of Block Island, which was sold in 1660 for four hundred pounds. In 1660 he joined the Ancient and Honorable Artillery and was chosen their commander. In June, 1664, himself, Bradstreet and Symonds, who were sometime Ipswich men, prepared a "Narrative" defending the course of Massachusetts in "the great confederacy of colonial times," against the accusation of the other colonies. He entered the Quaker controversy with decided views, and advocated strenuous measures to prevent their "mischief." He took an active part in the controversy with the Dutch, and it was chiefly by his advocacy that war was averted. He was one year colonial secretary.

In the troubles between King and colony in 1660, Denison and Bradstreet counseled "the golden mean," basing their advocacy upon kingly prerogative and law, a course which was wise and prevailed. He was called to the front again when the Dutch took possession of New York. He was the general commanding the Bay forces in the King Philip's War. His general's commission for this war, dated June 26, 1675, is in the State Archives, 67: 206. This war closed his military career. In 1680 he was chosen assistant, an office which he held, by re-election, till his death, September 20, 1682.

He was continually in the public service, and we know nothing of his private life except as it is mirrored in that service. The fact that he was a deputy ten years, assistant twenty-nine years, major-general eleven years, inter-colonial commissioner eight years, shows, after allowing for double service, that his public career began soon after he attained his majority; that he was continually honored by his towns-

men shows his home life to have been exemplary, and that public honors crowned the service of his youth, his manhood and his age, exhibits him a man of varied talents and learning, of stout-hearted virtue, of fullest integrity and unswerving purpose. He was quick to adapt means to ends, was a persuasive advocate, a faithful, judicious and wise counselor. He was an earnest Christian man and defender of the faith. He was one of the greatest men of his day.

A PAINFUL INCIDENT.—It is proper here to digress a little and relate an incident of peculiar sadness, the capital punishment of a youth of sixteen, who was accidentally made partaker of a heinous crime.

Jabez Ross was the father of seventeen children, of whom nine were living in 1775—six sons and three daughters. Five of the sons were in the army of the Revolution; four fought at Bunker Hill; one perished in the army of the North; three were enlisted for three years, and one, Ezra, the youngest, for one year.

This son, only sixteen years of age, is the subject of this narrative. He had served the term of his enlistment and was returning to the home of his parents. The toils, hardships and sufferings of the war had been too much for his tender years, and he fell sick at Brookfield. He was brought very low, and for a time his life depended upon kind attention and watchful care. Providence placed him in the home of Mr. John Spooner, whose wife gave him "every kind office and mark of attention that could endear and make grateful a child of sixteen, sick and destitute." "After the evacuation of Ticonderoga, in his march to reinforce the Northern army, gratitude for past favors led him to call on his old benefactress, who then added to the number of her kindnesses and engaged a visit on his return."

The woman in question was Mrs. Bathsheba Spooner; she was the sixth and favorite child of Chief-justice Ruggles, a graduate of Harvard, a man of wealth, honor and social distinction. She was born February 17, 1745; was in the vigor of womanhood and well educated. She had inherited wealth and social pride, and was haughty and imperious. Mr. Spooner, her husband from 1766, was a retired trader, a weak character, and the marriage was not happy. Dissension followed dissension, till she hated him and flew to criminal indulgence. Ross had a fine *physique*, and stature far beyond his years. He was youthful, ruddy, active, social, handsome. His youth and inexperience unconsciously became the prey of the strong-minded, artful, seductive, profligate woman. Once in her toils, his youth furnished him with no power to extricate himself. He heard her hellish proposals and her flattering promises, but he "never attempted an execution of the detestable crime, notwithstanding repeated solicitation and as frequent opportunities, until on an accidental meeting he became a party with those ruffians who, without his privity, had fixed on the time and place."

The news of the deed spread far and wide; the case became famous as the crime was heinous. Its secret could not long be kept; the perpetrators were soon ferreted out, and Mrs. Spooner, two vagabond soldiers and young Ross were arrested. The trial was short, the evidence conclusive and the sentence severe and condign. Much sympathy was felt for the woman because of her *delicate condition*, and for Ross because of his accidental knowledge of the deed, his youth and inexperience; but several petitions for executive clemency, in both cases, were of no avail. The criminals met their fate upon the gallows, July 2, 1778. This history is a solemn warning to youth, and will ever excite our sympathy and pity.

SHAYS' REBELLION.—The town was active in suppressing the Shays' Rebellion in 1786-87. This grew out of the scarcity of money, caused by the interruption of trade and the long, tedious drain upon the energies and finances of the government by the late war, and was led by Captain Daniel Shays, who himself participated in the Nation's struggle for freedom. Ipswich furnished twenty-five men, who were out sixty days, a winter campaign of great severity.

WAR OF 1812.—In speaking of the War of 1812, we must begin with the Embargo Act, or, as the opponents of the administration, spelling it backwards, called it "The *O-grab-me Act*." England and France were in a desperate struggle. Between the "Berlin" and "Milan" decrees of Napoleon on the one hand and the "Orders in Council" of England on the other, the commerce of the United States suffered in the extreme. We reasoned, we remonstrated, we expostulated—all in vain. England was haughty, morose, insulting. She vauntingly searched our vessels and impressed our seamen, with apparent impunity. This government retaliated by passing the "Embargo Act," by which all American vessels were prohibited from sailing for foreign ports, all foreign vessels from taking out cargoes, and all coasting vessels were required to give bonds to discharge their cargoes in the United States. The effect of this act was to embitter political parties more deeply and to work disastrously upon the remnant of our commerce. It fell particularly heavy upon Boston and Essex County, of which Ipswich was an important element and factor. The feeling was so intense in Massachusetts—and Ipswich representatives aided in expressing that feeling—that the President was informed "that New England, if the measure were persisted in, would separate from the Union, at least until the obstacles to commerce were removed; that the plan had already been adjusted, and it would be supported by the people." In 1808 the obnoxious act was in part repealed.

But our difficulty with England continued. She stirred up the Indians to prey upon our western border; she searched our vessels upon the high seas; she stationed vessels at the entrances of our harbors, and there searched our vessels and impressed our seamen under the pretense that they were English born. In

eight years nine hundred American vessels were captured, and more than six thousand seamen had been impressed. These wrongs had to be avenged. The United States at last declared war June 19, 1812. It was a Democratic measure and was bitterly opposed by the Federalists, and the seaports were particularly bitter.

A short time before the declaration of war our town held a convention to consider "the momentous subject of our national affairs," to reply to communications from Boston and Salem and to pass upon addresses from Congress and the Legislature. They declared "that the county of Essex has of late been most grossly misrepresented to the agents of our country by men in whom this town have no confidence; they animadverted upon the administration; they 'were not convinced that *any* war in *any* case should be declared;" and they exclaimed, "Who is not convinced that enlarging the power of the authors and aiding the common enemy of free States was its prime object!" They heartily approved the minority address of Congress, and declared the address of the State House of Representatives to be a true expression of the will of the people. The records further declare "We are, nevertheless, determined to do our duty to bring our beloved and afflicted country to a better state of things."

A company of "Sea Fencibles" was raised, and commanded by Major Joseph Swasey, captain; Colonel Joseph Hodgkins, first lieutenant; Jabez Farley, second lieutenant; and Colonel Thomas Wade, orderly. Of the three hundred men raised in Essex County, Ipswich furnished her quota, and October 3, 1814, voted to make the pay of drafted men seventeen dollars per month for the time in actual service. Ipswich commerce, however, never recovered from the stroke.

The last of these war veterans to fall was Thomas Smith. He died September 29th of last year, at the great age of ninety-three years, three months and twenty-six days. He was a hatter by trade, but had not worked at it since the use of machinery in that industry. He drew a pension for many years. He was a good kind of man, always well posted in Democratic measures and principles, was of a retiring disposition, generous and a good citizen. He never married.

THE REBELLION.—The spirit with which Ipswich entered the war against the Rebellion was fervent and active. It was a vital resurrection of the same spirit that bearded the tyranny of Andros, and that pledged life and treasure to support the Declaration of Independence. She met the issue squarely and effectively. At an initial meeting she voted three thousand dollars in aid of the families of volunteers, which she supplemented from time to time with ample supply. Her bounties were commensurate with those of sister towns. She was instant in season and out of season in providing comforts and delicacies for the

soldier upon the field and in the hospital. There were committees of the town, of the societies, of the churches, of the lodges and of the citizens, vying with each other in "the labor of love." The town's average enrollment during the war was about three hundred and eighty. She furnished about three hundred and seventy-five. She furnished her full quota upon every call. Fifteen of her men were commissioned officers. At the end of the war she had furnished a surplus of thirty-three men. She expended \$52,692; \$13,200 exclusively of State aid.

THE MONUMENT.—When the cruel war was over, in 1869 the town selected a conspicuous and central location, and erected upon the rock-ribbed earth, at a cost of two thousand eight hundred dollars, a slightly granite memorial, "a single shaft, simple and plain," commemorative of her patriot dead. The front panel, which faces the north, is inscribed,—

"ERECTED
BY THE TOWN OF IPSWICH
IN MEMORY OF HER
BRAVE AND LAMENTED SONS
WHO GAVE THEIR LIVES TO
THEIR COUNTRY IN THE WAR
FOR UNION AND LIBERTY
1861-1865."

The other panels record their names. On the plinth in front is the year "1871," when the shaft was erected; on the west, "THEIR DEEDS WE CHERISH;" on the south, "OUR PATRIOT DEAD;" and on the east, "THEIR RECORD OUR UNION."

When the Roman matron, Cornelia, was asked to exhibit her jewels, she *naïvely* turned towards her boys and said, "These are my ornaments." These are our jewels.

THE ROLL OF HONOR.—[The roll includes the names of those who died in the service, and have their names upon the soldiers' monument. The first semi-colon is the name; second, age; third, company; fourth, branch of service; fifth, mustered in; sixth, mustered out; seventh, remarks. The abbreviations are: B., battalion; Bat., battery; Cav., cavalry; d., died, or dead; H. A., heavy artillery; I., infantry; ss., sharpshooters; tr., transferred; V. R. C., veteran relief corps; en., expiration of term of enlistment.]

Andrews, Luther B.; 31; D; 48 I.; 10 Oct. '1; d. 2 June, '4.
Barker, John A.; 42; I; 23 I.; 9 Oct. '1; d. Phila. 30 Aug. '4.
Batchelder, Chas. P.; 18; L; 1 H. A.; 28 Feb. '2; d. of wounds, Washington, 23 Aug. '4.
Bridges, Gelois F.; 23; I; 23 I.; 16 Oct. '1; d. Richmond prison, Va., 16 May, '4.
Bridges, John O.; 27; I; 23 I.; 16 Oct. '1; d. Newbern, N. C., 26 April, '2.
Brown, Henry A.; 18; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept. '1; d. Newbern, N. C., 21 April, '2.
Brown, Jeremiah W.; 19; —; 4 Bat. H. A.; 24 Feb. '4; 14 Oct. '5.
Butler, Pierce L.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. 2 Jan., '5.
Cash, William; 33; L; 1 H. A.; 20 Mch., '2; d. Andersonville, 26 Mch., '2.
Chambers, Nathl.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Patrick Station, 16 Feb., '5.
Clarke, James A.; 61; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; d. Hatteras Inlet, 7 May, '2.



Cowles, Henry A.; 18; K; 150 O. Nat. G'ds; 15 April, '4; d. Fort Saratoga, 14 July, '4.
 Crowley, Peter; 22; G; 1 H. A.; 4 Dec., '3; d. of wounds, near Petersburg, Va.
 Dow, Chas. H.; 18; I; 23 I; 16 Oct., '1; kld. Cold Harbor, 3 June, '4.
 Estes, William A.; 19; I; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; made prisoner Andersonville, 22 June, '4.
 Gordon, James; —; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; kld. Spottsylvania, 19 May, '4.
 Gray, William; 34; A; 1 H. A.; 17 Feb., '2; kld. 21 June, '4.
 Harris, Edward; 27; I; 19 I.; 28 Aug., '1; d. Bolivar hosp'tl., 27 Oct., '2.
 Harris, James.
 Hayes, Nathaniel; 34; 2 SS.; 10 July, '3; d. Petersburg, Va., 2 July, '4.
 Jewett, John H.; 20; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; d. Getty's Station, 5 April, '4.
 Jewett, John J.; 31; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; kld. Gettysburg, 2 July, '3.
 Jewett, Lorenzo T.; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Washington of wounds at Spottsylvania, 26 May, '4.
 Jewett, William H.; 42; C; 19 I.; 31 Dec., '1; 20 Oct., '2.
 Johnson, Nathaniel A.; 43; C; 19 I.; 28 Aug., '1; d. Ipswich, 17 May, '4.
 Lavalette, Philip C.; 21; H; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Washington, 6 June, '4.
 Lavalette, Pike N.; 18; A; 14 I.; 6 July, '1; d. Andersonville, 21 Sept., '4.
 Linburg, Marcus; 42; D; 48 I.; 23 Dec., '2; kld. 15 Nov., '3.
 Lord, Caleb H.; 22; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; kld. by SS., 29 June, '4.
 McGregor, Alex. B.; 27; L; 1 H. A.; 11 Mch., '2; kld. New Haven, Ct., 26 Oct., '4.
 McGregor, Parker; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; kld. 16 June, '4.
 Morley, George W.; 19; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; d. 19 July, '3; wounded 13.
 Morris, George; 35; —; Navy; —; drowned "Cumberland," 7 Mch., '2; submarine mine.
 Noyes, James W.; 22; I; 1 H. A.; 20 Feb., '2; kld. Spottsylvania, 18 May, '4.
 Otis, George W.; 26; A; 1 B. H. A.; 29 Feb., '2; d. Ipswich, 19 Nov., '3.
 Patterson, William; 35; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. 16 June, '4, of wounds at Petersburg.
 Peatfield, Joseph S.; 18; I; 23 I.; 4 June, '2; d. Newbern, N. C., 31 July, '3.
 Peatfield, William P.; 18; I; 23 I.; 5 Oct., '1; kld. Whitehall, N. C., 11 Dec., '4.
 Pickard, Samuel R.; —; L; 4 H. A.; —; d. Alexandria, Va., 25 Feb., '5.
 Potter, Daniel J.; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Fort Albany, 27 Nov., '1.
 Richardson, Alfred; —; D; 48 I.; —; d. Baton Rouge, La., 8 Aug., '3.
 Schanks, Daniel B.; 25; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; d. of wounds at Baton Rouge, 20 April, '3.
 Schanks, John G.; 25; —; 4 N. Y. I.; 1 July, '1; d. wounds at Antietam, 20 Sept., '2.
 Schofield, Cornelius; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 2 Aug., '2; d. of wounds, 13 Aug., '4.
 Shattuck, W. William; 21; I; 23 I.; 16 Oct., '1; 2 Jan., '4; re-enlisted; kld. Petersburg.
 Smith, Asa; 31; —; 10 Bat.; 21 Sept., '2; kld. 28 Oct., '4.
 Smith, Charles D.; 28; E; 9 I.; 21 Aug., '3; kld. Spottsylvania, 8 May, '4.
 Smith, J. Albert; 25; A; 1 Cav.; — Aug., '2; d. 24 Oct., '4.
 Thurston, Timothy J., Jr.; 40; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Dec., '1; d. Alexandria, 16 Oct., '4.
 Tozer, John M.; 19; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct., '3; d. Newport News, 20 Oct., '3.
 Turner, Joshua; —; I; 1 H. A.; —; d. Washington, D. C.
 Wade, David L.; 41; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; d. 26 July, '3; wounded Gettysburg, 2.
 Wells, Samuel S.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Andersonville, 4 Nov., '4.
 Whipple, Daniel M.; 22; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; d. Washington, 26 Dec., '4.

ADDITIONS.—The following died in the war, and seem to be connected with Ipswich, but are not upon

the monument. Conant and Howe, and perhaps others, were natives:

Bailey, George W.; 35; L; 1 H. A.; 20 Mch., '2; d. Portsmouth Grove, 15 Aug., '4.
 Conant, Alvin T.; 36; K; 40 I.; 3 Sept., '2; d. 26 Oct., '3.
 Fish, Charles W.; 32; —; 23 I.; 15 Feb., '3; d. Salem 30 Sept., '6.
 Guilford, Hiram; 34; D; 1 H. A.; 17 Feb., '2; d. City Point, 17 Oct., '4.
 Howe, Leonard; 21; H; 2 I.; 11 May, '1; d. Seneca Mills, 28 Nov., '1.
 Leflan, Samuel A.; —; I; 1 H. A.; —; kld. 19 May, '4.
 Murray, Patrick; —; F; 2 I.; —; kld. North Bridgewater.
 Shattuck, James; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; tr. V. R. C.

Those Returned to Citizenship.

Akerman, Joseph L.; 41; K; 2 I.; 9 Aug., '2; 4 Feb., '4; disability; d. 6 June, '70.
 Andrews, Calvin; 18; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Andrews, Charles O.; 22; C; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 9 June, '3; disability.
 Andrews, Daniel H.; 29; H; 24 I.; 27 Nov., '1; close of war; d.
 Andrews, Eben A.; 24; I; 1 H. A.; 19 Mch., '2; 4 Oct., '4.
 Andrews, George M.; 24; I; 16 I.; 12 July, '1; 27 July, '4.
 Andrews, Isaac M.; 38; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Andrews, John J.; 30; E; 19 I.; 23 Feb., '5; 30 June, '5.
 Andrews, Luther B.; 31; D; 48 I.; 10 Oct., '1; 2 June, '4; d.
 Andrews, Prince; 19; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 28 May, '4; d.
 Atkinson, Samuel D.; 29; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Averill, Ephraim P.; 25; D; 12 I.; 26 June, '1, for three years; en.
 Averill, William W.; 20; —; —; 10 May, '4; 11 Aug., '4.
 Bailey, Amasa P.; 33; A; 1 B. H. A.; 25 Feb., '2; 27 Feb., '5; en.
 Bailey, John; 26; F; 9 I.; 22 Aug., '3; 19 June, '4; en.
 Bailey, Oliver A.; 29; C; Engr. Troop, Bat., N. C.; 24 Sept., '1; 11 April, '2; en.
 Baker, Charles H.; 31; A; 1 B. H. A.; 21 Feb., '2; 27 Feb., '5.
 Baker, Francis; —; Navy, master's mate.
 Baker, George H.; —; —; 43 N. Y.; —; —; discharged for wounds; d.
 Baker, George W.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 26 Feb., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
 Baker, John R.; 27; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Baker, Samuel Hazen; 24; E; 12 N. H. I.; 26 Aug., '2; 29 July, '5; en.
 Bamford, Charles W.; 19; L; 1 H. A.; 28 Feb., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
 Barker, George; 34; I; 30 I.; 17 Apr., '1; 18 July, '6; en.
 Barker, George W.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 26 Feb., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
 Barton, John F.; 33; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
 Barton, William R.; 26; A; 1 B. H. A.; 24 Feb., '2; 24 Feb., '5; en.
 Batchelder, Hiram K.
 Beck, Hardy M.; 21; —; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.
 Blaisdell, Leander M.; 20; L; 1 H. A.; 28 Feb., '2; 28 Dec., '4; tr. Vet. Corps.
 Blake, Asher; 55; L; 1 H. A.; 18 Mch., '2; 7 Mch., '5; disability; d.
 Bodwell, John; —; —; Navy.
 Boyd, Neil; 21; F; 9 I.; 27 Aug., '3; —; tr. 10 June, '3, to 32 I.; 29 Apr., '3, to Navy.
 Boynton, Charles; 27; A; 1 B. H. A.; 20 Feb., '2; 9 Oct., '3; disability.
 Boynton, Warren; 25; A; 1 B. H. A.; 25 Feb., '2; 20 Oct., '5.
 Bowen, George W.; 16; A; Navy and 3 H. A.; 8 Dec., '2; 7 Dec., '5.
 Bradstreet, George S.; 21; A; 1 B. H. A.; 25 Feb., '2; 27 Feb., '5.
 Bridges, Richard A.; 22; D; 48 I.; 29 Oct., '2; 12 Sept., '5; en.
 Brodribank, Lewis A.; 18; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.
 Brodricke, Dennis; 30; F; 9 I.; 21 Aug., '3; —; tr. Navy.
 Brown, Benjamin; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Brown, Edward; 22; D; 48 I.; 29 Oct., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Brown, George A.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 15 Feb., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
 Brown, Irving; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Brown, John B.; 24; I; 16 I.; 1 Aug., '1; 31 Oct., '3.
 Brown, Jesse F.; 22; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 27 Sept., '5; en.
 Brown, Leverett; 21; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Brown, Luther C.; 27; B; 7 Cal. I.; 12 Oct., '4; 29 April, '6.
 Brown, Tristram; 42; A; 1 H. A.; 1 Jan., '2; 13 Jan., '3; disability; d.
 Brown, Walter, Jr.; 20; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 18 Sept., '5; en.
 Burnham, Abraham; 53; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 21 July, '2; disability.
 Burnham, Nathaniel; 21; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.



BURNHAM, William; 22; D; 1 H. A.; 20 Feb. '2; 6 Jan. '3; disability.
BUTLER, Alonzo; 21; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 30 June, '5; en.
BUTLER, John F.; 27; A; 1 B. H. A.; 21 Feb. '2; 20 Oct. '5; en.
BUTZELL, George; 19; I; 4 Cav.; 31 Dec. '4; 14 Nov. '5; en.
BUTZELL, Isaac; 26; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 5 Nov. '5; en.
CAFFEY, Thomas; 38; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept. '2; 3 Sept. '3; en.
Caldwell, John G.; 28; B; 23 I.; 28 Sept. '1; 26 Mch. '2; disability; 4 Dec. '81.
Callahan, William; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug. '5; en.
Capwell, James; 42; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 20 Dec. '1; disability.
Carr, Patrick H.; 24; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 30 Dec. '3; en.
Chappel, Joseph H.; 24; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept. '1; 3 Jan. '4; d.
Chaplin, William A.; 16; A; 23 I.; 28 Sept. '1; 28 Sept. '4; en.
Chapman, Charles H.; 21; A; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan. '3; 18 Sept. '5; en.
Chapman, Moses; 27; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept. '2; 3 Sept. '3; en.
Chapman, Thomas T.; 36; A; 1 H. A.; 8 Aug. '1; 8 July '4; en.
Clarke, John F. G.; 30; I; 23 I.; 16 Oct. '1; 6 Jan. '2; disability.
Clarke, John W.; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 8 Aug. '2; 5 April, '5; en.
Clarke, Philip E.; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 21 Feb. '2; 20 Oct. '5; en.
Clarno, Clarence; 4; —; 19 I.; —; —.
Cleggwell, William; 26; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug. '2; 26 April '3; disability; d.
Conant, Cyrus W.; 25; K; 40 I.; 3 Sept. '2; —; disability.
Conant, George W.; 33; K; 40 I.; 3 Sept. '2; 6 Feb. '4; en.
Condon, Patrick; 56; —; Navy; 15 Sept. '1; 20 Sept. '3; en.
Condon, Thomas E.; 19; D; Navy, 48 I.; April, '1; 3 Sept. '3; en.; wounded at Port Hudson, 17 June, '3.
Conlance, John; 24; G; 20 I.; 12 July '3; 12 June, '5.
Coombs, Samuel; 13; H.; 31 Mo. I.; Apr. '4; 1 July, '5; en.
Cotton, Charles T.; 22; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept. '2; 30 June, '5; en.
Cotton, John S.; —; —; Navy; —; —.
Cotton, Moses; —; C; 53 I.; —; —; —.
Coughlin, Patrick; 41; I; 23 I.; 5 Oct. '1; 27 Oct. '2; disability; d.
Cressey, Alvin O.; 28; A; 17 L.; 21 July, '1; 3 Aug. '4; en.
Crane, Silas; 44; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 11 April, '4; disability; d.
Crane, William P.; 43; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.; d.
Crane, William, Jr.; 22; D; 48 I.; 14 Oct. '2; 3 Sept. '3; en.
Cross, William H.; 23; C; 23 I.; 3 Dec. '3; 11 July, '5; discharged by order War Dept.
Cummings, Chas. S.; 23; F; 36 I.; 27 Aug. '2; 19 Nov. '4; disability.
Cummings, John; —; —; —; —; d.
Dent, William; —; —; Navy; —; —.
Dodge, James P.; 25; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Aug. '2; 8 July, '4; en.; of Wenham.
Dodge, Jefferson; —; —; —; —; of Wenham.
Downes, Thomas J.; 22; L; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 12 Feb. '3; disability.
Dunnels, Henry F.; 25; —; Navy; 22 April, '1; 7 Oct. '5; to reduce naval officers; disabled, Aug. '4, at Deep Bottom, Va.
Dunnels, John M.; 23; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug. '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Edgeworth, Thomas; F.; 22; K; 55 I.; tr. 2 I.; 8 Aug. '2; 20 June '4; en.
Ellsworth, William; 19; D; 1 Bat.; 10 May, '4; 30 June, '5; en.
Ellwell, Alvin E.; 58; B; 59 I.; 15 Sept. '2; 21 Aug. '3; en.
Eates, Charles W.; 28; I; 23 I.; 9 Dec. '1; 13 Oct. '4; en.
Eck, Daniel A.; 21; —; Mo. I.; 3 May, '1; 1 June, '4; en.
Edwards, Daniel H.; 26; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 10 Aug. '5; en.
Edson, Andrew P.; 30; B; 22 I.; 20 Sept. '1; 9 Apr. '3; wounded.
Fields, Chas. H.; 39; A; 5 Cav.; 29 Jan. '4; 31 Oct. '5; en.
Fiske, William.
Flagg, Joseph; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 Nov. '3; 16 Aug. '5.
Forbes, Henry; 23; I; 23 I.; 1 Oct. '1; 13 Oct. '4; en.; d.
Foss, Jonathan; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.; d. 18 Oct. '77.
Foster, Cyrus; 39; —; 40 I.; 3 Sept. '2; 25 Mch. '4; en.
Foster, Edwin K.; 24; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept. '2; 3 Sept. '3; en.
Foster, Richard R.; 18; C; 19 I.; 26 July, '1; 30 June, '5; re-enlisted 20 Dec. '3.
Foster, Solomon L.; 26; F; 48 I.; 6 Nov. '2; 3 Sept. '3; en.
Foster, Samuel P.; 26; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug. '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Foster, Thomas E.; 21; H; 1 H. A.; —; —; —.
Foster, Walter C.; 27; I; 23 I.; 15 Oct. '1; 30 Sept. '2; disability.
Fowler, Eben E.; 29; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept. '1; 13 Oct. '4; en.; d. 24 Mch. '66.
Fowler, John J.; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 2 Jan. '5; en.
Galbraith, John; 18; D; 48 I.; 1 Dec. '2; 3 Dec. '3; en.
Galbraith, Thomas; 15; —; Navy; — July, '1; — July '4; en.; d. 14 Apr. '79.

Goodhue, Nathaniel; 23; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept. '2; 3 Sept. '3; en.; d.
Goodwin, George W.; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug. '5; en.
Goodwin, Sylvester; 53; A; 1 H. A.; 8 Aug. '2; —; tr. V. R. C. 3 July, '63; d.
Goss, James W.; 35; H; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 9 Apr. '5; en.; prisoner.
Grant, George F.; 18; —; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan. '3; —; en.
Grant, James H.; 28; D; 48 I.; 23 Dec. '2; 3 Sept. '3; en.
Grant, James O.; 23; B; 32 I.; 21 Aug. '3; 30 June, '5; en.
Guilford, Samuel A.; 21; I; 8 I.; 15 Aug. '2; 7 Aug. '3; en.
Gwinn, William H.; 26; A; 1 H. A.; 23 Nov. '1; 18 Sept. '5; en.
Hall, William H.; 18; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 28 Sept. '5; en.
Hardy, Charles A.; 21; F; 7 I.; 15 June, '1; 27 June, '4; en.; d. 5 Nov. '71.
Hardy, Clarendon B.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 June, '4; en.
Hardy, Freeman; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 8 July, '1; 30 June, '5; en.; drowned since.
Hardy, Josiah; 45; M; 3 Cav.; 2 Nov. '1; — June, '2; disability.
Hardy, Joshua M.; 20; L; 1 H. A.; 2 Feb. '2; 31 Mch. '4; en.
Hardy, Otis C.; 16; A; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan. '2; 18 Sept. '5; en.
Harris, Aaron W.; 18; B; 44 I.; 13 Oct. '2; 18 June, '3; en.
Harris, George; 27; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug. '2; 30 Dec. '3; en.
Harris, George W.; 23; —; Signal Corps; 29 Mch. '4; 18 Aug. '5; en.
Harris, James L.; —; —; Regular; —; —; d. 30 Sept. '66.
Harris, Mark; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 17 Jan. '3; en.; died since.
Hart, Andrew J.; 24; H; 24 I.; 5 Nov. '1; 4 Nov. '4; en.
Haskell, Charles; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 5 Oct. '4; en.
Haskell, Henry; 21; L; 1 H. A.; 18 Mch. '2; 18 Mch. '5; en.; wounded; d.
Hazeltine, Ira G.; 19; C; 1 Vt. I.; 2 May, '1; 15 Aug. '1; en.
Henderson, George; —; —; Navy; —; —; d. at sea.
Henderson, Moses K.; 18; —; Regular Navy; 23 Apr. '1; 27 Sept. '70; en.
Hennessey, Peter; 16; E; 3 N. H.; 10 July, '1; 15 July, '4; en.
Hills, Albert P.; 15; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept. '1; 13 Oct. '4; en.
Hills, Albert S.; 40; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct. '1; 13 Oct. '4; en.
Hitchcock, Henry; 18; A; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan. '3; 18 Sept. '5; en.
Hobbs, John; 45; I; 23 I.; 11 Oct. '1; 22 July, '2; en.
Hobbs, Valorus C.; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 20 July, '5; disability; d.
Holland, Charles L.; 27; —; 1 Bat.; 30 Dec. '4; 30 June '5; en.
Holmes, Otis S.; 21; —; 1 B. H. A.; 25 Feb. '2; 27 Feb. '5; en.
Holt, Augustus; 26; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 7 July, '5; en.; disability.
Horton, George; 32; A; 1 H. A.; 6 Aug. '2; 8 July, '4; en.; d.
Hovey, J. Thomas; 18; A; 3 H. A.; 25 Apr. '3; 25 July, '4; en.; tr. Navy.
Howard, Frank; 21; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct. '1; 8 July, '2; wounded at Roanoke Island.
Howe, Charles H.; 23; —; 3 H. A.; 12 Aug. '4; 14 June, '5; en.
Howe, Levi L.; 29; A; 1 B. H. A.; 22 Feb. '2; 20 Oct. '5; en.
Howe, Theodore; 18; D; 3 Cav.; 7 Dec. '3; 5 Oct. '5; en.
Howe, Willard P.; 38; H; 50 I.; 19 Sept. '2; 5 Aug. '5; en.; tr. H. 59 I. 12 Mch. '4, and H. 51 I. 1 June, '5.
Howes, Edwin A.; 26; —; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 24 May, '4; en.
Hubbard, John; —; H; 16 I.; 17 Aug. '3; —; tr. Vet. Corps.
Hull, Edward G.; 27; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept. '1; 27 Sept. '2; en.
Hull, James; 20; A; 6 N. H. I.; 20 Aug. '3; 14 June, '5; en.
Hull, John; 30; A; 3 H. A.; 28 Apr. '3; 12 June, '3; en.
Hurd, Yorick G.; 35; —; 48 I.; 8 Dec. '2; 3 Sept. '3; en.
Irving, George W.; 21; I; 23 I.; 17 Oct. '1; 2 Dec. '1; en.
Irving, Leander; 19; G; 3 H. A.; 4 Dec. '3; 18 Sept. '5; en.
Irving, Washington; 23; H; 3 H. A.; 4 Dec. '3; 18 Sept. '5; en.
Jewett, Henry B.; 18; C; 19 I.; 26 July, '1; 28 Aug. '2; en.
Jewett, Thomas L. Jr.; 26; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept. '1; 26 Oct. '3; disability.
Johnson, Joseph; 33; H; 3 H. A.; 20 Nov. '3; 18 Sept. '5; en.
Kimball, Daniel B.; 26; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug. '2; 28 May, '4; en.
Kimball, Joseph E.; 21; B; 1 I.; 23 May, '1; 10 Jan. '4; en.
Kimball, John H.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
Kinsman, Joseph F.; 18; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept. '2; 3 Sept. '3.
Kneeland, Josiah; 36; C; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 30 Dec. '3.
Knox, James H.; 17; —; Navy; 1 Jan. '3; 1 Jan. '4.
Knox, Rufus; 35; K; 2 I.; 18 Aug. '2; 11 May, '4.
Lakeman, Asa; 24; A; 17 I.; 21 July, '1; —; dropped 18 July, '2.



- Lakeman, Perley B.; 41; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Lang, Thomas; —; E; 2 I.; —; —; tr. to Navy.
 Langdon, George W.; 30; —; Fort Warren; 21 Feb., '69; 20 Oct., '70, en.
 Lavalette, Charles C.; 25; C; 32 I.; 12 Nov., '1; 29 June, '5; en.; re-enlisted 5 Jan., '4; d.
 Lefflan, John M.; 26; —; 3 H. A.; 11 June '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.; d.
 Leonard, Isaac M.; 39; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; —; tr. Vet. Corps; d.
 Lord, Charles W.; 28; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Lord, Henry A.; 41; A; 1 H. A.; 23 Nov., '3; 22 June, '5; en.; from Lowell.
 Lord, James A.; 21; B; 28 I.; 15 Mch., '4; 22 June, '5; en.
 Lord, Moses G.; 42; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; —; tr. Vet. Corps.
 Lord, Nathaniel, 3d; 44; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 9 May, '3; disability; d.
 Lord, Robert; —; —; Navy; —; —; en.
 Lord, William, 4th; 39; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Low, Winthrop; 31; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 22 Sept., '2; disability.
 Lucy, Daniel; 33; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
 Maguire, John; 27; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Mallard, Levi W.; 31; G; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 17 June, '5; en.
 Mann, Josiah H.; 22; A; 44 I.; 12 Sept., '2; 18 June, '3; en.
 Manning, Joseph S.; 18; K; 29 I.; 25 Nov., '1; 15 Aug., '4; en.
 Manning, Thomas; 35; C; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 30 Aug., '4; en.
 Marshall, John; 35; M; 3 H. A.; 27 Aug., '4; 17 June, '5; en.
 McDonald, William; 20; H; 9 I.; 2 Aug., '3; 16 June, '5; en.; disability.
 McGregor, Alex., Jr.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.; d.
 McGuire, Thomas; 44; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 McIntire, Charles W.; 28; K; 1 I.; 12 Aug., '2; 25 May, '4; en.
 McIntire, Dexter.
 McNell, James; 23; I; 9 I.; 11 Aug., '3; 29 June, '5; en.
 Merrill, Dennis; 21; I; 23 I.; 9 Oct., '1; 10 Dec., '2; disability.
 Merrill, Samuel H.; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Moar, Charles A.; 24; G; 2 I.; 13 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
 Montgomery, John H.; 27; I; 23 I.; 9 Nov., '1; 21 Apr., '3; disability; d.
 Moore, Richard; 34; E; 9 I.; 1 Aug., '2; 16 Oct., '4; en.
 Morris, Charles; d.
 Moseley, John; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Murbey, Thomas; 40; —; 4 Div. Bridge Corps; 2 Dec., '3; —, '5.
 Nason, Joseph A.; 21; G; 3 H. A.; 30 —, '3; 18 May, '4; disability.
 Newman, Benj. B.; 18; A; 3 H. A.; 10 Jan., '3; 31 Mch., '3; disability; d. 12 May, '72.
 Nichols, Augustus; 11; —; Navy; 15 Mch., '3; 11 Mch., '4; en.
 Nichols, Albert N.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Nichols, Edward F.; 22; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Nichols, William O.; 23; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 2 Apr., '3; disability.
 Noland, Malachi; 30; H; 1 H. A.; 3 July, '2; 8 July, '4; en.
 Norman, Alfred; 22; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Norwood, Samuel; 22; F; 35 I.; 22 Aug., —; 9 June, '5; en.; d. '85.
 Noyes, John W.; 33; L; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 18 Sept., '5; en.
 O'Connell, Cornelius, Jr.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Aug., '2; 28 July, '3; disability.
 O'Connell, John; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 31 July, '5; en.
 O'Connell, Michael; 18; —; Regular Army; 4 Mch., '4; —.
 Palmer, Rev. Edwin B.; 29; —; 19 Me. I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Peabody, Thomas; 36; I; 23 I.; 9 Oct., '1; 16 Aug., '3; disability.
 Perkins, Charles N.; 42; A; 1 B. H. A.; 7 Nov., '3; 20 Oct., '5; en.; d. 23 Dec., '79.
 Perkins, Josiah; 29; I; 23 I.; 9 Mch., '4; 21 June, '5; en.
 Pickard, David; 44; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 6 Jan., '4; en.; disability.
 Pickard, William G.; 20; D; Frontier Cav.; 2 Jan., '6; 3 June, '5; en.
 Pickard, Washington P.; 30; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Pierce, George W.; 21; K; 40 I.; 3 Sept., '2; 25 Feb., '4; disability.
 Pike, Edwin T.; 27; C; 48 I.; 23 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Piuder, Daniel F.; 19; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.; d. 11 June, '70.
 Pingree, David M.; 21; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Plouff, Edward, Jr.; 22; D; 48 I.; — Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Plouff, John W.; 24; D; 48 I.; 23 Dec., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Plummer, Hiram; 19; M; 3 Cav.; 31 Dec., '4; 28 Sept., '5; en.
 Plummer, William; 34; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Poor, Benjamin; 26; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.; d. 24 Mch., '80.
 Poor, David H.; 32; A; 1 B. H. A.; 9 May, '3; 20 Oct., '5; en.
 Poor, George; 23; I; 23 I.; 5 Oct., '1; 1 Dec., '1; d.
 Poor, Thomas A.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; —; d.
 Porter, Charles; 18; A; 3 H. A.; 16 May, '3; 18 Sept., '3; en.
 Porter, Thomas.
 Potter, Asa T.; 29; —; 1 B. H. A.; 21 Feb., '2; 29 Feb., '4; en.; d.
 Putnam, Jeremiah; —; —; 40 I.; —; —.
 Ready, Michael; 30; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Aug., '2; —; en.
 Ready, Thomas; 31; B; 48 I.; 24 Oct., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Reilly, Edmund; 38; A; 1 H. A.; 7 Aug., '2; 16 Aug., '5; en.
 Richards, Charles.
 Riggs, Charles A.
 Roberts, Charles.
 Roberts, Edward T.; 23; —; 2 I.; 31 July, '1; 16 Aug., '4; en.; L. T. Bat.
 Roberts, George B.; 27; G; 1 I.; 23 May, '1; 20 Dec., '2; disability.
 Roberts, John S.; 19; C; 19 I.; 26 July, '1; 13 Oct., '3; en.
 Ross, Edward; 24; I; 23 I.; 9 Nov., '1; 25 Sept., '2; en.
 Ross, William P.; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 27 Feb., '2; 22 Jan., '5; en.
 Rowe, George; 18; I; 23 I.; 1 Oct., '1; 25 May, '2; en.; disability.
 Russell, Henry F.; 32; —; 3 H. A.; 4 Dec., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
 Russell, Edward W.; 27; A; 1 B. H. A.; 21 Feb., '2; 20 Oct., '5; en.
 Russell, John Ward; 17; F; 14 Me. I.; 11 Jan., '2; 13 Jan., '5; en.
 Russell, John W.; 21; —; 3 H. A.; 4 Dec., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
 Sanderson, James H.; 31; H; 8 I.; 19 Sept., '2; 7 Aug., '3; en.
 Sargent, George H.; 38; I; 23 I.; 5 Oct., '1; 8 Aug., '3; disability.
 Sargent, Kendall; 42; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; — May, '2; disability.
 Saunders, Moses; 21; K; 40 I.; 3 Sept., '3; 16 June, '5; en.
 Schaffer, William; 23; K; 9 I.; 21 Aug., '3; —; tr. 32 I., 10 Jan., '4.
 Schanks, Jacob; 20; H; 17 I.; 22 July, '1; 11 July, '5; en.
 Schanks, Jacob P.; 44; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 30 May, '5; disability; d.
 Scott, James, Jr.; 18; F; 14 Me. I.; 25 Feb., '5; 28 Aug., '5; en.
 Scott, John; 24; —; Navy; — July, '2; —, '7.
 Semple, John; 29; —; Navy; — June, '1; — Aug., '1; disability.
 Shatswell, Nathaniel; 27; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 18 Aug., '5; en.
 Shattuck, Milton B.; 32; A; 1 H. A.; 6 July, '1; 20 Jan., '3; en.; d. 24 May, '84.
 Sherburne, George W.; 25; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Sherburne, John T.; 31; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; —, '3; disability.
 Shirley, Reuben W.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Smith, Charles W.; 26; B; 1 B. H. A.; 8 Oct., '2; 29 June, '5; en.
 Smith, Edwin F.; 18; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 15 July, '5; en.
 Smith, Edward P.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 1 May, '2; disability.
 Smith, George; 22; I; 23 I.; 10 Oct., '1; 13 Oct., '4; en.
 Smith, Henry R.; 19; H; 19 I.; 10 Dec., '1; 31 Mch., '3; en.
 Smith, John Allen; 22; D; 1 Cav.; 2 Jan., '5; 30 June, '5; en.
 Smith, John H.; 20; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 1 Jan., '4; disability; d. 3 Aug., '5.
 Smith, John J.; 27; G; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.
 Smith, Thomas R.; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 8 Aug., '2; 8 July, '4; en.; d. 11 Nov., '68.
 Smith, William H.; 23; A; 1 I.; 7 Aug., '2; 31 July, '5; en.
 Spear, William M.; —; —; 38 I.; —; —.
 Spinney, J. F.; 21; E; 17 Ills. I.; 25 May, '1; 2 Aug., '2; disability.
 Spofford, William H.; 30; —; Fort Warren; 7 Apr., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
 Stacey, John R.; 30; A; 2 I.; 12 Oct., '1; 16 Jan., '3; disability.
 Stackpole, William A.; 16; C; 5 I.; 23 July, '4; 16 Nov., '4; en.
 Stanley, Francis A.; —; —; 38 I.; —; —.
 Staton, William H.; 19; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 14 July, '5; en.
 Stevens, Henry L.; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 2 Aug., '2; tr. Navy, 2 April, '4; d.
 Stevens, William; 44; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 22 June, '5; en.
 Stevens, William, Jr.; 25; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Stone, Daniel W.; 23; D; 1 B. H. A.; 30 Dec., '4; 30 June, '5; en.
 Stone, Lorenzo R.; 18; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.



Steele, William L.; 24; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Sturges, Elbridge; 23; D; 48 I.; 21 Sept., '2; 20 June, '4; en.
 Tackett, Walter; 27; K; 8 I.; 1 Oct., '2; 24 Oct., '4; en.; d.
 Taylor, Edmund T.; 21; E; 11 I.; 15 Aug., '3; 14 July, '4; en.
 Taylor, Trowbridge C.; —; A; 23 I.; 1 Oct., '1; ———.
 Tenney, Theodore P.; 21; D; 4 Cav.; 31 Dec., '4; 14 Nov., '5; en.;
 Tenney, Albert; 21; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 14 July, '5; en.
 Tenney, John E.; 20; H; 3 H. A.; 20 Nov., '3; 18 Sept., '5; en.
 Terhune, Henry; 33; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 16 Aug., '5; en.
 Thomas, Eben; 26; —; Navy; 12 Aug., '1; 26 Oct., '3; en.
 Thompson, Charles H.; 21; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; 5 Oct., '2; disability.
 Tibbette, John L.; 39; C; 19 I.; 28 Aug., '1; 23 Apr., '3; disability.
 Todd, Thomas M.; 22; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; ———; tr. navy 28 Feb., '2.
 Tonge, Henry F.; 27; —; 3 R. I.; ———, '1; 7 Jan., '6; tr. Hancock's corps, 30 Dec., '4.
 Towle, Jenness; 39; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Toter, William H.; 27; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4; en.
 Treadwell, Henry S.; 20; C; 53 I.; 6 Nov., '2; 2 Sept., '3; en.
 Treadwell, Marcus M.; 20; D; 12 I.; 26 June, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Turner, John; 29; L; 1 H. A.; 20 Feb., —; ———.
 Tyler, Colman J.; 18; F; 2 I.; 25 May, '1; 28 May, '4; en.
 Waite, Charles W.; 16; —; Navy; 4 Dec., '2; 15 Jan., '4; en.
 Waite, Joseph, Jr.; 19; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; d.
 Waite, Luther; 19; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 5 July, '5; en.; tr. navy 9 May, '4.
 Walto, Rogers; 18; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.; d. 21 April, '79.
 Wallis, Henry; —; D; 48 I.; ———; ———.
 Watts, James W.; 23; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 17 Feb., '5; disability; d. 31 Jan., '71.
 Welber, Moses; 32; K; 2 I.; 8 Aug., '2; 28 May, '4.
 West, John; 44; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 8 July, '4; en.
 Whedon, Edward M.; 30; —; 2 H. A.; 24 Sept., '2; 3 Sept., '3; en.
 Whipple, John E.; 29; L; 1 H. A.; 26 Feb., —; 3 July, '5; disability.
 White, W. Charles; —; —; 1 Cav.; ———; ———.
 Willard, Benjamin D.; 21; I; 26 I.; 7 Sept., '1; 4 Jan., '4; re-enlisted.
 Willett, George A.; 30; B; 5 I.; 19 Sept., '2; 2 July, '3; en.
 Winslow, James; d.
 Winslow, William H.; 35; L; 1 H. A.; 2 Dec., '1; 31 Jan., '4; disability.
 Wood, Francis L.; 25; I; 32 I.; 10 July, '2; 2 June, '3; en.
 Worcester, Leigh R.; 27; A; 1 H. A.; 5 July, '1; 18 Sept., '5; en.
 Worcester, James T.; 20; D; 48 I.; 24 Sept., '2; 2 Sept., '3; en.
 Worley, Pandon E.; 19; L; 1 H. A.; 26 Nov., '1; 15 Dec., '4; en.
 Worth, William K.; 19; I; 23 I.; 28 Sept., '1; ———; en; d.

A NOBLE GIFT.—I cannot more fittingly close this chapter than by quoting from the records, page 367, the town's action of June 15, 1863, which is self-explaining and as follows:

"Whereas, Mr. Augustine Heard of this town, in conjunction with his nephews, Mr. John Heard, Mr. Augustine Heard, Jr., Mr. Alfred F. Heard and Mr. George F. Heard, have placed in the hands of trustees ten thousand dollars to be applied for the relief of such persons belonging to this town as may suffer from sickness or wounds incurred in the service of their country in the present civil war, and for the relief of such persons as may be deprived of support by the loss of relations engaged in the like service; therefore,

"Resolved, That the thanks of the citizens of Ipswich, assembled this day in town-meeting, be tendered to the above named gentlemen, respectively, for their magnificent donation to so noble a cause, together with our best wishes for their continued health and prosperity; that we receive with lively sensibility this token of their remembrance of the place of their nativity, rejoice in the anticipation of the relief which in future years will come to many of the suffering poor in Ipswich in consequence of their generous gift.

"Resolved, That we sympathize with the gentlemen in their patriotic devotion to the welfare of the country, and that we hope their generous sacrifices will soon be amply rewarded by the restoration of the Union and the Constitution more complete and vital than ever, with every root

of bitterness removed, with stable peace and enduring prosperity in all our borders, and with the stars and stripes floating with renewed and increased splendor and power over every American citizen by land and by sea, at home and abroad."

CHAPTER XLVI.

IPSWICH—(Continued).

LEGAL AND PENAL.

THE COLONIAL PERIOD.—Our legal policy was, in general, based upon the laws of England, but it was moulded by a wise and cautious exercise of authority, according to our exigencies and circumstances. The royal charter of March 4, 1628, which Governor John Winthrop brought out with him, created a corporation styled: "The Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay in New England." By this charter the seat of government was transferred to these shores, and the corporators were permitted to make their own laws and to choose their own rulers—to make "laws and ordinances not contrary or repugnant to the laws and statutes of the realm." The charter held the company to be British subjects, and was granted in the hope of increasing the royal domain and of augmenting the national wealth. It, then, conferred only such powers as were necessary to the company's existence, business and business prosperity, other matters being reserved for adjustment at home.

THE GREAT COURT.—Our fathers, however, interpreted the instrument in its freest sense; for they early felt an urgent need of a high and wide range of authority, so great was the tide of emigration, and so many and varied were the interests involved. Under it the colonists turned their prow ocean-ward, and spread their sails for a prosperous voyage upon an untried sea. Their polity of church and State was new and peculiar. Although they based their laws upon the English code, they ignored its authority; in fact, in one instance at least, they denied it—they disfranchised all but members of churches, and the magistrates had power to determine or select what churches. Their laws reached public and private relations, and not only such crimes as were known to common law, but many recognized in the Hebraic code. They proposed a State dependent upon the church, where the elders and clergy were at the head, the reciprocal of their former relation, where the church was dependent upon the State, and the king the head. The entire administration of the government was held or controlled by clergymen, who sought to imitate the regal action of the supreme authority of Israel. They made no distinction in courts or court actions—civil or criminal, at law or in equity, lay or ecclesiastical—all were held and determined in one great and General Court.

This court was at once the great source of law and justice. For the first few years, it consisted of the Governor, Deputy-Governor, eighteen assistants and the freemen, but in 1634 the number of freemen so increased, and the inconvenience and danger, from leaving their homes exposed to Indian barbarities, during their absence, were so great, that the town chose deputies to represent them in all matters, but the choice of officers, wherein the freemen sent their votes by proxy. The court was legislative, judicial and executive. It held quarterly sessions, and enacted the laws. The assistants were chosen by the freemen, and were the magistrates, who with the Governor constituted the *Great Quarter Court*. The Governor and assistants, as council, were the executive head. For about ten years the court exercised discretionary powers, hearing and determining all cases, and "seems," says a writer, "to have been more disposed to punish the religious than the civil offender."

IPSWICH'S INFLUENCE.—During the decade, whatever may have been the methods or results, it cannot be denied that Ipswich was an important factor. Next to the metropolis, she was the seat of wealth and learning, and, therefore, of power. Her voice was potent in every department of the government. There was Winthrop, the son of our Governor, the founder of our municipality, a man of learning and wealth, and a governor in embryo himself; Dudley, who had already been Governor one term; Bradstreet, a man of vast executive and business ability; Saltonstall, a gentleman of business enterprise, of wealth and culture, of pure and just sentiment, the first American abolitionist; Denison, the man of war and continually in the public service; and Ward, a man of polished learning, profound in divinity and law, the compiler of the Colonial *Magna Charta*. The mere mention of these names was like "the sweet influence of the Pleiades," and the sentiment of Ipswich citizenship with such leaders worked like destiny.

THE DEMANDS OF GROWTH. But the State grew rapidly in population and business interests, and the jurisdiction of the Court as largely and rapidly expanded. The people at length became alarmed at such exercise of courtly power, and cried for a legal code resembling *Magna Charta*. The deputies feared that "great damage to our State" might accrue, if the magistrates should "proceed according to their discretion." Accordingly, committees were appointed at various times to frame a code. They failed to meet the approbation of the Court; even the great Cotton Mather, who reported a "copy of Moses his judicials, compiled in an exact method," did not succeed. It remained for the committee, of which Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, was the leading, active and efficient member to perform the work. The work, however, was not published till 1641. The delay was occasioned by a desire to prepare a code

commensurate with the need and adapted to the public temperament and our institutions. It was a herculean task, but Mr. Ward performed a thorough work. His great ability, his broad learning, his legal training and practice and his peculiar cast of mind, made him the fittest, and his work shows it. He embodied one hundred civil and criminal laws. The civil laws were far in advance of English law at the time; they have been adopted in new codifications from time to time since; and some are in force at present, after a period of nearly two centuries and a half. In the criminal code he followed Moses in a great measure, but he distanced England in mildness, and for scope was far in advance of his time. He thus embodies personal rights:

"No man's life shall be taken away, no man's honor nor good name shall be stained, no man's person shall be arrested, restrained or dismembered, nor any ways punished, no man shall be deprived of his wife or children, no man's goods or estate shall be taken away from him nor any ways endangered under color of law or countenance of authority, unless it be by virtue or equity of some express law of the country warranting the same, established by a General Court and sufficiently published, or in case of a defect in a law in any particular case, by the Word of God. And in capital cases, or in cases concerning dismemberment or banishment, according to that word to be judged by the General Court."

In his "Body of Liberties," it is said, there was "a notable disregard of English law," which had sorely discomforted the Puritan temper, and the work was annotated with chapter and verse in the Bible—their sure palladium of both civil and religious liberty.

OTHER COURTS.—Moreover, as population, business, personal complications and infelicities increased, the necessity for other tribunals became apparent. Accordingly, the General Court March 3, 1636, relieved the Court of Assistants, or "Great Quarter Court," by establishing an *Inferior Quarter Court*, which held four terms annually—one term in each of these places: Ipswich, Salem, Cambridge and Boston. The judge was such magistrate or assistant as lived in or nearest the town where the Court was held, assisted by "Commissioners," as they were called, who were appointed by the General Court from a list of nominations by the several towns. The judge and four commissioners constituted the full Court, and himself and two commissioners a quorum. The jurisdiction of the Court extended to all matters ecclesiastical, and sometimes to family infelicities—divorces—and the settlements of estates; to civil controversies, wherein the damage or debt was less than ten shillings, and to criminal cases not involving life or banishment.

IPSWICH COURT.—The original act establishing this Court was changed June 2, 1641. Four Quarter Courts were held in Ipswich and Salem for this county by all the magistrates of both these places sitting together. This Court exercised the jurisdiction before exercised by the *Great Quarter Court*, except trials for life, limb or banishment, and cases whose damage exceeded one hundred pounds, wherein the *Great Quarter Court* had concurrent jurisdiction.



To this Court was attached, September 9, 1639, a recorder's office, and October 7th of the next year Samuel Symonds, of Ipswich, was appointed for the jurisdiction of the Ipswich Court. Previous to this the records of deeds and the conveyances of real estate were recorded in the records of the town. The office of recorder was, after a while, blended with the office of the clerk of the Court, and Robert Lord, then, by virtue of his office as clerk, succeeded Mr. Symonds. By the first act Newbury was placed in the jurisdiction of Ipswich; by the second, Salisbury and Hampton.

COURT OFFICES.—The first court at Salem June 27, 1636; the first at Ipswich probably soon after, though no records appear "till from the year 1646," when, March 31, Robert Lord, of Ipswich, was clerk. The judges were appointed May 25, 1636, and those for Ipswich were Messrs. Dudley, Dummer, Bradstreet, Saltonstall and Spencer. The sittings of the court at Ipswich were twice a year,—March and September,—till by *Quo Warranto*, 1684, the colonial government was arrested and the courts suspended, to be resumed 1689, after the removal of Andros, and in 1692 superseded by authority of the province charter with Sir William Phipps as Governor.

JURISDICTION.—These courts laid out highways, licensed "taverns," guarded the orthodoxy of the church, admitted freemen, probated estates, recorded deeds and adjudicated upon the most important concerns in the county. During the period, Ipswich enjoyed an eminence, advantage and influence second to none but the metropolis, where the highest tribunals always sat. She was a legal centre, and was the home of lawyers, judges and the colonial law-giver.

COURT-HOUSE.—During this period, it is probable, there was no court-house, and that the meeting-house was used instead. Their civil life was under the patronage of their religion, was subservient to it, and wore a sanctity that gave it a proper place in the house of God. In that house they counseled together "after lecture," they voted the minister's salary, they elected church-officers, they chose the seven-men, the clerk and the treasurer, they raised moneys, and arranged the municipal concerns, they counseled for war, they stored their munitions, they worshipped in arms, they made it a watch-house, they meted out justice and exposed the criminal for punishment. The meeting-house to that practical people was serviceable next to their homes; it was the emblem of righteousness, justice and equal rights—God's proper peerage. They wore out their houses, we remodel ours to conform to fashion.

JAIL.—There was but one prison in the colony before 1652. That year, May 22d, the Court ordered one to be built at Ipswich, and September 26th, the seven-men contracted with Henry Pinder and Thomas Rowell to construct it. It was to stand near the watch-house,—a site near the First Church,—and was to be of the "same high and wyndes." They

were to make three floors of joist thick set and well bound with partition above and below the sides and ends, stud and stud spaces, and to clap-board the house round and shingle it, and to daub its whole wall, all but the gable ends, and to underpin the house and make doors and hinges, and hang the doors and fit on locks, which said house shall be finished with all the appurtenances, drawings, iron-work for the doors and nails by the 15th of May next, at their own proper cost and charges, without allowance for help or diet for their reasing, in consideration of which they shall have for their worth £40 out of country rate by the first of the next March. Theophilus Wilson was keeper in 1656, and received a compensation of £3 a year, 5s. for each prisoner, and further, each prisoner was to pay his board if he was able to do so; if he was not able, he was to be kept on bread and water. The prisoners were required to work, and the seven-men were required by law to furnish hemp and flax for that purpose. Another prison, or house of correction, was built about 1684. This was ordered to be built by the Quarterly Court, and the expense was to be borne by those towns that sent juries to Ipswich.

THE CAUSES.—The causes determined in these courts have already been indicated. These may be noticed as illustrative: In 1633 a man was fined ten pounds and to wear a badge marked "Drunkard" during the discretion of the court, for drunkenness and undue familiarity with his neighbor's wife, and she was fined fifteen shillings for drunkenness. In 1637 William Schooler was examined by the magistrates here on a charge of murder. After a year he was convicted and hanged at Boston. In 1639 "lewd attempts" were punished by whipping. In 1663 a woman was sentenced, for perjury, to stand at the meeting-house door on "lecture day," with "for taking a false oath" conspicuous upon her garments. In 1665 a woman was tried for burning Gen. Daniel Denison's house. She was acquitted of arson, but was fined for theft and whipped for lying. In 1667 a man was prosecuted for digging up Masconomet's bones and sporting with the skull on a pole. In 1677 a highway robber was sentenced to be branded and fined. In 1684 a burglar was sentenced to be branded with B, to pay treble damages and receive fifteen lashes. During this period there were several arraignments for witchcraft, but no convictions. This glance of the trials presents a picture not so pleasing to contemplate as we might wish, but still it is such as in the nature of things we might expect.

REPRESENTATIVE MEN.—Among the representative men of the Colony, upon whom we have more or less claim, we note the following:—

Governors.—Simon Bradstreet and Thomas Dudley. **Deputy-Governors.**—Simon Bradstreet, Thomas Dudley, Samuel Symonds, John Winthrop, Jr. **Governor's Council.**—Andros'.—Samuel Appleton, ten years between 1681 and 1692. **Colonial Secretaries.**—Simon Bradstreet and Daniel Denison. **Speaker of the**



House.—Daniel Denison. *Commissioners of the United Colonies*.—Thomas Dudley, Simon Bradstreet and Daniel Denison. *Assistants*.—Samuel Appleton, Simon Bradstreet, Daniel Denison, Thomas Dudley, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Samuel Symonds, John Winthrop, Jr. *Justices Inferior Quarter Court*.—Samuel Appleton, Simon Bradstreet, Daniel Denison, Thomas Dudley, Sir Richard Saltonstall, John Spencer, Samuel Symonds. *Registrar of the Court*.—Samuel Symonds. *Clerk of the Court*.—Robert Lord. *Deputies*.—John Appleton, fifteen years; Samuel Appleton, nine years; William Bartholomew, five years; Thomas Bishop, one year; Thomas Boreman, Sr., one year; Humphrey Bradstreet, one year; Simon Bradstreet, one year; Thomas Burnham, two years; Daniel Denison, ten years; Daniel Epps, three years; George Giddings, twelve years; John Giddings, one year; John Goodhue, one year; William Goodhue, eight years; Thomas Howlett, one year; William Hubbard, eight years; Robert Lord, one year; Richard Lumkin, two years; Joseph Metcalfe, eight years; John Perkins, one year; Moses Pingrey, one year; Robert Paine, three years; Lyman Stace, three years; John Spencer, one year; Samuel Symonds, six years; Jonathan Wade, two years; John Whipple, twelve years; Samuel Whinsley, one year.

BIOGRAPHICAL.—Most of the parties named above are sketched in *Early Settlers*; Daniel Denison in *Martial and Military*; Sir Richard Saltonstall in *Business*; here it is proper to speak briefly of Robert Lord, John Appleton, Jr., and Thomas Wade, who were the clerks of the Ipswich Courts for the Colonial period.

No name is oftener met in the Colonial records for this section than MR. ROBERT LORD'S. His life was occupied in the details of the courts. By virtue of his office as clerk, he was also registrar of probate. His clerkship covered a period of forty-seven years—from September, 1636, to August 21, 1683. He was born about 1602 or '3, and appears to have been son of widow Katherine; who came with her sons to Ipswich as early as 1635. He married, about 1630, Mary Watt, who, with eight children, survived him. He was made freeman March 3, 1635-36, deputy to the General Court March 12, 1636-37, and was on a committee to raise fifteen hundred pounds for the Colony. He fixed the boundaries of towns and private lands, was clerk of court a year in Norfolk before the establishment of that county; was clerk of the Salem Court in June, 1658; in 1649 was town-sealer of weights and measures; March 30, 1652, was empowered by the magistrates to "issue all executions in civil and criminal cases;" was "searcher of coins" in 1654; was sheriff of the Ipswich Court till March 27, 1660, when he was superseded by his son, Robert. He was also clerk of writs, whose duty it was to issue attachments, summons, replevin, etc. He made his last entry July 13, 1683, and on or before August 21st closed his mortal record. He was a good penman

and a faithful and correct official. His line has furnished two registrars in the person of Nathaniel and Nathaniel's son George Robert.

Mr. Lord's successor was JOHN APPLETON, JR., who received the appointment August 21, 1683. The appointment was confirmed September 25th, and held till April 18, 1698. Mr. Appleton was born in Ipswich October 17, 1652. He married, November 23, 1681, Elizabeth Rogers, daughter of Rev. John, fifth president of Harvard College. He was lieutenant of a company of foot-soldiers, and rose to colonel, and was feoffee of the grammar school and clerk of writs. He was clerk of the new court established by President Joseph Dudley, 1686, was town clerk, Representative to the General Court, member of the Governor's Council from 1698 to 1722 inclusive, county treasurer many years, Judge of Probate thirty-seven years from October 23, 1702, and chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas from 1702 to 1732. He wrote a bold, legible hand, remarkably modern, and was a superior clerk. He did much to reduce the former practice to the modern and exact form, and was the first to use printed blanks. He died September 11, 1739, wealthy, respected, honored.

His successor as registrar was THOMAS WADE, who served from April 18, 1689, to June 18, 1692. Mr. Wade was born in Ipswich in 1650 to Jonathan Wade, one of the wealthiest men in the Colony. He married Elizabeth Cogswell February 22, 1670, who, with nine children, survived him. He was town clerk some nine years, was chosen clerk of writs July 29, 1684. After the Andros revolution, he was chosen, March 25, 1690, "clerk of probate," was made military captain in 1689, and in 1692 was a retailer of liquor—a polite office at that time. He was a justice in the Court of General Sessions of the Peace. His last military service was to lead the Essex Middle Regiment against the Indians in April, 1696. He died October 4, 1696, at the age of forty-six. He was an excellent penman, and a worthy man. "When he fell," says Felt, "death had 'a shining mark.'" Colonel Nathaniel Wade, of Revolutionary fame, is supposed to be a descendant of his.

RESISTANCE TO TYRANNY.—The Colonial period would be very incomplete without a notice of those noble patriots who "knew their rights and dared maintain them," against the tyrannical measures of Andros. Ipswich at that time was the foremost town in the county; she was wealthy and influential. She could not brook the abolition of the people's government and the usurpations of regal power. She was outspoken and determined, and, therefore, incurred the particular enmity of the regal vassal. Andros and his subservient council ordered that the towns choose "commissioners" who should aid the selectmen in laying a tax of "a penny on the pound—four and a sixth dollars on the thousand. This order sapped the vital principle of the Colonial Government, and was, therefore, extremely obnoxious to the colonists.



They had hitherto paid no taxes but those ordered by their own deputies; but now the House of Deputies, or the General Court, was abolished, and men of adverse tendencies ruled. Ipswich recognized the violation of principle, and sounded the clarion note of resistance. It was not the amount of the tax nor the purpose, in this case, to which it was to be applied—little or much the tax, wise or unwise the purpose, it was all the same; the principle was wrong, and must not obtain. Where there is no representation, there can be no just taxation."

A town-meeting was called for August 23, 1687, and the evening before, a few leading men assembled at the house of John Appleton, located on a site near the depot, to counsel what was best to be done in the trying emergency. Among them was Rev. John Wise, patriotic, pious, learned and very able, who used to assert "Democracy is Christ's government in Church and State." That little *Colonial Congress*, a prototype of the Provincial a hundred years later, perceived the gravity of the situation; they felt its boding, but duty pressed them more. The ancestral lamp, whose light illumined their hearts and minds, burned brightly, their sacrifice in the Indian struggle, their love of home and freedom and the hope of realizing the former in the sunlight of the latter, nerved them to action, strengthened their purpose and armed them with power. They planted; the fruit was gathered in the Revolution, and we are partakers of it. They counseled resistance to the unrighteous demand, and Mr. Wise prepared the sentiment to be presented to the town-meeting the next day. The town voted as follows:

"That considering the said act doth infringe their liberties as free born English subjects of his Majesty, and by interfering with the statute laws of the land, by which it was enacted that no taxes should be levied upon the subjects without the consent of an Assembly chosen by the freemen for assessing the same, they do, therefore, vote they were not willing to choose a commissioner for such an end without such a privilege, and they, moreover, consent not that these electmen do proceed to levy any such rate until it be appointed by a general assembly, consisting with the Governor and Council."

Immediately and heavily swept the besom of power. Samuel Appleton, sketched in *Early Settlers* of this town, a member of Andros' Council, was already under a £1000 bond for refusing to concur with the council's action. Rev. John Wise, John Appleton, brother of the above Samuel, John Andrew, Robert Kinsman, William Goodhue and Thomas French, were arrested, cast into prison in Boston and denied the privilege of *habeas corpus*. They languished twenty-one days in prison after the trial, and were fined from £50 to £15 each, including costs, which the town afterwards, in justice and in honor, paid.

To that memorable town-meeting, Mr. Wise, counseling resistance, said: "We have a good God and a good King; we shall do well to stand to our privileges." When the patriots were on trial, a member of the tyrannical council exclaimed, "You have no privileges left you, but not to be sold as slaves." Two

years later the iniquitous Andros went home in disgrace.

At the Bi-Centennial Celebration of the town, Aug. 16, 1834, Hon. Rufus Choate, the orator, in speaking of this occasion, said:

"The latter and more stormy spectacles and brighter glories and visible results of the age of the Revolution, have elsewhere cast into shade and almost covered with oblivion the actors on that interesting day, and the act itself,—its hazards, its intrepidity, its merits, its singularity and consequences. But you will remember them and teach them to your children."

THE PROVINCIAL PERIOD.—During the transition period from colony to province, under both the President and Council and the Governor and Council, the administration of justice was unstable in method. The charter, creating "The Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England," was signed October, 1691, and arrived with Sir William Phipps as Governor in May, 1692. But hardly had the new Governor entered upon his career, when occurred that strangest of delusions, the *Witchcraft tragedy*, making the wildest and saddest chapters in our New England history.

WITCHCRAFT.—For years before this date there had been trials for witchcraft in Connecticut, New York and Pennsylvania; there were trials in Boston, Charlestown and several before the Ipswich courts, but the records of the latter show no convictions. The Rowley ministers, Rev. John Wise, of Chebacco Parish, and, we may presume, the Ipswich ministers generally, opposed the proceedings. But at this time it seems as if a tidal wave from all the seas at once had rolled in upon our "stern and rock-bound coast." It was a terrible culmination. The prisons in Salem, Cambridge and Boston were crowded. It seems as if "the principalities and powers and rulers of darkness" had conspired to reign. The entire populace was delirious and enthralled; society agonized and struggled to be free. Almost everybody suspected his neighbor, and on the slightest provocation was likely to be accused.

At this time, when the delirium was wildest, Sunday, May 29, 1692, Ephraim Wildes, constable of Topsfield, came to the home of James Howe, Jr., whose site was, or was near, the nativity of Rev. Nathaniel Howe, the celebrated divine of Hopkinton, and took into custody the wife and mother as a witch.

She was charged with sundry acts of witchcraft, done or committed on the bodies of Mary Walcott and Abigail Williams and others of Salem Village, now Danvers. She was examined the next Tuesday at the house of Nathaniel Ingersoll, of that place. She plead *not guilty*, denied all knowledge of the matter, and testified that she had never heard of the girls, Mary and Abigail, till their names were read in the warrant. But in the court they fell down, they cried out, they were pinched and pricked, and they accused Mrs. Howe. She was remanded to prison in Boston to await the action of the jury of inquest. Her case was



called June 29th and 30th. The jury heard the testimony of twenty-three persons—eleven for and twelve against her. Of those against her, one quarreled with Mr. Howe about some boards, and his cows, in consequence, gave less milk; three others gave the history of a child that for several years had had "fits," and in them would call "Goody Howe," and cry out, "There she goes, there she goes, now she goes into the oven, etc.;" another would not loan his horse to Mr. Howe, and the horse strangely died; another, several years before, had some rails broken by Goody Howe without her approach to them; another refused to attend upon her preliminary trial, and his "pig jumped up and fell dead;" five others opposed her admission to membership in the church, and were concerned in the loss of two mares. Of those for her, Rev. Samuel Phillips and Rev. Edward Payson, gospel ministers of Rowley, had seen the insane girl and the families concerned, and entirely dissipated the theory of witchcraft. Deborah Hadley had been a neighbor to Mrs. Howe for twenty-four years; Daniel, John and Sarah Warner about twenty years; Simon and Mary Chapman, and Joseph and Mary Knowlton about ten years, and they each testified to her neighborly courtesy, to her conscientious dealings, to the faithful observance of her promises, to her Christian-like conversation and character. Her father-in-law, then ninety-four years old, who had known her for thirty years, testified to her daughterly conduct in leading him in his feebleness and blindness, and her loving attention to him, and to her exemplary home character as wife and mother. She was, nevertheless, condemned, and July 19th following executed upon Gallows Hill, Salem. The good Christian woman fell a victim to the prevailing, wild infatuation.

These proceedings, to us who are removed two hundred years, seem at first unaccountable, mortifying and persuasive of disowning our fathers, and of forgetting the period of their folly; but the Hon. Joseph Story, associate justice of the United States Supreme Court, after surveying the field, considering the circumstances, weighing the conditions and balancing the conclusions, wrote,—“Surely our ancestors had no special reason for shame in a belief which had the universal sanction of their own and all former ages, which counted in its train philosophers as well as enthusiasts, which was graced by the learning of prelates as well as by the countenance of kings, which the law supported by its mandates, and the purest judges felt no compunctions in enforcing.”

On September 9, 1710, Mrs. Howe's daughters, Mary and Abigail, the only survivors of the family, petitioned the General Court for indemnity, making the cash expenses of the imprisonment £20, yet “yt ye name may be Repayard, are content if your honors shall allow us twelve pounds.” The sum was duly allowed and paid in 1712.

THE FIRST COURT.—The first court provided for

in this period was the Probate, which the Governor, by authority of His “Majesties Royal Charter”—authority more implied than expressed and at the time sharply questioned, but fully confirmed in 1760—established for the counties June 18, 1692. Their officers he appointed July 21st, following.

There were during this period eight judges, three of whom were Ipswich men: John Appleton, Thomas Berry and John Choate, and eight registrars, of whom four were Ipswich men: Daniel Rogers, Daniel Appleton, Samuel Rogers and Daniel Noyes.

Judge Appleton is sketched in Colonial Courts.

THOMAS BERRY was Hon. Thomas Berry, M.D. He was the fourth judge, and officiated from October 5, 1739, to September 14, 1756. He was born in Ipswich in 1695. His father was a graduate of Harvard College, and came to this town in 1687; his mother was Margaret Rogers, who was second daughter of President Rogers, and after the death of her husband about 1697, when Thomas was about three years old, married Hon. John Leverett, F.R.S., President of Harvard College. Thomas was a graduate of Harvard in the class of 1712. He married his cousin, Martha Rogers, second child and oldest daughter of Rev. John, of Ipswich, who was the eldest son of the present. She died August 25, 1727, and he married Elizabeth Turner, daughter of Major John, of Salem.

He rose to great distinction as medical doctor, and “he was eminently distinguished for his energy and activity in public affairs as well as his own.” He was colonel of militia, representative to the General Court, justice of the Court of Common Pleas, judge of Probate, and many years of the Executive Council. In 1749 he was active in re-establishing the grammar-school. It is said he kept a chariot, with servants in livery, and made other display of wealth and rank. He died August 10, 1756, at the age of sixty-one years. The inscription on his tomb is,—

“*Sic transit gloria mundi.*”

He lived at first near the site of the depot; afterwards at his farm, now the home for the town's poor. He was interred in Ipswich.

HON. JOHN CHOATE was son of Thomas, and born in Chebacco Parish, July, 1697. He was educated at the Grammar School. He married March 3, 1717, Miriam Pool, probably of Gloucester. He lost all his children during the prevalence of throat distemper in 1735. He was a colonel of militia; a representative to the General Court for fifteen years between 1730 and 1761, inclusive; justice of the Court of General Sessions from 1746 till his death; justice of the Court of Common Pleas, and for the last ten years chief justice, successor to Judge Berry; judge of Probate from September 14, 1756, to February 5, 1766. He was chairman of the committee that built the Choate Bridge, which, because of his enterprise, energy and usefulness to the town, was called by his name. He died February 5, 1766. By his will he



emancipated two slaves, and gave £12 for a communion service for the South Church, of which he was an honored and worthy member. His estate was valued at quite £3000. He was a man of sound judgment, enterprising, firm and energetic, and a faithful public officer.

HON. DANIEL ROGERS was registrar from October 23, 1702, to January 9, 1723. He was second son of Rev. John Rogers, M.D., fifth President of Harvard College, and was born September 25, 1667, fitted for college under Master Thomas Andrew, of the Grammar School, and graduated at Harvard, 1686. He married Sarah Appleton, daughter of Captain John and sister of Hon. John. He was the fourth teacher of the Grammar School, and succeeded Master Andrew. He fitted fifteen young men for Harvard. He was feoffee of the Grammar School, town clerk, judge of the Court of Sessions of the Peace. He perished on the marshes, in a snow-storm, returning from Newbury, December 1, 1722.

HON. DANIEL APPLETON was registrar from January 9, 1723, to August 26, 1762. He was born in Ipswich, August 8, 1692, the fourth child of Judge Appleton, and nephew of Daniel Rogers, registrar. He married Elizabeth Berry, daughter of Thomas Berry, of Boston and Ipswich, and sister of Dr. Thomas, who was judge of probate. He was a colonel, a feoffee of the grammar school, was named in the act of its incorporation in 1756, was several years Representative to the General Court, and was justice of the Court of Sessions of the Peace. He died August 17, 1762.

HON. SAMUEL ROGERS was the sixth registrar, holding from August 26, 1762, to September 29, 1773. He was born in Ipswich, August 31, 1709, the youngest of ten children of Rev. John. He was nephew of Daniel, the fourth registrar, and grandson of President John, of Harvard. His mother was Martha Whittingham, great great-granddaughter of William, who married Katherine Calvin, sister of John the Reformer, and who was a Puritan refugee and compiler of the famous Geneva Bible.

He studied in the grammar school, and graduated at Harvard, 1725, when he was sixteen years old. He studied medicine and had a successful practice. He was town clerk, colonel of militia, justice of the Court of Sessions of the Peace, and Representative to the General Court. His death occurred December 21, 1772, at the age of sixty-three. He employed clerks; his office was well kept. His nephew, Hon. Daniel Rogers, who was son of Richard, a captain in the Revolutionary War, and also a justice of the Court of Sessions of the Peace, was acting registrar, during his last sickness and for some time after his death.

DANIEL NOYES, ESQ., was the eighth registrar, and occupied the office from September 29, 1775, to May 29, 1815. He was born in Newbury-Byfield, January 29, 1737, to Joseph and Elizabeth (Woodman) Noyes, and was fifth in lineal descent from Nicholas,

a brother of Rev. James, Newbury's first minister. He graduated at Harvard in 1758, and adopted Ipswich as his home. He was master of the grammar school from 1762 to 1774 inclusive, and again in 1780 and 1781. He was a delegate to the Continental Congress, 1774-75; Representative to the General Court, 1775; was postmaster, 1775, succeeding Deacon James Foster, and the last under the province and the law of 1711; was on committees of correspondence and safety, during the Revolutionary period; was grantor of permits under the non-importation act; was feoffee of the grammar school; was delegate to the convention that ratified the State Constitution, with Michael Farley, John Choate and John Cogswell; and was justice of the peace and quorum in 1797. He is said to have been "methodical and accurate," and "the faithfulness and ability with which he discharged his various duties deservedly gained for him high and extensive respect." He died March 21, 1815.

EARLY RECORDS.—The early probate records were kept by the registrar in his private custody, and usually in his dwelling-house, which was his office. After 1722, the office was in the court-house, Ipswich, but the records were kept at the registrar's home. This practice obtained through this period and practically till 1817.

OTHER COURTS.—Other Province Courts were established by act of November 25, 1692,—*High Court of Chancery*, which did not receive regal sanction. *Superior Court of Judicature*, or as it was commonly called "Superior Court," having one chief-justice and four associate justices, taking the place of the Court of Assistants, and exercising appellate jurisdiction from Inferior Court, holding two sessions annually, one at Salem in November, and the other at Ipswich in May, a court which under the constitution became the Supreme Judicial. *Inferior Court of Common Pleas* for Essex County, having original jurisdiction in all actions of real title and all civil actions where the debt or damage was forty shillings or more, an appellate jurisdiction from justices of the peace in civil cases, and presided over by four justices, a court which, in 1859, became the Superior; *Court of Quarter Sessions of the Peace* which June 26, 1699, became *General Sessions of the Peace*, presided over by justices of the peace for the county, "or so many of them as are or shall be limited in commission of the peace," and having original jurisdiction in all cases not given to the Superior Court, and not triable before single justices with appellate jurisdiction from them. This court granted licenses and laid out highways, etc. In 1804 its criminal jurisdiction was transferred to the Court of Common Pleas, and in 1827 it became the County Commissioners' Court. Commissioners of justices of the peace were authorized at the same time.

The Courts of Common Pleas and General Sessions were held simultaneously at Ipswich in March, at



Newbury in September, and at Salem in December. Thus Ipswich during this period retained her courtly prestige, as shown by the frequency of court sessions and the supremacy of their jurisdiction, whereby she was a peer among her sister towns and executed a commanding influence.

REPRESENTATIVE MEN.—The representative men of the town for this period were among the ablest men of the times. We append as good a list as we are able to obtain: *Justices of the Superior Court*: Richard Saltonstall, twenty years from 1736, and Wait Winthrop twenty-five years from 1692, nine of which he was chief justice. *Special*, Dr. Thomas Berry and Ezekiel Cheever, the famous Ipswich Grammar-school master. *Justices of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas*: John Appleton, Dr. Thomas Berry, John Choate; *Special*: John Wainwright, David Appleton and Samuel Rogers. *Justices of the General Sessions*: Samuel Appleton, Daniel Eppes, Thomas Wade, John Wainwright, Francis Wainwright, Nehemiah Jewett, John Whipple, John Appleton, Ammi Ruhami Wise, Dr. Thomas Berry, Andrew Burley, Daniel Appleton, John Choate, Samuel Rogers, Joseph Appleton and John Baker. *Sheriffs*: Major Francis Wainwright, Major Daniel Denison, John Denison and Richard Saltonstall. *Councilors to the Governor*: John Appleton, twenty-six from 1698; Dr. Thomas Berry, seventeen years from 1735, and John Choate, five years from 1761. Simon Bradstreet, Richard Saltonstall, Ezekiel Cheever and John Wainwright. *Speakers of the House*: Nehemiah Jewett, three years, 1693, 1694 and 1701. *Clerk of the House*: John Wainwright eight years, beginning 1723. *Provincial Congressmen*: Michael Farley and Daniel Noyes. *Representatives*: Daniel Appleton, five years; John Appleton, one; Dr. Thomas Berry, three; Andrew Burley, two; John Caleffe, two; John Choate, sixteen; Stephen Choate, four; Thomas Choate, four; Francis Cogswell, three; Jonathan Cogswell, one; Benj. Crocker, three; John Crocker, one; Daniel Eppes, one; Samuel Eppes, one; Michael Farley, fourteen; Thomas Hart, two; Dummer Jewett, two; Nehemiah Jewett, sixteen; Nathaniel Knowlton, nine; Daniel Noyes, one; Abraham Perkins, one; Richard Rogers, three; Samuel Rogers, three; Nathaniel Rust, one; Simon Stacy, one; Daniel Staniford, three; William Story, two; Francis Wainwright, one; John Wainwright, nineteen; Nicholas Wallis, one; Ammi R. Wise, two; John Whipple, one. *Framers of the State Constitution*: Daniel Noyes, Dummer Jewett, Stephen Choate, John Crocker and Jonathan Cogswell.

JAIL.—In 1751 the town voted to petition the Court of General Sessions "that the late prison be effectually repaired and established as heretofore as a prison and a house of correction." In 1760 a committee reported that the town petition the same court to have a house of correction built here, and to permit the dissolute poor of the town to be put in the

jail till the house of correction shall be completed. In 1771 a new jail was built on the site of the old one.

It is needless to comment upon notable cases. Since the arch fiend lied to Eve, our first parents stole the forbidden fruit, and Cain killed his brother, neither era nor people has been exempt from crime; one age exemplifies another. Our forefathers had a specific mission, a glorious cause, and they were true to their calling. They wrought nobly and well; but to err is human; we embalm their purpose, their deeds, their renown; we bury their errors in oblivion.

THE CONSTITUTIONAL PERIOD.—The constitutional period opens with the adoption of the State Constitution in 1780. The representatives to 1817 were John Choate, five years; John Crocker, one; John Heard, one, Joseph Hodgkins, of Revolutionary fame, seven years; Dummer Jewett, one; John Manning, ten; John Patch, four; Joseph Swasey, another of Revolutionary fame, eight; John Treadwell, two; and Nathaniel Wade, our most noted officer in the Revolution, twenty-two. *Speakers of the House*,—Joseph Story, 1811-12, and Otis P. Lord, 1854. *President of the Senate*, Samuel Dana, 1811-13. *Justice of the Superior Court*, Otis P. Lord, 1859-75, and of the *Supreme Court*, from 1875 till his resignation in 1882.

COUNTY BUILDINGS.—A new court-house was completed in the early part of 1795. It cost \$7000 of which the town paid half. In 1794, May 1, a committee was empowered to confer with the county, and sell the old court-house. The new court-house served till 1855, when upon the removal of the courts that year, it was sold to the Methodist Society, removed and converted into a chapel. After the erection of their present beautiful and commodious church edifice, they sold it in 1862 to Mr. Curtis Damon, who removed it to Depot Square, where it now stands, and converted it into a store.

A new stone jail was built here by the county in 1809-10, which was occupied February 21st, of the latter year. It cost \$27,000, and was a model for security and convenience. It stood on the premises of the present "County-House" and "Hospital," as they are called, and served its purpose well till 1866, when it was sold to the Eastern Railroad Company, who used it to arch a roadway just east of the Merrimac River bridge, at Newburyport. The "County-House," or house of correction, was occupied in 1828, when the old one, at Norton's Bridge, where Messrs. Stackpole's soap-manufactory stands, was discontinued. The "Hospital," or the receptacle for the chronic insane was erected about 1841 or 1842. Some two or three years ago in connection with the reformatory, a workshop, one hundred by thirty feet, was erected.

The first probate repository, as such, was occupied December 15, 1817. It was built of brick and fire-proof, forty feet long, twenty-eight wide and one



very high, and cost \$3700. During the early part of this period the records were kept in the registrar's private dwelling, while his office was in the new court-house. From 1795 to 1815 the repository was also in the court-house. At the latter date both the records and the office retired to the dwelling of Nathaniel Lord, the registrar, to come forth in 1817 to occupy the safe repository till 1852 when by order of the county commissioners they were removed to Salem. The building is now the property of the Odd Fellows, and contains a drug-store, the post-office and the Odd Fellows' Hall in an added story.

Two of the registrars of this period have been Ipswich men,—Nathaniel Lord, 3d, and his son George Robert, whose biographical sketches close this chapter.

The only court held here now is trial-justice Bell's. The attorneys and counselors-at-law are Hon. Charles A. Sayward, Edward P. Kimball, Esq., John R. Baker, Esq., James Brown Lord, Esq., who are natives here and Hon. George Haskell, is a native of Newburyport.

This decadence is entirely attributable to the country's growth in population, the consequent extension of business and change of business centres.

BIOGRAPHICAL.—NATHANIEL LORD, 3d, was the ninth registrar, and his service covered a period from May 29, 1815, to June 12, 1851. He fitted for college with Daniel Dana, D.D., son of Rev. Joseph, his pastor, and he graduated at Harvard in 1798. His graduation exercise was a poem, and the subject, "Astronomy." In his class were Dr. Channing, Judges Story and Fay, Dr. Tuckerman and Rev. Prof. Emerson, who may be considered the first to devise and put in practice a curriculum of study and discipline especially designed for and adapted to female education and culture.

He married, at Ipswich, Eunice Kimball, daughter of Jeremiah and Lois-Choate Kimball. His children were Nathaniel James, born October 28, 1805; Mary, born July 17, 1807, died March 11, 1846; Lois Choate, born July 9, 1810; Otis Phillips, born July 11, 1812; Isaac, born July 2, 1814, died April 1, 1816; George Robert, born December 16, 1817,—three of whom were lawyers, of whom one was an eminent judge. His wife died April 9, 1837, and he married, September 6, 1838, Mary Holt Adams, daughter of John Adams, Esq., of Andover.

Mr. Lord was scholarly; he never relinquished the study of the classics. He had the habit of a student; he was mathematically exact, careful, in verbal distinctions; also methodical and accurate; and when in Judge White's tenure of office it was determined to improve the old methods, to multiply new and remodel old forms, Mr. Lord's taste, judgment and learning were requisite, and the present practice of the Court attests his good sense and foresight.

Politically, Mr. Lord was a Conservative Whig, and when, in the course of human events, the politics

of the appointing power changed, and democracy rules the registrar must be a Democrat.

He had no taste for public life. He delivered a Fourth-of-July oration when a young man; welcomed General Lafayette to Ipswich in 1824; presided at the town's bi-centennial celebration in 1834; he was a justice of the peace and quorum; was one year, 1823, selectman and several years on the school board.

He fell from his chair, at home, and died October 16, 1852. His residence was on High Street; his estate is now known as the "Lord Mansion." The house was built in 1728 by Rev. Nathaniel Rogers.

GEORGE ROBERT LORD, Esq., was the eleventh registrar. He is a son of the last mentioned registrar, and was born as there stated. He was registrar from February 14, 1853, to February 27, 1855, soon after the advent of the American, or Know-Nothing, party to power. He is an excellent penman and exemplary recorder. He has spent most of his life in the service of the courts. He is employed now where he has for years been—in the office of the Clerk of Courts.

CHAPTER XLVII.

IPSWICH.—(Continued).

BUSINESS.

THE early and leading industries of the town were farming, grazing and fishing. The various trades met, with facility and skill, the demand of home consumption, furnishing the house, and the farm, equipping the mariner and manufacturing the clothing.

FARMING.—This may be said to have been the leading industry, the first requisite of which is the soil. The underlying rock of the town, and, of the county, is syenite, or hornblende granite, an excellent building and flagging stone that has made Cape Ann famous, but is not quarried here. The soil above is light, consisting of gravel, sand, clay, and the product of organic decay, not mixed in a favorable proportion to make a strong, productive land. The soil requires as constant care and judicious handling and fertilizing as the crops need cultivation. The best soil is, of course, between the hills, and it rewards the husbandman as a garden. The hill-sides and plains, of which there are many, are not poor, but are much worn in the lapse of two hundred and fifty years. They were sought and valued by our ancestors. Well might the *Wonder-working Providence* remark: "They have very good land for husbandry, where rocks hinder not the course of the plow." This land was adapted to the growth of the cereals, such as corn, oats, barley, rye, wheat and flax. "The potato was cultivated," says Felt, "in 1733, but was not much used. It was a delicacy, accompanying a roast-beef



dinner and unusual occasions; the turnip, then raised in abundance, took its place on all common occasions." Corn and rye were the principal bread-stuff of our sires. Barley made a nutritive food, a palatable coffee, and a healthful beer; flax was easily converted into linen, which supplied various needs of the household; and hemp, which had been grown by the Indians, was cultivated and converted into clothing and other uses. Their pasturage, which consisted of more than seven thousand five hundred acres, was good. The soil was new and feed abundant, and the numerous large hills were peculiarly serviceable; the best beef could be produced simply at the expense of the herdsman's time. The *Wonder-Working Providence* tells us, "the Lord hath been pleased to increase them in Corne and Cattell of late [1650]; insomuch that they have many hundred quarters to spare yearly, and feed, at the latter end of summer, the Town of *Boston* with good beefe."

THE MARSHES.—The salt marshes and fresh meadows were an important factor in the agricultural economy. There are more than 3300 acres of the former and some 500 acres of the latter. In the early years of the town these were the only sources of food for the cattle in winter. The grass of either is not very valuable; but when properly mixed and fed out with care it is fairly relished and served particularly well to winter young stock. The fresh meadows have served largely for fuel, furnishing an incipient coal called *peat*. This is an accumulation of half-decomposed vegetable substance formed under water, without pressure, and contains fifty or more *per centum* of carbon. It began to be used at a very early period; so long since was it dug, that some of the ditches thus made had, fifty years ago, grown over and become sufficiently solid to allow the picking of cranberries growing thereon. A hundred and twenty-four years ago it was in great demand. The land sold from \$75 to \$100 per acre, or in family yearly supplies, at about two dollars per square rod. Coal began to be used about 1830, and has now supplanted *peat* except in a few instances, in the rural districts, where the families own *peat* meadow.

Where this formation of vegetable matter has progressed subject to atmospheric action, *muck* has been formed, which has been much used as a fertilizer.

Some of these meadows are more or less valuable for the production of cranberries, yielding from a few bushels to forty or fifty per acre. The berry grows without cultivation, and with little attention.

WOOD AND TIMBER.—The woodlands have been very productive; oak and pine wood and timber being the staples. Since the introduction of coal, wood-fuel has fallen in price nearly half; and the price of timber has been greatly diminished since the easy transportation of timber and lumber, by rail from the North and the East. Timber and wood merchants, with heavy teams of oxen or horses, used to do a profitable business, but such teams now are not seen.

THE CULTIVATION.—There are besides the above, probably three thousand acres now under cultivation. The leading productions are fruit, vegetables, corn and milk. Much attention late years has been given to garden productions, especially early vegetables. Hay has been grown with much care, especially the so-called English hay, since its introduction at the first, by obtaining the seed from England. "Grayne seed,"—wheat, rye and barley,—was introduced from England in 1629, with which probably, or soon after, came our fine, English grass-seed. In 1666 those who had taken ground of the town, and agreed to sow four bushels of good English grass-seed, were called to an account for their neglect to do so. In 1694, for the payment of taxes, the town made the following prices: barley, barley-malt and rye, four shillings per bushel; wheat, six shillings; Indian corn, three shillings; and oats, two shillings.

HAY.—Hay merchants from fifty to a hundred years ago made their toil remunerative by purchasing hereabouts and selling in the Salem and Boston markets. They employed teams of from four to six horses, and carried from four to six tons to a load. Hay is now pressed in the East and elsewhere, put up in bales and transported by rail, so that the trade in hay is hardly more than local.

BERRIES.—The prolific huckleberry and blueberry, the *attatash* of the Indians, demands a notice. It is a delicious little berry, and by its fine palatable quality has ingratiated itself into public favor, and the market demands it. It ripens in July and August, during the long school vacation, and many a family of children earns from twenty to thirty dollars in a season,—an essential help to the poor, and a profitable recreation for the scholars. A hill in the Linebrook District, written "Hurtleberry Hill" two hundred years ago, is now visited from the towns about us, by huckleberry-parties yearly, so plentiful the berry still continues. One of the many market-men hereabouts sold last year nearly three hundred bushels of them.

FRUITS.—Apples and pears were introduced from the mother-country. The houses of the settlers were surrounded by "pleasant gardens and orchards," and to-day if you find, in the woods or a pasture, an old cellar that long since was abandoned, there you are likely to find the old wall that enclosed its orchards, and some of the old, old trees. So valuable were the orchards to our ancestors, so late even as a century ago, that the father divided his orchard, by will, among his children, devising or bequeathing certain trees to particular children, while one child only was to possess the land. During the last fifty years orchards have been cultivated with profit in producing the choicest varieties of apples and pears.

TOBACCO.—Our early ancestors derived much profit in the cultivation of tobacco. In the Virginia Colony, it was a source of large revenue. Our Legislature frowned upon it as hurtful, and in 1634 attached a fine of 2s. 6d. to every occasion of its public use, and



in 1635 prohibited traffic in it after September. But in 1682 tobacco-yards were common, and its cultivation was continued for a century, at least. Families had their gardens of "the weed," and their peculiar "mode of twisting it and curing it, with molasses and rum, to make it palatable."

Sumach and sassafras were exported, the former as a dye-stuff, the latter for medicine.

STATISTICS.—The United States Census of 1880 reported 153 farms, 357 persons engaged in farming pursuits, of whom 4 were females, a production of 120,692 gallons of milk, 4806 tons of hay, 43,482 pounds of butter, 375 pounds of cheese, 28,511 dozen of eggs, 17,940 bushels of potatoes on 211 acres of land and 11,355 bushels of corn on 266 acres of land, having a total value of \$98,418.

From the latest official statistics of the State we make the following interesting comparison with the State statistics of 1875.

<i>Farms and Appurtenances</i>	1875.	1885.
No. of Farms.....	450	216
Value of Land.....	\$679,479	\$569,446
Value of Buildings.....	305,790	486,262
Value of Fences.....	52,296	51,656
Value of Domestic Animals.....	90,449	105,738
Value of Agricultural Implements.....	66,237	48,513
Total value.....	\$1,184,251	\$1,261,515
<i>Value of Products.</i>		
Butter.....	\$13,179	\$12,812
Milk.....	35,276	52,075
Corn, Indian.....	3,310	6,783
Potatoes.....	14,213	10,815
Vegetables.....	2,908	9,833
Eggs.....	6,819	12,453
Apples.....	17,924	6,123
Hay.....	101,880	77,328
Other products.....	41,000	55,653
Total.....	\$243,969	\$243,965

The selectmen for 1886 report 495 horses, 845 cows, 312 other neat cattle, 162 sheep, and 744 dwelling-houses.

This tabulated statement shows a decrease in the value of farm lands, fruit-trees, and implements, and of butter, potatoes, apples, and hay; and an increase in the value of buildings and animals, and of corn, milk, eggs and vegetables, clearly setting up in figures the wise departure from the olden time, heavy farming to the easy, more agreeable and profitable traffic in milk and vegetable products. The alluvial river-borders and the mountain districts, however distant, may furnish us with potatoes, and hay, and butter, and cheese; but the morning's milk, fresh eggs and green stuffs from the garden must be produced nearer the place of sale.

Our Essex County Agricultural Society has done a great good in years past, in stimulating a healthful emulation among our farmers by premiums for best farms, fruits, grass and methods; but a greater practical good, in later years, has been done by our miniature or local societies, where the farmers of the town

met for practical discussion upon live topics of local interest. This makes a learned, intelligent, practical, diligent, progressive farmer, and gives us the best results with less labor and expense. So we compliment the Ipswich Farmers' Club and the "Ipswich Fruit-Growers' Protective Association."

Fisheries.—There is no doubt that a fishing-station had existed here for a number of years before March, 1633. Gorges and his company had stations all along this coast. Jeffrey, or Burslim, or both managed here. The place was excellent in two respects: The Neck furnished the wharfage, and Ipswich and Plum-Island Rivers, with Plum-Island as a breakwater, the harbor; the shallow water and the high bar forming no impediment to the small crafts or boats then in use. Second, the supply of fish along the shore and in the rivers was abundant. Cod and sturgeon and bass then belonged to our shores and streams. The fishery increased and became lucrative. The town took measures to make the business inviting. In 1641 the fishermen could enclose their fishing-stages, and each crew could plant an acre of ground. In 1670 they could take wood from the common for needed buildings and for fuel, and each crew could feed a cow upon the common. In 1696 Jeffrey's Neck was well covered with fish-flakes on the south side. A committee was chosen to regulate the flakes, which were "to run up and down the hill," so that one party might not interfere with or hinder another. That year there seems to have been an impetus given the business from the fact, that "new flakes" were set up. These were apparently to invite and accommodate new parties "to carry on the fishing design." At this time there was a community of some seven or eight hundred persons doing, in connection with other industries and trades, a large and prosperous business, and still, wise and generous, holding out inducements and inviting co-operation. The business grew, and with it grew its hazards, perils, sorrows, losses; and it was necessary to hedge it in with safeguards and positive law. Accordingly, in 1729, the town provided that owners of vessels should register their names and the names of the crew with the clerk, or forfeit 20s. for each and every name omitted. But with all the liberality of accommodation and assistance, the industry waned; better natural facilities led the fishermen away, and only six schooners remained to Ipswich in 1758. From that time Ipswich managed to retain the remnant, so that in "1797 a few vessels were employed in the fishery."

STREAM FISHERIES.—The catches of sturgeon, blue-fish, shad and alewives were of considerable importance in the early days. They were a revenue to the town, of some commercial importance in trade with the West Indies, and "last though perhaps not least" they were of much value to the poorer families. Their importance has been considered so great, that the Legislature has, again and again, been petitioned for fishways by the dams of the manufactories. The



petition of May 25, 1768, says: The Ipswich River has been reported "from age to age one of the best fish streams, particularly for shad, bass and alewives, in the county if not in the country." Within fifty years, several barrels of alewives have been taken, in a season, from a single brook. These fish are now little if at all known in our streams.

Clam-digging, also, has, from the first, been of considerable importance. Measures were early taken to protect the flats. Fishermen and the poor, in early years, had special privileges to them. In 1789 a thousand barrels were dug. They sold for five or six dollars per barrel, and were much used for bait. It is a good paying industry now, the product finding a ready sale in the city markets, and furnishing a dainty relish for poor and rich alike. The Ipswich clams rank in celebrity with the Providence River or Norfolk oyster. Even the shells pulverized find a ready sale, in the country, among poulterers far and near. Shore and stream fishing is all that is left to us now. The dory, the seine and the fork are the chief implements of the industry. In 1875 the capital employed was nine thousand dollars, and the value of fish caught was twenty thousand nine hundred and forty-eight dollars; while in 1885 the capital was only two thousand two hundred dollars, yet the value of the fish was twenty-one thousand seven hundred and eighty-four dollars.

COMMERCE.—*The Wonder-Working Providence* says, that Ipswich, in 1650, "was a very good Haven Town, yet a little barr'd up at the mouth of the River. Some merchants are here." The maritime enterprise of the town long kept up her merchant service, though compared with Boston, it was small. There is no source of information on this topic; the custom-house files are barred by law; and inferences only are left. Ipswich was a port of entry as early as June 28, 1701-2. The port establishments of 1692-93 did not receive regul sanction. The building of wharves began 1641, when William Paine had one for a warehouse. A wharf was built in each of the following years, 1660, '62 and '68. Again in each of these years a wharf was built, 1682, '85, '86, '87 and '93. In 1720 two wharves were built. In 1732 Joseph Manning built one and the town agreed to have one, as a landing-place at six pence a load. In 1750 Daniel and Thomas Staniford were granted liberty for wharfage for a warehouse. In 1756 William Dodge had one, and in 1764 Nathaniel Farley another. The coasting business is said to have begun about 1768. Dr. Morse's *Gazetteer* says that Ipswich, in 1779, "employed few vessels in the fisheries, and a few traded in the West Indies." That year thirteen vessels were enrolled at the Ipswich Custom-House and registered at four hundred and fifty tons. In 1807 twenty-three vessels were enrolled with thirteen hundred and sixty-two tons; in 1817 twelve vessels and seventeen hundred and forty tons; in 1827 twenty-five vessels and thirty-two hundred and

seventy-three tons; in 1832 twenty-three vessels and twenty-six hundred and nineteen tons. During the first quarter of this century, Robert Farley built a vessel of three hundred tons, which was about three times the average size. At present there are no vessels belonging to Ipswich enrolled at the custom-house, which compasses all of five tons or more in the district. There are two or three coalers, which supply the coal-wharves yearly with ten thousand tons of the "diamonds," and an occasional sloop, bringing stone for building purposes; but they are owned elsewhere. There is, however, Captain N. Burnham's fine excursion steamer "Carlotta," which, during the summer season, runs her regular trips to the Island, besides making occasional trips to points of interest along the coast. Capt. Moses Treadwell, I am told, owned the last vessel belonging here; and that she lay neglected, for many years in "The Cove," and went to pieces before 1824.

This was made a national customs collection district by act of Congress approved May 7, 1796. By this act a collector of customs was authorized, and the surveyorship formerly existing and held by Jeremiah Staniford was abolished. The first collector of customs was Asa Andrews. The letter informing him of his appointment was dated June 9, 1796. His immediate successor, Timothy Souther, received notice of his appointment, by a letter dated July 22, 1829. Mr. Souther was succeeded by Asabel Wildes, August 2, 1840, who continued in office to and including July 20, 1844, when the office was merged in the Newburyport office, and Essex, which had been a part of the Ipswich District, was joined to Gloucester, according to an act of Congress approved June 15, 1844. At this time Daniel L. Wilcomb was inspector and Issachar Burnham occasional inspector, each at three dollars a day when employed. Daniel Lakeman was revenue boatman, at one dollar a day when employed. Other inspectors have been Reuben Daniels, Philip E. Clarke, James W. Bond. Mr. Andrews was born in June, 1762, and he died January 13, 1856, in his ninety-fourth year. He held the office of collector about thirty-three years. He was a very able man and had honorable mention as candidate for Congress. He had a son who graduated at Harvard, at the age of eighteen years, and was rector at Binghamton, N. Y., for fifteen years.

MECHANICS AND MANUFACTURES.

TRADES.—Herein particularly old Mother Necessity exhibits her large family of inventions. The people of those early days did not live to eat so much as eat to live. Every day's labor, on the whole, must be a positive advance. We of to-day have abundance out of an abundance by means abundant; they lived frugally and healthfully, cheerfully and hopefully, by a poverty of means; and however unpolished and rude may have been the results of their workmanship, it served their purpose, advanced thir State, and we

must accord their meed of praise. In 1638 Thomas Emerson was a baker. Thomas Bridan was granted six acres of land, on which to plant osiers, or willows, for basket-making, in 1639. Mr. Samuel Appleton had a malt-house in 1642. The "mault-kills" may cut walnut trees for drying malt, in 1669; and James Burnam was granted land for a malt-house in 1691; "John Low's," then discontinued, having been beneficial to the neighborhood." John Paine was allowed a brewery and warehouse in 1663, but there has been none since 1800. Andrew Peters might cut trees for a cider-mill in 1668. A distillery for the manufacture of rum from molasses was set up about 1750; the manufacture ceased in 1830. There were two smiths in 1667. In 1682 Thomas Day had a place granted for a brickyard, and Andrew Burley burned bricks on Jeffrey's Neck in 1687. Thomas Howlett was carpenter in 1633; Samuel Boreman, cooper in 1629; William Bulkley, cordwainer in 1664; Nathaniel Bishop, currier in 1638; and Henry Keerle was admitted to citizenship and allowed to set up the trade of currier in 1665. John Brown, Jr., was glazier in 1664; Nathaniel Rust, glover in 1690; William Fuller, gunsmith in 1635; Samuel Wood, hatter in 1692; Simon Tomson, ropemaker in 1648; Moses Pingrey may set up salt-pans and works in 1651, and in 1669 the town voted £8 to James Hudson to set up salt-works. In 1642 each town was to have a house for the manufacture of saltpetre. Henry Russell, of Ipswich, and Richard Woodey, of Boston, were preparing for the manufacture of saltpetre and gunpowder in 1666; and in 1667 the town ordered that each family should provide a hogshead of earth as a urinal, auxiliary to the manufacture of gunpowder. Nathaniel Brown had a grant of land, whereon to make ashes and soap. In 1691 there was an old "sop-house." John Annable was a tailor in 1647; Nicholas Easton was a tanner in 1634; Thomas Clarke, in 1641; Ens. Thomas Hart, in 1700; and Thomas Brown's son, in 1734. In 1832 the tanneries employed ten men, at \$1.20 per day, used ninety cords of bark, converted 10,000 hides into leather, which was sold in the county for \$25,250. James How was a weaver in 1642, and John Denison in 1647. Richard Kimball, Jr., was a wheelwright in 1638; Thomas Fuller had land for a wheelwright-shop in 1685; in 1671 Freegrace Norton could cut timber for "cogs and rounds and starts for the mill;" Deacon Pingrey built a small lighter; and, in 1691, "Jacob Foster could cut timber for pails, measures, &c." Thus the records record, but of course there may have been other names at earlier dates.

GRIST-MILL MACHINERY.—The first man to make use of machinery was Richard Saltonstall, and, we think, Sir Richard. Richard Saltonstall was a man of liberal, advanced and pronounced ideas. He openly and fearlessly denounced the African slave-trade. This man set up a grist-mill in 1635, on the site of Mr. Farley's stone mill. Jonathan Wade was allowed

to take timber for a wind-mill, which was built and gave name to the hill where it stood. This kind of motive power was not much resorted to in Ipswich, because of the abundant water-power. Thomas Bishop and Robert Lord might erect a grist-mill, in 1666. In 1671 the town declare one corn-mill insufficient for their use, and as if there were but one in town, a complaint was made against Mr. Saltonstall, with a request that he erect another. In 1686-87 Sergt. Nicholas Wallis might dam the river, not exceeding three feet, and erect mills for the town's use. In 1687 Nehemiah Jewett might erect a mill on Egypt River. In 1691-92 Thomas Boreman desired to erect a tide grist-mill, on Labor-in-vain Creek. In 1695-96 Abraham Tilton, Jr., and Edmund and Anthony Potter asked that they might erect a mill on Mile Brook. In 1696-97 John Adams, Sr. and Jr., and Michael Farley might dam the river, against Adams' land, and erect corn and fulling-mills.

SAW-MILLS.—There seems to have been no early saw-mills on the territory of the present Ipswich. Several were at Chebacco. In 1656 sawyers might fell trees in the woods three and a half miles or more from the meeting-house, if they would allow the town one-fifteenth and charge the inhabitants no more than four *per centum*.

FULLING-MILLS.—The first fulling-mill seems to have been built about 1675; another was attempted in 1676, on Egypt river, but was not completed in the prescribed three years, and the dam was afterwards removed. Joseph Caleffe might erect one "where it will not prejudice others," if he will full for the town's people "for their pay sooner than for other 'towns' men for money," in 1692. Joseph Caleffe and Thomas and Anthony Potter, in 1692-93, might erect one on Mile Brook. These were mills that received the cloth woven at home and cleansed, scoured and pressed it,—that removed the dirt and grease, and made the material more compact, firmer and stronger, with a soft, glossy nap.

CLOTH.—In 1641 children and servants were to be taught the manufacture of cloth from wild hemp, with which the country abounded. In 1645, wool was scarce, and in 1654 no sheep might be transported, and none killed under two years of age. In 1656 the town was divided into classes of five, six and ten, and taught the art of spinning. One person shall spin three pounds of linen, cotton, wool, monthly, for thirty weeks each year, or forfeit twelve pence per month, for each pound short. Half and quarter spinners were required to do the same proportionally. Samuel Stacy was clothier in 1727. Those were the days of the "independent farmer." All his needs were supplied by his skill or care. Even his clothes grew on his own field in the azure-hued flax or the silvery fleece of his sheep. His family converted these into fine, cool thread, or soft, warm yarn, and these latter they wove into cloth from which they made his and his family's garments. Our



childhood's lips delighted to cord with the hum of the spinning-wheel. We have a vivid remembrance of the little wheel for linen and the big wheel for wool, but the clatter of the loom, that so deftly arranged the warp and woof was a home-thrumming hardly so late as our day. The weaver's thrums are now supplanted by a noisy, profitless thrumming of the piano.

WOOLEN-MILL.—Dr. John Manning, in 1792, was granted a lot of land, fifty by thirty feet, at the north-west corner of Choate Bridge, for a woollen factory. In 1794 he had a further grant for the same purpose, and July 8, 1795, a full and complete title was given. The mill went into operation in 1794, and manufactured cloths and blankets. The enterprise was not a success, and the business was closed in 1800. The site was afterwards occupied by "Coburn's Block," the structure now there is called "Caldwell's Block."

LACE MANUFACTURE.—This product was made in families. The manufacture probably had a small beginning,—was confined to a few families, but grew till "almost every family" was engaged in it. It particularly suited the employment of women and children, for profit and leisure. "The lace was formed," says Mr. Felt, "on a lap-pillow, which had a piece of parchment round it with the particular figure, represented by pins stuck up straight, around which the work was done and the lace wrought." Black and white laces, in silk and thread, and of all widths and qualities, were made. It was considerably exported in 1797. In 1790 nearly forty-two thousand yards were made, and the business was then rather increasing. It continued till about 1821 or '22, when a Boston lace company removed to this town and set up their machinery. They located on South Main Street, near the Foot-bridge, and February 4, 1824, were incorporated as the "Boston and Ipswich Lace Company." Joseph Farley, William H. Sumner, Augustine Heard and George W. Heard, were the proprietors; and could hold real estate to the value of fifty thousand dollars, and personal to the value of one hundred thousand dollars, and could manufacture "lace and other articles made of linen, silk, cotton and woollen material." The company, of course, achieved success for a number of years; but the deepest streams are not always smooth. It is said the company "split," and occasioned the formation of another. "Thomas Manning, Ammi Smith, John Clark, their associates, successors and assigns, were incorporated the "New England Lace Company," January 17, 1827, and could hold thirty thousand dollars in real estate, and fifty thousand dollars in personal. The factory was located on High Street, on the site of Mr. Joseph Ross' residence. In some way, by English competition or interference, the business became unprofitable, and the factories closed,—the former in 1828, and the latter soon after 1833.

COTTON MANUFACTURE.—Joseph Farley had leave, June 19, 1827, to close a town way, then used as a

watering-place, between the lace-factory and his saw-mill, that he might construct a new dam and erect a factory in the place of the saw-mill. In due time the preparation was completed, and the factory was built of stone in 1828 and '29. Augustine Heard, Joseph Farley and George W. Heard, were incorporated the "Ipswich Manufacturing Company," June 11, 1828, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars in real, and one hundred thousand dollars in personal estate, for manufacturing from cotton and woollen materials. The manufacture was begun in 1830. James H. Oliver, of Boston, was the treasurer, and in 1834 Otis Holmes was superintendent. Samuel Davis was overseer of carding, Barnum Leonard of spinning, Calvin Locke of weaving. Joseph Farley, Jr., was clerk and paymaster, and Joseph Kendall was master-mechanic. "The machinery of the mill," says a correspondent of the *American Journal of Fabrics*, "consisted of one conical willow for cleaning the cotton; one picker twenty-four inches wide, with two beaters, without lapper; fourteen breaker and fourteen finisher cards, eighteen inches wide, with wooden cylinders, thirty-six inches in diameter; four drawing frames with three heads each; four Taunton tube speeders. The most of the warp-spinning were the English live spindle frames,—part of them had circular and some of them straight fronts. The flyers were screwed to the top of the spindles, and must be unscrewed at each doffing. There were two dead spindle frames in the room, built by a Mr. Derby, of Exeter, N. H. Two cradle warpers, two dressers, two pairs of hand mules, sixty Scotch looms, with the crank motion or sweep outside of the ends; speed of the looms one hundred and twenty per minute, speed of the front rollers on the live spindle running fifty per minute, speed of the card cylinders one hundred and twenty. The cotton was weighed and spread on a cloth, about ten feet long by eighteen inches wide, was rolled on a stick, placed on the breaker card, the cloth dropping slowly to the floor, while the cotton, as it was carded, passed on to a light drum thirty inches in diameter, by twenty inches wide. The thickness of one lap was the product of one weighing. The lap was folded when taken from the drum and placed in a box back of the finisher-card, and then fed to the card. The mill ran nearly fourteen hours per day to ten hours of the present time; but the speed of the spinning has been increased about forty turns of the front roller, and looms in many places are now running from one hundred and sixty to one hundred and eighty picks per minute on similar numbers of yarn. In place of card cylinders, eighteen inches wide by thirty-six inches in diameter, may be seen the colossal English carding engine, forty-two by sixty; but cards thirty-six by thirty-six and forty-two by forty-eight inches are generally in use in this country. The doublings of this mill were very limited, and were confined to the drawing. The first head doubled four to one, the



second head the same and the third head two to one, equal to sixty-four doublings. (A mill in Lowell today on about the same number of yarn doubled twenty-seven thousand six hundred and forty-eight times.") The cloth they made sold for nine and one-half and ten cents per yard; the same quality to-day would bring only three and one-half and four cents. Notwithstanding this seeming disparity, the mill was a peer in its day, and was run for many years with a fair degree of success. It was an exponent of the energy and enterprise mainly of Captain Joseph Farley.

The *Census* of 1880 reported three clothing, hosiery, etc., manufactories, employing 452 operatives, 210 males, 241 females, and one child, at a yearly pay of \$147,466, and a capital of \$254,500, and producing goods valued at \$441,312 from stock valued at \$204,800; two boot and shoe shops, employing 49 persons, 33 males and 14 females, and a capital of \$21,000, and producing goods valued at \$77,900; one box factory, employing eight men and a capital of \$25,000, and yielding products valued at \$12,000; and one brickyard, employing 12 men and a capital of \$5000, and producing bricks worth \$3000. No woven fabrics were reported. None are reported in the latest official returns. The principal manufactures, in the order of their value, are knit goods (chiefly hosiery), boots and shoes, buildings, isinglass, butchering, carriages and wagons, clothing, bread and pastry. The manufactories use five steam engines, of three hundred and fifty-five actual horse-power; nine water-wheels of 162 nominal horse-power. Of the 621 employes in 1875, 444 were males and 187 were females, of whom six males and five females were under fifteen years of age. Of the nine hundred employes in 1885, 600 worked by the piece and 300 by the day. This tabulation is self-explaining:

Items.	1875.	1885.
No. of manufactories.....	73	51
Employes.....	631	806
Wages for the year.....	\$267,216	\$261,551
Capital invested.....	423,004	1,107,293
Value of raw material.....	435,730	512,173
Goods made.....	888,362	1,018,712

This table shows a decrease in the number of manufactories of more than thirty *per centum* in ten years. The disparity is due to various causes, but chiefly, probably to the concentration of capital. It shows, on the other hand, a greater number of employes by more than forty-two *per centum*; but though they do, per capita, the same amount of work, their *per-capita* pay is much less. To be definitely instructed herein, however, would require a complete statement, but the general showing of growing industries, employing a greater number of persons at fair remuneration is interesting and gratifying.

MONEY.—For about twenty years the town had no money. Trade was carried on mainly by way of barter. The medium of exchange was musket-bullets, wampum and latterly some English coins. In

1652 silver was coined in Boston. Rogues soon began to clip and counterfeit the pieces, which occasioned the appointments of "searchers of coins." Massachusetts coined copper, silver and gold from 1786 to 1789, and the United States began to coin them in 1793 and 1794. Paper money was issued as early as 1690, and has continued meanwhile. The bills at first were expedient to meet the great expense of the government in prosecuting the wars and other necessary expenses. Though serviceable at first, they proved hurtful ultimately. The people lost confidence in government paper, and great and wide-spread distress ensued. In 1781 seventy-five dollars in paper would only equal one in silver. In 1794 a tax of £1 meant £1 17s. 6d., in new emission, and 12s. 6d. in hard money. In this century, besides the national coinage, a system of State banking obtained till the war of the Rebellion. The banks facilitated local exchange. Their service was circumscribed, because their ability was seldom known beyond their respective precincts. In many instances, on the other hand, they continued to serve for the same reason.

An institution of this kind was chartered here March 25, 1833, when Thomas Manning, Michael Brown, Ephraim F. Miller, Charles Kimball, Samuel N. Baker, and Samuel S. Farrington became "the president, directors and company of the Ipswich Bank," to continue till October 1, 1851. The capital was one hundred thousand dollars. It continued a number of years with indifferent success. The banking-house stood nearly opposite the present new Savings Bank building.

"Joseph Ross, Aaron Cogswell, Frederick Willcomb and their associates and successors" were incorporated March 20, 1869, the "Ipswich Savings Bank." It began business in the following year, and has proved very opportune and serviceable. Theo. F. Cogswell is the clerk and the treasurer.

BENEFACTIONS AND CHARITIES.

THE POOR.—"The poor ye have always with you," said the Greatest of earth; and in accordance with the suggestion, the benefactions and amenities of home and neighborhood are commended by the wise and good always and everywhere. "Liberality of disposition and conduct," says Cogan, "give the highest zest and relish to social intercourse." To tithe our incomes, and give as God has prospered us, is a fundamental law of all honest living. The man who does not plan and work with both heart and head is likely to learn in the end that he has ignored the most ennobling zest of labor, and the most ennobling joy of life. Beneficence and charity are business, and a part of business is beneficence and charity. Our ancestors early provided for the needy. There was one such in 1666. Twelve years later there was one,—probably others. In 1688 the bill for doctoring the poor was £2. 1s. In 1701-02, was voted some "convenient building for the entertainment of the widow



Dent, or any of the poor of the town." In 1717 a convenient house for the poor was to be built of logs. Its length was forty feet, width sixteen, stud six and its roof "flat as may be suitable." In 1738 the town paid £400 for the poor. In 1740 the poor were let out. In 1742 a hundred bushels of corn were purchased to be distributed among the poor, and there was talk of building a "work-house." In 1760 there was voted £66. 13s. 4d. to purchase a house for two men who had become reduced to poverty. In 1784 it was voted to sell the old almshouse,—that stood near the county-house, and which in 1770 was much decayed,—for the most it would bring. The same year they talked of erecting an almshouse, and the next year instructed a committee to furnish one. In 1786 the cost of the poor was £300, and in 1792 it was more than £500. In 1795 John Harris' farm was purchased for a poor-farm, for £250. In 1796 the whole number of the poor was twenty-eight, twenty of whom were supplied in part. The present poor-farm, formerly the estate of Hon. Thomas Berry, M. D., was purchased April 10, 1818, of Billy Emerson, of Topsfield, three hundred and twenty-one acres for \$9,500. There are fifty acres of marsh. The soil is excellent for hay and grain, yielding one hundred and fifty tons of the former, and six hundred bushels of the latter in a year. The old farm was sold in 1819, and the proceeds were expended in improvements upon the new farm. The present almshouse of brick was built in 1838 or '39.

The town September 3, 1766, instructed Captain Farley, the representative, "to oppose paying money out of the treasury to relieve the suffering occasioned by the riot of the stamp-act, but to move that the Governor call for subscriptions as in case of fire." Such plan was adopted, and Ipswich promptly voted to raise by subscription £100. To the sufferers by fire at Portsmouth in 1803, she gave \$100; and to similar sufferers at Newburyport in 1811, she gave \$1,000. In 1825 she contributed \$200 for the Bunker Hill monument.

As early as about 1640, subscriptions from the province towns were requested in aid of Harvard College. The general court advised liberal contributions. Deputies and elders were enlisted in the cause; grain or money, or both would be gladly received. The rates for Ipswich in 1664-65 were £7. 6s. 7d., and in 1681 her contribution in grain was valued at £19½.

COMMONS.—The town lands were held and managed by the freemen of the town, as if they were a company for that purpose. In 1644, moved by generosity and public spirit, they set apart a tract on the north side of the river, containing by estimation three thousand two hundred and forty-four acres, and gave and granted it "to the inhabitants of the town with themselves, their heirs and successors forever." In 1788 the commoners of Ipswich "make an absolute grant of all their interest, both real and personal, lying within the town of Ipswich unto the in-

habitants of said town, to be sold to pay the town debt." The grant yielded £600. 2s. 2d.

SOCIETIES.—The various societies have exerted a powerful influence in collecting resources, assisting the worthy and fostering social amenities. The General James Appleton Post, No. 128, of the Grand Army of the Republic, and the Woman's Relief Corps, connected with the posts, have exercised a watchful and most beneficent care, exhibiting a mutual devotion equal to their patriotism. They meet weekly. The post has about one hundred members, and a fund of some three hundred and fifty dollars. The Relief Corps fund is some two hundred and fifty dollars. Both expend about one hundred dollars a year in money, besides oft-repeated personal attention and assistance. Another earnest worker in the general field is the Woman's Christian Temperance Union. It meets weekly, and conducts a temperance school. Its work upon the pliant mind of our youth is worthy the sincerest prayer of faith and a generous material support. The object of the "Ipswich Mutual Benefit Society" is to render monetary and personal assistance in sickness and death. The society was organized in March, 1879, and has about eighty-five members in full benefit. About a year ago Bay-View Lodge, No. 2, of the International Order of Odd Fellows, was organized. The Masons were represented here more than a hundred years ago. Unity Lodge was organized March 9, 1779. It was the ninth charter granted in the State. It held no meetings after 1829. The present John T. Heard Lodge was chartered August 26, 1864. It meets monthly, and has a membership of about a hundred. It has a fund of a few hundred dollars, and is otherwise a strong society. The Independent Order of Odd Fellows is represented by the Agawam Lodge, No. 52, and the Daughters of Rebecca, who compose Martha Washington Lodge, No. 5, and a Mutual Benefit Association. Agawam has a membership of about one hundred and ten, a fund of a few hundred dollars and is harmonious and efficacious in her peculiar work.

Here, too, we find the church. It is one of her twin fields of labor, and with her powerful ally—the Sunday-school—might crush out error with the force of an avalanche. In seven years, about 1830, the First Church gave \$2100 to religious charities, and the South Church more than \$1500. The First Church last year gave about \$600.

RESULT OF BUSINESS.

Valuation.—The capital invested at the beginning was determination, energy and perseverance. The struggle has been long and vigorous; it has not yet ended and is not likely soon to end. In 1831 the assessors valued the town property at \$505,995; in 1886, at \$2,120,017, of which \$527,621 was personal estate and \$1,592,396 real, and \$107,426, an increase over the previous year's valuation. The following table of Province taxation is interesting in showing



J. H. Brown

the increase of expense during the periods of war, and the relative valuation and growth of several old towns compared with this :

Years.	Pop. 1790.	Salmon.	Newbury.	Newburyport.	Years.	Pop. 1790.	Salmon.	Newbury.	Newburyport.
1694-95.....	854	579	288	.....	1747-48.....	1133	1201	1036	.....
1696.....	239	270	220	.....	1748-49.....	2599	2749	2480	.....
1697.....	245	260	150	.....	1752-53.....	567	746	736	.....
1700.....	297	259	184	.....	1753-54.....	280	4150	272	.....
1706-6.....	990	814	698	.....	1754-55.....	426	305	572	.....
1710-11.....	1000	814	698	.....	1755-56.....	1219	887	1593	.....
1715-16.....	405	378	325	.....	1757-58.....	1851	1308	2779	.....
1718-19.....	209	269	232	.....	1759-60.....	2174	1642	2937	.....
1724-24.....	171	154	133	.....	1761-62.....	1406	1122	1937	.....
1724-25.....	400	372	334	.....	1762-63.....	1418	1430	1321	.....
1725-26.....	571	532	477	.....	1763-64.....	932	918	787	590
1728-29.....	402	291	221	.....	1770-71.....	487	517	379	303
1732-33.....	238	230	177	.....	1773-74.....	368	675	358	346
1734-35.....	506	556	418	.....	1775-76.....	751	1372	681	709
1736-37.....	908	924	741	.....	1777-78.....	1651	2085	1480	1541
1740-41.....	387	391	354	.....	1777-78.....	4593	8391	4243	4331
1744-45.....	711	702	649	.....	1778-79.....	6085	6884	3919	3548
1742-43.....	588	632	539	.....	1779-80.....	35673	46085	32530	37816

* Danvers, 1801, set off. Before 1760 Newbury included Newburyport.

The town grows as much in five years now as it grew in the first two hundred; and by opening streets along the river margin and inviting the tourists and summer residents to our beaches, and coast, and mounts, unsurpassed for picturesque beauty and interesting mountain and ocean views, we may achieve still greater advances, instill a new and vigorous life, and so ennoble and embalm the cherished, quaint, weird and hoary past.

ABSENT NATIVES.

BIOGRAPHICAL.—“And what shall I say more? for the time would fail me to tell of the Gideons, the Jephthas, the Davids, the Samuels, who,” having left their nativity and engaged in other towns, and in cities and other States, “have wrought righteousness, obtained promises, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens, and have obtained a good report.” The influence of Ipswich homes is felt abroad for good in the professions and every honorable vocation. We have had opportunities to gather but few names.

REV. WILLIAM ADAMS was son of William, of this town, and born May 27, 1659. For want of funds he was obliged to make several attempts to enter Harvard College, where he graduated August 8, 1671. The first pastor of the Dedham Church died the 26th of the same month, and the society at once determined upon Mr. Adams as his successor. He declined several calls, but at last accepted, and was ordained pastor December 3, 1673. He married, first, Mary Manning, of Cambridge, in 1674; second, Alice Bradford, daughter of Major William Bradford, of Plymouth. He was a devout and fervent man and public-spirited. He died August 17, 1685, at the age of thirty-six years, and after a pastorate of twelve years.

REV. NATHANIEL APPLETON was born December 9, 1693. He graduated at Harvard in 1712, was ordained pastor at Cambridge October 9, 1717, where he died February 9, 1781, at the great age of ninety-one years, and after a pastorate of sixty-two. His daughters married,—Elizabeth, Rev. Jabez Fitch; Margaret, President Holyoke; Priscilla, Rev. Robert Ward, of Wenham, as his first wife.

JOHN B. BROWN was born December 10, 1837, in Argilla District, Ipswich. His father, Manasseh Brown, was a farmer, owning the Castle Hill—or Governor Winthrop—Farm, and here young Brown spent his early years, working upon the farm summers, attending the district school, and High School winters. This, with a few terms at Phillips Academy, comprised his educational opportunities.

At the age of seventeen he entered the employ of Blanchard, Converse & Co., Boston, who were at that time the leading dry-goods merchants. Here, beginning as a boy, he received his mercantile training, and rose through the various departments. At the opening of the war he entered the service, going into the field with the Sixteenth Massachusetts Volunteers, Colonel Powell T. Wyman, as first lieutenant. He was appointed aide-de-camp to General Cuvier Grover, of the regular army (at that time commanding one of Hooker's brigades) while before Richmond, and served upon the staff of that general during the Seven Days' Battles of the “Peninsula Campaign,” ending at Malvern Hills; and later through the “Virginia Campaign” under Pope, ending at Second Bull Run; afterwards in the battles of the “Louisiana Campaign” under Banks. In order that he might remain with General Grover, to whom he was greatly attached, he declined all promotions, and leaving the service with the same rank with which he entered at the beginning of the war, he was commended in general orders for gallant conduct in the battles of Burke's Farm, Savage Station, Glendale, Malvern Hills, (first and second battles), Bull Run (second) Irish Bend (La.) and in the battles of the siege of Port Hudson—being one of the officers who volunteered to lead the storming party in the preparation for the last grand assault on the date of the capitulation.

On returning to civil life, he married Lucy, the daughter of George J. Tenney, an extensive shoe manufacturer in Georgetown, Massachusetts, and entering the employ of ex-Governor Gardner, in the dry-goods commission business, he shortly afterwards became a partner with his former employer, James C. Converse, and removed to New York, remaining in charge of the New York branch of that house till 1869.

The rapid growth of railroads in that period affording such an attraction, he left mercantile life, and, with his brother Leverett, was engaged in railroad construction for many years in the Western States.

The most important work accomplished by him was the organizing and building of the Chicago and Western Indiana Railroad (of which he was president), a trunk line road into the city of Chicago, which to-day gives entrance into that city to five or six railways, among the most important of which are the Grand Trunk, Wabash and the Erie.

Leaving railroad-building on the completion of that work, he has since been engaged in the development of the Grape Creek coal-fields in Illinois, and in the construction of an extensive system of docks on the Calumet River, in South Chicago. Though actively engaged in the development of important enterprises in the West, he still retains his interest and affection for his native place, and the Castle Hill

Farm, on which his boyhood years were spent, claims much of his time and contributes much to his pleasure in its improvement.

CHILDREN OF EZEKIEL CHEEVER.—Thomas was born in Ipswich, was minister of Malden from February 14, 1679-80, till dismissed in 1686. He was then at Chelsea, where he settled October 19, 1715. He graduated at Harvard College in 1677. He died November 27, 1749, at the great age of ninety-one years. Samuel was also born in Ipswich, did not lose a single Sabbath in forty-eight years' preaching, and "died without pain, with no disease but mere age," in his eighty-fifth year and the fifty-sixth of his ministry. Mr. Hammatt says he was a student at Harvard in 1656.

DR. JOSEPH GREEN COGSWELL.—John Cogswell, the doctor's progenitor, a merchant in London, England, sailed from Bristol May 23, 1635. The cargo, mostly his own, was shipwrecked off the coast of Maine August 15th, and he lost in cash about five thousand pounds. Chartering a bark, he brought his family, furniture, silver-plate, etc., saved from the wreck, to Ipswich. He left English opulence for a log hut, "that the ancient faith and true worship might be found inseparable companions in their practice, and that their posterity might be undefiled in religion."

Dr. Cogswell was born in Ipswich Sept. 27, 1786. He prepared for college at the Grammar School, and in his twenty-first year graduated at Harvard.

He then made a voyage to India as supercargo. Returning, he practiced law in Bangor, Me., with not much success. He was then called to a tutorship in Harvard. In 1816 he visited Europe with George Ticknor. He was two years at the University of Gottingen a student in literature and bibliography, wherein he ranked with the highest. He spent two years more at various European capitals with the same purpose. Returning in 1820, he was appointed professor of geology and mineralogy in his *alma mater* and librarian. He resigned in 1823, and with George Bancroft, the historian, established the Round-Hill School at Northampton, based upon the most approved English and German systems. Mr. Bancroft retired from the school in 1830, and Mr. Cogswell continued until 1835, when he went to Raleigh, N. C., in a similar institution. He was next editor of the *New York Review*, one of the ablest critical journals of its period, a position he retained till 1842. His intimacy and friendship with John Jacob Astor made him, with Fitz-Green Halleck and Washington Irving, one of the projectors of the Astor Library. He was also one of the trustees.

When Washington Irving was appointed minister to Spain, he wished Mr. Cogswell to accompany him, and accordingly wrote Washington to appoint him as Secretary of Legation. Irving wrote: "He is a gentleman with whom I am on confidential terms of intimacy, and I know of no one who by his various acquirements, his prompt sagacity, his knowledge of the world, his habits of business and his obliging disposition is so calculated to give me that counsel, aid and companionship so important in Madrid, where a stranger is more isolated than in any other capital in Europe."

He was appointed, and Astor finding he was to lose him, made him librarian in embryo. He went abroad to purchase books, and his selections are marked with economy and discrimination.

He gave to the Astor Library his own valuable works in literature, and he presented to *Harvard* a valuable cabinet of minerals. He prepared, in a series of eight volumes, a critical and analogical catalogue of the Astor Library, wherein he exhibited "an extraordinary knowledge of the history, comparative value and significance of the books he had collected." He served the library with industry and fidelity. After 1862 he resided in Cambridge.

He is authority for the statement that Essex County had "given birth to more literary people than any other in the country," and he substantiated the remark by naming a remarkably long list.

He married young, and his wife died young; he never married again. He died November 26, 1872.

CHILDREN OF DR. JOSEPH DANA.—Joseph was born June 10, 1769; graduated at Dartmouth College in 1788; approbated a preacher June 9, 1795; taught school in Newburyport and studied law; removed to Athens, Ohio, 1817; was Professor of Ancient Languages in Ohio University twelve years from 1822; died November 18, 1849, at the ripe old age of eighty years.

Daniel was born July 24, 1771; graduated at *Dartmouth* in 1788; approbated May 14, 1793; ordained and installed over the First Presbyterian Church, Newburyport, November 19, 1794; dismissed to take the presidency of Dartmouth College, November 19, 1820; resigned the presidency in 1821; installed over the Presbyterian Church, Londonderry, N. H., May 31, 1822, and was dismissed in April, 1826; installed over the Second Presbyterian Church, Newburyport, May 31, 1826, and was dismissed October 29, 1845. He died August 26, 1859.

Samuel was born May 7, 1778; graduated at *Dartmouth* in 1796; ordained at Marblehead, October 6, 1801, and installed.

Sarah was born May 6, 1780, and married Hon. Israel Thorndyke, of Boston.

JOHN C. DONOVAN, Esq., is yet a young man. He was born in Ipswich Village, March 18, 1861. He pursued his studies in the Ipswich public schools, graduating from the academic department and ranking high as a scholar. He then entered the law-office of Hon. Charles A. Sayward as student. He was examined October 1, 1885, for admission to the Essex bar, and was admitted the 15th of the same month. He is now practicing his profession in Newburyport. In 1885 he was commissioned by Governor Robinson a justice of the peace for the Commonwealth. In connection with his other work, he has taken an active interest in politics. He identified himself with the Democratic party at an early age, and has, by voice and action, aided in promoting its welfare. Early in life he was forced to rely mainly upon his own exertions and native ability, through which he must achieve success.

PROF. LEVI FRISBIE, son of Rev. Levi Frisbie, of the First Church, was born September 15, 1783. He graduated at Harvard in 1802; was tutor there from 1805 to 1811; professor of Latin language and litera-

ture from 1811 to 1817; Alford professor of natural religion, moral philosophy and civil polity from November 5, 1817. He died at Cambridge July 9, 1822, at the age of thirty-eight.

REV. NATHANIEL HOWE, third son of Captain Abraham and Lucy-Appleton Howe, was born in Ipswich, Linebrook, October 6, 1764. In preparing for college he studied at Dummer Academy, Byfield, then with Rev. George Lesslie, of his native parish, and later with Rev. Ebenezer Bradford, of Rowley. While with Mr. Bradford he made a public profession of faith in Christ, and joined Mr. Bradford's church. In September, 1784, he entered the junior class of Princeton College, New Jersey, a fact which speaks well for his scholarship. He asked and obtained an honorable dismissal at the end of the year, and then entered the senior class of Harvard College, where he graduated with the usual honors.

He studied divinity with a Dr. Hart, of Connecticut, and completed his course with Dr. Emmons, of Franklin. He was licensed to preach by the Essex North Association May 8, 1787. His was the first license granted by that association. He preached at Londonderry and Francistown, N. H.; at Hampton, Conn.; and at Grafton, Mass., where he received a call to settle which he declined. In January, 1781, he began to preach at Hopkinton as a candidate, and was unanimously called in the May following. He was settled for life, as was the custom in those days, October 5, 1791, on a salary of £70 and the use of ministerial land—one hundred acres—and a settlement of £200. Rev. Ebenezer Bradford, his old instructor at Rowley, preached the installing sermon. For more than thirty-eight years he was the minister at Hopkinton, and during the time added two hundred and forty-five to the church. He was a preacher of the Gospel for half a century; he died February 15, 1837.

Mr. Howe married, some three months after his settlement, Miss Olive Jones, the sixth daughter of Colonel John Jones, of his parish. She proved a very estimable lady, and adorned her station. One who knew her well says,—“I ever viewed her as a person of superior mind, quick perception, peculiar energy, and an unconquerable fortitude and resolution. She was as distinguished as her husband for unaffected affability, unwavering and affectionate friendship, as well as for correct thinking, keen penetration and sound judgment.” She was a careful and judicious housewife, she was a praying mother, and a lady of unostentatious piety. She died December 10, 1843.

Their children were Appleton, born November 26, 1792, a distinguished physician of Weymouth, State Senator by two elections, major-general of militia, a man who possessed a strong character resembling his father's for manly independence, made fast friends and commanded universal respect; Eliza, born June 4, 1794, and died of consumption, December 27, 1815;

Mary Jones, born February 2, 1802, married Rev. Samuel Russell, of Boylston, and died November 26, 1836; Lucy Ann, born August 27, 1805, married John Fitch, son of Deacon Elijah Fitch, and is thus honorably mentioned in the *Century Sermons*. “Whose descendants can vie with the descendants of Rev. Elijah Fitch.”

Soon after his marriage he purchased the messuage and farm of Deacon S. Kinsman, lying contiguous to the ministerial lands and some half a mile from the church. At that time his status was excellent and his prospects bright. Says Rev. Elias Nason, to whose memorial of Mr. Howe we are much indebted,—

“He had married into an influential family; his pecuniary circumstances were easy, his health good and his church flourishing. His prospects of usefulness were unclouded; and buoyant with hope, he dedicated all his energies to the work before him. But increasing family expenses and the decreasing value of his salary drove him from his study to the field and the woods. He was obliged to adopt a rigid economy; but his economy was not parsimony, for by dint of hard labor and by frugality he was enabled to educate his son liberally, maintain his respectability and keep out of debt. This was his oft repeated maxim,—“The second vice is lying, the first is running in debt.”

He frequently chided his people, because they neglected to provide fully for his support. He felt that the laborer was worthy of his hire, and that the cause of God suffered from neglect. He chided though “more in sorrow than in anger.” His people understood the justice of his demand and respected him, yet replied: “a bargain is a bargain.” After years, the rise in real estate and legacies from relatives enabled him to store a few thousand dollars; nevertheless, his legacies at interest till his death would have amounted to three times the value of his estate at that time.

Mr. Howe was charitable and generous. He wanted property for the good he could do with it. One day noticing the need of a family of his parish, he went to his woods, and drew out a load to the door of the needy and offered it for sale. The lady replied, she could not buy for she had no money; he answered, I ask only one cent, and exacting that unloaded the wood. When his parish would settle a colleague, he relinquished a good part of his salary, when with propriety he could have replied, “a bargain is a bargain.” One winter he supplied a family with two loads of wood, and left a third near the house and told the family to use it if they had need. Later, noticing it was not used, and perhaps hardly needed, he reloaded it and left it at the door of another that needed it more. Several young men, by his advice and pecuniary aid, obtained liberal educations, and some of them became distinguished. He frequently visited the widow, the fatherless, and the unfortunate and usually took some substantial token of his sympathy. He often carried provisions to the poor by night, that he might “not be seen of men.”

He did much to encourage the youth. He always noticed them with a cheering word. He was particular to visit all the schools in town several times each



year. He was very fond of children, and had a rare faculty of interesting them in whatever he said and of winning their respect.

In 1822 he was made a life-member of the American Bible Society; and in 1827 of the American Educational Society.

There was no place in his theology for *isms*, *new measures*, or innovations. Yet those of varying belief from his, he treated with respect and tolerance. He was no bigot; the erroneous views of others he claimed were not suppressed by calumny, but by better action than theirs and by dint of merit.

Mr. Howe practiced in his reading that excellent motto of the great Webster:

Legere solitus, non multa.

He read much, Baxter, Bunyan, Saurin, South, Hopkins, Witherspoon and Emmons, and *not many* others. He thought much, as the field, the woods and the road offered him opportunity, and many of his thoughts found expression in concise and pointed language. He wrote:

Q. Who are the wise?

A. None but such as are determined to be wiser still.

Q. What is the reason *that man* is so unhappy in his family?

A. Because he keeps a bottle of rum in his house.

Q. What harm does that do?

A. None at all if he let it alone.

Q. What has the rich man more than the poor?

A. Nothing but what God has given him.

Q. What reason, then, has he to exult over the poor?

A. None at all.

Q. Where are churches?

A. All around us have health, peace and liberty and none to make them afraid.

Q. What is the reason *that man* is more prosperous than his neighbor?

A. Because he always takes care of little things; he lets nothing be lost; strikes when the iron is hot; and keeps his dish right-side up.

"To do nothing is to be nothing. Leisure is the time to do something useful. The careless man is seldom fortunate. Would you have a faithful servant and one that suits you, serve yourself. If you will not bear reason, she will rap your knuckles. A dead fish can swim with the stream, but a live one can swim against it. Great minds are always scandal. Common sense is the best sense in the world. Who marries for money buys money dear. Many things can be proved by facts that never happened. Whoever does not feel himself to be a sinner cannot become a Christian. We can enjoy nothing but what God is pleased to give us. We can lose nothing but what He is pleased to take away. We can suffer nothing but what He lays upon us."

He was a remarkable man. "The cast of his mind was original and severe; the bent of his genius, to be useful. He was a man of sterling probity; he thought correctly, and said what he thought. In politics he advocated the leading measures of the Whig party. He despised every kind of political artifice. As a citizen he was public-spirited and liberal-minded. As a husband and a father he was uniformly kind and affectionate. He was constant in his friendships, social and amiable in disposition and a lover of good men. His friends at his home have remarked his cordial hospitality. The standard trait of his character was his regard for truth. He was indeed a Nathaniel.

His publications were, a sermon on the death of

three persons, 1808; a century sermon, delivered December 24, 1815; a sermon on "John's Baptism," preached before the Mendon Association, and published at their request, 1819; a defense of the same, in reply to Rev. Dr. Baldwin, 1820; and a catechism for the children under his pastoral care, 1834. The century sermon was celebrated. It was noticed by the *North American Review*, passed through several editions, and was translated into foreign languages.

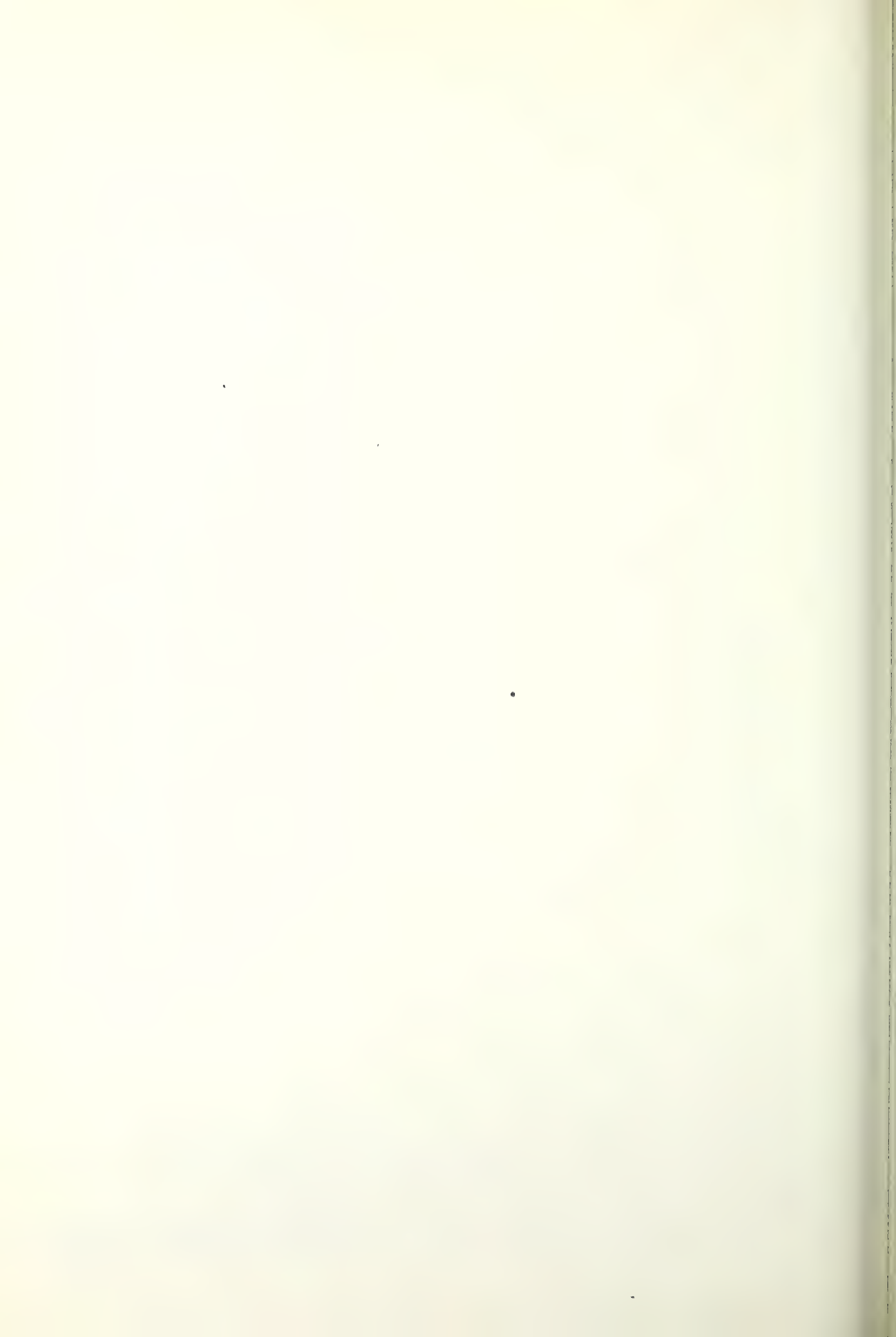
As a preacher he was unaffected, plain and impressive. His sermons were often composed during the toil of the day, and written after the family had retired at night. He aspired not to be eloquent, but useful. Perhaps no other man practiced more scrupulously what he taught; his life was a living epistle of his doctrine.

REV. DAVID TENNEY KIMBALL'S CHILDREN.—Father Kimball had seven children, two daughters and five sons:—

David Tenney was born September 7, 1808. He graduated at Middlebury College in 1829, at Andover Theological Seminary in 1834, preached at Hartford, Conn., and in the West, but was obliged to relinquish preaching on account of bronchitis. He married, October 10, 1837, Miss Harriet W. Webster; he lived the greater part of his life in Lowell, where for twenty years he was a deacon in the John Street Congregational Church, and where he died in 1886, much respected.

Daniel was born May 25, 1810. He was educated at Middlebury College, from which he received his Master's degree in 1855. He has spent more than ten years exclusively in the cause of temperance—a part of which time as editor of the *Middlesex Washingtonian*, Lowell, and the *Massachusetts Temperance Standard*, Boston. He lectured in all the principal towns in this State and in many in Rhode Island, New Hampshire and Vermont with good results. He excelled as a lecturer. The *Salem Observer* said of his lecture at Ipswich October 16, 1846, before the Essex County Teachers' Association, "It was not only well-written, but in the manner of delivery it was superior. We have rarely listened to a lecture which gave such evident satisfaction." Of a temperance address at Shelburne Falls, July 4, 1847, the *American Republic* said, "It was of a very high character as a literary composition, and very impressive from its matter and manner of delivery. His appeal to young men was full of energy, pathos and power." He was engaged in teaching nine years, one as principal of the Central Grammar School at Woburn, and eight as preceptor of Williams Academy, Stockbridge, in both of which places he was a member of the school boards. He was an officer in the Boston Custom-House twelve years. He resided at Lexington, 1876–82. He now resides at Woburn.

Augustine Phillips was born September 9, 1812. He was a merchant in Boston many years,—a man of enterprise, generous and public spirit. Prosperity at-



tended him in his business for a considerable period, but, his health failing him, he returned to Ipswich and passed his later years in horticultural pursuits. He died August 13, 1859.

Elizabeth, born July 9, 1814, married, August 8, 1839, Eugene F. W. Gray, son of Rev. Cyrus W. Gray, of Stafford, Conn., and some time editor of the *Ipswich Register*.

John Rogers was born August 23, 1816; was for more than twenty years an enterprising and successful merchant in Boston. He married, May 30, 1844, Lydia Ann Coburn, of Dracut. In 1866 he retired with a competency and established his permanent home in Woburn, where he soon became identified with many public interests. He united with Rev. Jonathan Edwards' church, and was afterwards one of the deacons. He was an efficient worker in every good cause; was one of the most prominent and useful citizens. He represented his town in the Legislature one year, during the period of the late war, and did good service. In announcing his death, which occurred in 1859, the *Woburn Journal* said, "Deacon Kimball was a man of marked individuality, influential, of great integrity, commanding the respect of every one. He was active in good works, set a good example—a real Christian, charitable, kind and greatly beloved."

Levi Frisbie was born April 25, 1818, and died May 9, 1818.

Mary Sophia was born August 16, 1820, and, March 25, 1849, married John Dunning Coburn, merchant, of Brunswick, Me. He died, and she married, secondly, John Quincy Peabody, of Ipswich. Both daughters graduated at the Ipswich Female Seminary.

JOSEPH E. KIMBALL, son of John Kimball, was born in this town, June 12, 1839. He enlisted in the service of his country, for the war, in April, 1861, and was mustered in May 23d. He entered Company B, First Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, Colonel Cowdin commanding, who reported at Washington, D. C., June 17th.

His brigade, under colonel, afterwards Major-General Richardson, who was killed at Antietam, formed the advance of General McDowell's "on to Richmond" army, and the first blood shed was in the reconnoissance, known as the battle of Blackburn's Ford, July 17th, three days before the main engagement. They took no part in the panic, and so felt no subsequent chagrin, remaining near Centerville till after midnight, when they marched to Washington, covering the main army's retreat.

In the autumn of 1861 he was in Hooker's brigade, afterwards Hooker's division, which won the distinction of "Fighting Joe Hooker's Division." With that, in the spring following, he participated in the operations before Yorktown, the battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines, and Fair Oaks.

Immediately before the Seven-days Retreat he was

stricken down with "Chickahominy fever," yet left his sick bed, joined his company, and engaged in all the battles of that toilsome and distressing retreat. At Harrison's Landing the fever returned, but an effort to join in the expedition, under Hooker, against Malvern Hills, caused a relapse, and he was taken to the hospital and thence to Fortress Monroe, where the fever raged for several weeks.

He next joined his company near Alexandria, and was in the battles of Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville and Gettysburg. On this march his shoes gave out, and he trod more than sixty miles of the mountain roads and macadamized pike with swollen and bleeding feet.

General Hooker, at Harrison's Landing, recommended him to Governor Andrew for a commissioner, and again at Gettysburg to the Secretary of War. While in pursuit of Lee's army his regiment was ordered to quell the draft-riots in New York. While there, 1863, he was commissioned second-lieutenant and ordered to report to General E. A. Wild, at Newbern. That done, he was enrolled in the Thirty-seventh United States Colored Regiment.

In the following spring he joined the Army of the James, which was afterward merged in the Army of the Potomac, under General Grant.

In the September following he commanded a company in the successful assaults upon Deep Bottom and New Market, and was commissioned first-lieutenant in the One Hundred and Sixteenth United States Colored Regiment. Delaying to report to his new command, he was a volunteer commander of a company in the fiasco against Fort Fisher. He then joined his new regiment; was engaged in the operations about Petersburg; was in the final assault that precipitated Lee's flight, whence he was breveted captain, followed by forced marches and intercepted his retreat, and witnessed the final triumph of our arms.

Later in the spring he joined Sheridan's "army of observation," of the Rio Grande, and served till the overthrow of the Imperial Government of Mexico.

He was mustered out in February, 1867, having served five years and ten months, the last campaign being in the regular service. He bears upon his person reminders of many a struggle, yet in all the time, wonderful to relate, he received no disabling wound. He entered the service when bounties and pensions and pecuniary rewards were unsought, and gave a singleness of purpose, a devotion of heart, and a patriotism that found their full reward in the emancipation and the final restoration of his country.

Mr. Kimball was in the rudiments of his trade when the war broke out, and when he returned from the conflict he returned to his trade, and associated himself with his brother in Abington, in the manufacture of tack and nail machinery for boot and shoe manufacturing, and they were enabled so to improve them that they gained an enviable reputation at home and

in foreign countries. Their reputation was such that a powerful combination of tack manufacturers to control these goods in the United States paid them a considerable sum in cash, with the sole right to manufacture their machines and no others.

In 1876 and 1877 Mr. Kimball perfected and patented a nailing machine. This aroused a powerful antagonist,—the McKay Metallic Fastening Company. A hard struggle ensued. His brother retired from the firm. At last the McKay Company offered, on the score of economy, to purchase the surrender of his patents rather than expend more money in litigation. Just then, very opportunely, Mr. James E. Maynard, a patent lawyer, took the case, cleared the patents, and was instrumental in establishing a company with a capital of twenty-five thousand dollars to utilize them. The capital was soon increased to fifty thousand dollars, then to one hundred thousand dollars, and then to one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, which is now paying good dividends. Mr. Kimball received twenty thousand dollars for his invention and held stock in the company.

Ere long appeared a fastening called the "Estabrook and Wire-clinching screw," which was cheap and possessed other merits, but had to be worked by hand. Mr. Kimball invented machinery to make it a success. He then removed to Milford.

Within the last two years he has invented an improved metallic fastening and all the new machinery for its manufacture. This is now his main product.

Lastly he has invented a machine for sole-fastening, upon which is placed a simple coil of threaded wire from which at each revolution of the machine a clinching screw is completed, automatically governed in length to conform exactly to the thickness of the material to be fastened together at the exact point necessary to be fastened, inserted in the material and securely riveted. By this machine, within a period of about fifteen seconds every fastening is made, inserted and riveted, necessary to fasten the sole to a boot or shoe. The machine is on trial, with apparent prospect of success.

Here is a lively epistle to young men, showing what may be done by energy, perseverance and diligence, and calling upon them to improve their minds, be watchful of their opportunities, husband their energies and work for a purpose. The world needs such, and will amply reward them.

REV. SAMUEL PERLEY was born in Ipswich-Linebrook, August 11, 1742, son of Samuel and Ruth-Howe Perley. He was twelve years old when his father died, and Abraham Howe became his guardian. He prepared for college under Rev. George Lesslie, his pastor, and entered Harvard at the age of seventeen years, where he graduated in 1763. He was invited to a professorship in his *Alma Mater*, which he declined. He studied divinity with Rev. Mr. Lesslie, his former instructor. At the age of twenty-two years he received a call to settle over the Presbyte-

rian church at Hampton Falls, N. H., where he was ordained and installed, January 31, 1765. Rev. Mr. Lesslie preached the ordaining sermon, which was published.

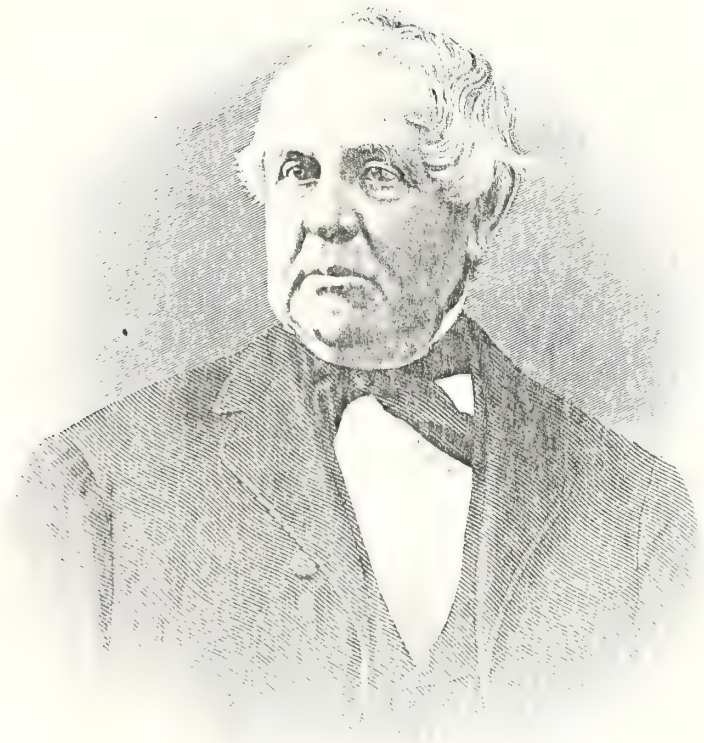
He was preaching in Seabrook in 1771 and '74. He led a company of soldiers to Bunker Hill, on that ever memorable occasion, but they arrived too late to participate in the action. He was next installed October 8, 1778, at Groton, Stafford County, N. H., over the church that had been gathered the year before. He continued but a few months, and was next installed in Moultonborough October 20, 1780, over the church which was organized the previous year. His next and last pastorate was over the Congregational Church, Gray, Me., where he resided till his death. His installation, as their first minister, took place September 8, 1784. He retired from the ministry about 1791.

He was a delegate from Gray to the Convention in Faneuil Hall, Boston, to consider the ratification of the Federal Constitution in 1788. Upon the floor he advocated its adoption and with heartiness gave it his vote. He was for many years the only physician in Gray. For many years also he had an extensive practice in probate law. He was three times commissioned a justice of the peace, covering a period of twenty-one years. He was, then, in his time, the minister, the physician and the lawyer of Gray, and he filled each office with credit, and left a name that is now revered and honored.

Mr. Perley's manners were open and agreeable. His dress was always tidy and plain; he wore a ruffle but once, when he took his diploma at college. He was an easy and interesting talker, and was notably hospitable. As a preacher he has been highly commended. He was a man of good-natured ability, and he had acquired a store of learning. His library was large, and embraced valuable works upon theology, law, medicine, literature and general knowledge. He was tenacious of his opinions, and had just that proportion of self-esteem to give his talents free scope, and make them eminently useful. Preceding the war of 1812, he held a long correspondence with President John Adams, upon State polity, wherein he disclosed a wide knowledge of history and of practical state-craft.

A few months after his settlement at Hampton Falls, May 21, 1765, he married Miss Hephzibah, daughter of John and Mercy-Howe Fowler, of his native parish. She was mother of all his children,—eight in number, now a numerous and influential progeny. She was baptized May 22, 1743, and died Friday, August 28, 1818. Mr. Perley died Sunday, November 28, 1830. A monument, costing from a thousand to fifteen hundred dollars, marks the family tomb. His children regard his memory with pride and affection.

FREDERICK CHESTER SOUTHGATE, Esq. — Rev. Robert Southgate, the twelfth pastor of the First



Engraved by J. H. Smith

Asa Lord

Church here, had five children,—Horatio died at Wethersfield, Conn. A daughter is married and living in Woodstock, Vt.; Charles M. is a gospel minister in Worcester, Mass.; and the subject of this sketch is a lawyer in Woodstock. He is the only one of the family native here, and was born January 28, 1852. He completed his preparatory studies at Phillips Academy, Andover, in 1869, and graduated at Dartmouth College, in 1874. He selected one of the prettiest of New England villages for his future home. He married, August 31, 1877, Miss Anna S. French, of that town; they have two children. He has acquired a lucrative practice, and enjoys the fullest confidence of his people, which is shown in their bestowal upon him of many public offices and important trusts. He has twice declined a candidacy (which as a Republican in Vermont means election), to legislative distinction, preferring the practice of his profession, and the quiet, social amenities of his people and home.

SAMUEL SYMONS' CHILDREN.—There appears to be two *Samuels*,—one who was a graduate of Harvard, in 1663, died in November, 1669, and had a will probated Ninth month 30th, 1669; and another called *junior*, who died in 1654; *William* was freeman in 1670, a representative from Wells, Me., 1676, married Mary Wade, daughter of Jonathan, and left no children. He died May 22, 1679. His estate was £3359. 9s. 3d.; *Harlakendine*; *Elizabeth* married Daniel Eppes; *Martha*, John Dennison, and afterwards Richard Martyn, of Portsmouth; *Ruth*, Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester; *Priscilla*, Thomas Baker, of Topsfield; *Mary*, Peter Duncan, of Gloucester; *Rebecca*, Henry Bylie, of Salisbury, England, then John Hall, of England, then Rev. William Worcester, of Salisbury, Mass.; *Dorothy*, Joseph Jacobs; and *Susannah*.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

ASA LORD.

The subject of this sketch was one of six children who were born to Asa and Margaret Lord. On the 25th day of September, 1797, young Asa first saw the light in Ipswich, Mass.

In December of 1804 his father sailed from Newburyport for the West Indies, but was lost at sea, and two years later we find the boy, Asa, actuated by a strong filial affection, eager to assist his widowed mother, on a pleasant autumn day (the 9th of October, 1806), walking to Newburyport in search of employment.

At this early age of nine years commenced the business life of Asa Lord, for here he obtained employment as errand boy in the family of William Titcomb, with whom he remained seven years. Returning to Ipswich he learned the shoemaker's trade

with Mr. Jacob Stanwood, and continued in this business several years.

In the spring of 1821, being in poor health, he took a four months' trip to Mount Desert, and returned improved and has been blessed with good health ever since.

Being ambitious and anxious for a larger field for his business talent, on the 16th of May, 1825, he rented a small shop on High Street, Ipswich, for fifteen dollars per year, and purchased on credit a stock of general merchandise at Salem, valued at two hundred dollars.

He still worked at his bench, leaving his shoes to attend to the calls of his few customers. By his fair dealing, prompt payment of all obligations and his pleasant, genial manner, he made firm friends in business circles, and soon found his quarters too limited, and accordingly built a new house and large store upon the site first occupied by him, and has continued there for more than three-score years, and has been successful in winning the respect and love of the community, as well as in accumulating a competency which he has obtained not by dishonest gains, not by failing in business and paying a percentage to his creditors, but by a devotion to business rarely equalled, by an honesty of purpose never tarnished, by making his word as good as his bond, he has steadily gone on from little to much, from much to more, until at life's eventide he reaps the success of a well rounded life.

May he long live to enjoy the fruits of his application, honesty, energy and indomitable will!

On November 3, 1825, Mr. Lord was united in marriage with Miss Abigail Hodgkins, of Ipswich, the daughter of Captain John Hodgkins. Five children blessed this union, as follows: Lucy A., Thomas H., Abbie B., Francis G. and Mary A.; of this number but two survived, namely, Lucy A. and Thomas H., both of whom reside near the old home. Mary A. married John A. Brown on December 8, 1872, and died July 8, 1873, leaving one child, Hattie W.

Thomas H. married Lucretia Smith on November 13, 1859, and has all his life been associated with his father in business, and for several years has had almost entire charge of the large trade established by his father, which he conducts upon the same never-failing principles of honesty and integrity.

DAVID TENNEY KIMBALL.

Rev. David Tenney Kimball, born at Bradford November 23, 1782, died at Ipswich February 3, 1860, aged seventy-seven; married Dolly Varnum Coburn, of Dracut, October 20, 1807, who died his widow December 12, 1873, aged ninety.

He was the seventh child of Lieutenant Daniel and Mrs. Elisabeth Kimball. His mother had a brother, David Tenney (H. C., 1768), a devoted minister of much promise, who died a short time before the birth

of the subject of our sketch, after whom she named her young son. The home of his boyhood was eminently Christian, and to its influence and that of these parents may be traced the marked and prominent features in the character of their children, ten of whom, all that lived to mature age, entered into covenant with God. Two of the sons became ministers of the gospel and two of the daughters married clergymen. His father was not only one of the best farmers in the town, but one of its most influential citizens,—a man of intelligence and sound integrity, faithful to all his engagements. Born in 1747, he was in early manhood when our Revolutionary struggle commenced. In company with all the hardy, liberty-loving yeomanry of New England, he espoused the cause of the colonies and devoted himself to it, with a courage that never failed and a constancy that never faltered, till his country passed from impending servitude to acknowledged independence. The land which he cultivated descended to him from Benjamin Kimball, through Jonathan and Nathaniel, and was greatly improved under his care; but after his decease, having been in possession of the family more than two hundred years, it passed into other hands.

The house in which he was born was situated in a secluded spot, on a cross-road, more than a mile from the public thoroughfare and a considerable distance from any dwelling. Though retired, it was the abode of intelligence, of manly virtue and gladsome childhood. Here it was that he learned to love his mother, his father and his God. But our records of his childhood are brief. From all we can learn it appears that in every respect,—in character, temperament and manner—the boy was father to the man. His brothers and sisters all spoke of him as a boy of rare seriousness and devotion to books, and of a most amiable and lovely disposition. Said his brother Samuel, "I never knew him to utter a mean or profane word. He was always pleasant in his intercourse with his family and playmates, and beloved by all who knew him. He was a great lover of the Bible, which he read through about three times before he was eight years old. His sister Jane wrote: "On the Sabbath he would stand by a table and read the whole day when he did not go to church, except to leave for meals. This was his practice from the time he was six years old till he was too tall to stand at a table and read. I think that, as a child and a young man, he had as many lovely traits of character as I ever knew combined in one. He delighted in the memories and associations of his childhood and youth." In the introduction to a discourse delivered in Bradford, he said, "Everything relating to your town, rather let me say, to our town, interests me,—your hills, your valleys, your brooks, your river, your ancient dwellings,—your burial-places, these gray hairs; in short, everything of yours excites in me the tenderest emotions. Here rest my pious and beloved parents, who,

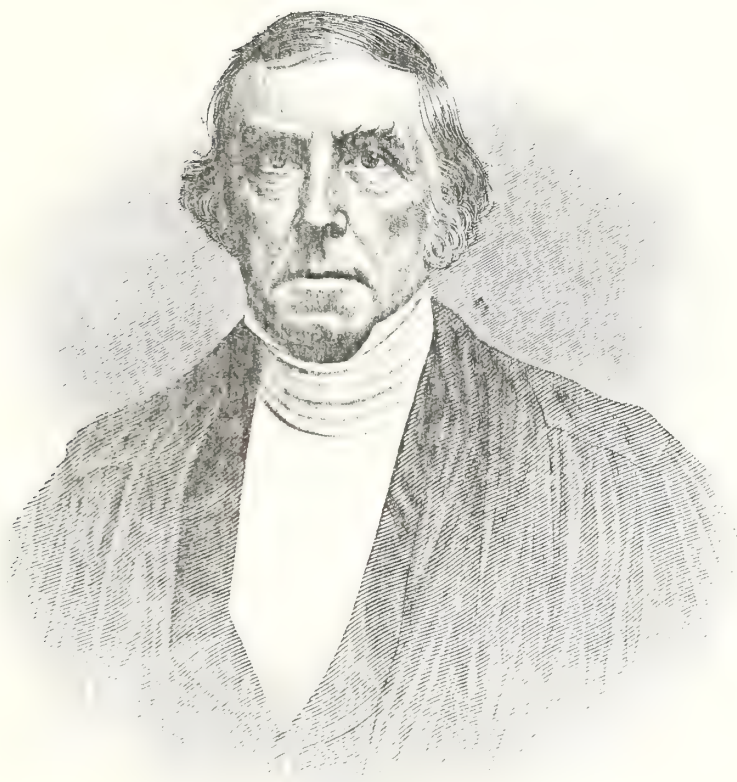
in my infancy, gave me up to God for His service in general and for the work of the ministry in particular; and who watched over my youth with the greatest solicitude for my temporal and eternal welfare; and here I first entered into covenant with God."

The education by which his boyhood was instructed was such as could be obtained by attending, during the winter months, the district school, till he was past fifteen. In May 1798, he became a student in Atkinson Academy, an institution then much resorted to by students preparing for college. That he was regarded as one of the most promising scholars appears from the fact that, when a request came to Mr. Vose, preceptor, from the neighboring town of Plaistow, for a Fourth-of-July speaker, he recommended young Kimball, "whose oration, pronounced in the presence of more than one thousand people, was well received."

Leaving the academy August 14, 1799, he entered Harvard College. He had now reached the position in his academical career to which he had been looking with fond desire, and in which his most sanguine expectations were to be fully realized. In after years he was wont to speak with admiration and enthusiasm of college life and the friendships there formed, and of the four years spent there as among the happiest of his life. While here, he was remarkably free from all youthful indiscretions, and was then, as ever after, the decided friend of law and order, of obedience to the powers that be. In sophomore year there was trouble in his class, and one of their number was suspended for insulting a college officer. The censure was resented by his classmates as a great indignity, which they manifested by raising the flag of rebellion and escorting the criminal on the way to the place of his destination. The whole class, with the exception of three, were engaged in this rebellious movement. Among the excepted was Kimball. The honorable course of this trio was considered the result of principle, and not of a desire to procure special favor from the college government, and was subsequently approved by those who were carried away by the excitement of the moment.

As a student, he was noted for the accuracy of his recitations in every department of study, and at once took rank among the best scholars of his class. That he sustained this position during his whole collegiate course is evident from the fact, that in taking his degree of A. M., in 1806, he pronounced the valedictory oration in Latin. He was a member of the Phi Beta Kappa Society, and active and prominent in various other societies for literary and moral improvement. His classmates and college acquaintances bear testimony to his honorable standing. Says Samuel Greele (H. C., 1802), for nearly fifty years deacon of the Federal Street Church, Boston, in a letter to a son of Mr. K., "I believe no one in his class surpassed him as a belles-lettres scholar. His themes were remarkable for their chaste and classic elegance. Pro-





David T. Kimball



fessor Pearson, who had charge of that department, used to distinguish compositions of superior excellence by a double mark. Your father's themes usually had this distinction, and in one or two instances he received a treble mark, a distinction which, I believe, was awarded to no one else during my collegiate life. In Andover we were fellow-students in divinity, and, as we were chums together for some months, I became intimately acquainted with him. I think I never knew one of our sex more remarkable for amiability of disposition. To manliness of character he united a loveliness of temperament that seemed almost feminine. He pursued his studies with conscientious fidelity and became popular as a preacher. His settlement in one of the oldest and most respectable parishes of the commonwealth indicates his professional standing. I take a melancholy pleasure in planting this forget-me-not on the grave of one whom I shall never cease to respect and love as a Christian, a gentleman and a friend."

He took his first collegiate degree August 31, 1803, and, a week from that day, became assistant for one year in Phillips Academy, Andover, Mr. Mark Newman, preceptor.

The time had now arrived when he was to enter upon the study of that profession to which his mother devoted him in her heart when he was a child, for which he had a strong predilection, and upon which he deliberately and prayerfully entered. He commenced his preparatory studies under the direction of Rev. Jonathan French, pastor of the South Church in Andover. In theology he was an Andover student, on what was then called the Abbot Foundation. Mr. French, who was an orthodox minister in the sense of the Assembly's Catechism, had several young gentlemen as students in theology at that time, constituting the Theological Seminary in embryo. On August 6, 1805, he was approbated by the Andover Association for the work of the gospel ministry, induced thus early to engage in preaching at the earnest desire of Mr. French, a step which he always regretted, as it prevented him from prosecuting his studies as he had intended. But from the time of his approbation to that of his settlement he preached every Sabbath but one or two. It was on September 22, 1805, that he preached for the first time in Ipswich, and June 17, 1806, that the First Church, without a dissenting voice, made choice of him as pastor, in which action the parish concurred with great unanimity, only one dissenting, and he a Baptist in principle. On October 8, 1806, he was ordained pastor of the First Church in Ipswich—the ninth in the Massachusetts Colony. He was the eleventh pastor in succession of predecessors, most of whom were men of note in their day, and all of whom maintained the doctrine of the Puritan Fathers. The young pastor, then in his twenty-fourth year, felt no slight degree of diffidence and distrust in regard to meeting the high expectations which he had awakened. But

the doctrines which he professed, and the course he had marked out at his ordination, he firmly maintained and steadily pursued during his public ministry. He devoted not only his affections but his time and talents to the service of his Master and the interests of His kingdom. He felt that Paul's charge to Timothy, "Be instant in season and out of season," was addressed also to him; and he acted accordingly. In his visits to the sick he was prompt, affectionate and faithful. When called, at whatever hour of the night, he instantly obeyed the summons, and he not unfrequently passed whole nights in the chamber of the sick and by the beds of the dying. He made many social calls and visits, the object of which was, in part, to promote kind and friendly feelings and to incite in his hearers a deeper interest in his public labors. These visits, which averaged five hundred a year, were in all more than twenty thousand.

In person Mr. Kimball was well proportioned, six feet in height, and in the prime of life weighed a hundred and seventy-five pounds; hair and eyes black, step firm and elastic. He had a pleasing voice, his enunciation was distinct, his manner never violent nor denunciatory, but calm and impressive. In summer he generally appeared in the pulpit in the canonicals presented to him at his ordination by the ladies of the parish, and supplemented by them as occasion demanded.

Though at the time of his settlement he was in delicate health, and thought by some not sufficiently robust to warrant his engaging in the labors and responsibilities of the ministerial office, and though for years he suffered from headache, often for weeks in succession, yet he lived to preach, in his own pulpit and those of his brethren, more than five thousand sermons, having had no vacation and having been prevented from preaching but a few times, when he supplied his place or the people worshipped with other congregations.

He maintained pleasant pulpit exchanges with his ministerial brethren and his labors were highly acceptable. These exchanges were not only with the Congregational and Presbyterian ministers of the county, but occasionally with others more remote. It is believed that his exchanges were never more frequent or more acceptable to his clerical brethren and their societies than at the time of closing his labors at Ipswich, at which time more than sixty pulpits were open to his ministrations.

As a monument of his industry he left above three thousand sermons, written out with remarkable legibility. Indeed, he took a pride in doing with clearness whatever he attempted; he never slighted any trust which he assumed.

The following is a sketch of his more public services:

His Labors among the Young—His labors in behalf of the lambs of his flock were abundant and incessant. For eleven years, in the earlier period of



his ministry, he instructed the children at the church and in his house in the Assembly's Catechism, the number varying from one hundred and fifty to more than two hundred. At the establishment of the Sunday-school, June 18, 1818, he acted as superintendent and took part in its immediate instruction. In December of that year he formed a class of young ladies in Wilbur's Catechism, which continued for a long time. He also taught the youth of both sexes in Sacred History; preached during his ministry more than one hundred sermons exclusively to the young; occupied fourteen Sabbath evenings in one winter with lectures to young men on the text, "Is the young man Absalom safe?" For years the Bible class, composed of the young people and others more advanced, numbered from two hundred to three hundred. With this exercise he went through most of the Pentateuch, the whole of John's gospel, the four evangelists in their connection and harmony, and the Acts of the Apostles.

Education.—Impressed with the special importance of knowledge to the citizens of a country, the stability and permanence of whose institutions rest upon intelligence and good morals, he had no sooner entered on his pastoral duties than he visited the schools, to encourage the children and youth by his presence, his sympathy and friendly counsel. For more than forty years he was a member of the school committee, and no small part of the time chairman, and accustomed to examine the teachers and the eight schools repeatedly every year, to pray with and examine the same. In his fiftieth anniversary discourse he remarked that he had probably made more than two thousand visits to these schools. He was ever the advocate of the most liberal appropriation and of the most complete organization, instruction and discipline of the common schools, and he did much by pen and voice for their improvement. The school board, in their annual report for the year ending March, 1860, thus speak of his services: "As a member of the feoffees of the grammar school for a period of more than thirty years, and as one of the school committee for forty years of his useful life among us, he has done much, both by precept and example, for the moral improvement of our youth, and his active exertions and untiring zeal in the cause of education will long be held in grateful remembrance."

He always took special interest in scholars belonging to the grammar-school, particularly in those contemplating a collegiate course. By the term "grammar-school," we do not mean the common, or public school, as it now exists in our commonwealth, supported by a tax and free of charge, to rich and poor, but a school where Greek and Latin were taught, and where youth could be fitted for college. The Ipswich grammar-school was established in 1650. In six years from its opening there were six young men from this town pursuing at the same time their studies at Harvard College; and all of them undoubtedly

pupils of this school. But the grammar-school no longer exists as such; it has been merged in the Manning School, and its funds appropriated, in part, to the support of its teachers. It was a grand old school some sixty or seventy years ago, when Richard Kimball, George Choate, Charles Choate and Stephen Coburn reigned there. In it more than one hundred of the natives of Ipswich, who have received collegiate honors, acquired their elementary education.

Female Education and Ipswich Female Seminary.—He was among the earliest and most earnest to call attention, public and private, to the whole subject of female education, and especially to the more extensive employment of women as teachers. Of so great importance did he regard this subject, that early in his ministry he kept a private school in his own house for several years, to which a goodly number of the young ladies of his society and the town resorted.

The Ipswich Female Seminary was opened for the reception of pupils, April 23, 1828, on which occasion an address was delivered by Mr. Kimball. As president of the board of trustees during the eleven years in which Miss Grant was principal, he delivered the diplomas with an address annually to the graduating class. At no small sacrifice he received Miss Grant and her associated teachers into his family, when she made the so doing the *sine qua non* of her establishment in Ipswich.

His labors in education were not confined to his place of residence. He frequently spoke on the subject by request in other towns. Soon after the organization of the Essex County Teachers' Association, in 1829, the first of the kind in the United States, "when," says one,¹ "few could be prevailed upon to favor the enterprise, Mr. Kimball, who had himself been an able and successful instructor, readily yielded to the request of the society to lecture before it. This he did with ability and peculiar acceptance."

Foreign Missions.—Through his whole ministry he was the earnest advocate and efficient helper of the American Board; was present at its organization at Bradford in 1810, frequently presented its claims to his own people, and occasionally addressed audiences in its behalf in other places. "Among the arguments that the early friends of missions had constantly to meet," says Rev. William Kincaid, at the annual meeting of the Board at Des Moines, October 6, 1886, "was the complaint that the sending out of so much money to the heathen would impoverish the country. So wide-spread and persistent was this objection that in 1826 two prominent ministers, of whom Dr. Lyman Beecher was one" (and Rev. David Kimball the other, see *Proceedings of the Auxiliary Mission Society of Essex County*, April 11, 1826), were appointed by this board to prepare elaborate papers in answer to it. The manner in which Mr. Kimball acquitted himself may be seen in the following remarks which

¹ Rev. Gardner B. Perry, D. D.

be offered on that occasion: "Sir, the resources of our country are not easily exhausted. When I look around this country; when I consider its extent of territory, fertility of soil and salubrity of climate, its agricultural improvements, its extensive and lucrative commerce, the rapidly increasing growth of its manufactures; when I consider the number, intelligence, industry and enterprise of its husbandmen, mechanics and merchants, and its favorable situation in respect to every kind of business tending to the increase of wealth; when I survey the vast resources of my country; I feel as little apprehension that these resources will be exhausted by its charities to the heathen, as that the waters of the Pacific Ocean will be exhausted by natural exhalation. And I would as soon accuse that ocean of a wanton waste of its waters, for suffering them to ascend for the purpose of falling on the pastures of the wilderness, and clothing them with verdure, as charge the friends of missions with profusion for collecting a portion of the riches of this world, and causing it to descend in the dew of gospel charity on the moral wilderness. Were I to surrender the point which I undertook to maintain, I would still hold on to the object to which we are devoted, and say, let the wealth of this world go, if on such terms souls may be rescued from degradation, guilt and death, and raised to that world where they will be praising God, and advancing toward him by new accessions of glory, forever and ever. But I do not surrender the point which I undertook to maintain. I do not believe that the property of the community has been lessened by the interest in foreign missions, nor that it would be lessened, if the object were to interest our entire population, and the contributions to it were increased a hundred-fold."

Anti-Slavery.—He was the uncompromising enemy of oppression and tyranny in all their forms, and early declared himself the friend of liberty, personal and national. In an address in his native town, he said: "I appear this evening, not as a member of any anti-slavery organization, but as an anti-slavery man, independent of all organizations. As to this cause blame me not, my friends, for my love of it; for here, in the days of my childhood and youth, was that love kindled. Yes, between those hills my father taught me, and in these ancient houses, your fathers taught me, and at the house of worship which recently stood there, the pastor taught me, that slavery is a sin, being a transgression of the law which says: 'Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.' I received it as true; I believed it; and I proclaimed it in this house of prayer, when at twenty-one our fathers called me on the day of our nation's birth, to echo, as I could, the just and noble sentiment, 'all men are created free and equal.' From the first moment, that, as I trust, I began to love God for what he is, for his holiness, justice and mercy; I have felt that slavery is a sin, and that like every other sin, it should be immediately renounced; and I must think and feel

so, as long as God's law remains as it is, and as long as God remains what he is."

As he believed he spoke, and unhesitatingly gave utterance, on all suitable occasions, to the sentiments he entertained. Into the structure of his mind,—which was conservative, judicious and catholic,—ultraism, fanaticism and bigotry did not enter. He had zeal, but according to knowledge; he hated oppression, but his hatred was tempered with prudence; he had opinions of his own to which he tenaciously adhered, yet he allowed in others the same freedom of expression that he claimed for himself. Early in the agitation of this subject he took an open and declared anti-slavery position; took it, and held to it, through evil report and good report, and though he did not live to see the day of deliverance and triumph, yet he believed it would come and gloriously too. He identified himself with the enterprise at a time when, through indifference, or cowardice, or selfishness the voice of the pulpit and press was dumb, and few desired to have the subject agitated in the community. The American Colonization Society was then at the height of its popularity, and it was regarded as almost impious to question the benevolence of its scheme. That dark period of ignorance and apathy, delusion and prejudice should be carefully pondered and properly estimated in order that the amount of moral courage requisite to meet it should also be measured and appreciated. Mr. Kimball though a diffident man and one who shrank from contending with an antagonist in open extemporaneous debate, was yet firm, decided and earnest in the discussion of any question in which he conscientiously believed, whether popular or unpopular with the people. The thing for him to decide was, whether the sentiments he entertained were in accordance with the word of God. If they were he was bold in proclaiming them; and undeterred by the fear of man and the consequences, went straightforward in the discharge of duty, sustained by the belief that, though all men might be against him, the God in whom he trusted would be with him. His name, which stood at the head of the Massachusetts delegation, is among the one hundred and fifty-four clergymen who came before the public in 1834 as the advocates of immediate emancipation, by signing a document giving a decided expression of opinion on these two cardinal points, viz.: 1. That colonization is not an adequate remedy for slavery, and must therefore be abandoned for something else that is; and 2. That the scheme of Immediate Emancipation is such a remedy, and is, therefore, to be adopted and urged.

In the formation of the Essex County Anti-slavery Society he took an active part. At a convention held at Topsfield April 4, 1834, to consider the expediency of forming said society, he was chosen, with others, to prepare a constitution. When the New England Anti-slavery Society met in Boylston Hall, Boston, May 26, 1834, he was on the committee to report on

the District of Columbia and the Territories; and in June of the same year, when the Essex County Anti-slavery Society was organized at Salem, he was one of the vice-presidents. Thus early and openly did he commit himself steadfastly and zealously to this great enterprise.

Temperance.—His mother instilled early into his mind and heart the great principle of brotherly love, including in its wide embrace love of all humanity, thus striking, with her heaven-inspired hand, the keynote of philanthropy in his heart, and laying the foundation of that spirit of benevolence which led him to adopt and proclaim the great reformatory doctrines which in the last half century have so extensively occupied the attention of the more thoughtful of our fellow-countrymen. Hence it was, that war and slavery and intemperance had in him an uncompromising foe, ready on all proper occasions to employ against them "a sling and a smooth stone out of the brook," weapons which, if not mighty, did good service in the cause of humanity. The second sermon which he wrote was on temperance, and during his ministry he frequently discoursed upon it on the Sabbath, and always readily and cheerfully complied with the invitations of his fellow-citizens and others to speak on the subject, lending his influence and giving his labor to promote it at a period when, in popular feeling, attachment to the cause did not add to a man's public reputation.

He was one of the original members of the first State temperance society in the country,—“The Massachusetts Society for the Suppression of Intemperance,” instituted in 1813. In 1826, when the American Temperance Society was formed, on the principle of total abstinence, he united with it, as he did with the Washingtonian movement of 1840.

The American Education Society.—While he took a deep interest in all the benevolent and religious enterprises of the day, the American Education Society in particular, whose object was the education of pious young men for the gospel ministry, occupied much of his time and attention. In the preliminary work of the Essex Auxiliary Education Society he bore a prominent part. At its organization, October 30, 1816, he was made secretary. As such he prepared, in December of that year, a circular addressed to the evangelical ministers of the county, inviting them to recommend to their several churches an annual collection for this object; and in 1828 he caused to be printed five hundred copies of the constitution, with a list of officers and an address prepared by himself. Having acted as secretary for twenty-three years, in 1839 he resigned the office. His resignation not being accepted, he continued the secretaryship, attending the annual meetings and preparing the yearly reports to the close of his life, a period of forty-four years. During this time, says Rev. Dr. Perry, “he never failed in an appointment, nor at the annual meeting came unprepared with a report carefully

made out. His reports were often extended to a considerable length, were directed to different bearings and responsibilities of the society, and, if brought together, would make a volume filled with important truths and practical instruction; and I must regard it as no small loss to the religious world that they should be hid in the depository of finished business, comparatively unknown and unread.”

Essex North Association.—Soon after his ordination he united with this association. Having, as scribe *pro tempore*, kept the minutes and conducted the correspondence of the society for a year, he was chosen permanent secretary, May 12, 1812, which office he held till his death, a period of forty-eight years, during all which time he was punctual in attendance at the meetings, and always ready to contribute his full share of time and labor to its interests. Three times he was called upon to deliver the annual sermon at the conference of the churches in Essex North. He was unanimously chosen to preach the anniversary sermon before the Massachusetts General Association at Woburn in 1844, which discourse was publicly commended as most appropriate and excellent. He was one of four who formed a society separate from the association for the purpose of studying the Scriptures in their original languages, and for making themselves better men and better ministers. “It is a noble example, worthy to be put into the history of our body,” [The “Ecclesiastical History of Essex County”], “that Father Kimball commenced and prosecuted the study of Hebrew after he was forty years old.” The distinct impression which he left on the memories of his associates was his fidelity and untiring industry. His productions, says Rev. Dr. Pike, were always scholarly and his heart always true to the Redeemer's kingdom.

Church in Linebrook Parish.—This church, organized in 1749, but which in 1819 had been reduced in membership to two women, one of whom was very aged and infirm, was watched over by him with a fatherly eye. For several years he occasionally held meetings for prayer among the people, and for a considerable period conducted a Bible-class exercise one evening a week; visited their sick, buried their dead, and, whenever a religious interest was manifest, however slight, he instantly hastened to their aid. Said a member of that church, “I shall never forget the expression of his countenance nor the tears I have seen flow, when I have been telling him of persons in our parish whom I knew to be anxious about the salvation of the soul.” His labors for the church during its struggle for existence knew no abatement. In this he proved himself a wrestling Jacob and a prevailing Israel. When at its lowest point and without a suitable place of worship, the old meeting-house having gone to decay, he urged the people to hold together and make a united effort for the erection of a new house; and, when they had decided to build, he addressed the secretary of the Massachusetts Missionary Society for



aid in support of a minister, and received from him the assurance that the society would appropriate to this object one hundred dollars annually. The continued interest of Mr. K. in this parish was shown by the action of his society, in presenting to it, at his suggestion, in 1848, for its present church edifice, the bell which had formerly hung in the steeple of the old meeting-house in Ipswich. In 1860 the church had increased from two in 1819 to seventy. A bequest of \$7000, by John Perley, Esq., of Georgetown, has enabled it to secure the services of a regularly settled minister, and it is in a prosperous condition.

Publications.—While the modesty of Mr. Kimball was such as to prevent him committing to the press the earlier productions of his pen, copies of which had in several instances been requested, and among them an oration delivered in Andover, July 4, 1804; an address on education in Bradford Academy, 1805; a sermon on peace in Ipswich, July 4, 1817; and while he declined similar requests in later years, he was the author of sixteen published discourses, which were regarded as valuable contributions to the religious literature of the day,—noticeably, a sermon before the Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge, in Park Street Church, Boston, 1821; a Sketch of the Ecclesiastical History of Ipswich, 1821; a Centennial Discourse before the First Church and Congregation in Ipswich, August 10, 1834, two hundred years after the gathering of that church; a sermon on the Utility of a Permanent Ministry, 1839; The Last Sermon in the Ancient Meeting-House of the First Parish in Ipswich, February 22, 1846; the First Sermon in the New Meeting-house of that Parish, February 4, 1847; a Discourse on the Fiftieth Anniversary of his Ordination, October 8, 1856. He also furnished many miscellaneous articles to secular and religious magazines and papers.

Hospitality.—His house was the seat of a generous hospitality. He followed the injunction of St. Paul, "Be not forgetful to entertain strangers," many of whom he cordially received. For most of the time from his settlement to the completion of the Eastern Railroad, his company, in addition to that of particular friends, averaged not less than one person for the whole time, and one horse in the stable. It was not uncommon for strangers passing through the town by stage to come directly to his house to dine, while their companions were being entertained at the public-house.

Reveries.—There were several interesting religious awakenings during his ministry. As the fruit of which there were received into the church in 1808, 16; in 1820, 13; in 1825–26, 35; in 1829, 88; in 1830, 22; in 1838, 16; in 1849–50, 45; an aggregate of 235. "In such seasons of merciful visitations," said Rev. Mr. Fitz in his sermon at the funeral of Mr. K., "he spared not himself, multiplying his meetings and going from house to house to preach repent-

ance, to offer to the inquiring sinner an Almighty Saviour, and to implore, on behalf of every household, the influences of the Holy Spirit."

On July 24, 1851, he withdrew from the active duties of the pastoral office, which he had filled with distinguished ability and faithfulness, and became pastor *emeritus*. After his retirement he preached in various places, and continued to do so till the time of his death, "being never so happy," to use his own words, as "when engaged in this delightful employment." As he drew near "the shining-shore," he must have found comfort in the thought, that by God's blessing, the church, which at his ordination consisted of but fifty-three members, had been quadrupled under his ministry.

The great aim which Mr. Kimball seems ever to have had in view was usefulness. He lived to do good; and although it cannot be said of him, or of any man that ever lived, that he made no mistake in the devising or the carrying out of his plans, yet no one could question the purity of his motives or the integrity of his acts. If he possessed little of what is called genius, he had two of the greatest of all possessions, diligence and perseverance; if not a man of profound erudition, his requirements were more than respectable. He was a careful and cautious thinker, an accomplished writer, an accurate scholar, a forcible and instructive preacher. In every department of duty he was diligent, prompt and faithful, deeply interested in all the philanthropic movements of the day, and zealous for the Lord of Hosts,—a consecrated champion of Christian truth. And having lived a life of faith and obedience, he died the death of the righteous.

His last sickness, pneumonia, was short, but very painful. As he drew near the river's brink, and some thought he had passed over, he revived and exclaimed, "The gates of the New Jerusalem are opening;" and after a pause, "I see within the city." He then took affectionate leave of his family, and breathing benedictions on his people, for whom his last audible prayer was offered, he fell asleep. There was no pang in the dying hour. At the moment of the soul's departure, according to the testimony of his daughter, Mary, there came to his lips a smile of ineffable beauty, and there it remained till he was buried out of sight, never more to be seen till the morning of the resurrection.

The citizens of the town exhibited the most profound respect for the deceased pastor. A man of spotless character, he was universally beloved. From the time the intelligence of his illness spread through the community till his burial the house was thronged. Many children came to see the face of him they loved. At twelve o'clock of the day following his death, all the bells in the town tolled in concert. At his funeral all classes pressed to show their love and express their grief. The people of Ipswich without distinction of sect or party, formed a most honorable

procession and accompanied the remains to the appointed place of burial. He was greatly honored in his death. Many clergymen and distinguished laymen from abroad were present at his funeral. Through the kindness and generosity of his nearest neighbor and ever constant friend, Deacon Aaron Cogswell, an eligible burial spot was secured for him and his family, near the centre of the ancient cemetery in High Street, where he reposes in the midst of a thousand of the people of his charge, and where the sun smiles upon his rest as his Heavenly Father smiled upon his departing spirit.

EDWARD P. KIMBALL.

Edward P. Kimball, son of Hon. Charles Kimball, was born March 22, 1836. Acquiring the rudiments of his education at the common schools of the town and at the old High School, he finished his course there at a time when there sprang up among the young men of the place quite an enthusiastic desire to fit and enter college, and he was one of a class of several who, with that end in view, recited their Latin and Greek before breakfast at an early morning hour to Rev. John P. Cowles, then principal of the Ipswich Female Seminary. Continuing under Mr. Cowles' instruction for a year, he completed his preparation for college at Thetford Academy, Thetford, Vt., and at the Williston Seminary, Easthampton, Mass., and in the autumn of 1852 entered the Freshman Class of Amherst College. Remaining there two years, he was obliged to leave on account of ill health, and staying out a year, entered the Junior Class at Williams College, where he graduated in 1857. The late ex-President Garfield was then a member of Williams, and rooming near him, he there made his acquaintance, as well as that of other men afterwards distinguished in public life and in the various professions. After graduating, he taught in the Shippensburg Collegiate Institute at Shippensburg, Pa., practically having charge of the school.

In 1858 he entered upon the study of the law in the office of Hon. Otis P. Lord at Salem, remaining there till Judge Lord took his seat upon the bench, and then completing his studies in the office of his father, he was, in 1861, admitted to the bar. He practiced his profession in Ipswich for a few years, and afterwards in Gloucester, and then associated himself with his father in business at Salem, and continued it after his father's decease until, in October, 1886, he assumed the duties of postmaster of Ipswich under appointment from President Cleveland. Mr. Kimball has held various public offices, having served upon the school committee of Ipswich for six years, and as selectman of the town for two years, besides being candidate for the House of Representatives and State Senate, failing of election only because his party were in the minority. He has always taken a great interest in music, is a fine bass singer, has

given instruction in vocal music, and was leader of the South Church choir for eighteen years. Mr. Kimball was married in 1867 to Sarah M. Kimball, daughter of Rev. Reuben Kimball, of North Conway, N. H., and has four children,—two sons and two daughters. Mrs. Kimball is a lady of intelligence, of a bright, cheerful and sunny disposition, remarkably conscientious, interested in every good work, devoted to her family and a leader in the affairs of church and society which come within the sphere of woman's activities.

It is interesting to notice in families the peculiar traits that descend from father to son, and in Mr. Kimball's case they are especially noticeable.

He has inherited from his father, and possesses in a remarkable degree, a spirit of thoroughness in everything which he undertakes. There is nothing so abhorrent to him as the disposition sometimes displayed of an arrogant, dogmatic assertion as facts of things of which the speaker is profoundly ignorant. Indeed, his exceeding caution in this respect may have sometimes worked to his disadvantage in giving him an appearance of hesitation, betokening ignorance of subjects on which he was really better informed than more flippant and showy, but at the same time more superficial, thinkers.

He is of a kindly and genial disposition, thoughtful of the feelings of others and considerate of the rights of all.

In manner and deportment he is unassuming. His natural reserve has sometimes given the impression of haughtiness, but this is an erroneous view of his temperament.

Though dignified in bearing, he is not distant. He has a quick perception of the humorous. His opinion and judgment are often sought in questions of dispute.

In matters pertaining to the welfare of the town he is deeply interested, and takes pride in her grand historic past and its present growth and prosperity.

In the preparation of legal papers and in advising upon legal subjects, this mental quality of his conspicuously appears, so that whatever is said or done by him can be depended upon without hesitation, subject only to such qualifications as he expressly lays down. Weighing well a subject, and coming slowly and carefully to a conclusion, we cannot wonder that his opinions, once formed, are held with great tenacity; but no one, however much he may differ himself from his views, can but respect the deliberate and careful way in which his judgment is made up or the conscientious fairness and candor with which his views are entertained. At the same time tolerant and deferential to those who are constrained to disagree with him, it is not strange that he commands the undivided respect and esteem of the entire community in which he dwells.





Edward P. Kimball



Daniel Felt

REV. DANIEL FITZ, D.D.¹

The Fitz family ranks among the very early Puritan families of New England. Its first Anglo-American ancestor was Robert Fitz. He was born in 1617, and came to this country from Fitz Ford or its vicinity, near Tavistock, in the county of Devonshire, England, as early, certainly, as 1640. Mrs. Bray has directed attention to this locality by making it the scene of her novel entitled "Fitz of Fitz-Ford." She says of it, in the introduction to her book:

"To the west of the town, by the side of the new road to Plymouth, stand the ruins of the gate-way of Fitz-ford, which, except an old barn, is all that now remains of the mansion and offices of the family of Fitz. This gate-way is spacious, and the label ornaments of its architecture proclaim it to be a structure of the time of Henry the Seventh. Such portions of the carving as appear through the ivy, with which it is amply hung, are well sculptured; and the whole might form an interesting subject for the pencil of a Handing or a Pencil. The ancient mansion of Fitz-ford, that once stood in an open court beyond this gate-house, was many years since pulled down, and the materials used to erect the present market-house in the town."

There is a tradition that Robert Fitz was at Ipswich in 1635. The most prominent member of his family at the time of his emigration was Sir John Fitz, a London barrister of position and wealth, whose country seat was upon the bank of the river Tavy on the west side of Tavistock as above stated by Mrs. Bray.

Robert Fitz is said to have been induced to leave his native land by the discomforts to which he was subjected on account of his Puritan principles. Whether he was at Ipswich, in 1635, or not, it is certain that he and his wife Grace D. were among the original settlers of Salisbury, in 1640. From that time the genealogy of his descendants has been carefully preserved.

Rev. Daniel Fitz belonged to the seventh generation of his family in this country, and his ancestry may be traced back in unbroken line through Samuel Currier, of Derry, of the sixth generation; Daniel, of Sandown, N. H., of the fifth; Richard, of South Hampton, N. H., of the fourth; Richard, of Salisbury, of the third; Abraham, of Ipswich, of the second; and Robert, of Salisbury, the Anglo-American head.

He was the second child and oldest son of Samuel Currier Fitz, above named, and of Sarah George Fitz. He was born at Sandown, N. H., May 23, 1795, and in early childhood accompanied his parents upon their removal to Derry, where they ever afterwards lived. He graduated in 1818 at Dartmouth College, then under the presidency of Dr. Francis Brown, and just emerging from its great controversy, finally settled by the Supreme Court of the United States, and since famous as the Dartmouth College case. His class numbered twenty-eight, some of whom subsequently attained positions of eminence. Among these were Prof. George Bush, D.D., of New York Univer-

sity, and Prof. Thomas C. Upham, of Bowdoin College. Not one of this class now survives.

Upon leaving college, Mr. Fitz devoted himself to teaching for a while, as thousands of other New England students before and since have done. By this means he strengthened his resources, both mental and financial, the first by a review of former studies, and the latter by the moderate compensation then allowed for such work. For a single term he was assistant teacher of Pinkerton Academy, established but a few years before in his town of Derry. Soon afterwards, Salisbury, N. H., Academy, then in its palmy days, offered him its principalship, which he accepted and continued to hold for some two years, until he was called to assume that of the Academy at Marblehead in which he continued for about a year and a half.

The objects sought by teaching having been attained, he entered Andover Theological Seminary in 1822, there to prosecute the studies which were to prepare him for the work of his chosen profession, under a corps of stalwart theologians, prominent among whom were Dr. Leonard Woods and Dr. Moses Stuart. It was near the close of the period of the great warfare waged by the theological Titans of New England; a fierce warfare in which no quarter was asked or given by either party, but which, like most religious controversies, was most effective in confirming the combatants in their own cherished views. As was most natural, Mr. Fitz accepted the doctrines of his teachers. These, with slight modifications, he held throughout his whole subsequent life.

Mr. Fitz completed the prescribed course of study, and graduated in 1825. At this time, the health of the venerable Dr. Joseph Dana, who had been in continuous service as pastor of the South Congregational Church, of Ipswich, for sixty-one years, had become impaired by age, and he was wanting a colleague. The position was offered by the church and society to Mr. Fitz, and he accepted it. On the 26th day of June of the next year he was ordained and installed as associate pastor.

The services of this occasion were held in the ancient meeting-house of the society, which stood near the location of the present house, by which it was superseded in the year 1837. The clergymen who took part in the exercises were well known in their day and have been favorably remembered ever since. The ordination sermon was by the Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., of Newburyport, a son of the senior pastor. His text was the 26th verse of the 20th chapter of Acts. The installing prayer was by Rev. Robert Crowell, of Essex; the prayer of consecration by Rev. Samuel Dana; the concluding prayer by the Rev. Joseph B. Felt, of Ipswich; the address to the church and society by the Rev. Edward L. Parker, of Londonderry, N. H., the home pastor of Mr. Fitz; the right hand of fellowship by Rev. David T. Kimball of the First Congregational Church of Ipswich, and

¹ By Joseph B. Walker.

the charge to his young brother, by the senior pastor. The church had not had an ordination before for two generations, and the occasion was as interesting as it was solemn.

There occur in human life periods of intense interest which exact approbation and move the heart. It is a glorious hour when the soldier, in unselfish defense of his country, buckles on his harness and hies to scenes of peril. So is it when a venerable and able statesman, as regardless of the opposition of rank and numbers as of his own comfort, raises his voice in the parliament house of his nation in aid of the helpless, and spends his last strength in a desperate struggle for right, conscious the while that his tongue will be dumb in death when the pæan of victory is sounded. We follow with bated breath and admiration the modest figure of a Florence Nightingale as it moves noiselessly at midnight through dimly lighted hospital wards, now pausing to moisten the parched lips of the suffering, and anon to gently close the eyelids of the recent dead.

But a nobler than any of these is the sight of a young man, of clean hands and a pure heart, coming to God's altar for solemn consecration of himself to his chosen life-work of aiding his fellows in their efforts for delivery from the curse of sin. The warrior, the statesman, the philanthropist minister to social and physical needs, which are temporal; the priest at God's altar to spiritual wants which are eternal.

At the time of his ordination, Mr. Fitz was thirty-one years of age, in vigorous health and possessed of a sound mind in a sound body. His figure was of medium height, compact and firm. His complexion was dark, and his hair, which inclined to curl, was as black as the raven's wing. His eyes of a hue similar to that of his hair were soft and gave to his face when in repose a mild expression, which changed immediately to one of great earnestness when his mind was roused. He was of graceful manners, and easily and equally accessible to persons of all conditions. His mind, which was strong and well-balanced, working actively and incisively, reached correct conclusions, partly by reason and partly by instinct. His imagination, which was quick and enhanced the interest of his utterances, was kept in subjection to a calm judgment which rarely led him wrong. His quick sympathies made him appreciative of the real character of the person with whom he had to do, and protected him from the impositions to which a minister is often exposed. While naturally inclined to be much guided in his opinion by an abounding charity, he intuitively tempered these by a clear insight into the motive which underlaid proffered professions.

By descent Mr. Fitz was a Puritan. As above stated, the emigration of his Anglo-American ancestor, Robert Fitz, was due to his Puritan principles. Spiritual constraints, rather than physical discomforts, prompted this. In the latter respect he was no

gainer by leaving home. No part of England possessed greater attractions than the one he abandoned. Devonshire, the "Emerald County," was a county of small farms, of pastures and cattle and dairies; of numerous streams and water-powers and forests. It possessed a fair soil and a good climate. It was near to the sea, and ever open to the southwest winds which floated over it continually, freighted with the mild winds and moisture of the gulf stream just before it loses itself in the Bay of Biscay—those winds which are a benediction to some of the southern counties of England; securing to them perpetual mildness of climate and a verdure unsurpassed.

The transition from which such a land to one upon which the Arctic current breathed even in summer, as yet in possession of savages and a wilderness, was as disheartening as it was marked. But great moral purposes afford a sustaining power which regards but little, either, hardship or danger or even death itself. So the Puritan left his old home and religious constraint upon the Tavy for a new one and freedom, three thousand miles away upon the bank of the Merrimac.

All the way down the succeeding generations of his family, we find apparent strong religious traits of character. Sarah Thorne Fitz, the great-great-grandmother of the subject of this sketch, displayed these in a very marked degree. She was a member of the first Ipswich Church, but lived in Salisbury, sixteen miles away. Tradition says that to enjoy its Sunday worship, she was accustomed at times, to rise very early in the morning, and, having milked her cows, to paddle across the Merrimac River to Newbury, whence she went on foot to Ipswich, arriving in season for the morning service. This journey was reversed in the afternoon and finished in season for the evening milking.

To anticipate a little, for the sake of convenience, it may be here said in regard to some of the religious opinions which he held in mature life, that Mr. Fitz received his theological training at Andover Theological Seminary, under the distinguished professors who had raised it to an eminent power in the land. He then accepted and ever held the doctrines there taught, which were in full accord with the orthodox branch of the Christian Church. But while he received these and held them firmly, he held them broadly. He had little sympathy with narrow interpretations of great truths, and was free from the uncharitableness which comes from the magnifying of minor points. While as a Calvinist he adopted Calvin's views, he yet took them with such modifications as more quiet times and a wider learning had suggested. But the deep, underlying foundation of his religious faith was the gospel of Jesus Christ. This he read and pondered all his life, and upon this rested his belief that the Son of God had made provision for the salvation of all and not for that of an elect few only. Hence, he urged all men to repent,

inasmuch, as faith and repentance made salvation possible to all.

He had little taste for polemical divinity, not very much for metaphysics, by which almost anything can be proved, and no admiration whatever for hair-splitting theorists. As was usual in his day, he preached doctrinal sermons from time to time for the instruction of his people, but with an unfeigned respect for the views of others from whom he differed upon unessential points. Both the conservative bent of his mind and his wide knowledge of mankind, led him naturally to this, as well as a native courtesy which never forsook him. But this was not the courtesy which weakness or timidity engenders. Fear was an emotion to which he was a stranger. If attacked, he was always ready to encounter heavy blows, and return them if necessary, not, however, from any love of contest, but from loyalty to what he deemed the right. Consequently, like most peace-loving men of like character, he was very rarely assailed.

Such was the ancestry, bent and religious training of the young minister, who, on the 26th day of June, 1826, stood upon the threshold of his career, gazing into a future which his dark eye could not penetrate, with faith and a hearty submission to the will of him to whom he had consecrated his every power.

But, he was not to go on far alone. Protestantism has never favored the celibacy of its clergy. It has rather made prominent the injunction of the great apostle that, "A bishop must be the husband of one wife." Mr. Fitz's parishioners could not consent that he should serve them unaided, and his own loving nature was in accord with their wishes.

The writer of this memorial sketch would be unworthy of his delicate trust, if he omitted a passing tribute to the gifted woman who soon after the pastor's installation became his wife. She was the oldest daughter of the Rev. Moses Sawyer, of Henriker, N. H., who, for nearly twenty-four years, had been the faithful pastor of the Congregational Church of that town, where she was born on the 8th day of May, 1804, and subsequently reared, amid the duties of a country ministerial life.

We omit all record of her earlier years, except to note that she received her higher education partly at Byfield Academy, then in charge of Rev. Joseph Emerson, and partly at Derry Female Academy, of which Miss Grant and Mary Lyon were the instructors.

After her graduation, she was herself a teacher until her marriage to Mr. Fitz, on the 5th day of September, 1826, transferred her from a New Hampshire School to a Massachusetts parsonage.

Mrs. Fitz brought to her new home a thorough knowledge of a New England pastor's wife. This she had acquired in the best of all schools, that of experience; and, from the lips and lives of the best of all teachers, those of her father and mother.

She possessed high mental endowments which had

been enhanced in power by thorough training. She naturally took broad views of a subject, and had a ready insight to its vital points. Having the rare power to divest herself of all personal predilections, when her opinion was asked, and to look disinterestedly at the matter under consideration from all sides, she almost uniformly reached correct conclusions. She had common sense—the gift of God—in large measure. Courage she also had, and was undaunted in the presence of obstacles. Possessing executive and organizing ability, she was naturally a leader in her husband's parish; not from choice, but from the demands of her position and of her associates. Skillful was she in dissipating the apathies and in allaying the various frictions, not unfrequently present in society work; mingling love with energy and intuitively comprehending the various forces operating to advance or retard its progress.

Besides these qualities, the power of which time and experience greatly enhanced, to Mrs. Fitz was given great sweetness of disposition and marked comeliness of person. Natural grace of manner, and a charming affability, founded upon innate modesty and brilliancy of intellect, combined to give her presence an unusual attractiveness. Both at home and in society, these marked characteristics secured to her the popularity which usually attends upon the gifted and the good.

She was always accessible to all who would approach her. To the burdened soul which, in its perplexity confidentially sought her advice, she gave wise counsel mingled with the most delicate sympathy. The giddy and the wayward were rebuked so lovingly that they blessed in very gratitude the hand which chastened them. Her ministrations to the sick were abundant, and in her presence there was healing.

At the general assemblages at the parsonage from time to time, she dispensed hospitality mingled with grace and seasoned with love. The kindly glances of her dark eyes and the graceful pose of her attractive figure increased the fascination of her conversation. It was natural for her to be agreeable, and she knew not how to be otherwise. Indeed, Madame Récamier, in her splendid *salon*, surrounded by the beauty and talent of the French capital, never presided with more grace and sweetness than did she on those simple occasions. We must not be surprised, therefore, at the remark of one who knew her well, "She had never a peer in Ipswich."

For nearly forty years Mrs. Fitz discharged with great ability the double duties which she had assumed with her marriage ring. She was faithful to her family, and faithful to her husband's people, and when, in January, 1862, her pure spirit rose to companionship with "the just made perfect," and her mortal remains were lowered tenderly to their last rest, hot tears fell upon the cold ground, and hearts ached with a sorrow as lasting as life.



In about a year after his settlement, the death of Dr. Dana left Mr. Fitz sole pastor of his church and society. He accepted willingly the increase of labor which this event devolved upon him. He was fortunate in his people who were reasonable, peaceful and intelligent. Part of them resided in the village, and a part upon some of the hay farms for which Ipswich is so celebrated. They were not rich, yet poverty was unknown to them. They were blessed with that golden mean of life's condition for which the Hebrew sage so wisely besought his God.

With the acres of their forefathers, they had inherited the traditions of two hundred years or more. These were influencing and moulding their characters constantly. The generations of many of the families of Mr. Fitz's parish went back in unbroken succession to the foundation of the town. They were good old English stock, with hearts of oak; stock which had been improved by transplanting, and grew better continually. They were a people who feared God, and respected every man entitled to respect. No where outside of New England can such a community be found, a happy society of villagers and farmers which had flourished for two hundred years, without deterioration, upon a fertile tract of coast land, with three thousand miles of ocean in front of them, and three thousand miles of continent behind them. The ocean was, and had ever been, a blank. Over the continent the waves of new populations had been advancing continually, a hundred miles each decade, to meet ere long the great Pacific Sea, whose eastern billows wash the occident, and whose western breakers dash upon the shore of the orient. Yet the Ipswich farms were to change only to increased productiveness, and the village to wider borders and greater beauty.

Among this people Mr. Fitz went in and out, a welcome visitor at every house. He had come among them to stay. For better or worse they had taken him and he them, and the bond which united both in one was to endure as long as he lived. He soon learned their habits of life and thought, and so adjusted his ways to theirs, that he came into their sympathies and gained their confidence and love. Indeed, one of the most beautiful characteristics of his pastorate was the mutual affection and respect which ever existed between him and the people of his charge.

In labors for their good he abounded. He preached a carefully-written sermon the forenoon and afternoon of every Sunday, and conducted a less formal meeting for conference and prayer in the evening. Besides these, he held frequent week-day meetings in the rural parts of his parish, and for many years, as chaplain of the county almshouse, held there a Sunday morning service. Yet his strength failed not, and he never grew weary in his work. He had scarcely a vacation in all his life. His chief recreation was in the variation of his daily duties.

In his pulpit, his full figure clothed with scrupu-

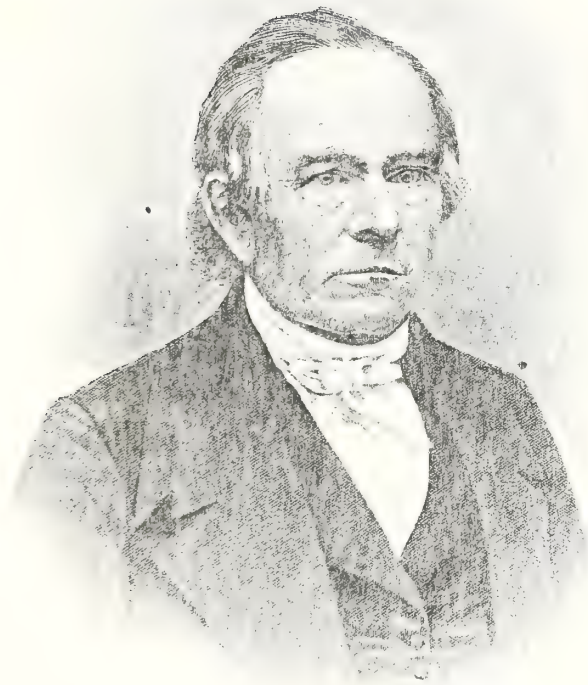
lous neatness, his dark eye and fine face enhanced the effect of his ministrations. His manner was simple and reverential. He never assumed familiarity with the Deity, but seemed to feel that it was a solemn thing to minister at God's altar, and to be deeply sensible of the responsibility of standing between Him and those he sought to aid.

His sermons were logical, lucid, earnest, practical. He drew his illustrations largely from sacred history. Whatever the subject discussed, the application was close and personal to every heart. The commonest individual could understand his message and retain in mind the truths uttered in his hearing. He was always animated, and at times eloquent. His prayers, which were filial, earnest and expectant, were prompted by his nice appreciation of the wants of those for whom he plead. He had a strong, clear, flexible voice, and so read the sacred scriptures that his simple reading became a luminous commentary to those who listened.

He could hardly be called a literary man; yet a perusal of some of his written sermons proves that he wielded a pen of much ability, evidently writing with fluency, and always with clearness and vigor. His reading was more extensive than that of the average minister of his time. Some of his discourses on special occasions, which have been published, and are models of their kind, afford evidence of the possession by their author of broad views and a well-trained mind. But his regular clerical duties absorbed his time, and to these he gave his strength.

Dr. Fitz understood perfectly the character of all his people, and how to influence them for good. Indeed, he measured their several capacities for excellence, and was reasonable in his expectations and patient. He attempted the possible only, but never sought the manifestly unattainable. Like all active clergymen, his course was at times through channels narrow and devious, with Scylla on one side and Charybdis on the other; yet he was never wrecked on either shore. An amusing incident, which occurred one Sunday morning during our late war, will illustrate his skill on such occasions. His people were divided in their sympathies for the two contending parties. As he was going out of church at the close of the service, a good deacon of democratic proclivities whispered sternly in his ear: "You were altogether too outspoken, sir, in your prayer this morning; your plainness of speech will give just offense." Farther down the aisle he encountered a second official of the same grade, who also whispered, as he passed him, "Too lukewarm, sir, too lukewarm, you didn't come come up to the mark." These conflicting assurances which offset one another, were answered by a silent smile, and in a few days both his friends were complaisant again.

Dr. Fitz mingled little in civil affairs, and probably never held a political office in all his life. But he took a deep interest in the general welfare, and with



James Appleton

unostentatious independence exercised his rights of citizenship. He rejoiced in the prosperity of his townsmen, and was always ready to aid, as he could, in the promotion of their interests. He did much for the improvement of the schools of Ipswich, and to the furtherance of all useful local enterprises, he never declined to lend a willing hand.

He possessed courage, and was rarely disheartened. But his was a courage based upon knowledge, guided by wisdom and sustained by activity. He believed that the realization of faith came from persistent effort, and that all hopes of success without this were vain.

But the most marked trait in his character was his abounding love for all mankind. It was the dominant quality of his nature. His appeals in behalf of the effete nations of the East manifested it, and this prompted his earnest calls in aid of the missionaries upon our Western frontier; thus laboring to mould into homogeneity and elevate to a higher manhood the discordant populations which have come to us from the nations beyond the sea. Everything which promised highest good to his fellow-men commanded at once his interest.

Particularly strong was his love for children, who, apprized of this by their unerring instincts, returned it in full measure. With their love they mingled respect, but never fear. Sober Ipswich never enjoyed a more charming sight than that of the sleigh of the good doctor, when carrying his children to their school, into which others had climbed, and piled one upon another, until it was full, and more than full. As he sped along as best he could, buried in this living load of clamorous joy, no heart beat happier than his own. Was all this a little thing and unimportant? It was a significant one, and thoughtful observers saw more than the animated pile, and remembered that childhood would soon grow to youth, and youth in a short time change to maturity, but, that the love then engendered would never grow cold, and the good counsels which it unfolded would never be forgotten.

It was his invariable custom when driving upon the road to invite any chance footman he might overtake to a seat in his carriage. One of his daughters has remarked that, when riding with her father, and up almost to the time when she considered herself a young lady, she had repeatedly been asked to sit in his lap to make room for some wayfarer whom he had never seen before and was most likely to never see again.

The soiled tramp who called at his door, ragged and redolent perhaps of whiskey, was always treated with kindness. He bore God's image upon his face, and that must be respected.

The ministry of Dr. Fitz was a successful one. His active pastorate lasted forty-one years. He and his predecessor, Dr. Joseph Dana, were the sole pastors of the church for a continuous period of one hundred

and two years, a fact not easily paralleled. The records show that at the time of his settlement, its members numbered fifty-four and that three hundred and thirteen joined it while he held the sacred office. But the most important acts of his pastorate were not recorded upon the register of the church, but the hearts of his people, to be read only by the eye of Omniscience.

It was impossible that such a life, identified with all that was best in Ipswich, and flowing on for nearly half a century in a channel ever widening and ever deepening, should fail to be a power for good. It was impossible that its beneficent fame and influence should be restricted to the scene of its own labors. As the decades came in and went out, one after another, Dr. Fitz became more and more widely known. Neighboring parishes in their perplexities sought his counsel. To pulpits more important than his own, he was invited for exchanges of ministrations. In 1862 his *Alma Mater*, in recognition of his merit, conferred upon him a degree of Doctor of Divinity. He rose into high esteem among his brethren in the ministry, and became at length an honored father in their midst.

But his heart of hearts remained where it had ever been, and clung closest to the people he was ordained to serve. His settlement had been for life. With the union then formed both parties were satisfied, and never wished it sundered. So it continued on until his strong arm began to weaken, and physical infirmity compelled a surrender of his sacred trust. In 1867 he resigned the active duties of his ministry. For two years longer, in declining health, he went about among those he had loved so long, until, on the second day of September, 1869, "he was not; for God took him." His manly form was laid before the altar at which he had ministered, and his friend, Dr. Pike, of Rowley, comforted as well as he could the sad hearts which had gathered around. From the church it was borne to the cemetery near by, and laid to sleep in the company of dear ones gone on before,—there to rest until "this mortal shall have put on immortality, and Death is swallowed up in victory."

GENERAL JAMES APPLETON.

Among those who have done good and signal service in the cause of temperance, the name of the late James Appleton, of Massachusetts, should be held most gratefully and most tenaciously in remembrance by all who have faith in the expediency and the necessity of a prohibitory liquor law. It was he who first publicly maintained—as most, if not all, who believe in total abstinence now maintain is the logical outcome of the temperance movement—that legislation has nothing whatever to do with moral evil except to aim at its complete suppression. If this is to be the legislative policy of the future as to



the traffic in intoxicating drinks, as it already is that of several of the States, it is interesting to trace that policy to its source, and to learn something of the man who first promulgated it.

James Appleton was born in 1786 on the farm in Ipswich, Mass., granted to his ancestor, Samuel Appleton, in 1636; to this home he returned in his old age, when the work of his life was finished, and there he died in 1862. For many years his home was in the neighboring town of Marblehead, and for twenty years, from 1833 to 1853, he resided in Portland, Me. But wherever he lived he was known and esteemed for his interest and energy in public affairs, and was looked up to as a born leader of men. Though a Federalist in politics, he gave his services, as a colonel of a regiment, to his country when it became involved in a second war with England in 1812. Those old enough to remember the earlier days of the anti-slavery movement, if they know anything about it or those engaged in it, will recall the name of General Appleton as conspicuous in that little band of men and women, who, like their great leader, would not equivocate, who would not retreat a single inch, who would be heard and who were not afraid. Nor was he less earnest in upholding the saving grace of total abstinence from all intoxicating drinks; but that doctrine, even half a century ago, had so grown into popular favor that the most zealous on its behalf were not easily distinguished in the multitude of its apostles, nor has the memory of them been so carefully preserved.

But it was James Appleton, as chairman of a legislative committee to which had been referred a petition in regard to the license laws of Maine, made a report, herewith published, which would in time be recognized as the beginning of a new and auspicious era in the temperance reform. Its argument was that inasmuch as "it is now ascertained, not only that the traffic is attended with most appalling evils to the community, but that ardent spirit is entirely useless—that it is an *unmitigated evil*," the committee, therefore, were "not only of opinion that the law giving the right to sell ardent spirits should be repealed, but that a law should be passed to *prohibit* the traffic in them, except so far as the arts or the practice of medicine may be concerned."

But the legislative report, though the most complete, was not the earliest attempt made by General Appleton for the suppression by law of all traffic in ardent spirits. It is remembered in his family that he dated his convictions upon the subject from the year 1831. It came to him—when listening to an earnest debate in the Massachusetts Legislature, of which body he had been a member—as a sudden revelation, as a discovery in morals, that the way to stop intemperance was to stop it. If the drinking of spirits was always wrong and dangerous, and the source of all the monstrous evils charged to it, then it was not to be tolerated, nor dallied with by license

laws, but put an end to. If there was no liquor, there would be no drunkenness; if the sale was made illegal, the traffic in it and the use of it would become disgraceful as well as dangerous. It might not, indeed, be possible to suppress it altogether and at once by act of the Legislature; but, as an argument, this was just as true of the laws against murder, arson, forgery, theft, or any other acknowledged crime, which bad men would still commit in defiance of the law.

Though persuaded in his own mind that he had discovered the true remedy for the monstrous evil, the first application he proposed was tentative and indirect; not that he wanted faith in the perfect efficacy of that remedy, but he doubted if the public mind was yet ready for heroic treatment. Accordingly, he prepared a petition to the Massachusetts Legislature—this was before he removed to Portland, and when he was residing at Marblehead—praying that the sale of liquor in any quantity less than thirty gallons be forbidden by law.

The proposition was clearly meant as the first step toward absolute prohibition; indeed there was no pretence in the petition of concealing the hope of its author that a limitation of the sale of ardent spirits to a minimum of thirty gallons would take from the large majority of drunkards all chance of getting drunk. The purchase of rum in so large a quantity would be beyond their means, while the moderate drinker who could afford it would easily and almost unconsciously abandon a habit, unless very firmly fixed, which called for more forethought and larger immediate outlay than the gratification was worth.

But even this compromise aroused more opposition than probably General Appleton was prepared for. The agent of the Massachusetts Temperance Society, a Rev. Mr. Hildreth, pounced upon it at once as a mischievous measure. His notion evidently was that among the "inalienable rights" of man was the right to rum. He fairly represented the timid public opinion of that day, which in the temperance, as in the anti-slavery, movement, shrunk from any denunciation in "harsh language" of a popular wrong, and from any proposed remedy that would be pronounced "radical." Moral suasion" was the cant phrase of the time, and if there were a few tender souls—Mr. Hildreth may have been one of them—who used the term in its true sense, with the multitude it only meant that they would not tolerate any onslaught upon evil which reflected upon respectable sinners, was likely to open their eyes and bring them to repentance.

The letter of Mr. Hildreth and that of another writer, who signs himself "Danvers," show the spirit in which General Appleton's moderate proposal was met. He was quick to reply whether by argument or cavil, and in three clear and forcible letters signed "Essex," to be found in the *Salem Gazette* of February, 1832, he sets forth his reasons for





Charles Kimball



the faith that is in him, and the real object he had in view in the petition. On one point, however, he acknowledged his error, and accepted, in his own way, the rebuke of his opponents. He ought not, he confessed, to have asked the Legislature for a limitation in the traffic in ardent spirits, whether to thirty gallons or any other quantity. The trade, it was plain to him now, should be not regulated, but prohibited. The opposition he had aroused was an evidence of the foolishness of any proposed compromise between right and wrong. He meant prohibition, and ought to have said so directly, rather than have condescended to an expedient which pleased nobody and would deceive but few. "I made a great mistake," he said to a member of his family—"a great mistake." And this he publicly reiterates, it will be observed, in a postscript to his third and final letter,— "We wish the prayer of the petition had been without any qualification, for its authors, we believe, intended the absolute prohibition of the traffic, as their argument abundantly evinces." But here was the end of the matter. Perhaps he had gained all he had hoped for in provoking some discussion of the subject, and it is doubtful if the petition, which probably nobody but himself would have signed, was ever presented to the Legislature.

Here for the first time prohibitory legislation was proposed, though with no other immediate result, apparently, than to convince its author that the opposition to it would be formidable, if not insurmountable. He may have been for a time discouraged, but he was not defeated. He knew he was right, and he had learned, moreover, a lesson of practical value. If ever again he could make an opportunity to urge his principles upon any legislative body, there should be no mistake of a want of directness in his method.

Meanwhile he had removed to Portland, and in 1836 he was elected a member to the Maine Legislature. The opportunity he had waited for came when a petition on the license laws was referred to a Committee of which he was chairman. He could speak now with a certain authority, and did not need, even were he so minded, to appeal to public attention by the suggestion of an indirect and experimental measure. The whole subject was, no doubt, much clearer in his mind than when he put forth his thirty gallons petition, and he was ready to meet the unbelieving or the timid at all possible points of difficulty or objection. He covers the ground so completely, presents his argument so frankly, confidently and forcibly, that the report might go before any State Legislature to-day as an exhaustive presentation of the whole question of prohibition.

The report, of course, was laid upon the table, and it is not remembered whether it gave rise to any debate. Very likely not; for doubtless to most, if not all, of the honorable members, it seemed as preposterous as it was novel, and not even worth talking about. Nevertheless, "The Maine Law" was born

then and there, though it was not till nine years later that the first tentative act was passed as the beginning of prohibitory legislation. The years of agitation and discussion which preceded and prepared the way for legislation also had a beginning, and there is neither record, nor tradition, nor memory of the oldest inhabitant that can trace it beyond the Appleton Report to the Maine Legislature of 1836-37, unless it be to the Appleton petition to the Massachusetts Legislature of 1832. But both came from the same man, and together they leave nothing more to be said as to the question of the origin of this special temperance policy. James Appleton, as a private citizen of Massachusetts, publicly suggested in 1832 the wisdom of a prohibitory liquor law, and in 1837 the same James Appleton, as a member of the Maine Legislature, urged upon that body the enactment of such a law. When at last, in 1851, the "Maine Law," as it now stands upon the statute-books of the State, was passed, it was a fitting recognition of his early devotion to the principle of prohibition that he, among others, should have been called upon to aid in the preparation of the act.

He lived to see ten years of the enforcement of the perfected law in Maine and in other States. It was, in spirit and purpose, of his own devising, and he would sometimes speak at his own fireside with natural pride and profound thankfulness of the result of his work. But he left it to others to show at some future time how much was due to his foresight, his keen moral sense and his courage.

The following is the inscription on the stone over General Appleton's grave in Ipswich:

"A Philanthropist, a Patriot and a Christian."

He served his fellow-men, his country and his God by laboring for the emancipation of the American slave.

HON. CHARLES KIMBALL.

Charles Kimball was born in Ipswich, Mass., on December 24, 1798. His parents were Jeremiah and Lois Kimball. Twelve children were born to them, of whom he was the youngest. His mother was of the Choate family, of Essex, made famous by the "great Rufus." His father was a lineal descendant of Richard Kimball, who came from Ipswich, England, in 1634, the same year in which its namesake on this side of the water began its existence as a body corporate. This ancestor located in Watertown, Mass., but three years later, 1637, removed to Ipswich, and there made a permanent settlement; and from that date to the present the male line in Ipswich has been unbroken. The father of Charles, like his progenitors, was of sturdy mould, and "honest, manly and efficient." Of the twelve children, five of them attained the age of more than eighty years, two of them the age of seventy-five or more, one the age of ninety-one and another the age of



ninety-seven, a remarkable record of longevity for one single family. In 1815, when Charles was sixteen years old, he entered the office of Nathaniel Lord, Jr. (who married his sister Eunice, and who was the father of the late Judge Otis P. Lord), in Ipswich, then register of probate, and at the same time became a member of his family. He began active life with few educational privileges, but the head of the family in which he made his home was a graduate of Harvard College, a man of letters, of exact knowledge and accurate business methods, and of the advantages these afforded he fully availed himself. In 1827 he was elected colonel of one of the militia regiments from the office of adjutant, the latter being equal, only in rank, to the modern lieutenant, a very marked promotion, and the cause of many heart-burnings at the time, but soon forgotten, as his special fitness for the position became apparent. His precision and promptness in the discharge of his duties was readily acknowledged, and his dignified and soldierly bearing and easy and graceful horsemanship won many commendations. In 1830 he voluntarily resigned this office, but the title followed him through life. In 1829 he married Mary Ann Outein. Her father was of French origin; her mother of New England birth. Three children were the fruit of this union, two sons and one daughter. The elder son, Charles A., was a lawyer, and died at the age of thirty-eight; and the daughter died at the age of thirty-five. Both were unmarried. The surviving son, Edward P., is a lawyer, and at present postmaster, and resides at the homestead. The wife and mother was a woman of great intelligence, of remarkable simplicity of character, of earnest, sincere piety, faithful in her conjugal relations and her filial duties, and self-sacrificing to the last degree in her devotion to her family. In 1836 he was elected to the State Senate, and served therein till 1840, the Hon. Edward Everett being then Governor. This was also a marked honor, as he had had no previous legislative experience. From 1841 to 1847 he was county commissioner, and perhaps the highest compliment ever paid him was that of one of his associates on this board who remarked that he "never saw a man so anxious to know and do the right." In politics he was a Whig, but upon the dissolution of that party, he, like many other conservatives, associated himself with the Democracy. In 1851 he was candidate for State Treasurer. In politics, as in everything else, he acted from conviction and principle. He held, at different times, various town offices; was selectman one year, School Committee man and clerk and treasurer of two boards of trustees of educational funds for many years, and for thirty or more consecutive years moderator of town meetings. In 1851, on the retirement of Mr. Lord from the office of register of probate, he established an office in Salem. He had been all this time acquiring a knowledge of probate law, and had become well known throughout the

county as a practitioner in the Probate Courts of rare skill and experience. In 1858, at the age of fifty-nine, on the petition of Judge Perkins, Wm. C. Endicott, Wm. D. Northend and others of mark in the profession, he was admitted to the bar, a very high compliment to his ability, learning and personal worth, and unique in itself. Hitherto in all his cases before the courts, except the Probate Court, he had been obliged to call to his aid some member of the bar; but now a wider field of practice was open to him, and from that date to the close of his business career, he devoted himself assiduously to his profession. On the 10th day of December, 1877, at the age of seventy-nine, he suddenly lost, while in his office, all capacity for business. In a moment the power of connected thought was gone. Everything became one confused mass in his mind, and in this condition he remained to the day of his death, November 30, 1880. It was not alone in business that he was active. In 1830 he united with the South Congregational Church, in Ipswich, and to its spiritual welfare gave much of his time and thought. He served on church and parish committees, was superintendent of the Sabbath-school for over forty-five years, and in 1868 was chosen deacon. He *understood* the creed of his church, and could and did stoutly maintain it against all antagonism. He was versed in ecclesiastical law, and was prominent in Ecclesiastical Councils, notably, the famous one at Manchester, in the deliberations of which he took an active and leading part. He prepared a paper on ecclesiastical law, which he read before the Essex Congregational Club, and which was regarded as a valuable contribution to this difficult and occult branch of legal lore. On the occasion of his funeral, which was largely attended by the people of the town and many others, including members of the bar, his pastor, the Rev. T. F. Waters, preached a discourse which was a discriminating analysis of his life and character, and a glowing tribute to his sterling worth.

At the December Term of the Supreme Court, 1880, resolutions in memoriam were offered by the Hon. Wm. D. Northend, seconded by James Gillis, Esq., and responded to by his Honor, Judge Bacon, the presiding judge, and by him ordered to be entered on the records of the court.

Such is the mere outline of this long and useful life. While the record speaks for itself, behind it lies the secret of his success. Slow and patient toil, close application and an absorbing interest in his work, led him, step by step, thro' rugged paths to the standing in his profession which he attained. Unlike the majority of the profession, he entered upon his work without any knowledge derived from the textbooks. He learned first in the school of experience, and then he sought the books, and they accompanied him in his labors. His keen observation, quick perception, logical acumen and retentive memory, enabled him to build on a sure basis and to acquire an





John M. Bradley



accurate and precise knowledge of the law. The bare routine, the mere knowing how to do a thing, did not satisfy him. He must know the theory, the underlying principle of every legal rule, and he delved deep till he found it. With the law relating to real estate, to trusts and matters in equity, with their technicalities and fine distinctions, he was specially familiar. In the drafting of wills and in all matters pertaining to probate law and practice, he was regarded as authority. His clientage included every town in the county. For sound and judicious advice and delicate and intricate business he was sought after. He became an instructor of those who desired to practice in the Probate Courts, and many are they who owe all their knowledge of probate matters to his tuition. His name was frequently mentioned in connection with the judgeship of the Probate Court. The late Judge White, of that court, said of him, "No man was better fitted than Col. Kimball for Judge of Probate." His qualifications for the position were generally recognized, and he probably would have been so appointed if he had urgently pressed his own claim. This his sense of propriety forbade. While his business life covered a period of sixty-three years, during which he never took a vacation, and his professional services were in constant demand he yet found time for other duties. He responded to every call of the church, the parish, the town or larger community. Whatever he did he aimed to do with care and exactness. His standard was of the highest. He allowed no opportunity for mental or moral advancement to escape him. He was of an intense religious nature. As the Constitution was his guide in civil life, so were the Scriptures his guide in moral action. He was true to his convictions, possessed of great moral courage, and when he had once determined upon the right nothing could swerve him from his course of action. He had the confidence of his fellow-men. They felt safe with him.

He was prominent in every public gathering of the citizens of his native town. He presided over their meetings with efficiency, impartiality, ease and dignity. His self-possession never forsook him. He was a natural leader of men.

In temperament he was moderate and cautious. His sense of humor was keen, and in repartee he was always ready.

In disposition he was kindly and sympathetic, generous and liberal in every good cause, and his deeds of charity were numerous and at the same time unostentatious. He loved his family, his home and the town.

In person, he was of large stature, well proportioned, erect figure, commanding presence and dignified bearing.

In the closing years of his life, when the chain of thought was broken, and the affairs of the world which once engaged his attention had become a myth to him, his religious principles had been so

firmly grounded, and his religious observances so habitual, that they remained clear and distinct in his otherwise clouded intellect, and still controlled his thought and action. He went regularly to the sanctuary and to the weekly meetings, and often spoke on religious subjects with intelligence and force. During the last week of his life his constant plea was to "go home," and thither he has gone, leaving behind him a fragrant memory and a shining example of fidelity, integrity and worth.

JOHN MERRILL BRADBURY.

John Merrill Bradbury, born in Newburyport October 29, 1818, was son of Hon. Ebenezer and Mrs. Nancy (Merrill) Bradbury. Major Bradbury, the father, was one of the prominent men of the town for many years, noted for his intelligence, public spirit and genial temper, and for his interest in the public schools of the town. He was frequently entrusted with public office, representing Newburyport in the legislature in various years, from 1828 to 1847, at which time he was chosen speaker of the House of Representatives. In 1845 and 1846 he was a member of the executive council, and in 1849 he was chosen treasurer of the commonwealth, which office he held for two years. In 1853 he was delegate from the town of Newton to the Constitutional Convention, and was later judge of the Municipal Court in the town of Milford, filling all the offices with which he was entrusted with ability, and winning the confidence of all who knew him.

The subject of this sketch was a worthy son of such a father, and it was a family which had been prominent in New England. The earliest immigrant ancestor was Thomas Bradbury, who came to New England in the year 1634 as the agent of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, and after a few years' residence at Agamenticus, now York, Maine, settled in Salisbury, Mass., where he was long prominent in the affairs of the town, county and colony. "His hand-writing, preserved in the colony records, has been admired for clearness, elegance and force, having no superior in our colonial archives. In every generation of his descendants there has been one or more prominent in public office." There are strong reasons for believing that Thomas Bradbury, of Salisbury, was a son of Wymond Bradbury, of Wicken Bonant in Essex, of the same family as Sir Thomas Bradbury, who, in 1500, was mayor of London, and that his mother was a niece of Archbishop Whitgift.

Mr. Bradbury's youth was spent in his native town, where he received a good English and classical education at the public schools, and also at the Dummer Academy in the adjoining town of Newbury, while this institution was under the charge of Nehemiah Cleveland, LL.D., recently deceased. In Newburyport he was, at one time, a pupil of Albert Pike, the poet, lawyer and confederate general, who, in his old age, is a resident of the capital of the country.



One of his earliest schoolmates and most intimate friends was Rev. George Wildes, D.D., who was in the same class in the High School, in the Latin Department of which, under Roger S. Howard, they occupied neighboring desks and formed a life-long friendship, and Dr. Wildes said of his friend that the sight of a mathematical problem was to him an inspiration, that he was well grounded in historical studies and had a love for the English classics.

In April, 1835, in his seventeenth year, Mr. Bradbury entered Dickinson College at Carlisle, Penna., where he studied three years, leaving college in April, 1838, after completing his junior year. On leaving college he visited Philadelphia, but soon returned to his native town, and engaged in teaching for several years.

On the 28th of August, 1843, he was married at Gloucester to Miss Sarah Ann Hayes, daughter of Daniel and Abigail (Sargent) Hayes, a lady of cultivated tastes, who appreciated and encouraged his studies, and made his home pleasant and attractive.

In May, 1849, he went to Boston, and soon after received an appointment to the second clerkship in the State Treasury, and on the resignation of the chief clerk, in December, 1850, he was advanced to fill the vacancy. Very soon after this promotion, he engaged with Messrs. Gilmore, Blake and Ward, bankers, as their accountant, which position he held through various changes of the firm to the summer of the year 1868, when his interest in the house ceased, and he retired with a competent fortune. Mr. Bradbury's tastes and attainments fitted him for the banking business, and he applied himself assiduously to its duties, but during his leisure hours he cultivated his literary tastes, his favorite reading, his history and belles-lettres.

Joseph E. Brown, Esq., of New York, who was in the banking-house with him, wrote the following, which characterizes him in his business:

"Mr. Bradbury's mind was eminently of a mathematical and analytical cast; and in almost every conversation and discussion, whether upon literature, art, science, or religion, the tendency to analyze was constant. Mr. Blake used to say frequently, that Mr. Bradbury understood numbers and figures better than any man he knew; and the facility he displayed in mathematical calculation was surprising. The following incident will illustrate. On one occasion, the State of Massachusetts, being about to issue a new loan, submitted, through the State Treasurer, certain questions, the answers to which involved some very nice calculations. In order to secure accuracy in the matter, Mr. Blake framed the questions to three clerks, Mr. Bradbury, Mr. Harris and myself, and requested that we work out the problems independently. The following morning Mr. Harris and myself appeared each with a formidable bundle of paper containing our calculations. Mr. Bradbury, however, quietly took from his pocket two half-sheets of note paper, on which he had worked out, by the use of logarithms, the problems which had cost his junior clerks quires of paper and the midnight oil. He had frequent recourse to algebraic solutions of problems.

"On one occasion, the examination of a foreign account, embracing many hundred of items, resulted in a discrepancy of just one penny. I think Mr. Bradbury and myself devoted the greater part of ten days to a vain search for the error, so that finally, utterly vexed and out of patience, I threw down the account declaring that I would pursue the matter no further. I remember distinctly the unrolled manner of our friend on taking up the account and saying, 'Joseph, the error is some-

where, and can be found.' He quietly, and I need hardly say successfully, continued the examinations."

In September, 1868, Mr. Bradbury, accompanied by his wife, took passage for Europe. They travelled in England, Scotland, Ireland, France, Italy, the Tyrol, Switzerland, Germany and Belgium. In London they met his friend and correspondent, the late Horatio G. Somerby, Esq., like himself a native of Newburyport, who was of much assistance in directing them to the points of interest to be visited, and in whose society they spent many pleasant evenings during their stay in that city. Soon after Mr. Bradbury's arrival, he obtained, through Mr. Somerby, a reader's ticket at the British Museum, and, at a later period, to the department of Literary Inquiry in the principal registry of Her Majesty's Court of Probate, commonly called Doctors' Commons. After he had become weary with sight-seeing, he spent much time in historical and genealogical research at these two institutions.

While at London he made several excursions into the country, especially to places where his ancestors lived or which had a special interest to Americans,—Boston, in Lincolnshire, and Wicken Bonant, in Essex, where his emigrant ancestor is supposed to have been born.

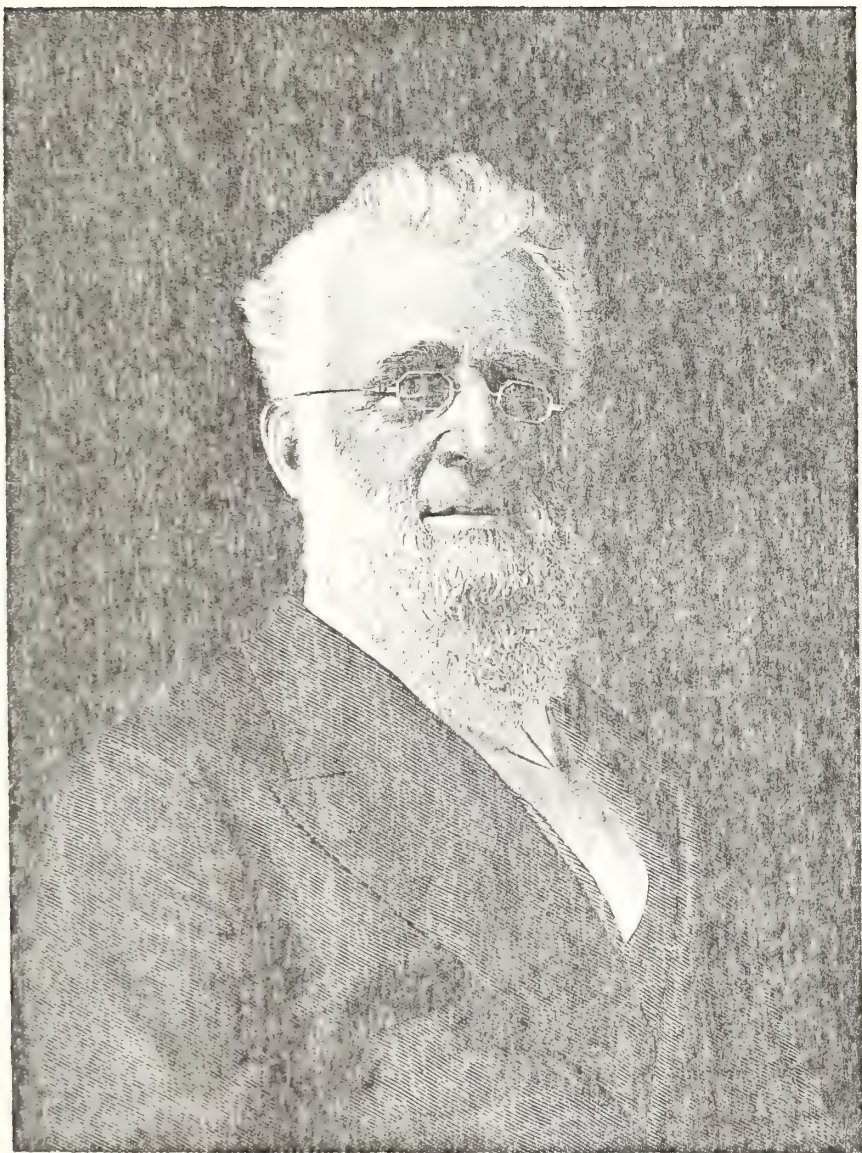
On the 18th of November, 1868, Mr. Bradbury left London, and the same evening arrived in Paris, where he remained till the following spring, and then returned to London. On the 31st of August he again left London on a brief tour. After travelling a few weeks in Ireland and Scotland he returned to England, arriving in York on the 23d of September. As several of the early settlers of Essex County, from whom he had descended, came from Yorkshire, he remained there nearly a week, employing much of his time in genealogical researches. From York he went to Hull, and also visited other places in the country of genealogical interest to an Essex man, and on his way to London he spent one day in Oxford.

The following winter he visited the continent and saw Rome and Naples, and ascended Vesuvius, returning to England in the autumn. In the spring of 1870 a lameness came upon him which at first he did not suppose to be serious, but it was more than the sprain which he considered it, and resulted in the necessity of amputating his foot.

He returned to this country in July, 1871, and resided in Boston till the next spring, when he purchased an estate in Ipswich, where he resided till his death. His residence was near the summit of Town Hill, from which the fine view is obtained, which his friend, the Rev. Mr. Nason, paints in such vivid colors. Here he died on Tuesday morning, March 21, 1876, in his fifty-eighth year, leaving a widow but no children.

In his will he left one thousand dollars to his native city, for the benefit of its public library, and two thousand dollars and certain stock securities to the





Yours Truly
R. S. Rust.



New England Historic Genealogical Society. Both these bequests have been funded and named "The Bradbury Fund."

Mr. Bradbury was admitted a resident member of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, April 11, 1853, and in 1863 he made himself a life-member. From 1863 to 1867 he served on the committee on finance, and from 1867 to 1870 was one of the board of directors. In 1860 his eminent fitness for the position induced the nominating committee to tender him the office of treasurer, and he took the matter into consideration, but finally decided that he would not have the requisite leisure to perform the duties of the office. He was also a member of the Prince Society of Boston, and the Essex Institute of Salem.

Mr. Bradbury published "The Bennet Family of Ipswich," and "The Whitgift-Bradbury Family," "A Memoir of Horatio Gates Somerby," and a number of shorter articles in the *Historical and Genealogical Register*. No better summing up of the character and tastes of Mr. Bradbury can be given than that of his friend, Charles W. Tuttle, Esq., who has himself since died, and who was a man of rare discrimination though ardent in his friendships. Mr. Tuttle says:

"I became acquainted with the late Mr. Bradbury while I was living in Newburyport about twenty years ago. His intelligence, frankness, and gentlemanly attributes attracted me to him at once; and I saw much of him after I came to Boston, where he was then living.

"While he was familiar with a wide range of subjects, being a constant reader, there were two on which he most frequently discoursed with me. Of astronomy he had considerable knowledge, having been drawn to that science by his early fondness for mathematics. He watched its progress with more than ordinary interest, and was acquainted with the names and discoveries of the great observers throughout the world.

"But his chief delight and interest were in the history and antiquities of New England. He had a keen relish for antiquarian research, and never lost an opportunity to add to his stock of this kind of information. He was as familiar as one could well be with the local history of both banks of the Merrimack River where the early settlements were made. His ancestors for six or seven generations had lived and died there, and he knew the history of each generation with marvellous accuracy and fullness. He had gathered local traditions and examined old records, until he was master of the history and genealogy of almost every one of the old families between Haverhill and Plum Island.

"In these researches he was careful and exact beyond any one I ever knew. A result was carefully weighed, and only the highest degree of probable evidence would satisfy him of its being true. This fastidiousness, the consequence of mathematical training, prevented his quickly arriving at results satisfactory to him, and giving to the world many things he had undertaken. A retentive and exact memory greatly facilitated his investigations.

"While in England and suffering from severe lameness, he found time to write several letters giving me information which he had copied from ancient records of persons of my surname who had died there in the fore part of the seventeenth century, and telling me of his wanderings in that merry land. These letters show how ardently he was pursuing his inquiries, and how thoroughly he was enjoying his rambles among the venerable antiquities of England, especially any connected with our New England forefathers.

"Mr. Bradbury was a man of large practical common sense. There was no petty jealousy in his composition. He was serene under all circumstances. He loved peace and minded his own affairs. I remember, with mingled feelings of pleasure and sadness, how cheerful and happy he was in his pleasant home in Boston where he always was

when not at his office; how he made every one welcome there, and how like a benediction his politeness and hospitality were. I am sure all who had the pleasure of his acquaintance revere his memory."

RICHARD SUTTON RUST, A.M., D.D., LL.D.¹

Mr. Rust is one of the most energetic, enthusiastic and successful ministers of the Methodist Episcopal Church; and in the varied official positions to which he has been called has rendered valuable service and exhibited rare executive ability in the administration of affairs intrusted to his care. He was born in Ipswich, Mass., September 12, 1815. His mother, from whom he inherited many of his traits of character, was a woman of deep piety and superior attainments, the daughter of Richard Sutton, distinguished among his townsmen for integrity, independence and intelligence. He was left an orphan, his father dying when he was eight years old, and his mother when he was ten, leaving him no patrimony but a parentage spotless and revered. One of his uncles, residing in Portsmouth, N. H., gave him a year's schooling, where he first formed a taste for study, which never forsook him. Another uncle gave him a home till he was fourteen, during which time he was compelled to work hard upon a farm, with only three months' schooling each winter. He was then apprenticed to learn a cabinet-maker's trade, and at the end of three years, yearning for school and more congenial pursuits, purchased the balance of the apprenticeship, and entered Phillips' Academy, Andover, Mass., to prepare for college.

While at Andover, the distinguished abolition lecturer, George Thompson, of England, visited Phillips' Academy and lectured to the students on slavery. With his wonderful eloquence, wit and logic the students were charmed, and a large number of them became abolitionists and formed an anti-slavery society. The teachers were displeased at this action, and required the students to leave the anti-slavery society or the academy. Nearly one hundred of them, rather than to give up their principles and rights, left the school; some went into the anti-slavery field as lecturers, and others to institutions where freedom of thought and speech could be enjoyed. Young Rust, with several others, went to C. Maan, N. H., where an academy had been established upon liberal principles, and where young men and women of color were allowed to enter and enjoy the advantages of culture. So bitter was the opposition to this school, because it extended its privileges alike to all without distinction of color, that the mandate went forth that it must be broken up, and the farmers in the vicinity, with a hundred yokes of oxen, drew the academy more than a mile out of town into the woods and broke up the school!

Our young friend finished his preparatory studies at the Wilbraham Academy, and in 1837 entered the

¹ From the Ohio Encyclopædia.

Wesleyan University, Middletown, Conn., where he was graduated in 1841, and received the degree of Master of Arts in 1844. In 1859 he received the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity from the Wesleyan University at Delaware, Ohio. While in college he paid his expenses by teaching and lecturing winters. He was one of the first anti-slavery lecturers in Connecticut, and in New Haven County was mobbed repeatedly while delivering lectures against slavery. He aided the ladies in organizing the First Anti-Slavery Fair at Hartford, Conn., and published for that occasion "Freedom's Gift," an annual of anti-slavery poems and prose. The great anti-slavery struggle reached its height as he came to his manhood, and he did valiant service in the good cause, and was a pioneer in the Methodist Episcopal Church in this grand conflict. In 1842 he was principal of Ellington School, Connecticut; in 1843, principal of Middletown High School. In 1844 he joined the New England Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and was stationed at Springfield, Mass.; in 1846 he was stationed at Worcester, Mass.

During the next five years Mr. Rust passed through one of the most interesting periods of his life. He originated and published the "American Pulpit," was transferred to the New Hampshire Conference, was principal of the New Hampshire Conference Seminary and Female College, and was elected State Commissioner of Common Schools for New Hampshire for three years. He delivered popular lectures on education all over the State, awakened the deepest interest in the schools, assailed with wit, sarcasm and invectives the miserable old school-houses, and did a grand work in introducing into New Hampshire good school-houses, teachers' institutes and an improved system of common-school education.

In 1859 Dr. Rust was transferred from the scenes of his early struggles and triumphs to the Cincinnati Conference. The name and character of the man preceded him in the West, and he was at once welcomed to active service in the leading enterprises of the church. He was four years president of the Wilberforce University, at Xenia, Ohio, after which he became pastor of Morris Chapel, Cincinnati, where he was elected president of the Wesleyan Female College, Cincinnati, where he remained until the old college was sold and vacated, and the school was suspended until the new college could be erected. He was corresponding secretary of the Western Freedmen's Aid Commission, and in connection with Bishops Clark and Walden, aided in the organization of the Freedmen's Aid Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and for the last twenty years has been its corresponding secretary, and has discharged its duties with such marked efficiency and ability as to meet the highest commendation of the whole church. The society under the administration of

Dr. Rust, has established and sustained in central locations in the South thirty institutions of learning, styled seminaries, colleges or universities, for the training of teachers and preachers for the elevation of this long-neglected race, so lately admitted to all the rights and duties of American citizens. For the successful management of this important educational work, the subject of this sketch, by his deep, long, life interest in this people, his attainments as a scholar, his previous experience as an educator and shrewd business habits, was pre-eminently fitted, and the results achieved by this society have exceeded the highest anticipations of its friends.

Dr. Rust was successful as a pastor, a fine writer and an impressive preacher; pre-eminent as an educator, possessing great power over the young of awakening them to high and noble purpose; and there are but few men in this country who have aided in educating so many of her youth who now fill important positions in society and wield so great influence for Christ and the right. In his boyhood he espoused the cause of the slave, labored for his emancipation, and his mature life, attainments and ample means are consecrated to the preparation of this emancipated people for the appropriate discharge of the important duties imposed upon them by freedom, so that liberty may prove a blessing rather than a curse to them. As a Christian philanthropist, he has done his noblest work, and for this by a grateful people he will be held in remembrance.

The society is now, under the supervision of Dr. Rust, establishing a system of schools for the benefit of whites similar to what it has done for the colored people. Little Rock and Chattanooga Universities and ten seminaries as feeders have been established and superintended by the Freedmen's Aid Society, and the venerable Dr. Rust still remains as the efficient administrator of its affairs.

COL. YORICK G. HURD, M.D.

Col. Hurd was the eldest son of Col. Smith and Melitable (Emerson) Hurd, and was born in Lempster, Sullivan County, N. H., February 17, 1827.

In the early days of the settlement of the town of Lempster, Uzzel (or "Squire," as he was best known) and his brother, Shubael Hurd, made settlement.

Shubael and his wife coming on horseback from Connecticut to the farm, which is still retained in the family. He was the first deacon of the First Congregational Church, organized November 13, 1781, and was widely known as "Deacon Hurd."

As a fruit of the second marriage of Deacon Hurd with Mrs. Smith (*nee* Ames, and one of the Fisher Ames family), two sons were born, viz: Smith and Justus (physician).

The former husband of Mrs. Hurd was Robert Smith, of Peterboro, N. H. (a brother of Judge Jeremiah Smith), to whom were born three sons, viz: Robert, Stephen and Jesse (physician) Smith.





W. G. Hardy



Col. Smith Hurd, son of Shubael, was born in Lempster, N. H., in 1804, and married Mehitabel Emerson.

Col. Hurd died in March, 1877, but his wife is still living, at the age of eighty-three and in the enjoyment of good health.

Col. Smith Hurd was very prominent in town affairs, holding various offices of trust and responsibility with marked fidelity. He was captain of a Volunteer Rifle Company, which had quite a local reputation, and he was subsequently colonel of the Twenty-seventh Regiment, New Hampshire Militia.

Yorick G. Hurd, M.D., the eldest son of Col. Smith and Mehitabel (Emerson) Hurd, was eminently a self-made man, having in early life attended the District School, when three months of winter teaching was made to suffice for the year.

After one fall term at the academy, at the age of seventeen he commenced school teaching, working upon the farm when not engaged in study.

One term he attended the Hancock Literary and Scientific Institution, and was then employed as a teacher at Dublin, N. H., where he attracted the attention of that ripe scholar, Rev. L. W. Leonard, D.D., who invited him to his residence for study and rendered him every possible assistance.

By the advice of Dr. Leonard Mr. Hurd commenced the study of medicine with Dr. Albert Smith, of Peterboro, N. H., professor of Materia Medica and Therapeutics in Dartmouth College March, 1850, teaching the public Grammar School in the winter and the Pine Grove Academy in the spring and autumn for three years, attending one course of Medical Lectures at Woodstock, Vt., and two courses at Dartmouth, graduating November, 1853, proceeding immediately to Amesbury, Essex County, Mass., where he commenced the practice of medicine, soon securing a large and remunerative practice.

During his long residence here he was for several years a member of the school committee, and by his constant and untiring efforts materially aided in the establishment of the present high state of efficiency and success of the public schools of the town.

On the breaking out of the Civil War the military spirit, inherited from his father, caused him to enter fully into the spirit of the North, and in September, 1862, he was appointed post surgeon at Camp Lander, Wenham, Mass., and in December 8th following, was appointed surgeon of the Forty-eighth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, following its fortunes to New Orleans, where he was assigned to the First Brigade, First Division of the Nineteenth Army Corps, where he remained until June 20, 1863, when by order of Gen. Auger, commanding the First Division, he was detached and sent to Baton Rouge, La., in charge of the division hospitals, and sick and wounded officers in quarters about Baton Rouge.

Returning home with the regiment at the expiration of its term of service, Dr. Hurd was reported to Sur-

geon General Dale, of this State, as being the best regimental surgeon in the division; certain it is that his regiment had the smallest sick-list and the fewest deaths from disease of any in the corps to which it was attached.

The practice of his profession was resumed immediately on his return from the service of his country, and the various and responsible official positions to which he was successively chosen, attest to the high esteem in which he was held by the community.

In 1865 and again in 1866 he was chosen a member of the Massachusetts Senate, and in January, 1866, while a member of the Senate, was appointed superintendent of the Essex County House of Correction and Insane Asylum at Ipswich.

Immediately upon the assumption of the duties of the responsible position of superintendent of the house of correction he instituted such reforms in its management as secured a state of quiet and good order among those placed in his charge as had never been known in the previous history of the institution, which by his even-tempered management he was able to preserve so long as the institution was under his supervision.

His management of the insane soon attracted attention, and for many years he was the consulting authority in all parts of the country, and was often called in the courts as an expert in insane cases.

Dr. Hurd continued in the position of superintendent of these institutions until January, 1887, resigning his charge at the close of a service of twenty-one years.

In 1867 he was appointed medical director of Division Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, with the rank of colonel on the staff of Major General Benjamin F. Butler, serving in that capacity eight years.

In 1877 Bowdoin College conferred upon him the honorary degree of A. M.

In April, 1874, he was appointed a member of the board of trustees of the "Manning School Fund," and on the decease of its president, Otis Kimball, Esq. in 1878, he was chosen his successor, a position which he still retains.

A gentleman whose knowledge of the care of this fund is not to be questioned says of Dr. Hurd: "Dr. Hurd brought to the councils of the board rare advisory and executive abilities, and has ever since discharged the duties of his trust with intelligence and fidelity. Having in early years been a successful teacher, he has by his experience and by his friendly advice and co-operation, stimulated and encouraged the teachers, contributing thereby very largely to the success and usefulness of the school."

In 1879 he was appointed by his excellency, Governor Long, as medical examiner for the Second Essex District, resigning in 1883.

He is at the present time a trustee of the Ipswich Savings Bank and a director of the Ipswich Gas-Light Company—offices which he has held since the date of the charter of these corporations.



Dr. Hurd was married to Mary Ann Twitchell, of Lempster, N. H., May 17, 1853, who died October 8, 1858. He was married again November 5, 1861, to Ruth Ann Brown, of Salisbury, Mass. They have no children as the result of marriage, but adopted one who has since married H. K. Dodge, of the firm of Dodge & Spiller, of Ipswich.

WILLIAM G. BROWN.

Says an old philosopher: "All men, whatever their condition, who have done anything of value, ought to record the history of their lives." Eventful periods occur at rare intervals in the lives of men the most distinguished, but even in their more retired walks of private life, there are few whose lives are not marked by some vicissitudes of fortune, which, however trivial they may seem, are yet sufficient to excite great interest. The events which give the highest interest to biography are of a volatile and evanescent nature, and are soon forgotten. It is the part of the biographer to collect these passing events and fix them indelibly on the page of history, that succeeding generations may know how their predecessors lived, what ideas governed them, what trials and difficulties they encountered, and how they overcame them, and even their domestic relations; for all these teach a lesson that will be serviceable, by pointing out what paths lead to success and what roads are to be avoided as leading to failure. There is none so humble that his life can fail to be an object of interest when viewed in the right light. How much more will this interest be enhanced when we contemplate the life of a man who, by his own heroic struggles, has hewn out his own pathway to success, and compelled the fates to grant him his reward. Most certainly one, who, entirely by his own efforts, has attained affluence and social position, and through all the changing events of life has preserved his integrity unimpaired, is well deserving of the pen of the historian.

William Gray Brown, son of Jacob and Frances Charles Brown, was born in Ipswich, January 27, 1830. His parents were both born in Ossipee, N. H., from which place they came to Ipswich, and made a permanent home. They had six children, four sons and two daughters. Three died in early childhood. One daughter, Mary F., a young girl of lovely disposition and of bright promise, died in 1846 at the age of fifteen years.

Jacob Franklin, the eldest, was educated in the public schools of Ipswich, and graduated at the State Normal School at Bridgewater, Mass. He had thus fitted himself to be an instructor of youth, and devoted his whole after-life to that vocation. He wrought well in this his chosen profession. His knowledge was exact, his discipline strict, his mode of imparting instruction clear and precise, and he soon gained a reputation which placed him in the front rank of able instructors. For a long series of years

he taught in Salem, Mass., and just prior to his decease, April 26, 1877, he was head master of the Brown School in that city.

Jacob Brown, the father, was a farmer, and in addition to his farming did considerable teaming about the village. William G. lived with him and worked for him, when not at school, and at an early age learned the need of industry and frugality, a lesson which he never forgot in after life. His educational privileges were limited to the schools of his native town, but in them he became thoroughly grounded in the elementary principles of a good English education.

In his fifteenth year he left school, and from that time till the present he has been hard at work, either for his father or for himself. At the time the first church was erected, in 1846, William G. Brown, then a mere youth, volunteered to assist in the work, and to him was assigned the duty of drawing the lumber from Salem, and for six consecutive days he drew from that city to Ipswich an enormous load each day, helping to load and unload, and taking the sole care of his horses.

"I well remember," said the subject of this sketch, "the first money I ever earned. It was ten cents paid me by Mr. James Fuller, for drawing home his grist from mill, when I was nine years old. The next was thirty cents earned in planting." These sums were not spent for notions, so dear to the boyish heart, but were deposited on interest, and have never been disturbed. To this principle of economy and the habit of saving and making money may be attributed much of his subsequent success. Hard work, prudence and foresight were the foundation-stones upon which he reared the superstructure of a successful business career. At the age of eleven years he commenced the sale of pastry, made by his mother, to the passengers on the trains that stopped near his father's house for water. One-half the money he gave to his mother, the other half was carefully saved and put away. At the age of eighteen his father gave him "his time," and he began life on his own account, supporting himself and every year adding something to his store. With some of the money he had earned in his various youthful business ventures he purchased a pair of horses and commenced, in a small way, the business of teaming and the letting of horses.

With a steadfast resolution not to go beyond his means, he worked until the increase of his business obliged him to add to his facilities, by purchasing more horses and by employing men to do what he himself could not do. His father was a pioneer in the ice business, and among the first who brought coal (Anthracite) into Ipswich. Both the ice business and coal business were then small, the markets being limited.

For many years he was the sole dealer in ice and coal. Jacob Brown died in 1863, and his son William G. succeeded to the business, and since that time he





Wm. B. Brown





David J. Purley





Nathaniel Shatswell



has constantly and continuously increased it. By close application to the principles laid down and the habits formed in early life, by constant and untiring labor, and by prompt attention to the necessities of the hour, he has established the most varied and the most extensive business in his native town. He deals in ice, cutting and storing annually about four thousand tons. He deals extensively in coal, handling from six to seven thousand tons every year, most of which is sold at retail. He still retains the farm where his father lived and where he was born, and carries it on. He is the owner of the "Agawam House," a famous Ipswich hostelry. This house he has thoroughly repaired, renovated and enlarged, so that to-day it is an ornament to the town and a convenient and agreeable stopping-place for its guests.

At the stable in the rear of this house he conducts an extensive livery business. He employs many men in his various business operations. He is a large owner of real estate which brings him a good rental every month, and is the largest individual tax-payer in the town. By steady application, prompt decision, sound judgment, and carefully looking after everything personally, he has made all his business ventures profitable. He married Elizabeth M. Cogswell, daughter of Ebenezer and Elizabeth B., January 12, 1853.

Mrs. Brown proved a true help-meet to her husband. She is a bright clear-headed woman. Possessing both business tact and energy, she has ably assisted her husband by her advice and counsel, and with a capacity for business possessed by few women, she has made herself familiar with the immense business of her husband, and thus has been able to advise him intelligently. She is a woman of intellect, taste and judgment, she is vivacious and sociable, fond of her home, and a capital manager of her household.

William G. Brown has a generous, charitable disposition, free from every miserly taint. His hand is ever ready, and his purse ever open to assist and aid any one in suffering or want. He is never a harsh creditor, but always ready to extend to the deserving all possible leniency. His manners are kind and affable. He has never sought or accepted any official position, although repeatedly urged so to do by his fellow-townsmen, preferring to give his whole time to the interests of his constantly increasing business.

He enjoys the confidence and respect of the community in which he dwells, and is recognized as a representative business man and a prominent factor in the growth and prosperity of his native town.

DAVID TULLAR PERLEY.

David Tullar Perley¹ was born in Linebrook Parish in Ipswich, January 17, 1824. He is of Puritan stock and a descendant in the seventh generation from Allan Perley, who came from London in the

ship "Planter," and settled in Ipswich in 1635, where he died in 1675, aged sixty-five years. His youngest son Timothy, born 1653 and died 1719, married Dorothy ———, by whom he had Patience, born March 28, 1682; Stephen, born June 15, 1684; Allan, born March 1, 1688; and Joseph, born June 3, 1695.

Stephen died 1725, leaving a son Allan, born 1718, who died 1804, leaving a son Allan, born 1763, who died 1843. He left a son Abraham, born 1793, who died 1861, who was the father of David, the subject of this sketch.

Abraham Perley was a farmer and dealer in cattle. He lived in Linebrook Parish, where he owned a large farm, and carried on an extensive business. David was educated in the public schools and at Topsfield and Dummer Academies. He succeeded to his father's business, and owns the largest and best conducted farms in the western part of the town.

He married first Sophronia O. Plummer, of Newbury, June 12, 1851, by whom he had one child, Oscar Wentworth, born March 3, 1853, who now resides in Lincoln, Nebraska. Mr. Perley's first wife died March 14, 1853. His second wife was Abigail Kent Stevens, of West Newbury, whom he married May 16, 1861. They had three children, namely:

David Sidney, born February 21, 1862. He married Annie L. Hart, of Ipswich, February 21, 1887, and resides on the old homestead with his father.

Roscoe Damon, born August 11, 1864. He fitted for college at the Ipswich High School and Dummer Academy, and entered Dartmouth College at the fall term, 1887.

Carrie S., born October 18, 1865. She graduated from the Ipswich High School in the class of 1885.

The mother of these children died June 19, 1879, aged fifty-three years. He married Lizzie, daughter of Nathaniel H. Lavalette, of Ipswich, October 18, 1880, by whom he has had three children, viz: Chester G., born November 13, 1881; Mabel A., born August 19, 1883; Bertha C., born December 18, 1886.

Mr. Perley has never sought or held any public office, but has devoted himself entirely to his business and has been very successful, both as a farmer and dealer in cattle.

COLONEL NATHANIEL SHATSWELL.

Colonel Nathaniel Shatswell was born in Ipswich, Essex County, Mass., November 26, 1834. He was the son of John Shatswell and Anne Shatswell nee Lord. The name of his grandfather was Moses Shatswell, that of his grandmother Sarah Lord. His ancestors came from England in 1634, settling in Ipswich on High Street, building the old homestead, still owned by him. Here they have always lived, a sturdy race of thrifty farmers distinguished for their pluck and indomitable energy. All seem to have been imbued with a military spirit and each generation furnished its soldier. In all the campaigns and wars which the earlier settlers waged against the In-

¹ By C. A. Sayward.



dians the name of Shatswell appears among the troops. The great-grandfather of Colonel Shatswell served with distinction in the American army during the Revolution. John Shatswell, his father, was captain of the Ipswich troop, a cavalry company attached to General Low's brigade of the militia of Essex County. The early life of Colonel Shatswell was passed on his father's farm, and did not differ from that of every farmer's son—working on the farm in the summer, attending school in the winter. He received the rudiments of his education at home under the instruction of his mother and afterwards was sent to "the old Pudding Street School" under the famous master, Jonathan Pressey. Subsequently, he attended the Latin grammar school. Leaving school, he remained with his father at work on the farm until the spring of 1855, when becoming a little tired of farming life and with the resistless curiosity of an energetic young man, wishing to see something of the world beyond the limits of his native village, he went to East Boston to live. Here he found employment in a planing-mill and remained two years. The old Shatswell military spirit began to stir within him, and in December, 1855, he joined the old Boston Fusiliers and continued his membership with this company until the breaking out of the War of the Rebellion. In the spring of 1857 he returned to Ipswich and since that time has resided, with the exception of the years spent in the service of the United States, at the old homestead on High Street. During the lifetime of his father he assisted him in the management of the farm and since his decease has had the exclusive control of it. When in April, 1861, news came that Sumter had been fired upon and war began the great tidal wave of patriotism that swept over the country reached Ipswich, and the historic old town not unmindful of her ancient renown at once proceeded to enlist and organize a company. Nathaniel Shatswell was one of the first to enlist and was chosen first lieutenant and commissioned May 14, 1861, by Governor John A. Andrew. June 24th the company left Ipswich for Fort Warren, Boston Harbor, to join the Fourteenth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry. On July 5th the company was mustered into the service of the United States, and Lieutenant Shatswell was commissioned captain. The regiment remained at Fort Warren, drilling and learning the duties of a soldier, until August 4, 1861, when it was transferred to Washington, and went into camp at Kalorama. On the 12th of August the regiment was ordered to Fort Albany, across Long Bridge on the south side of the Potomac. Here it remained two years, doing duty in the fortifications around Washington, and guarding Long Bridge and other bridges across the Potomac. January 1, 1862, the regiment, by orders from the War Department, was changed from an infantry to a heavy artillery regiment, two additional companies were enlisted and the regiment was recruited to its maximum strength

and was known as the First Regiment Massachusetts Heavy Artillery. In August, 1862, when General Banks was retreating down the Shenandoah Valley the regiment was hurried to the front and at Fairfax Court-House, Va., met the Union army in full retreat. Captain Shatswell led the advance. Halting his men across the turnpike he afforded an opportunity for the tired Union troops to reform in his rear and boldly charging with his own men he checked the advance of the enemy, and after a sharp skirmish saved a battery from capture which becoming demoralized early in the day, deserted their guns as soon as halted by the skirmish line. As a reward for these services the guns were assigned to the companies under the command of Captain Shatswell. Captain Shatswell was commissioned major December 31, 1862, and for the next year he was with his regiment continuously, building roads, guarding bridges, doing picket duty, drilling and exercising his men and making it one of the best disciplined and drilled regiments in the army. Returning to the fortifications around Washington Major Shatswell remained until May 15, 1864, when the regiment was ordered to the front, and started at once from Alexandria, Va., for Belle Plain with its full complement of twelve companies and each company with full ranks, marching from Belle Plain by way of Fredericksburg, May 18, 1864, it reported to General Meade near Spotsylvania. General Meade assigned the regiment to General R. O. Tyler's division of heavy artillery, placing its Colonel, Thomas R. Fannalt, in command of the brigade. May 19th the brigade while supporting a battery on the extreme right of the Union lines was exposed to a terrible fire from the rebel troops. Leading the advance Major Shatswell's regiment was engaged with Rhode's division of General Ewell's Corps. At the first fire the senior major of the regiment was killed and the command devolved upon Major Shatswell who, from that time till the close of the war, commanded the regiment. All through the terrible fight of that day Major Shatswell held the enemy in check until they were finally repulsed, and the supply train of General Grant, which was the objective point of General Ewell, was saved. In this engagement the regiment lost ninety-one killed and three hundred and four wounded. Major Shatswell was severely wounded in the head by a minnie ball which partially stunned him. He was taken to the rear, and his wound was dressed. Recovering consciousness he returned to the command of his regiment and remained until the retreat of the rebels at dark gave him an opportunity for rest. On the 2d and 3d of June, the major was engaged at Cold Harbor, successfully repelling five attacks made by the rebels on the regimental line of breast-works.

Crossing the James River on June 14th, Major Shatswell arrived at Petersburg in time to engage in the night attack on the rebel works June 16th;



during this engagement his sword was shot away from his side. On June 18th, the major was ordered to charge the rebel lines in front of him. Driving in their picket-line he charged with his whole regiment, the enemy drawn up behind a sunken road, and succeeded in driving them from their position. While leading this charge Major Shatswell was struck in the side by a minnie ball, which prostrated him to the ground. Quickly regaining his horse, he continued to lead his men. After the enemy had been driven from his position the major examined his side and discovered what a narrow escape he had had. He found in the pocket of his blouse a small book filled with papers and orders through which the ball had penetrated, lodging in the cover of the book against his side. The colonel has the book, papers and ball now in his possession. June 22d, while division officer of the day he was ordered to examine carefully the ground in front of his lines and ascertain if it was practicable to advance the picket line. He reported that it was practicable to advance a short distance. Receiving orders to advance five hundred yards he endeavored to carry out the orders. While doing this the rebels attacked his flank with three lines in *echelon* and drove him back. Many of his men were captured and he himself was only saved by the cover of a friendly thicket. At one time the rebel line passed all around him and he was nearly certain of being captured. Keeping closely under cover he remained concealed from nine o'clock in the morning until dark, when he succeeded in gaining the Union lines.

July 27th, the major led an attack at Deep Bottom, charging across an open field and relieving a battery. August 15th and 16th he was engaged in another battle at Deep Bottom. August 25th he was fighting on the Weldon Railroad. From that time till October he was in fort Alec Hays in front of Petersburg. He was at the battle of Poplar Spring Church, October 2d, in which his regiment lost heavily in killed and wounded. The battle at Boydton Plank Road, October 27th, was one of the most desperate of all the battles in which the colonel was engaged. The whole corps was cut off from the rest of the army, and so near were the combatants to each other that each side alternately drew men through the fence that separated the two opposing forces, and made prisoners of them. In this battle the colonel performed one of the most difficult tactical movements which is ever attempted, and then only under the pressure of dire necessity, that is, to change front in line of battle while under fire. The colonel with keen military sagacity seized just the right moment to issue the necessary orders, which were promptly executed, and the movement was a success, the rebel assault repulsed and the day won. Until the middle of December the colonel, with his regiment, was in the field continuously and constantly under fire. January 27, 1865, Major Shatswell was commissioned

lieutenant-colonel and the next day received his commission as colonel.

In January, in consequence of a cold, contracted in a raid on the Weldon Railroad, which brought on a serious attack of rheumatism, Colonel Shatswell was granted leave of absence for sixty days, and came to Ipswich. He again reported for duty March, 5, 1865, and never left the regiment again until the expiration of its term of service. The rebels charged the Union lines for the last time March 25th. After that, until the surrender of General Lee at Appomatox, Colonel Shatswell was engaged in one continuous skirmish, closely following the retreating forces of General Lee, and was present when that general surrendered. Major Shatswell was breveted lieutenant-colonel and colonel for meritorious conduct on the field. Colonel Shatswell was mustered out, with his regiment, at Washington, August 16, 1865, and soon after returned to Ipswich, where he immediately resumed the occupation of farming. In April, 1869, Colonel Shatswell was appointed assistant superintendent of insane at the county institution, situated in Ipswich, and continues to hold that position at the present time.

In 1883 he was elected a member of the board of selectmen for the town of Ipswich and re-elected in 1884 and 1885. Colonel Shatswell is a member of John T. Heard Lodge, of F. & A. M., of which lodge he was W. M. five years. He is also a member of Washington Royal Arch Chapter and Winslow Lewis Commandery of Knight Templars, of Salem. He is an active member of General James Appleton Post G. A. R. Colonel Shatswell was married, June 15, 1861, to Mary White Stone, and has two daughters, Fannie W. and Annis L. Shatswell. Colonel Shatswell is a man of indomitable will, cool, firm and with a wonderful power of commanding men.

With steady courage, undismayed by repulse or defeat, under fire he never faltered, but was as calm and undisturbed as on dress parade. He carried the same characteristics into civil life. In the administration of affairs of the town and in his position as assistant superintendent of the county insane he was and is an able executive officer, far-seeing, skillful and well versed in the requirements of his position. Steady in his private attachments, his affection is warm and sincere; open and social in his temper, his generosity is limited only by his means; with a lively and delicate sense of honor, neither public trust or private interest was ever betrayed by him. Intellectually strong and vigorous, he weighs carefully every matter, and is firm and tenacious in his opinions without obstinacy. He was a brilliant soldier, and he is an exemplary private citizen. Modest, quiet and unassuming in his demeanor, he has shown himself capable and efficient in every position he has been called upon to fill. In politics he is a staunch Republican without being a bitter partisan. In stature the colonel is rising six feet, his frame of

body is remarkably robust, and his physical strength fully developed.

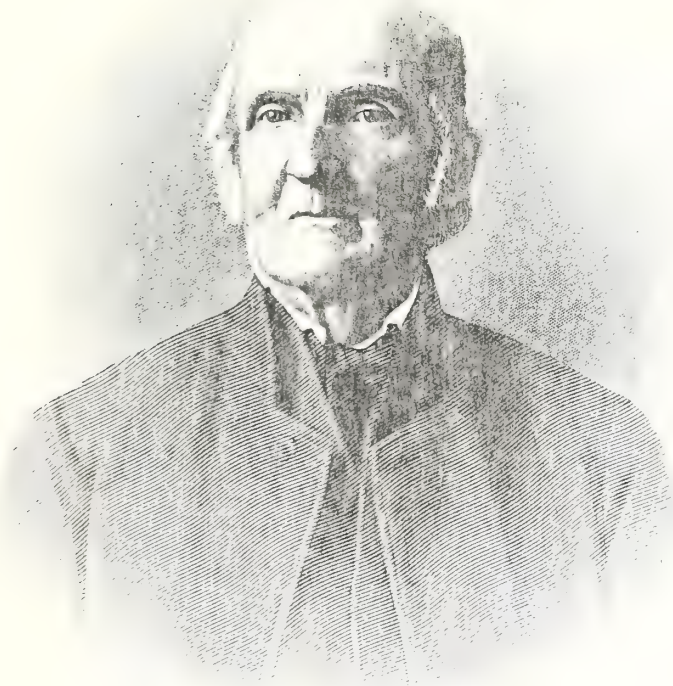
JAMES PEATFIELD.

James Peatfield was born in 1804, at Arnold, a small town three miles from Nottingham, England. He was the son of Joseph Peatfield, a man somewhat remarkable in his day. He was a bleacher by occupation, and carried on an extensive bleachery works at Arnold, doing work for the Nottingham spinners. Afterwards he came to the United States and was one of the first to engage in buying coal lands in Pennsylvania, having firm faith in the enormous coal-fields that were just then beginning to attract the attention of miners and capitalists. Mr. Peatfield did not live to realize the full extent of the immense resources of the Pennsylvania mines, or to see this gigantic industry assume the controlling interest in the United States. He did acquire a competency by his mining operations, and died at a ripe old age in St. Clair, Pennsylvania, where his remains now lie buried. Joseph Peatfield married Jane Spenser. She bore him five children,—James the subject of this sketch. Mary afterwards married to Jabez Mann, Sandford, Joseph and John, all of whom came to the United States and settled at Ipswich. James Peatfield secured his early education at home, under his mother, and afterwards in the schools at Bulwell and Three Knights Bridge.

Playing as a boy or helping in his father's bleachery he early became familiar with machinery, and readily understood the principles which govern its construction. He, when a mere youth, showed a strong predilection for mathematics, and even to this day has a strong love for them. He was bound as an apprentice to John Atherly, of Arnold, with whom he remained until his "coming of age," and thoroughly learned the building of lace and woolen machinery. In July, 1827, he came to the United States, landing in New York city. That same month he journeyed to Ipswich, where he took up his residence, and has remained in this town ever since his first arrival. At this time the manufacture of lace was receiving much attention in this country, and at Ipswich were two factories wherein lace was manufactured, one situated on Hight Street and owned by the late Dr. Thomas Manning, and is the present mansion-house of Joseph Ross, Esq.; the other was situated on what is now known as County Street, and is now used by S. F. Canney as a factory for the manufacture of boxes and as a planing mill. This latter was owned and operated by the Heards. When James Peatfield came to Ipswich he at once entered the employ of the Heards, as machinist. He found the machinery then in use old and imperfect. All the machines had been brought from England and had been in use for a long time. Mr. Peatfield immediately went to work to repair these machines and to make improvements, and finally built a new machine, which was one of the

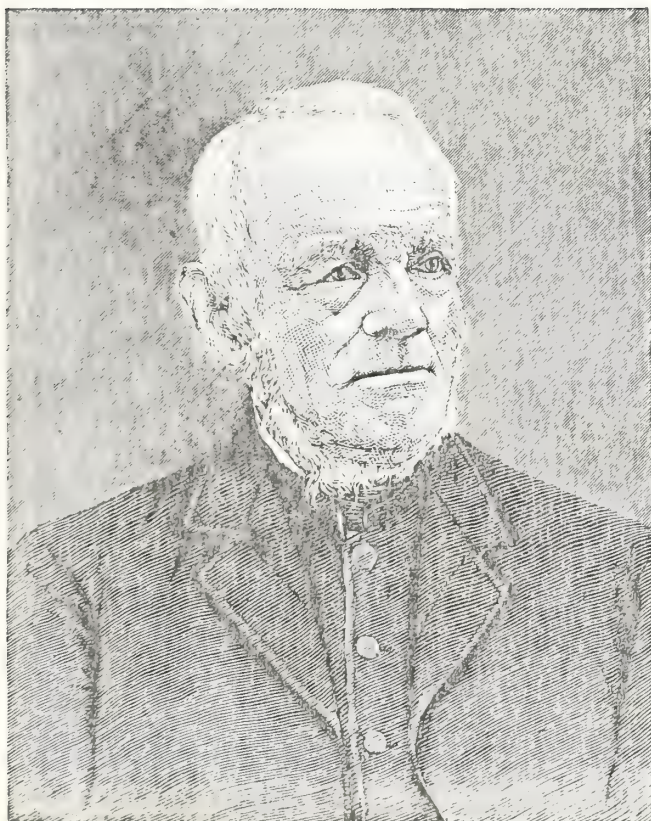
first lace machines made in this country. This machine did the work so much better than the old machine, and with a large increase in its productive power that the business rapidly increased and bid fair to become one of the leading industries of the country. Afterwards a heavy tariff was laid on the raw material out of which the lace was manufactured, and this industry began to languish and at length died out entirely. Mr. Peatfield then turned his attention to other fields of manufactures, and in 1839 he invented and built a warp machine, and began the manufacture of woolen underclothing. This was the beginning of that immense business, the manufacture of woollens, which at the present time gives employment to many thousands of workmen and millions of capital, and to James Peatfield belongs the honor of being the first person to manufacture woolen underclothing in the United States. The goods were manufactured in the lace factory of the Heards', the lace machinery was removed and warp machines put in their place. The Ipswich River afforded ample water power to run the machinery, and the business was very successful. A ready sale was found for all the goods that could be manufactured. This mill continued to make woolen goods under the management of James Peatfield until the Heards moved into the stone mill farther up the river, where was greater water-power and increased facilities for manufacturing. Mr. Peatfield was transferred to this mill and continued here for several years, making, repairing and improving machinery. He devoted his time especially to the loom department. In 1842, in company with his brother Sandford, he built the brick mill on Washington Street, near the Boston and Maine Railroad Station, and continued the manufacture of woolen goods, hosiery and underclothing until 1877, when he retired from active labor in the mill to the quiet enjoyments of rural life. Mr. Peatfield always had a great fondness and aptness for mathematical studies, and has pursued them into the higher branches of pure mathematics, and even to this day, at the age of more than four-score years, nothing pleases him more than to find some difficult mathematical problem to solve or some mathematical puzzle to unravel. He at one time constructed a very ingenious labyrinth, which was the wonder and delight of all. He also made a most intricate puzzle which he calls the puzzle of the squares, which has proved a very difficult nut for mathematical scholars to crack. James Peatfield was always a great lover of horticulture. In 1846 he bought some seven acres more or less bounded by the Topsfield road and the Ipswich River, and planted a nursery in a part of this purchase. After leaving the building of machinery and the manufacture of woollens he devoted himself to the care of his nursery and the developing of his lands. He sold, from time to time, small portions of his original purchase to various parties for house lots, but he retained the part which he had planted as





Jas. Peabody





Daniel Patten





Wesley L. Bell



a nursery until 1885. Knowing almost every kind of fruit tree and plant, it has been his great pleasure to cultivate his garden and his orchard, and in the pure enjoyment of watching them thrive and grow, his latter days have passed in peace and quiet. Since 1885 he has not been engaged in any active business. October 2, 1834, he was married to Susan Heard, of Ipswich. Two daughters,—Hannah Moore and Margaret Fox—were born to them, and they are living at the present time. Mr. Peatfield, at the age of eighty-three, has his mental faculties unimpaired. His memory is wonderfully retentive. He remembers every incident of his life, and can give the most minute details of every circumstance and event of his long life. He retains a strong interest in all the affairs of his adopted town, and is interested in every effort to advance its prosperity.

James Peatfield is a man of undoubted probity and honesty, liberal in every sense of the word and interested in every good work. Temperate in all things, simple in his habits, amiable in his disposition, quiet in his manner, conscientious and upright in all his dealings, genial and affectionate, his later years afford him the pleasant consciousness of a well-spent life.

DANIEL POTTER.

Daniel Potter, one of Salem's most respected and honored citizens, was the second of thirteen children of Daniel and Eunice Fellows Potter, of Ipswich, and was born in that historic town on the 24th of March, 1800.

His earlier years were passed in his native town, and here, in his school-boy days, by persevering industry and attention to his studies, he laid the foundation for a life of usefulness and honor, worthy of emulation.

In April, 1815, he removed to Salem and became apprenticed as a blacksmith to David Safford, with whom he remained until he reached the age of twenty-two years, when he commenced in business for himself on Sewall Street, Salem, continuing until 1827, when he removed to Roxbury, Mass.

Two years later, on the 29th of November, 1829, he returned to the city of Salem and took a shop on West Place; he there pursued his trade until 1852 and with marked success.

The industry and integrity of character with which he pursued his business commended itself to the people, and he was repeatedly called to positions of honor and responsibility.

He was chosen a member of the Common Council for the years 1842, '43, '44, '45, '46, '48, '54, '55, '69, and '70, receiving the additional honor of being selected as its presiding officer for the years 1854 and '55.

The ability, faithfulness and dignity which he brought to the discharge of the duties of this high position in these years when to be a member of the

government of a city was only attained by men of honesty and integrity, mark him as a man of worth and excellence.

In 1852 retiring from his trade he was appointed to the very responsible position of deputy-sheriff of Essex County by High Sheriff Robinson of Marblehead, which position he continued without interruption to hold, by reappointments, until his resignation in January, 1887, rounding up thirty-five years of almost uninterrupted official life.

In politics a recognized Republican. As a citizen, an upright man, as an official incorruptible. In social life, jovial and witty, and in all those characteristics which go to make up a man to be honored, respected and beloved by his fellows, a man of note.

On the 10th day of March, 1824, he was married to Dolly Newell, daughter of John and Hannah B. Ferguson, of Salem, a union which has been happily continued for more than three-score years.

Of thirteen children born to them one son and three daughters remain to honor and cheer them in their declining years, viz.: Daniel, Jr., resides in South Braintree; Dolly Ann, married to Nathaniel Jackman, of Salem; Ellen, married to George H. Pousland, of Salem; and Margaret F., who resides at home with her parents in Salem.

WESLEY KENDALL BELL.

Wesley Kendall Bell was born in Albany, Oxford County, Me., August 10, 1827.

He was the second son of John and Betsey Kendall Bell, whose farm home was one of comfort and thrift, so that Wesley, after attending the Common District School was sent for one term to Wilbraham (Mass.) Academy, and thence to Greenwich, R. I., where he was fitted for college.

He came to Ipswich in 1850, where he received an appointment as teacher in the Grammar School, in which position he remained for sixteen years, giving eminent satisfaction by his close application to the duties of the position, and retaining the respect of all the pupils who were favored by being under his tuition.

In 1858 he was appointed by his excellency, Governor Banks, a justice of the peace.

Mr. Bell married on the 24th of November, 1863, Kate B., daughter of Isaac and Elizabeth Noyes.

At the town-meeting, in the spring of 1865, he was chosen to the responsible position of town clerk, and the satisfactory manner in which he has performed his duties has assured his re-nomination and election in each succeeding year up to the present time.

In 1866 Mr. Bell was appointed an Assistant Assessor of United States Revenue (Internal), which position he retained for three years.

In the autumn of 1869 he was elected a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, and

during the term for which he was chosen did most excellent service as a member of the committee on education.

In 1872 he was appointed by his excellency, Gov. Washburn, as a trial justice for the trial of criminal cases. The terms of appointment to this position are for three years, and so ably has the duty been performed that he has received four re-appointments to this important office.

In 1878 he was chosen treasurer and clerk of the Ipswich Gas-Light Company, which position he continues to occupy with great credit to himself and to the satisfaction of the corporation.

Mr. Bell is a cousin to the Hon. Charles H. Bell, of Exeter, N. H., the genial ex-governor of that State, and, like his relative, is in politics a positive Republican—reliable and true to his party—not the blind partisan, but the well-read, thinking man, able to defend and “give a reason for the faith which is within him.”

Mr. Bell has taken an active interest in the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and has held various official positions in the order. He is a member of Agawam Lodge, No. 52, Naumkeag Encampment, No. 13, and Canton Wildey, No. 2.

It would seem that Mr. Bell, while he has had the fortune to be much in public life, has continued and still continues to have the full confidence of the people of our town.

Said a gentleman who had known of him from the time he first came among us, “For the citizen of good, sound, practical ability, of sterling integrity and undoubted character, his superior cannot be found.” Said another, “For a man who has been upwards of thirty-six years in public life as a teacher, as a politician, as a judicial officer, while I am not of his political faith, I believe him to be the same honest, upright citizen as when he first made this place his home,”—and these are but the faint expressions of esteem and confidence which are heard on every hand among the townspeople.

In these days it is a pleasure to note cases where after long terms of official life, the communities where men live are still ready to endorse them as faithful and honest in the discharge of responsibilities, and it is to be hoped that examples like this will be appreciated by the young and that his conduct may be emulated by them.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

BEVERLY.

BY FREDERICK A. OBER.

ITS PHYSICAL FEATURES.—The township of Beverly is locally bounded on the north by Wenham,

east by Manchester, west by Danvers, south by the waters of Massachusetts Bay, and the channel of its own harbor, separating it from Salem.

The centre of this township (which has a length of about six miles and an average breadth of three) is in north latitude $42^{\circ} 34' 38''$, and west longitude $70^{\circ} 54' 5''$.

Within its boundaries are included surface, soil and vegetation, in greater variety perhaps than within the limits of any other section of equal area in the State. Though greatly diversified, the general aspect is hilly, with no elevation approaching the altitude of mountains, yet without any considerable tract of level land. The general trend of the surface towards the ocean gives a southerly exposure to its slopes and valley-lands, of material advantage to its agriculturists.

Geologically considered, Beverly lies very close to the primitive rock; diorite in the western portion, and its eastern half the granite structure that forms the hills of Cape Ann, beginning here and culminating in the headlands of Gloucester and Rockport. Its geological structure, then, is granitic, with a few shore strips of older and more thoroughly crystalline rocks.

Some of the numerous out-cropping ledges contain rare specimens of columbite polymignite, green feldspar and ore of tin; but the mineralogical field is necessarily a restricted one, though exceedingly interesting. A peculiar feature of the scenery are these denuded ledges, as well as the great superimposed boulders, giving character to the hills and headlands. These furnish a coarse quality of granite, which has been extensively quarried and utilized in the construction of the best buildings.

Although there is much rocky land, there is very little absolutely sterile within the limits of the town. Even the rocky pastures, though often discouraging to an ambitious ruminant, are rich in multitudinous examples of the indigenous flora.

The soil, in the main clayey, gravelly or sandy, is strong and productive, yielding good returns when fertilized.

Natural elements of fertility, such as peat and seaweed, were formerly found here in great abundance.

Valuable strata of clay give much material for brick and pottery, while even the sand of the seashore has been—anciently, at least—a source of profit to those who engaged in shipping it to other parts. On the beach near Hospital Point is a deposit of “black sand,” which was at one time much sought after, for a purpose explained by one of the writers on New England, two hundred years ago, the curious Josselyn:

“There is likewise a sort of glittering Sand, which is altogether as good as the glasse powder brought from the Indies, to dry up Ink on paper newly written.”

The only ore which has been discovered in quan-



ity sufficient for export is an inferior quality of bog iron, which was at one time worked in the primitive foundries of Rowley and Lynn.

This deposit lies near the present railroad station of Montserrat, and is to-day only indicated by a chalybeate spring, locally famous as "Iron-Mine Spring," whose waters are sufficiently impregnated to be nauseous without being positively medicinal.

But one other mineral spring is known to occur in Beverly, though the subterranean flow of water is copious and pure, and can be reached by wells with an average depth of thirty feet.

Beverly's woods and water are its chief attractions, although its ponds and streams are few and small. The largest body of water, lying partly within its boundaries, is Wenham Lake, about one-third of which pertains to this township. The purity of its water and the crystal clearness of its ice, have made this beautiful lake famous, even beyond the seas. It is some three hundred and twenty acres in area, lies at an elevation of thirty-four feet above the sea, and supplies Beverly as well as the city of Salem with water. It is known in the early chronicles as the "Great Pond," and figures prominently in deeds and grants. A lesser sheet of water, though in some respects more interesting, is Beaver Pond of twenty acres, which is still secluded within the embrace of the pine woods, not far from the Wenham line.

Its outlet, a small stream, winding through the woods, connects with Norwood Lake, a submerged meadow-tract of some forty acres additional, which gives a large head of available water-power at a point formerly occupied by the old "Conant Mill." Both Wenham and Beaver are stocked with fish, though not to an extent to make them famous. Their shores are in places well-wooded, delightfully adapted to out-door recreation, and hence much frequented by the inhabitants of the adjacent territory. Round Pond, in North Beverly, and Little Pond, not far from Beaver, are the only others, and scarce worthy of mention.

To its abundant supply of pure water and to its perfect surface and subterranean drainage, Beverly owes much of its reputation for healthfulness. Its streams, though neither numerous nor large, are excellently adapted for the carrying away of the surplus water.

In the western part of the township is Bass River Brook, which flows into the arm of the sea known as Bass River. Another, which pursues a course nearly parallel with the main line of the railroad, and empties into Bass River, is Tan Yard Brook, while yet another flows along the Gloucester Branch Railroad, and was formerly known as Job's Pond Brook.

A region lying near the base of Brimble Hill, known as Cat Swamp, and adjacent territory, is drained by a brook variously called Cedar Stand and Sallow's Brook, which enters the extreme head of Mackerel Cove; a meandering stream, forked and branched,

running through alder swamps and open meadows, alternate, locally famous for their wild flowers. A tradition of trout lurks about its deeper and gloomier portions, and it was once a stream of importance enough to support a grist-mill at its mouth, though in latter times it is prone to withdraw within itself and disappear almost entirely from sight, during the heated months of midsummer. Farther to eastward is Patches' or Thissell Brook, where one of the earliest settlers, Nicholas Woodbury, had a grist-mill. Some distance beyond is a streamlet, crossing Mingo's Beach and another flowing into Plum Cove, while the largest is near the eastern border of the town; Saw-mill Brook, where trout are said to have been caught within the memory of people now living. No one of these streams is of sufficient importance to claim the attention of a stranger, yet, collectively, these water-courses play an important part in giving the coast that diversity of aspect which is its most attractive feature.

Of the elements of the landscape those natural features most prominent are, of course, the hills, which, though of moderate elevation, afford the observer from their summits views unsurpassed of their kind.

One of the finest water views, perhaps, is that spread below and beyond "Josh's Mountain," near and to the west of the bridge connecting Beverly with Salem; from the summit of Brown's Hill (the crown of which, however, is now in Danvers) the most extensive view is afforded, though equally good may be obtained from the crests of Chipman and Brimble Hills, especially from the latter. All, indeed, of the numerous hill-tops favor a visitor with charming scenes, such as are afforded by the contiguity of wooded hills and valleys with the ocean.

FLORA AND FAUNA.—To obtain an adequate conception of this region as it existed prior to the visit of the first settlers, one should become acquainted not only with its geological and topographical features, but with the leading types of its flora and fauna. These are, to a great extent, interdependent, and collectively throw light upon the subsequent actions of the settlers themselves. It was not a barren country, this, when first seen by civilized man; for the primitive rock was covered with a rich soil clothed in an attractive and exuberant vegetation. Many plants and fruits were found here indigenous, while nearly everything brought by the settlers from their own country took root and flourished spontaneously.

The principal native trees and those which give color to the woods and a distinctive tone to the masses of foliage (especially as seen from the sea) are the pines, variously intermixed with oaks, maples, hemlocks and birches. These compose mainly the masses or "bulks" of trees, while there are numerous other natives, such as the elm, butternut, ash, cherry, red and white cedar, and a host of shrubs and bushes of lesser growth.

The remarks of Captain John Smith upon the coast productions of New England in general are particularly applicable here: "First, the ground is so fertile that, questionless, it is capable of producing any Grain, Fruits or Seeds you will sow or plant, growing in the region afore-named; but it may be not every kinde to that perfection of delicacy, or some tender plants may miscarie, because the summer is not so hot, and the winter is more cold, in those parts wee have yet tryed neere the Seaside than wee finde in the same height in Europe or Asia. . . . The hearbes or fruits (native) are of many sorts and kinds, as altermes, currants, mulberries, raspies, gooseberries, plummies, walnuts, chestnuts, pumpions, gourds, strawberries, beans, pease and mayze; a kind or two of flax (wherewith they make nets, lines and ropes, both small and great). Oke is their chief wood; firr, pine, walnut, chestnut, birch, ash, elme, cedar and many other sorts."

Its diversity of surface gives to Beverly a flora equally varied; in the gloom of its most secluded dells and swamps grow plants rare in localities more to the southward, while the southern exposure of its coast slopes offers a congenial habitat for several unknown much farther north. Its fragrant pasture lands breathe the incense of spiciest bloom in the season of inflorescence, and here are found those plants of mystical and medicinal virtues so beloved of the Indian medicine-man and the "yarb doctor" of early times. Nowhere in the world is there a greater variety of berries and native small fruits than may be found in the coast country of New England: such as blueberries, high and low, blackberries of several varieties, barberries, cranberries, whortle or huckleberries, elderberries, strawberries, raspberries, wild currants and gooseberries, cherries, grapes, etc., to which may be added many other kinds and the nuts and fruits of various trees.

In this region, favored of nature, may be found most of the flowering plants belonging to Massachusetts, many of brightest bloom being especially abundant; as the laurel (*laurel*), occasionally the magnolia (*m. glauca*), on the borders of Manchester; the cardinal flower (*lobelia cardinalis*), the bright *rhodora*, the fringed gentian (*g. crinita*), late in autumn, the fragrant water lily (*nymphaea odorata*), the choicest species of the violet family, the wild rose and clematis; in fact, the entire range of flowering plants peculiar to New England. That early blooming plant of adjacent regions, the mayflower (*epigaea repens*), is rarely found here, but almost cotemporary with it are the saxifrage, dog-tooth violet, anemone and Housatonia, close followed by the columbine (*coquilegia canadensis*), the "Solomon's seal," "ladies' slipper" (*cyripedium pubescens*), the star flowers and a constantly augmented troop of summer flowers. Certain meadows, in June, are red with that delicate orchid, the *arethusa bulbosa*, and white with the buckbean, while along the water-courses, later, grow

the sagittaria (the arrow-heads), the thickets are green with the parasitic dodder, and all the roadsides, later yet, lined with the golden-rod. It would be impossible to merely enumerate the species (in this brief introductory), that fill the months of spring, summer and early autumn, with bloom and fragrance. It was of this (Cape Ann) coast that the reverend Higginson wrote, when on his voyage to Salem:

"By noon we were within three leagues of Cape Ann, and as we sailed along the coast we saw every hill and dale, and every island, full of gay woods and high trees.

"The nearer we came to the shore the more flowers in abundance, sometimes scattered abroad, sometimes joyined in sheets nine or ten yards long, which we supposed to be brought from the low meadows by the tide.

"Now, what with fine woods and greene trees by land, and these yellow flowers paynting the sea, made us all desirous to see our new paradise of New England, whence we saw such forerunning signals of fertilitie affarre off."

There is in Beverly, growing wild in the fields, a native grass, peculiarly fragrant; and the odors from these fragrant fields, mingled with the balsamic breath of the pine woods, and borne to a sea-stranger by an off-shore breeze, must, indeed, have seemed to him like favored gales direct from paradise.

Having glanced at Beverly in its aspects topographical, geological and botanical, it only remains now (in order to complete our picture of this region as it existed prior to the European visitation), to view it in its aspect zoological. Its elementary features: rocks, soils, water-courses, vegetation,—these have been described; from them—from their relative arrangements and combinations—it may be deduced that this section was eminently favored by nature, and well fitted to support a numerous population.

Nor was that population lacking, although composed principally of the humbler inhabitants of the woods and meads, in fur and feather. With a few exceptions, the animals found here by the early settlers may be assumed to have existed here from time immemorial. The knowledge acquired by the early planters was necessarily imperfect, but they soon became acquainted with the larger and more obtrusive members of the lower animals that ranged the wilderness around them. Says the inquisitive Higginson, writing at that time, and of it:

"For beastes, there are some beares, and they say Lyons; for they have been seen at Cape Anne. Here are several sorts of deers, also wolves, foxes, beavers, otters, martins, great wild cats, and a great beast called a molke (moose) as bigge as an ox."

Fifty years later, Josselyn writes:

"There are not many kinds of Beasts in New England; they may be divided into Beasts of the chase of the stinking foot, as Boes, Foxes, Jaccals, Wolves, Wild-cats, Raccoons, Porcupines, Squirrels, Musquashes, Squirrels, Sables, and Mattrisses; and Beasts of the clince of the sweet foot: Buck, Red Deer, Rain Deer Elk, Marouse, Bear, Maccarib, Beaver, Otter, Martin, Hare."

The larger quadrupeds, such as the bear, deer, beaver, otter, martin, wolf and wild-cat, have long since been exterminated here (though the locality known as Cat Swamp derived its name from the abundance of wild-cats once found there), but several of the smaller yet remain. The fox yet haunts the hills of

the northern part of the township, leading a precarious existence, even though the feeling towards him is friendly, rather than otherwise, as the survivor of a race now nearly extinct.

The hunter instinct still remains in the breasts of our people, and many here would gladly reimburse the farmers the loss of an occasional fowl rather than that reynard should be exterminated, and the spark that lingers from the frontier existence of our ancestors become extinguished. Scarce a clover-field on the forest border that has not still a resident beneath its surface, in the shape of the woodchuck—*arctomys monax*—that gray hermit, indigenous to the soil. This animal, likewise, would be sadly missed and even lamented, though occasionally destructive to clover and early vegetables.

There is another, however, whose presence would be gladly dispensed with; a small animal of inoffensive habit, generally, but endowed by nature with most pungent possibilities when thoroughly aroused. "The Squeek," says Jocelyn, referring to the skunk (*mephitis mephitis*), "is almost as big as a Raccoon, perfect black, white, or pye-bald, with a bush tail like a Fox—an offensive carion." And, of a truth, he is offensive when at his worst; yet, indirectly of great benefit to our agriculturists as he is insectivorous in his habit. "The Musquash," says the same writer just quoted, "is a small Beast that lives in shallow ponds." This is the Indian name for the musk-rat (*ondrata zibethicus*), which still inhabits our shallow ponds, and within a score of years was quite numerously represented.

That the beaver once dwelt in our ponds and built his dams in our waters there yet remain tradition and ocular evidence; yet none is found here to-day.

Another fur-bearing animal, the mink, is occasionally seen, as also the weasel; the other has long been extinct. But Beverly, even to the present day, constitutes with several adjoining towns, a fine range for the unambitious fur hunter to trap in during the winter months. In the larger swamps the hare is still found, while the rabbit is a denizen of every woodland, and moles, rats and field-mice are in the fields in modern abundance. The squirrels, red and gray, are quite numerous, especially the former; occasionally the flying-squirrel is seen, and the striped squirrels, or "chipmonks," are everywhere in the woods and pasture lands.

BIRDS OF BEVERLY.—Although the number of ferrous quadrupeds is not large, the territory embraced in this township contains nearly every representative genus of the *avifauna*, or bird-life, of the Eastern States. The first settlers, though not particularly observant of animated nature, could not avoid noticing the numerous birds. Captain John Smith (1616), mentioned some of the many birds seen in coasting Cape Ann, as "Eagles, Gripes, divers sorts of Hawkes, Cranes, Geese, Brantz, Cormorants, Ducks, Shel-drakes, Teals, Meawes, Gals, Turkies, Dive-hoppers,

etc., and divers sorts of vermin whose names I know not."

Higginson, a decade later, speaks of wild ducks, pigeons, geese, and turkeys, partridges, eagles and hawks. But their attention, though called to the coast species and water birds, and such as from their size or habits were conspicuous, was not drawn to the numerous species resident within the woods and secluded meadowlands. The species resident in Beverly to-day, and those found here at some season of the year as migrants, number about two hundred, and these were (at least conjecturally) identified with this region three hundred years ago.

Our ancestors, those who first settled here and reclaimed the country from its original wildness, gladly welcomed the birds, especially those harbingers of spring, forerunners of the coming of milder air, and the relaxation of the rigors of winter. Our best literature has celebrated the softening influence of the birds and flowers upon those stern settlers who were compelled to battle with nature for the mere elements of subsistence. Without these free gifts of a beneficent Providence there would be little to cheer them at their toil. That they appreciated the coming of the birds and looked forward anxiously to their presence among them, and encouraged it in every way, is well-known. They drew from the ranks of their feathered friends only such as were necessary for food, and allowed the harmless and smaller members of the fraternity to flit and warble unmolested. But even the savage, the red Indian, equalled them in this, never slaying except for sustenance and the simple demands of ornamentation.

With a few slight additions, perhaps through the introduction of strangers—such as the English sparrow—the *avifauna* of Beverly is essentially the same as it was when the first settlers landed here. Assuming this, then, they would have found, had they investigated and classified the results, nearly two hundred species. Of the hawks, nine or ten, besides occasional visitants in the bald-headed eagle and the fish-hawk. Of owls, there are eight or nine species, including the great Arctic owl (though rarely seen) and the great-horned.

The cuckoos give us two species, the woodpeckers six, while of the humming bird there is one species as a summer resident (the ruby-throat), whip-poor-will, one night-hawk, and one kingfisher.

The fly-catchers are represented by seven species, which include the "king-bird," pewees, etc.

The thrushes, also, seven species, containing our most delightful songsters: the brown, hermit and wood-thrushes, and the cat-bird, as well as the robin. There is one blue-bird, one gold-crested and one ruby-crowned wren, one of the tit-mice, the chickadee, two nut-hatchers, one creeper, three wrens (including the house-wren), and one titlark. Of that large family termed the warblers, we have at least twenty species. They comprise a considerable num-



ber of our migrants; for not very many birds are resident here throughout the year.

Every season a host of birds may be noted winging their way from woodland to woodland, copse to thicket. This aerial army of invasion comes to us, mainly, from the far South, making its long journey of thousands of miles by progressive stages, never fairly halting at any one place, except for food and short intervals of rest, until its ultimate destination is reached.

The advance pickets of this flying column arrive early in March, their posts continually being occupied by later visitants, and finally succeeded by the army of occupation.

The black-birds, robins, song-sparrows, blue-birds, are among the first arrivals, and these are followed by others of their kind so obscure of coloration (some of them—though others are of beautiful color), and of such secluded habits, that they escape the observation of any but the trained eye of the ornithologist.

These are the warblers,—quiet and unobtrusive tree inhabitants. They take their places amongst the ranks of the winter residents, such as the crows, jays, snow-birds and chickadees, while some of these latter retire yet further north to make room for them.

Thus it is that our fields and forests are occupied by the feathered flocks. The shores are swept by sand-pipers, plover, gulls and terns, while the so-called birds of prey, the hawks, owls and eagles, circle in the ether of the upper air or lie in wait in the dim recesses of the wood.

The interesting oven-bird, or golden-crowned thrush, is included in the warbler group. In the oak woods the scarlet tanager is found. Of the swifts, swallows and martins, there are six species. Of chattering, one, the cedar-bird, one shrike (the butcher-bird), five vireos and one skylark.

Four members of the finch family, two cross-bills and two red-polls and snow-buntings, sparrows and snow-birds give us twelve representatives; there is one grosbeak (the rose-breasted), one indigo-bird and one towhee-bunting, or "chewink." That most delightful melodist, the bobolink, resides in our meadows after the first week in May, and we are favored with the presence of four species of blackbirds.

The meadow-lark is found occasionally, and two orioles; one, the golden robin, builds its pensile nest in the elms of our principal streets. One species of crow resides here throughout the year; the blue jay, also; and a specimen of the raven may occasionally descend to this latitude.

The wild pigeon once visited our territory in immense flocks, though now rarely found, since the great wheat fields of the West offer it food nearer home. Within a score of years, however, it was very abundant in the month of September, passing over our woods in great flocks.

That it was equally numerous at the opening of the seventeenth century, we have testimony from Higginson, writing of Salem in 1631:

"Upon the eighth of March, from after it was faire daylight until about eight of the clock in the forenoon, there flew over all the towns in our plantations soe many flocks of doves, each flock containyng many thousands, and soe many that they obscured the light, that passeth credit, if but the truth should be written."

One species of turtle-dove is a visitor here, "partridges" (ruffed grouse) are found in every wood, and quail in the pastures. Of herons and bitterns, five species visit our meadows and marshes; plover, five species, on the shore; one species of woodcock and one of snipe. Ten species of curlew and sandpipers may be shot here, and three of rails and coots.

The Canada goose sometimes alights here, on its way to the far north, and, in olden times, doubtless bred here. Ducks and sheldrakes, to the number of sixteen, swim along shore and sometimes penetrate our creeks; now and then a few remain to breed.

Six species of gulls and terns visit the shore; two breed on the islands in the harbor. Two of the petrels (or "Mother Cary's chickens"), may be detected by the more observant, in the winter. Of loons and grebes five species, the most conspicuous being the great northern diver. To end the list, mention should be made of four sub-Arctic birds; the auks and puffins, which come down from hyperborean regions in mid-winter. That species now extinct, the great auk (*alca impennis*), doubtless existed here in the time of our forefathers; but the only representative of the family to-day is the little auk, or dovekie, which is sometimes blown upon our coast during severe storms.

In the preceding pages are enumerated nearly all the higher forms of animal life indigenous here at the time of which we write. Space will not permit of a description in detail of these, nor even mention of those still lower families, of the insect world, which are numerous; yet, with few noxious, or even annoying, representatives.

Tradition has, perhaps, invested some reptiles with fateful attributes, but it is not known that there are many harmful here, unless they have been introduced from other parts. In a word, then, this territory was amply provided by the Creator with animals necessary to man's subsistence, and even to minister to his æsthetic tastes; but with none noxious so numerous as to cause him excessive apprehension.

THE ABORIGINES.—Mention ought to be made, before this general subject is dismissed, of the original proprietors of this territory, at least, who were found in possession when it was discovered by white men.

There is abundant evidence that this region was looked upon as a favored abiding-place by the red men, the American aborigines. Not alone tradition points to it as the ancient home of the Indian, but the material evidence of his occupation, in the shape of



remains of his feasts, his village sites and specimens of his domestic utensils and implements of war and the chase. Banks of shells, where the wigwam was once pitched, and the refuse of the kitchen deposited, are yet found here. The largest yet discovered was near the head of Galley's Brook, doubtless an ancient estuary, on the slope leading to the cemetery. These ancient encampments were always at or near the head or mouth of some stream contiguous to the sea; for almost the entire subsistence of the Indians, during the summer months especially, was drawn from the sea. "They hunted in the winter," says an ancient writer, "the moose, bear, etc.; for this purpose making long excursions into the interior, but their fishing followes in the spring, summer and fall of the leaf; first for Lobsters, Clammes, Flouke, Lumps or Poddlers, and Alewives, and afterwards for Bass, Cod, Rock, Bluefish, Salmon, etc."

"All these, and diverse other good things," says Captain John Smith, "do heere, for want of use, increase and decrease with little diminution; whereby they growe to that abundance that you shall scarce find any Baye, or shallow Cove of sand, where you may not take many Clampes (clams) or Lobsters, or both, at your pleasure; and in many places lode your boat, if you please; nor iles where you finde not fruites, birds, crabs, muskles, or all of them, for the taking, at low water. And in the harbors we frequented, a little boye might take of Cunners and Pinacks and such delicate fish, at the ship's sterne, more than sixe or tenne can eat in a daie."

They are not quite so plentiful to-day; but in the season our forefathers (like the Indians) only had to go forth with hook and line, or spade, or lobster-spear, to be assured of abundant material for a dinner. The shell-heaps of Ipswich sand-hills have yielded many a specimen of Indian relics, and the fields of Beverly, likewise, though not so many as the former, where numbers of the Aborigines were gathered together, for many seasons, to feast upon the products of the sea. Skeletons have been found here, in different places, which were undoubtedly those of the red men, sometimes with various articles of stone in the graves, as arrow and spear heads, stone hammers, pestles and gonges. This was undoubtedly a favorite resort of theirs, but not held in so high estimation as the sand-hills of Ipswich. It was one of the outlying possessions of the Sagamore of Agawan, Masconomo, sometimes known to the settlers as "Sagamore John." His possessions extended from the Merrimac River south to the Naumkeag, and from Cochicewick, or Andover, to the coast of Massachusetts Bay. Being well disposed toward the English who sought settlement here, he freely granted them all the territory they desired. But in the year 1700, when the descendants of the Sagamore were very few in number and without possessions, a claim was set up by his grand-children to the township territory. Although such a claim could not be enforced, and the inhabitants of Beverly were

well aware of this fact, yet they exhibited the fairness of their intentions towards the impoverished Indians by settling with them, giving them £6 6s 8d., and taking a formal deed of the property.

The fate of the Agawams, who were so closely connected with our earliest history, furnishes an illustration of that of all the Eastern tribes. They were at enmity with the Tarrantines, or wilder Indians of Maine, in conflicts with whom they lost heavily; but appear to have wasted gradually away, even though kindly treated by the English. In 1638 Masconomo, who seems to have been high-minded and generous, sold his fee in the soil of Ipswich to John Winthrop, Jr., for £20. He died in 1658, and was buried on Sagamore Hill, in Hamilton, still known by its original name. His gun and valuables were buried with him; but a certain vandal, a few years later, dug up his bones and paraded his skull through Ipswich streets. For this act he was punished, but the ancient home of the Agawams no longer afforded them more than a mere tarrying-place; the last record of the survivors is in 1726-30, when a few were living at Wigwam Hill, in the Hamlet, or Hamilton.

1626. EARLIEST WHITE INHABITANTS.—A shore so attractive as that subsequently called "Cape Ann Side," could not long remain unnoticed by the first arrivals, and it must have early drawn the attention of those fishermen of Cape Ann itself: Roger Conant and his associates in 1624.

When, in 1626, the fishing station there was abandoned, and these people removed to Naumkeag, they coasted the Manchester and Beverly shore, which previously had seemed so beautiful to Capt. Smith, that he called it "the paradise of all these parts," and subsequently won the admiration of Endicott and Higginson. They passed by its numerous headlands and embayed beaches, seeking a site nearer the head of navigation than these afforded, and landed on a rock on the southwest side of Beverly Harbor.

¹ "Near the extremity of North Point, or at Cape Ann, or Ipswich Ferry, as it was variously called, now a little west of the junction of Beverly Bridge, may be seen the outcropping of a metamorphic rock, as it slopes its checkered surface to the sea, that, with its intersected dikes and veins, fills the mind of the geologist with wondering interest, as he counts the deeply-graven records of eleven of the old earth's eruptions."

To this description, by a son of Salem, a one-time resident of Beverly, adds:

² "Well might we wish—and with no irreverence, surely—that the Almighty Being, who, in His wonder-working caused them, had, as a twelfth signature of His divine power, affixed the very footprints of the worthy company that first stepped on that rock, to make here their permanent abode."

"Here on this spot, thus scored by the hand of Deity, we believe Conant and his followers, the pilgrim band of Massachusetts, stayed their wandering feet, and commenced their permanent abode; and here, too, we believe, they welcomed Endicott and his company to their wilderness home; thereby tallying another epoch in the world's history; for here it was that freedom, long confined in the mother country, burst the crust of oppression that bound her and began to overflow the land with its blessings, and spread out the solid foundations on which our republic rests."

¹ "Old Planters of Salem," G. D. Phippen, 1858.

² Rev. C. T. Thayer's Bi-Centennial Address, 1868.

Their first settlement, where they began their plantation, living in perfect amity with the resident Indians, was on the peninsula lying between Collins Cove and North River.

¹ "Here they took up their station, upon a pleasant and fruitful neck of land, environed with an arm of the sea on each side, in either of which vessels and ships of good burthen might easily anchor."

Nearly two years, they remained here, courageously clinging to the soil they had won from the forest, and portions of which they cultivated in common with the Indians; then arrived the "Abigail," with Governor Endicott and his colonists, who, at the same time, furnished them succor and superseded their leaders in authority.

The new arrivals were, in point of numerical strength, double those of the original settlers; but the latter were of seasoned stock, and not desirous of yielding up their hard-earned territory and freedom. A controversy followed which, but for the "prudent moderation of Mr. Conant, agent before for the Dorchester planters," might have proved a serious matter. These good people, however, "who came so far to provide a place where to live together in Christian amity and concord,"¹ finally allowed reason to prevail, and, in commemoration of this, changed the name of the place from Naumkeag to Salem, City of Peace.

With the "Old Planters," however, this was but a compromise, for sake of peace; they cast about for another location, where they could be permitted to exercise a portion at least of that freedom they had previously enjoyed.

That they were highly respected by the promoters of the new company, and that their assistance and counsel were desired, is shown by their retention in official capacity for many years, as also in a letter from Matthew Craddock, governor of the company's affairs in London, to Governor Endicott, in April, 1629:

"As to the old planters themselves, . . . wee are content they shall be partakers of such privileges as wee, from his Majesty's especial grace, with great cost, favour of personages of note, and much labor, have obtained, and that they shall be incorporated into this society, and enjoy not only their hearts, which formerly they have manured, but such a further proportion as, by the advice and judgment of yourself and the rest of the council, shall be thought fit for them or any of them," etc.

Certain privileges were also to be granted them, but their leaders concluded to change their residence.

"The land title was now in the new company, who, strong in wealth and influence, were decidedly aggressive in spirit, and the only alternative for their leaders in the forlorn hope was dispersion, and an abandonment of the now ripening fruits of their labors. They submitted to the lesser evil; but historic impartiality, upon a survey of the facts, will yield a verdict of exact justice, unvitiated by superior interests and prejudices."

We need not to seek for any other cause than this feeling of insecurity and the desire to occupy the fertile meadow lands about the bays of the opposite coast.

1628. As early as 1628 the dwellers at Naumkeag

were attracted by the fields of natural grass on Beverly side. Says one of them, Richard Brackenbury, in a deposition:

"The same yeare we came over, it was, that wee tooke a farther possession on the north side of Salem Ferrye, commonly call'd 'Cape Ann Side,' by cutting thatch for our houses; and soone after laid out lots for tillage, land on the said Cape Ann Side, and quickly after sundry houses were built on the said Cape Ann Side."

"The marshes where thatch grew were reserved for roofing; in 1628, one in Beverly was especially mentioned for that purpose."³

Most of the dwellings of that period were cottages, with thatched roofs and wooden or "catted" (mixed clay and stick) chimneys. The first house erected in Salem was, probably, that of Roger Conant; and one he had occupied at Cape Ann was subsequently taken down and removed to Salem, for Endicott's use.

The leaders of the Cape Ann plantation, and the most prominent, men of the first Salem settlement were, doubtless, the founders of the first permanent colony of "Cape Ann Side," later incorporated as Beverly.

Tradition points to a small colony of fishermen at Tuck's Point as early as 1628-'30; but the first substantial house was probably erected farther down the coast.

As nearly as can be determined, the first settlers who came here to stay were the Woodburys. In the spring of 1628, John Woodbury, who had come to Naumkeag with Conant in 1626, returned from England (whither he had been sent for assistance) with his son Humphrey and his brother William. Humphrey (probably with his father's aid), located at or near the Cove, between two rocky points directly opposite the "Willows" of the Salem shore.

William Woodbury settled near the lower point of the name (Woodbury), and here was built (tradition states), the first dwelling, a large, double, oak-framed structure, called the garrison house, about the year 1630. This was, says an old resident, built with loopholes and scuttles, open underneath, and some of its oak timbers are in the lower portion of the house afterwards built there by John Prince. The first settlers were probably as above mentioned, the first great house at William Woodbury's Point and the first town-born child (accepting current tradition), was of the name of Dixey; a William Dixey, who followed Conant to Bass River side, was admitted freeman in 1634, and died, aged eighty-two, in 1690.

It will not fail to be noticed, that the settlement of Cape Ann side, afterwards Beverly, virtually began with the arrival of those sturdy pioneers, Roger Conant and his associates. They were but temporarily located at Naumkeag, the leaders of this band, styled the "Old Planters;" and removed hither as soon as grants of land were secured, though retaining for a while, in Naumkeag, their gardens and improved lots.

1635. In the original "Book of Grants," yet to be seen in Salem, is found the following entry:

"On the 25th of the 11th moneth, 1635," Voted that "Capt Trask, Jno. Woodbury, Mr Conant, Peter Palfrey & John Balch are to have 5 farmes, viz: each 200 acres a piece, to form in all a thousand acres of Land, together lying, and being at the head of Bass River, 124 pole in breadth and soe runne northely to the River by the great pond side, and soe in breadth making up the full quantitie of a thousand acres. These limits laid out and surveyed by vs.

JOHN WOODBURY,
JOHN BALCH."

Of the same date:

"Mem. the limits of a farme of ground granted to Henery Herrick, between two and three acres of ground, lying on the north side of Jeffry Mercey's Cove, bounded by the Rock on one side and Woolytons (Porter's) River on the other."

And on the "8th of the twelfth month, 1635,"

"That Israel Burnet may have a tenne acre lott at the upp. end of Bass River."

In 1639, "23d day of the 10th moneth,"

"Granted to John Woodbury, John Balch & Mr Connaught 5 acres of meadow a piece in some convenient places."

The best lands were then found at the heads of creeks and the margins of rivers, the higher sections being, for the most part, covered with dense forest, while these meadow-lands were open, or, in great part, free from forest.

There were no roads in those days, there being, for many years, but a single Indian trail between Boston and Agawam, or Ipswich; hence all communication between different settlements was by water.

It is related of the origin of the first road in Beverly that it was laid out by a heifer, which, having been driven from Woodbury's Point to the farms at the head of Bass River, by a circuitous trail along the shore, escaped, and made her way back home directly through the woods. This trail was followed, and subsequently became a line of communication between the two places. "Two hundred years," says the historian of Beverly (Stone), "still leave us in possession of many highways whose numerous windings bear ample testimony to the same scientific origin."

Regarding means of travel at that time, a contemporary¹ writing in 1634 of Salem, says: "Although their land be none of the best, yet beyond the rivers is a very good soyle, where they have their farmes and get their Hay and plant their corne; there they crosse these rivers with small cannowes (canoes), which are made of whole pine trees, being about two foot and a half over, and 20 foot long; in these likewise they goe a fowling sometimes two leagues to sea; there be more cannowes in this town (Salem) than in the whole Patent, every household having a water-house or two."

Of the lives of the planters of that time, the same writer gives us a glimpse: "For all New England must be workers in some kinde; and wheresoer it hath been reported that boyes of tenne or twelve yeares of age might doe much more than get their living: that cannot be, for he must have more than a

boyes head, and no lesse than a man's strength, that intends to live comfortably; and he that hath understanding and Industrie, with a stock of an hundred pound, shall live better there than he shall doe here (in England) of twenty pound per annum."

This pioneer life led by our forefathers, passed in felling forests, clearing land and opening roads and trails, is well described in several books treating of that formative period of New England's history.

Of the "Old Planters" who received the thousand-acre grant of land between Bass River and Wenham Lake, three—Roger Conant, John Balch and John Woodbury—soon settled on their respective tracts. Captain Trask's grant went by exchange to Thomas Scruggs, whose daughter, Rachel, married John Rayment (Raymond), by a descendant of whom it is occupied (or a portion of it) to-day.

The two-hundred-acre grant to Peter Palfrey was not occupied by him, but subsequently came by purchase (1644) into the possession of William Dodge, the founder, with his brother Richard, of this numerous family in Wenham and Hamilton. He was known as Farmer Dodge; his son, Captain William Dodge, married a daughter of Conant, a portion of whose grant was sold by one of his descendants, to John Chipman, the first minister of the Second Society, ordained December 28, 1715.

³ "The grant of a thousand acres, comprising the five farms, was always known as the 'Old Planters' Farms.' The first proprietors of them, and their immediate successors, appear to have arranged and managed them in concert—to have had homesteads near together between the head of Bass River and the neighborhood of the 'Horse Bridge,' where the meeting-house of the Second Congregational Society (or of the Precinct of Salem and Beverly) now stands. Their woodlands and pasture lands were farther to the north and east. . . . The dividing line between Beverly and Salem Village, finally agreed upon in 1703, ran through the 'Old Planters' Farms,' particularly the portions belonging to the Dodges, Raymond, and Woodbury. It went through 'Capt. John Dodge's dwelling-house, six feet to the eastward of his brick chimney as it now stands.' At the time of the witchcraft delusion (1692), the Raymonds and Dodges mostly belonged to the Salem Village parish and church. They continued on the rate-list and connected with the proceedings entered on the record-books until the meeting-house at the horse-bridge was opened for worship, in 1715, when they transferred their relations to the 'Precinct of Salem & Beverly.'"

It would, perhaps, be well to digress from the following of events in chronologic sequence to glance at three of these "Old Planters," the fathers of Beverly:—Conant, Balch and Woodbury. Roger Conant, one time Governor of the Plantation at Cape Anne and at Naumkeag, was born in Badleigh, England, in Devonshire, in April, 1591. He came to New England (Plymouth Colony) in 1623, removing to Nantasket, where he remained a while, and then went to Cape Ann as superintendent of the Dorchester (England) Company's venture there, being, in point of fact, "the first Governor of the Colony of Massachusetts." Removing to Naumkeag in 1626 (as already related), he was instrumental, through his firmness and constancy of purpose, in keeping his little band together until the arrival of Endicott, in

¹ Wenham Lake.

² William Wood; "New England's Prospect," London, 1634.

³ "Upham's Witchcraft," vol. i., pp. 130, 131.

1628. He proved himself, according to Cotton Mather, "a most religious, prudent and worthy gentleman, always maintaining an interest in the affairs of the town to the last of his life." An original member of the first church in Salem, he was also one of the founders of that of Beverly, was made a freeman in 1630, and represented Salem in the General Court. In addition to the grant of lands in Beverly, he received, in 1671, two hundred acres more, near Dunstable, as a "very ancient planter." He died on November 19, 1679, in his eighty-ninth year, leaving seven children,—four sons and three daughters: Lot, born 1624, died 1674; Roger, born 1626, died 1672; Mary, married John Balch, and afterwards William Dodge; Sarah; Exercise (son), baptized December 24, 1637, died April 28, 1722; Elizabeth; Joshua, died 1659.

The ancestor of the Beverly branch of the family was Lot, some of his descendants yet residing here. The second son, Roger Conant, Jr., enjoyed the distinction of having been the first child born in Salem (in 1626), and was granted twenty acres of land in 1639 in recognition of this.

On the fly-leaf of an old Bible, once the property of the Conants (according to Mr. G. D. Phippen, in his memoir¹), is this entry by the widow of Roger, Jr., who lost both son and husband within the space of six weeks:

"The 4 day of May, 1672, being Saturday, my dere littel sone Samuel Conant dyed. The 15 of Januar 72, being Saturday, my dere, dere, dere husband Roger Conant dyed."

A most pathetic chronicle of the old, sad story.

John Balch descended from a very ancient family of Somersetshire, England, where he was born at or near Bridgewater about 1579. He came to New England in September, 1623, with Captain Robert Gorges and settled at Salem with Conant. He was made a freeman May 18, 1631, and was one of the original members of the first church in Salem, also holding various offices of trust,—an "intelligent, exemplary and useful citizen."

He removed to his Bass River grant in 1638, and there resided until his death, in June, 1648. His will, dated May 15, 1648, was witnessed by Peter Palfrey, Nicholas Patch and Jeffrey Massey, and proved in the same court a fortnight later.

It brings in a vivid manner before us the life of his times to read in his inventory of the "great fruit trees, the young apple-trees, the corn that is growing upon the ground," and two of his cows "Reddie" and "Cherrie." Even at that early time our first settlers were firmly rooted in the soil of Beverly.

Balch's children were: Benjamin, born 1629; John, drowned in 1662, June 16th, at Beverly Ferry during a violent storm. It was his widow, daughter of Roger Conant, who afterwards married Capt. Wm. Dodge.

Freeborn (who, from his name, is believed to have

been born the year his father was made freeman, in 1631) went to England and never returned.

The widow of Balch died in 1657.

The most numerous family in Beverly to-day is descended from the Woodburys.

John Woodbury, the first of the name in America, came from Somersetshire, England, to Cape Ann in 1624, afterward removing with Conant to Salem, in 1626. The year following he went to England for supplies, returning in 1628, bringing with him his son Humphrey. He and his wife, Agnes, were of the original members of the first church in Salem, and he was made a freeman May 18, 1631.

It is stated that John and his brother, William, went over to Cape Ann Side about 1630, where the latter settled at what is now called William Woodbury's Point. From them, it is thought, are descended all of the name in New England. After his grant at Bass River, John, or "Father Woodbury" (as he is called), removed thither and there died, "after a life of energy and faithfulness to the colony," 1641, aged about sixty years.

Humphrey, son of John, came to Naumkeag with his father in 1628, and at that time was nineteen years old, having been born in 1609. He was a member of the Salem Church in 1648, and one of the founders of the first church in Beverly, of which he was chosen deacon in 1668.

Other children of John, whose names are recorded, were Hannah, baptized 1636; Abigail, 1637; Peter, 1640. Humphrey is said to have reached the age of three-score and ten, and his widow died about 1689. Peter, son of John, was made freeman in 1668, a representative to General Court in 1689, and died July 5, 1704.

William Woodbury, John's brother, had also grants of land in Salem, and is mentioned in the records of 1639. His children: Nicholas (the oldest), William, Andrew, Hugh, Isaac and Hannah. His will was dated 1st Fourth month, 1663, and he died in 1676. Nicholas died 1686, leaving a widow, who survived till June 10, 1701. His daughter, Abigail, married Richard Ober, and died 1727, aged eighty-six.

It is an honorable as well as ancient family of Beverly. "Few enterprises of 'pith and moment' were set on foot in the colony except a Woodbury was of the party, and they seem to have been ready early and late, whether in humble or conspicuous station, and whatever might betide, to bear a man's part. Two Beverly Woodburys piloted the little fleet in the capture of St. Johns and Port Royal, in the N. E. expedition of 1654. And a full century later a Beverly Woodbury stood by the side of Wolfe as he fell in victory upon the plains of Abraham, and wore that day a sword which is still an heirloom with his family."²

Two other names, equally honorable, and linked

¹ Essex Hist. Col., vol. i, No. 4.

² Robert S. Rantoul.

with those of the Old Planters, were those of Brackenbury and Lothrop. Richard Brackenbury came with Endicott in 1628, was a member of the first church, made freeman in 1630, and was granted seventy-five acres of land in 1636.

He was an active member of the first church in Beverly, where he lived till 1685, and died at the age of eighty-five. The family long ago became extinct here, though the name is perpetuated in one of our streets, Brackenbury Lane, which runs through his former farm.

Captain Thomas Lothrop was another man of force and integrity who came early from England, and who received a grant of land on Bass River Side in 1636, in which year he became a member of the first church of Salem. He was a representative to General Court for several terms from Salem, assisted in founding the church in Beverly, and was there elected selectman for many years.

The more important events of his history will be narrated in proper sequence, but it will be well to keep in mind this eminent man as one of the leaders of this young and struggling colony. His grant of land was at the Cove, not far from Humphrey Woodbury's, where traces of his house-cellar were shown until a very recent period, and there he lived for forty years, a model of fidelity to all his public and private relations.

"Beau and gentle, courteous and just, confiding, yet cautious and wise of large estate for the time, beautifully as skilfully administered, never sparing of his own exertions, but always ready for every good work; and he had a rare and remarkable belief in the confidence and affection of the community in which he lived. . . . His house was not only the abode of a liberal hospitality, but an asylum for the orphan and distressed. . . . Among those who shared his fostering care was a sister, Ellen, whom he brought with him on his return from a visit to England. She became the second wife of the veteran schoolmaster, Elizabeth Chesser, who taught for more than seventy years in New Haven, Ipswich, Charlestown and Boston."

Lothrop, in 1654, was lieutenant under Captain Hawthorn, and a captain under Major Sedgwick at the capture of St. Johns and Port Royal. From the latter place he brought home a bell, taken from the "New Battery" there, for the use of the church in Beverly.

We will return now to the chronological narration:

1636.—"It is agreed, December 26, that John Stone shall keep a ferry, to begin this day, betwixt his house on the neck upon the north point and Cape Ann side, and shall give diligent attention thereupon during the space of three yeares, unless he shall give just occasion to the contrary; and in consideration thereof he is to have twopence from a stranger and one penny from an inhabitant. Moreover, the said John Stone doth engage to provide a convenient boat for the said purpose, betwixt this and the first month next coming after the date hereof."

In 1653 the profits of the ferry "towards Ipswich," were allowed to Richard Stackhouse's family provided he find boats and men. He continued in charge till 1656, when he was succeeded by John Massey, "the

oldest town-born child then residing in Salem." Two years later, Massey had charge of the south side, and Rogers Haskins of the north (or Beverly) side. In 1694 the latter was succeeded by Edmund Gale, and he, in 1701, by the widow of Haskins, who, in 1708, leased the ferry for a term of twenty years. In 1742, over one hundred years after the establishment of the ferry, the rates for crossing were "3d. for a person, 9d. for a horse and 3s. for a chair or chaise."

In 1749 it was leased by Robert Hale, of Beverly, at three pounds sterling per annum for seven years. In 1769 B. Waters, of Salem, and Ebenezer Ellinwood, of Beverly, hired the ferry for three years. The rates then were, "1d. for an individual, 2 half-pence for a horse, 4 half-pence for man and horse, 5d. for a chair, 7d. for two-wheeled chaise, and 9d. for a four-wheeled."

The building of a bridge over the ferry was agitated in 1787, the principal mover in the matter being an eminent merchant of Beverly, George Cabot. As the proposition gave rise to angry discussion, a certain Mr. Blyth remarked, that he "never knew a bridge to be built without a 'railing' on both sides." The following year, 1788, the bridge was built by a distinguished contractor, Lemuel Cox. It rested upon ninety-three piles, was thirty-two feet span, fourteen hundred and eighty-four feet long, entirely of wood. Its cost was about sixteen thousand dollars, which sum was divided into two hundred shares, worth, prior to 1830, five times the original value, but steadily declining later, after the railroad was built, and in view of its approaching reversion to the commonwealth.

It was called Essex Bridge, as so beneficial to the county, and its cost was to be remunerated by tolls for a period of seventy years, after which it became free to the public.

This, in brief, is the history of the Salem and Beverly ferry and the Essex Bridge. In 1789 General Washington, then on his famous tour, was so interested in it that he dismounted after he had crossed the "draw," which was hoisted that he might examine it.

1638.—John Winthrop, Jr., having settled at Agawam (1633) has leave to set up salt-works at Ryal Side—then part of Salem, now of Beverly—and to have wood enough for carrying on his works, and pasturage for his cows. The name of Salt-house, or Salter's Point, remains to this day, applied to the point between Danvers River and Duck Cove.

1639.—"At genall towne meeting, the 11th month, Granted to Roger Conant, the sonne of Roger Conant, being the first borne childe in Salem, 20 acres of Land."

This individual was Roger Conant, Jr., born 1626, died June 15, 1672.

1642.—"At a particular meeting of the seven men, Granted to Samuel Edson 25 acres of Land joyning to Humphrey Woodburys farme in Mackerell Cove,

& 2 acres of meadow where he can find yt there about."

1643.—"8th moneth: John Balch, for the Basse River, and William Woodbury for the Mackerell Cove, were nominated to receive donations of corne for a certain John Moore."

"It is ordered that all those that have land granted them at the great pond, shall fence with the rest or els leave theire Lands. And all that have lotts at Bass River are bound to the like conditions."

1644.—"The 20 of the 2d moneth,

"Ordered that Guydo Bayly shall have soe much of the swamp that lyeth along by his lott over at Cape Ann side as he can ridd within 3 yeares next insuing."

Bayly emigrated to Plymouth colony, and sold his lands to Humphrey, the son of John Woodbury.

These extracts, from the Salem Book of Grants, give us a glimpse of the toiling pioneers and enable us to localize some of those hitherto in doubt.

1646.—"The 26 day of the 8th moneth,

"Ordered, that Willm Woodbury and Richd Brackenbury, Ensign dixie, Mr. Conant, Lieftenant Lotherp, Lawrence & Leech, shall forthwith Lay out a way between the ferry at Salem & the head of Jeffries creek, and that it be such a way as men may travell on horse back & drive cattle; and if such a way not be found, then to take a speedy course to sett up a foote bridge at Mackrell Cove."

The original roads were merely tracks or trails, over the beaches, and leading from one house or settlement to another, not having a well-defined objective point; hence their meandering courses at the present day. From foot-paths and bridle-trails, those most in use finally hardened into roads, which were ultimately extended so as to connect distant points, or with the great public highways, as between Boston and Ipswich.

Our forefathers came here, primarily, for religious freedom; they accepted the country and conditions of life as they found them, striving hard and always to improve both. They could not, like settlers at the present day, project a town or city in advance, on paper, laying out streets and highways, broad and straight, and defining beforehand the position of every public building, park and station.

A home, first of all, they sought; a farm, where the land was most fertile and its surface most easily prepared for the plough. They found no broad acres of prairie land lying open to cultivation; but were obliged to labor, for many months, at the surface-work of preparation. There was at first a struggle for mere existence; their sustenance was to be drawn from the soil, supplemented by the various products of the sea. Theirs was not a high ambition, yet it was the noblest man can conceive: to have a home of their own for the possession of themselves and their descendants.

This characteristic trait has descended to the pres-

ent generation: this desire to retain an ownership in the soil; and perhaps explains the thrift and prosperity that has ever attended upon the town.

As the founding of homes was the main occupation of the inhabitants during the first century or so, and as this gave them little leisure for visiting, there was not much attention paid to the means of intercommunication. Thus it was the original trails, with all their sinuous traceries, became indurated, as it were, into the roads of the present day. The cow path of the "stray" from the Woodbury farm at the Cove to the larger farms on the Bass River, is now crossed by portions of Cross and Colon (or Cow Lane) Streets.

It may be well to note, in passing, that the right to traverse the ancient bridle-trail along the shore is still claimed by many inhabitants.

1647.—27th October: The inhabitants of Mackerell Cove (as the coast settlement was called), were released from watching in Salem, except in seasons of danger. They had preaching soon after at Cape Ann Side, and erected a house of worship. Twelve years later, they built a parsonage, as appears from the curious deposition in the Salem Records:

1659.—9th month, 29th:

"Wee whose names are hereunder written being desired to vew and to take notice what work is yet to be done to the house which John Norman built for the use of the Ministrie on Cape An Side, having vewed the same accordinge to our best understandinge wee doe judge that the work yet to be donne is worth att least fiftie shillings, besides the dividing of the rooms.

"The T mark C of THOMAS CHURCH.

"The Z " of ZACHARIAH HERRICK.

"WILLIAM SEARGENT."

This house was built on the slope of the hill opposite the (Bancroft) house at present standing, which was built for the minister's use about 1690.

FIRST CHURCH OF BEVERLY.—The records of the First Church contain a faithful description of the first foundation in Beverly, as follows: "The Lord in mercy alluring and bringing over into this wilderness of New England, many of his faithfull servants from England, whose ayms were to worship God in purity according to his word; they, in pursuance of that work, began to sett up particular churches; and the First Church gathered in Massachusetts colony was in the town of Salem; a gracious beginning of that intended church reformation, which hath beine farther prosecuted and prospered through the Lord's mercy in divers parts of the land. This church of Salem entered church covenant with publique fasting and prayer upon the sixth day of the sixth month, 1629; their number att the beginning very small, was soon greatly increased and enriched with divers worthy labourers in God's vineyard as Pastors and Teachers successively, viz.: Mr. Samuel Skelton, Mr. Francis Higginson, Mr. Hugh Peters, Mr. Edward Norris and Mr. John Higginson, their present Pastor.

1650. "As their church increased, divers of the members came over the Ferry to live on Bass River



side, who, on the 10th of the 12th mo., 1649 (Mr. Norris being teacher), presented their request to the rest of the church for some course to be taken for the means of grace among themselves, because of tediousness and difficulties over the water and other inconveniences, which motion was renewed againe the 22d of 1st mo., 1650, and on the 2d day of the 8th mo. they returned their answer, viz.: that we should look out some able and approved teacher, to be employed amongst us, wee still holding communion with them as before.

"But upon farther experience wee, upon the 23 of the first month, 1656, presented our desires to be a church of ourselves, and after some agitation about it, wherein our teacher stood for us, it was put to voat and yielded unto, none appeering opposite, we protesting there was no disunion in judgment or affection intended but brotherly communion.

"Our desire being consented unto, wee proceeded to build a meeting-house on Bass River Side, and we called unto us successively to dispense the word of life unto us, Mr. Joshua Hubbard, Mr. Jeremiah Hubbard and Mr. John Hailes; and after almost three yeares experience of Mr. John Hailes, our motion was again renewed the 23d of 4th mo., 1667." The petition follows of Mr. Roger Conant and some eighty others, to be set off from the First Church in Salem to form the First Church of Beverly.

Rev. John Hale was ordained 1667, with John Higginson, pastor of the First Church, Salem, Thomas Cobbett, of the Church of Ipswich and Antipas Newman, of the Church in Wenham, officiating.

The first fast day, or day of humiliation, entered on the parish records is in 1667, 8th day of Tenth month. On the 26th day of First month, 1668, "The Councill of Magistrates apoynt a General Fast, to mourne for prophainness, superstition & herisie, in ceasing to pray for the encouragement of religion, disapoynting of its Enemys, yt the great motions of ye world bee overruled by God's glory. That He would bless & direct ye King, Councell & Parliament, bless ye peace with Holland, & sanctifie ye late war, pestilence & burning of ye city of London, & continue to New England peace, liberty & ye gospel, & prevent in ye ensuing yeare blasting mildew & caterpillars, & convert the rising Generation."

1669, 17th day, Ninth month, was a day set apart for Public Thanksgiving, "to bless ye Lord for staying ye immoderate ruines wch threatened to destroy ye harvests of corne & fresh hay, & for ya harvests the Lord has given."

Let us now turn to the first records of the growing settlement, still to be found in the custody of the town clerk, and in excellent preservation:

1665.—1st month.—"A booke of such publicke concernements as appertaine to the people of Bass river or Cape An side, relating bothe to theire civill & ministeriall affairs, from the first of the first month, 1665.

"3d mo. '65.—Whereas, we doe, with one consent,

invite Mr. John Hayle to come amongst us, in order to settling with us in the worke of the ministry; for his due encouragement in the work of the Lord, amongst us, according to 2 Chron. 31, 4; & that he may attend upon the worke of the ministrie without distraction, we doe promise & engage to pay unto him £70 per annum, & his fierwood raised amongst us by a rate in equall portions, according to our former custome; & for the manner and time of payment, that he may not have to doe with particular men's portions of allowance, the bill shall not be delivered unto him, nor shall he be troubled with gathering of it in; but 2 men shall be chosen yeere by yeere, to take the care of bringing it into his house, and to make up the account at the time appointed. Also, whereas we have built a house for the ministrie, wherein it is defective to be finished by us. And there are 2 akers of home lot (to be fenced in by us) & as much meadow land belonging to it as commonly bears about fower load of hay; we doe agree that he shall have the use of that so long as he continues in the worke of the ministrie with us; yet, because we do acknowledge it his duty to provide for wife and children, that he may leave behind him, and our duty to have a care of him in that respect, we doe therefore promise and engage that in case he die in the ministrie with us, that either the house and two aker house lot forementioned shall be his, or that which is equivalent, to be paid (according to his last will and testament) within the compass of one yeare after his decease, and for the repaire of the house and fenced home lot, to be done by him living thereon for the time being.

"Also, it is agreed that Mr. Hayle shall have the use and benefit of a pasturing, the time he lives with us.

"[William] Dodge & Humphrey Woodbury be chosen to gather the rates for the ministrie.

"May 15th.—There was chosen at a publick meeting, for to make the rate for Mr. Hails maintenance for this yeere ('65), as followeth: Captain Lathrop, Mr. Thorndick, Roger Conant, Samuel Corning, Joseph Rootes.

"Mr. John Haile his year begineth with us for his allowance of £70 and his fierwood."

From this date on, through a long period, the history of the church is that of the community.

1667.—The first meeting-house was erected in 1656, just easterly of the present building; but the first church was organized in 1667, September 20, and the Rev. John Hale ordained as pastor. The names of original members are here given: John Hale, Richard Dodge, William Woodbury, Richard Brackenbury, John Stone, John Dodge, Roger Conant, William Dodge, Humphrey Woodbury, Nicholas Patch, John Hill, Thomas Lothrop, Samuel Corning, Robert Morgan, John Black, Lot Conant, Ralph Ellingwood, William Dixey, Henry Herriek, Peter Woolfe, Josiah Rootes, Exercise Conant, Edward Bishop, Elizabeth

Dodge; Mary Lovett, Elizabeth Haskell, Mary Woodbury, Sarah Leech, Freegrace Black, Eliz. Corning, Eliz. Woodbury, Ellen Brackenbury, Hannah Woodbury, Eliz. Patch, Hannah Sallows, Bethiah Lothrop, Anna Dixey, Anna Woodbury, Eliz. Woodbury, Martha Woolfe, Hannah Baker, Mary Herrick, Bridget Luff, Mary Dodge, Anna Woodbury, Ede. Herrick, Mary Dodge, Jr., Abigail Hill, Lydia Herrick. Mrs. Rebekah Hall was subsequently admitted by letter from the Church at Salisbury, and a month later Humphrey Woodbury's wife, Sarah, Humphrey Jr., John Clark, Jr., Remember Stone and Sarah Conant, were received into full communion. The first sacrament was observed September 29th, and the first infant baptized was Abigail, daughter of John and Hannah Sallows.

1667.—“At a generell meeting of the inhabitants of Cape Ann side, the 11th of the 9th month, there is chosen to make the rate for Mr. Hale for the year Mr. [L.] Thorndike, Thomas Lowthropp, Robert Morgan, Richard Brackenbury, Ensigne Corninge, William Ramond & John Dodge Sen., to see it brought in.”

Four men were appointed for the year, to see that the cutting and hauling of wood were attended to, viz.: (1) Goodman West, from his house to Cedar Stan (from West Beach to Sallow's Bridge); (2) Humphrey Woodbury, from his house to the ferry (probably from Humphrey Woodbury's point to bridge, and soe to the meeting-house (and from the ferry via Cabot street to the Old South); (3) Ensigne Corning, from his house to Mr. Conant's bridge (or from the Old South to Tan-yard brook); (4) Mr. Conant is for all the rest” (probably all north of Tan-yard brook to the Wenham line).

“Cart wayes. It is agreed that the wayes to the meeting-house & mill be laide out wheare it is most convenient, & those that are damnfied thereby shall be satisfied by those that make use of the same.”

The first mill was at the head of Bass River, near Balch Street.

THE TOWN INCORPORATED.—The Bass River people were allowed by General Court to exercise some of the powers of a town in 1665, a step preliminary to final separation from the mother-settlement. They were still subordinate to Salem until 1668, November 29d.

“Whereas, wee the inhabitants of Basse River and Cape Ann side, after many agitation in publique meetings what might be for our comfortable settling, made choice of some amongst us to draw up'n writing specifying our desires and deputed messengers to the General Court held at Boston the 29th of April 1668, by petition to our Governor & magistrates to invest them with power to choose yearly a fitt number of persons, who might have power within themselves as selectmen have in other places, and so to act in the behalfe of the place by employing others, officers or persons, as the affairs of the place may occasion.

“At the next General Court att Boston the 14th of October 1668, Wee received this answer; that they judged meete that hereafter wee should be a towneshipp of ourselves, nomanating itt Beverly.”

The County (Essex) was incorporated in 1643. The eight original towns were Naumkeag, 1626; Salem, set-

tled 1628; Lynn, 1629; Ipswich, 1633-34; Cohichewic (Andover), 1634; Enon (Wenham), 1639; Rowley, 1639; Newbury (offshoot of Ipswich), 1635; Gloucester (Cape Ann, 1624). 1642; chronologically, the settlements were: Cape Ann, 1624-25; Naumkeag, 1626; Salem, 1628; Lynn, 1629; Cape Ann Side (Beverly), 1630; Ipswich, 1634, etc.

“It was not long,” says Cotton Mather, in his *Magnalia Christi Americana*, “before the Massachusetts colony was become like an hive, overstocked with bees; and many of the new inhabitants entertained thoughts of swarming into plantations extended further into the country.”

Thus had “Cape Ann Side” and “Bass River” grown from its small beginnings until strong enough to set up a hive of its own, and, in turn, send out the *avant couriers* of conquest and colonization. And regarding the name selected, “As there are few of our towns but what have their namesakes in England, so the reason why most of our towns are called what they are, is because the chief of the first inhabitants would thus bear up the names of the particular places there from whence they came.” This may not have been the case with Beverly, though the inhabitants of Cape Ann Side were exceedingly fortunate in the euphonious appellation bestowed by General Court. The name may have been suggested by Beverley in England, in the East Riding of Yorkshire, celebrated for its beautiful minster and as the home of John de Beverley, Archbishop of York, a thousand years ago. The name also, may have been derived from “*Beaver Lea*” or beaver meadow, as we have “Beaver Pond;” and remains of beaver dams have been found here. Notwithstanding the beauty of the name and its associations, some of the settlers were dissatisfied, as appears in 1671 (May 28), in

“The humble petition of Roger Conant, of Bass river, alias Beverly who have bin a planter in New England fortie-eight yeeres and upwards, being one of the first, if not the very first, that resolved and made good my settlement, vnder God, in matter of plantation with my family, in this colony of the Massachusetts Bay, and have bin instrumentall, both for the founding and carrying on of the same; and when in the infancy thereof, it was in great hassard of being deserted, I was a means, through grace assisting me, to stop the flight of those few that then were heere with me, and that my utter deniall to goe away with them, who would have gon either for England or mostly for Virginia, but thereupon stayed to the hassard of our lives.

“Now my humble suit and request is vnto this honorable Court, onlie that the name of our town or plantation may be altdred or changed from Beverly and be called Budleigh. I have two reasons that have moved me vnto this request. The first is the great dislike and discontent for this name of Beverly, because, (wee being but a small place) it hath caused on vs a constant nickname of beggarly, being in the months of many, and no order was given or consent by the people heere to their agent for any name vntill they were shure of being a town granted in the first place.

“Secondly, I being the first that had house in Salem (and neuer had any hand in naming either that or any other towne) and myself with those that were then with me, being all from the western part of England, desire this western name of Budleigh, a market town in Denonshier and heere vnto the sea as wee are heere in this place, and where myself was borne.

“Now in regard to our firstnesse and antiquity in this soe famous a colony, we should humble request this littell princeling with your fauour and consent, to give this name abovesaid vnto our town.



"I neuer yet made sute or request vnto the Generall Court for the least matter, tho' I thinke I might as well haue done, as many others haue, who haue obtained much without hassard of life or preferring the publike good before there own interest, which, I praise God, I haue done. If this my sute may find acceptation with your worships, I shall rest vnto thankfull and my priores shall not cease vnto the throne of grace for Gods guidance and his blessing to be on all your mightie proceedings and that iustice and righteousness may be enie where a minis-tered, and sound doctrine, truth, and helmes curie where taught and practised throughout the wilderness, to all posterity, which God grant. Amen.

"Your worships vntile petitioner and servant,

"ROGER CONANT."¹

His petition was not granted, fortunately, though the General Court gave him, in recognition of his services, two hundred acres of land, near Dunstable.

This petition is inserted, at length, owing to its great value in authenticating several facts in Beverly's early history.

1668.—November 23.—"Att a generall meeting of the Inhabitants of Beverly, this 23d Nov., 1668, selectmen were nominated, & by vote 5 chosen, to order the affaires & conserments of the town for this yeare following, viz.: Capt. Thomas Lothrop, Wm. Dixey, Wm. Dodge, sen., John West, Paule Thorn-dike. . . .

"It is ordered, that the selectmen shall call in all old accompts & see them rectified.

"It is also agreed at this present meeting, that Capt. Lothrop, Wm. Dodge, sen., John Rayment, Edw'd Byshopp & Wm. Rayment, shall meet with our neighbours of Salem, to divide the grounds between us . . . in tyme convenient."

A little previous to this time, in 1660, Salem had applied to the Legislature for a grant of the islands lying off her harbor, though nearer the Beverly shore, Baker's Island and the Miserys.

"Whereas there are certayne Ilands neare our towne commonly known by the names of the Miserys and Baker's Iland, fit for fishing employments, etc." In 1662-63 Thomas Tyler, then of Martha's Vineyard, son of Masconomo, the Ipswich sagamore, sold his claim on these islands to Bartholomew Gale; but it was disallowed by Salem.

They were then covered with primitive forest.

The "Misery" was so called from a disastrous shipwreck happening there.

Baker's Island was so-called after one Robert Baker, a ship-carpenter, ancestor of the present families of the name in North Beverly and the Cove, who was accidentally killed while felling timber there.

1669.—June 11.—"At a generall towne meeting, legally warned by the Inhabitants of Beverly, it is agreed upon that Mr. John Hailes shall have hold and enjoy that parcell of land being within the generall fence of the field adjoyning unto his pasture which he bought of Wm. Dodge, sen., for him and his heirs forever, hee maintaining the side fence liing against the Common without the field. (This land probably lies along Essex St., adjoining Prospect

Hill, which was Hale's pasture). It is also ordered this present tyme by a generall vote that no man shall fall any timber in the Commons without order, except it be for his own use; but he shall pay the value of twenty shillings for each tree, to him or them, that are deputed to receive it for the publike good of the place."

1670.—29th April.—Ordered and generally voted, "that there shall not be any of the towne land liing in the Commons disposed of uppon any account; but by the consent of the whole, att a Generall towne meeting, legally warned."

"March 24th. It is ordered that all swyne above 3 month shall be sufficiently ringed and yoaked."

1671.—It is ordered that the country highway from Cedarstand up to the meeting-house, as far as the ferry, be made sufficient for horse and cart.

It is agreed with Jonathan Byles to make a pound for the town. "And the said Jonathan is to have for this pound aforesaid & to make a payre of stocks, both to be brought in and sett up in 'Beverly, 50 shillings,' part of it in trees from the Commons.

17th Aug. "It is ordered that their shall be a rate made to make provision for powder & shott & ammunition, according as the law requires, by the selectmen.

13th Sept. "It was agreed that a place for buriall should be provided, and an acre of ground to be gotten,—which was bought of Lieut. Wm. Dixey, lying by the country highway on the one side, bounded on the other side uppon Nathaniel Stone & Josias Rootes." (This land extended from Milton to Wallis streets, between Cabot street and Stephen's hill,) and was not used for burial purposes, but exchanged for land of John Lovett.

1672.—The town contributed (February 14th), £13 to Harvard College.

The bounds between Beverly and Manchester were defined and settled about as they stand to-day. The land bought for a cemetery was "exchanged with John Lovett, Jun., for one acre of Land, on part whereof the publike meeting-house standeth, beginning at the bound tree on the northeast & so to make up the acre compleat towards the house of the said John Lovett." (This latter is the one first used as a cemetery, on a portion of which the present Old South chapel stands, and through which Abbott Street now runs.)

1674.—"It was agreed upon and voted that there shall as soon as conveniently may be, a school-house built that shall likewise be for a watch-house; and that the said house shall be set upon the town's land by the meeting-house." Its construction was delayed, and for a time the school continued to be held in the church.

1675.—"It is agreed at a publick towne meetinge, in the two & twentie day of October, that they should have forthwith a forte builte, about the meeting-house, & one at Bass River, & one at Mackrill Cove

¹ Mass. Hist. Collections.

& another at John Dodge's, senior," near the Wenham line.

THE NARRAGANSETT WAR.—These preparations for defense announce that the mutterings of war were beginning to disturb the calm of their peaceful occupations. Philip of Pokanoket, the dreaded sachem of the Waupanogs, broke the peace, which had existed between his tribe and the settlers for fifty years, and began the series of massacres that alarmed every resident in the colonies. No section felt safe from attack; all the towns joined in sending soldiers to the seat of operations in the Connecticut Valley. And even Beverly, though remote from the field of active warfare, felt the necessity for not only defensive, but aggressive action.

Her favorite son, Captain Lothrop, was appointed to the command of a company of infantry in the Massachusetts forces, and with them hastened to the frontier. The town of Hadley was then the headquarters of the troops in that region, and at that place Captain Lothrop was soon found, with his choice company of young men, selected from the best families in the county, and styled the "Flower of Essex."

The provisions and forage of Hadley ran short, but in the near town of Deerfield was a large amount of grain, estimated at 3000 bushels, stacked in the fields, which had been abandoned by the farmers when driven out by the Indians. To thresh this grain and transport it to Hadley, Captain Lothrop and his company were detached, and set out for Deerfield with a number of teams and drivers.

Having secured the grain, Lothrop began the return march to Hadley, on the 18th of September, without apprehension of attack from Indians, as none had been seen. But the wily Philip had marked him for his prey. The following account,¹ published many years ago, describes the terrible event:

"For the distance of about three miles, after leaving Deerfield meadow, Lothrop's march lay through a very level country, closely wooded, where he was every moment exposed to an attack on either flank; at the termination of this distance, near the south point of Sugar-loaf hill, the road approximated the Connecticut River, and the left was in some measure protected. At the village now called Muddy Brook, in the easterly part of Deerfield, the road crossed a small stream, bordered by a narrow morass, from which the village has its name; though more appropriately it should be denominated *Bloody Brook*, by which it is sometimes known. Before arriving at the point of intersection with the brook, the road for about half a mile ran parallel with the morass, then, crossing, it continued to the south point of Sugar-loaf hill. On discovering Lothrop's march, a body of upwards of seven hundred Indians plotted themselves in ambuscade at the point of crossing, and lay in waiting. Without scouting the woods in front and flank, or suspecting the snare laid for him, Lothrop arrived at the fatal spot, crossed the morass with the principal part of his force, and probably halted to allow his teams to drag through the loads. The critical moment had arrived—the Indians instantly poured a heavy and destructive fire upon the column, and rushed furiously to the attack. Confusion and dismay succeeded. The troops broke and scattered, fiercely pursued by the Indians, whose great superiority enabled them to attack at all points. Hopeless was the situation of the scattered troops, and they resolved to end their lives in a vigorous struggle. Covering themselves with trees, the bloody conflict now became a trial of skill in sharpshooting, in which

life was the stake. Difficult would it be to describe the havoc, barbarity and misery that ensued. The dead, the dying, the wounded, strewed the ground in all directions; the devoted force was soon reduced to a small number, and resistance became faint. At length the unequal struggle terminated in the annihilation of nearly the whole of the English, only seven or eight escaping to relate the dismal tale; and the wounded were indiscriminately butchered. Captain Lothrop fell in the early part of the action."

The whole loss, including teamsters, amounted to ninety, and among the slain were included, from Beverly, besides the lamented Lothrop, Josiah Dodge, Peter Woodbury and John (Joseph)? Balch, John Bennett, (?) Edward Trask, (?) Samuel Whitteridge. (?) Unsuspicious of danger, it is said, the soldiers had laid aside their arms and were gathering grapes by the roadside when the destructive volleys were poured into their ranks.

² "This catastrophe sent a thrill of terror and dismay through all the New England colonies. Especially did the news of it come with appalling force to this county, from which its choicest flowers, all culled out of its towns, and blooming so lately in manly beauty and strength, had been thus suddenly cut down and withered as by untimely frost. Throughout its length and breadth, scarcely was there a village or hamlet left unscathed by this great calamity. More particularly, and with stunning effect, did the blow fall here, where, besides several that were deeply lamented, the fallen chief was best known, and for that reason most respected, trusted and loved."

In the year 1835 the burial-place of Lothrop and his thirty men was identified, and a monument erected (1838) in commemoration of the battle of Bloody Brook. At the laying of its corner-stone, Edward Everett delivered a memorable address, saying, in conclusion, "The 'Flower of Essex' shall bloom in undying remembrance, as the lapse of time shall continually develop, in richer abundance, the fruits of what was done and suffered by our fathers." In order that the descendants of such 'fathers' should remember one of the most valiant of their deeds, we should acquaint them with the story, and locality, of the famous Bloody Brook. The monument erected may be seen to-day, standing in South Deerfield, overshadowed by the towering mass of sandstone known as the Sugar-loaf, where, beneath a shelving cliff, is shown the hollowed rock known as King Philip's Seat, whence he overlooked the surrounding country and that day noted the movements of Captain Lothrop's command.

The original list of the slain at "Muddy Brook, being y^e 18 of Sept.," is in the State-House, Boston: "A List of Men slain in the county of Hampshire, tho' we cannot gett y^e names of all, yet as many as wee can gett are here ynsered; also, the time when and place where they were slain."—Mass. Military Records, v. 68, p. 33.

"Ah, gallant fow! No generous foe
Had met them by that crimsoned tide;
Vain even despair's resistless blow,—
As brave men do and die,—they died!
Yet not in vain,—a cry that shook
The inmost forest's desert glooms,
Swelled o'er their graves, until it broke
In storm around the red man's homes!

¹ Hoyt's "Indian Wars."

² Thayer's Memorial.

" But beating hearts, far, far away,
Broke at their story's fearful truth,
And maidens sweet, for many a day,
Wept o'er the vanished dreams of youth ;
By the blue distant ocean-tide,
Wept years, long years, to hear them tell
How by the wild wood's lonely side
The Flower of Essex fell."

In the same year, 1675, in the expedition against the Narragansett Fort, when Philip met his Waterloo, Beverly contributed her quota, nothing dismayed at her previous losses. We find, as the soldiers engaged under the brave Captain Gardner, of Salem, who fell December 19th, the following persons, townsmen of ours: William Allen, William Balch, Wm. Bonner, Joseph Bayley, Thomas Blashfield, Jonathan Biles, Christopher Browne, Lot Conant, John Clark, Wm. Dodge, John Dodge, John Ellingwood, Wm. Ferryman, Samuel Harris, Richard Hussband, Moses Morgan, Jos. Morgan, Elias Picket, Thos. Rayment, Wm. Rayment, Christopher Reed (wounded), John Trask.

At the capture of Port Royal, in 1654, where Lothrop served as captain, he had with him, from Beverly, Lieut. Thomas Whittredge, Lieut. Elias Rayment, Wm. Woodbury, Humphrey Woodbury and Peter Wooden. From the very beginning of their settlement, the people of Beverly furnished their share of soldiers for the common defense and conquest.

In addition to these soldiers, engaged, there were others, in a company on the eastern frontier, under the command of Captain Frost. These were John Ellingwood (who had the fore-finger of his right hand shot away, for which he subsequently received a pen-ion), Thomas Parlor and Samuel Collins.

Previous to the attack upon the Narragansett Fort, when the soldiers were assembled on Dedham Plain, they were promised a reward in land for their services, in addition to their pay, provided they "played the man, and drove the Narragansetts from the fort." This promise was eventually fulfilled, but not until nearly sixty years had passed away, when the soldiers engaged in this campaign were granted several townships of land, each six miles square, in the wild region, now included in the States of Maine and New Hampshire. The township shared in by the Beverly soldiers or their heirs, was known then as Souhegan West, at present Amherst, New Hampshire. The names of the proprietors from Beverly, in 1741, when they met to take possession, were ¹* Henry Bayley, Henry Blashfield and assigns, * Jonathan Byles, * Lott Conant, Andrew Dodge for J. Ellinwood, Jona. Dodge for John Dodge, Wm. Dodge's heirs, * Ralph Ellinwood, Saml. Harris' heirs, Joseph Morgan for his father, Joseph Picket for his father, Elias, * Thomas Rayment, Wm. Rayment's heirs, and * Christopher Reed.

1676.—At a public meeting, December 5th, it was

¹ From "Hist. of Amherst." The stars denote the then survivors of the fight.

voted to employ two constables, in place of one, on account of the extraordinary troubles of the times. And "It is ordered by the selectmen that the hinder site of the olders gallery in the meeten house is to be altered, and the Boise ar to seete there, and Robert Hibberd, senior, is to hafe an Eie out for them, and for the first offense to aquaint thar parants or masters of it, and if they do ofend again to aquante the Selectmen with it, who shall dele with them according to lawe."

1677.—*May 12th*, "It is agreed between the selectmen, in behalf of the towns, and Mr. Samuel Hardie, that the said Mr. Hardie is to begin to teach a scoole, according to the utmost of his ability, . . . and the said Hardie is to have the meeting-house to teach scoole in during the somer tyme, and some other place against winter." He was to receive £20; and it is explained that "by ordinary learning is meant reading, writing, arethmetick, and Latin according to his ability."

June 25th, "In obedians to a law of the honored Jenerall Corte they made choise of ten men to inspeete thar naibours to prevente as much as may be, privet tipling and Druckeness," whose names be as followeth: Wm. Dodge, Robt. Bradford, Humph. Woodbury, Josiah Root, Robert Heberd, Nath. Hayward, Exsersis Conant, John Hill, Richard Ober, John Dodge.

1679.—*28th April*, "We whose names are under-written beeing by the apointment of the selectmen of our respective towns, mett to goe a perambulation in the bounds between our said towns from the Rock at the head of Bass River to the pine stump in the swamp that runneth out of Laurence Leach's meadow, have accordingly gone the said preambulation, and renewed the said bounds as neere as one could guess," etc.

BEVERLY.

John Raiment,
Paul Thorndike,
John Dodge,
William Raiment,
Andrew Elliott,
Peter Woodbery.

SALEM.

John Corwin,
Thomas Putnam,
Phillip Cromwell,
Richard Leach,
John Putnam,
Isaiah Porter.

1679.—*25th November*, "Leftenant Thorndike and William Rayment was chosen to manage the case in ye behalf of ye towne of Beverly at the present corte held at Salem, which controversy is between the town of Beverly and Captaine Moore; about a bell." (This was a controversy on the freight on the bell brought from Port Royal in 1654.)

1680.—*December 10*, The selectmen agreed with William Hoar to . . . "sweep the meeting-house as is necessary and usuall, keep and turn the (hour) glass, & doe in all respects as Goodman Bayly hath done before him; and further, the said Goodman Hoar is to ring the meeting-house bell at nine of the clock every night a sufficient space of time, and as is usuall in other places. In consideration whereof the said Hoar is to have for his pains as goodman Bayley had,

viz.: of every family in the towne one peck of corne per year."

It is said that the town was troubled by wolves, and in 1678 John Edwards was allowed £3 for killing three of them. These creatures were numerous and troublesome in the neighboring village of Ipswich, so late as 1750.

Beverly resisted the claims of the Mason heirs to their portion of the territory between the Naumkeag and the Merrimac, and memorialized the king.

After reciting their loyalty to King Charles, etc.

1681.—*February 22d*, "So that we can produce quires, yea Rheams of paper, which we conceive it would be presumption for us to desire our dread sovereign to bee diverted from the mighty affairs of three kingdoms for the hearing of; for we had above fifty years possession, & entered upon the place with the good liking of the Indians, the ancient inhabitants of this country. Wee have adventured our lives and estates & worn out much time and strength in the subduing a wilderness for the increasing his Majesties dominions & customs; and in the late wars with the heathen have carried our lives in our hands to defend our possessions, with the loss of about 12 English lives of our towne, & and expended some hundreds of pounds to maintain our lands, & in this time of above fifty years neither Mr. Mason nor any for him did either take possession or disburse estate, or make demand of our lands or expended one penny to defend them."

The testimony of the aged inhabitants of the town, as Richard Brackenbury, William Dixy and Humphrey Woodbury, to the effect that the Massachusetts Company had purchased of the Dorchester Company all their rights and property at Cape Ann, before Gov. Endicott arrived, was regarded as conclusive. They further declared that they had "free lease to build and plant" from the resident Indians, and that the same year, or the next after they had come to Salem, they had cut hay for their cattle on the Cape Ann, or Beverly side, and "had been in possession of Beverly side ever since."

Although the occupants of the soil were never actually molested, it was not until 1746, after nearly a century of agitation, that the Mason claimants abandoned this pretension and left the settlers in peaceful possession.

1683.—Beverly became a lawful port of entry, this year, annexed to the port of Salem.

1684.—*September 1st*, "At a meeting of the selectmen it was agreed with Andrew Elliott Sen., and Samuel Hardie, to transcribe all that is necessary to be transcribed out of the old town book into the new one within two months after the date hereof; & that when the work is completed then the selectmen in the town's behalf shall pay to said Andrew Elliott ten shillings in money, and unto Samuel Hardie five shillings in money, besides ten already paid him on the same account." The second volume of records begins:

"Third Nov. 1685, then this book was improved for the town of Beverly, as a town book to record the town concerns by the selectmen of said town successively," etc.

1686.—One of Beverly's aged and worthy citizens, John Lovett, died this year; he was born 1610, and was "one of the eight admitted inhabitants of Salem," July 25, 1639. At the "seven men's meeting," Nov. 3, 1665, he received a grant of two acres of marsh land lying near the old planter's meadow, near Wenham Common. He owned much real estate, and his descendants maintain the name in Beverly to this day.

1690.—The town had no regularly-appointed clerk until 1690, hence the fragmentary character of the records, which were begun in 1665, until, in April of this year, Andrew Elliott was elected to the office at a salary of 30 shillings in money and 40s. in "pay," or produce. He was one of the five witnesses, in 1680, taken from Beverly to attend at the execution of the Indian deed of the town of Salem. He was town clerk until his death, in 1703-4, when Robert Woodbury succeeded to the office. His entries in the record were very circumstantial, as witness the following:

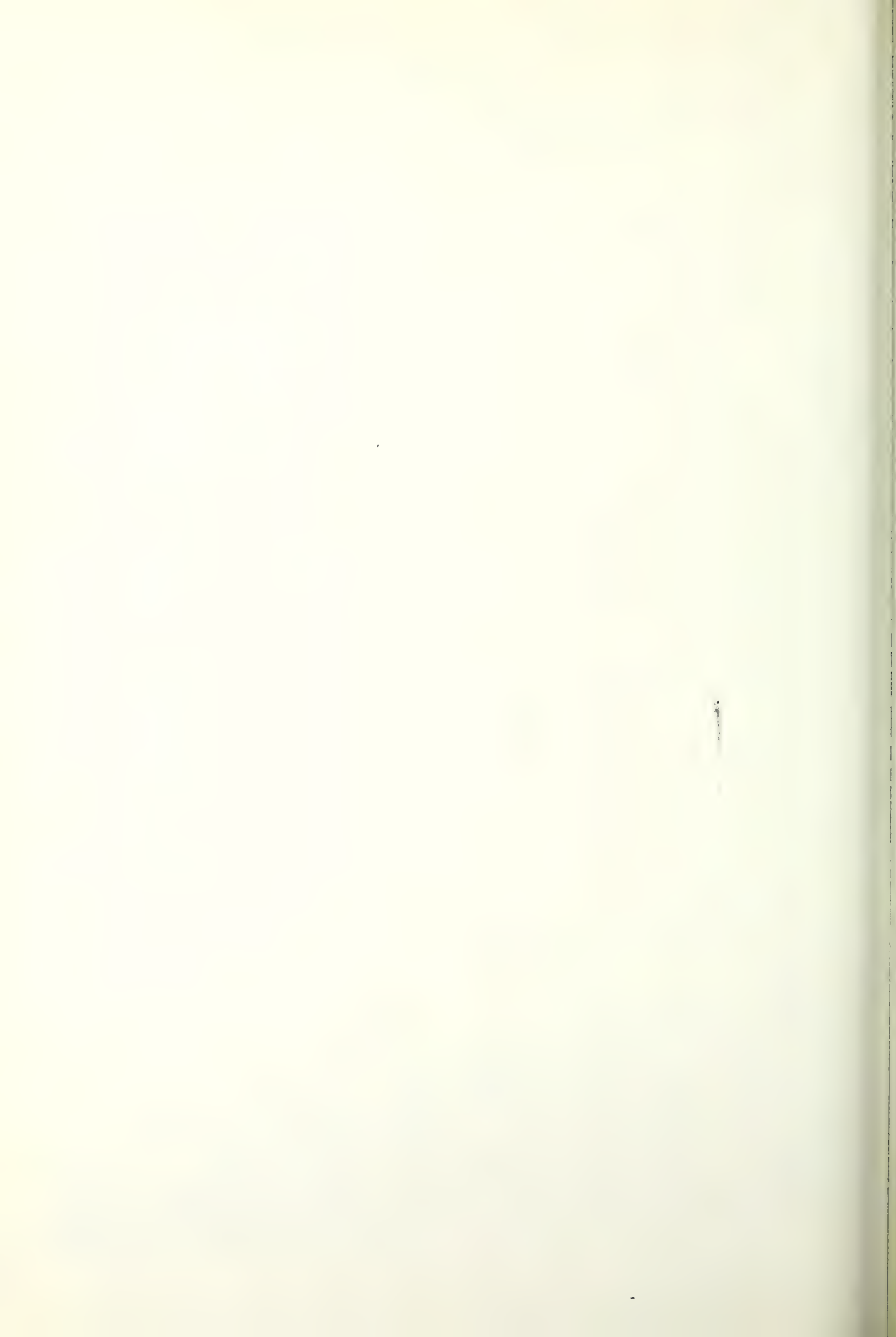
"John Tovy, sometime of Winserd in Old England, near Bristow, afterward apprentice with Andrew Elliott, shoemaker, of Beverly, New England, & nextly, husband unto Mary Herick (now widow) was unfortunately drowned coming from Winter Island in a Canoo unto said Beverly, not to be forgotten, on the 24th day of August, in the year of our Lord God 1686."

"Andrew Elliott, the dear and only son of Andrew Elliott, (whose mother's name was Grace) & was born in East Coker in the County of Somerset in Old England, being on board of a vessel appertaining unto Phillip English of Salem, one Baydige being master, said vessel being then at Cape Sables, by an awful stroke was violently thrown into the sea & there perished in the water, to the great grief of his said father, the penman hereof; being aged about 37 years on the 12th day of September, about 10 of the clock in the morning, according to the best information, in the year of our Lord God 1688.

"Deep meditation surely, every man in his best estate is wholly vanitie."

The year 1690 was signalized by the unfortunate expedition against Quebec, under Sir William Phipps. The town borrowed money "to buy great guns and ammunition," and a company was raised and sent with the expedition, under Capt. William Rayment. This adventure is said to have cost Massachusetts £50,000, besides many men, and was disastrous from the beginning. Captain Rayment and his command were subjected to great privations, for which they were "subsequently rewarded by a grant of a township of land."

1692. WITCHCRAFT PROCEEDINGS.—It is on record that the Rev. Mr. Hale served as chaplain in this campaign, and that on his return he found the country agitated over the witchcraft sensation. Although none of Beverly's inhabitants perished in this diabolical cyclone, yet several were cried out against by the "Salem wenches," the "afflicted" children, and narrowly escaped with their lives. Four, at least: Dorcas Hoar, Sarah Morell, Susanna Rootes and Job Tuckey, were accused, arrested, condemned and imprisoned. Sarah Morell and Dorcas Hoar were arrested by Mar-



shal Herrick.¹ May 2, 1692, on a warrant issued by Capt. Jona. Walcott and Sergt. Thos. Putnam, of Salem Village, which included the well-known merchant of Salem, Philip English. So far as we may judge from the records of the trials, Dorcas Hoar was the bravest and most outspoken of any of that innocent band of accused, penetrating through the transparent deceit of the "wenches," and promptly characterizing the proceedings as infamous. When she was brought into court the afflicted pretended to fall into fits at sight of her. "After coming out of them they vied with each other in heaping all sorts of accusations upon the prisoner; Abigail Williams and Ann Putnam charging her with having choked a woman in Boston; Elizabeth Hubbard crying out that she was pinching her, and showing the marks to the standers-by. The magistrate, indignantly believing the whole, said: 'Dorcas Hoar, why do you hurt these?' She answered,—'I never hurt any child in my life!' The girls then charged her with having killed her husband, and with various other crimes. Mary Walcott, Susanna Sheldon and Abigail Williams said they saw a black man whispering in her ear. The spirit of the prisoner was raised, and she said: 'Oh, you are liars, and God will stop the mouth of liars!' The anger of the magistrate was roused by this bold outbreak. 'You are not to speak after this manner in court.' 'I will speak the truth as long as I live,' she fearlessly replied."

Having ventured to oppose the bigoted and insensate magistrate and those inspired idiots the "afflicted children," she was, of course, sent to prison.²

Susanna Rootes was arrested the 21st of May, Job Tookey on the 4th of June. Against Job it was declared that he could "as freely discourse with the devil" as with his accuser, John Landier; that he had afflicted three of the "children," and had caused the death of Andrew Woodbury. Job Tookey is described as a "laborer," and was charged with having said that he would take Mr. Burroughs' (the accused minister's) part, and that "he was not the devil's servant, but that the devil was his." When charged that his shape afflicted persons, he stoutly assumed that in that case "it was not he, but the devil in his shape, that hurt them." The three girls, Susanna Sheldon, Mary Warren and Ann Putnam, then cried out upon him and then were struck dumb; after which performance Mary Warren recovered her speech and exclaimed: "There are three men, and three women, and two children, all in their winding sheets; they look pale upon us, but red upon Tookey—red as blood." Then

she saw "a young child under the table, crying out for vengeance," and one of her confederates was struck speechless, pointing in horror to the same shape under the table.

Poor Job may well have been struck with amazement upon hearing himself accused of murdering nearly all who had died at Ryal's Side for the year or two past, and the magistrates—Bartholomew Gedney, Jona. Corwin and John Hathorne—are represented as having been highly incensed at his obduracy in denying the charges, and promptly committed him to jail.

That these people were eventually released does not lessen the guilt of their accusers and of those who lent themselves as accessories to their conviction. Even the revered minister of Beverly, the Rev. John Hale, countenanced the proceedings against the accused Bridget Bishop, at one time a communicant in his church. About the year 1687 there resided at Ryal's Side "A woman in the neighborhood, subject to fits of insanity, who had, while passing into one of them, brought an accusation of witchcraft against her; but, on the return of her reason, solemnly recanted, and deeply lamented the aspersion."³

Rev. Mr. Hale had examined into the case at the time and exonerated Sister Bishop from the charge, yet "under the malign influence of his friend, the Rev. Sam. Parrish," he went into court in 1692, "without any pretence of new evidence touching the facts of the case, and related them to the effect and with the intent to make them bear against her." Bridget Bishop, innocent of crime, was condemned and soon after executed, June 10, 1692.

In October of the same year, Mr. Hale's own wife was accused, and then his feelings underwent a change. In a treatise, subsequently written against the "delusion," he says: "I have had a deep sense of the sad consequences of mistakes in matters capital, and their impossibility of recovering when completed; and what grief of heart it brings to a tender conscience to have been unwittingly encouraging of the sufferings of the innocent."

The remarks of Cotton Mather may, not inaptly, be quoted here: "They now saw that the more the afflicted were hearkened unto the more the number of the accused increased; until at last many scores were cried out upon, and among them some who by the unblameableness, yea, and serviceableness, of their whole conversation, had obtained the just reputation of good people among all that were acquainted with them. The character of the afflicted, also, added unto the common distaste; for though some of them, too, were good people, yet others of them, and such of them as were, most flippant at accusing, had a far other character." Setting aside this labored apology for the accusers, this admission of Mather's shows that the "afflicted" had overreached themselves, and had struck too high.

¹ "Marsial Herrick does not appear to have been connected with Joseph Herrick, who lived on what is now called Terry Hill, but was a man of an entirely different stamp. He was thirty-four years of age, and had not been long in the country."—Upham.

² Dorcas Hoar was the wife of sexton "Goodman Hoar," and their house was near the Hale parsonage, probably not far from West Dane Street (now now runs). She was a daughter of John Galley, free of speech and independent in her bearing. A friend of hers had been accused of stealing by Mrs. Hale, and this fact may have led to the accusation of the latter by the afflicted children.

³ Upham's Witchcraft, Vol. ii., pp. 25, et seq.

As the first victim executed, Bridget Bishop, was at one time a resident within the present limits of Beverly, and a member of the first church here; so likewise, the last to be selected was a shining light in this same church and community. But Mistress Hale, of Beverly, was one whose piety and "unblameableness" was known to all.

"The whole community became convinced that the accusers, in crying out upon Mrs. Hale, had perjured themselves, and from that moment their power was destroyed; the awful delusion was dispelled, and a close put to one of the most tremendous tragedies in the history of real life."¹

It is curious to note, in this connection, that one of the four daughters of the ill-fated Giles Corey, who was "pressed to death," was the wife of William Cleeves, of Beverly. Two of the wretched man's sons-in-law were among his accusers, but the other two remained constant in their belief in his innocence. To them he willed his entire property, and (it is believed), in order not to invalidate their right to it, endured the tortures of a horrible death; since, if he had come to trial, his property would have been confiscated. By refusing to plead, either guilty or not guilty, he obliged the court to stay his trial; but, in order to force him to speak the magistrates imposed upon him the terrible sentence, which he suffered.

Returning to the town records, we find among the entries of that same fateful year, one that will lend an additional interest to investigation; under the head of "births" is recorded: "John, son of Rev. John Hale, and Sarah his wife, December 24th, 1692."

Following along a little later, and without overstepping a strictly chronological record of events, we may note: "Mrs. Sarah Hale, wife of Rev. John Hale, pastor of the church in Beverly, departed this life on the 20th day of May in the year 1695."

A loving tribute to departed worth, is the poem by our townswoman, Lucy Larcom, entitled, "Mistress Hale, of Beverly," in which the life of that troublous witchcraft year, with its local color and environment, is finely delineated. After a description of the proceedings and of the part taken in them by the minister from Beverly, comes the denouement, the accusation of his wife, as the pastor of the first parish enters the court-house. * * * *

"Woe! Mistress Hale tormenteth me! she came in like a bird,
Perched on her husband's shoulder!" The silence fell; no more;
Spake either judge or minister, while with profound amaze
Each fixed upon the other's face his horror-stricken gaze.

"But, while the accuser writhed in wild contortions on the floor,
One rose and said, 'Let all withdraw! the court is closed!' no more;
Perwilt the land knew Mistress Hale's rare loveliness and worth;
Her virtues bloomed like flowers of heaven along the paths of earth.

"The minister of Beverly went homeward, riding fast,
His wife shrunk back from his strange look, affrighted and aghast.
'Dear wife, thou art! 'Shut thyself into thy room!' said he,
'Whoever comes, the latch-string keep drawn in from all save me!'

"Nor his life's treasure from close guard did he one moment lose,
Until across the ferry came a messenger with news
That the bewitched ones acted now vain mummeries of woe,
The judges looked and wondered still, but all the accused let go.

"The dark cloud rolled from off the land, the golden leaves dropped down
Along the winding wood-paths of the little sea-side town;
In Salem Village there was peace; with witchcraft trials passed
The nightmare-terror from the vexed New England air at last.

"Again in natural tones men dared to laugh aloud and speak;
From Naugus Head the fisher's shout rang back to Jeffry's Creek;
The phantom soldiery withdrew, that haunted Gloucester shore;
The teamster's voice through Wenham Woods broke into psalms once more.

"The minister of Beverly thereafter sorely grieved
That he had inquisition held with counsellors deceived;
Forsaking love's unerring light, and duty's solid ground,
And groping in the shadowy void, where truth is never found.

"Truth made transparent in a life, tried gold of character,
Were Mistress Hale's; and this is all that history says of her;
Their simple force, like sunlight, broke the hideous midnight spell,
And sight restored again to eyes obscured by fumes of hell.

"The minister's long fields are still with dews of summer wet;
The roof that sheltered Mistress Hale tradition points to yet.
Green be her memory ever kept all over Cape Ann Side,
Whose unobtrusive excellence awed back delusion's tide!"

1700. To close the chapter of this eventful century, the last decade of which had been so crowded with sensations and horrors, it remains only to transcribe here the last pathetic entry in the records pertaining to the honored head of the church. "The Rev. Mr. John Hale, Minister of the Gospel in Beverly, & Pastor of the Church of Christ there, aged about sixty-four years, departed this life on the 15th day of May, Anno Domini, 1700." Thus went out with the century a life of piety and broad humanity.

"The storms of fanatical excitement and of war with savages and civilized men had subsided, when, in May, 1700, the primeval epoch of this parish was closed, and Hale, its first minister, sank peacefully—honored, beloved, deeply lamented—to his final earthly rest." The last few years of his life must have been full of sorrow, and, doubtless, the messenger that summoned him hence to join the company of the beloved departed was welcomed and expected. Born in Charlestown in 1636, he graduated at Harvard in 1657, and thus lived through the crucial period of New England's existence. It is a matter of lasting regret, that, with such great abilities as he possessed, with such opportunities for observing the growth of our town from its veriest inception, with such intercourse as he had with the great men of his day, he had not chronicled some of the passing events and preserved for us memoirs of his contemporaries.

In the family enclosure of the old cemetery stands the grave-stone with this inscription:

"Here lies the body of the
REV. MR. JOHN HALE,

A pious and faithful minister of the Gospel,
And Pastor of the First Church of Christ in this town of Beverly,
Who rested from his labors on the 15th day of May,
Anno Domini, 1700,
In the 64th year of his age."

¹ Upham's Witchcraft, Vol. II., p. 346.

In 1696 four soldiers, John Burt, Benj. Carrill, John Pickworth and Israel Wood, were serving in Captain John Hill's company at Fort St. Mary, near Saco.

1700. A grammar school was established this year, with Mr. Robert Hale as master; and the claim of Sagamore John's grandchildren to the township territory was cancelled, by the payment to them of a sum of money, and a deed taken.

Prior to 1700 something had been done in the way of ship-building and the fisheries, so that with the opening of the new century Beverly was well embarked upon that career of maritime conquest and adventure which so distinguished her during the period of the Revolution. Upon the land, engaged in occupations mainly agricultural, was a steadily-growing community of sturdy proprietors; on the sea, an equally vigorous floating population, with rights in the ships they sailed, as well as an attachment for the soil of their fathers.

PIONEER FAMILIES OF BEVERLY.—In reviewing the eventful epoch closed with the 17th century, we should not lose sight of those men and women who labored for the welfare of the community. Theirs was a struggle with elemental forces, from beginning to end. They were sturdy, intense, giving their whole strength to the overcoming of obstacles such as their descendants are unacquainted with. They brought to their administration of affairs the same good sense that characterized their private life. Their object was to live, and live in freedom, in this new land, giving to every man an opportunity equal to that of every other. The excitements of those distracted times they sometimes shared in, but of themselves they provided no fuel for the baleful fires that burned so long in Salem Village. They were ready, with men and weapons, to respond to every call in defence of the frontier towns, and joined every expedition undertaken for the preservation of their territory.

Among the names mentioned in this connection those accompanied by an asterisk (*) have descendants bearing the same name still (1887) living in Beverly.

The "Old Planters," Balch,* Conant,* Woodbury,* and their associates (whose names, doubtless, have not all been preserved), deserve first mention, as having adventured first over at Cape Ann Side. The three above-mentioned have already been noticed at length; as also Brackenbury, Dixey, Palfrey, Trask,* Dodge* and Scruggs.*

John Woodbury* (as already noticed) took possession of the farm granted him in 1635, and from him descended many of the name in Upper Beverly and adjacent territory. William Woodbury,* his brother, doubtless first built upon the headland now known as Woodbury's Point, just east of Thissel's Brook and Patch's Beach. William and his descendants gradually progressed eastwardly, obtaining possession of lands on the shore as far as the Paine estate, at the westerly head of West's Beach. His son, Nicholas,

succeeded to his estates, which later fell to the latter's son, Benjamin, whose daughter, Anna, inherited the property now known as the Paine place.

John Woodbury's son, Humphrey,* settled on land extending from the seashore at or below Mackerel Cove, to the region known as Snake Hill, back of the school-house in that district. He probably built on the slope lying between Ober Street and the headland westerly from the light-house. In contradistinction to that owned by his uncle, this should be called Humphrey Woodbury's Point, in order to properly localize these first settlers. Several families of the name, descendants of Humphrey, are still living in this locality, though retaining little, if any, of the original grant made to their ancestor.

The first projection into Beverly harbor, easterly from the bridge, Tuck's Point, bears the name of another early settler in Beverly, Thomas Tuck,* who owned estates in this vicinity. Ellingwood's Point, the bold projection west of the bridges, bears the name of Ralph Ellingwood,* who owned all the land lying along Bass River, westerly of the railroad, as it now runs. The first ferryman, John Stone,* it is said, kept an inn or "ordinary" near the junction of Cabot and Front Streets; and a neighbor of his was William Dixey (who was captain of a military company), and who owned land extending from the present Bartlett and Lovett Streets to the seashore. The land granted Captain Trask (one of the five farms, in 1635) went to Thomas Scruggs, by exchange, but the name is early identified with Beverly's history in the persons of Osman Trask* and his nephew, John. The Trask grant came by marriage into the possession of John Rayment,* whose brother, the distinguished military leader of that period, located farther eastward towards Brimble Hill.

Captain Thomas Lothrop, who fell in the massacre at Bloody Brook, left no direct descendants.

Andrew Elliott* lived in the upper part of the town; his connection with town affairs has already been mentioned. His descendants have made the name distinguished, including a celebrated divine, Rev. Dr. Andrew Elliot; an ex-mayor of Boston, Hon. Samuel A. Elliot, and a president of Harvard College, Charles W. Eliot.

The name of Blackleach occurs in the early annals; John Blackleach was made freeman in 1635, and had a grant of three hundred acres and more at what is now Beverly Farms.

John West,* who came from Ipswich about 1650, bought the large property of Blackleach, extending from the Woodbury (or Paine) estate westerly to Jeffrey's Creek, or Manchester line, and beyond; and also a tract of land towards Wenham granted to Gardner. From him the beautiful West's Beach derived its name, as bordering his property.

Robert Woodbury,* who succeeded Andrew Elliot as town clerk, in 1704, and who held the office many years, married a daughter of farmer West (Thomas,



son of John), and the house he lived in is still standing, near West's Beach, and now occupied by Dr. Curtis. He obtained a large farm by this marriage, as also did Joseph Woodbury, who married another daughter and settled on the Manchester property.

The origin of the Dodge* family has been already adverted to, the first one of the name here being farmer William Dodge,* who purchased the grant to Peter Palfrey, and resided on it during his life-time. He was made freeman in 1637.

Captain William Dodge, son of William, Sr., had an enviable military record; and through him are descended many of the name in Beverly.

A nephew of these brothers, William Dodge, married a daughter of Roger Haskell* of Beverly. William Haskell* married a daughter of farmer West, and settled at the Farms, where the old Haskell house still stands, built about 1690.

An early immigrant into Beverly from the contemporary settlement of Ipswich, was John Thorndike,* whose son, Paul, married Mary, daughter of James Patch.* These two names are perpetuated by Paul's Point and the contiguous Patch's Beach.

Another acquisition from Ipswich was Anthony Wood,* who located in that part of the town known as the "city," or "old haymarket," above the Gloucester crossing.

John Lovett* was the first of this name here, born 1610, died 1686, and who settled, it is said, near the farm at present owned by General Pearsons.

John Lovett, Jr., who died 1727, aged about ninety-one, married a daughter of Josiah and Susannah Rootes, and owned a large lot of land extending from opposite the present Milton Street to beyond Central, and from Cabot Street to the sea.

Peter Pride,* it is said, received his house-lot at or near the present Pride's Crossing, on condition that he direct travelers passing that way.

A group of settlers in that region lying between the town proper and the Farms contained George Stanley,* or Standley, Nicholas Patch,* Jonathan Byles, Richard Thissell,* and Richard Ober.* Joshua Bisson* (from the Isle of Jersey) married the daughter of John Black and grand-daughter of Peter Woolfe. Cornelius Baker,* a blacksmith and grandson of Robert, married Abigail Sallows and settled near or on property adjacent to Bisson. The name Sallows is no longer found in Beverly and has been long extinct.

A name prominent at that time was that of Samuel Corning,* made freeman 1641, whose estates once included land in different parts of Beverly, at one time near the meeting-house, and also near Bald Hill, where his descendants still reside.

The first Wallis* was Nathaniel, from Cornwall, England (who settled first at Casco Bay, whence he was driven by Indians), whose son, Caleb, married a grand-daughter of Corning. A street of this name extends from Cabot to Rantoul.

The names of Stackhouse and Hoskins, who owned

easterly of Ellingwood, are now believed to be extinct in Beverly. Another which has shared the same fate is that of Robert Briscoe, brother-in-law of Samuel Stone, who came here between 1680-90, and who held various important offices during thirty years. His house stood nearly opposite the first church, and was taken down in the latter part of the last century. He is remembered for his numerous benefactions and legacies, and the principal school-building of the town now bears his name.

Richard Ober,* founder of the name in New England, and collateral branches in other States, came from "Absburg," Abbotsburg, England (where he was baptized November 21, 1641), to these shores about 1664. In 1671 he married Abigail, daughter of Nicholas Woodbury, by whom he had five children: John, Anna, Elizabeth, Hezekiah and Richard, Jr. The Obers and the Thissells were from the same village in old England, came to this place at about the same time, and their estates joined each other. The Obers' property was between Mingo's Beach and Plum Cove River. In later times Jeffrey Thissell, a Revolutionary pensioner, lived in a house west of the hill, towards town from Mingo's Beach.

Robert Morgan* owned the estate north of and opposite the central fire station, extending thence to the Bancroft estate and to the sea. Many descendants reside here and others are settled throughout the West.

The estate of Robert Briscoe fell to Thomas Stephens* (who came here in 1700), on condition of his paying several legacies. Lawrence Leach,* who died 1662, aged eighty-two, came to Salem in the fleet with Higginson, was proposed for freeman 1630, and a member of Salem church before 1636. The Leach farm was at Ryal Side, and long remained in the family.

Conspicuous among these first citizens was Henry Herrick,* one of the thirty who founded the first Church of Salem, 1629; and, with his sons, joined in establishing the first church of Beverly. He purchased several farms at Cherry Hill and Birch Plain, on which he settled his sons, Zacharie, Ephraim, Joseph and John. His wife was Edith, daughter of Hugh Laskin. In the times of religious intolerance he and his wife were fined by the authorities for entertaining and comforting an excommunicated person. He died in 1671.

The first of the Grover family was Nicholas Le Grove; of the Smiths,* Hazadiah, a large property owner, who came from the eastward, married a daughter of Edmund Grover and settled near the old haymarket.

Of these families of the 17th century, it is not possible to more than enumerate such as the imperfect records have preserved to us; but it is thought that mere mention, even, may be of service to future historian or antiquarian, seeking to trace home some ancestral name.

Of the dwellings erected during the first century of

the town's existence few remain in their entirety. Portions of the original structures, as of the Old Planter's, and of the garrison house on Woodbury's Point, still stand, but incorporated with buildings of later date. The oak frames of these buildings were well-nigh indestructible, but there are few houses in town typical in their architecture of that of those early times. The homestead of Rev. John Hale still remains in the possession of the descendants, the Bancroft heirs; another erected about that time (1690) is the house on Essex Street, lately occupied by Wm. W. Baker, long the Putnam property, and probably the ancient Picton house.

At the Cove, the Rea house, on Hale Street, erected by Thorndike, gives evidence of antiquity beyond any other; at the Farms are two of the past century, the Haskell house and the Robert Woodbury, both dating from 1680-'90. In Montserrat are the Corning and Morgan houses, the former, probably, next to the Rea house in age. In North Beverly the "Dudley Dodge" house, the Cleaver and the Woodbury house, and also the Chipman parsonage (1715), residence of the first minister of the second parish.

Near the town centre, several bearing evidences of age, and having the halo of antiquity about them. At the "city," or near the old Haymarket, are two or three, as the Lovett, the Brown and the Davis houses. Just beyond is the locality of a group of the Old Planters; William Dodge's, on the site of which is the house of Lyman Mason; farther on the house lately owned by Azor Dodge perpetuates the old Balch homestead, within a stone's throw of which was the residence of Henry Herriek.

Houses of a later period, built by our famous merchants of the Revolution, as the Cabot mansions (now owned by Edward Burley, and heirs of Seth Norwood) stand on Cabot Street, fine specimens of the architecture of that time.

That we have so few examples of colonial architecture is because the citizens of Beverly have ever been progressive, lending their efforts to further the aims of advanced civilization, and thus aiding the march of progress, which, while it creates the new, yet effaces the old.

1701. EVENTS OF THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.—Succeeding Mr. Hale in the ministry came Thomas Blowers, "who was highly esteemed for his learning and virtue, and particularly for his devotedness to the duties of his profession." He was born August 1, 1677, graduated at Harvard, 1695, and was ordained here October 29, 1701; his salary, eighty pounds per annum, with an allowance of one hundred pounds for a settlement. His residence was near Charnock Street, which takes its name from that of his married daughter, Emma Charnock. A new meeting-house had been erected in 1682, fifty feet in length by forty feet in width, with a tower in the centre from which the bell-rope hung, at a cost of three hundred and seventy pounds in silver.

1703-04. The town-clerk, Andrew Elliott, who was the first to keep the records in a systematic manner, died, aged seventy-six years. He was succeeded by Robert Woodbury, who was equally faithful in the discharge of his duties.

1705. The tract of land known as the training-field or common, was deeded to the town March 13, 1705. "The said town of Beverly are hereby obliged not to convey, exchange, or dispose of the said land unto any particular person or persons whatsoever, but it shall lay and remain for the publick use of said town, especially for military exercise."

1707. A negro slave named Robin Mingo, the property of Thomas Woodbury, was married to Deborah Tailor, an Indian woman. Before the ceremony was performed (says Stone) she agreed to live with her husband's master and mistress during her life, "to be then discharged with only two suits of clothes suitable for such persons." This seems a hard bargain, but the claims of slavery and servitude hung lightly upon the servitors. Fifty years later, in 1754, the number of slaves, so-called, was twenty-eight. On July 15, 1722, Mingo received the rite of baptism and was admitted a member of the church. He died in 1773, by which time, at least by 1776, "public opinion had virtually emancipated the slaves of Massachusetts."

The little bay on our coast known as Mingo's Beach, is supposed to have derived its name from him. There is a tradition extant that his humble cottage was near and above it, and it is also related that his master promised him his freedom when the tide should recede so far as to leave a dry passage between the shore and "Becky's Hedge," lying off the beach harbor. That event occurred, it is said, but once, and that was the year of his death.

1708. The population this year is given at sixteen hundred and eighty. Since the period of King Philip's War, and with the exception of the witch-year, very little had occurred to disturb the peaceful growth of the population.

1710.—Peter Wooden, an able pilot, is sent from Beverly to guide the expedition to Port Royal.

1711-12.—The Ryal's-Side people were allowed to associate, as a religious society, with Beverly; but were not united with them until September 11, 1753.

This year, two people of Beverly, Nihil Sallowes and Joseph Gray, were killed by Indians at Winter Harbor. At Cape Sable, three or four years later, another native of the town, Benjamin Dike, was slain by savages. A curious entry in the town records, throwing a side light upon the customs of the day, is the following: March 24, 1711-12. An order "to pay unto Richard Ober, senr., 9 shillings, money, out of ye town rate, yt being for *half a barrel of sider*, for Laurence Davis his burial (6s.) and for 50 feet of bords for sd Davis his coffin (3s.)."

1713.—Land was granted by the town to the Farms, on which to erect a school-house.

In October, the Second or North Parish was incor-

porated, and a meeting-house erected, fifty by forty feet.

1715.—The Second Church was organized, December 28th, and the Rev. John Chipman ordained. This good and learned man was born in Barnstable, and graduated at Harvard in 1711. He resided here nearly sixty years, and left a name and posterity yet well-known in the town. The old parsonage in which he resided still stands, not far distant from the church at North Beverly.

The original members of this church, and signers of the covenant, 28th December, 1715, were John Chipman, Edward, Joseph, Jonathan, Elisha and John Dodge, John Cressey, John Brown, Jacob Griggs, Joseph Herrick, John Leach, Nehemiah Wood, Josiah Woodbury, Jonathan Rayment and Moses Fluant. A body of worshippers were afterwards admitted from Beverly and Wenham. There were appointed, to seat the worshippers, persons who were "to show respect to ye aged people amongst us, as also to have a speciall regard unto persons that have don service for ye benefit of ye precinct, & have contributed high in building of ye hous for ye public worship of God, and purchasing land for ye use of ye people of sd. precinct, and are likely to pay considerable in ye charge of ye ministry amongst us; as also not to seat above two-thirds so many persons in any seat as ye seats will comfortably hold." March 29th, same year, it had been voted that the front seat in the east gallery "be parted in ye middle" for the accommodation of the young unmarried women.

1723.—The records of Ipswich, our near neighbor remind us that wolves were so abundant there, and even in the vicinity of the meeting-house, that parents would not suffer their children to attend worship without some grown person as company. A bounty was offered for heads, and many were taken by means of wolf-hooks. These were made by enclosing four mackerel-hooks in brown bread, and dipping them in melted tallow "till they be as big and round as an egg." They were then exposed near some dead carcass, where they were found and swallowed by the wolves.

A noted resort for bears, at that period, was the great swamp along Ipswich River, and one was killed in the Hamlet (Hamilton) so late as 1757. Deer were abundant in Chebacco woods up to the year 1790, but soon afterwards disappeared.

1727.—This year is memorable for the great earthquake, October 29th, which was felt throughout the colonies and "made strong religious impressions on the minds of many in this town and other places."

Twenty-five new members were added to the Second Church, and the pastor, Rev. Mr. Chipman, gave thanks to God who hath shaken, violently, the earth and also poured out his Spirit upon the people. "*Soli Deo Laus, qui et terram violenter exagitavit et super populum suum spiritum suum effudit.*"

The ancient record-book of the Second Parish may

yet be seen, at present (1887) in charge of Henry Wilson, now, in his ninety-third year, the oldest male resident of Beverly. Mr. Wil-on came here in 1848, from Gloucester; his wife, who died in 1844, was then eighty-eight years of age. The following is the first entry in the record-book: "This book belongs to the Second Church of Christ in Beverly, gathered out of Salem and Beverly, and embodied into a distinct Society on the 28th day of December in the year of our Lord, 1715. . . . That part of the Precinct of Salem and Beverly which was a part of Salem was by an Act of the Great and General Court annexed to Beverly and incorporated in the one real Town therewith upon the 12th day of Sept., A.D. 1752." A note is added by Rev. Mr. Stone: "In this Book of Records, Salem usually signifies the territory west of Maj. Cohant's brook, and embraced Ryal Side, all of which was set off to Beverly in 1752."

1729.—The second minister of the First Parish, Rev. Mr. Blowers, died June 17, and £50 were appropriated for his funeral expenses. In December of this year, the Rev. Joseph Champney was ordained, whose period of service extended until 1773, when he was followed by the Rev. Joseph Willard, who had been his colleague for about a year.

1730.—Very little of public moment occurred to disturb the serenity of the inhabitants at this period, but in 1730, the members of the Second Parish were agitated over the question of psalm-singing. The older members wished to adhere to the practice of "lining out" the hymns, while the more progressive wished to sing by note. A compromise was at first effected, but later on it was voted that they would in future sing "at all times of singing in public worship the psalm tunes by rule, according to the notes pricked in our psalm-books."

1747.—"At a meeting of the proprietors of the Common Lands in Beverly, legally warned and assembled at the First Parish meeting-house in said Beverly, on Monday the Seventh day of September, 1747, Captain John Thorndike was chosen moderator of sd. meeting; voted, Isaac Woodberry, clerk of the property; voted Captain Henry Herrick and Isaac Woodberry, two of the committee in the name of Captain Robert Woodberry and Deacon William Dodge, deceased; voted that the same meeting be adjourned unto October 13, at 3 o'clock, afternoon.

"At the ajournment, Oct. 13, of the meeting of the proprietors of the Common Lands in Beverly, adjourned the same meeting to Jno. Thorndike, Jun., and there drank two and a half Dubel Boles of punch, and put it to vote if they act any further and it passed in the negative, and then Desolved the meeting."

1752.—That section known as Ryal Side, though of the first to receive permanent settlers, was not united to Beverly till 1752. At the time Danvers was made a town all that territory between Bass River and Bass River Creek on the east, and Frost-Fish brook on the west, was annexed to Beverly.

One hundred years, or so, later, in 1857, a portion again was set off and joined to Danvers. Within this section so recently detached from Beverly lies Browne's Folly hill, named after William Browne, a native of Salem, born 1702, and educated at Harvard College. This gentleman, about 1750, selected the summit of this high hill as the site for a noble mansion, which he called Browne Hall, a costly structure, with every appointment the wealth of the owner could supply.

The great hall was often the scene of revelry on a magnificent scale, and tradition states that on at least one occasion an ox was roasted whole, for the entertainment of the guests. Mr. Browne died in 1763, and the mansion was disposed of by the purchaser of the estate, William Burley.

The exact shape of the great house may be traced in its sunken cellar-walls to-day. The hill has ever since been known as "Browne's Folly," yet the view from its summit is one of the finest in the county.

1753.—An enumeration of the population gave two thousand and twenty-three; an increase of about four hundred in fifty years. Of this number twenty-eight were negro slaves. Twenty years later, there were sixty less.

The first half of the eighteenth century is pretty well epitomized in the life of one of Beverly's foremost citizens, the physician of the town at this period, Dr. Robert Hale, jr.

Born February 12th, 1702-3, he was at an early age (when between fifteen and sixteen), employed to teach the grammar-school, which was established in 1700. In 1721 he was graduated at Harvard, immediately after which he began the study of medicine with Dr. Manning, of Ipswich. He was married in 1723, and, his wife dying in 1736, leaving him with three children, contracted a second marriage in 1737. His medical practice soon brought him into notice in the neighboring towns, even as early as 1723, and with an estate of above £1000, (part of which was left him by his parents), he was early possessed of independent means. The energy of character, sound judgment and business capacity of Dr. Hale, (says Mr. Stone, from whose excellent history the materials for this sketch are taken), were early appreciated by his townsmen. He was successively chosen to fill the various offices of surveyor, selectman, assessor, town clerk and treasurer; besides the duties of which he discharged those of justice of the peace, and collector of excise for the county. As chairman of the school committee, he took an active and efficient part in the measures adopted to improve the school system of the town. For thirteen years, he represented the town in General Court, during which time he was chairman of several important committees.

In 1726 he united with the first church, and for nearly twenty years was of infinite service in ecclesiastical and parochial concerns.

In 1740, as one of the managers of the "land bank," a scheme for relieving the pecuniary embarrassments

of the colony, he incurred the hostility of the famous Governor Belcher, who persistently opposed him until succeeded by Governor Shirley.

In 1745 Dr. Hale received the commission of colonel, and commanded a regiment, in the expedition projected by Governor Shirley against Louisburg. The land force employed consisted of three thousand two hundred men from Massachusetts, three hundred from New Hampshire, three hundred from Rhode Island and five hundred from Connecticut, all under command of General William Pepperell. The co-operating naval force was from England, and commanded by Commodore Warren. A company for this enterprise was enlisted in Beverly under Captain Benjamin Ives, Colonel Hale's son-in-law.

1744.—The soldiers and officers engaged in the expedition against Louisburg were fifty in number:

Capt., Benj. Ives, Jr.; Lieut., Geo. Herrick; Ensign, Josiah Batchelder; Serjts., Job Cressy and Samuel Woodbury; Clerk, Benj. Cleaver, Jr.; Corporals, Barth. Brown, John Picket; Drummer, Jos. Raymond; Privates, Chris. Bartlett, Wm. Badcock, Thos. Butman, Israel and Jona. Byles, Edmund Clark, Samuel Clute, Benj. Clark, Samuel Cole, Edward and Ebenezer Cox, Benj. Dike, Francis and Joseph Elliot, Israel Elwell, Eleazer Giles, John Glover, Ebenezer Hadley, Jona. Harris, Samuel Harris, Andrew Herrick, Benj. Hervey, Benj. Howard, William James, William Leach, John Morgan, Jona. Morgan, Richard Ober, Caleb Page, Elias Picket, John Presson, Joshua Rea, John Roundy, Benj. Smith, Daniel Stephens, Ezra, Benjamin and James Trask, Israel and Josiah Woodbury.

"There were not wanting those in influential stations who, moved with an unworthy jealousy for British glory, sought, in public and private, to undervalue the services of the provincial troops. . . . Col. Hale (who, with his regiment, took a conspicuous part in the dangers and fatigues of the siege) was keenly alive to American honor; and this ungenerous attempt to wrest from the provincial forces the tribute of approbation justly their due, deeply wounded his sensibilities. He repelled the insinuations of the British, and pointed out (in a letter written at the time) that the great error of the British government, in all their provincial enterprises which failed of success, consisted in the appointment of foreign officers to the command of troops raised here, when between the former and latter there was no reciprocity of respect or confidence."

While at Louisburg Colonel Hale enclosed a piece of ground which was long known (and may be still), to our fishermen as "Col. Hale's garden."

"When the government of Massachusetts Bay, in 1755, had determined on an expedition against the French, and the reduction of Crown Point, Col. Hale was selected by Governor Shirley as a suitable agent to lay the subject before the government of New Hampshire and solicit their aid. His commission bears date Feb. 22, 1755, and the same day he received from the governor a series of instructions, by which he was to conduct the negotiation."

These instructions, together with the correspondence between Governors Shirley and Wentworth, are given in the history above cited.

He was successful in his commission, and succeeded in securing five hundred men as the quota from New Hampshire, though, for some reason, he did not himself join in the expedition.

In 1761 Colonel Hale received a commission of sheriff for Essex County. In 1767, after holding nearly every office, civil and political, within the gift of his townsmen, he died, full of honors and lamented by all.

Among the curious memoranda left by Colonel

Hale are several of value to the local antiquarians, as: "A list of deaths in Beverly, 1730-64;" "An account of all the houses in Beverly," 1723-51; "Persons now living in Beverly who have had the small-pox;" "A list of Widows and Widowers in ye First Parish," which begins with the widow of Mingo (the slave); and under date of February 12, 1747-48, is this remark: "This day there are 7 Widows to one Widower in this Parish—63 W., 9 Widowers."¹

1756.—For the Crown Point expedition, this year, the Beverly soldiers enlisted, in Captain Andrew Fuller's Company, were:

Benj. Daleh, William Ebern, Daniel Gloyd, Corporal John Simonds, Joseph Baker, John Clark, Daniel Butman (again in 1759), Eliezer Dillingwood, Robert Matthews, William Moneys, Azor Roundy, Peter Stokes, George Spence (reenlisted 1759 and 1761), and Andrew Woodbury.

In another company at Fort Edward, Moses Dodge.

1757.—In Captain Israel Herrick's company of Eastern Rangers, are enrolled: Osman Baker, Robert Baker (also in the Canada expedition 1759), Barth. Peart, John Simonds, John Trask, Josiah Trow.

1758.—In Captain John Tapley's company: John Clark (at the capture of Fort William Henry), William Herrick, Wells Stanley and Barth. Taylor.

In various other companies: John Smith, Samuel Tuck, Jonathan Thorndike, Samuel Woodbury, Josiah Woodbury, James Woodbury, Jonathan Corning (seaman), Zebulon Putman, David Hill (drummer), Jonathan Dodge, Nathaniel Woodbury, John Hubbard, Abraham Hix (again in 1761), William Dodge (1761).

1759.—Robert Elliott, James Giles, Jonathan Larcom, Corporal Andrew Woodbury, Benjamin Brown, William Presson, Richard Standley, Barebeel Woodbury, John Wallis, Samuel Bean, Josiah Cressy, Aaron Crowell, Andrew Elliot, Amos Hilton, William Morgan, Robert Picket, Nicholas Standley.

1761.—Benjamin Presson, Ralph Tuck, Wilks West, Robert Standley, Joseph Williams, Benjamin Dike, Jonathan Dodge, Timothy Howard, Jacob Poland, Nathaniel Butman, Samuel Stickney.

1757.—Two families of Acadians, those unfortunate people who were expelled from their homes in Nova Scotia, were quartered upon the town, and a house hired for them. They were partially self-supporting, making wooden-ware and baskets; but their stay was brief, and they soon wandered on and were lost to the view of their Beverly friends.

1765. REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD.—Troublous times were approaching, and the records of the day show that the people of Beverly were alive to every fateful prognostication from over the water.

They anticipated every movement of the home government, and while conditionally loyal to their distant sovereigns, made it appear, by their acts in town meetings assembled, that they would suffer no infrac-

tion of their liberties. The odious stamp act was as unpopular here as in Boston, and its repeal (1765) was heralded by bonfires and celebrated by patriotic speeches.

The proceedings of the "Boston Tea Party" were promptly approved, and measures taken for the exclusion of the obnoxious vehicle of taxation. The men, as may be imagined, were more in favor of non-importation than the women, and amusing stories are told, in which some of the latter evaded the strict letter of the law and joined together for private tea-drinkings. Some of these meetings are said to have taken place in the cellars of their respective residences, and, on at least one occasion, an aerial "tea-drawing" was held on the roof-top of a house.

The story of a parallel occurrence, with all attendant circumstances, is pleasantly told in Miss Larcom's poem, "The Gambrel Roof."

"In this old house, even then not new,

A Continental Colonel true
Dwelt, with a blithe and wilful wife,
The sparkle on his cup of life;

A man of sober mood,
He felt the strife before it came
Within him, like a welding flame,
That nerve and sinew changed to steel;
And, at the opening cannon peal,
Ready for fight he stood.

"Cheap was the draught, beyond a doubt,
The mother country served us out;
And many a housewife raised a wail,
Hearing of fragrant chest and bale
To thirstless mermaids poured,
And Mistress Audrey's case was hard,
When her tall Colonel down the yard
Called, 'Wife, be sure you drink no tea!
For best Imperial, prime Bohea,
Were in her cupboard stored.

"Young Hyson, too, the finest brand;
And here the good wife made a stand;
'Now, Colonel, well enough you know
Our tea was paid for long ago,
Before this cargo came,
With threepence duty on the pound;
It won't be wasted, I'll be bound!
I've asked a friend or two to sup,
And not to offer them a cup
Would be a stingy shame.'

"Into his face the quick blood flew:
'Wife, I have promised, so must you,
None shall drink tea inside my house;
Your gossip elsewhere must carouse;—
The lady curtsied low;
'Husband, your word is law,' she said;
But archly turned her well-set head
With roguish poise toward this old roof,
Soon as she heard his martial hoof
Along the highway go.

"But lightly dined the dame that day;
Her guests, in Sunday-best array,
Came, and not one arrived too soon,
In the first slant of afternoon;
An hour or two they sat,
In the low-studded western room,
Where hollyhocks threw rosy bloom
On sampler framed, and quaint Dutch tile;

¹ See Essex Inst. Hist. Collections for details.

They knit; they sewed long seams; the while
Charting of this and that :—

"Of horrors scarcely died away
From memory of the heads grown gray
On neighboring farms; how wizard John
And Indian Tituba went on,
When seerers were believed;
How Parson Paris tried to make
Poor Mary Sibley's conjuring cake
The haven of that black witchcraft curse,
That grew and spread from bad to worse,
And even the elect deceived.

"Dame Audrey said: 'The sun gets low;
Good neighbors mine, before you go,
Come to the house-top, pray, with me!
A goodly prospect you shall see,
I promise, spread around.
If we must part, ere day decline,
And if no hospitable sign
Appear, of China's cheering drink,
Not niggardly your hostess think!
We all are patriots sound.'

"They followed her with puzzled air;
But saw, upon the topmost stair,
Out on the ruff, dark-faced Bill,
Guarding the supper-board, as still
As self-loathing.
'A goodly prospect, as I said,
You here may see before you spread;
Upon a house is not within it;
But now we must not waste a minute;
Neighbors, sit down to tea!'"

"The women were all liberty men," quaintly remarked a survivor of the Revolution, "and threatened to scald the Tories;" yet they parted with their tea with great reluctance.

A tale was current in town some years ago of an interrupted tea-drinking, caused by the lord of the house happening home unexpectedly and surreptitiously dropping a quid of tobacco in the teapot! But, as a rule, the clandestine meetings for indulgence in the fragrant beverage were winked at by the patriots.

The right of women to hold office was, this year, recognized by the appointment of Widow Priscilla Trask as pound-keeper.

The eager patriotism of our forefathers was tempered by commendable moderation, though they were the very first to apprehend approaching danger and prepare for it.

1765.—*October 21*, The letter of introduction to their representative, Col. Henry Herrick, amply defines this position:

"We cannot," (they write), "without criminal injustice to those glorious princes, King William and Queen Mary, or the memory of our venerated fathers, nor without the highest injustice to ourselves and to posterity, consent to yield obedience to any law whatsoever, which, by its natural constitution or just construction, deprives us of the liberty of trading, sailing, or of our choosing meet persons to represent us in the assessing or taxing our estates for his Majesty's service. And we do accordingly advise and instruct you, our representative, to refuse your consent in any such case, and do all that in you lies to prevent any unconstitutional drafts upon the public treasury."

1769.—*May 22*, In another letter to him, they reaffirm these propositions:

"We apprehend that no power on earth can justly deprive us of our essential rights, and that no man can be safe, either as to his life, liberty, or property, if a contrary doctrine should prevail; therefore, we recommend to you a firm but prudent opposition to all unconstitutional measures."

A powder-house was erected on the south side of the common in 1767, to contain the town ammunition, which had heretofore been stored in the basement of the first parish meeting-house. Increasing supplies necessitated this.

1770.—The first parish meeting-house was taken down and a new edifice erected at a cost of about £1300. During its construction services were held near the big elm on the common.

1772.—*December 21*, In town meeting assembled, and in an adjournment of January 5, 1773, they again assert that "the rights of the colonists in particular as men, as Christians, and as subjects, are studiously, rightly, and justly stated by the committee of correspondence for the town of Boston; and Col. Herrick is instructed to "endeavor, as much as possible, in a legal and constitutional way, to effect the redress of the intolerable grievances, and secure the rights, liberties and privileges, both civil and sacred," guaranteed them by the charter.

1773.—A "committee of correspondence and safety" was appointed the latter part of this year, consisting of representative citizens as follows: John Leach, Benjamin Jones, Henry Herrick, Joseph Rea, Samuel Goodridge, Josiah Batchelder, J. Batchelder, Jr., William Taylor, Joshua Cleaves, Larkin Thorndike, Joseph Wood, Isaac and Nicholas Thorndike, William Bartlett, Andrew Cabot, Joseph Orne, Benj. Lovett, Jr., Nathan and Asa Leach, Caleb and William Dodge, Livermore Whitteredge, Benj. Smith, William Longdell, Thomas Stephens, Edmund Giles, John and Jona. Grant, Isaac Chapman and John Lovett, 3d.

The following letter "to the committee of correspondence for the town of Boston," January 11, 1773, is referred to above, and illustrates their alert and active interest.

"GENTLEMEN: Inclosed you have the transactions of this town, in consequence of the resolves of the metropolis of this province, and the letter of correspondence herewith transmitted, whereby you will perceive the sentiments of this town with regard to the common cause in which we are all concerned. In the name of the town, we return thanks for the early care taken by the town of Boston to communicate the most early intelligence of any alarming circumstances that they have with regard to any infringements on our rights, as Christians, subjects, or colonists.

"And, gentlemen, inasmuch as we are all concerned in one common cause, we shall esteem it as a favor of a free correspondence, that we may have the most early intelligence of any interesting events of a public nature, as you live in the metropolis, that we may concur with you in any salutary constitutional measures for the good of all; and are, gentlemen, with the greatest regards,

"Your most humble servants,

"JOHN LEACH, SAMUEL GOODRIDGE,
BENJ. JONES, JOSIAH BATCHELDER, JR.,
HENRY HERRICK."

1774.—In the town-meeting, January 4, it was resolved:

"That the method of introducing tea into this province in the manner proposed by the British Ministry, for the benefit of the East India Co., is

justly and fairly stated by the inhabitants of the town of Boston; and that it is the sentiment of this meeting, that they will always, in every salutary method, cheerfully join with our brethren of the town of Boston, and every other town in this province, in withstanding every unlawful measure tending to enslave us, or to take our money from us, in any unconstitutional manner."

At a county convention held in Ipswich September 6th and 7th, the town was represented by three of its citizens: Benj. Lovett, Saml. Goodridge and Joseph Wood, who subscribed to the report of the committee, which, after asserting their continued loyalty to the crown, continued:

"But though, above all things, slavery excepted, we deprecate the evils of a civil war; though we are deeply anxious to restore and preserve harmony with our brethren in Great Britain; yet, if the despotism and violence of our enemies should finally reduce us to the sad necessity, we, undaunted, are ready to appeal to the last resort of States; and will, in support of our rights, encounter even death, sensible that he can never die too soon who lays down his life in support of the laws and liberties of his country!"

Abundant assurances of their sincerity are found in the minutes of the numerous meetings of citizens.

1775.—*February 27th*, Along with other articles in the warrant for town-meeting this year, are, the following:

"To see if the town will have a watch kept for the preservation of the town, and more especially to enquire relative thereto as may then be thought best; and there was a warrant issued out to the several constables to warn the same as follows; viz., to Samuel Woodberry 3d, to warn Farms, and 1 Pdd. Hill Districts; to Joseph Woodberry to warn Royal Side and Ross River Districts, and to Wm. Elliott to warn the Ferry District."

It was later voted that a watch, consisting of nine persons, be posted at three different places; and that "if the watch discover that any Hostilities are likely to be made on the town or any of the inhabitants thereof, they are to make an alarm, by the firing of three guns and the ringing of the bell."

Voted, also, "that the town will raise fifty-four minute-men, including officers."

Voted, "to give the captain of the minute-men three shillings and four pence for each half day service in learning of the art military; the lieutenants two and eightpence, the ensign two and sixpence, and each private one shilling, eightpence."

Voted, "that the minute-men turn out two half days in a week, and four hours each half day be spent in learning the art military, Col. Henry Herrick was empowered to hire £80, with interest, to pay off the minute-men."

¹ Boston, Feb'y. 7th, 1775.

"Received from the town of Beverly, by the hands of Mr. Henry Herrick, a donation, consisting of the following articles, viz.: Two barrels of sugar four hundred one-quarter of sugar, one bbl. rum, five and $\frac{1}{2}$ qts. of oil, 105 lbs. of coffee, two cheeses, eight pair of womens and five pair of mens leather boots, one hide upper leather, and thin calf skins tanned, sixteen pounds chocolate, ten pounds of pork, 25 lbs. flax, one barrel flower, Acorn and $\frac{1}{2}$ bush. corn; for the relief and support of the poor of the town of Boston, suffering by means of the Boston Port Bill.

"SAMUEL PARTRIDGE,
"one of the committee of Donations."

These excerpts from the records of the town, show that our people were ready, with money and musket, to resent the first invasion of their rights. Thus it

was, the eventful nineteenth of April, 1775, found them not unprepared. Though every householder had gone forth to his daily occupation, and was peacefully following his duty for the day, yet the arrival of the breathless messenger, announcing the departure of a British detachment from Boston to seize the military stores at Concord, was a spark that kindled into flames their smouldering fires of patriotism. The business of the day was abandoned, each man seized his musket and hastened to the appointed place of rendezvous. The captains of the militia companies, Joseph Rea, Caleb Dodge and others, mounted their horses and posted to the Farms and other districts, arousing the whole population along their routes. By three o'clock that afternoon a large proportion of the male inhabitants of Beverly capable of service were armed and ready for the conflict. No troops engaged in that memorable fight had so long a distance to march, yet they arrived in season to participate in the skirmishes that followed the battle of Lexington, and assisted in driving the British back to Boston. One of their number was killed, Reuben Kennison; and three wounded, Nathaniel Cleaves, William Dodge (3d) and Samuel Woodbury.

These names are given in "George's Almanac" for 1776, though Kennison's name is spelled as Kinnym. The widow of Kennison (it is stated by Stone in 1842) retained in her possession till her death (which occurred October 22, 1842, at the age of eighty-nine), the shirt worn by her husband when killed.

The present historian, learning that a portion of that interesting relic was still in possession of connections of the widow Kennison's family, was permitted to see it, August, 1887, one hundred and twelve years after the fatal bullet had pierced it that deprived Reuben of his life. ¹ The fragment is about a foot square, of striped homespun, with a jagged hole in it that may have been made by the bullet. It was wrapped in a sheet of blue paper of ancient manufacture on which was written: "Reuben Kenniston of Beverly, killed at Lexington April 19, 1775. Part of his shirt." It now belongs to Mrs. Huldah Herrick, whose mother was niece to Reuben's wife. Mrs. Kennison was married a second time, to Uriah Wright, and lived at Ryal Side. Reuben lived at Ryal Side previous to 1775, and is said to be buried in the old Leach burial-lot near Brown's Folly Hill.

The house he lived in has disappeared. Tradition states that his body was brought to Ryal Side on an ox-cart. An elm tree which was planted near Kennison's house, April 19, 1775, was blown down a few years ago.

¹ At the seventy-fifth anniversary of the battle of Lexington (April 19, 1850) the president of the day said: "You may see on the table before me the powder-horn of Isaac Parker, of Chelmsford, who wore it at the North Bridge, and a fragment of the shirt in which Reuben Kenniston of Beverly, was killed, which was preserved with pious care by his wife. The holes through it have decayed from the blood stains, which were left uneffaced."

A valuable lesson in history might be acquired by tracing the route of our first Revolutionary soldiers, as they so eagerly pressed on to join their brothers-in-arms and that of their return, bearing with them their slain and wounded comrades.

Nathaniel Cleaves, who was wounded in the fight, having had his fingers cut off and ramrod carried away by a bullet, is included in the "list of the names of the provincials who were killed and wounded in the late engagement with his Majesty's troops at Concord." He seems soon to have recovered of his wound, for he was in the Bunker Hill fight of June 17th, and with the troops at Cambridge within a month of the Lexington engagement.

An extremely interesting relic of the times is the journal of this same soldier, which is now in possession of one of our most estimable citizens. It commences :

"*Thursday, May 25, 1775.* Captain Low marched from Beverly to Cambridge; took up our quarters at mister bloggots; the 27, *Saturday* forenoon, present; at night a skirmish (skirmish) came on between the regulars and our people on the island; burnt a house and barn, killed — horses, burnt the schooner and took sum plunder, and lost no lives on our side, but supposed that we killed a number of them. *Sunday, 28.* Some guns fired on our people that were getting sum guns out of the racks, but no damage. *Monday, the 29,* brought off the island 27 head of cattle, 20 of horses, 30 sheep and lambs, and no damage. *Tuesday, the 30,* great movement made with the troops in Boston, by which weards the country was alarmed, and no men to go out of the camp. *Wednesday, the 31,* Capt. Church's Kimball's company came to Cambridge.

"*Thursday, June 1, 1775.* Cloudy morning; cleared of pleasant. Had Mister Willard, Mr. Guther and Mr. Hicheock in the afternoon. [These were the ministers of First Parish, Beverly, Hamilton, and Second Parish, Beverly. These three also rode to Lexington immediately on receipt of the alarm.] A meeting concerning our held officers adjourned to next day. Church's Major changed himself with his henchurchiff. The next day, present morning, guns were fired, supposed to be at New's Island, just Boston, and so continued all day by spurts; sent a party of about 200, and 2 field peices, for Chelsea. The day ended with the firing of the officers; had the mager before us and had a full hearing; so that day ended. The same night a scout went to Dear Island, took 400 sheep, sum cattle, four prisoners.

"*Friday day, Sunday,* a pleasant morning; this day the whole army was mustered on the common to see 2 thieves whipped, one 2 stripes, beaten; and one man drimmed out of the army with 35 drums and 40 files, with the regiments march. *Sunday, the 4th day,* fair whether; went to meet 2, heard 2 sermons. *Monday, the 5th day,* fair whether; nothing remarkable. *The 6th day,* at Beverly, reached it about 12 o'clock, and a full for and bridge *Saturday, the 7th.*

"*Monday, the 12 day,* a number of the prisoners under the main gard returned; used the captain of the gard, and a general court marshal was ordered to try the same; the common report for this day is that there is 3 regiment and 3 company of horse off in the Bay; this day ended without anything new.

"*13 day Monday,* cool morning; court marshal continued till Fryday; nothing new.

"*the 16 day,* a pritty hot fire, said to be at the effege of Hancock. This day the nuse came to Cambridge that Philadelphia had taken a ship with 750 stand fire-arms and quantity of ammunition. This is good nuse for what I am thankful. About 6 o'clock there was mustered about 200 men to go and take possession of Bunker hill (?), which they did the same night without any disturbance.

BATTLE OF BUNKER HILL.

"Till Sunday morning about sunrise the Lively fired on our men; killed one powder of Bitteria; Orders for our regiment to parade at 5 o'clock with 3 other regiments to relieve those at Bunker hill, but was alarmed at 12 when the troops began to land, which caused a hot fire on both sides, which our side left the ground for want of field peices and powder. Soon after the engagement began they set Charlestown on

fire; our regiment returned at night to Prospect hill and intrenched all night.

"*The 18 day, Sunday,* they fired upon our people but did no damage."

In this brief chronicle of the soldier's life in Cambridge is given his share in the important battle of Bunker Hill, which he treats merely as a skirmish of little consequence. His point of view was not sufficiently removed from the scene of conflict for him to appreciate its magnitude. He wastes no words in excuses for their retreat, nor stops for gratulation :

"*The 24 day, Saturday,* in the morning was alarmed by a great movement of the regulars on Bunkers hill, supposed to be a coming out, but did not. *25, Sunday,* in the forenoon stayed at our camp at Cambridge; about 12 o'clock went down to the hill and begun our breastwork. There was a packet of letters came to general Putnam from our prisoners in Boston and say that they are treated vary wel. Mister Cleveland preached on the hill, from John 20, 22; this day dug up the bones of a man buried about a foot under ground.

"Went up to see Capt. Francis's men Thursday; went to breakfast without butter or cheas; had Capt. Batchelder to dine with us, we had biled vittels and rost veal . . . the sargents went to supper on New England grog, and then went to our logings in peace.

"*Friday*—this day choel and cloudly; general orders to be on the parade at 5 o'clock, and William Anderson to receive 29 stripes and one Russel so, and one rid the wooden hors and then went down to Prospect hill to work on the intrinchements. A whooman was drumed of the hill for playing the roge with a drummer, and bob Picket was as focksey as the Divil. . . .

"*July the 3 Day,* this morning cloudy. There was four cannon fired to Rocksbury and one hors sot on fire. General Washington came to Cambridge about twelve o'clock and was atended with a great number of gentlemen from naberling towns! Captain Low went to Beverly this morning; Ensign Henry Herrick went with him."

Leaves of absence to visit Beverly were frequently obtained, and in one of them Lieutenant Cleaves walked home on a Friday, stopping at Colonel Herricks to "fix up," and "brought up" at Mister Chipmans.

"The next day, 'Saturday,' in the morning went down to Mister Joshua Herricks; in the afternoon to the Hamlet (Hamilton), from there over to Topshfield, to David Perkinses, from there to Beverly, down to the lower parish (parish). *Sunday the 9,* went to meaten in the forenoon, Mister Hicheock preached; then sot off for Cambridge."

The camp-life seems not to have been entirely without its relaxations, as witness the following :

"*Friday the 14 Day,* Cap. — and Capt. Low went to Watertown after bords to finish our barracks; had a very pleasant time; they fel in company with a very beautiful lady and took her into the shay with them; the recompense she gave them is not yett none (known) for carying of her. . . . *Tuesday the 18,* this morning warm and clear. I went down to Chelsea with more ofisers and 130 men after a mast for a liberty-pole; had a fine prospect of the enemy, saw 83 horses paraded and near 40 more in the paster. I went into a house, got sum biled sider, and kissed the old whomans Daughter to pay for it, had a fine frolick; at the tavern drove a dog out of the windy and sum other things worthy of note. Coming back met the chief general aidecamp from Cambridge, who said that there was a great movement with the troops at Rocksbury and had struck a number of tents, supposed to be going somewhere. Arrived a little after sunset very much fatigued, went to bed at ten o'clock, and was under arms by half-past two the next morning. *Wednesday the 19,* Captain Low and Lieut. Herrick went to Watertown for bagonets, and this afternoon I secured some powder and ball."

This excerpt gives a fair picture, probably, of the soldier's life at that period, before the hardships of war had begun. The brave fellow, whose diary we have been permitted to glance at, was lost at sea in 1780, so he must have resigned his commission in the army before the war was over.

In the great work of preparation for inevitable war the women of Beverly ably assisted their husbands and brothers—weaving cloth, knitting stockings, making garments—and dividing with the soldiers their household supplies.

1775.—April 22, Col. Henry Herrick, Capt. Benjamin Lovett and Capt. Wm. Bartlett chosen to be a committee in behalf of this town to confer with the committees of the several seaport towns of this county what steps shall be most expedient for them to take at this difficult time, and for to meet at the tavern near Beverly meeting-house on Monday, the 24th instant, at 9 o'clock in the morning."

"Also, Col. Henry Herrick, Capt. Ebenezer Francis, Capt. Edward Giles, Capt. Benj. Lovett, Jr., Capt. Nicolas Thorndike, Mr. Peter Pride, and Lieut. Elisha Dodge, were chosen a committee of safety for this town, for to act in that affair in the best manner they can for the Publick good."

May 19, A town-meeting was warned "to elect and depute as many members as to them shall seem necessary and expedient to represent them in a Provincial Congress, to be held at the meeting-house in Watertown, on the 31st of May inst., . . . to consult, deliberate and resolve upon such further measures as, under God, shall be effectual to save this people from impending ruin," etc.

Their representative, Capt. Josiah Batchelder, Jr., was instructed to lay before Congress the exposed situation of the town and ask for soldiers to defend it, as many of their men had enlisted in the army.

October 12, It was voted that the committee of correspondence procure "six peases of cannon;" two six and four four-pounders, mount them on carriages and place in position; to have two breastworks thrown up, one at Woodbury's Point and the other at Paul's Head. It was later voted to place one nine-pounder and one four at Woodbury's Point, the other nine and one four-pounder at Paul's Head, and the two field-pieces wherever the committee should judge best for the public safety.

"After the rebellion, which extinguished the last lingering hope of independence, the County of Essex, essentially maritime in her habits, bore a fiercer than usual attack on the deep, and trailed the flag, that for a transient space had braved the battle and the breeze, ignominiously on many a sun-sunk deck, whence went up the pine-tree flag of the rebels in token of victory. The last flag, under the Continental authority, that ever floated at an American anchorage in defiance of British supremacy, was hoisted on board the 'Hannah,' from Beverly! The first commander was, under Washington's commission, threw down the gauntlet of maritime warfare, was Capt. Manly of Marblehead. . . . The harbors of Salem, Marblehead and Beverly swarmed with prizes. The same fishy fishermen of the seaports of Essex, driven from the theatre of their adventurous industry by the breaking out of hostilities, trod the decks of these little wanderers of the sea, who afterwards manned the 'Constitution' in the second War of Independence, when St. George's Cross went down before the stars and stripes!"¹

A dramatic episode of the conflict was witnessed in Beverly harbor, this same autumn of 1775, which is graphically described in Stone's "History of Beverly."

One pleasant morning a privateer schooner sailed out of Beverly on a cruise. She had not been long out when she was discovered by a British sloop-of-war, the "Nautilus," of twenty guns, which immediately bore down upon her. The superior force of the enemy induced the captain of the privateer to put back; but in the confusion of the chase he grounded on the flats. It being ebb tide, the "Nautilus" came to anchor outside the bar, from which position she opened fire on the town. The meeting-house being the most conspicuous object, several shots were aimed at it, one of which penetrated the chaise-house of Thomas Stephens, destroying the chaise, and another struck the chimney of a house on the opposite side of the street.

The worthy man whose chaise was destroyed did not rest an idle spectator, but seizing his musket he hastened to the beach, returning the fire of the enemy in gallant style. Here he was joined by several other patriotic inhabitants of the town, conspicuous among them being Col. Henry Herrick, an active member of the committee of correspondence, in full military costume. Their fire may not have been very effectual, but it at least showed their good intentions, and warned the commander of the sloop-of-war that he had stirred up a veritable hornet's nest of rebel musketeers. The receding tide soon left the "Nautilus" in an awkward position aground, so that she careened and could not use her guns. In this condition she lay till dark, the target for the cannon of Hospital Point, on Salem side, and of the small arms of the Beverly patriots. The tide rising, after dark, the baffled commander weighed anchor and stood for Boston, "carrying with him no very pleasant recollections of his introduction to the citizens of this town."

Between March and November, 1781, 52 vessels, carrying 746 guns, with crews of 3940 men, were fitted out and chiefly owned in Salem and Beverly.

Beverly has the honor of having sent out the first commissioned privateer of the Revolution. This vessel was the "Hannah," the papers for which were issued September 3, 1775, and signed by General Washington.

The first to commence operations against Great Britain's mercantile marine, Beverly maintained her privateers throughout the war. Our most noted and most successful privateersman was Captain Hugh Hill, who, as early as 1775, brought into port a valuable prize, the British schooner "Industry," the cargo of which was sold and the vessel turned over to the public service. Captain Hill (the first of his family in this town), commenced privateering in the "Pilgrim," of twenty guns, which was built under his superintendence in Newburyport. He captured numerous prizes, and nearly all were sent into Beverly, which was then, as one writer has expressed it, the headquarters for our infant navy. More captured vessels (it is said), were brought into this port than into any other in New England. The first navy agent was William Bartlett (after whom Bartlett Street was

¹ Rantoul's Oration at Concord, 19th April, 1850.



named), who had charge of the captured cargoes, which were of such material aid to the continental army in their time of sorest need.

Many anecdotes are related of our great privateer captain Hill, illustrating his sagacity, bravery and humanity.

On one cruise, while sailing with the English ensign at mast-head, as a decoy, he was boarded by the captain, of a British man-of-war, who, unsuspecting of his host, remarked that he was in search of "that notorious Hugh Hill." Captain Hill, at that moment unprepared for an engagement, answered that he was on the lookout for the same individual, and hoped soon to meet him. The officer departed, but in a few days they met again; the American flag was run up, and an engagement followed, in which the Englishman was captured, and the prize sent into Beverly.

Captain Hill, who was own cousin to General Andrew Jackson, proved himself such a terror to British commerce, that his capture would have been looked upon as a great achievement.

Several other townsmen shared with Captain Hill the honor of successful commanders, among them Captain Eleazer Giles, Elias Smith, John Tittle and Benjamin Lovett. Captain Giles, in 1776, sailed from the port of Beverly in a ten-gun brig, with which he captured four merchantmen out of a large fleet, two of his prizes being ships of four hundred and three hundred tons, respectively, and the other two brigs of lesser tonnage. He was, however, captured on a later cruise by a British vessel of superior force, and sent prisoner to Halifax.

Captain Elias Smith, commander of the ship "Mowhawk," of twenty guns, cruised mainly in the West Indies, where, in 1781, he captured a Guineaman (slaver) of sixteen guns, which was sent into Beverly.

Captain John Tittle, when sailing in a letter of marque, was attacked by two cruisers, being engaged with them for three hours. All his canvas above the lower yards was shot away, and his crew, looking upon their condition as hopeless, began to abandon their guns, when the gallant captain drew his sword and threatened to run the first man through who left his quarters. A fortunate shot soon taking effect upon one of the enemy and night coming on, he was enabled to escape.

These meagre gleanings from the annals of our town indicate the spirit of this little community, which sent its citizens forth to battle for freedom, on land and sea.

1776.—In January of this year the town voted to hire twenty-four men as night-watchers on the sea coast, at West's beach and near Benjamin Smith's house at Plum Cove, and one hundred pounds, to defray these expenses. A watch at the fort was maintained by Colonel Glover, with the Fourteenth Regiment of the Continental army.

At a town-meeting June 13, 1776, three weeks be-

fore the Declaration of Independence, it was voted that, in event the Continental Congress declare the independence of the colonies, they would "solemnly pledge their lives and fortunes to support them in it." This pledge was fulfilled on almost every battle-field of the Revolution; yet, in 1779, a fine of five thousand four hundred pounds was assessed on the town, by the General Court, for failing to furnish a prescribed number of men for the militia.

In a petition for its remission in 1780 the town appealed to the records in evidence that (which was strictly true) they had "furnished more men, and been at greater expense to carry on the war, than almost any other town in proportion to their abilities."

1776.—Town-meetings were held with increasing frequency, as the exigencies of the occasion demanded the building of breastworks, the purchase of ammunition, instructions to their representatives and protection of the harbor and coast. It was put to vote (November 7th) if the town would stop up their harbor, and it passed in the negative. Voted that "the selectmen be empowered to petition to General Washington, or any other department, for ammunition and men for the safety of this town whenever they shall think it necessary and expedient." They were also empowered to procure two hundredweight of powder, "in the best manner they can."

Interleaved in the volume of records for 1774-83, opposite the entry for July 2, 1776, is a copy of the original proclamation of independence (July 4, 1776,) in accordance with the order accompanying it, that a "copy be sent to the ministers of each parish of every denomination, who, after reading it to their congregations, were to deliver it to the clerks of their respective towns, who are hereby required to record it in their respective town or district books, there to remain, as a *perpetual memorial* thereof."

The town records for 1776 show that the regular business of the town went on uninterruptedly, but their pages throughout indicate active preparation for warfare and defense, and seem to smell of gunpowder and bristle with bayonets.

1777.—Under date of February 17th is a list of men paid for watching at night, comprising twenty-six names. The chief bills of the town are for watching, militia service, bounties to soldiers, etc., as "to time spent in making Breastworks; procuring and hauling cannon; to hauling 500 cwt. of powder from Andover; to going to Danvers to procure intrenching tools;" and finally, as war's bloody returns come in, "to choose a committee to supply the soldiers' families that are in the continental army;" and, "ordered the treasurer to pay the several persons, soldiers in the continental army, the sums annexed to each of their names, they being extremely poor, and unable to procure things of the committee of supply."

1777. The town voted to give fourteen pounds to each non-commissioned officer and private who would enlist in the Continental army for three years, or dur-



ing the war, and four pounds additional to such as had been in the army and would re-enlist. Provision was made for barracks for the sea-coast men at Woodbury's Point. Three hundred pounds was voted for the relief of families of soldiers, and the next year two hundred pounds additional.

In 1779 a "sum not exceeding twelve thousand pounds" was voted for procuring men for the army, and in succeeding years sums varying from five thousand to fifty thousand pounds were provided for the same purpose.

In 1780 the selectmen were authorized to procure five horses for the public service, and a bounty was offered to soldiers enlisting of 100 pounds sugar, 100 pounds coffee, 10 bushels corn, 100 pounds beef and 50 pounds cotton or £1370 in money, to which was later added 67 pounds coffee, and the money bounty increased to £1611. Price of labor on the highway was then fixed at £12 per day. Salt sold for £50 per bushel.

1777. A prominent man in military affairs at this time was Colonel Ebenezer Francis, born at Medford, in 1743, and removed to Beverly in 1764. He received a captain's commission in the Continental Army, July 1, 1775, the year following was colonel, and commanded a regiment on Dorchester Heights. By commission of November 19, that year, he was authorized to raise a regiment in Massachusetts, and at the head of this regiment, the Eleventh Massachusetts, he marched, in January, 1777, for Ticonderoga. His death occurred July 7, 1777, at Hubbardston, N. Y., near Whitehall, where he was shot while leading his troops to battle.

Previous to setting out on this march his company was assembled in the first parish meeting-house, at religious service, and "associated with him on that perilous expedition into the wilderness, were many brave and noble spirits, and some of them highly educated."

His brother, John Francis, fought by his side, an adjutant in his regiment when he fell, and was subsequently in several battles, was wounded at the capture of Burgoyne, and retired with honor. Later, in 1786, he raised a company in Beverly and Danvers, and marched to suppress Shay's rebellion; after his return was captain of the militia company of the second parish, and commanded the Beverly regiment, dying in 1822, aged sixty-nine years. Two other brothers of Colonel Francis, Aaron and Thomas, fought in the Revolution. As chaplain of Colonel Francis' regiment went the minister of the second parish, Rev. Enos Hitchcock, a graduate of Harvard in 1767, colleague of Rev. Mr. Chipman in 1771, whom he succeeded in 1775.

He had been preceded as chaplain in the regiment by the Rev. Mamasseh Cutler, the celebrated minister at Hamilton. Mr. Hitchcock was at Valley Forge, and wrote of the condition of the army in 1778: "Numbers of our brigade are destitute, even of a

shirt, and have nothing but the ragged remains of some loose garments as partial covering."

This brave chaplain survived the war; was dismissed from the Second Parish in 1780, and became pastor of a church in Providence, in October, 1783. He is remembered as an eloquent preacher and as the author of a work of fiction and several published discourses.

In this regiment also was Henry Herrick, a graduate of Harvard, and a successful teacher in Beverly after the war, and Moses Greenleaf, captain of a company, whose private journal contained incidents of the expedition.

1777. The women of Beverly "took a hand" in affairs this year, a company of them gathering and leading a raid upon the storehouse of one of the merchants who had a stock of sugar on hand which he refused to sell, on account of the depreciation of the paper money. With the assistance of some of the men one cold November morning, about sixty of them marched down Main (Cabot) and Bartlett Streets to the wharves, where they broke open the warehouse and loaded up two ox-carts with sugar. The foreman of the establishment offering resistance, he was promptly charged upon by the ladies, one of whom seized him by the hair, at which he fled, leaving his wig in her grasp.

The sugar was carted to the shop of the leader, who retailed it at a fair price to customers, and rendered her account faithfully to its owners.

1778. Out of a list of ten abatements for taxes, opposite five of the names is entered "on account of being in captivity;" two others were "long absent abroad," and one "dead and left nothing."

Out of seven such abatements in 1779, two were for persons who had been "long in captivity;" one, Andrew Ober, "long missing if alive;" and another, Joseph Ober, second, "died in captivity."

1779. At the March town-meeting it was voted to hire five hundred pounds, for the use of the committee for supplying the families of soldiers.

Forty men were lost at sea this year, and in consequence the town petitioned to be released from supplying its quota.

As late as 1783, in a list of abatements of taxes, fourteen were on account of the persons taxed then being or having been in captivity.

The following names of soldiers have been mostly copied from the original muster rolls in the State House at Boston:

Captain Caleb Dodge's Muster-Roll of Minute Men.

Captain—Caleb Dodge. First Lieutenant—Jona. Batchelder. Second Lieutenant—Nathan Smith. Ensign—Benj. Shaw. Sergeants—Jno. Batchelder, Saml. Woodbury, Peter Woodbury, Benj. Jones, Jona. Perkins. Privates—Jacob Dodge, Benj. Cressy, Jr., Nathl. Cressy, Wm. Cammel, Jos. Raymond, Elisha Woodbury, Steph. Felton, Dea. Wm. Dodge, Wm. Woodbury 3d, Ebenr. Trask, Mark Dodge, Chas. Dodge, Joshua Dodge, Saml. Conant, Israel Greene, Barth. Trask, John Cressy, Nathan Cressy, Aaron Salley (?), Robert Dodge, Joshua Cleaves, Jona. Dodge, Nathan Wyman.



ren, Matthew Tobin, Jona. Standly, Jere. Woodbury, Israel Woodbury, Alex. Curcio, Joseph Picket, Jacob Reed, George York, Joseph Freethley, Andrew Herrick, John Carter, Wm. Dodge, George Gross, Wm. Cutler, Wm. Welder.

1780.—Men who served for six months :

Wm. Clerk, Wooden Cole, Jona. Conant, Joseph Carr, Richard Craft, Asa Leach, Abner Raymond, Robt. Standley, John Trask, ——— Trask, Joseph Wood, Benj. Woodbury.

Beverly's sufferers by sea were not few during the Revolution, and of those committed to Mill Prison are the following :

Benj. Clippman, of schooner "Warren," taken December 27, 1777.

Michael Down, of brig "Rambler," taken October 21, 1779.

Joseph Leach, taken and committed to Pembroke Prison in 1779.

Joseph Perkins, Levi Woodbury, Robert Raymond, Matthew Chambers and Andrew Packard, of ship "Essex," taken June 10, 1781; also James Lovett and Benjamin Sprague.

William Haskell, Alexander Carrico and George Greece, of brig "Eagle," taken June, 1780.

John Baker, of brig "Black Princess," taken October 11, 1781.

John Tuck, Thomas Hobden, Josiah Foster, Hezekiah Thibbels, Nathaniel Woodbury and Zebulon Ober, of snow "Diana," taken June 15, 1781, and committed January 24, 1782.

William Herrick was killed at sea, off Bermuda, in the snow "Diana," the year before; Benj. Woodford was made of the "Diana" when Herrick was killed.

The "Diana" was a letter of marque, and a "snow" was a vessel half brig and half schooner.

1780. In the annals of this period the "dark day" (May 19th) held a conspicuous place. The sun, that morning, rose clear, but "soon assumed a brassy hue," and at two o'clock was totally obscured. During three hours time it was extremely dark, the birds and fowls went to roost in silence, and everything portended an awful visitation. The alarm of the people was universal, many supposing that the judgment day was at hand, and one old gentleman, it is said, dressed himself with great care, took his silver-headed cane with him into the field and calmly awaited the event. The darkness became dispelled during the afternoon, but the night succeeding was of such intense gloom, until midnight, that even the horses refused to go out into it from their stables. In explanation of this event, it is said that the smoke from great forest fires in the interior had settled over this region, thus obscuring the sun and necessitating a resort to candle-light by the frightened inhabitants.

From the journal of a resident of Beverly came this quaint record.

"BEVERLY, Friday, May 19, 1780.

"This day happened something very Remarkable. From 10 o'clock in the forenoon till half after two in the afternoon, there was total Darkness. But about 1 o'clock the Darkest; the sky was as Red as though the Element had been a Fire. This was Wrote by me in my Bedchamber in the house of coll. Thorndike, where Joseph Baker keeps Tavern."

The first town-meeting under the new constitution was held September 4th, this year, for the election of governor, lieutenant-governor and councillors, and the first representatives, Larkin Thorndike and Jonathan Conant, were then chosen.

1781. The constables were instructed to receive, in the payment of taxes, one silver dollar instead of seventy-five dollars of the old continental paper, and

one dollar of the new emission instead of forty dollars of the old.

1781.—The Rev. Joseph Willard, who had been for eight years pastor of the First Parish, was called to the presidency of Harvard College, a position he held until his death, in 1804, "after the longest term of service, but one, in the series of Harvard's presidents." His loss was deeply felt in Beverly, where he had the respect and love of every inhabitant. It was he, who, during the darkest hour of the dark day, acted the part of the true philosopher, and instead of giving way to fear, calmly made observations of the attendant phenomena. As he was thus engaged, he became surrounded by frightened citizens, whose alarm was soon allayed by his own indifference. When one of them rushed up, breathless, with the announcement that the tide had done flowing, he drew out his watch and quietly remarked: "So it has, for it is just high-water."

It is not very generally known, perhaps, that Mr. Willard was at one time custodian of the literary treasures of a privateer. In 1781, the famous privateer, Captain Hugh Hill, brought a prize into port, containing, among other things, the celebrated Kirwan library, consisting of more than one hundred scientific works, ancient and modern, which, when taken, was in transit from England to its proprietor in Ireland. At the suggestion of Mr. Willard, the owners of the prize generally relinquished their title to it, allowing it to be sold, in compliance with law, to an association of gentlemen resident here and in Salem, for a mere nominal price.

"To the honor of Richard Kirwan it should be mentioned that he declined an offer of compensation for his property in it, preferring to have it pass for an outright gift to the infant cause and scanty means of scientific progress, in a country not yet emerged from the clouds of desperate strife with his own for separate national existence.

"The books, so fortunately secured, were first committed to Willard's keeping, but upon his removal from Beverly they were transferred to Salem, where they were united with other collections, first under the name of the Philosophical Library, then that of the Salem Athenæum, and finally of the Essex Institute, of which flourishing, richly-endowed, greatly-valued and useful institution it may be considered as the possible germ. From that germ alone great advantage has, by not a few, been derived. Our famous mathematician, Nathaniel Bowditch, of world-wide fame, availed himself extensively of the aid of the Kirwan books, especially in the earlier portions of his remarkable career, when such works were rare, and difficult (at least in this country) to be procured; and his sense of indebtedness was freely and gratefully acknowledged by him while living, and testified at his decease by a liberal bequest to the institution in which they are deposited, and of which they form a part."¹

It will be seen from the above, that Beverly contributed (though perhaps unwittingly yet, not unwillingly), to swell the stream of knowledge that flowed from the early founts.

1783.—French troops passed the night in the Second Parish, on their way to Portsmouth to embark for France.

Beverly received the news of assured peace, promulgated this year, with the greatest satisfaction.

¹ Thayer's Bi-Centennial Address.



Having performed her whole duty in the perilous times, throughout, having lost many of her noblest citizens, and having freely expended of her substance to bring about this consummation, it was with joyful anticipations for the future that she entered upon the era of peace. It was some time, however, before the tangled web of debt and obligations, woven about her by the war, could be unraveled, and her paralyzed commerce regain its wonted activity.

In 1786, especially, the burden of debt and taxation, together with the weight of a depreciated currency, bore heavily upon Beverly, in common with every town in the State. It was in this year that Shay's rebellion occurred, to aid in suppressing which soldiers from Beverly joined the Essex company, under Colonel Wade, of Ipswich, an officer known and trusted by General Washington.

1785.—Rev. Joseph McKean, who was born in Londonderry, N. H., 1757, and graduated at Dartmouth College, was ordained over the First Parish May 11th, on which occasion a large number of churches were represented. His salary was fixed at two hundred pounds and his settlement at three hundred pounds, to which two hundred pounds was added in 1801. He was a man of great piety and learning, honored by all our citizens. In 1802 he received and accepted a call to the presidency of Bowdoin College. Among other papers published in the Rantoul Reminiscences is the following bill, for entertaining the council and delegates at Mr. McKean's ordination:

	£	s.	d.
30 Bowles of Punch before the people went to meeting	3	0	0
80 People Eating in the morning	6	0	0
10 bottles of Wine before they went to meeting	1	10	0
68 Dinners	19	4	0
44 Bowles of punch while at dinner and after	4	8	0
18 bottles of Wine	2	14	0
6 people drank tea	0	9	0
49 Horses	3	0	0
4 Horses two days and nights	0	16	0
8 Bowles of Brandy	0	12	0
Cherry Rum	1	0	0
3 of the gentlemen's servants, 2 meals each and drink, the day	0	12	0
	£	5	0

1787.—Beverly cast one hundred and twenty-five votes for Governor, of which seventy-seven were for John Hancock, and forty-eight for James Bowdoin; George Cabot, Joseph Wood and Israel Thorndike were this year chosen delegates to the convention in Boston January, 1788, for considering the framing of a constitution for the United States. For several years later, it was difficult to find people willing to serve the town in official capacity, and fines were imposed upon those who refused offices.

1788.—The first fruits of peace were not long in showing themselves, and the most important step taken in the securing of independence of the mother country was the establishment of a cotton factory. This factory, the first in America, was erected in the Second Parish, near Baker's Corner, at the junction

of Cabot and Dodge streets. A company of proprietors was incorporated February 3, 1789—but, the enterprise proving unprofitable, it was afterwards abandoned. The factory attracted much attention at the time, and was visited by General Washington when on his tour through the country in 1789.

A contemporary periodical said of it: "An experiment was made with a complete set of machines for carding and spinning cotton, which answered the warmest expectations of the proprietors. The spinning jenny spins sixty threads at a time, and with the carding machines forty pounds of cotton can be well carded per day. The warping machines and the other tools and machinery are complete, and promise much benefit to the public, and emolument to the patriotic adventurers."

The *Salem Gazette*, of 1790, says: "The wear of the Beverly corduroys is already become very common;" yet the enterprise failed, and, after several other attempts, the proprietors suspended operations.

For nearly thirty years preceding 1800, the town was agitated over the spread of the small-pox, and in 1788, even threw fences across the roads, to prevent the passing of persons infected with the disease, erecting a hospital and smoke-houses for fumigation.

1788.—The Essex Bridge was built this year, one thousand four hundred and eighty-four feet long and thirty-two feet wide, at a cost of sixteen thousand dollars. It was to be a toll-bridge for seventy years, at the expiration of which period it reverted to the State. Robert Rantoul states, in his reminiscences, that (then a Salem school-boy of ten), he walked over the bridge the day it was opened, and again in his eightieth year, in 1858, on the day its charter expired.

Town fire-wards were first chosen in the preceding year: 1787, Moses Brown, Andrew Cabot, George Cabot, Joseph Lee and Joseph Wood.

In October, 1787, the Rev. Daniel Oliver was ordained over the Second Church, continuing here for ten years, when he was succeeded by the Rev. Stephen Dorr, who was ordained in March, 1800.

Several of our inhabitants joined the famous expedition of Dr. Cutler (of Hamilton), that initial migration to Ohio, which resulted in the settlement of our vast Western prairies.

1789.—The event of this year was the visit of Washington, on his tour of the North, when he called on his friends, William Bartlett and George Cabot; the latter then occupying the mansion now owned by Mrs. Seth Norwood. In the Book of Records of the Second Parish is a note by Mr. Stone of the following communication made to him by Isaac Babson March 13, 1835:

"When General Washington came to visit the cotton factory (near Baker's Tavern corner), he rode from Salem on horseback and was greeted by a great number. As he passed the residence of Col. Francis he bowed to Mrs. F., who was at the window. In the factory a number

of females were arranged, holding pieces of cloth in their laps for inspection. The General stopped opposite Miss Francis (afterwards Mrs. Low) and examined the cloth in her lap. On leaving the factory he entered his carriage (his servant riding his horse) and went on to Ipswich."

As recently as 1863 there died, one who was conversant with these details: Mrs. Beisey Grant (widow of Joseph, and mother of Benjamin D. Grant), a lineal descendant of John Balch, one of the first settlers. She was born in the "Upper Parish," February 10, 1772, and was seventeen years old at the time of Washington's visit, which she distinctly remembered in 1861. Washington paused at her side and asked her several questions about the work, "little realizing, perhaps, the reverent affection with which he was regarded by her, and which would embalm his sentences in her heart forever."

The last individual living in Beverly to whom Washington then spoke was Captain Peter Homan (it is said), who died in 1871, at the age of ninety-one. He was then a boy of nine, at work in the factory. As a child, Mrs. Grant "assisted in laboring for the soldiers of freedom at that early day of our nation's history; when a woman, wife and mother, she worked for the sons of America in 1812, and as an aged grandmother, she knit stockings for the soldiers of the Union in 1861."

Her eldest sister was a participant in the famous female riot of 1777, and the mother of Captain Homan was also one of the company.

1791.—The town treasurer was directed to fund the paper money on hand, and in 1793 it was voted that all contracts should be paid in hard money, instead of town orders.

1793.—The proclamation of neutrality, by the President, was warmly approved by the merchants of Beverly.

1795.—A petition was presented to Congress, drawn up by the Rev. Mr. McKean, William Burley, Israel Thorndike, Moses Brown and John Stephens, praying for the immediate fulfilment of the treaty between the United States and Great Britain.

1798.—A health officer was appointed, for the first time, and in 1801 a small-pox hospital was built at Paul's Head. This promontory, where the light-house now stands, and where the breastworks, erected during the Indian wars and the Revolution, may yet be seen, was early the property of Paul Thorndike, one of the first selectmen of the town.

The hospital, built here in 1801, costing four hundred and fifty dollars, was destroyed by fire, and the land is now included within the boundaries of the light-house property. The residue of Paul's Point is now occupied by some of the finest houses on the coast.

1799.—This year, departed one of the least of Beverly's population, in point of size, yet who had a wide-spread provincial reputation,—Miss Emma Leach, sixty-one years of age and but twenty-two inches in height. She was the daughter of William

and Tryphosa (Herrick) Leach, and was born here June 27, 1717. She measured nearly as much at the age of two years as at her death, being then twenty-two inches in height.

In the almanac for 1777, published by Nathaniel Ames, on the cover of which is a wood-cut of the "prodigy," is "A short description of the extraordinary person that lately made her appearance in this town (Boston), which may not be disagreeable to our readers, although it may not be so particular as the curious may desire, as she would not admit of an accurate examination." From this it is learned that "she was, at her birth, as well a shaped child as any of the ten which the same mother bore. Her friends early discovered her bones to be in a flexible state, and unable to resist the action of the muscles, which made it very difficult to support her in any other than a horizontal position. After two years the bones acquired some considerable degree of firmness; but they had been so long inflected, by the action of the muscles, that they never recovered their proper figure or function."

"She measured in a right line from the crown of the head to the feet, twenty-two inches. The head was as large as is usual for persons of a common stature, and not at all deformed. The vertebrae of the back were somewhat elevated. Her feet were about the size of a child's of four or five years old, and not at all deformed. She could never walk, but was either carried by her friends, or moved herself about with the assistance of a small chair and stick. She enjoyed a tolerable share of health, free from most complaints except indigestion. In her conversation she discovers a vivacity which very much surprises all who hear her. She now enjoys herself very agreeably at her native place."

The Leach homestead, where she resided, has descended to Benjamin Goldsbury, through the marriage of his grandfather, Nicholas Goldsbury, to Tryphosa Leach, daughter of Benjamin, brother to Emma Leach.

In this, the last year of the century, a schooner of Beverly, the "Alert," was set upon by three French privateers, as she was entering the harbor of Santander, and, after a desperate resistance, captured and sent into Bayonne; an outrage upon American neutrality deeply resented.

1800.—A review of the century past shows a continued advance, since the close of the "primeval epoch," in every native industry and all the elements of prosperity.

The population of the town had doubled in the century: from 1680 in 1708, to 3300 in 1800.

A large area of land had been brought under cultivation, remote districts connected by roads, six school districts were now established, and two flourishing churches; the fleet of fishing-vessels, numbering thirty-two, employed three hundred men, and foreign commerce was in a flourishing condition.



For a short period of the nineteenth century, proximate, even while the inhabitants of Europe were distracted by wars, employing four millions of their fighting men, our people were to enjoy the blessings of peace.

SOME NOTABLE NAMES OF THE CENTURY.—Many of those who contributed to the prosperity of Beverly, either on land or sea, some who aided in shaping its destinies, and others who acted as the conservators of the morals of the community, have been mentioned in the pages preceding. Yet it is not claimed that many may not have escaped mention, through the incomplete chronicles of the times. A distinguished merchant of the war period, was *Moses Brown*, born in 1748, a graduate of Harvard in 1768, who began business here in 1772. He took an active part in military affairs, raised a company of soldiers in 1775, and in 1776 joined the army as a captain in Glover's regiment, serving in New York and New Jersey, and being present at the battle of Trenton.

Resuming business in 1777, he retired in 1800 with a fortune, and died in 1820, after a life of acknowledged usefulness.

Associated with him in business at one time was another famous merchant, *Israel Thorndike* (born in Beverly in 1755), who owned several large ships, and through extensive trade with China and the East Indies, amassed a fortune (immense for those times), of nearly a million and a half of dollars. He removed to Boston in 1810, and expired in 1832. He subscribed five hundred dollars for the founding of a professorship of Natural History in Harvard, and the same sum for the library of the Theological School. In 1818 he purchased, in Hamburg, at a cost of six thousand five hundred dollars, and presented to Harvard, a large library "thereby securing to his country one of the most complete and valuable collections of works extant in American history."

The *Cabots*, George, Andrew, and John, left an enduring fame as great merchants; the first, who was born in 1751, residing here nearly forty years. He was one of the most enlightened men of his time, a delegate to the provincial Congress in 1779, the confidential friend of Washington and adviser of Hamilton. He removed to Boston in 1793, where he died in 1823; but the foundation of his fortune was laid, and his most brilliant labors performed, while a citizen of Beverly.

Joseph Lee, a brother-in-law of the Cabots, was also associated with them in business. He was born in Salem in 1744, and died in Boston in 1821. During his residence in Beverly, and throughout his life, he gave great attention to the designing of vessels, being of material aid to naval architecture. He gave twenty thousand dollars to the Massachusetts general hospital. His grandson, Henry Lee, who married a granddaughter of Andrew Cabot, resides on a fine estate at Beverly Farms.

In the year 1780, deceased in Beverly, *Henry Her-*

rick, one of the most active and influential members of the "Committee of Correspondence" in the Revolution, a direct descendant of the first American ancestor of the same name. He was an active agent, says the historian, in all the first Revolutionary movements, and for many years (twenty-four) represented the town in General Court.

From his relative, Joshua, have descended most of the name still residing in Beverly, and others in Maine, including *Horatio G. Herrick*, sheriff of Essex County for many years past; and *Joshua* and *Benjamin Herrick*, of Maine. The Herricks are intimately connected, through marriage, with several of the oldest families of Beverly.

In 1807 (March 27), *Captain George Raymond*, deceased, at the advanced age of ninety-nine years, having been born December 21, 1707. This aged citizen, whose life embraced the greater part of the eighteenth century, was influential in town affairs, and at one time in military, having taken part in the Cape Breton expedition. From generation to generation, and from century to century, as in the Herrick and Raymond families, the military prestige has been kept alive.

Another eminent citizen, who died in 1809, was *Josiah Batchelder, Jr.*, whose father served in the Port Royal expedition of 1707. His early years were passed at sea, and in 1761 he had the misfortune, while in command of a vessel, to be captured by a French privateer. He succeeded in having the vessel released, but was detained for its ransom for some time, in a prison at Martinique. His name appears frequently in the Revolutionary correspondence, and he was actively engaged in privateering; he was several times elected a member of the Provincial Congress, and during his declining years was surveyor and inspector of the port of Salem and Beverly.

William Burley, born January 2, 1751, died December 22, 1822. Was a native of Ipswich, but gave freely of his wealth to the poor of this town, leaving legacies to Beverly and Ipswich to promote the instruction of poor children. He not only aided the American cause, with advice, but took an active part, enlisting as a soldier, and while a lieutenant, under Colonel Thompson, in February, 1780, was taken prisoner near White Plains, remaining in captivity a year and nine months. His son, *Edward Burley*, is living in Beverly, at the age (1887) of eighty-four, and two grandchildren, Mrs. Cabot and Mrs. Susan Howes.

To the neighboring town of Ipswich, the town of Beverly has been placed under deep obligations for some of its most vigorous and brightest intellects. Notable above all his professional brethren of that time was *Nathan Dane*, born in Ipswich, December 29, 1752. He was of English ancestry, the first of the name having settled in Andover, Ipswich and Gloucester. It will be noticed, by one who will closely scan the chronicles of our early settlements and note the achievements

of our foremost citizens, that no Englishman became so truly great as when transplanted to America. All the inherent nobility of character of long lines of ancestors, latent for generations, first finds expression here.

The son of a farmer, Mr. Dane worked on his father's farm till he was twenty-one, acquiring that physical stamina which supported him through the unremitted labors of a long life. He graduated from Harvard in 1778, immediately after which he taught school in Beverly, where, in 1782, he began practicing law. In this latter year, and the three years succeeding, he was a representative at the General Court of Massachusetts; after which for three years he was a delegate to Congress, and for five years, beginning with 1790, a member of the Massachusetts Senate. He was on a committee to revise the State laws, in 1795, and a presidential elector in 1812. His enduring monument is the celebrated "ordinance of 1787," of which Daniel Webster said, in the United States Senate, in 1830:

"We are accustomed to praise the law-givers of antiquity; we help to perpetuate the fame of Solon and Lycurgus; but I doubt whether one single law of any law-giver, ancient or modern, has produced effects of a more distinct and marked and lasting character than the ordinance of '87. . . . It fixed, forever, the character of the population in the vast regions northwest of the Ohio, by excluding from them involuntary servitude. It impressed upon the soil itself, while it was yet a wilderness, an incapacity to bear up any other than freemen. It laid the intellectual against personal slavery, in original compact, not only deeper than all local law, but deeper, also, than all local constitution."

The great labor of his life was "A General Abridgment and Digest of American Law," published 1823-'29, the material for which he began to gather as early as 1782; the first general code of American law, and of incalculable value to the country. The private life of Mr. Dane was exemplary, his public life every way to be admired. By his benefactions, as well as by his literary productions, he has caused his name to be remembered. By a donation of \$15,000, he established the "Dane Professorship of Law," at Harvard, and was a donor to the Dane Law Library, of Ohio, and other institutions.

His valuable life was prolonged to eighty-three years, during sixty of which he pursued his studies. Although surviving to 1835, well into the nineteenth century, he yet belongs to the eighteenth, the formative period of our political history. His home was opposite the old South Church, in the house (still standing) built by Capt. Benjamin Ellingwood about 1784, one of the first (four) brick houses erected in Beverly, the others being the dwellings of Andrew, George and John Cabot. The monument to Mr. Dane, in the Hale Street Cemetery, bears an inscription by Judge Story.

In the year 1781, *Robert Endicott*, a descendant of Governor *John Endicott*, removed from Danvers to Beverly, where he died in 1819, aged sixty-two years. He was born on the ancient Endicott farm, now belonging to William Endicott, of London. His son, the venerable and well known William Endicott, the

only survivor in the seventh generation from Gov. John Endicott, resides in Beverly, at the advanced age of eighty-eight. He began business here as a clerk with "Squire" Rantoul, and for thirty-six years owned and occupied the drug store at the corner of Cabot and Washington Streets. He retired from active business twenty-five years ago, but still maintains relations with several financial and charitable institutions.

We have seen that our town was particularly favored in its ministers, such as *Hale*, *Blowers*, *Willard*, *McKean* and *Chipman*. The medical profession also was adorned with names whose lustre is yet undimmed. The minister and the doctor of early times exerted a greater influence than even the politician; in truth, he who attended to the spiritual welfare of the people, as well as he who ministered to their physical well being, was considered competent also to shape their political affairs.

The first school-master, *Mr. Hardie*, was also a dispenser of medicines, and succeeding him came the *Hales*, Robert and Robert, Jr., the latter already noticed. Robert Hale was son of the *Rev. John Hale*, born November, 1668, died 1719.

A *Dr. John Herrick* was here in 1721, and a resident physician was *Dr. Benj. Jones*, a native of Beverly in the second parish, who had an extensive practice, and died in 1778. He was distinguished for his active interest in public affairs and in the welfare of the community.

Dr. Timothy Clement, who married a daughter of Capt. William Dodge, had a promising practice, but died at an early age. His successor was *Dr. Israel Woodbury*, born 1734, died 1797, who resided on his ancestral estate, and whose life was a blessing to the parish. *Dr. Isaac Spofford*, who died 1786, at the early age of thirty-five, was skilled alike in his profession and in music, and was very popular. His gravestone in the old cemetery is conspicuous for its Latin inscriptions and Masonic emblems. *Dr. Larkin Thorndike*, another native of this town, who died at Norfolk, Va., also practiced here, and was appointed a surgeon in the navy under the administration of President Adams. *Dr. Tucker*, *Dr. Orne* and *Dr. Lakeman* (from Hamilton) all died without achieving the great distinction promised in early life.

A man of prominence was *Dr. Elisha Whitney*, born 1747, graduated at Harvard, 1766, who began practice in Ipswich. After several voyages as surgeon on board the privateers under Captains Hill and Giles, he returned to his profession, removing to Beverly in 1792, where he resided till his death, in 1807, beloved and highly respected.

Dr. Joshua Fisher, who was born in Dedham, 1749, and graduated at Harvard in 1766, came to Beverly in early manhood, after practising a while in Ipswich and Salem. Like Dr. Whitney, he sailed as surgeon in a privateer, but was unfortunate in his maritime experiences, the vessel being driven ashore in the



Abiel Abbot

British Channel, and he with difficulty avoiding capture. Escaping from England to France, after a number of dangerous adventures, he embarked in another privateer for America, which he ultimately reached. He was interested in that first cotton factory in 1788, and his public spirit always led him into similar enterprises for the good of the people. Through his great talent and active pursuit of his profession, he amassed a large fortune, much of which he expended in charitable works. He endowed the Fisher Professorship of Natural History at Harvard, with twenty thousand dollars, and founded the Beverly Charitable Society, now known as the Fisher Charitable Society, which has been so beneficial in ameliorating the condition of the poor.

Of the donation to this society one hundred dollars was to be set aside to accumulate for one hundred years, as an available fund at the expiration of that period. Dr. Fisher died in 1835, aged eighty-four.

From this brief biographical excursion, let us return to the narration of events. It is a matter of regret that we cannot much more than enumerate the names of those departed worthies, whose many virtues adorn the age in which they lived. The best lessons of history are to be drawn from the lives of great and good men and women, who worked with singleness of purpose and high aims for the advancement of their fellows. Many such—though, from the limitations of their environment, unknown to the world at large—we find living in the pages of our local history. Their lives shine with devotion to principle and religion; they had faith in their God, their country and the home of their adoption; and the torch they lighted at the fires of their primitive hearth-stones they have handed down to us, their descendants.

THE MOTHER CHURCHES.—As two new churches were founded in the opening years of this century, and important changes took place in the first and second parishes, at this point it would seem fitting to take a survey of some matters ecclesiastical.

What was the origin of the First Church, has been shown; that its growth was identical with that of the town, and their affairs inseparably interwoven. Its first ministers and officers were the leaders of the community, as the church, indeed, formed the nucleus of the town.

Its ministers, mentioned in order, were: Hale, Blowers, Champney, Willard, McKean, up to the close of the eighteenth century, when the last-named was called to the presidency of Bowdoin College, and was succeeded, Dec. 13, 1802, by the Rev. Abiel Abbott.

The following biographical sketch of Dr. Abbott was prepared by the Rev. Dr. A. P. Peabody, a lifelong friend of the family, and is entitled to the reader's thoughtful attention:

"ABIEL ABBOTT, the youngest son of John and Abigail Abbott, was born at Andover, August 17, 1771. Two elder brothers—John, professor of ancient lan-

guages at Bowdoin College, and Benjamin, the so widely-known, revered and beloved principal of Phillips' Exeter Academy—had already graduated at Harvard. Abiel was the pupil of Dr. Pemberton, at Phillips' Academy, in Andover, whence he entered college, graduating the second scholar in his class, in 1792. He maintained ever afterwards a close connection with the college, where he was held in high regard, as was evinced in his appointment as Phi Beta Kappa orator in 1800, his being invited to deliver the Dudgeon Lecture in 1819 and his receiving the degree of Doctor of Divinity in 1821. On graduating he returned to Andover and became assistant teacher, afterwards principal of the academy, at the same time pursuing the study of theology under the direction of his pastor, Rev. Jonathan French. In 1795 he was ordained as minister of the First Church in Haverhill. In the following year he married Eunice, daughter of Ebenezer Wales, of Dorchester. His ministry at Haverhill was eminently successful. Its precious memory long survived him, and was lovingly recalled by old people who had him for their pastor in their childhood or youth. But his salary was inadequate to the support of his family and he was, therefore, and for that sole reason, compelled to resign his charge.

On his release from his engagement at Haverhill, Mr. Abbott's services were eagerly sought by several vacant parishes. He preached with great acceptance at the Brattle Square Church, in Boston, and, anticipating the probability of his being invited to its pastorate, the First Church in Beverly chose him as its minister, voting him as salary the stipend which (with the addition, however, of a parsonage-house and fuel for its fires, and the education of his sons) would have been offered him in Boston.

This salary throughout his lifetime was larger than was paid by any parish in Massachusetts, except in Boston. The Beverly parish was and continued to be, during his entire ministry, very large, embracing a population at the outset of twenty-three hundred, and never less than fifteen hundred. The town was then the fourth in the State, in point of wealth, with a better harbor than that of Salem, with a great deal of foreign commerce as well as with a large amount of capital lucratively invested in the fisheries. It was the residence of several merchants of distinction, who afterwards removed to Boston, and whose ships sailed thence and brought thither their return cargoes. It was also the home of several professional men of the highest eminence, as Nathan Dane and Joshua Fisher, and the parish comprised many families of wealth and culture. Hence, in a worldly point of view, the place was especially desirable, while its pulpit had been filled by men of superior ability and merit, his two nearest predecessors having been called to the presidency—one of Harvard, the other of Bowdoin College. Such a pastorate made great demands on its incumbent, and in this case they were more than fully met.

No ministry can ever have been more prosperous than Dr. Abbott's, in the full attendance on its services, in the undivided respect and affection of the people, and in the tokens of religious interest and spiritual edification. By those who knew Dr. Abbott best it has been often said that they never knew his like, or, for his peculiar life-work, his equal. His personal endowments were of a rare order. His countenance bore the impress of his character, at once grave and gracious, commanding and winning, with a benignity whose attractions none could resist, yet with a dignity which would keep a flip-pant tongue in silence. His manners were those of a born gentleman, who could not be otherwise than courteous, meek, considerate and kind. His conversational power was almost unique. In whatever society he might be, without assuming the leadership, he could not bear other than the chief part, and those who were else the most ready to talk, in his presence subsided into greedy listeners. He was unsurpassed in vivid and picturesque description and narrative, and he possessed the rare and precious art of giving religious admonition, counsel or consolation, without seeming to give it—of virtually preaching the gospel without unseasonably interlarding his conversation with conventionally sacred names and phrases, so that all that he meant to say reached the inward ear, only after, sometimes long after, his voice had died upon the outward ear. When Monroe, as President of the United States, was making his northern tour, he breakfasted with Israel Thorndike, and Dr. Abbott was one of the guests. Some time afterward the President said to a visitor that the best talker that he ever heard was a clergyman who breakfasted with him at Mr. Thorndike's. While Dr. Abbott thus adorned the choicest society, he made himself none the less welcome in the poorest homes, and with persons of the lowest standard of intelligence and culture. Without the wretched farce of condescension, he so identified himself with all the people under his charge that he felt, and therefore always seemed, at his ease among them, as belonging with them, and they had no experience of restraint or awkwardness as with one who stooped to them from a loftier plane than theirs. He was the most assiduous of pastors. Of course, in so large a parish he would not be a frequent visitor in every house, yet there was not a family in his flock which he did not know intimately, and in which there was not a corresponding sense of intimacy with him; nor was there a child whom he did not know, or who was not made the happier by meeting him and having his unfailing smile and kind word of recognition. A large part of his time was devoted to the sick, infirm and afflicted, who received his most tender ministries and always felt that he came to them in their need and sorrow as a messenger of divine support and comfort. Nor was he less mindful of the poor, and while generous to them to the utmost of his means, he knew

how to stimulate and direct the charity of those who had ability and leisure for the work of Christian love.

Dr. Abbott was, in an important sense, the minister of the town, no less than of his own parish. There was no public occasion on which he did not officiate, nor any public enterprise that tended to improvement or progress in which he did not bear a foremost part. For many years he was chairman of the school committee, and his reading of his annual report was among the first items of business at the annual town-meeting, which he always opened with an impressive prayer. He presided at the school examinations, and the pupils listened eagerly on those occasions to the closing address which he always gave.

In the pulpit Dr. Abbott's manner was impressive to the last degree. He was never impassioned, and never cold; but there was a calm, equable fervor, indicating a full flow of devout feeling, without ebb or ripple, sustaining the unflagging attention of the audience, and adapted to make the entire service to the serious hearer, as it manifestly was to the preacher, a continuous act of devotion. His voice was clear, strong and flexible, and his utterance was perfectly natural, with no pulpit tone, but as it might have been in conversation on solemn themes. Nature shaped him for an orator, and he remained unspoiled by art. What he should say seemed his sole concern; his unstudied saying of it could have been only made worse by the attempt to make it better. His sermons were scriptural, evangelical, in the true sense of the word, in a style elegant without being ornate, sufficiently simple for the receptivity of any person of ordinary intelligence, yet so thoughtful as to command the close attention and strong interest of those of the most advanced culture. They were remarkable for so strict an appropriateness to time and space that many of the best of them could have been preached elsewhere or at a later time only with large omissions or changes. No phase of the passing day, or occasion of public interest, or striking event in the larger or smaller circle, was suffered to pass without being made to yield up its fitting lessons of truth or duty. His sermons for the Sunday service were always carefully written, and such of them as admitted of it, especially his frequent expository sermons, bore the tokens of extended reading and faithful study. He had at the same time a great facility of extempore utterance, or rather, of thorough preparation without writing; and some of his most appreciative hearers thought that he appeared at his very best in the unwritten discourses, sometimes in series lasting through several weeks or months, which he was wont to deliver in a chapel erected expressly for evening services.

Dr. Abbott's devotional services had an indelible and cherished place in the memory of all who listened to them. They were not preaching prayers, but composed wholly of simple and lofty forms of praise and supplication. It was the custom in his church, as in



the New England churches generally, to send in 'notes,' requesting public prayer, or thanksgiving, in case of bereavement, severe illness, or recovery therefrom, the birth of a child, being 'bound to sea,' or return from a voyage.

Dr. Abbott, without ever compromising the dignity of the service, or entering into details unfit for the sanctuary, would so make reference to every individual case, that he would seem to bear heavenward and to lay upon the heavenly altar the burden or joy of each soul in a form denuded of all earthliness, and fully fit to be heard on high. The children of the parish enjoyed his special care. The old institution of 'catechizing' was with him a matter, not of form, but of deep concern, and he made it such a service that no child was ever willingly absent from it. He not unfrequently addressed the children on Sundays, and sometimes had special services for them in the chapel, while they learned very early to listen to his sermons, and many a dull child who carried home no meagre report of one of his discourses, would command neither attention nor memory when any one else filled the pulpit.

The earliest Sunday-school in New England, if not in the United States, was opened in 1810, by two ladies of his church, after the example and method of Robert Raikes. This school, which had, from the outset, their pastor's approval and furtherance, was never discontinued, but was, after a few years, removed to the church, and was the nucleus of a still flourishing Sunday-school, subsidized by a considerable fund, the legacy of one of its superintendents, who was trained under Dr. Abbott's nurture and influence.

Dr. Abbott added to his distinctively professional gifts that of superior musical taste and talent. He had the best voice in the congregation. The old church had no space in which an organ could be erected till it was remodelled after his death, and whenever the chorister was absent, Dr. Abbott led the singing from the pulpit, as he did at the communion service, at the monthly ante-communion lecture, and at the chapel. Dr. Abbott was a Unitarian, of the type commonly, though incorrectly denoted under the name of Arian. But while he explicitly declared and defended his own opinions in the pulpit, he was indisposed to controversy, sought peace among the churches, was at many points in close sympathy with clergymen of a different creed, and was associated with not a few of them in intimate friendship and in the interchange of professional services.

When the disruption of the Congregational body took place, probably no member of that body had so much reason to regret it as he had, nor was there any one with whom his friends of the opposite party were so sorry to part fellowship. In his family and in all the relations and intercourse of society Dr. Abbott, by his sweetness, gentleness, unselfishness of spirit, was constantly diffusing happiness, and in his cheerful, sunny

temperament received largely of the happiness which he gave. His home was rich in all that can make life beautiful, and that can render the Christian household at once a centre of refining and beautifying ministries and influences for this world, and a training school for heaven.

In 1818 Dr. Abbott's health had become so far impaired by incessant labor as to make a rest and change of scene desirable, and he spent the winter in South Carolina and Georgia. He performed the return journey alone, in a sulky, driving through regions where he was warned of serious danger from the savageness of the poor whites; but all along his way making friends and receiving civilities and kindnesses.

In 1827 he was again an invalid, and spent the winter principally in Cuba. He seemed in the spring entirely restored, but on his passage homeward, in the harbor of New York, he was seized with a sudden and profuse hemorrhage from the lungs, which proved almost instantly fatal, leaving him but a few moments for some last directions as to his worldly affairs, and for the expression of his cheerful readiness to depart in the full assurance of a blessed immortality. His death occurred on the 7th of June, 1828.

Dr. Abbott published a considerable number of sermons and other pamphlets. The only volume that he gave to the press was of 'Sermons to Seamen,' which in its time was highly prized, especially by shipmasters and sailors.

After his death his 'Letters from Cuba,' a charming record of travel and sojourn in an island then little known at the North, were edited, with a memoir of the author, by his friend, Judge Story.

A volume of his sermons, edited with a memoir, by his son-in-law, Rev. Stevens Everett, was also published.

Dr. Abbott's excellent wife survived him only two years. Of his nine children there remain: Emily, widow of Rev. Stevens Everett, now resident at Cambridge, Anne Wales, a member of her sister's family and Rev. William Ebenezer Abbott, formerly pastor of the First Church in Billerica, now living in the Dorchester district of Boston."

Dr. Abbott was everywhere welcomed in the town, and his good offices as peacemaker were often sought. He had one parishioner who frequently quarreled with his wife, and who, disregarding the figurative meaning of his pastor's advice, to "throw water on the fire," obeyed it literally, drenching his wife with a full bucket, the next time she scolded.

When the good parson chided him, telling him the woman was the weaker vessel, and should be cherished, he retorted: "The weaker vessel, is she; then, blast her, let her carry less sail!"

A gradual divergence from the tenets of the original church took place during Dr. Abbott's ministry, and his successor, the Rev. Christopher T. Thayer, was settled over the first parish as a Unitarian, by a vote of two to one, January 27, 1830. Mr. Thayer, though



coming to Beverly from Lancaster, was a descendant of Andrew Elliot, our first town clerk. He was a graduate of Harvard (1824), always interested in the welfare of the town during his pastorate, and the author of a valuable contribution to its history—a "Bi-Centennial Address," on the two hundredth anniversary of the formation of the First Church. He retired in 1859, followed by the best wishes of all his townspeople, and passed his remaining days in Boston, where he died June 23, 1880, at his residence on Beacon Street, and was buried in Mount Auburn Cemetery. Mr. Thayer served as chairman of the School Committee many years, and at his death left a legacy of five thousand dollars to the church.

He was succeeded by the Rev. John C. Kimball, a native of Ipswich, and graduate of Cambridge Theological School, the period of whose pastorate was eleven years, and who has since preached in Oregon, Newport, R. I. and Hartford, Conn.

In 1872 (March 7), Rev. Ellery Channing Butler was settled over this church, the ninth in the line of distinguished ministers, beginning with Rev. John Hale. Mr. Butler was born in Otego, N. Y., and is a graduate of Meadville College, Pa. Under him the parish continues in a prosperous condition, the present congregation numbering two hundred and eighty families.

THE FIRST MEETING-HOUSE.—The first house of worship was erected as early as 1656, a rude structure, which answered the needs of the people until 1682, when a new building was raised, fifty by forty feet, which stood on the site of the present church. It was used as a town-house also, and as no fires were allowed in the meeting-houses of those days, it was considered the safest depository for the town ammunition, a powder-room in it having been built in 1727.

In 1770 a third meeting-house was erected, on the site of the second, and is at present standing, having been enlarged in 1785, remodeled in 1835 and again some twenty years ago.

Its first bell was brought by Capt. Lothrop, from Port Royal, in 1656; this was replaced by another in 1680, by yet a third in 1712, the gift of Robert Briscoe, and by the fourth one, which remains, in 1803, from the foundry of Paul Revere & Son.

The first town clock was obtained in 1796, and has done good service for ninety years. The first parish meeting-house, the "Old South," is one of the landmarks of the town, and around it cluster associations that should never be dispelled. From its bell-tower, these many years, have rung the noon-day hour and the vesper peals, proclaiming the hour of nine and warning the youth of generation after generation of the time for retiring.

The venerable sextons of the church have been, at times, reckoned as personages of almost as much importance as the ministers themselves. The first to be mentioned (1665), is Goodman Bailey, who received for his services a peck of corn annually from each

householder; and to the emoluments of this office, in 1680, succeeded Goodman Hoar, during whose term the nine o'clock bell was introduced. An important service of these early sextons was the turning of the hour-glass, as a gentle reminder to the minister that time was fleeting. In 1748 Josiah Woodbury held the office, remaining its incumbent for forty-one years, when he died. Wells Standley came next, in 1790, dying in office 1797, in which year Joshua Wallis fell dead while ringing the bell, and was succeeded by Thomas Barrett. This faithful servitor held the position from June, 1797, to 1844, the year he died. Ezra Woodbury was appointed his colleague, in 1842, and for over thirty years attended to the various duties, dying in January, 1876.

The first meeting-house of the Second Parish was erected 1713, with a turret, but no steeple or bell. The Rev. Mr. Chipman was ordained 1715, and January 11, 1716, the church held its first meeting. As a special mark of honor, in 1759, Lieut. Henry Herrick was invited, when he attended worship there, to "take the second seat on the floor before the pulpit." In 1771 Mr. Enos Hitchcock was settled to succeed Mr. Chipman, who died in 1775, and was buried in the old cemetery of the parish.

In 1787 Mr. Daniel Oliver accepted a settlement here, but resigned in 1797, dying in Roxbury in 1840, at the age of eighty-nine. Mr. Moses Dow, of Atkinson, N. H., was the next minister, called here in October, 1800, ordained March, 1801, resigned 1818.

The Rev. Humphrey C. Perley was settled here in 1818, leaving in June, 1821, and in 1823 Mr. Ebenezer Poor, who retired in March, 1827.

The Rev. Ebenezer Robinson succeeded Mr. Poor, in October, 1830, but was dismissed in January, 1833. Rev. Edwin M. Stone was pastor for thirteen years succeeding. Rev. Mr. Stone is the author of the excellent "History of Beverly," published in 1842, a book of reference to which all writers on the subject must turn for exact information. Mr. Stone's pastorate began March 21, 1834, and ended in 1847. For a period of nearly twenty years, there was no settled minister here, and the church dwindled to less than a score of members. At the end of this time its history was joined to that of the Fourth Congregational, in a curious manner. This latter was organized 1834, and the Rev. John Foote installed as first minister, 1836; who was succeeded by Rev. Allen Gannet, installed December 15, 1847, and dismissed April 26, 1853.

He was succeeded by J. W. Lounsbury, and he by Eli W. Harrington, in 1860. Rev. Mr. Harrington continued pastor until 1866, when the Fourth Congregational was merged in the Second, taking the name of the "Second Congregational Church." Rev. Mr. Harrington continued to reside here till 1884, though with no pastoral charge, active in educational work, when he removed to another town. In 1865 the church celebrated its one hundred and fiftieth anniversary by a re-dedication, and began its worship in



May, 1866, with Rev. Chas. S. Porter officiating. This, the Second Congregational, continues to occupy its original church, though the building has several times been altered and improved.

Rev. Robert Southgate succeeded Mr. Porter, and he was followed by Rev. Wm. Phipps in 1869, Rev. T. D. P. Stone in 1870, the Rev. Alexander J. Sessions, installed as acting pastor, in 1872, and, since 1876, various preachers have occupied the pulpit, it being filled, at present, by Rev. William Merrill. The church now numbers thirty-five persons, the parish twenty, with one hundred in the Sunday-school. The locality of the Second Parish (or North Beverly) is a historic one, with its old house, the parsonage of John Chipman (the first minister) erected 1715, still standing in good preservation, and the old cemetery with its ancient head-stones.

1801.—*March 25th*, the First Baptist Church of Beverly was organized, and a meeting-house erected the same year, on Cabot Street, nearly opposite Elliot, with the Rev. Joshua Young as pastor. He departed in 1802, and in 1803, in June, he was succeeded by Rev. Elisha S. Williams, a graduate of Yale College, who ministered until 1812, when he resigned. In early life, Mr. Williams had served under Washington, on Long Island; in his later years he returned to Beverly, and died here in 1845, at the home of Mrs. Samuel S. Ober, his daughter, at the age of eighty-seven years, four months.

In 1814, the Rev. Harvey Jenks, of Hudson, N. Y., was called to the society, but died before settlement; and the next pastor ordained was Rev. Nathaniel W. Williams, of Salem, whose ministry extended from 1816-24, when he resigned; in 1836 he accepted another call to the church and continued till 1840. His successor, in 1825, was Rev. Francis G. Macomber, a graduate of Waterville College, who suddenly expired July 1, 1827, and there was again no settled pastor until 1830. Then the Rev. Jonathan Aldrich was ordained and served till 1833, during which time twenty-six members of the church were dismissed, to form a new society at Wenham. 1834, September 19th, the Rev. John Jennings was ordained and continued two years, followed by Rev. Nathaniel W. Williams a second time, from 1836-40. On November 11th, this year, Rev. Charles W. Flanders, a graduate of Brown University, was ordained. He remained ten years, but in 1850 resigned his pastorate here and afterwards occupied pulpits at Concord, N. H., Westboro', Mass., and, Kennebunkport, Me. Finally returning to Beverly, he built here a home, doing occasional ministerial work, especially at the Farms, in the Second Baptist, and expired here August 2, 1875, at the age of sixty-eight.

In 1852 the Rev. Edwin B. Eddy was ordained, resigning three years later, and in the year following, August 7, 1856, Rev. Joseph C. Foster was settled over the church.

During Mr. Foster's pastorate of sixteen years,

which was a highly successful and memorable one, the beautiful church was erected, now occupied by the society, at the corner of Abbot and Cabot Streets.

In 1837 the original church building had been taken down and a new one erected in a more eligible locality on the same street. This was several times enlarged and improved, and a chapel built, but the needs of the society demanded better accommodations, hence the spacious structure now in use. It is the finest house of worship in the town, cost forty-five thousand dollars, and its handsome spire is one hundred and sixty-two feet in height.

It was built by a member of the society, master-builder John Meacom, who also rebuilt the older structure in 1854, and who has followed his honorable calling here for nearly sixty years.

Mr. Foster resigned in 1872, and was succeeded, for one year, by Rev. E. B. Andrews, late president of Denison University, Ohio, and now professor in Brown University, Providence, R. I. The present pastor, Rev. D. P. Morgan, gallantly served (as did Mr. Andrews) in the Union army in the War of the Rebellion.

1802.—The most important offshoot of the First Church was the Third Congregational, subsequently called and now known as the Dane Street Society. The church was organized November 9, 1802, incorporated March 7, 1803, present name adopted in 1837. Their first meeting-house was raised in 1802, finished in December, 1803, and dedicated by the Rev. Samuel Worcester, of Salem. This building was altered and improved in 1831, but destroyed by fire in December, 1832. In 1833 the present commodious building was erected, since, from time to time, enlarged and beautified in accordance with the demands of the times.

The first minister was Rev. Joseph Emerson, born in Hollis, N. H., October 13, 1777, a graduate of Harvard, a teacher and preacher in several places prior to his ordination here, September 21, 1803. After thirteen successful years he resigned, his health demanding a cessation of labor for awhile, and for some time was engaged in educational work, occasionally preaching in various places. He established a literary seminary in Byfield, removing thence to Saugus, and later to Weathersfield, Conn., where he died May 13, 1833. To Beverly, where he was highly honored and esteemed, he frequently returned, delivering here several courses of historical lectures, and writing a memoir of Miss Fanny Woodbury, a missionary from this town.

His successor was the Rev. David Oliphant, installed February 18, 1818, and dismissed, by mutual council, 1833, after a long period of profitable labor. He died in St. Louis, Mo., in 1871. October 13, 1834, the Rev. Joseph Abbot was ordained, an occasion which witnessed also the dedication of the present house of worship. After a pastorate of thirty years, during which his serene and beautiful life was ever a beneficent presence to his people and the com-



munity, this beloved minister was dismissed in December, 1865. He was removed by death April 10, 1867, at the age of fifty-eight years, eight months. Mr. Abbot was born in Philadelphia August 16, 1808, and graduated from Union College, N. Y. In early life he studied medicine with Dr. McClellan, father of Gen. George B. McClellan, but became convinced that the ministry should be his calling, and pursued his theological studies at Andover. He early became aware that he was subject to disease of the heart, and considered himself in the light of a "minute man," liable to call at any moment. This consciousness served to restrict his labors somewhat, and gave to his aspect that repose and serenity which were his characteristics.

Of marked piety (says an obituary), of ripe and rare scholarship and culture, of a peculiarly social, amiable and genial nature, his companionship was a benediction at all times, and our community have been favored indeed in enjoying so much of the blessing of his well-spent life and labors. Able as a writer, and instructive and discriminating as a preacher, yet he published but little, although there were but few if any of his finished productions that would not have well stood the test of severe criticism. Feeling a deep interest in the cause of education, he aided many in travelling those cherished walks of literature in which he was so much at home, doing public service also as chairman, and for about a quarter of a century as member, of our school committee. He was, said his friend, Rev. J. C. Foster, a *true man*. "To this, his whole life was a beautiful testimony. He was genuine and sincere, and his artlessness and truthfulness were uncommonly prominent. He was as unselfish as unpretentious, and he shrank instinctively from publicity. He did not appreciate his own claims to be ranked high among the strong men in the ministry, and his remarkably unobtrusive spirit would not allow him to gain the reputation abroad which he could have easily sustained with his superior abilities."

"Death did not take him by surprise; but he had been looking for the event which at length came unnoticed by him in its actual coming, permitted as he was 'to wake up in glory' from the peaceful slumber of the midnight hour."

It was with difficulty—so attached to their life-long teacher had become his parishioners—that an acceptable successor was found.

In 1866 (February 15th) Rev. Eugene H. Titus was ordained, but dismissed, after an active pastorate, June 16, 1867. He died in Georgetown, Mass., July, 1876.

He was succeeded by Rev. Orpheus T. Lanphear, who was installed October 22, 1867. Dr. Lanphear was dismissed June 3, 1880, but fixed his residence in Beverly, in whose prosperity he has always taken a lively interest. In 1881 (July 7th) Rev. Samuel W. Eddy, a graduate of Union College, N. Y., was or-

dained, but dismissed April 8, 1887, on account of ill health, to the great regret not only of his own parishioners, but the entire community as well.

The Dane Street Society now numbers about nine hundred and fifty, with three hundred and forty-one in the church, and has a large and constantly increasing membership in its Sunday school. Its oldest living member is Mrs. Adeline, the widow of Rev. Francis Norwood, who united with the church in 1826.

CIVIL HISTORY CONTINUED.

1802.—Having thus outlined the history of the four oldest churches in Beverly, and prepared the way for mention of the others in sequence, attention will now be given again to civil affairs. The Beverly Bank, one of the most important of the town, was incorporated 1802, with capital at \$160,000, reduced in 1815 to \$100,000, but increased in 1836 to \$125,000. Under successive charters it has continued in corporate capacity to the present time, becoming the Beverly National Bank in 1865, with a charter for twenty years, renewed for twenty more in 1885, with a capital of \$200,000. Its first president was Israel Thorndike, succeeded by Moses Brown, Joshua Fisher, William Leach, Pyam Lovett, Albert Thorndike, Samuel Endicott and John Picket, names, all of them, synonyms for integrity, and identified with the town's highest interests.

In the course of its long existence, eighty-five years, it has had but three cashiers: Josiah Gould, Albert Thorndike and Robert G. Bennett. Mr. Bennett succeeded Mr. Thorndike, when the latter was elected president, in 1844, and held this position of trust during forty-one years, when he was chosen treasurer of the Savings' Bank. The present cashier, Mr. Augustus Stevens, was connected with the bank thirty-one years, as teller, when he succeeded Mr. Bennett as cashier.

The bank, for a long time, occupied a portion of the brick building at the corner of Cabot and Central Streets, built by John Cabot in the latter year of the last century, and now owned and occupied by Edward Burley. It was, for a period, located in the Masonic building, but in 1885 entered into the beautiful edifice, corner of Cabot and Thorndike Streets, which it now occupies conjointly with the Beverly Savings' Bank, which built it. This latter institution was chartered in 1867, and has deposits to the amount of about a million dollars. Its president is William Endicott, who has held this position since 1867, as also has its treasurer, R. G. Bennett. The bank building, erected in 1885, at a cost of twenty-five thousand dollars, is in the Queen Anne and Colonial style of architecture, of brick, with trimmings of freestone and is considered one of the finest and most complete of its kind in the country. It occupies the site of the former residence of Albert Thorndike (long time cashier and president of the old bank), a house built above one hundred years ago,



and once the home of Joshua Fisher, the third president.

1802.—January 20, a Social Library was started, by subscription, with thirty-two shares at five dollars each, the money raised being invested in valuable books. These were selected by Joshua Fisher, Nathan Dane, Thomas Davis and Rev. Mr. McKean, and the collection steadily augmented by purchase and donation, amounted in 1842 to one thousand volumes. Other libraries, later established, were those of the Mechanics' Association and the "School District." In 1851 the Legislature authorized towns to establish public libraries, and that year John I. Baker introduced a petition for an appropriation in the town-meeting, by which one hundred dollars was voted. It was also voted that the library be located in the Social Library room of the town hall. The first library was in the Briscoe Hall.

Each succeeding year the town appropriated one hundred dollars more towards the library, until 1860, when the amount was increased to five hundred dollars, and since 1870 to one thousand dollars, at which figure it now stands. When the question was first discussed, some of our best citizens raised two thousand five hundred dollars by subscription; donations were later made, and the interest in the subject has increased to the present day.

The first trustee, who were also active in securing the subscriptions (aided by several ladies), were: Dr. Chas. Haddock, Wm. Endicott, Jr., Chas. W. Galloupe, Benj. O. Peirce, Richard P. Waters. The present trustees are: Wm. C. Boyden, president; Franklin Leach, secretary; Joseph D. Tuck, treasurer; Edward Giddings and Wm. R. Driver. A new trustee is elected each year; Mr. Tuck has been re-elected for nearly thirty years, and Mr. Leach twenty-five. Under the intelligent supervision of its trustees the library has prospered exceedingly, containing to-day over ten thousand volumes and proving itself a necessity to all, only limited in its beneficent work by the scantiness of the appropriations. It is open to the public every week day afternoon, and Saturday evenings.

1806.—Miss Elizabeth Champney, daughter of the third pastor of the First Church, and for many years a successful teacher, died, April 23d, aged sixty-six.

1807.—The Beverly Charitable Society (already mentioned), was incorporated. The town was called to lament the death of Dr. Elisha Whitney. The sons of Dr. Whitney became world-famous as merchants and ship owners, and his descendants to-day maintain in Beverly the honorable name of their distinguished ancestor.

An old soldier, in the person of Capt. George Raymond, died this year, aged ninety-nine years, having been born December 21, 1707. He was in the expedition to Cape Breton, and in 1770, as appears by the records, was moderator of a town-meeting assembled for the purpose of condemning the use of tea by patriots.

1808.—Joseph Wood, who died this year, at the age of sixty-eight, was a survivor of the Committee of Correspondence during the Revolution, in 1778 a member of the convention for ratifying the United States Constitution and from 1771 to the day of his death held the office of town clerk, discharging every public duty with conspicuous fidelity.

1809.—The Beverly Marine Insurance Company was chartered, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. Its rooms were in the building then occupied by the bank.

1809.—December 10, Josiah Batchelder, jr., expired, aged seventy-three. From his tombstone standing in the Second Cemetery, we learn that, "The whole assemblage of associate virtues, which so superlatively exalt the Christian and endear him to society, his friends and his God, conspired to portray in the liveliest colors the character to whose memory this stone is sacred."

A curious official paper is preserved by one of our citizens, as follows:

"To Josiah Batchelder jr., Esqr. one of the Justices assigned to keep the Peace in and for the County of Essex,—Ebenezer Woodbury, of Beverly, gentleman, in the county aforesaid, on oath informs the said Justice, that on the first day of February, instant, and on divers other days, in the night time, the following Goods, viz: five pecks of Indian Corn & one canvas bag, two bushels & one half Bushel of meal, and two Bags one of said bags being of plain coarse Cloth and marked J. R.) all which were stolen and carried away from the Grist Mill then in the care & occupation of the said Ebenezer Woodbury—the first mentioned corn and bag the property of Benjaⁿ Butman; 5 pecks of the meal & the bag, marked E. W., is the property of Elizabeth Woodbury, widow; & 5 pecks of the meal and the bag mark'd J. R. was the property of Joseph Rea of sd Beverly, Gentleman,—of the value of twenty four shillings & nine pence, the property of the said Benjaⁿ Butman Eliza Woodbury & J. Ray—were feloniously stolen, taken and carried away from the Grist Mill of the said Ebenezer, & others, now in the occupation of sd Eben'r at Beverly, as aforesaid, and that they, and he, hath probable cause to suspect, and doth suspect, that one JUPITER BUNN, of Beverly, in the county of Essex, labourer, did steal, take, and carry away, the same goods, as aforesaid, and prays that he, the said Jupiter Bunn, may be apprehended, and held to answer to this complaint, and further dealt with, relative to the same, according to law; and the said Eben'r saith that he hath cause to suspect, and doth suspect, that the aforesaid corn, meal, etc., are secreted in the dwelling-house of one Anthoney, and prays for a Warrant to search there for the same."

"Received and sworn to on the seventeenth day of February, A.D. 1791, before me,

JOS. BATCHELDER, JR.,
Justice of the Peace."

And the sheriff of said County of Essex is instructed, forthwith to apprehend said Jupiter Bunn, and bring him before said Josi Batchelder; from which it is inferred that said Bunn was apprehended, and had good cause to repent his misdeed.

There are some grounds for believing that Jupiter Bunn was not the guilty party, since he was at one time a trusted servant in one of the first families of Beverly. In the possession of Miss Hannah Rantoul is an antique chair, which once belonged to the family referred to, and which was always called "Jupiter's chair," because this individual always insisted upon occupying it, refusing to sit in any other.

In January, 1852, there died here a native of Africa named Phyllis Cave, aged ninety, who was the sister of Jupiter Bunn. She is remembered as a faithful



and devoted servant, by Mr. Rantoul, in his "Reminiscences," who states that she, when a child, was sold to a Mr. Cave, of Middleton, who paid for her in iron, and took her in his chaise from Salem to Middleton.

She came to this town about the beginning of the Revolutionary war, and maintained herself by labor. "She resided upon that portion of the old Gloucester road, now traversed by the railroad, between Pride's Crossing and West's Beach, and habitually, within a few years of her death, walked by starlight from this point to the town, some four miles distant, whenever she had a day's work to perform, that she might be ready to begin her labors with the sun."

1810.—THE EARLIEST SUNDAY-SCHOOL IN NEW ENGLAND.—At the close of the Revolutionary war, that sturdy privateersman and patriot, Captain Hugh Hill, then in the employ of Messrs. John and Andrew Cabot, sailed for Ireland, with the intention of bringing to Beverly his brother James and family. On the return voyage to Philadelphia, on board the ship "Rambler," in the Delaware River, Hannah Hill was born, September 17th, 1784. And this daughter of James and Elizabeth Hill, in connection with Miss Joanna B. Prince, established, in the year 1810, the first Sunday-school in America, for the religious instruction of the young. Misses Hill and Prince both taught private schools during the week, and in the summer of 1810, they gathered a company of about thirty neglected children, who were accustomed to play about the wharves on the Sabbath, in a chamber of Miss Prince's house, corner of Davis and Front streets, and taught them that knowledge which is beyond all price. This later grew into a school for children of all families. Miss Hill is described by a person who knew her as a woman of great originality, intellectual and scholarly, possessing a lively interest in children. It was said by Dr. Peabody, at the fiftieth anniversary of the school, that he was a pupil in her class in Sunday-school for several years, and that later in life, at her earnest solicitation, he gave her lessons in Greek, so that she had the satisfaction of reading the New Testament in the very language in which it was written. Miss Hill continued her connection with Sunday school work until her death, which occurred in 1838, at the age of fifty-three years. She lies in the Dane Street Cemetery, where her grave-stone may still be seen.

Miss Joanna B. Prince was born in Castine, Me., February 23, 1789, and removed to Beverly, the native home of her mother, with her parents during her childhood. She was a person of entirely different temperament from Miss Hill, but like her, delighted in doing good. In 1819 she married Ebenezer Everett, and removed to Brunswick, Me., where she died, September 5, 1859. Her son, Professor C. Carrol Everett, is now Dean of Harvard Divinity School.

The school, after its formation, was removed to the house of Colonel Abraham Edwards, thence to the

brick school-house in the south district, the Dane Street Chapel, the Briscoe School-house, and finally, about 1819, to the First Parish Church. It is probable, says Robert R. Endicott, (from whose report as superintendent of this school in 1885, this account is mainly taken), that the children who attended the school at the start had no church connection, but as the school widened its sphere and increased its numbers it embraced scholars and teachers from the various parishes in town. In the year 1819, the Dane Street and the First Baptist societies organized parish schools, and from that time to the present the various societies have formed schools under their own organizations.

On the 4th of July, 1842, a union celebration was held on the Town-Hall square, 1,123 scholars and teachers being present; and in 1860 occurred the Fiftieth Anniversary, with large floral processions, music, a collation on the common, under a mammoth tent, and addresses by distinguished speakers. The Eightieth Anniversary, doubtless, will find within the limits of the United States, 100,000 Sunday-schools, 10,000,000 scholars, and a million teachers.

1812.—The manufacture of Britannia ware was begun here, the first in America, by Israel Trask.

Throughout the years 1809, '10, '12 and '14, the citizens of Beverly entered frequent and eloquent protests against the embargo, and restrictive laws of that period, which eventually (as they had foreseen) destroyed the commerce it had taken a hundred years of self-sacrifice to found and maintain.

In the petition of 1812, it is stated: "They find themselves totally deprived of their commerce, coasting-trade and fisheries, even in their own bays and harbors within the State, by the restrictive laws of the Union, and another embargo, which, for severity and oppression, is without precedent."

But, though finding themselves plunged into a conflict they could not conscientiously approve, they yet contributed soldiers for the manning of the ancient breastworks and sailors for service by sea.

The surviving sailors, some of them, can be remembered by the present generation, the last having passed away within the past decade.

Under act of Congress, March 9, 1878, pensions were granted to those who had served in the war of 1812; and in June, 1879, the venerable Stephens Baker wrote an account of the militia and the pensioners, from which the following is an extract: In this town, the first coast guard consisted of a sergeant's guard of fifteen men, with a sergeant and two musicians. The place of meeting was in front of the First Parish meeting-house. On the alarm being given, their location was at Hospital Point.

There were three companies of militia in the time of the war, in which were enrolled some three hundred and fifty men. The North Beverly Company was commanded by Abraham Lord, with Israel Trask, second lieutenant; the Cove and Farms Company by



Aaron Foster, with Jona. Foster, lieutenant. The company in the centre of the town, in which were nearly half of all the men enrolled, was commanded by Capt. Nathaniel Lamson, John Davis, lieutenant; James Hill, ensign, Isaac Gallop, Jonathan Stickney, Thomas Farris and Stephens Baker, sergeants, with the latter recording clerk. Ebenezer Trask and Robert Cary were the musicians. This company attended a regimental muster in Danvers numbering one hundred and sixty-five muskets, three commissioned officers, four sergeants, four corporals and two musicians.

They were under excellent discipline and considered one of the best companies in the State. But three of this company were known (by Mr. Baker) to be living in 1879,—Thos. Farris (died 1882, aged ninety), S. P. Lovett (died recently), and Stephens Baker (died 1883, aged ninety-one years, ten months), and four of the company commanded by Capt. Foster,—Eben Ray, Peter Corning, Joseph Russell and Jesse Woodbury. The following persons received pensions under the act of '78: Stephens Baker, Peter Corning, Samuel P. Lovett, Joseph Russell, Eben Ray. Fourteen widows are enumerated as entitled to pensions, several of whom died after application had been made, and several other applications were pending. But two survive. Many sailors from Beverly were taken prisoners in that war, John Bradshaw, who died 1880, aged ninety-three; and James Stone died 1881, aged ninety-one, were both confined as prisoners at Bermuda, and both returned to Beverly to live many years. Peter Homan died 1871, aged ninety-one, Jacob Grace died 1876, aged ninety-six, John Bradshaw in 1880, at ninety-three. Of the widows of 1812 veterans but two are living. One of these, Mrs. Nancy Trowt, who lives at the Farms, is active and cheerful, at ninety years of age.

The Dartmoor prisoners surviving in 1866, from a list furnished at that time by Mr. James Brazil:

James Brazil, died 1872; Joseph Robinson, died 1868; James Briant, died 1877; Nathaniel Roberts, died Feb. 10th, 1871; Benj. Briant, died Oct. 5, 1874; Lacey Woodbury, died 1861.

DECEASED.

John Pickens, Joshua Ellsworth, Joseph Givens, John Udson, Isaac Loring, John Wyer, John Dempsey, Moses Green, Benj. Elliot, Asa Andrews, Jas. Andrews, Jonathan Stiles, William Young, John Ayers, Saml. Brackett, ———, Hedgdon, Edw. Pousland, Capt. John Giddings, James Stickney, Thos. Roberts, Wm. Glover, Edw. Stone, Robert Chastan, Joshua Pickett, Abel Hall Dale, Larry Osborne, James Butler, Scipio Beckett, Jos. Wyer, Richard Vickary, Robert Grimes.

There were many veterans and pensioners scattered throughout the town, and of the local "characters," "Uncle" Peter Woodbury is one of the best remembered. He was a sailor on board the "Constitution," and lost his thumb while at the helm during a fight, by having it struck by a splinter. Another veteran was John Crampsey, who had both arms shot off at the shoulders, and who was yet an expert fisherman in later life.

1814.—Of the momentous events of the war-period,

a large number of our aged citizens yet retain vivid recollections. The battle between the Chesapeake and Shannon was witnessed from many house-tops, and the excitement in town was intense. An incident that brought the vicissitudes of the war home to our doors, was the chasing ashore of a schooner belonging to Manchester, by a barge load of sailors from a British man-of-war, who destroyed her cargo and set her on fire. The flames were extinguished by the rallying inhabitants of the shore, but vessel and cargo were a total loss. Great alarm spread throughout the country, and a town meeting was promptly called to provide for the protection of our coast. This event is remembered and vividly narrated by several of our venerable citizens.

The arrival of the artillery company from Danvers (which, with others from Haverhill and Methuen, was stationed here for a period), and which he followed to its station at Hospital Point, is distinctly remembered by one. At the alarm, his grandfather hastily entered the room in which he was sleeping, strapped powder-horn and accoutrements, seized his musket and ran out to join with his fellow-citizens in repelling the anticipated invasion. He was followed by the boy of seven, who, now a man of eighty years, gives this narrative to the writer.

The affair is remembered also by William Endicott, now eighty-eight years old, by Richard Clark, eighty-six, and by several others. Mr. Clark was working in a garden above the beach itself when the schooner was driven ashore, and stayed to watch proceedings until the flying bullets drove him behind a house. He saw one of the English sailors climb the rigging and cut a strip of canvas out of the topsail, and remembers that he thought him an excellent mark for a bullet and wondered they had not shot him.

Mr. Clark's father was in a privateer in the Revolutionary war commanded by Captain Herbert Woodbury. Their vessel was taken by an English brig of fourteen guns, which they retook and brought safely to an American port. The first American ancestor of the Trowts—the widow of whose son, Mrs. Nancy, over ninety years old, draws a pension for her husband's services in the war of 1812—came here as one of the prisoners.

Richard Clark, Sr., who was then quite young, took his share of the prize money and went to school. It was just after the War of 1812, says Mr. Clark, that the most money was made by the fishermen, as for so long a period the embargo had kept their vessels in port and prices were high. He went fishing twenty-five summers, beginning when a mere boy, and distinctly remembers landing at "Col. Hale's garden," at Cape Breton.

In the procession on Memorial Day, 1874, walked two veterans of 1812—Thomas Farris and Thomas Pickett,—who were once shopmates with John Smith, a survivor of the Chesapeake engagement, and known

¹ Died in prison.



as "Chesapeake John," who lived in Beverly and worked at cabinet-making.

In consequence of this occurrence (at Mingo's Beach), writes Robert Rantoul, in his "Reminiscences," "a town-meeting was held on Saturday, June 11th, and measures were taken to procure from the State field-pieces of cannon, ammunition, etc., for the defence of the town. A number of persons were associated together as artillery men, and on the 17th of June, at a meeting held for the purpose, Nicholas Thorndike was chosen captain, I was chosen first lieutenant, and Benj. Brown, Jr., 2d lieu. Frequent meetings were held to exercise with the two brass six-pounders, which the State had furnished. The number of persons associated was fifty-four. We turned out twice on alarms that the British were landing, which proved to be groundless, and met frequently for practice until February 13, 1815, when information was received that a treaty of peace had been signed at Ghent, 24th Dec., 1814. In the afternoon of the day of the receipt of this news, the company assembled, and, dragging the cannon to the Watch-house Hill, near Hale St., fired a salute of 18 guns, under my command, Capt. Thorndike being out of town."

1815.—Celebration of the peace, February 22, 1815 :

"The town of Beverly, tho' almost bent to the ground by the pressure of the times, has not lost its elasticity. True to their principles, the inhabitants have never engaged in a War which they believed to be unjust and unjust. They have undertaken their full share of suffering in a variety of forms, from the interruption of business and loss of property, to the alarms of threatened attack and actual aggressions on their shores by the enemy. The realization of the Peace found them almost in despondency, for that blessing was supposed to be still distant. The change from that despondency to excess of joy can only be described by an appeal to the feelings of every patriotic bosom on the occasion. Individual pleasure was expressed by congratulations, and countenances once more illuminated with smiles, whilst reiterated huzzas were at once the effect and stimulus of their united rejoicings. A large sled fancifully dressed with the national colours was so manned with a crew of gallant seamen, and despatched through the street with the intelligence.

"The assembled people flow to the gun-house, dragged the heavy artillery to the top of the highest hill, and, amidst the peals of bells, fired salutes which proclaimed the pleasure they felt. In the evening, the destruction by fire of the dwelling-house of an unfortunate citizen, suspected for a while the national joy, which had begun to flow from the cannon, dried.

"On Wednesday, the 22d inst., when the memory of Washington was commemorated with peace, in conformity to previous arrangements, the residents, at an early hour, assembled at the Bank, where, after listening to the official declaration of Peace, read by the first Marshal, they were escorted in procession to the South Meeting-house. A large concourse of people was assembled. The Rev. Mr. Emerson read appropriate scriptural selections, and then addressed the God of Peace with mingled effusions of patriotism and devotion. An elegant and interesting address was delivered by the Rev. Mr. Abbot, with his characteristic energy and propriety of manner, followed by a pertinent concluding prayer by the Rev. Mr. Whiting. Select pieces of music were well performed by an unusually numerous choir under the direction of Mr. Isaac Flagg. The bells were rung and salutes fired by the two artillery companies of exempts, the process and during the moving of the procession. The escort honors were handsomely performed by the Light Infantry company, commanded by Capt. Wm. Thorndike, which on this occasion made its first public appearance; and all the proceedings were conducted with the attention and decorum due to the day. After the public performances, a large number of the citizens dined together in the town hall; Moses Brown, Esq., was elected their President, and Nicholas Thorndike, Na-

thaniel Goodwin, and Josiah Gould, Esqrs., Vice-Presidents. A large number of patriotic toasts circulated with the glass, and the company separated at a seasonable hour, after a temperate foretaste of the blessings of Peace. In the evening, the Bank and several conspicuous private buildings were neatly illuminated."

Among the twenty "patriotic toasts circulated with the glass," at this "temperate foretaste," are a few which, like the above-quoted description, give us an insight of the times, the motives for action, and the prevailing condition of affairs.

"(1.) The Treaty of Ghent—The last seal to a universal Peace throughout Christendom—Woe to its wanton disturbers!

"(4.) The Union of the States—May it be perpetuated by impartial laws, and a communion of rights, and undisturbed by local jealousies.

"(5.) His Excellency, Caleb Strong—May we never forget, that though we have felt the inconveniences of War, it is to him we owe our preservation from its horrors.

"(6.) The Nations of Europe—Our joy at their emancipation is no longer clouded by fear for ourselves.

"(8.) The Fisheries: the *Grand Bank*—May its charter be perpetuated and its capital unlimited.

"(9.) The American Navy—Its well-deserved glory points to the only field where 'Sailors' Rights' should ever be defended.

"(10.) Our Army—Having gathered a full harvest of honor, in defence of our own territory, may it never have occasion to glean in the field of our neighbors."

Among the "volunteers," we find:

"By Joshua Fisher: The Fisheries—'Free-trade and sailors' rights'—May they not be abandoned by our Government, although *forgotten* by our Envoys.

"By Col. Francis: May party spirit subside, and true patriotism revive.

"By Eben'r Everett, Esq.: The Emperor of all Elbas—We come to bury Cesar, not to praise him."

1818.—The town voted to purchase a hearse.

1820.—Four delegates were elected to attend the convention of five hundred met for amending the constitution,—Nathan Dane, Robert Rantoul, John Low and Rev. Nathaniel W. Williams.

1824, August 31st.—The great event of this year was the reception to General Lafayette, who passed through the town (August 31st) on his grand tour through the country. A salute of thirteen guns on Ellingwood Point announced his approach; an arch spanned the bridge, decorated with flowers and flags, and inscribed: "Welcome, Lafayette, the man whom we delight to honor!"

He was welcomed in a brief but eloquent address by the Hon. Robert Rantoul, to which he feelingly replied, and then continued his journey. Many people yet residing with us remember the visit of Lafayette, and all allude to the day as having been exceptionally rainy. The following is Mr. Rantoul's account of the visit, taken from his "Reminiscences," published in the Essex Institute "Historical Collections":

"A committee of arrangements was constituted to prepare for his reception. This committee invited me to make an address to him. He was so situated, in regard to his stopping at Salem and at Ipswich, that he could not alight here; it was therefore arranged that he should stop with the escort and cavalcade in front of the bank-house on Cabot St., and receive the address in his coach. When he arrived at the proposed place there was a heavy shower of rain; his coach stopped abreast the front door of the house, the door of his carriage was thrown open, and I proceeded in the midst of the heavy rain from the door of the house to



the side of the coach, having first secured Nathaniel Lamson to hold an umbrella over me. I stood in the water with my hat under my arm, and read the address I had prepared, to which he made a reply; but his foreign accent, the excitement of the occasion and my perturbation prevented me from fully understanding it. This being accomplished, the cavalcade moved on for Ipswich, amidst the cheers of those assembled around the bank, and the pelting of a drenching rain."

In 1824 was established the Liberty Lodge of Freemasons, with Colonel Jesse Sheldon as its first master, and Stephens Baker as secretary. This lodge has flourished from the first, and now embraces many of our leading citizens.

In 1867 the Masons erected a large brick building at the corner of Cabot and Washington Streets, which was then considered the finest of its class in town, and cost over twenty thousand dollars. The Amity Chapter of Royal Arch Masons was chartered subsequently, and occupies the hall, while stores and numerous offices absorb the space of the first and second floors.

1826.—May 15th the town lost a valued citizen by the death of Dr. Abner Howe, who was born in Jaffrey, N. H., 1781, and graduated from Dartmouth in 1801. He was eminently successful as a physician, and interested in public and private charities and the schools. The house he lived in, on Washington Street, is now occupied by his son, Captain Octavius Howe.

1827.—Captain John Low, a one-time resident of Beverly, who died in Lyman, Maine, in his eighty-second year, raised a company here for the Continental army at the commencement of the Revolution, and at one time kept a public house near the ferry landing.

1829.—At the Farms, this year, a church was organized, and the Rev. Benjamin Knight ordained pastor, September 2d. It started as a "Christian" Church, but afterwards became, under the lead of Mr. Knight, united with the Baptist denomination in 1834. The cost of its first house of worship, which was built of bricks from the old factory at North Beverly, was one thousand six hundred dollars, and it was dedicated February 23, 1830. In 1831 it was presented, by the First Church, with a silver tankard, as a token of its love and good-will. Mr. Knight severed his pastoral relations with the church in 1834, and was succeeded by Rev. Mr. Gilbert, then by Rev. P. P. Sanderson, March, 1840-42; Rev. Sumner Hale, 1842-47; Rev. C. W. Redding, 1848-56; Rev. Samuel Brooks, 1857-60; various "supplies" from 1860-67; Rev. J. W. Lothrop, 1867-70; Rev. Chas. W. Flanders, 1870-74; Rev. C. W. Redding, 1874-81, when he resigned, on account of ill health, but still resides at the Farms; Rev. E. M. Shaw, 1881-84; Rev. J. D. Smith, 1885-86; Rev. T. R. Reed, stated supply from October, 1886, to present date. The present church was erected in 1843-44, at a cost of five thousand dollars.

1829-30.—About this time, says the annalist of Salem, the spirit for lyceums broke forth, and a con-

vention was held in Topsfield to found a county lyceum. This most valuable method of disseminating knowledge was publicly advocated in this town, and the Beverly Lyceum was one of the very first established, by independent effort of its citizens. As early as 1830, '31 and '32, Robert Rantoul, Sr., delivered before it his lectures on local history, which formed the basis of Stone's work on Beverly. During the twenty years and more of its existence, it was ably supported, and many famous names appear among the lecturers on its platform. It is recorded that Horace Greeley and Elihu Burritt each received fifteen dollars for a lecture, and that the former was very much surprised to receive an invitation to appear a second time. George Bancroft, Wendell Phillips, Chas. Sumner and Theodore Parker, received twelve dollars each. Ex-President John Q. Adams lectured here, as also Miss Lucy Stone, Wilson Flagg, Robert Rantoul, Jr., Mr. Thorndike, Dr. W. C. Boyden, Dr. Augustus Torrey and others of our townsmen.

Owing to the rise of rival associations, the old Lyceum lost support, but the impulse toward this form of intellectual recreation continued, and has been sustained to the present day.

In the Athenaeum course of 1860 lectured Nath'l P. Banks, Josiah Quincy, Jr., Dr. R. H. Neale and six others, while invitations were extended to Wendell Phillips, Dr. T. D. Anderson and John G. Saxe.

Of late years, the most active promoter of lectures here have been the officers of the Royal Arcanum, led by Austin D. Whitecomb.

The earliest lyceum lectures were held in the Briscoe Hall, and the later ones principally in the large hall of the town-house.

1830-31.—The introduction of coal into this town began about this time. In October, 1831, Messrs. Pickett & Edwards carted two thousand seven hundred and ninety pounds of coal to the hay-scales near the Old South, to be weighed, and then to the house of Jonathan Batchelder; and also other small lots to a few other individuals. October, 1834, forty-seven tons were landed here from a vessel, of which Capt. Stephen Woodbury was master. This lot was sold to forty-three different persons in the space of eleven and one-half months. It came in large blocks, and had to be broken up with the top-maul or axe, to prepare it for the stove. Many weary, fretful hours (says Mr. Pickett), were spent in trying to make the "strange stuff" burn; some would finally give it up in despair, but others persevered and made it a success. At present, it is estimated, twelve thousand tons are annually consumed.

Fuel at first came (after the home supply became diminished) from the forests of Maine; but even these are now exhausted, and wood is brought from Nova Scotia and New Brunswick.

1833.—The Beverly Academy, projected as a private school by an association of gentlemen became,



although its existence was relatively brief, an important factor in the intellectual development of the town.

In May of this year, the association purchased land on the northeasterly side of Washington Street, and erected a building in which, June 17th, a school was opened, with Abiel Abbott, of Wilton, N. H., as principal, and Miss Mary R. Peabody assistant.

Chas. A. Peabody, of Tamworth, N. H. (since a judge and a prominent citizen of New York City), succeed Mr. Abbott for one term, next year, when Edward Bradstreet assumed the position, retaining it till June 30, 1836.

A year previous, January 30, 1835, an act of incorporation had been obtained by Elliot Woodbury, Josiah Lovett 2d, Michael Whitney and their associates and successors, as the Beverly Academy.

The officers of the Institution elected February 18, 1835, as trustees, were: Robert Rantoul, Josiah Lovett 2d, Elliott Woodbury, Albert Thorndike, William Endicott, with Wm. Endicott treasurer, and Stephens Baker clerk.

Between the years 1836-41, Thos. B. Webb was principal, followed by Edward Appleton, a Cambridge graduate of 1835. Valued assistants under Mr. West were: Miss Ann W. Abbott, Miss Mary Williams and Miss Mary T. Weld.

After Mr. Appleton came John F. Nourse, from January, 1844, to August, 1847, with exception of two terms, taught by James W. Boyden.

From September, 1847, to November, 1854, Issachar Lefavour was principal, with Miss Phoebe E. Abbott as assistant. Mr. Lefavour, a graduate of Amherst College, who began teaching in Beverly, in 1834, in the old school-house at the Cove, purchased the Academy building in 1848. The building was then situated on the corner of Brown and Washington Streets, but was removed thence, and is now occupied as a shoe factory, on Park Street. Mr. Lefavour was the last to maintain the Academy here, and in 1855 accepted a situation as principal of the Ipswich Grammar School, where he taught without interruption nineteen years. He always remained a citizen of Beverly, however, and still maintains, after half a century of valuable service, an undiminished interest in the cause of education. A short-lived academical school was opened previous to the above mentioned, in a building on Washington Street, since removed to Bedford Street, where it was used as the Ryal-Side School-House, but now owned and occupied as a dwelling-house.

1834.—February 21st, the Beverly Anti-Slavery Society was formed. There died in Camden, Maine, December 10, 1834, a native of Beverly, Mr. Robert Thorndike, at the age of one hundred years and five months.

1835.—On February 5th Nathan Dane departed this life, who was born in Ipswich December 27, 1752. Another lawyer of local eminence, who at one time

studied in the office of Mr. Dane, closely followed him at his departure,—William Thorndike, born in Beverly January, 1795, died July 12, 1835. He fitted for college at Phillips Academy in Exeter, and graduated with distinction from Harvard in 1813. He was admitted to the Essex bar in 1816, and commenced the practice of law in Bath, Me., but in a few years returned to his native town to engage in mercantile pursuits. Here he was elected to fill positions of trust and honor; he pronounced the Fourth of July oration of 1816, was a representative at General Court in 1826 and '27, and a senator in 1828 and four years succeeding, during the last of which he was president of the Senate. He was for several years superintendent of the First Parish Sunday-school, and at his death at the head of financial institutions in Boston.

A noteworthy celebration of America's independence was that of this year's anniversary, on the occasion of which Edward Everett delivered the oration, taking for his theme the early life of George Washington.

An immense audience greeted him in the Dane Street Church meeting-house, where, for an hour and a half, they had the enviable pleasure of listening to this distinguished orator. After the intellectual feast had concluded, the citizens of the town, with invited guests, repaired to the Common, where a pavilion had been erected, and there sat down to a substantial dinner. Robert Rantoul, Sr., presided, and among the assembled participants were twelve Revolutionary soldiers, probably the last survivors of those gallant sons of liberty our town had provided in such numbers. Although many toasts were drunk, it is related that the president of the occasion and many influential citizens set a commendable example of total abstinence from intoxicants.

Among the toasts was one to the "orator of the day," responded to by Mr. Everett in his happiest vein:—

"The orator of the day: The union of genius, talents and industry, regulated by virtuous principle, will always command respect and esteem from a free and enlightened community. The power of eloquence, when employed to promote harmony, union and peace among friends and neighbors, excites the most grateful feelings and merits the warmest praise."

Josiah Lovett, 2d, was chairman of the committee of fourteen who so wisely conceived and ably elaborated the plan of the celebration, and the Beverly Light Infantry did escort duty on the occasion. There is a tradition current now, at this date fifty years removed from the event, that there was prospect of the festivities being interrupted, early in the day, by the appearance of a "suspicious-looking Southerner," armed with pistols. As this gentleman made earnest enquiry for Mr. Everett, some zealous officials promptly arrested him and took his pistols away from him. But when he was permitted to send a note to Mr. Everett, his identity was established as a reporter for the *New York Herald*, at all events not an enemy



thirsting for his blood, and he was promptly discharged and invited to the dinner.

At a town meeting held August 29, 1835, a committee was appointed to secure the change of location of the Eastern Railroad, from the east side of Essex Bridge (as projected) to the west, and this was complied with in 1837.

The old ways of traveling were now to give way to the new method with propulsion by steam, and at the advent of the iron horse came the edict of banishment for the antiquated coach and stage, with their numerous and interesting retinues of attendants. But various stage and transportation lines were kept up until very recent times, the last (or one of the last) being Trask's stage to Gloucester, terminated within the memory of many of the younger generation.

Even this solitary representative of the past,—this lumbering stage with its four prancing horses and jolly driver, making its daily trips between Salem and Gloucester, awoke great interest all along the line, and gave us a hint of what the stage-coach must have been in the hey-day of its existence.

It is a tradition, firmly believed in by all who were favored with a glimpse of Trask and his "turn-out," that the stage of ancient times was a most glorious thing, bright with varnish, with gorgeous landscapes painted on its panels, numerous straps dangling temptingly just out of reach of the small boy, and mysterious recesses within its spacious interior. And the broad-visaged, rubicund driver, with his expansive smile and hearty ways, his long-lashed whip that could easily reach a "cut behind"—but rarely did—he was a king on a throne, and, if he were conscious of the envy and admiration he excited, would certainly have put on kingly airs.

The last stage coach has now been relegated to the most neglected corner of shed and barn, its only occupants the feathered bipeds of the farm-yard; for, even in regions remote, that were wholly unknown in the days of its glory, such as Texas, California and the highlands of Mexico, it has been steadily pursued and persistently demolished by the iron monster—that first entered our territory as a humble servitor, but now threatens to crush us beneath the steel-shod hoofs of monopoly. The last of the old stage-drivers of the Boston line was Woodbury Page, who was also the first station agent here of the railroad company. His old stage, "The Rambler," was for a long time stored in a barn on the Bancroft estate, which was burned to the ground, with all its contents, about 1850. Woodbury Page, though a native of New Hampshire, was connected, through his mother, with the Woodburys, of Beverly.

1836.—A body of its members retired from the Dane Street Church, and organized as a distinct society, February 8, 1837, by the name of the "Washington Street Church."

A house of worship was erected, and dedicated

March 29, 1837, on which occasion religious services were performed by Rev. David Oliphant, formerly pastor of the Third Congregational.

The first pastor was Rev. William Bushnell, installed January 3, 1838, and dismissed May 9, 1842. Rev. George T. Dole was ordained October 6, 1842, and dismissed July 1, 1851.

Rev. Alonzo B. Rich, installed December 8, 1852, was dismissed August 6, 1867. During his ministry the greatest number (one hundred and fourteen) were added to the church.

Rev. Charles Van Norden was installed March 18, 1868, and dismissed April 14, 1873.

Rev. Benson M. Frink was installed October 1, 1873, and dismissed September 30, 1876.

Rev. William H. Davis was ordained July 5, 1877, and dismissed May 1, 1884.

Rev. William E. Strong was ordained July 15, 1885, and is the present pastor.

1840.—The first Universalist Society was organized February 17, 1840, with Daniel Hildreth, Stephen Homans, Jeremiah Wallis, Benjamin D. Grant and William A. Foster as parish committee. Among its early preachers were Revs. John Prince, Henry Bacon, William Hooper and Sylvanus Cobb, but the first settled pastor was Rev. E. H. Webster, in 1843.

In 1846 a church was erected, which was enlarged and beautified in 1863, and every demand anticipated of the increasing needs of its congregation. After Mr. Webster came Rev. W. G. Cambridge, for a year and a half, followed by Rev. John L. Stephens, who remained a year and then withdrew from the ministry and entered political life. He was afterwards editor of the *Kennebec Journal* and subsequently was appointed United States Minister to Uruguay and Paraguay, and later to Norway and Sweden.

Rev. Mr. Washburn came to the pastorate in 1847, and continued till May, 1851, when he resigned, on account of ill-health, and died the same year. Rev. Stillman Barden occupied the pulpit two years, resigned in 1853, and died in Rockport in 1865.

Rev. L. W. Coffin was pastor for two years, between 1853 and '55, then resigned; died in Barnardston in 1879.

September 19, 1856, Rev. John Nichols was settled over the church, and continued in service here for eleven years, impressing the entire community with the purity of his life and sincerity of purpose. The day of his valedictory sermon was also the day of his death, as he was stricken with paralysis of the brain that afternoon, and died the same evening.

Rev. G. W. Whitney was ordained July 24, 1867, and resigned in April, 1872. In November, 1872, the Rev. J. N. Emery was installed, remaining here until 1884, and is now at Bellows Falls, Vt. Like his predecessors, he acquired the confidence of his fellow-citizens and exerted an influence for good. From 1884-85 Rev. E. W. Prebble preached here, and Rev.



Charles S. Nickerson in 1886; but at present (1887) there is no settled pastor.

The present congregation numbers about three hundred individuals. There is a well-attended Sunday-school, of which one of our influential citizens, Samuel Porter, was (until 1886) superintendent for thirty years.

1840.—In the great Whig campaign of this year Beverly partook of the general excitement. The population of the Farms and Cove marched to the Centre in procession, with banners flying, and on the day of the great convention at Charlestown the town seemed almost entirely deserted, so universal was the attendance.

1841.—All town-meetings, previous to 1798, had been held in the First Parish meeting-house, but in this year a building was erected as a town and school-house combined. In town-meeting March 12, 1798, "the committee appointed to view and report the disposition of the rooms in the new Grammar School-house find the large chamber in the upper story in said house (with another row of benches), will accommodate one hundred and forty persons, and therefore recommend that this chamber in future be appropriated to and occupied for the purposes of town-meetings and town affairs, and that the western room be appropriated more immediately for the use of the selectmen and assessors.

"N. B.—In case of a very full meeting it may be adjourned to the meeting-house."

It was then voted that "All future town-meetings shall be warned and holden in the chamber in the new Grammar School-house, known by name of the Town Hall, instead of the place they are now held."

This old town hall stood on the hill back of the present Briscoe school-house, was of two stories in height, with a cupola and bell. In 1842 it was given over to the exclusive use of the Grammar School, and was thereafter known as Briscoe Hall, until 1874. In 1841, with a portion of the United States surplus assigned the town it purchased the Thorndike mansion, which was built by Andrew Cabot some sixty years previously, and fitted it up for the uses of the town officials, with a large hall for public meetings. This edifice was a beautiful example of the best buildings of the period of its construction, and long stood an ornament to the business centre of the town.

It was opened to the public October 26, 1841, with religious exercises and an address by Robert Rantoul, Jr., who, though at first opposed to its purchase, gracefully admitted his mistake. The work of alteration was ably supervised by a committee of citizens, of whom the only survivor is Augustus N. Clark, who has, for nearly fifty years, been prominent in works for the welfare of the town. This hall, at various times enlarged and improved, answered the needs of the community for nearly thirty years. But the growing demands for hall and library space, for rooms

in which to transact town affairs, and greater security of property, necessitated its enlargement in 1874. The lines of the original structure were obliterated, but ample accommodations were secured for all the purposes of town business. The cost of the later alteration was about thirty thousand dollars.

The Thorndike property, which included a garden of great attractiveness, and extended from Cabot to Lovett Streets, was thrown open to occupation, at the time of its purchase by the town, and is now covered by some of our finest estates.

A grandson of Rev. Thomas Blowers (second minister of the First Parish) died at Halifax, N. S., in October, 1842, at the age of one hundred years. He was the oldest surviving graduate of Harvard College, and had long occupied an eminent judicial position.

1845-46.—The Mexican war was more unpopular in Beverly than the War of 1812, and there were few enlistments of our citizens. These, it is believed, joined the ranks of the regular army: Thos. J. Pousland (who was among the missing in the last war of the rebellion); Joseph Bradshaw and Charles F. Dodge. Mr. Bradshaw (now seventy-two years old, and Mr. Dodge, who is about ten years his junior, receive pensions from the general government, under the new law. Mr. Dodge, who is still hale and hearty, and who diligently pursues his vocation, as a builder, retains vivid recollections of the most eventful scenes of the Mexican invasion. He enlisted in December, 1846, in the battery of mountain-howitzers which became so famous as "Reno's Battery" in the operations of the Valley of Mexico. As he was with the troops under General Scott, he was at the bombardment of Vera Cruz, where he first landed on Mexican soil, and marched thence up the mountain slopes to Cerro Gordo. In this famous pass of Cerro Gordo the Mexicans, under Santa Anna, were strongly posted, with a numerous force, and guns guarding every possible approach. Contrary to the expectations of the enemy, General Scott did not march directly into the yawning jaws of the gorge, where certain destruction awaited him and his army, but spent several days in opening a road along one of the high and apparently inaccessible hills, in this manner flanking the strongest batteries and forcing the Mexicans to retreat in confusion.

This masterly move won the admiration of all the old soldiers, many of whom had been with the dashing Taylor at Monterey and Buena Vista, and were disposed to murmur at Scott's slow advances. But this was the secret, perhaps of his success, for the lives of his men were precious to him, not only for their own sakes, but on account of the small force with which he was making this invasion.

Mr. Dodge was detailed to go back to communicate with the lieutenant of his company, and in doing so saw the brave General Shields, who was lying on a hillside desperately wounded. He had the pleasure of meeting General Shields thirty years later, in 1878,

on the occasion of a lecture delivered here by the latter, when they spent several hours in recounting the scenes through which they had passed together, and Mr. Dodge occupied a place on the platform, while the General gave his lecture on the war. In the great march up the slopes of the plateau to the table-land, through Jalapa, Perote and Puebla, and in the strategic operations about the Valley of Mexico, Mr. Dodge was in constant service. In addition to Cerro Gordo, he was in the battles of Contreras, Churubusco, Chapultepec and the city of Mexico.

When the brave Reno was wounded the command of the battery devolved upon Beauregard, for whom, as well as Pillow and Scott, he had great admiration. For General Scott, indeed, he had that fervent admiration understood only by one who participated in the desperate conflicts on Mexican soil, when the great general so successfully led that little army of ten thousand against such overwhelming odds and into the heart of a country swarming with enemies. Our townsman was one of the first through the breach in the western wall of Chapultepec, but declares that General Scott was on the castle esplanade almost as soon, looking about solicitously for the wounded and complimenting the boys on their gallant and successful charge.

After Chapultepec had been carried, the city of Mexico was virtually in Scott's possession, for the guns of the castle on its rock-ribbed hill commanded every portion. But the enthusiastic soldiers dashed down the sides of the hill and along the great aqueduct away from Chapultepec to the city, charging in and out its hundred arches, to the very gates of the ancient Aztec stronghold. They carried the gates and overcame some of the barricades, when night fell about them and necessitated a halt; but they held what they had captured, and completed the conquest on the morrow. One of the guns of the battery to which Mr. Dodge was attached was taken by General (then Lieutenant) Grant into the tower of a church, and this mountain howitzer figures conspicuously in the account of the doings of Grant at that time. During the American occupation of Mexico Mr. Dodge twice performed the journey between Vera Cruz and the city of Mexico and return; once in doing escort duty after the Mexican surrender. This is but one episode, briefly sketched, of a single soldier of Beverly; could the history of each one's adventures be given, it would fill a volume.

1848-49.—"THE CALIFORNIA FEVER."—Through the acquisition of Texas, New Mexico and California, a vast territory was thrown open to exploration, as the outcome of the Mexican War. The great excitement over the discovery of gold in California was felt in Beverly as in few other places, the majority of its male inhabitants being fishermen, or connected in some way with maritime affairs.

It was at least twenty years prior to this event that gold was brought from the Pacific coast by Capt. John Brad-

shaw, who got it of the Indians in trade. It was in the form of gold-dust, of a coarser grain than the African gold, and of a different color. Capt. Bradshaw, who claimed to be the first to hoist the American flag on the Northwest coast, traded there for many years; he used to refit in the Sandwich Islands, and is mentioned in Dana's "Two Years before the Mast." Mr. Joseph D. Tuck was postmaster during this period, and says the great event of this time was the arrival of the first mail across the Isthmus from California. The rate for letter postage was forty cents per ounce, yet some gold-dust and even grains of the precious metal found its way through the mails to expectant friends of the far-distant miners. Although the gold country was on the other side of the continent and in a region almost inaccessible, yet neither distance nor prospective danger deterred our hardy population from making the venture. They had faced the dangers of the seas for years, and a voyage around the Horn was to them a matter of small moment.

Of those who had determined to seek the golden country, many united in purchasing and fitting out vessels. One party started on the overland journey across Texas, but some of them died of cholera at Corpus Christi, and the others were obliged to return and seek a more practicable route.

There was then no railroad reaching out westwardly across the Mississippi, and only the trail was known across Texas and New Mexico opened by American soldiers a year or two previously. Even this was little known, the territory through which it led having then but recently been acquired from Mexico. The first vessel to fit for California, it is said, was the brig "Sterling," Capt. Edmund Gallop, whose residence was at the Cove.

The second party sailed from Salem in the "Elizabeth;" in 1850 the "Metropolis," Capt. John C. Bennett. Various parties were fitted out, in fact, Beverly's population being greatly depleted. If a man could not go himself, he would, perhaps, invest in another's venture, and sometimes two or more would combine to fit out a man who had no capital other than his brain and muscle. A frequent question of those times was: "Don't you want half a man?" meaning a half-interest in some miner's adventure.

The most important venture was made by forty men of the county, thirty-six of whom belonged to Beverly, who purchased and fitted for a long sea-voyage, the new and fine barque "San Francisco," of 320 tons, then just built in Portland.

They chose Capt. Thomas Remmonds as master, John G. Butman as chief mate, and Andrew Larcom second mate. They set sail from Beverly, these later Argonauts in search of the golden fleece, with as little concern for the vast voyage ahead of them as now we of the present generation would take palace-car for "Frisko." They were five months on the voyage, doubled the Horn, coasted the western shore of the two continents, and arrived at their destination without



mishap, for they were sailors all, and nearly every man capable of taking charge of the vessel.

They landed first in San Francisco, and then went up to Sacramento, where they shared out their provisions, sold their vessel at a great sacrifice, and went into the mines. The story of their adventures has been practically repeated a thousand times; in fine, they did not find the golden treasure they had dreamed of, and few of them returned with much to show for their labors. They could have made more in California at labor in the woods and fields, for wood that any one might cut brought sixteen dollars a cord, and labor was from ten to fifteen dollars per day.

Many of them remained two years; some even stayed from ten to twenty years; but the homeward migration soon commenced. Most of them returned *via* the Isthmus, and suffered terribly. One of our citizens, Samuel O. Gallop, broke his leg on the Isthmus, and died of the accident in New York.

Mr. Larcom and a companion came across Nicaragua, in an ox-cart, with two Indian guides, who couldn't speak a word of English. As they spoke no Spanish, their course was sometimes a difficult one and their adventures amusing, as well as sometimes dangerous. Mr. Larcom, who is now living at eighty years of age, and who is one of our keenest sportsmen yet, was on the coast of Sumatra, in 1831, when the ship "Friendship" was taken by native pirates who killed some of the crew and drove the rest overboard. The crew of his ship, the "James Monroe," retook the abandoned vessel after a lively fight with the pirates and brought her home. Mr. Larcom is probably the only survivor who participated in this fight; and there are but seven others, living in town, who went in the "San Francisco" around the Horn; Albert, Charles and Edward Perry, Charles Pickett, Daniel Wallis, Thos. D. Davis and Josiah Bennett. Many of the original "Forty-niners" died on the voyage or at the mines, and but few are left of those who returned.

1851.—Bass River Lodge of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, installed at Bell's Hall, February 21st, by M. W. G. Master Usher. A hall built for its use in 1857 was destroyed by fire 1873, but in 1874-75, the fine block now owned by the Order was erected, at a cost of about sixty-five thousand dollars. It is situated opposite the town-hall, is of brick, with trimmings of granite, and contains, besides the halls used by the lodge, some of the most eligible store-space in town. The post-office occupies the entire rear half of the lower floor, with entrances from Wallis and Thorndike Streets.

The lodge now numbers about four hundred members, its receipts during its existence have been large, and its expenditures for benefits and charities on a generous scale.

The auxiliary Friendship Lodge of the Daughters of Rebecca was installed January 10, 1870, and the Summit Encampment September 20, 1870.

1852.—August 7th, this year, Robert Rantoul, Jr. died, in Washington, a biographical sketch of whom is elsewhere given in this volume. It needs no mention, perhaps, that the greatest in the land brought their tributes here and laid them on Rantoul's grave. In the United States Senate, Charles Sumner sketched his career and pronounced his eulogy:

"He was born August 13th, 1805, at Beverly, the home of Nathan Dane, author of the immortal ordinance by which freedom was made a perpetual heirloom in the broad region of the Northwest. Here, under happy auspices of family and neighborhood, he commenced life. Here his excellent father, honored for his public services, venerable also with years and flowing silver locks, yet lives to mourn his last surviving son.

"The sad fortune of Burke is renewed: he who should have been as posterity is now to this father in the place of ancestor.

"The death of such a man, so suddenly, in mid-career, is well calculated to arrest attention and to furnish admonition. From the love of family, the attachment of friends and the regard of fellow-citizens he has been removed. Leaving behind the cares of life, the concerns of State and the wretched strifes of party, he has ascended to those mansions where there is no strife, or concern, or care. At last he stands face to face in His presence whose service is perfect freedom. You and I, sir, and all of us, must follow soon. God grant that we may go with equal consciousness of duty well done."

The offering of Whittier has become a part of the permanent literature of our country, familiar to every reader of his poetry; yet we must be pardoned if we quote it here entire; for it belongs to us, who dwell,—

Here, "where his breezy hills of home
Look out upon his sail-white seas—"

this noble poem; a joint legacy of the bard of freedom and its eloquent advocate.

"RANTOUL."

"One day, along the electric wire
His manly word for Freedom sped;
We came next morn: that tongue of fire
Said only, "He who spake is dead!"

Dead! while his voice was living yet,
In echoes round the pillared dome!
Dead! while his blotted page lay wet
With themes of state and loves of home!

Dead! in that crowning grace of time,
That triumph of life's zenith hour!
Dead! while we watched his manhood's prime
Break from the slow bud into flower!

Dead! he so great, and strong, and wise,
While the mean thousands yet drew breath;
How deepened, through the dread surprise,
The mystery and the awe of death!

From the high place whereon our votes
Had borne him, clear, calm, earnest, fell
His first words, like the prelude notes
Of some great anthem yet to swell.

We seemed to see our flag unfurled,
Our champion waiting in his place
For the last battle of the world,—
The Armageddon of the race.

Through him we hoped to speak the word
Which wins the freedom of a land;
And lift, for human right, the sword
Which dropped from Hampden's dying hand.

For he had sat at Sidney's feet,
And walked with Pym and Vane apart;
And, through the centuries, felt the beat
Of Freedom's march in Cromwell's heart.



He knew the paths the worthies held,
Where England's best and wisest trod;
And, lingering, drank the springs that welled
Beneath the touch of Milton's rod.

No wild enthusiast of the right,
Self-poised and clear, he showed alway
The coolness of his northern night,
The ripe repose of autumn's day.

His steps were slow, yet forward still
He pressed where others paused or failed;
The calm star clomb with constant will,—
The restless meteor flashed and paled!

Skilled in its subtlest wile, he knew
And owned the higher ends of law;
Still rose majestic on his view
The awful Shape the schoolman saw.

Her home the heart of God; her voice
The choral harmonies wherely
The stars, through all their spheres, rejoice,
The rhythmic rule of earth and sky!

We saw his great powers misapplied
To poor ambitions; yet, through all,
We saw him take the weaker side
And right the wronged, and free the thrall.

Now, looking o'er the frozen North
For one like him in word and act,
To call her old, free spirit forth,
And give her faith the life of fact,—

To break her party bonds of shame,
And labor with the zeal of him
To make the Democratic name
Of Liberty the synonym,—

We strong the land from hill to strand,
We seek the strong, the wise, the brave,
And, sad of heart, return to stand
In silence by a new-made grave!

There, where his breezy hills of home
Look out upon his sad-white seas,
The sounds of winds and waters come,
And shape themselves to words like these:

"Why, Harrington, mourn that he, whose power
Was bent to forty overland,
Heard the still whisper at the hour
He set his foot on Party wrong?"

"The human life that closed so well
No lapse of holy now can stain;
The lips whence Freedom's protest fell
No memory thought our now profane.

"No, better from living, when his grave
That lofty protest utters o'er;
Through roaring, wind and smiting wave
It speaks the hate of wrong once more.

"Men of the North! your weak regret
Is wasted hate; at ease and pay
To freedom and to him you debt
By following where he led the way!"

1853.—The Beverly Insurance Company was incorporated, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. Frederick W. Choate was president for many years. About 1880 the stock was sold at par to gentlemen of Boston, and the name changed to the Merchants' Insurance Company, with Chas. H. Fuller, president, and Elisha Whitney, secretary, doing business in Boston till 1886.

THE LAST SURVIVOR OF THE REVOLUTION.—In the year 1854 expired the last (as diligent inquiry,

and thorough examination of the records and muster-rolls inform us) of Beverly's Revolutionary heroes.

Mark Morse, who died March 18, 1854, at the great age of ninety-six, was a private in Capt. John Low's Company, in Col. Hutchinson's Regiment, August 1, 1775, according to the muster-roll of that date, which is still preserved at the State House in Boston. Mr. Morse was a respected resident of that part of Beverly known as the Cove, and lived in the house (still standing) on Ober Street, just west of its junction with Woodbury Street. It is within a short distance of the spot on which Humphrey Woodbury (about 1630) built one of the first houses in Beverly; a section rich in reminiscence, and the home of many of the hardy fishermen that once materially contributed to the wealth of Beverly.

It is, the historian is well aware, contrary to the popular opinion that any survivor of the Revolution abode with us beyond 1850. On the occasion of the seventy-fifth anniversary of the Battle of Lexington, in 1850, but two survivors of that fight are mentioned as among the living: Jonathan Harrington, of Lexington, aged ninety-two, and Amos Baker, of Lincoln, aged ninety-four. These honored men sat on the platform, the chief guests of the occasion, and were feelingly alluded to by the speakers.

In the town records, between 1820-30, are many allusions to the demise of Revolutionary veterans, becoming less and less frequent beyond the thirties and forties, and ceasing entirely within forty years of the present time. In 1822 (to cite a few illustrious names) Col. John Francis died, aged sixty-eight; he was wounded in the war and received a small pension. Aaron Francis, his brother, died 1825, aged seventy-four, an officer in the Revolution. The year following died Peter Glover, aged eighty-five. In 1821 Asa Herrick, aged seventy-nine. Capt. Hugh Hill, our famous privateer, deceased 1829, at the ripe old age of eighty-eight. The same year, Jeffrey Thissell, at seventy-four.

In 1833, at the age of ninety-one, departed Sarah Wyer, a sister of the brothers Francis. Sergt. William Taylor Manning, a Virginian by birth, but long a resident of Beverly, died in 1838, aged eighty-one. Sergt. Manning served throughout the war, and at the close received an honorable discharge signed by Washington, bespeaking his worth and merit. In 1842, the year Stone's "History of Beverly" was published, casual mention is made of a Revolutionary soldier, Ebenezer Rea. According to the muster-roll of November, 1776, he was then enlisted. He died November 11, 1843, aged eighty-three. Upon his tomb-stone, to be seen in the second cemetery, is inscribed: "He was beloved and honoured all his life and lamented in death as the true friend, the upright and patriotic citizen, the enlightened and devoted Christian;" but no mention is made of his war record. He lived in the old house at the Cove, on Hale Street, still known as the Rea-house, the oldest

in that neighborhood, perhaps in the town, built by one of the first Thorndikes, and a fine example of the colonial architecture. Ebenezer Rea's father was Capt. Joseph Rea, who was one of the Revolutionary committee of correspondence, and commanded the company enlisted in Beverly and Lynn which went to the aid of Washington in New Jersey. Capt. Ebenezer was fifteen years old at the time of the battle of Lexington, and, it is said, used to relate many anecdotes of events that transpired in town during the war.

After serving in the army, he sailed for the West Indies, in the "Resource," with Capt. Richard Ober, when he was taken prisoner by the British and carried into Jamaica. He was not confined closely, but was transferred with other sailors to the "Pelican," a British man-of-war which foundered at sea, four of the crew being lost. He obtained his liberty in 1782, and arrived safely home, to dwell with his neighbors during sixty years of comparative peace.

Rev. Elisha S. Williams, at one time pastor of the Baptist Church, and who died in Beverly in 1845, aged eighty-seven years, four months, was a soldier under Washington. The last of these patriots, probably, next to Mark Morse, was Josiah Foster, who died, at the age of eighty-nine, in 1849. Mr. Foster was one of the captured crew of the snow "Diana," imprisoned in Mill Prison, England, in 1781. By no means complete, this scattering record of "Revolutionaries" is given merely, to indicate the probable survivors, at different periods, of that most important epoch of our history.

1858.—October 24th, Robert Rantoul, deceased, in his eightieth year.

To the faithful portraiture following, from the skilled and loving hand of Rev. Dr. A. P. Peabody, who knew so intimately the departed, little may be added.

"Robert Rantoul was the son of Robert Rantoul (a native of Scotland, who early became an American citizen, was a shipmaster, and was lost at sea in 1783), and of Mary, daughter of Andrew and Mary (Lambert) Preston, of Salem. The subject of this sketch was born in Salem, November 23, 1778. The eldest child of a family left with a scanty competence, it was the ambition of his boyhood to relieve his mother's burdens, and to minister to her support and comfort, and after a short but thorough apprenticeship, at the age of eighteen, he invested his small patrimony in the establishment of a druggist's shop in Beverly. He understood his business, was diligent, frugal and enterprising, obtained the respect and confidence of his townsmen, and remained in his original calling for more than twenty years, till forced to abandon it by the pressure of various public trusts and duties which demanded and filled his whole time, till, in a late old age, he yielded to disabling infirmity. Meanwhile he had acquired not wealth, but property amply sufficient for his comfortable living, and his never stinted charities.

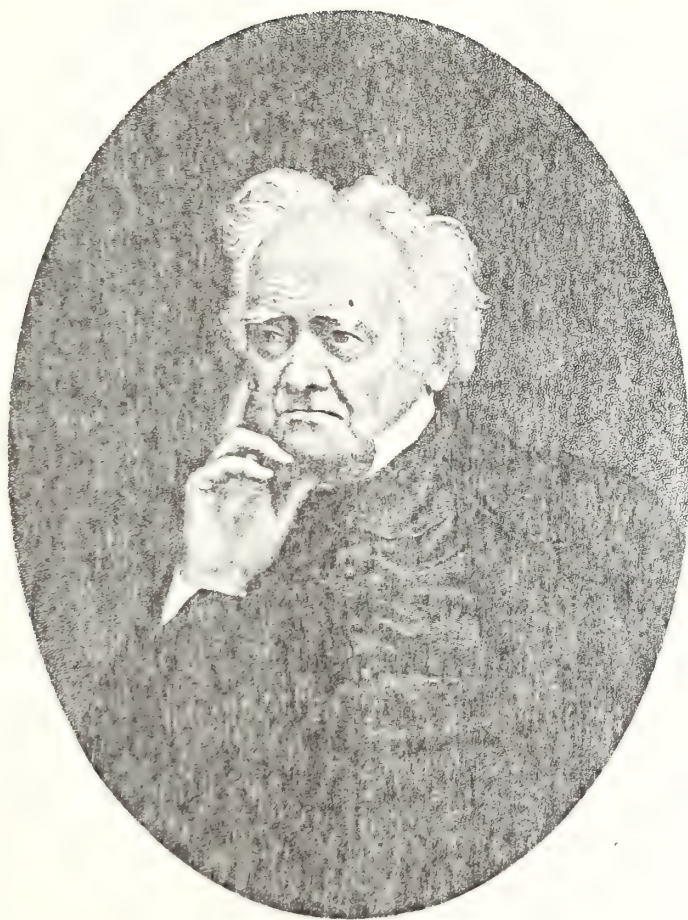
In 1801 he married Joanna, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Herrick) Lovett, of Beverly, whose pre-eminently lovely character gave grace and happiness to his home for nearly half a century, and whose precious memory has an enduring place in the hearts of all that knew her.

Shortly after his marriage he built, on a beautiful site near the seashore, the house in which he lived for more than fifty years, and which is still in the possession and occupancy of his only surviving daughter.

Of Mr. Rantoul's public life the following synopsis is an authentic, and probably a full record. It would hardly permit of being fuller: He was an overseer of the poor of Beverly from 1804 to 1854, when he resigned, having written fifty consecutive annual reports; a justice of the peace and acting trial justice for the town from 1808 until his death in 1858, as well as parish clerk of the First Parish for the same period, and deacon of the First Church, for forty-six years before his death; an original and life-long member of the Massachusetts Temperance Society from its inception in 1812; was, from 1830 to 1851 inclusive, an original trustee, on the part of the State, of the Institution for the Education of the Blind; represented the town in the General Court for the years from 1809 to 1819, from 1823 to 1827 and from 1828 to 1833 inclusive, having been chosen a Senator from Essex County for the years 1820, '21 and '22,—a total legislative term of twenty-five years; was captain of the Light Infantry Company of Beverly from 1805 to 1809; and first lieutenant of the Coast-guard Artillery Company in 1814-15; was for some years one of the county commissioners of highways, and presented, at the invitation of the town, August 31, 1824, an address to Lafayette on his tour through Beverly; was a member of the school committee for forty years; a member of two State Conventions which have been held (1820 and 1853) for amending the Constitution of Massachusetts, and called the latter to order; and, after reaching his majority in 1799, attended every annual town meeting but one, and nearly every town meeting held in Beverly, until 1854, a period of fifty-five years.

It may well be inferred from this list that his was a pre-eminently busy life, especially as it was his uniform habit to do thoroughly to the full measure of his ability whatever he undertook to do. For many years, as justice of the peace, he had probably nine-tenths of the business of Beverly and the smaller adjacent towns, and his office became a well-known and frequented court-room. At the same time, his intimate knowledge of the laws actually in force made him a safe and wise counsellor, and he was constantly called upon for his opinion and advice, which was always given gratuitously, and always with the purpose of settling disputes and superseding litigation. During the greater part of his service in the Legislature he was chairman of the Committee on Accounts, and in that capacity it was his wont to audit the





Wm. Rantoul



entire accounts of the State, and to report against every charge that was not reasonably fair, fully authorized and legally due. In his care of the poor he kept the almshouses under constant supervision, while the merits, claims and needs of outside pensioners were made the subject of careful enquiry. He took great interest in the public schools, and the teachers and pupils found in him a judge of their work equally discriminating and kind. These various offices he bore, not because he sought them, but because they sought him. His public life lay chiefly within the period when fitness was deemed the prime qualification for a public charge. He would not have lifted his finger to obtain the highest place in the government of the State or the nation, and had he been elected to the humblest post of civic duty, he would have accepted it, and have put into it the best work that could be done for and in it. He belonged (as long as it existed) to the Federalist party, and had the singleness and tenacity of aim and purpose which constituted the enduring praise of its leader, yet undoubtedly led to its inevitable defeat and disorganization. In the latter years of his life he voted with the Democratic, then with the Free Soil party, but took no active part in the measures of either. In addition to his public and official duties, Mr. Rantoul had a large and beneficent life-work. Private trusts seemed to gravitate spontaneously in his direction, and no man can have had them in greater number or diversity than he, if we except those who make the management of them a profession. As executor, administrator, guardian or trustee, he had in his hands a large proportion of the estates in Beverly, especially when such a charge was a charity. If there was a small or heavily-encumbered estate from which there was a possibility of saving a pittance for a widow or children, he was almost always solicited to assume its management, and there were many instances in which a family that, but for him, would have been left in utter penury, had their slender means secured, invested and husbanded by him, without cost, and without ever being reminded of their indebtedness to him. His widowed sister and her children were hardly less under his assiduous and generous charge than if they had lived under his own roof. Of the two orphan children of a brother-in-law, he adopted one as his own daughter, and so managed the patrimony of both as to surrender it on their majority with an incredibly large increase. The late Rev. Dr. Anderson and his two brothers were the step-sons of his sister-in-law, and the sons of a clergyman who left them a very scanty inheritance, which Mr. Rantoul, as their guardian, so administered as to make it suffice, so far as they were informed, for their college and professional education. Two of the brothers died young, but the venerable survivor never ceased to speak with the warmest gratitude and affection of his early care-taker and benefactor.

Mr. Rantoul was among the pioneer reformers of

his time. When, as a military officer, several years before the existence of the earliest temperance society in the world, he received the company under his command at his own house, he omitted the usual supply of intoxicating liquors, taking care to add to the entertainment more than a full equivalent for their cost. From that time—how long before we do not know—he never tasted such liquors, or had them in his house, and for a long time he found himself, at public tables and on festive occasions, the only water-drinker.

He was the first person in Massachusetts to stir the question of capital punishment, which he kept constantly before the Legislature, and toward the discussion of which he contributed largely by legislative reports and through the public press.

Always opposed to slavery, yet equally opposed to philanthropy of the denunciatory type, he was in full sympathy with the advanced opinions of wise and patriotic men in favor of emancipation.

Of Mr. Rantoul's private character it is impossible that any eulogy should exceed the truth. His firm religious faith and principle were made manifest in a rigid conscientiousness which could not neglect or slight any known duty. His integrity was not only strict and unswerving, but often transcended its own proper measure, so that in what he meant as simple justice he was not unapt to wrong himself, sometimes, indeed, at a very serious loss and sacrifice, assuming responsibilities which no one else would have regarded as in anywise belonging to him. While always ready to meet every legitimate call of charity, he was, in fact, much more generous than he seemed. He obeyed in full the evangelic precept of reticence as to his good deeds, and there were many cases in which funds inadequate for the needs which they were to meet could have been made sufficient only as supplemented by his unostentatious kindness.

In his family, as a neighbor, as a friend, as a citizen, no man could have been more trusted, honored and revered than he was, or more deservedly.

Of church and State he was one of the strong pillars, that are never replaced in the public esteem and confidence till the generation that relied on their support has passed away. Mr. Rantoul was never in vigorous health, but seldom ill; his mind retained its unimpaired vigor till his last illness.¹

1859.—The first local paper, *The Citizen*, established on a sure foundation was started this year, after several previous but unsuccessful attempts. The first paper to bear this name was published by Andrew F. Wales, now deceased, the first number bearing date of March 17, 1851, with Rev. Ira Washburn as editor.

The later *Citizen* was founded by John Batchelder

¹ Further details of Mr. Rantoul's life, and his connection with town affairs, may be found in his "Reminiscences," published in the "Historical Collections of the Essex Institute."



Cressy, who, during twenty-three years of ownership, wisely maintained it as a valued depository of local news and history. In 1882 it became the property of Irving W. Allen, under whose management it has been enlarged, but with the main features preserved that conduced to its success.

1860.—In the presidential election of this year the vote of Beverly is recorded: for Lincoln and Hamlin, 739; Bell and Everett, 120; Douglas, 72; Jefferson Davis, 23; total, 954.

It must be admitted that the people of Beverly were not unanimously in favor of the Anti-Slavery movement, although its principles had won with the majority. The struggles and triumphs of the friends of the cause are a part of yet unwritten history.

One of them, Mr. A. N. Clark, kindly furnishes the following data regarding the formation of the Beverly Anti-Slavery Society: Although the plan of colonizing Liberia, as a means of civilizing and Christianizing Africa, as well as helping to rid our own country of the curse of slavery, had been earnestly presented to the people of Beverly, in their churches, and contributions sought in aid of that endeavor, it was not till about the year 1832 that immediate emancipation began to be advocated and the rights of the slave to his freedom and citizenship upon the soil where he was born.¹ Lectures were frequently delivered upon this exciting theme and earnest debates held before the Beverly Lyceum.

The universal sentiment was opposed to the extension of slavery, but very few, then, were in favor of complete emancipation. The temper of the public mind at that time is well known. By some, Garrison and his immediate followers were denounced as dangerous to the well-being of the nation; while they, in turn, accused the northern churches of being in fellowship with the South—the “Bulwark of American Slavery”—and declared the Constitution of the United States a “covenant with hell.”

There were other advocates who were listened to with more of patience, and who did good service in correcting and moulding public opinion: such men as Pierpont, May, Staunton, Leavitt, Phelps and Phillips.

The church doors, however, had become barred against the Anti-Slavery advocates, and the Old Town Hall became the battle-ground; and this only was secured by some of the citizens giving a bond for its security against violence.

As early as 1833 an Anti-Slavery Society was formed in Beverly, not numerous, for it required courage to “stand up and be counted.” The object of the society was to educate public sentiment in regard to the great evil of American slavery and the safety to both races in its immediate overthrow. A library was established for the circulation of tracts

and other literature on the question of slavery as was then available. This library, as a matter of convenience, was located at the drug-store of Augustus N. Clark, on Cabot Street, the proprietor of the store acting as librarian. The library case was made by John Tuck, 2d, and by him presented to the society; it has been carefully preserved, while the library, made up as it was mostly of pamphlets and unbound books, has disappeared.

Of the original members of the society, Augustus N. Clark, John I. Baker, Charles Moulton and Eben H. Moulton, still survive.

The society continued during six years, when slavery becoming (1840) an issue in politics, it ceased to exist; but the impetus of the movement could not be arrested; the result the world knows.

BEVERLY IN THE CIVIL WAR.

It has been fully shown, in the pages preceding, that the people of Beverly were ever animated by highest principle, and were never wanting in military spirit. A well-trained militia was always to be found here at call; as early as 1662 there was a foot company under Captain Thomas Lothrop. After his lamented death, at Bloody Brook, Lieutenant William Dixey was appointed to the command, by the General Court, and he was succeeded by Paul Thorndike. A company of horse had been organized previous to 1689, with William Rayment as captain, William Dodge as lieutenant, John Dodge, Jr., cornet, and Thomas West quartermaster.

They were on the point of being disbanded, by order of General Court, in 1690, but at their earnest request were allowed to continue, provided they could furnish “forty able-bodied troopers, equipped according to law,” which they did. The services of our soldiers in the various fights with the Indians, and during the Revolution and the war of 1812, have been detailed. Between the peace of 1783 and the end of the eighteenth century the military spirit was at an ebb, but rose promptly with the exigencies of the occasion.

In 1800 (October 17th) the first voluntary association of men as a light infantry company was formed, but not organized under the law till June 2, 1801. They were then regularly enlisted under an order from Lieutenant-Colonel James Burnham, of the Third Regiment. Jonathan H. Lovett was chosen captain, Josiah Gould lieutenant, and Robert Rantoul ensign.

This company was disbanded in 1814, but in 1815 another light infantry company was organized, which has existed to the present time. Its first captain was William Thorndike, and his successors various respected citizens eminent in different walks of life. This organization kept alive the spark that might otherwise have become extinguished during the long period of peace; especially at the annual “May trainings” and “Fall musters.”

¹ See, also, Wilson's “Rise and Fall of the Slave Power,” vol. i., p. 264. *et. seq.*



During nearly fifty years of peaceful life, the Beverly militia had fought its bloodless battles on the training-field; the monotony of its existence seemed likely to continue unbroken during an equal period, when suddenly there came the occasion for its services.

1861.—It is significant, that, though there were formerly three military companies in Beverly, these had dwindled to one in 1860, and that one a voluntary association. But this one, Company E., Beverly Light Infantry, was alert and prepared for action; its commander had his "ear to the ground" for the first premonitions of war.

In the *Citizen* for January 19th, 1861, is printed the official order by Governor Andrew, for Beverly to be ready at all times to furnish her quota of troops upon any requisition of the President of the United States. The original of this order is now in possession of Colonel Francis E. Porter, then captain of Company E. The paper adds: "In accordance with this order, Captain Porter has notified Company E. to meet at the armory on Monday next, at seven o'clock."

The sequel is thus stated: "Company E. at a special meeting, in response to the order of Governor Andrew, had a full and enthusiastic rally, and *sixty-seven* readily volunteered for any service that might be required of them by the government."

And two months later the following:

"The order for the meeting of the Eighth Regiment was received here on Monday, April 1st, and early on Tuesday morning the flag of the Beverly Light Infantry was waving on their armory. The company mustered in full ranks, and with music, marched to the station to take the 10:30 train for Boston, being frequently greeted by the waving of handkerchiefs by the young ladies in the shoe factories on Railroad Avenue. Some time elapsed before the arrival of the train, during which the company went through the drill exercise quite satisfactorily. Before leaving, each officer was the recipient of a splendid sword and revolver, gifts from friends here."

"After they had entered the train, and as it left, cheer after cheer rose from the assembled multitude who had gathered to witness their departure. The company is composed of young men who are called away from the scenes of home and cherished associations to serve the land of their birth in the hour of need, and most cheerfully have they responded to the call. The wishes of every loyal citizen and lover of his country go with them."

"While the company were drilling at the station, Mr. William J. Smith, not a member, but whose breast was filled with patriotism, and who has experienced some of the hardships of Texan life, hearing the sound of the drum, dropped his axe and hastened to respond to the call to arms. He left with the company and his name appears on the roll."

"On arrival at Boston the company marched to Faneuil Hall, where they quartered until Thursday, when they left for Washington at 6 P. M."

The same paper announcing their departure contained, also, the President's proclamation for 75,000 troops, dated Washington, April 15th, the surrender of Sumter, April 13th, the attack on the Sixth Regiment by the Baltimore mob, and the additional information that the Eighth had safely reached Philadelphia and was quartered in the Continental hotel.

"On the 15th of April, 1861, (says Schouler's 'Massachusetts in the Rebellion') Governor Andrew received a telegram from Washington to send forward at once 15,000 men. The drum-beat of the long roll had been struck."

"On the morning of the 16th the companies began to arrive in Boston, and before nightfall every company that had received its order in time reported at headquarters for duty."

Company E. was the first in Massachusetts to report for duty; Captain Porter received his orders at five p. m., April 15th, when he immediately notified his men in person, reporting ready for duty that night. It was the second to arrive in Boston, and could have been the first, had not Adjutant-General Hinks sent word that the company was not needed before twelve o'clock.

Subscriptions were started for a relief fund for soldiers' families in town, and had reached the amount of two thousand eight hundred dollars on the morning of their departure.

April 20th, a mass meeting was held in the town-hall, and patriotic speeches were made by many citizens. The relief fund, at the close of the meeting amounted to three thousand dollars.

The ladies of Beverly organized a society for the furnishing of clothing and other necessities to the militia of the State. One hundred and thirteen ladies attended the first meeting; Miss Hannah Rantoul was chosen president, with an able corps of assistants.

Military companies, formed in various parts of the town, received over one hundred members during the first week.

Following Schouler's "Massachusetts in the Civil War," we find that the Eighth Regiment, which had arrived in Boston on the 16th, did not leave the city till the 18th, when it marched to the State-House and was presented with a set of regimental colors by Governor Andrews, who also addressed the soldiers in spirited terms. The regiment left Boston at four o'clock that afternoon, greeted everywhere along the route to Philadelphia "with the same unbounded enthusiasm the Sixth had received. General Butler accompanied it as commander of the Massachusetts brigade. The regiment reached New York on the morning of the eventful 19th of April,—when the soldiers of the Sixth were attacked by the Baltimore mob,—and marched down Broadway amid the congratulations of the vast multitude. This was the second Massachusetts regiment that had marched through that city in advance of all others, while two other regiments were on the seas for Fortress Monroe."

It was in Philadelphia, where they arrived that evening, that they received details of the attack upon the Sixth, that day, in Baltimore.

"This intelligence gave new energy and enthusiasm to the men, and made them more eager to press forward to Washington. They had expected to reach the capital by way of Baltimore; but that route was now closed, and a new one had to be opened, which served as the military highway to Washington for Eastern troops, until sedition was suppressed in Baltimore, and that city assumed a loyal attitude. The new route was by the Susquehanna and Chesapeake



Bay to Annapolis, the capital of Maryland. A branch railroad of seventeen miles connected Annapolis with the Baltimore and Washington Railroad. By this route, Washington could be reached without touching Baltimore. . . . The railroad from Annapolis to the Junction, where it connects with the Baltimore and Washington Railroad, had in part been destroyed, and the engines and cars partially disabled. After considerable delay, the track was re-laid and the engines and cars put in order by the men of the Eighth. To the Eighth Regiment will ever be the honor of having opened the route to Washington by the way of Annapolis, and of having saved from possible loss the frigate 'Constitution,' the 'Old Ironsides' of the War of 1812."

The regiment arrived in Washington on the afternoon of Friday, April 26th, eight days after its departure from Boston.

Referring to the achievements of this regiment at Annapolis, the *National Intelligencer* of the next morning remarked:

"We doubt whether any other single regiment in the country could furnish such a ready contingent to reconstruct a steam engine, lay a railroad track and bend the sails of a man-of-war."

One of the company wrote home that week, that President Lincoln appeared on their arrival in Washington, and said:

"Three cheers for the Eighth Regiment of Massachusetts, who can build locomotives, lay railroad tracks and re-take the Constitution."

On the arrival of the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment at Annapolis, General Butler found the railroad engine-house locked up. He broke it open, and discovered the engine all in pieces. "Who knows anything about an engine?" was the question.

One man stepped out of the ranks and said: "I do, General, I made that locomotive, and can repair her in two hours,"—and he did.

This was Chas. S. Homans, a native of Beverly. When in Washington he was visited and congratulated in person by President Lincoln.

A member of the New York Seventh writing of this event at the time, said that Charles S. Homans, of the Beverly Light Infantry, was the *deus ex machina*, who found his mark written on the disabled locomotive at Annapolis, and superintended its construction.

Mr. William Isaac Smith, who volunteered as fireman on this occasion, was the gentleman who left his labors to join the company in the depot at Beverly.

He is now living at Ryal Side, and Mr. Homans is still living, though an invalid.

A letter from Capt. Porter, dated May 8, 1861, describes the regiment as in good condition, undergoing thorough drill and quartered in the House of Representatives.

The Sixth Massachusetts Volunteers, he adds, were the first to reach Washington, and the Eighth opened the military route from Annapolis. "We

should have been the next, had we not received a despatch from General Scott to stop at Annapolis, and guard that post until the arrival of another regiment."

The first man of the regiment injured was Lieut. Moses S. Herrick, of the Beverly Company, who was shot in the foot by the accidental discharge of a musket, in the rotunda of the Capitol. The muskets, loaded with ball cartridges, were stacked around near the wall, and as some men were bringing in mattresses, they knocked a stand down, one of the guns being discharged into Lieut. Herrick's foot, mutilating it terribly. The limb was amputated by the surgeon of the Sixth, and Lieut. Herrick bore his great misfortune bravely, only lamenting that he could not have received the wound while fighting in the field. Attentions of every sort were showered upon him as he lay in hospital, and also *en route* home and in Beverly. He is residing in Beverly today, in the Upper Parish, the house of the Chipmans and Herricks.

1861.—May 15, At a town-meeting in aid of the Beverly soldiers, the following resolutions were unanimously adopted:

"Resolved, That we tender to the officers and soldiers now absent in the service of the country, our warmest meed of praise for their noble and manly self sacrifice, in so readily responding to the national call, and for the skill, energy, perseverance, courage and ability which they so faithfully evinced in their triumphal progress and march to the nation's capital.

"Resolved, That we tender to the far-famed Seventh Regiment of New York, our heart-felt thanks for their many kindnesses to our Eighth Massachusetts Regiment, and especially for their liberality towards our wounded fellow-citizen, Lieut. Moses S. Herrick.

"Resolved, That our warmest sympathies be tendered to Lieut. Herrick in his misfortune, and that we pledge ourselves to him and to all his associates in our Beverly company, and our other Beverly soldiers, and to their respective families, to render all the material aid and comfort that we can legitimately bestow."

The last of August, 1861, Lieut. John W. Raymond, who had returned with the Eighth, proposed to recruit a company in Beverly, to be attached to the old regiment, if revived, otherwise to some other Massachusetts regiment.

In less than a month he had raised over sixty men, who were encamped under his command on the common. The name proposed for the company was the "Rantoul Guard." The first of October the company chose as officers: Captain, John W. Raymond; First Lieutenant, Henry P. Woodbury; Second Lieutenant, Daniel W. Hammond.

On the Sunday succeeding (October 5th), they attended, in a body, divine services at the Washington Street Church, in the morning, and at the Baptist in the afternoon.

October 15th the gallant captain, with nearly his full complement of one hundred of the picked men of the town, went into camp at Lynnfield. Before they had fairly departed from the town a new movement was on foot for the recruiting of another company, with the promise of more than members enough to help fill it at the outset.



This Company G was attached to the Twenty-third Regiment, Col. Kurtz, and in November we find them encamped at Annapolis.

The interdependence of soldiers and citizens is well shown in one little incident of this period. A request was sent from Capt. Raymond to Capt. F. E. Porter, at home, for a supply of such shirts as the Ladies' Aid Society had furnished them. The letter arrived on Monday, on Tuesday the ladies were industriously at work, and on Friday they packed and forwarded over one hundred of the required garments to their brave brothers at the front.

The history of the Twenty-third Regiment has been carefully written by Dr. James A. Emmerton, of Salem: "A Record of the Twenty-third Regiment," Boston, 1886.

"Hardly had the year (1862) opened, says the historian, "when these new made soldiers found themselves amid the dangers and privations of Hatteras, and in early February they took a prominent part in the battle of Roanoke Island—one of the completest as it was one of the first of Union victories."

"The capture of Newbern soon followed, and, after that, the regiment, though by no means inactive, saw little of pitched battle for two years.

"In the Virginia campaign of 1864, it was in the forefront of the almost uninterrupted fighting which followed the landing at Bermuda Hundred, and culminated in the stubborn and bloody repulse of Beauregard at Drury's Bluff; it gained the foremost ground reached and held by the Eighteenth Corps at Cold Harbor, and bore its full share of the dangers and privations of the early days of the siege of Petersburg. A remnant of its veterans and recruits was employed in picket and outpost duty till the campaign of 1885, when they shared the fortunes of the column which opened communication with Gen. Sherman."

The first week in May, 1864, the Beverly boys of the Twenty-third lost heavily in killed and wounded. Captains Raymond and Woodbury, of Companies G and F, were captured and wounded, but the former effected his escape by cutting his captor nearly in twain with his sword, while the latter shot his assailant with his revolver. Officers and privates all sustained the honor of their native town at the peril, and many with the sacrifice, of their lives.

An episode of the Drury's Bluff battle (May 16, '64) in which Captain Raymond was a participant, is narrated in the "Record of the Regiment."

"Captain Raymond, of 'G,' following the retreating regiment, stopped to help a wounded man, Bray, of his company. Concluding, from the bloody torrent gushing from his breast, that he could do no good, he rose to leave him, and found the rebel line, with colors, close upon him. His contemptuous refusal to surrender brought a volley upon him which tore his clothes, carried away his sword-belt and almost blinded him with the dust and bits of bark torn from neighboring trees. Yielding to first impulse, he opened a

return fire from his revolver, but speedily recognizing the odds against him, he left the field in the hands of the enemy and escaped into the favoring fog."

And again, of the fighting before Petersburg, the regiment historian says:

"About the 1st of July, Captain Raymond, of 'G,' who, since we had lost Colonel Chambers, and Major Brewster was disabled by his wound, was, practically, in command of the regiment, had another, and perhaps the closest of his escapes from serious injury. I do not forget that the bullet which, hitting him in the head at Drury's Bluff, left him for a time unconscious, or the missile which passed just below his right arm-pit, grazing his thorax and arm, at Cold Harbor, came very near his life. This time the immediate disability was more lasting, and the remote effects have never disappeared. He was sitting on a trench, reading a letter, when a shot or shell from some rebel gun plunged through the heaped earth, struck the log on which the captain's shoulder rested, and threw him against the sharp-angled abutment of the stairs. Examination showed a rib broken, another bent, and a third bruised; but Captain Raymond would not go to the hospital, insisting that he could not be spared, and that his cure would progress as well in the trenches as anywhere else."

Letters from the front, from our brothers encamped before the enemy throughout the South, from on board men-of-war and gunboats, were for three years prominent in our local papers. They all breathe the same spirit, of fervent patriotism, disregard of danger and high devotion to principle, that infused their ancestors under similar circumstances a hundred years before.

Until the latter part of '61, Beverly had been fortunately exempt from grave casualties, but as the next year opened began the list of dead and wounded that soon lengthened portentously.

The first Beverly soldier who died during the Rebellion, private Levi F. Larcom, was buried with military honors.

The religious services were held in the First Baptist Church by Rev. J. C. Foster, Rev. Dr. Abbott pronouncing the benediction.

1862.—The first soldier killed in conflict with the enemy was private William Wallis, who was fatally wounded in the battle of Newbern, on the 14th of March, and died on the 16th. As a specimen of the thousands of soldiers' letters now speeding back to the north with their sad tidings, the following is quoted; written by a comrade of the deceased to his widow.

"DEAR FRIEND:—I now take up my pencil, with a sad heart, to inform you of the death of your beloved husband. I was close by him when he fell. I carried him back to the rear, out of the range of the shot, and left him in the care of the doctor. He was willing to die, but you and the children were all that seemed to trouble him. He gave me your likeness and his Bible, and asked me, if I lived through the battle, to write to you and let you know all about it. I then had to leave him, as the battle was raging with fury. We drove the rebels out of their dens, and took possession of the city. It was then night; the next morning I made enquiries for him, but he had passed away, with a good faith in God. He gave his life for his country's cause, and he now lies in his silent grave, far from home. May God, in his tender mercy, watch over the little ones he has left behind! I shall send the likeness and Bible to you as soon as I can.

"No more at present, from your friend,

"WM. F. EARLY."

The chaplain of his regiment, and also his captain, pausing in the heat of conflict, sent home loving tributes to his worth.



On the 19th of April, just a year from the Baltimore massacre, died, private James Williams, another of the soldiers wounded in the Newbern fight. He, with two other comrades, James Dodge and John Glidden, had been badly wounded, he in the leg, by a ball which passed through the knee and dropped into his boot; Glidden was shot through the thigh, and Dodge through the shoulder. Funeral services were held in the Dane Street Church, Rev. Dr. Abbott preaching an impressive sermon. The coffin was deposited in the church, and upon its lid the fatal bullet.

Thus were we reminded of the terrible consequences of war. Scarce a week passed, now, that some name was not added to the death-roll, or that did not witness the return of some disabled patriot. Williams was the first man, as Dr. Abbott said, who had died among us from a wound received on the field of battle.

At a town-meeting, July 10th, which was a full and enthusiastic one, it was voted:

"That the selectmen of this town be authorized to allow and pay, in addition to the customary allowance for the benefit of the families of volunteers, the sum of one hundred dollars to each person who, as a part of the militia of this Commonwealth, shall within twenty days be duly enlisted in this town into the volunteer service of the U. S.; payable when mustered into service. The selectmen are authorized to use the credit of the town fully to carry this into effect."

At the same time, recruiting was going on vigorously, with the prospect of a full company of one hundred and one men being raised in a short time.

The Beverly company raised at this time, Company K, was attached to the Fortieth Massachusetts, with Edward L. Giddings as captain, John F. Piper, first lieutenant, Leonard G. Dennis, second lieutenant, and left for the seat of war September 4, 1862.

Company E, of the Eighth, was mustered out August 1, 1861. The next call was made May 26, 1862. Banks having been driven back into the Shenandoah Valley, the government called for more men. Ninety men responded in two hours after orders were received. They proceeded to Boston where, after remaining two days, they found they were not wanted at that time and returned home.

On the 19th of September, Company E was again mustered in for nine months, with three officers and ninety-eight men. They departed for Newbern, the day before Thanksgiving, and arrived there on the 4th of December. The next day, before the company received its arms and equipments, it was ordered with Company A of Newburyport to Roanoke Island where it remained till June 28th. It then received orders to join the regiment at Newbern. On reaching Newbern, the company found that the regiment had been ordered to Baltimore and followed on, arriving there July 12th, only to learn that the regiment had gone to Maryland Heights where the company found it finally. The same day, the company started with the regiment for Funkstown Md., where it arrived on the afternoon of the next day, just in

season to see the rear of Lee's army across the Potomac. After following it down the Potomac to Bealton's Station on the Rappahannock, the company was ordered to report at Massachusetts, its term of service having expired, arriving about the first of August.

1864.—April 28th, another call was made on Company E, this time for garrison duty at forts in Massachusetts. It proceeded at once to Readville. It was mustered into service with three officers and eighty-eight men who served ninety days and were then mustered out and re-enlisted for one hundred days' service. At the expiration of that time they were mustered out and nearly all the men re-enlisted again, for a year, in the Second Unattached Company, Massachusetts Volunteers. The company was reorganized at once in Beverly with three officers and one hundred men and was ready for service during the winter of 1864-65.

On the 21st September, 1887, Company E held a reunion of its surviving members, at which were present many who had served during the Rebellion. With the field music marched drummer George M. Tucker, beating the old drum which he brought from Washington in the summer of '61, with the same sticks which sounded the calls and the long roll, not only for Company E, but for three years in the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery.

The following is the original roll of the company, stars indicating those who have since died:

Captain, Francis E. Porter.

1st Lieut., John W. Raymond.	2d Lieut., *Eleazer Giles.
3d Lieut., *Albert Wallis.	4th Lieut., Moses S. Herrick.
1st Serg., *Henry P. Woodbury.	2d Serg., *Reuben Herrick, Jr.
3d Serg., Benjamin F. Herrick.	4th Serg., Alfred Porter.
1st Corp., *Samuel Bell.	2d Corp., Hugh J. Munsey.
3d Corp., *George R. Sands.	4th Corp., *John Low.

Drummer, George M. Tucker.

Privates.

Charles B. Allen.	*George H. Goodridge.	Edward H. Ober.
*W. A. Andrews.	*Samuel Goodridge.	*Moses A. Podrick.
Jesse A. Blake.	Samuel Gordon.	George H. Pickett.
*A. J. Blanchard.	*William E. Grant.	John F. Piper.
James Brown.	Daniel W. Hammond.	*George W. Pevier.
Thomas D. Brown.	*Henry A. Hale.	Win. H. B. Poland.
William E. Choate.	Francis P. Haskell.	*J. S. S. Rogers.
*William A. Cleaves.	*Josiah T. Hitchings.	*Godfrey Scott.
Fred. A. Carrier.	George C. Holden.	Thomas J. Smith.
*John H. Chipman.	Charles S. Homans.	William I. Smith.
Charles L. Darling.	*Henry P. Latcom.	*Joseph G. Stone.
*John Deau.	Samuel O. Lee.	Charles Story.
John H. Dennis.	Charles A. Lord.	Edwin Southwick.
*Leonard G. Dennis.	John W. Masury.	*William A. Teague.
Alonzo P. Dodge.	Arthur Meldrum.	Amos B. Trask.
Chas. H. Ferguson.	Chas. W. Mitchell.	Eben Trask.
William A. Friend.	John E. Moses.	Fred. A. Wallis.
Thomas Gavin.	George A. Mowatt.	William H. Warren.
*Ezra A. Glidden.	John Neville.	William W. Warren.
		*Sheribiah S. Webber.

1864.—On the 26th of April, the Fifty-ninth Regiment left the State, to join the command of General Burnside. In this regiment were thirty-one soldiers from Beverly, in Companies A, B, C, G and H. Company C was commanded by Captain John H. Chipman, who had returned to recruit for the regiment.



The Fifty-ninth went into active service at once, and within a month were coming back the sad returns of killed, wounded and missing.

Beverly Men in Company E, 23d Regiment.

Captain, John W. Raymond.

1st Lieut., Henry P. Woodbury. 2d Lieut., Daniel W. Hammond.

Sergeants.

Wm. E. Choate.	William G. Munsey.	William F. Earley.
Samuel Goodridge, Jr.	Joseph H. Baker.	Charles Friend, 2d.
Charles W. Mitchell.	Charles R. Dennis.	

Corporals.

Charles R. Allen.	Thomas D. Davis.	Edward B. Perry.
Dennis Carney.	James Dodge. ¹	George H. Pickett.
John W. Clayton.	Charles G. Fernald. ¹	Thomas J. Smith, Jr.
John J. Dalton. ¹	Austin Glidden.	Joseph P. Wallis. ¹

Musicians, Alfred J. Hall and Charles H. Webber.

Wagoner, George F. Bragdon.

Privates.

Abbott, Stephen W.*	Dennis, Charles R.*	Maxcy, William.
Agent, Joseph F.*	Dow, John E.	McGrath, Lewis.
Allen, Joseph C.	Dupree, Antoine.*	Morgan, Edmund C.
Allen, Stephen B.	Elliott, Charles, 2d.*	Ober, Edward H.
Arnold, James H.	Elliott, Israel, Jr.*	Parker, Charles F.
Ayers, Jacob E.	Ferguson, Alfred W.	Pickett, George A.*
Barry, Patrick, Jr.	Floyd, Joseph M.	Randall, Lewis J.
Bassett, Thaddeus.	Gavin, Thomas.	Reed, Perrin W.*
Batchelder, Ira D.	Goodwin, Joseph D.	Sutts, Stephen B.
Berry, Thomas.	Glidden, Austin.*	Southwick, Lakenan.
Blanchard, Andrew J.	Glidden, John.	Stocker, Charles H.
Boden, James W.	Glover, Charles F.	Taylor, Charles W.*
Bony, Benjamin.*	Grush, Addison E.	Taylor, William K.*
Bradbury, Jacob.	Hendley, Michael.*	Thissell, Ebenezer.
Bricker, Robert.*	Higginbottom, Joseph.	Thissell, Levi A.
Brown, Robert W.	Hollen, Charles.	Trask, Albert.*
Burns, Edward K.*	Jewett, George S.	Trask, Anos B.
Burke, Thomas.*	Johnson, Joseph H.	Trust, Peter.
Carruth, Augustus.	Jones, Charles W.	Vickery, Joseph F.
Cathach, Jacob.	Kentons, Benjamin.	Wallis, William, 2d.*
Carruth, Charles.	Lefavour, James A.	Webber, Eleazer A.*
Carey, Robert, Jr.	Leach, John.	Weeks, Stephen L.
Caswell, Joseph W.	Luftin, John.	Whidden, David.*
Clark, Nathaniel W.*	Luftin, William H.	Williams, James E.*
Clark, William T.	Lull, John.	Williams, Oscar P.
Crompney, Israel.	Marshall, John D.	Woodbury, Levi J.
Crosby, Betsey, 2d.	Masury, George, 2d.	Young, Isaac T.*
Crombie, Enoch.		

* Deceased.

Beverly Men in Company K, 40th Regiment.

Captain, Edward L. Giddings.

1st Lieut., John F. Piper. 2d Lieut., Leonard G. Dennis.

Sergeants.

Reuben Herrick, Jr.*	William H. Brown.*	J. Francis Jenness.
Joseph W. Stocker.	David M. Carter.	Vernum S. Pedrick.
John M. Brown.*	Albert W. Haskell.	J. Lewis Preston.*

Corporals.

Amos Gearing.*	Samuel W. Greer.*	George W. Howard.
Benjamin F. Crosby.	Eph Hathaway, Jr.	Edmund G. Josephs.
Dexter H. Everett.	Chas. H. Henderson.*	George J. Nutter.
George W. Giddings.*		

Musician, Addison A. Center.*

Privates.

Andrews, Asa.	Holden, Elbridge J.	Prince, George W.
Blanchard, Henry J.	Hovey, George F.*	Selle, William A.*
Blanchard, Wm. H.	Jenness, Charles H.	Seely, George S.
Boyan, George W.	Lord, Charles W.*	Stickney, Charles.*
Burke, John.	Lovett, Francis S.	Taylor, John M.
Bushman, William A.	Lovett, Josiah W.	Tengue, William A.
Carruth, Isaac.	Marshall, George W.	Thissell, Jonas.*
Crafts, Samuel O.*	Pickett, Charles H.	Thissell, Nicholas S.
Donagan, Thomas J.	Pierce, George W.	Tuttle, C. Frank.*
Ferguson, Jere. W.	Pierce, George W., 2d.	Webber, Timothy R.
Grish Joseph.*	Pierce, Thomas L.	Webber, Tristram L.
Hall, Benjamin D.	Poland, William H. B.	Webbworth, Charles A.
Hartwood, Francis.	Poor, William H.*	Wilbur, Henry.*
Haskell, George L.	Porter, Nathaniel, Jr.*	Woodbury, Benjamin.*

* Deceased.

BEVERLY'S WAR RECORD.—The whole number of men furnished to the army during the Civil War, under the various calls, was as follows:

April 16, 1861.—Three months' men.....	75
June 17, 1861.—Three years' men (rec. as bounty \$17,100)....	172
July 1, 1862.—Three years' men (rec. as bounty \$9,900).....	140
August 4, 1862.—Nine months' men (rec. as bounty \$10,000)	101
March 14, July 8 and December 19, 1864.—Three years' men and one two years (received as bounty \$24,020).....	127
Also three years, including re-enlisted, who received no bounty.....	118
In addition to the above we have furnished, for ninety days	86
For one hundred days.....	77
Making a total of 896 men, and \$61,120 in bounties, of which the State refunded \$18,600.	

Besides the foregoing, some hundred at least of the Beverly men have served in the army for other places, and nearly as many more have served in the navy.

The whole number of Beverly men who have died in the army and navy is about ninety, or ten per cent. of the whole number enlisted,—a much less percentage than that of our early California emigration.

A reception to our esteemed veterans was given August 4, 1865, when the day was observed as a general holiday. Soldiers and citizens marched in procession to Standley's Grove (where the tables were spread), marshalled by Col. John W. Raymond, of the military veterans, and Masters' Mates George P. Abbott and George Woodbury, of the navy.

RECAPITULATION.—The number of enlistments from Beverly in the United States army during the Rebellion was 608; in the navy, 74; total, 682. The whole number of enlistments, counting re-enlistments for nine months, one hundred days and three years, was 988. The several calls of the government for men were promptly met, and at the close of the war Beverly stood credited with a surplus of 90 men, sufficient to meet her quota on a call of 300,000 men, had it been given. Beverly furnished 32 commissioned officers from the army, most of whom were promoted from the ranks. A large number in the naval service also received commissions as volunteer officers.

Three military organizations represented our town in the army: Companies E, of the Eighth Regiment; G, of the Twenty-third; and K, of the Fortieth, while the rolls of almost every regiment from the eastern part of the State bore the names of Beverly men.

The effects of the war did not cease with the surrender of Lee; indeed, they may be traced to-day in the battle-scarred and maimed veterans yet in our midst.

1863.—The street railway lines of Salem, introduced there in 1862, were extended through the business portions of Beverly.

In July, a mission service of the Episcopal Church was opened at Union Hall, under the charge of the

¹ Holding this rank on their return.

² From the *Citizen*, of August 5, 1865.



rector of St. Peter's, of Salem, the Rev. Wm. R. Pickman. The following year Rev. S. H. Hilliard had it in charge, and in 1865 the church was erected at the corner of Cabot and Bow Streets, with Rev. Mr. Pickman as rector, until his removal to Michigan about a year later. Rev. F. M. Cookson was rector till 1870, and Rev. George Denham till Easter, 1872. From May 13, 1873, to 1878, the Rev. William G. Wells, succeeded by Rev. J. C. Wellwood. In 1885, Rev. Roland C. Smith.

1866.—June 15th, Capt. John H. Chipman died of disease contracted in the service of his country, through exposure, wounds, and the cruelties of the infamous Libby prison. He was scarcely twenty-eight years old at the time of his death, yet had won for himself and the place of his birth the highest honors. He was a descendant in the third generation from the Rev. John Chipman, pastor of the Second Parish Church, 1715-75.

Captain Chipman volunteered with the Eighth at three hours' notice and left behind him a bride of but two months. He participated in the march to the capital, but was prostrated by hemorrhage from the lungs, and returned home. Rapidly recovering, he once more enlisted for nine months, serving which he returned, but was soon commissioned a captain in the Fifty-ninth Regiment, raising a company, and was assigned to Burnside's corps. At Cold Harbor he was accidentally wounded in the hand, came home on a furlough, but soon recovered, resumed his command, and entered the rifle-pits before Petersburg. Soon after he was taken prisoner, and confined in several of the horrible pens in which the rebels kept their captives, and was not released until February, 1865. His constitution was now undermined by sickness, but he reported to his regiment as soon as recovered sufficiently, only to be honorably discharged. A year later he sank beneath his infirmities and soon was carried to the grave, having been preceded thereto, two months before, by his young and devoted wife.

The school district system was abolished, and an improved order of things educational inaugurated.

The first steam fire-engine was purchased this year.

1867.—The first Methodist Church was organized April, 1867, with Rev. Allen J. Hall as pastor. Services were held in the town-hall at first, but a church and parsonage were built on Railroad Avenue in 1869, during the pastorate of Rev. J. M. Bailey. The church building was enlarged to its present dimensions in 1886, and is a conspicuous feature of the section in which it stands. In 1870 Rev. C. S. Rogers was settled here; in 1872, Rev. S. C. Jackson; in 1874, Rev. M. E. Wright; in 1877, Rev. A. P. Adams; in 1878, Rev. Daniel Waite; in 1881, Rev. Seth C. Cary; in 1883, Rev. John Capen; in 1885, Rev. James W. Barter.

1867.—**ANCIENT AND MODERN CEMETERIES.**—An important addition was made to our cemetery

grounds in the purchase by the selectmen of about ten acres of the Bancroft estate, known as Walnut Hill. This hill, which commands one of the finest prospects in town, lies immediately east of Galley's Bridge.

Fifty years ago there were eight burial places in the township,—two near the second parish church, one in Dodge's Row, one at Ryal Side, one at the Farms and the three in the town proper. The oldest of which mention is made in the records is that near the vestry of the First Parish and intersected by Abbott Street, in which lie the remains of the first three ministers of Beverly,—Hale, Blowers and Champney. This was the only burial-place within the limits of the First Parish until 1790.

The earliest decipherable dates on stones in the ancient burial-place are 1678, 1686, 1683, the last of which is at the grave of Rebecca, wife of Rev. John Hale.

The old graveyard of the Second Parish shows as its most ancient stone that at the grave of Joseph Herrick, bearing date 1717. It was opened 1715, and the first occupants were a child of John Dodge, Jr., and the wife of John Trask. The second cemetery here was laid out, near the meeting-house, in 1803. In the old Leach burial-lot at Ryal Side, is the unmarked grave of Reuben Kennison, the first Beverly soldier killed at the battle of Lexington.

In 1788 a lot of land was purchased near the common, and the first grave there was that of Mary Allen, widow of Capt. Barnabas Allen, in January, 1790. Other stones here indicate the last resting-places of many famous in the eighteenth century and first part of the nineteenth.

An extension of the second cemetery was made in 1829, easterly towards the beautiful Walnut Hill, with which it was joined in 1867, forming one continuous tract of about forty acres.

LONGEVITY.—It may be interesting, in this connection, to note some of the examples of longevity in the past, as shown by the grave-stones and the records of the town. On one stone in the Dane Street cemetery are the names of five members of the Appleton family, whose combined ages reach four hundred and four years, among them one who died at one hundred and three.

Beverly has had a good many nonogenarians, among those of the past half century being:

Huldah Davis, who died in 1843, aged 96 years; Lydia Appleton, 1845, 103 years, 8 months, 4 days; Amos Trask, 1846, 91; Mrs. Judith Pickett, 1846, 92; Lucy Gage, 1846, 98; Mollie Dodge, 1846, 91; Elizabeth Trask, 1849, 92; Anna Woodbury, 1849, 91; Anna Miller, 1851, 93; Sarah Trask, 1851, 95; Abigail Tarbell, 1851, 96; Phyllis Cane (colored), 1852, 90; Elizabeth Lowe, 1853, 96; Rose Larcom, 1853, 94; Mark Morse, 1854, 96; Susanna Standley, 1855, 93; Joanna Prince, 1856, 90; Asa Osler, 1857, 91; Molly Trask, 1858, 90; Elizabeth Prince, 1858, 90; Miss Judith Pickett, 1858, 93; Chloe Turner, 1859, 95; Susanna Stone, 1859, 91; Hannah Moulton, 1859, 91; Charity Glover, 1863, 93; Betsey Grant (who saw Washington on his visit to Beverly), 1863, 91; Elizabeth Standley, 1864, 92; Moses Howard, 1866, 91; Mary Pierce, 1867, 93; John Falls, 1867, 92; David Tarbox, 1868, 96; John Cressy, 1869, 94; Samuel Thissell, 1870, 92; Catherine Lane, 1870, 94; Peter Homan



(who also saw Washington), 1871, 91; Sally Adams, 1873, 90; Jacob Groce, 1876, 96; Nancy Reynolds, 1876, 91; Mary Heard, 1877, 91; William Dodge, 1877, 92; John Coleman, 1878, 94; Elizabeth Page, 1878, 95; Betsey Morse, 1878, 93; Lydia Stone, 1878, 90; Elizabeth Woodbury, 1879, 99; Nancy Stocker, 1879, 91; John Bradshaw, 1880, 93; Jesse Woodbury, 1881, 94; James Stone, 1881, 91; Mary Connolly, 1882, 90; Thomas Ferris, 1882, 90; Charlotte Smith, 1883, 93; Judith Sands, 1883, 90; Margaret Brady, 1883, 94; Stephens Baker, 1883, 91; Margaret Roundy, 1884, 96; Elizabeth Wilkinson, 1884, 93; Nancy Morgan, 1885, 90; Joseph K. Russell, 1885, nearly 35; Abigail Young, 1886, 92; Lucinda Howard, 1886, 90; Jane Hill, 1886, 90.

There are nearly sixty residents of Beverly, eighty years old and upwards, as follows:

	Age.
Daniel Foster.....	80
Andrew Latcom.....	80
Mrs. Louisa Foster.....	80
Mrs. Esie Kent.....	80
John Picket.....	80
Mrs. Lucy K. Shaw.....	80
Mrs. Johanna P. Foster.....	80
Mrs. Adaline A. Wallis.....	80
Israel Trask.....	80
Paul H. Ober.....	80
John Clark.....	81
Mrs. Ellen Smith.....	81
Mrs. Serena Ingersoll.....	82
David P. Roberts.....	81
Mrs. Robert Goodwin.....	81
Sullivan Bowen.....	81
Francis A. Smith.....	81
Mrs. Abigail Prince.....	81
John O. Standley.....	82
William Longson.....	82
Mrs. Mary Preston.....	82
Oliver D. Kinsman.....	82
Samuel Odell.....	82
Franklin Haven.....	82
Mrs. Nancy Welch.....	82
Lyman Mason.....	82
Mrs. Betsey Lefavour.....	82
Hiram Preston.....	83
Mrs. Emeline Caldwell.....	83
Israel Elliott.....	84
Mr. Corson.....	84
Mrs. Nabby Sheldon.....	84
Edward Bailey.....	84
George Palmer.....	84
Mrs. Mary Victory.....	84
Blumenzer Rogers.....	84
Mrs. Theresa Haskell.....	84
Mrs. Sarah O. Perry.....	84
Mrs. Abby Peck.....	84
Charles Marshall.....	85
Mrs. Mary Glidden.....	85
John Porter (died September 7, 1887).....	85
Mrs. Sarah C. Tracy.....	85
Robert Goodwin.....	85
Mrs. August Goodrich.....	86
Richard Clark.....	86
Benjamin Ludden.....	86
Benjamin Preston, born the last day of the last month of the last century.....	87
Mrs. Mary Kendall.....	87
Mrs. Nancy Sargent.....	87
William Endicott.....	88
Mrs. Hannah Leach.....	89
Mrs. Nancy Woodbury.....	90
Mrs. Nancy Trowt.....	90
Thomas Hanners.....	90
Hannah Batchelder.....	91
Henry Wilson.....	93
Mrs. Lydia Elliott.....	nearly 93

1868.—Miss Joanna Quiner, who was born August 17, 1796, and died September 20, 1868, acquired more

than local fame as a sculptor, after she was forty years of age. Said the editor of the *North American Review*, July, 1843:

"In a town more remarkable for the sober good sense and unostentatious manners of its inhabitants than for their tastes in the fine arts, the discovery of an undoubted genius is a remarkable event and deserving of record. Miss Quiner, of Beverly, with proper patronage and advantages, would take no mean rank among American artists. Without instruction or cultivation of any sort, her talent for modeling in clay has already attracted much notice."

She died in poverty without having secured that recognition of her genius it so richly deserved. Her portrait, painted by Frothingham, was presented to the public library, and a highly appreciative sketch of her life and work appeared in the *Citizen* of about the date of her death.

Memorial Day, 1868, Post 89, G. A. R., placed iron "markers" at the head of every soldier's grave. They then identified one hundred and fifty in all; a list of names is given in the *Citizen* of November 2, 1868.

1869.—The Roman Catholic Church, organized this year, purchased and remodeled the house of worship formerly occupied by the First Baptist Society, and built a parsonage adjoining. It was dedicated in 1870 by the Very Rev. P. F. Lyndon, Vicar General of the Diocese of Boston, assisted by Rev. Fr. Singer, of St. Patrick's, Montreal, Rev. Fr. Haskins, of Boston, Rev. Fr. Delehanty, Rev. Fr. Higgins and Rev. J. J. Gray, of Salem. The first pastor was Rev. Fr. Shahan, who was succeeded by Rev. Fr. Keiley, he by Rev. W. J. J. Denvir and he by Rev. W. H. Ryan.

At the Farms, in 1887, a handsome church was built for the Roman Catholics in that section, at a cost of eleven thousand dollars. It is one hundred and ten feet long, sixty-five in width, with seats for five hundred people.

It was dedicated October 9, 1887, by the Very Rev. Archbishop John J. Williams, assisted by several others, and is known as St. Margaret's.

1870.—January 14th. This date died Charles Davis, at the age of seventy-four, a prominent and wealthy citizen who, at his death, left bequests to the Essex Institute, of Salem, and to the First Parish Sunday School, five thousand dollars each. He passed most of his life on the homestead farm, inherited through his mother, near the head of Bass River. The old house here has a connection with witchcraft times, as having been the residence, in 1692, of Thomas Gage, who made deposition against one Dr. Toothaker. It is related that during the War of 1812 a brick oven containing rows of bean-pots stored full of Spanish dollars was bricked up, and the treasure there secreted was not disclosed till many years had passed. Not far away lies the homestead farm of Roger Conant, who came here in 1635, one of the "Old Planters."

1871.—Israel Whitney, a son of Dr. Elisha Whitney, died November 12th, aged seventy-four years; one of Boston's most respected merchants, and of Beverly's cherished sons. As a shipmaster, he was



for many years in the employ of Israel Thorndike. His adventures as merchant captain were sometimes perilous, as when his ship "Beverly" was burned at sea, despite his heroic efforts to save her, and when he was exposed to great suffering in an open boat, for several days. Leaving the sea, he became interested in manufacturing, was for thirty-four years director in the Massachusetts Bank and for thirty years a director in the National Insurance Company, besides having other interests in Boston.

He left nine children, six sons and three daughters. His appreciation of the natural beauties of his native place was emphasized by early residence here, after his retirement from maritime life, in one of the most delightful retreats on the shore, near the mouth of Sallow's Brook.

1872.—On the 28th January, died an old and highly-respected shipmaster of Beverly, Capt. Samuel Endicott, for a long time president of the Bank, and for forty years one of its directors.

Capt. Endicott was the seventh in the line of direct descent, from Gov. John Endicott, who came to Salem from England in 1629, as follows:

(1) Gov. John Endicott, (2) Samuel, (3) Samuel, (4) Samuel, (5) John, (6) Robert, (7) Samuel. He was born July 18, 1793, and was the son of Robert and Mary (Holt) Endicott, his mother being a daughter of Rev. Nathan Holt, of Danvers. Capt. Endicott was a fine specimen of the shipmasters of the old school, and sailed for many years in the employ of that eminent Salem merchant, Joseph Peabody. He was for several years in command of the famous ship "George," whose arrival from Calcutta in the spring was as regularly looked for and realized as the recurrence of the months, and which was largely manned by Beverly-sailors.

Two worthy citizens, whose lives of probity and industry as mechanics endeared them to all, passed away in January; Deacon Joseph Wallis, at the age of sixty-five, long connected with the First Baptist Church and Sunday-school, and Reuben Herrick, at the age of sixty-seven years. Deacon Wallis lived in the house of Mr. Herrick, who had three sons in the Civil War: Reuben, Jr., who lost his life, and two others, Benjamin T., and Frank S., who served in the Union Army.

The new almshouse was finished in February, which is located on the side of the cedar-covered hill near Essex Street, commanding delightful prospects by sea and land. The main structure is fifty by sixty feet, with three stories, mansard roof and basement. It contains every convenience of the times, thirty-six furnished rooms for inmates, offices, etc.

The town owns real estate adjoining, to the extent of twenty-seven acres, the cost of which, with the buildings, was about twenty-five thousand dollars. Owing to its eligible location, and its natural advantages, this property could, probably, be sold at any time at a price exceeding its total cost.

The town early gave attention to the condition of its poor, and the few paupers lived well, "boarding around" after the manner in which teachers of country schools are even yet entertained. One of the conditions of contract with a pauper, in 1723, was that he should be "kept as a Christian ought to be kept," and doubtless he was. The name of a certain Joshua Turland frequently appears in the town records as the first supported at the town charge, being entertained first by one substantial citizen, and then by another. The first almshouse was built in 1803, though the town voted to provide one nearly a century earlier. This was situated in Charity Court, near Essex Bridge, and during the latter years of its existence its hospitalities were severely taxed by numerous representatives of the genus "tramp." It was a comfortable old house, and gave a pleasant home to the poor and friendless, who had acquired a right of residence.

A notable character deceased January 17, 1872, in the person of a life-time inmate of the almshouse,—Hector Ross. This "child of natural and unbiased affection" was born in the poor-house, October 9, 1809; his mother, Joanna Stoutly, and his father, a French West Indian of color, reported of fabulous strength. Hector himself was of great strength (imagining himself a Hercules), and though a little "off color," and in intellect a "little below the average," he was yet a great favorite with the children. Two or three generations have been amused by his vagaries, his droll stories and his comic songs. He had a quick wit and retentive memory, but his hallucinations possessed him completely. He claimed to resemble the great Bonaparte (and his profile was indeed markedly Napoleonic), although his color was that of rich mahogany. He firmly believed himself the rightful heir to immense wealth, which various citizens of the town, now one individual and now another, retained from him in their possession.

SCHOOLS AND EDUCATION.—There is nothing on record in regard to the education of the young prior to 1656, when a meeting-house was built and used as a school-room, which arrangement continued for eighteen years. In 1674 a school-house was built on the town's land near the meeting-house, twenty by sixteen feet and nine foot stud, which was also used for a watch-house. Samuel Hardie was the first school-master, at a salary of twenty pounds. He kept the school several years.

In 1686 an agreement was made with Corporal Perkins to furnish a school-room, with a fire-room in it, for the space of six months, for ten shillings, and John Perley was engaged for the term ensuing; his salary, twenty pounds "in pay" or ten pounds in money per year.

In 1700 a Grammar School was established, and Robert Hale, son of the first minister, appointed teacher at a salary of ten pounds. In 1701 Daniel Dodge was the teacher, and in 1704 James Hale,



brother of Robert, taught writing, reading, casting accounts, Latin and Greek grammar, at a salary of thirty pounds.

In 1720 this school was kept by Pyam Blowers, son of the second minister.

In 1782 the Grammar School was discontinued, for which the town was presented to the Court of Sessions, when it was resumed and kept till 1825. It was held in various places till 1798, when it was established in a new house on Watch Hill, the second story being fitted up for town purposes.

About the middle of the century the teacher was required to return a list to the selectmen of the names of parents and masters and the number of children and servants instructed by him. The selectmen were to tax the parents and masters for the support of the schools, and the children and servants of persons refusing to pay their proportion of fuel were not allowed to warm themselves by the school-house fire.

In 1749 the sum of thirty-two pounds, old tenor, was granted to the inhabitants of the eastern part of the town, towards a school, during four months, and in 1752 a Grammar School was kept there a time proportionate to the amount of taxes paid. From 1754-1825 various changes were made, until the Grammar School was abolished, and it was voted to divide the school money raised among the ten school districts.

In 1836 these school regulations were revised, and a list of books for study prescribed.

In 1797, "considering the populous and increasing state of the town, and the decayed state of the school-house on the common, the town voted it expedient to build a new Grammar School-house, 43x32½ feet, of two stories, each about ten feet stud, with room below of about thirty-one feet square for the school, and the same above for town-meetings and other purposes, with room convenient for selectmen and assessors, with one below for a library and with a convenient entry and stairway."

The site on Watch Hill was bought of the heirs of Larkin Thorndike, by the building committee, and the next year, 1798, school was opened here under the tuition (it is believed) of Andrew Peabody, father of the Rev. Dr. Peabody, whose successor was Silas Stickney, who was succeeded by Isaac Flagg.

Until 1841, when the town, having bought the Thorndike mansion and fitted it for a town-house, the hall in this building was used for municipal purposes.

Then the district bought the school-house and land and gave it the name of Briscoe, in honor of Robert Briscoe. In 1873 the school-grounds were enlarged by the addition, by purchase, of the lands of several adjoining estates, and the old school-house removed to the lot on the common, where it now stands, but little distant from the site of the original school building of 1674.

In 1875 the Central Grammar School was opened in this building, the name of which was changed to the Hardie School, in honor of the first school-master, Samuel Hardie.

Just after the Revolution a school was established by a few of the citizens in Dike's Lane (now Elm Square). It was in a small, plain building, heated by a large open fire-place, and about forty scholars was the maximum attendance. The price of tuition was four dollars per quarter, and none of the teachers, all of them college graduates, received over five hundred dollars salary. There was a class in Latin and Greek, and the English scholars were divided into three classes. The sexes were about equally represented. This school lasted about thirty years, Isaac Flagg being the last teacher, who, when this was discontinued, took charge of the Grammar School in Briscoe Hall.

Among the early teachers of this school was William Prescott, a son of Colonel Prescott, of Bunker Hill fame, afterwards a distinguished judge, who came to Beverly to study law with Hon. Nathan Dane. He established his first law-office in Beverly; his daughter, Mrs. Franklin Dexter, is one of the oldest sea-shore residents.

The High School was not established until after a conflict of several years, the opposition being not so much against the establishment of the school itself as from a fear that the money devoted to its support would be proportionately taken from the various district schools, all of them being popular local institutions, and each with its special neighborhood attractions.

The towns had become large enough to be liable in law to support a High School, and some of its friends got so far out of patience in waiting for the town to establish it that they had it indicted. This but intensified the opposition, which was then a decided majority, and they at first attempted to defend the town; but eventually yielded, though the school was at first established at the West Farms, at some distance from the centre of population.

It was established in October, 1857, under John R. Baker as master, the scholars mostly going to it by railroad.

In 1860 it was voted to discontinue the school, but in 1861 the subject was referred to a committee of one from each school district, who reported in favor of locating it in Odd Fellows' Hall, then on Railroad Avenue. Afterwards the town bought the present armory building on Cabot Street, where the school was held until the completion of the Briscoe Building, in which excellent accommodations had been provided for it. The principals have been John R. Baker, Joseph Hale Abbott, Leroy N. Griffin, Willard G. Sperry, Edwin C. Colcord, Enoch C. Adams, Benjamin S. Hurd, who have always had the services of valuable assistant teachers.

Within the past twenty years the greatest improve-



ment has been made in the schools and buildings. Anticipating for several years the abolition of the district system in 1866, the school-houses throughout the town had fallen into decay; and this condition of things necessitated vigorous measures when the town took charge. New buildings were erected in every district save one (at the Cove), where the house was enlarged and beautified.

1875.—In January of this year the finest school building in town was dedicated, standing in the place of the Hardie school-house, and known as the Briscoe. The total cost of this brick structure, the architect of which was J. Foster Ober, a son of Beverly, was about seventy-five thousand dollars.

The school census of Beverly recently completed, shows sixteen hundred and eighty-four children between the ages of five and fifteen years—an increase of twenty-eight over last year,—

In the South District about	479
In the Briscoe District about	417
In the Washington District about	364
In the Cove District about	142
In the Barnes District about	130
In the Bass River District about	65
In the Centerville District about	52
In the Dodge's River District about	35

In 1873, at the age of seventy years, Joseph Hale Abbot deceased, in Cambridge. Mr. Abbot was well known to the people of this town through his long connection with the High School, and his marriage with the only daughter of a prominent citizen, Captain Henry Larcom. He was a descendant of the first minister of Beverly, Rev. John Hale, and a relative of Rev. Abiel Abbott. He left a widow, who survived him but a short time, and several children. One of his sons, Edward S. Abbot, is buried here, having died in his country's service.

Of Beverly's place in literature, it is yet early to write. Of the published productions of the earlier writers—Hale (tract on witchcraft, and sermons), Champney, Hitchcock, Willard, McKean (published sermons), Dr. Abiel Abbott and Rev. Joseph Emerson (sermons by the former, and "Letters from Cuba;" scientific and educational essays by the latter)—mention has been made. The greatest contribution to legal lore was by Hon. Nathan Dane, in his "Digest of American Laws," etc.

A daughter of Dr. Abbott, Miss Anne W. Abbott (still living, at nearly eighty years of age), wrote many charming story-books for children, as: "Kate and Lizzie," 1845; "The Tamed and the Untamed," "The Olneys," etc.; and a popular game of her invention forty years ago, "Dr. Busby," is still published for the delight of the youth of to-day.

One of the first books descriptive of the islands of the South Sea was written by a Beverly lady, Mrs. M. D. Wallis, under the title of "Life in Fejee."

One who wrote throughout a long life was Wilson Flagg, whose delightful descriptions of nature are unsurpassed. His first observations were conducted

in Beverly, and his first literary productions emanated hence. The books that have made his reputation, as a poetic and thoughtful student of nature, are "Birds and Seasons," and "Woods and By-ways of New England." Besides these, he published other books and contributed for many years to the magazines and papers.

Another eminent author, whom we may claim as a native of Beverly by right of birth, is Rev. Dr. A. P. Peabody, whose valued works on Christianity and Ethics are familiar to all readers. His most popularly-known books, perhaps, are "Conversation" and "Reminiscences of European Travel."

Of America's distinguished women, one who has modestly won an enviable position in the world of letters, is Miss Lucy Larcom, another descendant of Beverly's pioneer families. Miss Larcom began to write verses while running about the fields and hills of Beverly, as a child, and continued to do so during her earlier years, while a mill-girl at Lowell. She was, perhaps, the youngest contributor to the *Lowell Offering*, published by the working-girls of that city, many years ago. She continued to write for publication during the years that followed, while studying and teaching in young ladies' schools.

Her first volume of poems was published by Fields, Osgood & Co., about 1868. This was followed by other volumes of verses: "An Idyl of Work," "Childhood Songs" and "Wild Roses of Cape Ann." A complete collection of her poems has recently been added to their "Household Edition," by Houghton, Mifflin & Co. She has also compiled several works, as, "Breathings of a Better Life," "Roadside Poems for Summer Travelers," "Hillside and Seaside in Poetry," etc.

To travel and history, Frederick A. Ober, a native of Beverly, has contributed "Camps in the Caribbees," a personal narrative of adventure in the West Indian forests, "Travels in Mexico," a "History of Mexico," the "Silver City," and other stories of adventure.

Yet another descendant of the first of his name in Beverly, is George E. Woodberry, author of a "History of Wood Engraving," a "Life of Edgar A. Poe," of a threnody entitled, "The North-Shore Watch," and of other poems, which have won the admiration of scholars and critics.

In 1849 deceased, at West Needham, William B. Tappan, who was born in Beverly, the author of that beautiful hymn, "There is an Hour of Peaceful Rest." Of other writers, mention may be found in the pages preceding; but it is not claimed that the list is an exhaustive one, and the historian craves the reader's indulgence.

In January, 1875, Rev. George Trask, the anti-tobacco philanthropist, died in Fitchburg, at the age of seventy-seven. Mr. Trask did battle for principle throughout a long and active life, and was an honor to Beverly, the town of his birth.



1876.—The oldest inhabitant of Beverly died April 20th, this year—Jacob Groce, who was born February 12, 1780. In early life he followed the sea, making many trips to the West Indies, Europe and elsewhere. In 1800 or 1801, while on a passage to the West Indies in the schooner "Sally," with Capt. Gideon Ray, his vessel was chased by a French privateer, captured and taken into Guadaloupe; sailing thence, on board the privateer, they were again captured, by a British man-of-war, and afterwards sent home on an eastern lumber vessel, after remaining a while in Martinique. In 1812 he was taken prisoner by a British sloop-of-war, carried into Bermuda and thence to Halifax, where he and his companions were nearly starved. Mr. Groce's life was unambitious though serene in his latter years, and his example was one of goodness and charity to his fellow-men.

1878.—*March 17th* passed away the then oldest inhabitant, in the person of Mrs. Elizabeth Whitney Page, at the age of ninety-five years and three months. Her husband was Josiah Page, who was drowned off the coast of Sumatra, 1810; and she was a daughter of Dr. Elisha Whitney, whose wife, Eunice, was daughter of General Michael Farley, of Ipswich, a descendant of the Farley who came from England in 1675.

1879.—Dr. Wyatt C. Boyden deceased, after a long residence in Beverly, at the age of eighty-seven. He was born in Gardner, Mass., in 1794, but reared in Tamworth, N. H., where his early life was passed on a farm. He graduated from Dartmouth in 1819, a class-mate with Rufus Choate, and he was the last survivor of his class. Dr. Boyden came to Beverly Farms in 1823, where he first taught school, and there married and began practice as physician. In 1825 he removed to the centre of the town, and in 1826 succeeded to the practice of Dr. Abner Howe. As citizen and physician he was held in high esteem; he took a lively interest in local affairs, and especially in the cause of education; was a trustee of the Fisher Charitable Society for fifty-one years.

1880.—*November 1st*, Dr. Augustus Torrey, son of Dr. Joseph Torrey, a well-known physician of Salem, and in his later years of Beverly, and a grandson of the famous Rev. Manasseh Cutler, of Hamilton, died, this date, in his seventy-sixth year. He graduated at Harvard in 1824, and from its medical school in 1827. He married a niece of Nathan Dane, and left a family of five sons and two daughters. He is remembered as a worthy citizen, a man of fine literary tastes and a skilled practitioner. In the same profession as his father and grandfather is Dr. Samuel Torrey, son of Dr. Augustus Torrey, who maintains the prestige of the family to-day.

Two physicians long identified with the town were the Drs. Kitteredge, father and son, who are mentioned elsewhere in this volume.

1881.—There died in Philadelphia, March 31st, where he had resided since 1867, Dr. Isaac Rea, at

the age of seventy-four. He was a son of Beverly, educated at Phillips Academy and Bowdoin College, and studying medicine at the Harvard Medical College. He practiced medicine in Portland and Eastport, Me., and was appointed superintendent of the Maine State Lunatic Hospital in 1841, and of the Butler Hospital for Insane, at Providence, R. I., in 1846, where he remained till 1867. He won high recognition for his practice and theory of the medical treatment of insanity, and published many valuable books on the subject, which are recognized as authorities. The physicians practicing in Beverly to-day maintain the reputation of their predecessors. The oldest practitioner is Dr. Chas. Haddock, who has had thirty-five years of service here, and with whom is now associated his son, Dr. Chas. W., the next being Dr. Oscar F. Swazey, with thirty years of practice in our midst.

September 28th, James Stone, long prominent in maritime affairs, and a prisoner of 1812, deceased, at the age of ninety-two years.

1882.—*October 13th*, the soldiers' monument was dedicated, which stands on the triangular lot of land at the junction of Abbot and Endicott Streets. It was erected by the comrades of "John H. Chipman" Post 89, G. A. R., from the proceeds of various fairs, during several years, and subscriptions by our townspeople. Four years previously, after advertising for designs for a soldiers' and sailors' monument, the post accepted the design submitted by the Hallowell Granite Company, of Maine, at the price of four thousand eight hundred dollars.

The corner-stone was laid October 10, 1882, and a box deposited beneath it containing, among other papers, a brief sketch of each full company furnished by Beverly for the war: Company E, Eighth Regiment, Capt. F. E. Porter; Company G, Twenty-third Regiment, Capt. John W. Raymond; and Company K, Fortieth Regiment, Capt. E. L. Giddings, as also their memorable battles, etc.

The dedicatory exercises were held on the 13th, and called to Beverly many distinguished people as participants, among them the Governor, John B. Long, and staff, and veterans from other Grand Army of the Republic organizations.

The procession formed was the largest the town had ever witnessed within its limits, containing twenty-six hundred, with delegates from all the county posts, members of the entire Fire Department of Beverly, and no less than fourteen bands of music and drum corps. A section of Battery C, of Melrose, fired the salutes of the day, opening with seventeen guns for the Governor, and closing with a national salute of thirty-eight guns, at the end of the exercises at the monument.

The chief marshal was Col. John W. Raymond, of Beverly, with Col. H. P. Woodbury as chief of staff, and Dr. Chas. Haddock surgeon-general. Col. F. E. Porter commanded the First Brigade, which con-



tained Post 89 with its one hundred and fifty members, led by Wm. H. Morgan, commander. The monument was dedicated by Post Commander Wm. H. Morgan; prayer was offered by Wm. Stafford, chaplain of the post, and an address by Rev. J. F. Lovering, of Worcester. Owing to an accident, by which the platform on which were the invited guests, seventy-five in number, was thrown to the ground and several people injured, the exercises here were interrupted and the procession moved to the common, where a dinner was served in the mammoth tent, and toasts were responded to by the eminent guests of the occasion.

Many buildings along the route of the procession were handsomely decorated. At one point was stationed an old war-horse, thirty-four years of age, from whose back was killed Col. Wells, of the Thirty-fourth Massachusetts Volunteers, and in whose body were several bullets received in battle.

The monument was cut from fine white granite, is thirty-six feet in height, with a square base, twelve by twelve feet. The plinth is six feet six inches square, and on the dies, five feet four inches square, are the inscriptions:

"To the soldiers and sailors of Beverly;

"Erected in behalf of the citizens of the town, by Post 89,

"Department of Massachusetts, Grand Army of the Republic, 1882;

"Enshrined in the memories of the succeeding generations, the heroic dead will live on in immortal youth;

"Teaching eloquent silence the lesson of the Citizen's duty to the State."

The corners of the dies are ornamented with carved cannon. The shaft is surmounted by the figure of a soldier loading at will.

Post 89, Beverly, G. A. R., was organized June 6, 1869, and took its name from John H. Chipman, who went out a second time to the war as captain of Company C, Fifty-ninth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, which was recruited in town and composed in part of Beverly men.

The Post has a membership of 200, and has paid out, for the benefit of comrades and families of deceased members, in the past six years, over \$6,000. On the 1st of November, 1882, the monument was formally presented by the Post to the town, with public exercises in the town hall, presented by Commander Morgan, and accepted by John I. Baker in behalf of the town, and a list was published of the soldiers and sailors who had died in service since the war.¹

In April, of this year, died Capt. Jona. H. Lovett, a retired sea-captain, and David Lefavour, at the age of seventy-six, one of the first shoe manufacturers of the town.

The *Beverly Times*, a valuable local paper, was established this year by Messrs Morgan & Bates.

1883.—The Rev. Edwin M. Stone, formerly minister of the Second Parish Church, 1834-47, representative 1842 and 1844, and the author of a "History of

Beverly," died in Providence December 22d, aged seventy-eight years. The latter part of his life was passed in Providence, R. I., where for some years he was a city missionary. He had done much literary work in the course of his life, his latest and most valuable publication being "Our French Allies in the Revolution."

Miss Elizabeth Manning Hawthorne, the last surviving sister of Nathaniel Hawthorne, died January 1st, aged eighty years and nine months. For the thirty years then past she had lived a very retired life in a farm-house at Monserrat, almost unknown to her neighbors. She was two years the senior of her gifted brother, who, it is said, often declared that she could attain fame if she would devote herself to literary pursuits. Hawthorne's grandmother, daughter of Jonathan and Lydia (Cox) Phelps, was born in Beverly, June 1, 1734, in the house that stood on or near the site occupied by the Roman Catholic parsonage.

In excavating for the foundation of the Lawrence Pottery, to replace the one destroyed by fire, an ancient brick kiln was unearthed. The bricks were somewhat longer and wider than those now in use, and thinner.

November 17, Benjamin O. Pierce, aged seventy-one, died in Beverly, well known as a public educator.

1884.—January 9, Lieut.-Col. Henry P. Woodbury died at the age of forty-eight years. One of the first to respond to the call for three months' men, in 1861, as first sergeant, under Col. Porter, he re-enlisted at the expiration of this term of service as first lieutenant under Capt. Raymond, in Company G, Twenty-third Regiment. He fought gallantly to the end of the war in 1865, sustaining injuries from which he never recovered. He left a widow and two sons, and an aged mother, Mrs. Nancy Woodbury, who is now living (1887), in excellent health, at ninety years of age. Colonel Woodbury represented the town in the Legislature in 1877.

May 6, at Cambridge, died Wilson Flagg, aged seventy-eight years and six months. Mr. Flagg was an ardent lover of nature, and the author of several books on birds and trees: "Studies in Field and Forest," 1857; "Woods and Byways of New England," 1872, and other books, as well as many articles in the *Atlantic Magazine*. His rare musical talent he inherited from his father, Isaac Flagg, the school-master and choir-leader of the old South for many years. "One of his most wonderful feats in the musical line was his arrangement of the songs and notes of the birds to music, as given in their grand anthems of May and June, particularly the song of the vesper bird, the peculiar trilling notes of the 'veery' and the solemn tones of the wood-thrush with its strange cadence. One can say, in the words of Emerson, as he wrote of Thoreau: 'His soul was made for the noblest society; wherever there is knowledge, wherever there is virtue, wherever there is beauty, he will find a home.'"

¹ Pub. in *Citizen* of Nov. 4, 1884.



In December, 1884, the South School-house was destroyed by fire with a loss to the town of \$2,000. A new building was erected in 1885 at a cost of \$25,000.

1885.—In June this year the old mill at the head of Bass River was burned. It is about two hundred and fifty years since the first mill was erected in Beverly, probably by John Friend, who had a grant of land (ten acres) in 1637, and one hundred more in 1628. In 1665, after Friend's death, his heirs granted and confirmed to John Leach, son of Lawrence, "the mill and mill-house standing in Bass River, with all the appurtenances, with two acres of land adjoining and twenty acres a little distance off, all on Ryall's Neck side. "This was recognized as the property of Lawrence Leach by the town of Salem, in 1627, when it decided that the way from the meeting-house to said mill shall be directly in the country way to Edmund Grover's (near the present corner of Cabot and Beekford), etc., substantially as Mill Street to-day, but crossing the mill-pond farther up the stream than the present road over the dam. Relics of the old dam and gateway may still be seen, and the course of the ancient roadway may yet be traced.

The original mill was probably much nearer the head of the stream than the last one. At the point where Bass River Brook meets the tide-water is a high embankment, which once served as a dam and another still farther up. One of these dams was used to confine the water for the cotton-mill erected there in the last century.

The oak frame of the old mill, or a portion of it, is in one of the barns formerly owned by Aaron Dodge, near the mill-dam. In 1669, John Leach, miller, sold to John Dodge, Jr. for two hundred and fifty pounds, all the lands, dwelling-house, mills and privileges. This Capt. John Dodge, Jr., was a son of William Dodge, the first of the name here. In 1702 he deeded to his son-in-law, Ebenezer Woodbury, for two hundred pounds in silver, "all my grist-mill, alias corn-mill, in Salem, with 2 acres of land in Salem & 1½ acres in Beverly, with all streams, water tools, implements, etc."

Bass River was then a boundary between Salem and Beverly. The heirs of Ebenezer Woodbury, in 1798, sold the mill property to Thomas Davis, Jr., who had married a daughter of Israel Woodbury.

This property was purchased in 1848 by Aaron Dodge, who in 1851 enlarged it and added the elevator and tower, said to be the first in the State.

This well-known mill was run by tide-water as a grist-mill until 1882, when it was purchased by a Boston man and used for grinding rubber.

In 1882-83 a son of Mr. Dodge, Israel W., and associates, erected the large structure known as the Eastern Elevator and Mills, four stories in height, surmounted by a tower three stories higher, or ninety feet from summit to basement. This is one of the

best establishments of its kind, and is furnished with every known appliance for discharging and loading cars, grinding grain, etc.

In 1885 there were in Beverly nine claimants entitled to reparation for French spoliation, on account of the losses to brig "Nancy" in 1798, and to the schooner "Esther" in 1799.

The oldest person in Beverly, Joseph K. Russell, died at the age of ninety-four years, seven months. He was a soldier and pensioner of 1812, and had lived for seventy years in the same house in Black Swamp, from which he had not been absent a month.

In August one of the most promising of Beverly's daughters, Miss Alice L. Moulton, died in Steelenbosch, South Africa, whither she had gone as a teacher in February, 1884. Miss Moulton was a graduate of Wellesley College, where she had won high honors. Her ideals and aspirations were pure and elevated, and her young life was consecrated to the cause of Christianity.

FIRE DEPARTMENT AND WATER-WORKS.—In August and September, 1885, the town voted to accept the act of Legislature giving it permission to erect water-works and maintain an independent water supply, at a cost, exclusive of land damages, not to exceed one hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

A committee of sixteen was appointed, who made a report in November, recommending a pumping station at Wenham Lake, with two pumps, each of two million gallons daily capacity, a reservoir on Brimble Hill capable of holding three million gallons, an eighteen-inch main to connect with the street pipes already laid, and a twelve-inch main to the Farms. Brimble Hill is one hundred and seventy seven feet above sea-level, and is thirty higher than the Salem reservoir.

Ground was broken for the reservoir on Brimble Hill, the highest elevation in town, in May, 1886, land having been bought here and on the shore of Wenham Lake, where a pumping-station and a cottage for the engineer have since been erected. The system was completed within the appropriation, and went into full operation on the 1st day of October, 1887, and the town is abundantly supplied with water, both highlands and lowlands, having over fifty miles of pipes extending throughout its length and breadth. Beverly had been served with water from the Salem system of supply, which was established in 1807, its reservoir and pumping-station being within the township limits.

Wenham Lake, from which Beverly and Salem obtain their water supply, is from forty to fifty feet in depth, and is fed by springs beneath the surface. The bottom of the lake is composed of white quartz or sand, and the water, from analysis by our best chemists, has been pronounced remarkably pure. The ice formed here is so clear that it has been used successfully as a lens in igniting powder by the sun's rays.

The pond was once famous among the Indians as



the local fishing-ground of the Naumkeags, a stream flowing from it being a tributary of the Ipswich River, on the banks of which their principal settlement was located.

The first murder committed in colonial times, of which we have any record, was near its shore, on the main road from Salem to Ipswich, and the famous Hugh Peters (who was afterwards executed by Archbishop Laud) preached here from the summit of a conical hill (now removed) from the text, "At Enon, near Salim, for there was much water there."

At a town-meeting in 1774 it was voted that if a number of men, not exceeding thirty-five, would purchase a good fire apparatus and engine, and contract to improve the same for extinguishing fires, they should be exempt from serving in any town office, or as jurymen. This vote was carried into effect, a company formed and engine purchased. The company, in 1795, gave up their apparatus to the town, and in 1805 it was voted to raise \$1,000 and purchase a new fire-engine, and in 1828 another.

The fire apparatus, in 1843, consisted of three engines; with hose, buckets, axes, etc., one company in the North Parish and two in the centre of the town.

Fire hooks-and-ladders were placed convenient for use. In addition to these, the Union Fire Society, formed in 1804, had ladders, fire-hooks, sails and axes, each member being provided with two leather buckets, a two-bushel bag, a bed-key and a screw-driver. For furnishing a supply of water for fires, four cisterns had been built. The Union Fire Society had a fund of \$4,000, which was divided among its members when they disbanded, their services becoming of less importance as public facilities increased.

The first steam fire-engine was purchased by the town in 1806, and on the introduction of Wenham water into the town, hydrants were established extensively, hose-houses were built and efficiently equipped, and the most approved system of apparatus purchased. In all six hose-houses were erected, so that every section, no matter how remote from the town-centre, was thoroughly protected. In addition to these was the steam fire-engine at the central station; and in November, 1885, the building known as the Central Fire Station was dedicated, which cost nearly \$20,000, and is provided with a tower, with perfect apparatus, two engines, trained horses and efficient engineers.

At the Farms, in addition to the hose-house, is a new building containing a fine steamer and appointments equally good with those in the central district.

1836.—An electric fire-alarm was established in February, beginning in the manufacturing district, and extending thence into the outlying sections of the town. It started with ten boxes, two in the manufacturing centre, two on Cabot Street, and one each in the South, Washington, Cove, Montserrat, North Beverly and Farms Districts.

An indicator and a two-circuit repeater was put into the Central Station, a striker attached to the First Baptist bell, and a whistle-blower on one of the factories.

In July, 1886, electric lights were introduced into the town, under the management of the parties controlling the gas company, superseding gas for street lights in the most densely-populated parts.

The Beverly Gas-Light Company was incorporated in 1859, furnishing gas to light the streets and to private consumers.

The street railway system was extended in one direction to Chapman's Corner, at the Cove; in another, through North Beverly, to Wenham.

TEMPERANCE AND OTHER SOCIETIES.—We may say of Beverly to-day, as was said of her by the historian of forty years ago, that, "on the subject of temperance she has kept in the van of enlightened public sentiment."

The customs of early times prescribed "drinks" upon nearly all public occasions, but this town was one of the first to abolish that custom. By a vote of March 9th, 1807, the selectmen were requested "not to approbate or recommend for the renewal of their license any person, in the future, as an innholder, who was not provided with accommodations for entertaining travelers."

Such popular educators as Rev. Joseph Emerson and Dr. Abiel Abbott used their influence in promoting the cause of temperance; but the first temperance society was not formed until about 1830, up to which time nearly every grocer in town was licensed to sell intoxicating liquors.

The Beverly Baptist Temperance Society was organized in 1832, as also was a similar association at the Farms. A Temperance Association was formed in the Second Parish in 1833, the Union Temperance Society in 1835, and a Total Abstinence Society in 1838. In 1840 the Washingtonian movement swept over the land, the beneficial influence of which Beverly experienced.

In 1844 the Sons of Temperance, Franklin Division, organized and contained a large and influential membership, which, after many years of valued service, finally disbanded; the new division of the same name in 1882.

The Young Men's Catholic Temperance Society was organized in 1872, the Woman's Christian Total Abstinence Union organized in 1875, and the Woman's Christian Temperance Union, at the Farms, in 1885.

The Crystal Fountain Lodge of Good Templars was organized in 1882.

Other societies of various kinds, which illustrate the intellectual and industrial life of the town, are numerous, as follows:

The Female Charitable Society was incorporated 1836; Beverly Fuel Society, already mentioned; Seaman's Widows' and Orphans' Friend Society, organized 1833; Fisher Charitable, organized 1810; Old



Ladies' Home Society, organized 1886; New England Industrial School for Deaf Mutes (on a farm of fifty-six acres, at Ryal Side), organized 1876; Woman's Relief Corps, John H. Chipman, Jr., No. 30, organized 1883; Knights of Honor, organized 1877; American Legion of Honor, Reuben Kennison Council, organized 1881; Beverly Gas-Light Company, capital stock, \$40,000, par value \$100; Light Infantry Company, organized 1814; Beverly Co-operative Association, organized 1879; Grand Army Post, organized 1869; Shoe Manufacturers' Association, organized 1865; Lasters' Protective Union, organized 1882; United Order American Mechanics, organized 1883; Independent Order of Red Men, Chicataubut Tribe, organized 1886; Royal Arcanum, Roger Conant Council, organized 1879; Sons of Veterans, Camp John Low, organized 1882; Thorndike Bicycle Club, organized 1881; Daughters of Liberty, Mayflower Council, organized 1885; Golden Rule Alliance, organized, 1885; Beverly Fireman's Relief Association has a fund of \$4,500.

THE POST-OFFICE.—Owing to its contiguity to Salem, Beverly did not possess distinct postal facilities so early as some other towns in the county. The first postmaster was Asa Leech, before the building of Essex bridge, who also had charge of the ferry and kept a public-house at the corner of Cabot and Davis Streets. He was postmaster for many years. Previous to the establishment of the office here our citizens, as well as those of some other towns, obtained their mail from the Salem office.

Dr. Josiah Batchelder succeeded Mr. Leech, at his death, and kept the office in a house on the corner of Davis and Front Streets. On his removal to Maine, John Burley was appointed, who resigned, and was succeeded by John Lemon, he by Farnham Plummer, who removed the office to a building next to the Thorndike mansion, now the town-hall. Jonathan Smith was the next postmaster, who held the office nine years, until Stephens Baker was appointed, in 1833. Mr. Baker held office sixteen years, at first in his store, where the Hinkley Block now stands, and during his last ten years in the building he erected on the corner of Cabot and Milton Streets. Joseph D. Tuck, who succeeded him, kept the office in the same place, until another change of administration gave it in charge of Gilbert T. Hawes, who established it at the corner of Cabot Street and Railroad Avenue. Thomas A. Morgan succeeded him, under whom the office was opened in the Masonic Block, where his successor, Thomas D. Davis, continued it. Mr. Davis was a soldier of the late war, whose health was seriously shattered by barbarous treatment in the prisons of Richmond and Andersonville. His successor was another veteran of the war, Colonel Francis E. Porter. Under him and his predecessor the office had been brought into a high state of efficiency; but the accession to power of a Democratic administration caused the removal of Colonel Porter, and the appoint-

ment of the present incumbent, Jeremiah Murphy. Within the year past the post-office was removed to the Odd-Fellows' Block, at the instance of the inspector from Washington, and fitted with every appointment, so that it is now second to none of its class in the State.

BEVERLY'S REPRESENTATIVES.—Of the early leading settlers of Beverly, Roger Conant was one of the Representatives for Salem to the first General Court in 1634; John Woodbury in 1635, '38 and '39; John Blackleach and Thomas Scruggs in 1636; Captain Thomas Lothrop in 1653, '62 and '64, and from Beverly in 1672, '73, '74 and '75. The other Representatives from Beverly have been Lieutenant John Dodge, son of Richard Dodge, in 1676, '78, '79, '80, '81, '83, '89 and '90; John West, 1677; William Dodge, Sr., 1680; Lieutenant Paul Thorndike, 1681; Exercise Conant, 1682, '83 and '84; Captain William Raymond, 1683, '85 and '86; Thomas West, 1687 (he was also the first Representative from Manchester); Sergeant Peter Woodbury, 1690; Lieutenant Andrew Elliott, 1691, '92, '94, '95 and '97; Captain John Dodge, son of William, Sr., 1693, '96 and 1702; Deacon Samuel Balch, 1698, '99, 1700, '01, '05, '06, '07, '09, '10, '13, '14, '15, '16, '19; Isaac Woodbury, 1703, '04; Robert Hale, Sr., 1708; Lieutenant John Balch, 1711, '12, '27; Captain Joseph Herrick, 1717, '18, '20, '21; Lieutenant Robert Briscoe, 1721, '22; Lieutenant John Thorndike, 1723; Deacon Jonathan Rayment, 1724, '25; Captain Robert Woodbury, 1726, '30; Andrew Dodge, 1728, '29; Lieutenant (afterwards colonel) Robert Hale, 1731, '32, '33, '34, '35, '38, '40, '41, '42, '43, '44, '45, '46, '47, '48, '54, '56, '57; Captain Henry Herrick (of the French and Indian War), 1736, '37, '39, '51, '52, '53; Lieutenant Daniel Conant, 1749, '50; Captain John Leach, 1755 (who had been Representative from Salem in 1750 and '51, before Ryall's Side was annexed to Beverly); Lieutenant (afterwards colonel) Henry Herrick, son of Captain Henry, 1758, '59, '60, '61, '62, '63, '64, '65, '66, '67, '68, '69, '70, '71, '72, '73; Captain Josiah Batchelder, 1774, '75, '76, '77, '78, '79 (and in the Provincial Congress for three of those years); Jonathan Conant, 1779, '81; Colonel Larkin Thorndike, 1780, '82, '86, '87, '90, '91, '92; Nathan Dane, 1782, '83, '84, '85 (also Senator, 1790, '94, '96, '97, '98. Representative to Congress, 1785, '86, '87; Presidential elector, 1812, in Constitutional Convention, 1820); Joseph Wood, 1786, '87, '88, '89, '92, '93, '94, '95, '96, '97, '98, 1802, '03, '04, '05, '06; Captain (afterwards colonel) Israel Thorndike, 1788, 1802, '03, '04, '05, '06, '08 (also Senator, 1807, '08, '10, and in State Convention, 1788, to consider the Federal Constitution); John Cabot, 1792; Captain Moses Brown, 1799, 1800, '01 (and elector of President, 1808); John Stephens, 1800, '01; James Burnham, 1800, '01; Abner Chapman, 1804, '05, '06, '07, '08, '09, '10, '11, '12, '13, '14, '15; Thomas Davis, 1805, '06, '07, '08, '09, '10, '11, '12, '13, '14, '15, '16, '17, '19, '20, '22, '23; Thomas Stephens, 1808, '09, '10 (and Senator, 1811, '12, '13, '14, '15);



Robert Rantoul, 1809, '10, '11, '12, '13, '14, '15, '16, '17, '18, '19, '23, '24, '25, '26, '28, '29, '30, '31, '32, '33 (Senator, 1821, '22, '23, and in Constitutional Conventions of 1820 and 1853); Isaac Rea, 1809, '10, '11, '12, '13; Nathaniel Goodwin, 1811, '12, '13, '14, '15, '16, '17; Nicholas Thorndike, 1814, '15, '16, '17; Josiah Lovett, 1816, '20, '21; Oliver Ohear, 1823, '24, '25, '26; William Thorndike, 1824, '25, '26 (in the Senate, 1828, '29, '30, and its President in 1831); Pyam Lovett, 1823, '37; Henry Larcom, 1827, '28, '29, '30; Thomas Stephens, Jr., 1829, '30; Josiah Lovett 2d, 1829 (Senator 1852); Amos Sheldon, 1829, '30; John Safford, 1833, '34, '35, '36, '38, '39 (and in Senate, 1842, '44); Charles Stephens, 1833, '57; Jesse Sheldon, 1833, '34; Cotton Bennett, 1834, '35, '36; Nehemiah Roundy, 1834, '35, '36; Stephen Nourse, 1835, '36; John Conant, 1835, '36; David Larcom, 1837; Ezra Dodge, 1837; Daniel Cross, 1837; Jonathan Batchelder, 1836, '38; Andrew Ober, 1838; Edwin M. Stone, 1839, '42, '44; Thomas B. Smith, 1839, '40; William Lamson, 1840, '41; Edward Stone, 1841; John Pickett, 1842, '44; Albert Thorndike, 1845, '46, '47 (and Senator, 1850, '51); John I. Baker, 1840, '45, '46, '47, '52, '56, '55, '66, '69, '71, '75, '78, '79, '80, '81, '82, '83, '84 (Councillor, 1860, '61, Senator, 1863, '64); William H. Lovett, 1848, '49, '50; Paul Hildreth, 1848, '49, '50; Levi A. Abbott, 1852, '54; William Endicott and Joseph E. Ober, and the latter in the Constitutional Convention; John B. Hill, 1855, '74, '76; Richard P. Waters, 1856 (and in the Peace Congress of 1861); John Knowlton, 1857; Robert S. Rantoul, 1858; Thomas A. Morgan and James Hill, 1859; Andrew F. Wales, 1860; Augustus N. Clark, 1861 (and Presidential elector, 1889); Elijah E. Lummus, 1861; John Meacom, 1862; Robert R. Endicott and Robert S. Foster, 1863; Benjamin D. Grant, 1864; Charles H. Odell, 1865; John W. Raymond, 1866, '67; Joseph Wilson, 1868; Freeborn W. Cressy, 1869, '72; Henry P. Moulton, 1870; Nathan H. Webb, 1870, '71, '72; Francis E. Porter, 1873, '74; John H. Woodbury, 1875; David A. Preston, 1876; Henry P. Woodbury, 1877; Charles L. Dodge, 1885, '86, '87. Senators who have not been Representatives: Joshua Fisher, 1865; Warren Tilton, 1859, '60; Frederick W. Choate, 1866, '67; Francis Norwood, 1881, '82.

BEVERLY'S INDUSTRIES.—The Fisheries.—The earliest industries of Beverly were farming and fishing. From the sea came the principal subsistence, until the meadows and forests were cleared and planted. The first settlements in Beverly were located with special reference to their contiguity to the fishing-grounds, as the houses erected by William and Humphrey Woodbury and their people. After the fisheries were established nearly every male inhabitant old enough, and not too old, went off for the summer's fishing. Few were left at home, except the old men and young boys, women and girls. Even the boys were taken away at a very early age, some at eleven, and nearly all of them at fourteen or fifteen.

At the outset the voyages were greatly prolonged by the custom, then prevailing, of drying the fish before the return of the vessel to port, on the Magdalen or the coast of Labrador, which they afterwards took, in the same vessels, to the West Indies, etc. Later on, and for the past hundred years or so, the fish were salted in the hold and brought home to be "cured." Then it was possible to make two voyages each season, sailing on the 1st of March or April, and returning about the 4th of July,—this was the "first fare;" the "second fare" would keep them out till cold weather had commenced, into November, and sometimes even December. In all, from six to eight months were taken for the two fares; sometimes three fares were made. Every available headland on the coast, from Tuck's Point to Paine's Head, was covered with fish-flakes, where, in the summer and autumn months, thousands of tons of fish were cured for market.

These fish-drying places have now become too valuable as real estate to be used for this purpose, and but a few fish-flakes can be seen on our shores. Most of the fishermen resided on the coast, between the Old South and the Manchester line. When the cod fishery was at its best, which was probably between the years 1840-50, there were seventy or eighty vessels engaged, and all manned by natives of this town. Each vessel carried from six to nine men, and rarely exceeded eighty or ninety tons burthen. The principal vessel-owners were Thorndike & Endicott, Stephen Nourse, Foster & Lovett, Pickett & Edwards, James Stone, Capt. Bradshaw, Ezra Batchelder, Samuel Ober, John Morgan; and some vessels were owned by the crews.

But the co-operative system did not work very well, as all the "combined powers" wanted to be skippers, and could not agree.

The average cost of a new schooner was about four thousand dollars. A good season's receipts, even for the "skippers," was five hundred dollars, and an average of two hundred quintals of fish was considered a "great catch." The fishermen did remarkably well immediately after the withdrawal of the embargo, in 1815, and during the period of the Civil War, as prices were very high in the first instance, and crews scarce in the second.

The fishermen led a hard life at the best, and in the early times lacked the many conveniences that their successors enjoy, some even being subject to piracy. Until within a comparatively recent period they carried no stoves, but in each vessel was a capacious fire-place, in cabin as well as in fore-castle. In descending into the fore-castle the sailors were obliged to go "down the chimney," as they expressed it, there being no other aperture for the escape of the smoke than that by which their quarters were reached. But they had "lots of comfort" with their great wood-fires, especially in the autumn months, even though the smoke was annoying. At first, every man was



his own cook, and it is likely that the fare was hard.

With the advent of a special cook, or a man drafted from the crew for that purpose, the "grub" was improved a little, the staple articles of diet being beef, salt pork, beans twice a week, potatoes, bacon, fish, "duff," doughnuts and pies. Duff and doughnuts were great luxuries, however, and "duff day" was always looked forward to with pleasurable anticipations. Although the distance traversed by the fishing schooners was not vast, yet the length of the voyage made it wearisome, especially as land was rarely sighted after Cape Ann had been left astern until it hove in sight again four months later; on the return the government gave a bounty of four dollars per ton for each voyage of four months and over, and even if a full fare was secured in half that time, the requisite numbers of days must be passed at sea before port could be entered. The great event of the voyage was "washing out day," when the fish had been landed and the crew were given a royal dinner. As winter came on, the vessels were hauled up at the wharves and the crews dispersed to seek employment at shoe-making, or to spend their hard-earned money in completing their education. Many a boy, taken from home at an early age, returned to the village school on successive winters, to acquire what learning he could in the time at his command. It was a wholesome discipline they got at sea, and a school in which were reared many who afterwards served faithfully their country when volunteers were needed for the navy.

At the present day our fisheries are of little importance. The great fleet of schooners has disappeared, and scarcely half a dozen vessels sail from our port for the Banks each season; and these are manned by strangers. How far the policy of the National Government has contributed to this result is one of the debated questions.

Between the years 1828-40 there were two full-rigged ships, the "Shamrock" and "Malabar," and nine brigs, making a total of eleven "square-riggers," owned in Beverly, besides one hundred and twenty schooners. In 1859 the schooner "Dove" was sold to Eastern parties. This vessel was built in 1817, and was the last of her class, of half-deck vessels, in Beverly.

In 1860, just prior to the Civil War, fifty-four vessels from Beverly were engaged in the fisheries, with 4072 tonnage, a valuation of \$166,800, carrying 457 men, and using 5366 bushels of salt and 1172 bushels of bait. In 1861 the amount of fish bounty paid was \$15,000. In 1863, when the greatest number of our fishermen were away, serving in the navy, but thirty-seven vessels were engaged. The value of fish and oil obtained that year was about \$200,000. The "catch" was large, but fishermen were scarce. In 1875 some twenty-four vessels were fitted out here; in 1877 twenty-two, besides smaller craft, carrying about 300 men.

But even this small number has been reduced in the past ten years, so that the present year finds but four fishing-vessels employed at the Banks, and one of these is supposed to have been lost, with all on board. A hundred years ago, in 1786, Beverly owned sixty vessels, manned by 492 men; nineteen of these were in the West Indian trade. In 1788 thirty-two vessels, with 271 men.

Shoes and Shoemaking.—For nearly two centuries the industries of Beverly were essentially agricultural and maritime; farming, fishing, coastwise and foreign commerce engaged the attention of its inhabitants, with an occasional digression to repel the Indians or beat off foreign invaders. It has been already shown that the town took active part in every affair of national importance from the Pequot War in 1637 to the Rebellion of 1861. The growth of the town was slow, and resulted more from the natural increase of its native population than from alien accessions. The early industries were few in number, and newer forms of occupation were adopted cautiously. Unlike Lynn, which seems to have been predestined to traffic in leather from earliest times, Beverly did not choose deliberately that which has now become its chiefest industry. Resident shoemakers were scarce within its borders before the close of the seventeenth century. One of the first recorded cordwainers is Andrew Elliot, who was also our first town clerk, who lived in that part of the town known as the "Haymarket" or "City," where also resided another shoemaker—John Smith, son of James, born in 1662. He probably worked upon the low bench, having the "kit"—knives, hammer, lapstone, awls, etc.—on one end and the seat at the other, and with the shoe held by a strap over the knee.

Of those who first carried on shoemaking as a business, Joseph Foster, who removed hither from Ipswich just before the Revolution, is most conspicuous. He supplied shoes to the Continental army and to the various grocery-stores of this town and others, and later shipped shoes to the Southern States and the West Indies. Descendants of shoemaker Foster are still engaged in the business here, in which they were prominent for nearly a century. Others who learned their trade of Joseph Foster's son, Daniel, may be remembered by our citizens as Captain Daniel Cross, Olphert Tuttle and Osman Gage.

A leading manufacturer of a later period was Deacon Nehemiah Roundy, whose three sons assisted him, and who supplied shoes to the trade in Boston and shipped to Africa and other countries. Captain Thomas B. Smith in 1829 built a factory in which he manufactured large numbers of heavy boots and shoes. In 1830 Daniel Lefavour began the manufacture of women's shoes at the Cove, in which also his brother John engaged some fifteen years later. The business established by them has since been continued respectively by their sons. Another manufac-



turer of that period was Ebenezer Moses, who, it is said, first introduced the system of division of labor, and first used tin patterns for the shaping of the soles of shoes. The Herricks and Trasks, fathers and sons, Wm. D. Crossfield, Wm. Larrabee, the Wallises (descended from the first deacon) and the Norwoods, are names prominent in the history of shoe manufacture here. One of the last century Wallises was the aged shoemaker Henry Wallis, well remembered by the middle-aged of our community, who worked at his trade for nearly seventy years in the same shop, which was over two hundred years old when it was removed from its location at the corner of Cabot and Bow Streets.

Real Estate and Improvements.—The era of progress may be said to date from the advent of the railroad, and the largest and most important transaction in real estate took place at the time the railroad station was removed from its original site to its present location on Park Street, about 1852. Nearly all the large section between Cabot Street and Bass River, and extending from the Gloucester crossing to the southerly junction of Cabot and Rantoul Streets, was open field, without house or factory. To-day hundreds of dwellings are seen here, and the numerous shoe factories, in which are conducted the leading industry of the town. An impulse was given to business that has been continued to the present day.

Twenty years ago, or in 1868, a section of territory lying between Lovett, Lothrop and Washington Streets which had, for more than a hundred years, lain undeveloped, and used as fish-yards, was purchased by Israel Lefavour, and thrown open for building purposes. Mr. Lefavour, then quite a young man, divided the property into lots, some of which he sold, and upon others erected houses, and to-day it is covered with some of the most attractive residences in town. He also purchased and improved, more recently, the Wilson land and Pickett fish-yards, on Lothrop Street, and has built thereon houses commanding beautiful outlooks over the sea.

In the past twenty years Cabot Street, which was formerly lined mainly with dwellings, has undergone most radical changes, nearly forty stores and places of business having been erected there.

In 1867 the Masonic Association erected the fine three-story brick block at the corner of Washington and Cabot Streets; in 1875 the Odd Fellows built, at the corner of Cabot and Broadway, the finest block in town; in 1877 Israel Lefavour purchased the Little estate, corner of Cabot and Vestry Streets, and enlarged and altered the house there into a three-story block, with a commodious Opera House more lately added; in 1883 Rich and Newcomb built a very large and convenient wooden block on the property adjoining and extending to Railroad Avenue, and in 1885 Webber Brothers erected a fine brick building of three stories adjacent to the Masonic structure.

In 1881 Augustus N. Clark altered the store and

house of the Smith estate, owned by him, on the corner of Cabot and Broadway, into a large block for stores and dwellings, and added much to the beauty of Broadway.

In 1885 the Savings Bank built its beautiful structure at the corner of Cabot and Thorndike; in 1886 Robert R. Endicott reconstructed and enlarged the buildings corner of Cabot and Washington Streets.

George Butman erected a large building of three stories on Cabot, near Essex Street. A dozen years before, Messrs. Lee and Cressy, George H. Southwick and William W. Hinkley had put up fine business blocks. These facts but indicate a steady and rapid growth in the business of Beverly.

Beyond the more densely populated portion also important improvements have been wrought within twenty years and less.

The extension of Central and Abbot Streets, and others, was followed by active building of houses, until nearly all were lined with comfortable and elegant dwellings. The extension of Lothrop Street to Cross Lane, the extension of Ober and Corning Streets, the improving of Common Lane, etc., gave an impetus to building, even in remote places.

In 1874 Andrew K. Ober purchased a portion of the woodland known as Snake Hill, laying out drives and walks, and building there a stone mansion, which improvements were followed by the construction of Lake-shore Avenue, and the elegant station-building at Montserrat. Within ten years past radical changes have been made at Hospital Point, so that this bleak and once desolate promontory is now the abode of some of our wealthiest citizens.

One of the largest land-owners, whose purchases have been made mainly within a few years past, is Henry W. Peabody, who owns about one hundred and fifty acres, principally near the Montserrat Station, and including such fine property as Hibbert and Laurel Pastures, Turtle and Prospect Hills. At the Farms, after the shore margin had been absorbed, summer residents purchased much of the hill property in the interior, especially wherever commanding views were afforded of the sea. Hence it is that, with Beverly's unrivaled possession of hillside and seaside, it is not necessary that land should be of great fertility to command high prices. In truth, the poorest land as to production is often that which is held the dearest.

What is known as the "shore movement," when the manifold attractions of the Beverly coast drew hither an appreciative population, began nearly fifty years ago.

About this time Beverly began to receive accessions in people who came, at first, merely for a summer's stay, but who eventually purchased property here and obtained a foothold as owners of real estate. Attracted by the beauties of the shore, several residents of Salem and Boston sought and obtained board with the farmers of the eastern part of the town, in



the section known as Beverly Farms. This region was always a rural one, and thinly populated, though early settled: the Wests, Woodburys, Haskells, Thisells, Obers and Larcoms being among the first; the Woodburys especially numerous, descendants of the original William and Humphrey, who located at Woodburys' Points about 1630. By direct inheritance, by grants and by intermarriage, they had acquired a great deal of the coast property.

Throughout several generations these farmers and fishermen of Beverly had contentedly tilled the soil and ploughed the sea, leaving their ancestral homes only to participate in the business affairs of the town, or when summoned by the imperative calls of war. By intermarriage, by the ties of constant association, and by family tradition, they were one with the people at the Centre. During the first century of its corporate existence the town relied upon them as upon those who lived in the shadow of the First Parish meeting-house, and they were prominent members of the church itself. The short distance that separated them from the business centre of the town did not prevent a frequent interchange of visits on Sundays, when all gathered at the Old South, and on training days and town-meetings.

"A town becomes a true home for men through its history, not less than by reason of its physical and social features." Every family native to the Farms had historical traditions in common with every other at the Centre, and thus, though in a measure territorially distinct, the people resident here were individually members of one and the same great family; their interests and their traditions were identical. But the time had come when a new element was to be introduced, and this was when the first "summer-boarder" appeared, about the year 1840. It does not appear that our ancestors were heedless of the attractions nature had so lavishly spread around them; but, in the stress of their life of toil, these may have seemed of secondary importance. At all events, though the superlative beauty of their environment may have asserted itself, and they may have unconsciously imbibed that love for nature now inherent in their descendants, yet they did not, perhaps, attach the importance to it that should have prevented them from parting with their priceless heritage. The consequent hardships of successive wars, and the perpetual struggle for existence, inevitably the lot of the pioneer, had impressed upon them rather the value of substantial gain, than that of a beautiful landscape. In a word, this "fatal gift of beauty," which was to them a thing imponderable, attracted strangers to their birthright, and it passed from their possession.

The first, or one of the first, who took up residence at the Farms for the summer season was John G. King, as early as 1840, who bought, in 1844, the John M. Thissell place at Mingo's Cove. He boarded with Isaac Prince, then occupying the farm now

known as the "Paine Place." Early in the eighteenth century, this one hundred-acre farm was inherited by Anna Woodbury, daughter of Benjamin Woodbury, who married Rev. John Barnard, of Marblehead. She willed it to the children of her kinswoman, Anna Woodbury, wife of Samuel Swett, who sold it to Josiah Ober, whose heirs sold it to Isaac Prince, and he to Chas. C. Paine, whose wife was one of the Swett family above mentioned. Mr. Paine subsequently bought the entire property, paying six thousand dollars for it. From this farm, it is said, have been sold estates to the amount of two hundred thousand dollars, and with a portion of perhaps equal value still remaining.

Nearly cotemporary with Mr. Paine was Charles G. Loring, who bought the farm of Benjamin Smith, and built the first house thereon for summer residence.

Patrick T. Jackson and Franklin Dexter were other early visitors who purchased shore estates about this time, and in 1846 Messrs. Haven, Neal, Cabot and Lee. A little later the Sohiers, Lowells, Pickmans, Lawrences and Burgesses became dwellers here.

Thus the Beverly shore, says a recent writer, "was probably the first in New England to be sought for summer homes. Its southerly exposure, the coast line trending nearly east and west, gives it a matchless summer climate. The prevailing winds of the warm months—those from the southwest—elsewhere bearing a parching heat, are here wafted across the salt floods of Salem Bay, filled with a delicious and invigorating freshness.

The hills and woods, rising directly from the shore, also break the force of the harsh winds from the northerly quarters. In consequence, many of the summer residents come as early as possible in the season and often linger late in the fall, enjoying the quiet drives amidst the autumnal glories of the Essex woods, until even the rich hues of the oaks have changed to a uniform dry brown, under the blighting touch of the frost.

Sailing along the coast on a pleasant summer day, one sees a moderately high reach of hills sloping gracefully back from the sea. The deep water permits a near approach to the land, so that in the dense foliage masses which often come close down to the water's edge and give to this shore a luxuriant aspect quite exceptional in New England coast scenery south of the spruce-clad capes of Maine, may be distinguished the intermingling hues of pines and oaks and the other deciduous trees, whose light leafage relieves the sombreness of the evergreen masses. Bold promontories jut out into the water, the waves ceaselessly tossing up white greetings at their feet, and between the cliffs stretch intervals of glittering beach, with smooth, green lawns reaching far back into the shadowy recesses of forest glades. All along this shore stand the beautiful villas; not huddled in vulgar promiscuousness, as at popular shore resorts, nor



drawn up in showy dress parade, as at Newport; but disposed in the easy attitudes of a high-bred company, thoroughly assured of its place in the world, and neither eager for prominence nor solicitous about privacy. Embowered in the woodlands, occupying castle-like heights, or standing out amid sunny lawns with the dignified repose surrounding them of broad verandas, there are few of these houses that are not in admirable keeping with their surroundings.

A drive over the beautiful roads that meander in easy grades over the diversified region has a charm equally great with sailing the shore. Not so much is seen of the villas themselves as from the water, for they mostly stand retired from the highways, and only approached by pleasant avenues.

Few places could be found affording such a multiplicity of romantic sites; there might be almost a surfeit of picturesqueness, were not the variety so great that every turn, every new view, reveals a fresh charm. In short, the lavish disposition of nature and the costly efforts of art have together made of the Beverly shore a region that approaches the ideal of an earthly paradise as nearly as is possible in this part of the world.

One rolls over the smooth roads among blooming gardens and wide lawns, with broad reaches of the bay visible between splendid houses. A turn of the way, and the natural forest incloses the scene, and the air, just redolent with the fragrance of blossoming shrubs, is now filled with the tonic breath of the pines. Again, reaching a slight elevation, the sea comes into sight, framed by a wild margin of rocks and trees.

And so the enchanting picture continues in scores of lovely glimpses, until it seems as if nature's portfolio would be exhausted of its novelties. Life on the Beverly shore during the season has a character quite distinctive, and very different from that of the usual summer resort, as may be inferred from the character of its population. This is composed chiefly of leading Boston families, with a few from neighboring Salem, and some permanent residents of Beverly—whose ancestry, like that of the Endicotts, is identified with the founding of the town—nearly all more eminent for social position and culture than for wealth; which, however, needs be considerable to enable residence in such a place.¹

CENSUS OF TOWN OF BEVERLY FOR 1885.¹

(Courteously furnished in advance of publication by the Chief of the Bureau of Statistics.)

OCCUPATIONS.	NUMBER.
<i>Males.</i>	
Government.....	32
Professional.....	53
Clergymen.....	14
Other "professional".....	39

¹ The table shows the arrangement by "Classified Occupations" (in *italics*), with detail for certain classes by principal lines of occupation. Also, the "Explanatory Note," defining the distribution of the people into classes of occupations, that is, those having related occupations, and, for Census purposes, all persons are supposed to be "occupied."

OCCUPATIONS.	NUMBER.
Domestic Service.....	64
Coachmen and servants (in families).....	53
Other "domestic service".....	11
Personal Service.....	44
Trade.....	356
Merchants and dealers.....	141
Salesmen.....	43
Book-keepers and clerks.....	114
Other "trade".....	58
Transportation.....	208
Drivers of delivery wagons.....	25
Livery stable keepers and employes.....	29
Officials and employes of express companies.....	26
Teamsters.....	32
Steam railroad employes.....	61
Mariners (sailing).....	23
Other "transportation".....	12
Agriculture.....	355
Farmers.....	122
Farm laborers.....	174
Florists.....	10
Gardeners and garden laborers.....	47
Other "agriculture".....	2
Fisheries.....	57
Fishermen.....	55
Other "fisheries".....	2
Manufactures.....	1,569
Shoe-factory operatives.....	1,401
Carpenters.....	161
Masons.....	62
Masons and plasterers.....	13
Painters.....	49
Bakers.....	22
Morocco Workers.....	30
Blacksmiths.....	24
Other "manufactures".....	207
Mining.....	2
Laborers.....	153
Apprentices.....	7
Children at Work.....	4
Scholars and Students.....	798
Retired.....	136
Afflicted, etc.....	29
Unemployed (12 months).....	19
Dependents.....	32
At Home.....	420
Not Given.....	20
Total males.....	4,349

<i>Females.</i>	
Government.....	1
Professional.....	61
Teachers.....	55
Other "professional".....	9
Domestic Service.....	2,751
Housekeepers.....	39
Housewives.....	2,009
Housework.....	475
Servants (in families).....	214
Other "domestic service".....	14
Personal Service.....	37
Trade.....	32
Book-keepers and clerks.....	25
Other "trade".....	7
Transportation.....	1
Manufactures.....	514
Shoe-factory operatives.....	401
Dressmakers.....	47
Milliners.....	9
Oil-clothing makers.....	20
Seamstresses.....	12
Tailoresses.....	9
Other "manufactures".....	16
Children at Work.....	1
Scholars and Students.....	797



OCCUPATIONS.	NUMBER.
Retired.....	24
Afflicted, etc.....	29
Dependent.....	38
At Home.....	436
Not Given.....	112
Total females.....	4,837

EXPLANATORY NOTE.

Government.—Persons engaged in the service of the national, state and city governments, or in the U. S. army and navy.

Professional.—Persons connected with religion, law, medicine, literature, art, music, amusements, education and science.

Domestic Service.—Persons concerned or employed in the hotel, boarding and lodging service, housewives, persons engaged in house work (without remuneration, generally in own family), housekeepers and domestic servants.

Personal Service.—Persons who render personal service, as barbers, boot-blacks, carpet-cleaners, companions, janitors, matrons, nurses, stewards, ushers, valets, washer-women, waiters, wait-linen, etc.

Trade.—Merchants and dealers, salesmen, book-keepers, clerks, agents, bankers, brokers, messengers, porters, etc.

Transportation.—Carriers on roads, steam railroads, seas and rivers.

Agriculture.—Farmers, farm laborers, gardeners, persons engaged in the care of animals, etc.

Fisheries.—Persons engaged in the fisheries.

Manufactures.—As specified.

Mining.—Persons employed in mines, quarries, pits, etc.

Laborers.—General day laborers.

Apprentices.—Learning trades.

Children at Work.—Children of legal school age (ten to thirteen) who both work and go to school or work only.

Scholarship Students.—Public and private school scholars, persons at college, or studying special branches, as law, dentistry, medicine, etc.

Retired.—Persons retired from active business.

Afflicted, etc.—Persons suffering with acute or chronic diseases, blind, deaf, dumb, maimed, lame, insane, idiotic, and other afflicted persons and paupers and homeless children.

Unemployed 12 months.—Persons not employed at their accustomed occupation at all during the census year.

Dependents in Private Families.—Relatives or other persons more or less dependent for support.

At Home.—Children too young to go to school.

Not Given.—Young persons of adults, of working age, who, for some reason, have no occupation.

MANUFACTURES OF BEVERLY, FROM CENSUS OF 1885.

Capital invested (value).....	\$1,327,218
Stock or material used (value).....	2,461,867
Goods made and work done (value).....	4,412,617
Males employed (number).....	1,727
Females employed (number).....	987
Total.....	2,714
Average hours, day's work, a full male.....	40.1
Average yearly working time (days).....	263½
Day hands (number).....	812
Piece hands (number).....	1,779
Salaries paid (amount).....	\$34,751
Wages paid (amount).....	\$1,174,539
Machinery (value).....	122,540

LIBRARIES.

Number and value of books and circulation.

KIND OF LIBRARIES.	Number of Libraries.	NUMBER OF BOOKS.			Value of Books.	Circulation.
		Manuscripts.	Pamphlets.	Bound Books.			Total.
Beverly.....	12	27	16,619	16,676	16,354	54,229
<i>Secular</i>	2	1	11,017	11,017	12,499	25,000
Town public.....	1	1	10,017	10,017	12,000	22,000
Private circulating.....	1	1	1,000	1,000	100	3,000
<i>Religious</i>	19	27	5,632	5,659	3,954	29,220
Sunday-school.....	19	27	5,632	5,659	3,954	29,220

PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

SCHOOL BUILDINGS.	Number of Buildings.	VALUE.	
		Buildings.	Property.
Beverly.....	9	\$100,000	\$1,000

PRIVATE SCHOOLS.

KIND OF SCHOOL.	NUMBER OF SCHOOL BUILDINGS.			VALUE.	
	Total.	Own'd.	Hired.	Build'gs Own'd.	School property.
Beverly.....	1	1	...	5,100	110
Incorporated.....	1	1	...	5,100	10
Unincorporated.....	1...	...	...	...	100

1 One school kept in a hired room.

PRIVATE SCHOOLS.

By name and dates of establishment and incorporation.

NAME OF SCHOOL.	Date of Establishment.	Date of Incorporation.
Kindergarten (Fannie R. Kilham)...	1881	.....
New England Industrial School for Deaf Mutes.....	1879	1879

MARRIED WOMEN AND MOTHERS: CHILDREN, ETC.

NATIVE AND FOREIGN BORN.	MARRIED WOMEN HAVING CHILDREN.							
	Total married women.	Married women without children.	Number of women.	Total Number of—			Average No. of	
				Children.	Children living.	Children not living.	Children.	Children living, not living.
Beverly.....	2,319	398	1,921	7,211	5,013	2,198	3.75	2.61 1.14
Native born.....	1,815	306	1,509	5,553	3,837	1,716	3.61	2.49 1.12
Foreign born.....	474	92	382	1,658	1,176	482	4.34	3.08 1.26

TOTAL ILLITERACY.

SEX.	POPULATION: Ten years of age and over.			ILLITERATES.	
	Native.	Foreign.	Total.	Number	Per cent
Beverly.....	6,401	1,302	7,703	211	2.74
Males.....	3,082	527	3,609	73	2.02
Females.....	3,319	775	4,094	138	3.37

DEGREE OF ILLITERACY, ETC.

AGE PERIODS.	Born in Massachusetts.			Other Native Born.			Foreign Born.			Aggregates		
	M	F	T	M	F	T	M	F	T	M	F	T
Beverly.....	14	21	35	4	5	9	55	112	167	73	138	211
Cannot write.....	3	3	6	1	1	2	8	27	35	12	31	43
20 to 29 years.....	2	...	2	1	...	1	...	3	3	3	3	6
30 to 49 years.....	...	1	1	...	1	1	6	14	20	6	16	22
50 years and over.....	1	2	3	...	...	...	2	16	12	3	12	15
Neither read nor write.....	11	18	29	3	4	7	47	85	132	61	107	168
10 to 19 years.....	1	2	3	...	...	...	1	...	1	2	2	4
14 to 19 years.....	2	3	6	...	...	...	1	2	3	4	5	9
20 to 29 years.....	1	2	3	...	...	...	9	8	17	10	10	20
30 to 49 years.....	1	1	2	2	1	3	16	37	53	19	39	58
50 years and over.....	5	10	15	1	3	4	20	38	58	26	51	77



AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS AND PROPERTY.

PRODUCTS.			Fruits, Berries and Nuts.		\$6,164
Animal Products.					
	Quantity.	Value.			
Beeswax (use).....pounds,	5	1	Apples.....bushels,	7,401	2,314
Calfskins.....	10	8	Barberries.....bushels,	1½	3
Hides.....	9	14	Blackberries.....quarts,	1,139	174
Honey.....pounds,	371	94	Blueberries.....quarts,	3,300	295
Measure.....cords,	1,671½	12,955	Cherries.....bushels,	12½	23
Pelts.....	5	4	Citron.....pounds,	150	15
Clothing, Needle-work, etc.			Crab-apples.....bushels,	7	11
Boots, including "work on".....pairs,	9,070	3,612	Cranberries.....barrels,	52½	225
Crocheted goods (sale).....	...	5	Currants.....quarts,	916	87
Mats (sale).....	2	1	Grapes.....bushels,	48½	54
Mittens (sale).....pairs,	15	8	Grapes.....pounds,	2,025	487
Shoes (including "work on").....pairs,	9,950	3,887	Huckleberries.....quarts,	671	63
Dairy Products.			Melons.....bushels,	5,312	601
Butter (sale).....pounds,	2,665	999	Peaches.....bushels,	5	7
Butter, use.....pounds,	2,476	910	Pears.....bushels,	772½	658
Cheese.....pounds,	40	4	Plums.....bushels,	3	5
Cream.....gallons,	332	934	Quinces.....bushels,	15½	35
Milk.....gallons,	303,719	54,882	Raspberries.....quarts,	40	81
Food Products.			Shellbarks.....bushels,	2	4
Canned fruit (sale).....pounds,	50	8	Strawberries.....quarts,	8,276	1,012
Canned fruit, use.....pounds,	49	8	Hay, Straw and Fodder.		
Ice.....tons,	500	2,500	Hay, clover.....tons,	24	419
Pickles, use.....barrels,	1½	5	Hay, English.....tons,	1,308	24,856
Vinegar (sales).....gallons,	1,530	330	Hay, meadow.....tons,	139½	1,690
Vinegar (use).....gallons,	175	37	Hay, millet.....tons,	64	569
Greenhouse Products.			Hay, salt.....tons,	45½	401
Flowers, leaves, and vines, cut.....	...	700	Hay, not classified.....tons,	4	75
Plants, flowering and other.....	...	3,200	Straw.....tons,	4	82
Hedgerow and Hedged Products.			Fodder, barley.....tons,	34	303
Cabbage plants.....	31,400	191	Fodder, corn.....tons,	674	2,871
Tomato plants.....	753	244	Fodder, dry.....tons,	25	274
Liquors and Beverages.			Fodder, oat.....tons,	122½	1,115
Cider (sale).....gallons,	3,818	406	Fodder, rye.....tons,	13½	172
Cider, use.....gallons,	4,017	418	Beets (for stock).....bushels,	2,052	481
Necroty Products.			Turnips (for stock).....bushels,	1,603	443
Trees, fruit.....	2	2	Meats and Game.		
Trees, ornamental.....	100	25	Beef.....pounds,	8,395	647
Poultry Products.			Pork.....pounds,	29,055	2,895
Eggs.....dozen,	37,299	9,115	Veal.....pounds,	785	51
Eggs, fancy.....dozen,	400	400	Game, wild.....pounds,	25	10
Poultry.....pounds,	14	4	Vegetables.		
Manure, hen and bird.....bushels,	1,607	607	Asparagus.....bunches,	4,130	471
Poultry, dressed: chickens.....pounds,	8,841	2,143	Beans.....bushels,	166	406
Poultry, dressed: other than chickens, geese, and turkeys.....pounds,	95	22	Beans, string and shell.....bushels,	566	536
Wood Products.			Beet greens.....bushels,	25	60
Ashes (sale).....bushels,	20	5	Beets.....bushels,	1,530	786
Ashes, use.....bushels,	431	209	Cabbage greens.....bushels,	20	10
Firewood (sale).....cords,	214	1,166	Cabbage.....heads,	279,680	25,061
Firewood, use.....cords,	325	1,559	Carrots.....bushels,	3,672	1,122
Hoop poles, use.....	200	2	Cauliflower.....heads,	560	116
Lumber (use).....thousand feet	2	30	Celery.....bunches,	8,710	714
Posts, fence (sale).....	25	15	Corn, green.....bushels,	4,382	2,382
Posts, fence (use).....	40	4	Cucumbers.....bushels,	86	84
Wooden Goods.			Dandelions.....bushels,	518	418
Axe handles (use).....	14	4	Lettuce.....heads,	1,904	137
Ox-yokes (use).....	1	2	Onions.....bushels,	3,689	3,638
Other Products.			Parsley.....bushels,	37	37
Hops.....pounds,	5	1	Parsnips.....bushels,	293	207
Hotbed mats (sale).....	6	6	Pease.....bushels,	66	72
Hotbed mats (use).....	90	95	Pease, green.....bushels,	726	684
Manure, sea.....cords,	370½	790	Peppers.....bushels,	30	14
Seeds, garden, field, and flower.....pounds,	62	59	Potatoes.....bushels,	21,351	11,364
Cereals.			Pumpkins.....pounds,	5,400	29
Barley.....bushels,	87	72	Radishes.....bunches,	100	4
Corn, Indian.....bushels,	2,502	1,510	Rhubarb.....pounds,	590	40
Corn, pop.....bushels,	229½	305	Spinach.....bushels,	236	83
Oats.....bushels,	127	83	Squashes.....pounds,	437,920	4,681
Rye.....bushels,	96	76	Tomatoes.....bushels,	1,109	574
			Turnips, table.....bushels,	964	445
			Not classified.....	.....	3,384



PROPERTY.			
Cultivated:	Land, acres,	5,512½	\$585,991
Hay (used for).....	acres,	1,105½	199,635
Principal crops (used for).....	acres,	415½	57,189
Market gardens.....	acres,	2267	32,365
Nurseries.....	acres,	1	150
Orchards.....	acres,	99	15,950
Other cultivated land.....	acres,	96½	17,185
Uncultivated:			
Permanent pasture.....	acres,	1,581	107,093
Other unimproved.....	acres,	401½	57,144
Unimprovable.....	acres,	531	2,700
Mines, quarries, pits, etc.....	acres,	1	25
Woodland:			
Over thirty years' growth.....	acres,	308	32,300
Of thirty years or less.....	acres,	927	83,655
<i>Buildings.</i>			\$563,866
Dwelling-houses.....		184	395,850
Barns.....		174	124,937
Carriage-houses.....		34	9,085
Granaries.....		15	720
Greenhouses.....		9	7,550
Houses.....		126	4,011
Out-buildings.....		113	3,165
Sheds.....		65	6,765
Shops.....		42	4,135
Stables.....		15	5,535
Stores.....		12	1,885
Other buildings.....		...	288
<i>Machinery, Implements, &c.</i>			\$35,479
Carts, wagons, harnesses, &c.....		...	29,120
Cultivators.....		101	545
Feed cutters.....		23	179
Harrows.....		115	1,126
Hay-cutters.....		54	267
Hay rakes.....		12	361
Rice cutters.....		20	207
Horse-pumps.....		4	220
Hoes.....		62	868
Impellers.....		...	1,699
Mowers.....		4	225
Mowing machines.....		57	1,720
Presses.....		208	1,298
Saw-mills.....		23	164
Other machines.....		...	357
<i>Domestic Animals, &c.</i>			\$65,516
Boys (servants of).....		39	208
Cows.....		11	505
Calves.....		54	445
Deer.....		61	498
Pigs.....		111	73
Goats.....		16	8
Hens.....		98	1,956
Horses.....		9,174	7,014
Hogs.....		131	1,858
Horses.....		250	25,595
Milk cows.....		580	26,230
Oxen.....		9	760
Pigeons.....		250	48
Pigs.....		168	567
Turkeys.....		12	25
Other animals.....		...	806
<i>Food Trees and Vines.</i>			\$26,298
Apples.....		4,865	16,092
Apricots.....		1	5
Butternut.....		6	47
Cherry.....		136	639
Chickpeas.....		2	6
Cucumbers.....		54	116
Figs.....		14	140
Hickory.....		159	161
Mulberry.....		4	4
Peaches.....		459	496
Pears.....		2,940	6,954

Plum.....	102	282
Quince.....	169	339
Shellbark.....	2	5
Walnut.....	10	23
Grape vines.....	672	938

AGGREGATES.

<i>Products.</i>		\$296,111
Animal products.....		13,076
Clothing, needle-work, &c.....		7,513
Dairy products.....		57,729
Food products.....		2,888
Greenhouse products.....		3,900
Hothouse and hotbed products.....		435
Liquors and beverages.....		854
Nursery products.....		27
Poultry products.....		12,291
Wood products.....		2,930
Wooden goods.....		6
Other products.....		951
Cereals.....		2,046
Fruits, berries and nuts.....		6,164
Hay, straw and fodder.....		34,751
Meats and game.....		3,693
Vegetables.....		57,947

Property.

	\$1,278,060
Land.....	585,991
Buildings.....	563,886
Machines, implements, &c.....	35,479
Domestic animals, &c.....	66,516
Fruit trees and vines.....	26,298

POPULATION—VALUATION.—A resume of population gives,—

In 1776, 2754; 1790, 3290; 1800, 3881; 1810, 4608; 1820, 4285; 1830, 4033; 1840, 4689; 1850, 5376; 1860, 6154; 1865, 5942; 1870, 6507; 1875, 7271; 1880, 8450; 1885, 9186.

The assessors' valuation of the public property of the town in May, 1887, was as follows:

School-houses.....	\$145,090
Public library.....	10,000
Other public buildings.....	115,000
Public grounds.....	25,000
Cemeteries.....	20,000
Other real estate.....	4,900
Water-works.....	565,451.85
Fire apparatus.....	25,000
Trust funds.....	4,300
Sinking fund.....	215,947.16
Other assets.....	25,000

Total.....\$1,115,599.01

Aggregates for 1887,—

Number of persons assessed.....	3195
Number paying poll-tax only.....	1662
Paying property tax.....	1833
Polls assessed.....	2725
Total value of personal estate.....	\$5,269,325
Total value of bank stock.....	141,375
Total value of buildings, excluding land.....	3,856,645
Total value of land, excluding buildings.....	5,016,775

Total valuation.....\$14,287,100

The tax on personal estate.....	\$69,295.36
The tax on real estate.....	113,579.52
The tax on polls.....	5,450.00

Total tax.....\$188,324.88

Rate of taxation.....\$12.80



BIOGRAPHICAL.

ISRAEL THORNDIKE.

Israel Thorndike was born in Beverly, Mass., in 1755. He was fifth in descent from John Thorndike, who came to this country in 1633, and returned in 1668 on a visit to his brother, Herbert Thorndike, in England, where he soon after died, and was buried on November 3d of that year in the Cloisters of Westminster Abbey. The Rev. Herbert Thorndike, above referred to, was prebendary of Westminster and a profound scholar and theologian. He wrote many ecclesiastical works in English and Latin, some of which are still of so much interest that they have been recently republished. He died in 1672 and was buried in Westminster Abbey. In his will he left property to his nieces, Martha and Alice, daughters of John, who had accompanied their father on his visit to England, on condition, however, "that they should neither return to New England, their birth-place, nor yet, remaining in England, marry with any who went to mass or to the new Licensed Conventicles."

These brothers, John and Herbert, were sons of Francis Thorndike, who in 1634 signed the pedigree for the first visitation of Heralds recorded in the family, and were fifth in descent from William Thorndike, who lived at Little Carlton, County of Lincoln, in the reign of Henry VII., and died in 1539. The arms borne by the family were "Argent, six guttees, three, two and one, gules, on a chief of the last three leopards' faces, gold."

President Quincy, in his "History of Harvard University," speaks of Israel Thorndike as follows: "He had in youth no advantages of education, except those which the public schools of his native town afforded, but he possessed, in the vigor of his own mind, a never-failing spring of self-advancement. The war of the American Revolution was an event adapted to call into activity his powers and spirit of enterprise. Embracing with zeal the cause of his country, he became part-owner and captain of an armed ship, and the judgment with which he planned his cruises, and the intrepidity and diligence with which he conducted them, were rewarded with distinguished success. Having entered into partnership with his brother-in-law, the late Moses Brown, he engaged, after the peace of 1783, in an extensive and most profitable commerce with the East Indies and China.¹ Sagacity, judgment, industry, strict attention to business, and thorough acquaintance with the details of every commercial enterprise in which he engaged, were the chief causes of his success. He was also an early patron of manufactures, and in-

vested, it was said, a greater amount of capital in them than any other individual in New England.

"Mr. Thorndike was at different periods of his life a member of the convention called for the adoption of the Constitution of the United States, and a Representative and Senator in the Legislature of his native State. He was a generous contributor to all patriotic and charitable objects, and often gave an active agency in their support. In 1806 he subscribed five hundred dollars for the foundation of the Natural History Professorship in the University, and also the same amount in 1818 for the library of the theological school. In the same year, being informed that the library of Professor Ebeling, of Hamburg, was for sale, and that an agent of the King of Prussia was negotiating for it, Mr. Thorndike ordered it to be purchased at the cost of six thousand five hundred dollars, and presented it to Harvard University, thereby securing to his country one of the most complete and valuable collections of works extant on American history."

In 1810 Mr. Thorndike removed to Boston for the greater convenience of carrying on his now immense business in all parts of the world, and until his death resided in Summer Street, in that city. "He was eminently social in his feelings, and none more than he delighted in dispensing a princely hospitality." But he still retained his mansion in Beverly, afterwards the Town Hall, passing a considerable portion of his time there, ever manifesting a warm interest in the welfare of his native town, and the first parish of Beverly received from his estate an addition to its funds of about twenty-six hundred dollars.

Mr. Thorndike died in May, 1832. He retained to the last his great energy and activity, and left a large fortune. Mr. Quincy, in allusion to an obituary notice of Mr. Thorndike in the *Boston Daily Advertiser* in May, 1832, after referring to his remarkable mental powers, says that "when their influence is united, as was his, with high moral powers, and exerted during a long life on the side of virtue, and in promoting the best interests of society, it is enduring, and serves to give a character to the age in which they live."

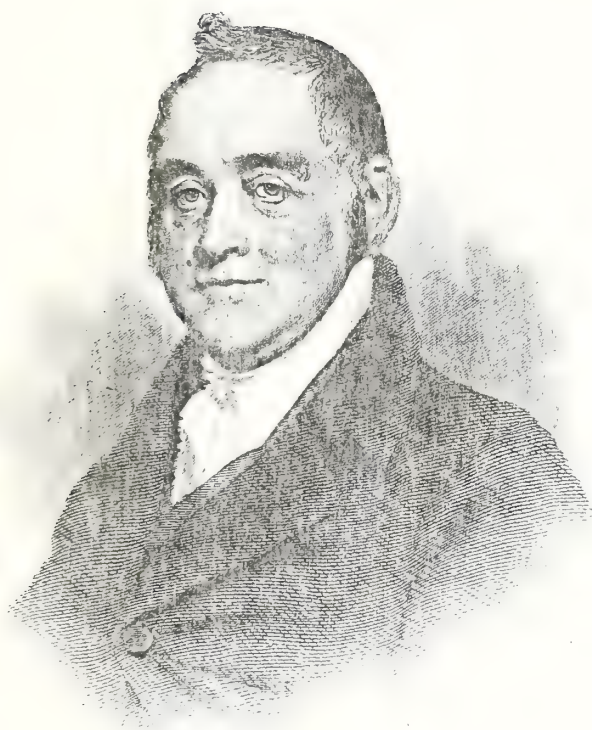
Mr. Thorndike was married three times. His first wife was Mercy, daughter of Osmyn Trask, of Beverly. By her he had one son, who died in infancy, and a daughter, wife of Ebenezer Francis, an eminent merchant in Boston. Mr. Thorndike's second wife, the mother of his twelve other children, was Anna, daughter of George Dodge, of Salem. He married thirdly, in 1818, Sarah, daughter of the Rev. Joseph Dana, of Newburyport. She survived him, and died in 1845.

The accompanying engraving of the portrait of Mr. Thorndike was made from the oil painting by Gilbert Stuart, taken towards the end of his life.²

¹ This partnership began during the War of the Revolution, and apparently continued till the close of the century. See also the biography of Moses Brown in this work.

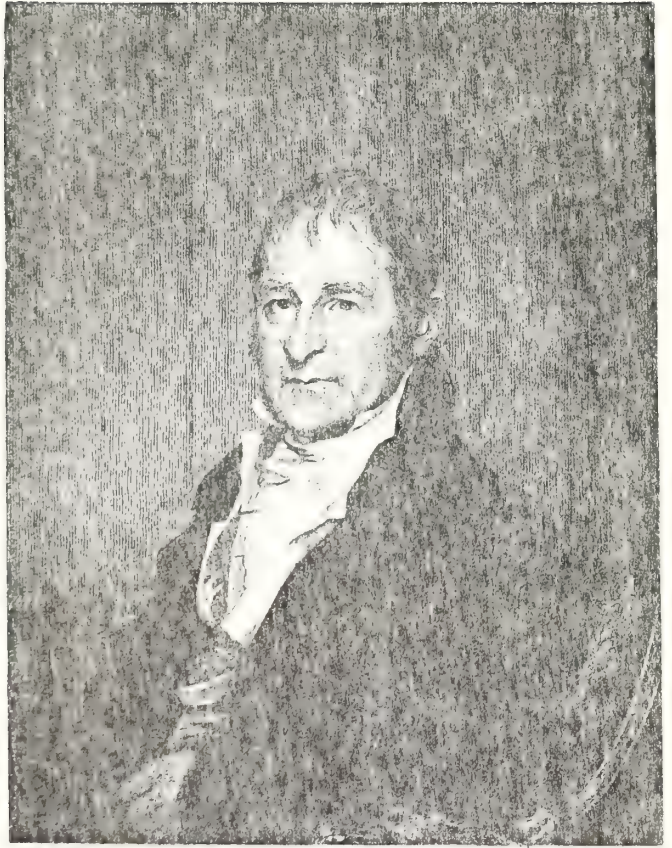
² For most of the above see "Quincy's History of Harvard University," and "Stone's History of Beverly."





Grace Thorndike

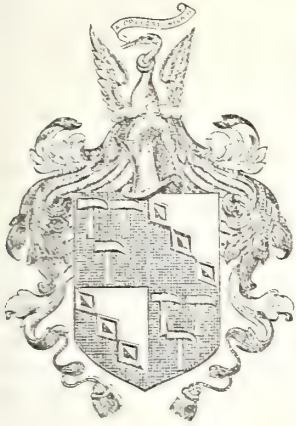




Moses Brown



MOSES BROWN.



"I hereby certify that the above Arms and Crest are those of Christopher Browne, of Stamford, Co. Lincoln, and of Tolethorpe, Co. Rutland, and of his descendants." (Vide c. 23, folio 77, and Grants II., 627.)"

Archd Scott Gatty
Rugges Sawyer

Heralds College London.
30 July 1836.

Moses Brown, of Beverly, was born in Waltham, formerly a part of Watertown, Massachusetts, April 4, 1748. He was the eldest surviving son of Isaac Brown, a very active business man, who resided on Waltham Plain, and who descended in the fifth generation from Abraham Browne, one of the original settlers of Watertown. Abraham was admitted freeman of Massachusetts March 6, 1631-2, and soon became prominent in the place of his adoption, receiving, as is manifest from the early records of the town, "import-

"ant appointments and trusts more numerous than were conferred upon any other person." He was descended, in the fifth generation, through the Brownes of Swan Hall, Hawkedon, in Suffolk, England, from Christopher Browne of Stamford, in Lincolnshire, and of Tolethorpe, Rutlandshire, who,

again, was descended, in the fifth generation, from John Browne, a merchant of Stamford, and Alderman, or chief magistrate, of that town in 1376, the office of Mayor not having been created till 1663. Several mortuary brasses of the family, called by Fuller, in his Worthies, "the ancient family of Brownes of Toll-Thorp," still remain on the walls of the Church of All Saints in Stamford, and on the floor of a chapel of the same "proper to the family", and also in the church at Little Casterton, near Tolethorpe. The church of All Saints, itself, was in great part rebuilt about the year 1465 at the expense of John Browne, father of Christopher Browne, above named; and its beautiful steeple was erected by William Browne, uncle of Christopher. This William Browne, under a charter dated 1485, also founded the "Browne Hospital or Bead House" for the support of "twelve poor men," and endowed it liberally by grants of lands. This institution still flourishes in Stamford, and, by the large increase in the value of its land, the scope of its charities has been greatly extended. The Manor of Tolethorpe, near the village of Little Casterton, in Rutlandshire, about three miles from Stamford, was purchased by Christopher Browne, above named, of the Burton family towards the end of the 15th century, and thenceforth continued to be the seat of the head of the family until into the present century, a period of nearly four hundred years. About thirty years ago it was sold, and the ancient stone manor house is now owned and occupied by Charles Ormston Eaton, Esq., a prominent banker of Stamford, who kindly entertained there the writer of this article in the summer of 1886. Mr. Eaton has added wings to the



MANSION OF MOSES BROWN, BEVERLY, MASS.



original mansion, but has otherwise carefully preserved this venerable structure, as nearly as possible, in the condition in which he found it. A wood-cut copied from a photograph of the house, before its recent alterations, is inserted; together with wood-cuts from photographs of the church of All Saints, and of the Bead House. The two large windows, at the further end of the latter building, are those of the little chapel in which the "twelve poor men" are required to attend daily services. The rest of the building is occupied by two large halls, the whole structure forming one side of an interior quadrangle on which are the residences of the beneficiaries.

The three mascles, in the coat of arms given at the beginning of this article, were granted, together with the crest and motto, to Christopher Browne, above mentioned, July 20, 1480; but are here combined with a still earlier grant to the family of the three mallets with a slightly different crest, which latter coat and crest are cut in stone on the walls of the Bead House. The original parchment grant to Christopher still exists, and is in the possession of Frederick Sayres Browne of Norwich, England. It is a curious bit of old French, and is printed in full in the *Heraldic Journal*, Vol. IV., page 146. The herald, Mr. Alfred Scott Gatty, of the Heralds' College, London, stated to the writer that he knew of but one other instance where two grants of arms had been made to the same family.

Moses Brown, the subject of this memoir, was fitted for Harvard College by his maternal uncle, the Rev. Thomas Balch of Dedham, and graduated in 1768. He taught school for three or four years in Framingham, Lexington and Lincoln, and then settled in Beverly as a merchant, in the autumn of 1772. The cause of American Independence was warmly espoused by him, and a commission, dated August 7, 1775, signed by James Warren, President of the Provincial Congress, appointed him Captain of a company enlisted by him in Beverly, under a commission dated July 11th of the same year. In January 1776 he joined the line of the American army as Captain in the fourteenth regiment, Colonel John Glover, under a commission dated January 1, 1776, and signed by John Hancock, President of the Continental Congress. This regiment, of which many of the privates were seamen, and which is accordingly called the "Amphibious Regiment" by Irving in his *Life of Washington*, did good service at Brooklyn in ferrying over the army to New York when it was obliged to evacuate Brooklyn Heights. It also performed similar service for the army on its crossing the Delaware, preliminary to the battle of Trenton, in which it took a prominent part. Captain Brown's *Orderly Book*¹

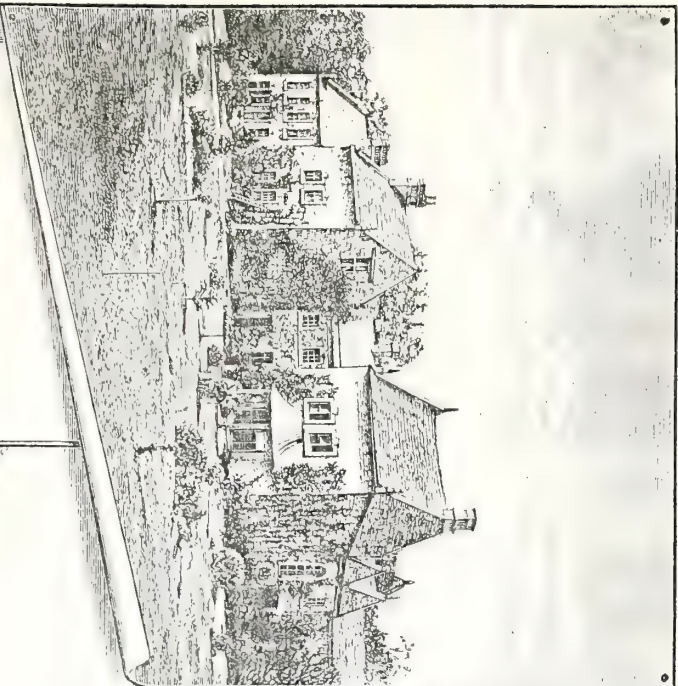
beginning in January 1776, kept with his characteristic neatness and exactness, is still preserved by his descendants, together with his sword, field-glass and commissions. At the expiration of the term of enlistment of his company he returned to Beverly, where he resumed his business with his partner and brother in law, Israel Thorndike, and some of the vessels of "Brown and Thorndike," transformed from their peaceful character as merchantmen into armed ships, continued the patriotic work which Captain Brown had begun in the field, and did good service to his country.

After the close of the war, Mr. Brown continued to be energetically and successfully engaged in commerce until the year 1800, when he retired from active business with what was, for those days, an ample fortune. His house on the main street of Beverly, in which, together with Mr. Thorndike, he resided for several years, and until the latter erected a separate mansion, afterwards the Town Hall, is still standing, is a good specimen of the Colonial residences of the better class. Of this also, a wood-cut, taken from a photograph, is inserted. Here, for many years, Mr. Brown dispensed a generous hospitality, and paid much attention to the cultivation of fruit and flowers in the ample garden belonging to his house. The noble elms, which still adorn the main street of Beverly, were also set out by him. He was largely instrumental in the construction of Essex Bridge, between Beverly and Salem, and also of the Salem and Boston Turnpike, the latter having been constructed under his personal supervision. In both of these enterprises he was among the largest original proprietors. He was a Federalist of the Washington school, was a member of the Massachusetts Legislature, and one of the Presidential Electors in 1808. "His manners were dignified and courteous. He always took an important part in public enterprises." President Quincy, in his *History of Harvard University*, says of him that "He united integrity with benevolence, was exemplary in all social and domestic

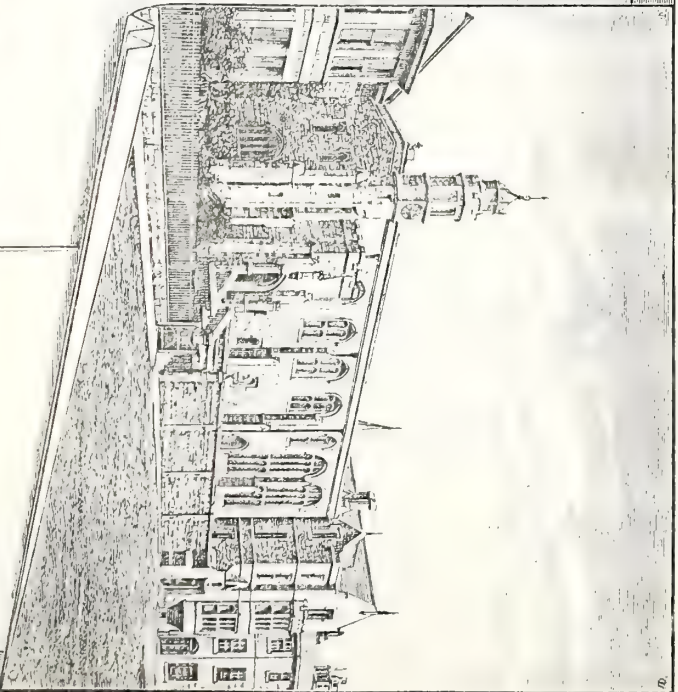
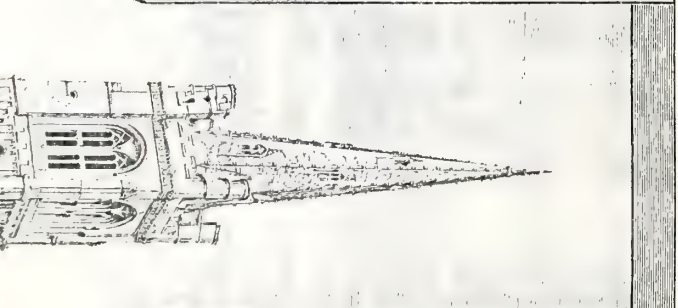
character and usefulness of the Essex troops and the esteem in which they were held.

"Orders for Gen. Lee's Division, Mile Square, Oct. 19, 1776. Gen. Lee returns his warmest thanks to Col. Glover and the Brigade under his command, not only for their gallant behavior yesterday, but, for their prudent, cool, orderly and soldierlike conduct in all respects, he assures these brave men that he shall omit no opportunity of shewing his gratitude. All the wounded to be sent immediately to Valentine's mill at the second Liberty Pole, where surgeons should repair to dress them. They are afterwards to be forwarded to Fort Washington." And, two days later, Washington issued general orders as follows, "Headquarters 21 Oct. 1776. The hurried situation of the General for the last two days, having prevented him from paying that attention to Col. Glover and the officers and soldiers who were with him in the skirmish on Friday last that their merit and good behavior deserved, he flatters himself that his thanks, tho' delayed, will nevertheless be acceptable to them, as they are offered with great sincerity and cordiality. At the same time he hopes that every other part of the army will do their duty with equal bravery and zeal whenever called upon; and neither dangers, nor difficulties nor hardships will discourage soldiers engaged in the cause of liberty, and while we are contending for all that freemen hold dear and valuable."

¹The following extract from this book, in commendation of Col. Glover's command for its gallant attack upon Sir William Howe Oct. 18, 1776, on his march to New Rochelle, may be of interest, as showing the



TOLET HOUSE.



BROWNE'S-READ HOUSE.
STAMFORD.



CHURCH OF ALL SAINTS,
STAMFORD, ENGLAND.





A. R. Peabody.



relations, and a generous contributor to public and private charities and associations." In his will he bequeathed two thousand dollars to the Theological School at Cambridge connected with the College, to be applied in any way that "will best promote the cause of Christianity, and the design and utility of this religious establishment." He deceased June 15th, 1820, and his funeral sermon was preached by his friend and pastor, the Rev. Abiel Abbott of Beverly. He married first Oct. 16, 1774, Elizabeth, daughter of Osmyn Trask of Beverly. She died without issue, and he married secondly, May 3d, 1789, Mary, daughter of the Rev. Matthew Bridge of Framingham, Harvard College 1741, and grand-daughter of the Rev. Daniel Perkins of Bridgewater, Harvard College 1717. His children were first, Charles, born in Beverly, May 24, 1793, who graduated at Harvard College in 1812. He then studied law and was admitted to the bar, but never practised his profession. He soon removed to Boston, where, for some years, he was engaged in business. During the latter part of his life he was much interested in genealogical pursuits, and was largely instrumental in tracing his ancestors in this country to their origin in England. He returned to the former spelling of the name by resuming the final *e*. He married Dec. 14, 1825, Elizabeth Isabella Tilden, and died in Boston, July 21, 1856, leaving three children, Harriet Tilden, Francis Perkins and Edward Ingersoll Browne (Harvard College 1855) all now living. The name of the old firm has, of late years, been revived by the association of Edward Ingersoll Browne with Charles Thorndike, grandson of Israel, as partners in the law business, under the name of Browne and Thorndike of Boston, in which city they have long been established.

The second and only other child of Moses Brown, except one who died in infancy, was George, born Nov. 24, 1799. For several years he was a captain in the merchant service. In 1843 he was appointed Commissioner to the Sandwich Islands, and, with his eldest son, was lost at sea on a voyage to China in August, 1846. He married, Dec. 9, 1821, his cousin, Harriet Bridge by whom he had several children, all of whom have deceased, his two sons Samuel and Moses alone leaving issue.¹

ANDREW PRESTON PEABODY, D.D., LL.D.

Dr. Peabody is descended from Lieutenant Francis Peabody, who was born in 1614 in St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, and came to New England in the ship "Planter" in 1637, settling in Lynn, and later, in 1638, in Hampton, Old Norfolk County, subse-

quently to which time he became an inhabitant of Topsfield, where, in 1657, he married Mary Foster, dying February 19, 1697-98. He is the American ancestor of a numerous and honorable posterity in Essex County and elsewhere, among whom the distinguished philanthropist, George Peabody of London, is especially to be named.

Lieutenant Francis Peabody's son Joseph, born in 1644, who lived in Buxford, was the father of Zerubabel, born February 26, 1707, who lived in Middleton, married Lydia Fuller February 21, 1733, and was the father of Andrew, born July 21, 1745, married Ruth Curtis December 13, 1769, lived in Middleton, and died October 14, 1813. His son Andrew, born February 29, 1772, married Mary Rantoul, sister of Hon. Robert Rantoul, Sr., of Beverly, at Salem, May 30, 1808, lived in Beverly, where he kept the grammar school and was a teacher of repute, and died December 19, 1813. The subject of this sketch was born in Beverly March 19, 1811. In a reminiscence contributed to a series of autobiographical articles by eminent men (published in the *Forum* for July, 1887) he has himself unconsciously disclosed the dominant chord in his own character, while describing the Spartan educational methods of the earlier years in this century:—

"I learned to read before I was three years old, and foremost among the books that have helped me I must put Webster's 'Spelling-book.' I knew the old lexicographer. He was a good man, but hard, dry, unsentimental. I do not suppose that in his earliest reading-lessons for children he had any ulterior purpose beyond shaping sentences composed of words consisting of three letters and less. But while I believe in the inspiration of prophets and apostles, I agree with the Christian fathers of the Alexandrian school in extending the theory of inspiration far beyond the (so-called) canon of Scripture, and I cannot but think that a divine afflatus breathed upon the soul of Noah Webster when he framed, as the first sentence on which the infant mind should concentrate its nascent capacity of combining letters into words, and which thus by long study and endless repetition must needs deposit itself in undying memory, 'No man can put off the law of God.' When I toiled day after day on this sentence, I probably had no idea of its meaning; but there is nothing better for a child than to learn by rote and to fix in enduring remembrance words which thus sown deep, will blossom into fruitful meaning with growing years. Since I began to think and feel on subjects within the province of ethics, this maxim has never been out of my mind. I have employed it as a text for my experience and observation. It is a fundamental truth in my theology. It underlies my moral philosophy. It has molded my ethical teaching in the pulpit and the classroom, in utterance and in print."

From his sixth year until he entered college, he supplied himself "with books from a library of several hundred very good books, the proprietors of which were assessed fifty cents a year." His earliest teacher, to whom he owed much, was Miss Joanna Prince, who later married Ebenezer Everett, of Brunswick, Me., and was the mother of Prof. Charles Carroll Everett. He was also a pupil of Miss Hannah Hill in the first Sunday-school in the United States, which these two ladies had gathered in Beverly, and had the satisfaction later of teaching Miss Hill Greek in her old age, in fulfillment of her desire to read the New Testament in the original tongue. A child of precocious promise, he was on the point of being sent

¹ See Bond's "Genealogies and History of Watertown"; Stone's "History of Beverly"; Quincy's "History of Harvard University"; the New England Hist. and Genealogical Register for January 1885; the *Harvard Journal*, Boston 1865; Wright's "History of Rutlandshire"; Blome's "History of Rutlandshire"; and Drake's "History of Stamford."*

* By Edward I. Browne.



to Exeter Academy, when the wise minister, Dr. Abbot, persuaded his mother to have him prepared for college at home under the teaching of Mr. Bernard Whitman, who was then pursuing his studies for the Unitarian ministry with that distinguished clergyman, and he was fitted for college in a year, passing the examinations for the Freshman class in 1823, and returning to live in Beverly under the same teaching another twelvemonth, in which he went over the studies of the first two years of the college course, returning again to Cambridge to join the Junior class in August, 1824, and graduating in 1826, in the same class with his cousin, Hon. Robert Rantoul, Jr. No less than fourteen members of this class entered the Christian ministry, among them the theologian Oliver Stearns, the eloquent preacher George Putnam, and Nehemiah Adams, the Calvinistic divine. His father had set him apart for the ministry, as far as it could be done, by a request on his death-bed, but the boy who had graduated at fifteen, finishing his academic course at an earlier age than any other graduate of Harvard College, with the possible exception of Paul Dudley and Cotton Mather, was too young to begin his theological studies, and the following three years were spent, the first in study at Beverly, teaching in the winter the same district school in Middleton where his father had first taught, the second as private tutor in the family of Mr. Huidekoper, of Meadville, Pa., where not a few eminent men have both given and received much, in a home of patriarchal simplicity and manorial beauty, and the third in teaching in the academy at Portsmouth, N. H. In 1829 he entered the Cambridge Divinity School, graduating from it in 1832. The next year was spent as college tutor of Hebrew and mathematics at Cambridge. At this time his first publication appeared, "Address on Taxation," being No. 1, Vol. 1, of the "Workingmen's Library."

President Quincy desired to secure Mr. Peabody for permanent academic service. He had, however, been preaching in various places during the year, being called to settle over churches in Fall River and Framingham, and accepted an invitation to become minister of the South Parish in Portsmouth, N. H., as colleague with the Rev. Nathan Parker, D.D., one of the most honored clergymen of his time in New England, whose lofty character, distinguished alike for wisdom and for goodness, has left an abiding mark upon that intelligent Christian community. Mr. Peabody took charge of that pulpit September 1, 1833. His previous year spent in Portsmouth as a teacher had brought him into such personal relations with Dr. Parker as to make him appreciate, as a special privilege, the opportunity of laboring in such companionship, but the hope was sadly disappointed, as Dr. Parker's rapidly failing health did not even permit him to take part in the ordination of his colleague and successor in October, 1833, and his death a few days later left the young clergyman alone in charge of a most important parish.

The South Church, which was the second in Portsmouth, had its origin, as was the case in many of the older parishes in New England, in a dissension about the best locality for a new meeting-house. It early leaned to Arminianism, while the North Church, long under the ministry of the elder Buckminster, held fast to the more strict theology; and at the separation of the Congregational body in the earlier years of this century, the former had become a leading parish in the "Unitarian movement." Under the serious evangelical preaching of Dr. Parker, it had been strengthened and increased in numbers till not long before his death it had built one of the most beautiful and costly stone churches of the time in New England, which was filled with worshipers. This responsible charge was borne by the young minister, and prospered in his hands. The further increase of the congregation, to the number of two hundred and fifty families, made it necessary to enlarge the church; a handsome chapel was built for the large and flourishing Sunday school, and all the signs of professional success in a high degree were evident.

On September 12, 1836, Mr. Peabody was married to Catherine Whipple, daughter of Edmund Roberts, of Portsmouth, who, as Envoy of the United States Government, negotiated the first treaty between this country and Siam and Cochin China, the journal of whose travels in remote Eastern lands, at that time almost unvisited, was published after his death, which took place in 1837, while abroad on public business. Of the eight children of this marriage, two sons and two daughters died in early childhood, and four daughters are living. Mrs. Peabody died in November, 1869.

The Portsmouth pulpit, as filled by Mr. Peabody, was metropolitan to New Hampshire. While the most important part of a faithful minister's labors is silent and hidden in the endless round of pastoral duty, the calls to public services outside his parish multiplied upon him in the educational and charitable duties which fall in such a community to the minister of a prosperous and influential congregation. He early became a trustee of Exeter Academy, holding that position for forty-three years. One of the earliest of the many addresses which he gave on academic occasions, that on "Conversation: its faults and its graces," delivered before the Newburyport Female High School, and first printed in 1846, became a classic on the subject. Meantime, in the religious discussions which were being earnestly carried on in the Unitarian Church, Mr. Peabody soon became a recognized leader, in 1845 giving the address before the Senior class in the Cambridge Divinity School on "Anti-Supernaturalism," and being widely known as a preacher of positive spiritual Christianity. In 1844 he published "Lectures on Christian Doctrine," which became a handbook of the belief of the evangelical portion of the religious body to which he belonged, while a wider congregation than his Ports-



mouth parish was addressed by his "Christian Consolations: sermons designed to furnish comfort and strength to the afflicted," of which the first of many editions was published in 1846, and by his "Sermons to Children," published in 1867. He also was an editor of the *Christian Register* for two years.

In 1852 he received from Harvard College the degree of Doctor of Divinity. During all this period he was a frequent contributor to the *Christian Examiner* and the *North American Review*, and in 1852 he became proprietor and editor of the latter publication, which duties he retained till 1863, when he was succeeded by Professors Lowell and Norton.

The invitation to the Plummer professorship of the heart and of Christian morals in Harvard College found Dr. Peabody in a happy and successful ministry at Portsmouth, over a parish to whom he was bound by ties of mutual attachment, such as no other call could have been strong enough to break. He had seen the first generation of his people pass away and give place to children and grandchildren, whose feeling toward him was not lessened by his removal to the large sphere of duties which Cambridge offered. On September 1, 1860, he assumed the Plummer professorship, and when, after a generation had intervened, on September 1, 1883, the fiftieth anniversary of his settlement at Portsmouth was celebrated by his former parish, it was with a joy and sympathy not dimmed by the lapse of time.

The new work on which Dr. Peabody now entered, as successor to the Rev. Frederick Dan. Huntington, D.D., was waiting to be shaped by him into a large and unique opportunity of service and influence. The wise munificence of Miss Caroline Plummer, of Salem, had been led to endow the "Professorship of the Heart and of Christian Morals," by the conviction that the "dry light" and unsympathetic methods of college training needed to be suffused with the warmth and glow of a personal influence, exerted by a Christian minister of wide and ready sympathy, hearty interest in young men and belief in them, not a teacher only nor a preacher only, though both of these he was to be, but one who should find what possibilities existed in Harvard College for the function of pastor to the most difficult class of persons in the world to reach,—youths of the student age. It had been the conviction of this excellent lady that such a place could be created and filled by a wise, devout scholar, in whom the weight of genuine character and the persuasiveness and charm of Christian faith should be a "living epistle, known and read of all men," but no one could have ventured to anticipate the way in which Dr. Peabody was to grow into the place and the place to grow round him, or the degree in which his influence was destined to pervade the Cambridge atmosphere like sunshine, doing more perhaps than any other single cause to soften and change the temper of mutual antagonism and mutual distrust which largely affected the relations of

the faculty and the students. This condition of things was, of course, not without shining exceptions on both sides, and as a survival from the semi-medieval conditions of the college in Puritan times. The years of Dr. Peabody's incumbency of the one position which was created to be mediatorial between the two elements, witnessed a change for the better greater than had been wrought in the two previous centuries. This process went on side by side with the great enlargement of the college on all sides, transforming it into a veritable university, with the freedom and opportunity of the elective system; and it is not too much to say that Dr. Peabody's presence and influence at Cambridge did more than any other thing to inspire confidence in the whole community that these changes would only give opportunity for growth in Christian manhood, and leave the college freer to become a training-school in virtue and goodness and faith. The proper official work of the Plummer professorship had included the duties of preacher to the university and some slight teaching of each class at the beginning of the Freshman and at the end of the Senior year, while the pulpit services were lightened by being assumed by the president (when he was a clergyman) on one Sunday of each month. Except during the presidency of Dr. Hill, however, the burden of the University pulpit now fell wholly upon Dr. Peabody, and for twenty-one years was so borne as to keep that distinguished place at the height of its reputation, as the voice in sacred things of the mother and chief of American colleges.

The degree of Doctor of Laws was conferred upon Dr. Peabody by the University of Rochester in 1863.

The publications of Dr. Peabody during the period after his removal to Cambridge may be in part noted here. In 1861 he delivered and published a course of lectures before the Lowell Institute, entitled "Christianity the Religion of Nature," and in 1873 a volume of sermons on "Christian Belief and Life." Besides a multitude of single sermons, lectures, orations, discussions in the influential reviews of great questions of public interest and memoirs of distinguished persons, the following volumes have also been given to the public by him: "Manual of Moral Philosophy," 1872; "Christianity and Science," a series of lectures delivered in New York, in 1874, on the Ely foundation of the Union Theological Seminary, 1874. The Baccalaureate sermons which he preached to successive classes on the Sunday before commencement, and which were long a marked feature of the academic life, were gathered up in a volume embracing those preached in successive years, from 1861 to 1883, when the emeritus professor might well have supposed that his long service in the interesting duty was ended, but in 1885 and 1886 the graduating classes still felt that from no other could they ask the farewell word in behalf of their *alma mater*. A part of the fruit of his ethical instruction in the divinity school and in the college appeared in his translations



of Cicero's *De Officiis*, *De Senectute*, *De Amicitia*, and the *Tusculan Disputations*, published in 1883, 1884 and 1886, and of Plutarch's *De Sera Numinis Vindicta*, published in 1885. In 1887 he published further fruits of his college teaching in the valuable work on *Moral Philosophy*, which embodies a portion of the lectures given by him to the senior class in college and in the Divinity School at Meadville, Pa.

The Cambridge life devolved upon Dr. Peabody, beyond the duties of his professorship, not a few such obligations as seek a public-spirited citizen with heavy demand upon his time. On the school committee he gave many years of service, and in other matters which furthered the cause of good government of the city, he was never backward. Only an exceptional endowment of health and a bodily frame strong as iron which was able to bear habitual labor far into the small hours of the night, could have endured the toil.

As a teacher, the work which fell into his strong and willing hands naturally broadened more and more. The subject of ethics belonged strictly to his department as religious teacher to the university, but in addition he taught logic, political economy until the appointment of Professor Dunbar, and had the care of the senior forensics for some years, also filling gaps when they occurred in the college and in the divinity school. A portion of this labor bore fruit in several of his printed works.

Meantime, the friendly and fatherly relation in which he stood to the students had beneficent results. When the wise generosity of Mr. Nathaniel Thayer provided the means for reviving in a better form the old "Commons," furnishing good food to the great mass of the students for a moderate sum, the task of organizing this large enterprise and of its supervision for a considerable time was undertaken by Dr. Peabody until he had proved that it was a wise experiment and had established it on a permanent basis at the public tables of Memorial Hall. The thoughtful and abounding private charities which sought his aid as almoner in finding and relieving needy students who deserved such aid, a form of college benefit which escapes all public record, were very great in amount and were alone sufficient to occupy much of the time of a busy man. It would be impossible to overstate the quantity and quality of his service in personal and private relations as adviser and confidential friend to the multitude of young men who sought his help in any kind of trouble and never sought in vain. For all this the unsolicited reward of a love and veneration, such as it is the privilege of few to win, was poured forth upon him. No one can have heard without a thrill the cheers, ringing with the enthusiasm of youth and of personal affection and rising again and again as if they would never cease, which greeted the mention of his name or welcomed his presence on all public occasions of the university.

The Plummer professorship also offered an oppor-

tunity to bring the university into religious relations with the whole community by making its pulpit not the property of a single sect, but hospitable to all branches of the Protestant Church, which Dr. Peabody's large and sympathetic Christian temper fulfilled to the utmost. While himself recognized as a leader in his own denomination, he had the gift of winning the Christian fellowship and conciliating by his own reconciling spirit the friendly respect of churchmen of all names, welcoming them to the college chapel and being welcomed as a preacher in their pulpits, while he was sought to give addresses on the public days of the theological schools of Newton, Bangor and Andover, representing various Christian bodies; and the catholic system of administration of religion in Harvard University, introduced in 1885, in which a group of the ablest preachers of different churches are associated in the care of spiritual interests which are recognized to be so large and various as to demand their united care, is the legitimate outgrowth of the spirit in which Dr. Peabody admitted this great religious opportunity.

The most important part of Dr. Peabody's public services at Cambridge still remains to be mentioned. The death of President Felton, in February, 1862, not only removed his closest personal friend in the college, but devolved upon him most laborious and responsible duties as head of the university, being appointed by the corporation acting president, and discharging the duties of that office until the installation of President Hill late in the following autumn. On the resignation of Dr. Hill, in September, 1868, he was again called to the same responsibility, and continued to preside over the university until the inauguration of President Eliot. His administration as acting president thus covered two periods, amounting in all to about two years, while he was specially associated with the counsels of his immediate predecessors in the office, and in the plans which marked their administrations and which resulted in the abolition of the old "hazing" system and the introduction of a healthier spirit of mutual regard in the instructors and students, and the first broadening out of the college curriculum beyond its narrow limit by introducing the elective system. The success of Dr. Peabody as an administrator was marked, and it seemed natural that he should have been elected to the permanent incumbency of the office which he adorned; the strong secular tendency in college affairs had, however, predetermined that the office should not be held in any event by a clergyman.

In these very important duties Dr. Peabody remained at his post for twenty-one years, with an interval of travel in Europe from June, 1867, to March, 1868, which he accomplished by compressing the work of two terms into that of a single one after his return, and of which he published, in 1868, a record in his "*Reminiscences of European Travel*." A briefer visit to Russia, and the neighboring countries





Alfred Thompkins



in which he shared the hospitalities enjoyed by General Grant, was made by him in the summer of 1876, and a longer sojourn in Europe with his family after resigning the Plummer professorship, from June, 1881, to September, 1882. His resignation had gone into effect after the commencement of 1881, but he was at once appointed professor emeritus, retiring from the burdens of his official position, but in no sense from his place in the heart of the college nor from the opportunities of service which awaited him.

The key-note of Dr. Peabody's public services is given in the paper already quoted, where he mentions three biographies to which he has been specially indebted. The first is that of Niebuhr:

"If I have been able, in things secular and sacred, as to reports of current and records of past events, to steer a safe way between credulity and skepticism, I owe it in great part, not to Niebuhr's 'History of Rome,' but to the virtual autobiography that gives shape and vividness to his 'Memoir.' If I remember aright, he expressed his confidence in the substantial authenticity of our canonical gospels, and, however this may be, I owe largely to him my firm faith and trust in them.

"I would next name the 'Life of Thomas Arnold.' When I read it I was pastor of a large parish, with many young persons under my charge and influence, and I was at the same time chairman of a school-board. I had in need of Arnold to awaken my sympathy with young life, but he has helped me to understand it better, and to minister more intelligently and efficiently to its needs and cravings. His 'Rugby Sermons' have a charm for me, and while I have not been guilty of the absurd and vain attempt to imitate them, I have felt their inspiration both in the pulpit and in the lecture-room. I have also, in a large and diversified experience in educational trusts and offices, felt myself constantly instructed, energized and encouraged by Arnold.

"My third biography is that of Dr. Chalmers, fruitful of beneficent example in more directions than could be easily specified, but to me of peculiar service in his relation to poverty in Glasgow, with its attendant evils. His mode of relieving want in person and in kind, of tracing preventive measures to bear on the potential nurseries of crime, and of fostering the stranger in the aid and comfort of the feeble members of the community, I find many valuable suggestions for the charities which came under my direction while I was a parish minister."

It is allotted to few men to fulfil with conspicuous ability so many and various kinds of public service as have fallen to the lot of Dr. Peabody. As a parish minister, building up his church in the prosperity of numbers and in the better welfare of a spiritual growth, never stronger in his hold on the affections of his people than when he parted from them, and always remaining the pastor of their affectionate regard; as a preacher, devout, earnest, persuasive, a powerful expounder of the truth of the gospel, and never more effective or listened to with more interest than in the years after he had passed threescore and ten; as a theologian, strong in his grasp and luminous in his statement of the central verities of Christianity; as an ethical and moral teacher, lucid, eloquent and convincing; as the incumbent of the most difficult position in Harvard College, turning its difficulties into unrivalled opportunities and creating an exceptional work; as a successful administrator, numbered among the honored heads of the university; it has been his to win the love and reverence of the successive generations among whom his work has been wrought from youth to age.

WILLIAM AND ALBERT THORNDIKE.

The Thorndikes of America are descended from a Lincolnshire family, at one time lords of the manor of Little Carlton. The first recorded signature of pedigree was made at the visitation of Heralds, in the year 1634; but the pedigree itself is traced at least a hundred and fifty years earlier, to the middle or end of the fifteenth century. The ancestor of the American family was John Thorndike, who was one of the twelve associates of John Winthrop, Jr., by whom the first permanent settlement at Ipswich was commenced, in 1633. John Thorndike was the brother of Herbert Thorndike, Prebendary of Westminster, a distinguished clergyman of the Church of England. It is not probable that John Thorndike's emigration proceeded from religious motives. He never joined a New England Church, he sent his only son to England, to be baptized by his uncle, the prebendary, and he himself went back to England to die, and was buried by the side of his brother, in the cloisters of Westminster. He had passed thirty-years in America. From Ipswich he went to "Brooksby" (now Peabody), where he is mentioned in 1636 as a grantee of a hundred acres of land. This grant he relinquished the same year for one of a hundred acres in Beverly, then a part of Salem, and in the following year his holding was enlarged to a hundred and eighty-five acres, extending back from the shore at the point afterwards called "Paul's Head," from his son Paul.

Paul Thorndike was prominent in the town affairs of Beverly, and discharged the various offices of selectman, captain of the military company, deputy to the General Court and the like. But he, like his father, never became a member of a New England Church, and not until ten years after his death did his oldest son, John, the first Puritan in the family, make "public profession." Paul's three sons, John, Paul and Herbert, probably lived upon the land which had come to them through their father from their grandfather. But they all had numerous children, and the parental acres gradually departed from the family under a series of petty subdivisions and alienations. Nothing now remains to indicate the original ownership but the mere name "Paul's Head."

Of the generations which followed the first two in Beverly, most of the members were sailors. As Hawthorne picturesquely says of his own ancestors, "From father to son for above a hundred years they followed the sea; a grey-headed shipmaster in each generation retiring from the quarter deck to the homestead, while a boy of fourteen took the hereditary place before the mast, confronting the salt spray and the gale which had blustered against his sire and grandsire. The boy also, in due time, passed from the forecabin to the cabin, spent a tempestuous manhood and returned from his world-wanderings to grow old and die and mingle his dust with his natal earth."



Nicholas Thorndike, the father of the subjects of the present sketch, was born in 1764. He began his seafaring life early enough to be captured in the Revolution by a British cruiser, and to have a short experience of the Jersey Prison Ship. He passed his youth as a sailor and shipmaster, retired in middle life with a moderate competency and spent the remainder of his days in mercantile pursuits in Beverly. Except that he commanded a volunteer company of artillery during the War of 1812, and that he occasionally represented Beverly in the General Court, he held no public office. He was a man whose strong sense and sound judgment in affairs commanded the respect of the community. He was, moreover, like many shipmasters of his day, not without a smack of literary cultivation. The deck of a ship in the trade winds gives great opportunity for general or special reading, and one is sometimes astonished at discovering the sort of books which accompanied our sailors on their voyage.

Captain Thorndike's wife was Mehetabel Rea, whom he married in 1789. She was the daughter of Captain Joseph Rea, a man of some local note in the Revolution, an efficient member of the Committee of Correspondence and the commander of a company from Beverly and Lynn, sent to the aid of Washington in New Jersey. Mrs. Thorndike passed the quiet, uneventful life of a sailor's wife, occupied at home with the care and education of her children, while her husband was employed abroad. She lived until her youngest son was nine years old, and died at the early age of forty. She was little known beyond her own family, but the remembrance of her pure religious character, her love and her many virtues, constantly appears in the affectionate allusions of her children. Of this marriage there were four children, of whom two were daughters; Hitty, who married Thomas Stephens, Jr. (Harvard 1810), a well-known lawyer and town officer of Beverly, and Clara, the wife of Asa Rand (Dartmouth 1806), a clergyman of some prominence as a preacher and editor, and of more as an early Abolitionist and friend of Garrison and George Thompson.

William Thorndike, the oldest son of Nicholas and Mehetabel, was born in Beverly January 22, 1795. His earliest book learning was obtained in the excellent schools of his native town. In the formation of his character, kindly and manly, and at the same time of a certain strictness which sat upon him not ungracefully in after life, one may trace the precepts and example of his excellent mother. From Beverly he passed to Phillips Exeter Academy in 1807, where he spent three years under the tuition of the famous teacher, Dr. Benjamin Abbot. He entered Harvard College as a Sophomore in 1810, and was graduated in 1813. He was faithful in his studies as in all things, took an excellent rank in his class and was a member of the Phi Beta Kappa Society, whose ribbon was then, as now, a badge of scholarship. But he

was also of social disposition, and his name appears on the rolls of several of the clubs devoted to good fellowship and conviviality. On leaving college he entered his name as a student in the office of the eminent jurist, Nathan Dane, and was admitted to the Essex Bar in 1816. While a law student he gave some attention to military art, and was the first captain of the Light Infantry Company, which succeeded in 1814, the Artillery Company, commanded by his father during the war. In 1816, the year of his admission to the bar, he delivered in Beverly, the Fourth of July oration. In the autumn of that year he opened an office in Bath, Me., and commenced the practice, so often discouraging, of a young lawyer. Maine was not a wealthy State, commerce was dull and there were more lawyers than business. But he persevered, and probably had a fair share of what business there was. He also applied himself to the study of politics, history and political economy, wrote articles for the newspapers, delivered, in 1818, the Fourth of July oration at Brunswick and published a series of essays upon the constitutional struggles in the Pyrenean Peninsula and Italy. The death of his father in 1821 left him in comfortable pecuniary circumstances, and in the autumn of that year he married Nancy Stephens, a sister of his brother-in-law, Thomas Stephens.

His wife, a most lovely person, to whom he was devotedly attached, died in less than two years from their marriage. Her death was followed by a period of depression, during which he was completely unfit for active life. He abandoned his profession, never to resume it, and in the autumn of 1823 returned to his old home in Beverly.

Here his interest in affairs gradually revived. With the means inherited from his father, he pursued with success various mercantile enterprises. He was upon the board of the banking and insurance corporations of the place and active in its charities. He also gave much time to town affairs, as selectman, overseer of the poor, moderator of town-meetings and the like. In matters of education he was especially earnest, did much good work upon the School Committee and was one of the early promoters of the Debating Society and Lyceum, before which he delivered several carefully prepared lectures.

In 1826 and 1827 he represented the town in the General Court. In the House he rarely spoke, but his intelligence, clear judgment and familiarity with business, made him valuable as an adviser and as a member of committees. In 1828 he was chosen Senator for Essex, and was re-elected in the four following years. His popularity in the County, as in his own town, was very great, though he was by no means a good politician in the way of strict party allegiance. In the Senate he joined in debate oftener than in the House, and always spoke and voted from his own judgment and conscience, rather than from regard to the expectations of his friends or his constituents. In



short, as his distinguished contemporary, Mr. Choate, once said of him, "He was not able enough to agree with any set of men to succeed in politics." But his steadfast integrity and purity of motive certainly carried him a great way towards success. In National affairs, which got into the debates and resolutions of the Legislature more frequently than now, he probably would have called himself a Federalist, but still he was heretical upon some of the old Federalist articles of faith. His name was upon the National Republican ticket after that party was formed, but he refused to subscribe to the tenet of protection, which was its criterion of orthodoxy, and remained a free trader to the end. And upon the question of removal of the Cherokees beyond the Mississippi, he drew down upon himself a storm of indignation because he believed, as afterwards proved true, that their removal was not only for the good of the country, but for their own good. In 1830 there was talk in the County of sending him to Congress, but he was too poor a politician for this, and the contest fell between Mr. Choate and Mr. Crowningshield, the former being triumphantly elected and beginning at this time his brilliant public career. In 1832 he was elected president of the Senate, and filled the chair with great ability, dignity and impartiality. His public life ended here. In the same year he was made president of two Boston corporations, the Hamilton Bank and the National Insurance Company, and to the duties of these offices he devoted with his wonted faithfulness and industry the brief remainder of his life. He died of consumption on July 12, 1835, at the early age of forty.

It remains only to speak of his religious character and relations. Brought up by a mother who was a Puritan of the Puritans, he retained through life a certain spirit of that stern faith. His mind always tended towards independence in things spiritual of all human authority, implicit reliance upon Divine Revelation, constant regard for moral and religious principle and the reference of every daily action to the tribunal of conscience. Further than this he was no Puritan, or rather he carried the Puritan spirit to its logical outcome, and threw off the authority of that church in matters of dogma, as that had rejected the authority of its predecessors. On his return to Beverly he took prominent and active part in the affairs of the First Parish, and spent much time and pains in bringing those affairs into a satisfactory financial condition. His interest in the church belonging to that parish was constant and unflagging, and he heartily sympathized with its tendency towards Unitarianism under the pastorate of Dr. Abbot, and its open profession of the Unitarian faith at the settlement of Mr. Thayer. The Sunday-school of that church he found a most congenial sphere of labor and usefulness. His zealous services as teacher and superintendent are gratefully acknowledged in the appreciative memoir of his life, contributed by

Mr. Thayer to Reverend Mr. Stone's History of Beverly.

Albert Thorndike, the younger brother of William, was born March 18, 1800. He, like his brother, received his early education at home, and afterwards, in 1813, went to Exeter. He had a desire to go to college, but did not wish to become afterwards either a lawyer, a doctor or a minister. His father had the old notion that college is a place to learn Latin and Greek, and that Latin and Greek are of little use except in the three so-called learned professions. The idea that a college education has less to do with earning a living than with the true life which lies beyond and apart from getting means to live, is of later growth. So Albert spent his three years under Dr. Abbot, and then returned home to commence a business life. At first he assisted his father and kept his books. In 1819 he took a clerkship in the Beverly Bank, and was promoted, in 1822, to the office of cashier, which he retained for twenty-four years. During this time he did many things beside, at first in connection with his brother William and afterwards with the late Samuel Endicott. They owned shares in coasting and fishing craft and in larger vessels for foreign trade, sent adventures to India and the Mediterranean and engaged in the manifold enterprises open to the inhabitants of a thriving sea-port town; for Beverly, as a part of the port of Salem, had then much more to do with the world beyond the ocean than now.

In 1823 he married Joanna Batchelder Lovett, daughter of John and Hannah (Batchelder) Lovett. Her parents had died in her infancy, and she had grown to womanhood in the home and under the paternal care of her uncle, the late Robert Rantoul. Of this marriage there were born nine children, of whom two are still living, Samuel Lothrop Thorndike, of Cambridge, and Charles Francis Thorndike, of Beverly. There are also living three sons of another child, the late Dr. William Thorndike, of Milwaukee. Mrs. Thorndike survived her husband sixteen years, and died in 1874.

In 1846 Mr. Thorndike took the presidency of the Bank, which he kept until 1853. In addition to its local transactions, the Bank did a considerable business with Boston, of which, during his cashiership and presidency, he had entire charge. This carried him often to the city, and after the Railroad made communication easy, he spent much of his time there.

For the routine of the affairs of the town Mr. Thorndike was too busy a man, but he always found time for its charities and for its higher interests. He was an early officer of the Lyceum, and always an active member of the Fisher Charitable Society.

From 1845 to 1847 he represented Beverly in the General Court, and in 1850 was a member of the Senate. He seldom took the floor, except to make a report or a motion. Oratory was not one of his gifts. But his familiarity with commerce and with financial



matters in general, made him an important member of the Mercantile Committee, as well as of the State Valuation Committee of 1850.

During this period he was a director of the Eastern Railroad, and spent much time upon its affairs; and in 1852 he was elected to the presidency. In the duties of this office, which he held until 1855, and that of auditor, to which he was afterwards appointed, he passed the rest of his vigorous business life. Into these duties he put, as was his wont, his whole energy, not content to be simply the head of a board, but familiarizing himself with, and actively directing, all the operations of the road. More than one important reform in railway management was either originated by him or received early adoption upon his line. He was esteemed and beloved by those under him, and with his associates he formed warm and lasting friendships. But a shadow fell upon his term of office from the crime of a trusted subordinate. Honest himself, as a matter of course, and beyond the conception of being otherwise, he had little suspicion of the possibility of dishonesty in another; and the blow which he received saddened the whole remainder of his life.

Mr. Thorndike's religious feelings were strong, his faith liberal, his charity universal. He succeeded his brother William as superintendent of the Parish Sunday-school in 1833, and for several years carried on the good work his brother had begun. From 1842 until his death he was one of the deacons of the church.

His favorite recreation was music. He was a singer from boyhood, and kept his fine bass voice to the end. A pupil of Keller, one of the first German instructors who came to this country, he was no mean proficient upon the organ and piano. He attended all the concerts far and wide, was a member of the various musical societies of the neighborhood and led the parish choir for thirty years.

If space permitted, it would be pleasant to speak at length upon Mr. Thorndike's disposition and tastes, as they showed themselves at home,—his fondness for children, his love of books and pictures, his admiration of the beauties of nature, his skill in horticulture, his deft handiness as an amateur mechanic. But with all this a brief public record has little concern.

He died after a half year's illness, which he bore with patience and fortitude, June 14, 1858, mourned by all who knew him, and affectionately remembered by those who knew him best.

CAPTAIN JOHN E. GIDDINGS.

John Endicott Giddings was born in Danvers, Mass., October 6, 1794. His father was Solomon Giddings, born in Ipswich in 1767, a descendant of George Giddings, who settled in Ipswich in 1635; and his mother was Anna Endicott, born in Danvers in 1769, and a descendant of Gov. John Endicott. His family removed to Beverly when he was about

eleven years of age, and he soon after commenced sea life, accompanying his father to the West Indies. During the War of 1812 he enlisted in a privateer, and was captured by an English sloop of war, off Halifax, and he was taken to Dartmoor Prison, in England, where he was confined for nearly two years. After his release he entered the employ of the Hon. Wm. Gray, of Salem, and soon rose to the position of captain. Entering the employ of Joseph Peabody, of Salem, he had command of the noted ships, "Carthage" and "Augustus," making voyages to China and Bombay. After the death of Mr. Peabody he commanded the ship "Duxbury," owned by Mr. John L. Gardner, of Boston, in the Cuba and Russia business until he retired from active sea service.

As a shipmaster he was prudent and skilful, never meeting in his long sea life with any disaster entailing loss upon the Insurance Companies; and he was a worthy representative of that remarkable class of men justly termed "merchant captains."

He married, in April, 1824, Martha Thorndike Leach, descended from Lawrence Leach, one of the first settlers of Beverly. He had five sons,—two of whom died in infancy. His oldest son, Charles Stephens, died February 9, 1856.

Two sons, John E. and Edward L., are still living. Capt. Giddings died April 28, 1849, and is buried at Beverly.

DR. INGALLS KITTREDGE, SR.

Ingalls Kittredge, who was born at Amherst, N. H., on the 10th of December, 1769, and died at Beverly June 17, 1856, was one of the sixth generation in descent from John Kittredge, of Billerica, who received grants of land in 1660, and in 1663 in Billerica, and in 1661 in Tewksbury, where his descendants were located.

He was the son of Solomon and Tabitha (Ingalls, of Andover), who removed about 1766, to Amherst, N. H. (now called Mount Vernon), and was one of twelve children. He married Sarah Conant, daughter of Jonathan and Mary Conant, who was in direct descent (of the sixth generation), from Roger Conant, the first settler and founder of Salem, which at that period (1626) was called Naumkeag, and included the territory between Portsmouth and Salem.

Their children were Ingalls, who was born at Townsend May 30, 1798, and Sarah, born at Townsend October 1, 1800. Ingalls, Jr., who followed the profession of his father, was a graduate of Harvard College of the class of 1820, and studied medicine (in company with Dr. D. Humphreys Storer), with the celebrated Dr. John C. Warren. His children were seven in number (all daughters), the eldest of whom, Sarah, married Charles W. Galloupe, Esq., of Boston (a native of Beverly), and another, Susan, married Captain Edward L. Giddings, of Beverly.

Dr. Kittredge's opportunities of an early education were exceedingly limited, but a hereditary genius for





W. L. G. 1846

Ingalls Puttbridge



the practice of medicine seems to have existed in the Kittredges for generations, and the tendency is still a remarkable one in the family, the name of Kittredge being almost synonymous with doctor.

Dr. Benjamin Kittredge, of Tewksbury, had eight sons who were doctors, and Ingalls had four brothers who practiced the healing art, the eldest of whom, Dr. Zephaniah, who lived in Mount Vernon, was a man of famous skill, and with him, no doubt, Ingalls studied.

The name of Ingalls Kittredge first appears in the tax list of 1803, but as no poll tax was included, he probably did not become a resident until August 6, 1804, when his first poll tax was assessed, indicating him at that date a citizen of Beverly. It is said that he occupied the so-called "Asa Woodbury" house, lately demolished, which stood upon the site of the house since built, and now owned and occupied by Mr. Mark B. Avery.

In April, 1803, in consideration of the sum of fourteen hundred and fifty dollars, he purchased of "Siméon Brown, Gent," a tract of land consisting of nine acres, bounded by the county road, a portion of the grant of two hundred acres, made by the Colonial Government to the "Old planter," Roger Conant (Mrs. Kittredge's paternal ancestor), upon which he erected a large mansion house, with suitable outbuildings for agricultural purposes. It is a portion of the well-known "Kittredge Farm," and through the present proprietor, Mr. Charles W. Galloupe, still remains in the family.

In the deed of purchase of the nine acres, he is mentioned as "a physician of Townsend, Middlesex Co.," and his superior intelligence and ability soon gained for him in his new home a large and successful practice, particularly in surgery, which extended widely to the surrounding towns, where he was well known, as the most skilful surgeon of the vicinity. His early visits were made on horseback, but a largely increasing practice, soon compelled a more convenient means of communication, and he adopted the so-called "Sulky," a narrow, high-lung, old-fashioned "Chaise," barely two feet in width and only capable of holding one person, furnishing scanty enough accommodation for even a single person of ordinary size. The quaint old vehicle was known as the "Doctor's Sulky," and was soon as familiar to the people of the surrounding towns as was the face of the sturdy doctor himself. After his death the vehicle speedily fell into disuse, and but few of the present day are aware that it ever had an existence.

In his practice Dr. Kittredge did not hesitate to depart from the established regulations of the "Faculty," whenever, in his judgment, the condition of his patients could be improved by such treatment. This course subjected him to the unfavorable, and often unkind criticism of his contemporaries, but his remarkable successes sustained and secured to him the public confidence, which during his whole lifetime, he never

forfeited. He was often urged to accept membership in the "Medical Faculty," but his independent nature could brook no rules inconsistent with his own conclusions, and during the length of his active professional life, he declined associating himself with any society. Later in life, however, after repeated solicitations, he consented to permit his name to be presented for membership.

The death of his esteemed wife, which occurred October 7, 1833, and his marriage in April, 1836, induced him to change his residence from the upper part of the town to a more central location, and he purchased the "Chapman Estate," one of the finest and most elegant of the old Colonial mansions, which was situated at the corner of Federal and Cabot Streets. Here, with a constantly increasing practice, he lived until the month of June, 1844, when a most disastrous fire occurred, which reduced the beautiful building to ashes, entailing a heavy and discouraging loss upon its proprietor; but under his indomitable will and perseverance, the ashes were hardly cold before he commenced the erection of the sightly and elegant mansion which still stands upon the same site, one of the finest and best residences within the limits of the town, and a fitting monument to his energy and enterprise.

Dr. Kittredge was a man of ideas greatly in advance of the times in which he lived. A man of deep and penetrating thought, with clear convictions based upon reasonable deductions, upon which he acted so frequently without consulting the opinion of others, that, as a natural consequence, he was often upon the unpopular side of the public issues.

As a temperance man he advocated total abstinence from the first, and devoted his best energies to recover society from the abuses of unlimited liquor selling, which in that day required no small amount of moral courage.

In politics he was an outspoken adherent of the "Anti-Slavery" party, a companion of Sumner, Garrison, Phillips, Whittier and other notable men, and, though not an active public advocate, he was always ready with his purse, and an ever generous contributor to its treasury. He was an indefatigable manager in the so-called "under-ground railroad," and his house as well as his purse, were always open to the unfortunate refugees, in their attempts to escape from the servitude of the South to the freedom of the North.

The well-known escaped slaves, George Latimer and the since famous Fred. Douglas, were both aided by him, and by him introduced to a public audience in Beverly very soon after their escape from slavery. George Thompson, the noted English philanthropist, Member of Parliament and Abolitionist, found in him a friend, who, without fear or favor, espoused his then unpopular cause and gave him substantial support and efficient aid. Actuated by a desire that the citizens of Beverly should hear the distinguished man speak, the doctor applied to a religious society of which



he was a prominent member, for the use of their edifice for a public lecture. The favor was refused. Later on the society had a meeting, and, anticipating some trouble from the doctor, in order to propitiate him, chose him moderator of the meeting. He never failed to improve his opportunities, and before the adjournment he had secured the adoption of a series of Anti-Slavery resolutions, which, much to the chagrin of the officers, but greatly to the satisfaction of the members of the audience, committed the society to the support of the unpopular "Anti-Slavery party."

A descendant of two eminent families, he was a vigorous representative of New England character. Quick in his decisions and as quick to act, fearless in the discharge of all his duties, prompt and punctual in all his professional engagements, exact in his dealings, somewhat imperious in his manner, he quickly decided between the good and the evil, always extending a hearty encouragement to the right, and administering to the wrong a deserving rebuke. He was a man of activity in the pursuits of human life, and reverent in his relations to the Deity. The citizens of the town heartily accord to him an eminent place in their history.

JOHN I. BAKER.

John I. Baker was born in Beverly August 16, 1812. He left school at twelve years of age, and after store-keeping in Salem and Beverly for two years, served a fourteen months' apprenticeship at the trade of shoemaking, and worked thereat for several years thereafter, with a large shop's crew, and did more or less manufacturing on his own account. He was afterwards engaged in rubber manufacturing, and in store trade, and did much as land surveyor, scrivener and in the settlement of estates. His business of late years has been in real estate. He has, during all these years, been much in public life. Chosen town clerk in 1836, he continued in that position for nearly twenty years, serving also nearly half of that time as selectman. He was Representative in 1840, and in seventeen other years between that and 1884; Senator in 1863 and '64; councillor with Governor Banks and Governor Andrew; County Commissioner from 1847 to 1855. He has also held several appointments from different Governors of the commonwealth, serving now as a harbor and land commissioner, to which he was appointed by Governor Butler in 1883, and reappointed in 1886, by Governor Robinson. When, in 1868, the town entered upon the project of building its water works, in connection with Salem, he was again chosen on the Board of Selectmen, and its chairman for seven years continuously, and when, at the abolition of the school district system, it was found necessary to provide new school-house accommodations throughout the town, he was chosen chairman of the committee to carry out this purpose, and

was also chosen on the school committee (a service he had repeatedly declined), and has been chairman of that board to this time. In 1884 he was again chosen on the Board of Selectmen, and made its chairman, and co-operated with others in securing the Legislative right to secure an independent water supply, and is chairman of the large committee that has now those works substantially and successfully completed. He has also co-operated in carrying forward other of the important public works in town, and has done something himself to demonstrate the capacity of the town for growth and improvement. He is president of Liberty Masonic Association, which built Masonic Block; was president during its active existence, of Bass River Association, which built Odd Fellows' Block. He is likewise president of the Beverly Gas Light Company, and of Beverly Co-operative Store; vice-president of the Beverly Savings Bank, whose charter he obtained in 1867, and which now has deposits amounting to one million dollars. He was an early Abolitionist and teetotaler, and reported the platform of the first preliminary Republican State Convention in favor of "equal rights" and of "the right and duty of the people to prohibit by law the sale of intoxicating liquors as a beverage." He was an active worker in the Republican party till 1870, when, dissatisfied with the uncertain course of that party on the liquor question, he united in an Independent Temperance Convention, which nominated a full State ticket, on which he was a candidate for State Treasurer, receiving about eight thousand votes. He again united in conventions in 1875 and '76, which put his name at the head of the ticket for Governor, receiving the first year over nine thousand votes, and the second year over twelve thousand votes. In 1877 Hon. Robert C. Pitman, whom Mr. Baker supported, received over sixteen thousand votes. The election of Governor Talbot that year divided the Temperance forces, and this movement was retarded thereby. Since then Mr. Baker has occupied somewhat of an independent position in politics, but has frequently been elected Representative during that time by very flattering votes.

In the Legislature he has served on some of the most important committees, often as chairman, and has always given faithful attention to the work of the sessions. It has been his fortune for eight different years, as the oldest member who had served there before, to call the House to order, and to preside until an organization was effected. He is connected with the First Baptist Society, and was chairman of the committee that had charge of building the spacious and elegant house of worship of that society, and was also actively instrumental in building the former neat chapel of said society now occupied by the Beverly Light Infantry, one of the neatest and best proportioned buildings in town. He was many years connected with the Beverly Light Infantry and with the Beverly Fire Department, and has actively co-op-





John I. Barker



Wm. E. Abbot.





John Pickett



erated with the latter in securing its modern advanced equipment throughout the town, and retains his interest in the military, continuing a member of the Veteran Associates. During the war of the rebellion he was not only in active work with Governor Andrew at the State House, but also did much of home work in co-operation with the Union Committee and all other loyal helpers in the service of their country. And he constantly insists upon the public duty of fulfilling the promises then made, "that as those who went into the perilous service of that war were loyal to the country in their service, so would we be faithful to them and those dependent upon them for all time to come."

REV. WILLIAM E. ABBOT.

Rev. William E. Abbot, seventh child of Rev. Dr. Abiel and Eunice Abbot, was born in Beverly, Mass., May 2, 1810.

He was prepared for college at Phillips Exeter Academy, Exeter, N. H., under Benjamin Abbot, brother of Dr. Abiel Abbot. He entered the sophomore class of Bowdoin College in 1827, and graduated in 1830. In September of the latter year he entered the Cambridge Theological School, where he graduated in 1833.

Mr. Abbot was settled as pastor over the First Church in Billerica, Mass., in 1837, where he remained until 1839, when he resigned and went to Dorchester, Mass.

April 20, 1837, Mr. Abbot united in marriage with Ann S. Wales, daughter of Joseph and Betsey Wales, who still survives.

JOHN PICKETT.

Mr. John Pickett was born on Central Street, in Beverly, November 9, 1807. His father, Thomas, was born in Beverly December 10, 1775, and died at St. Pierre in the West Indies, when master of the brig "Alice" of Beverly, January 4, 1817. He was son of Thomas of Marblehead, born 1729, and lost at sea 1759; and he a son of John, born in Marblehead about 1680, who died in May, 1763, a fisherman and shoreman. The father of John was Nicholas who was of Marblehead, and forty-three years old in 1692. The mother of the subject of this sketch, was Annis, daughter of Benjamin and Thankful (Larcom) Preston; said Benjamin, a son of Nehemiah and Annis (Bradford) Preston; said Nehemiah, a son of Nehemiah and Abigail (Allen) Preston; this Nehemiah, a son of William and Priscilla (——) Preston, whose early home was at Preston Place at Beverly Farms, where some of their descendants still live. One son of theirs was Randall Preston, who married a Stone, and was the ancestor of the Rantouls and other honored posterity. Thankful Larcom was daughter of David and Lucy (Downing) Larcom; he, a son of Cornelius and Abigail (Balch) Larcom; said Cor-

nelius, a son of Mordecai Larcom, who came from Ipswich with John West, when the latter bought his great farm extending from near the present Pride's crossing into Manchester; a portion of which was bought by said Cornelius, who built a home, where F. Gordon Dexter's summer place now is. Annis Bradford was daughter of John and Annis (Lovett) Bradford, whose home was by Essex Street, at the present site of the Hardie School-House. He was a son of William and Rachel (Raymond) Bradford, whose home was at North Beverly, where her parents, John and Rachel (Scruggs) Raymond, resided on the original grant to her father Thomas Scruggs, a leading citizen who had the courage of his theological opinions, and was among those disarmed, therefor, in 1637. This last named Annis was daughter of Simon and Agnes (Swetland) Lovett, whose homestead was on Cabot Street, extending northerly from Franklin Place. He was son of John and Bethiah (Rootes) Lovett, whose home was on Cabot Street, next northerly of Simon's, extending to about opposite Milton Street, and a part of the great estate of her father Josiah Rootes, who owned from the sea, on both sides of Cabot Street, nearly down to Bartlett Street. His wife, Susanna, was one of those accused of witchcraft and lodged in Boston gaol in 1692, where as her grandson, John Lovett testifies, he visited her. After some months her innocence was acknowledged by her discharge from prison. She was manifestly a person of independent character, who would not conform her opinions to those of some of her more illiberal neighbors, and hence came the false accusations against her; but her excellent and numerous posterity may well honor her memory. Her husband, John Lovett, was son of John and Mary (——) Lovett, whose early home was near where now is General Pierson's farm on Boyles Street, and where their son Joseph succeeded to that homestead, which continued to his posterity for many years. Of other ancestry named it is believed that Abigail Allen was of Manchester stock; Lucy Downing, of Ipswich; Abigail Balch, a daughter of Deacon Benjamin, who was son of John Balch, the ancient planter whose home was at the southerly corner of Cabot and Balch Streets. Agnes Swetland may have been of the Swetland family who owned the estate at the corner of Cabot and Hele Streets, now the home of Peter E. Clark.

After the death of his father, John Pickett lived with his uncle Richard Pickett, and before he was thirteen years old began his apprenticeship at sail making, in the sail-loft of the old Bartlett-Haskett store, where his grandfather, Thomas, first established the business, and where, at twenty-one years of age, John joined in partnership with his uncle, who became also largely interested in the coasting and fishing trade, and their partnership ultimately extended so as to include this, as well as the grocery and fuel trade. More or less of anthracite coal was consumed here experimentally, down to 1834, when the first



cargo brought to Beverly of about forty-eight tons was landed on the Whittredge wharf, and distributed to forty-three different persons, of whom there now survive, only Edward Burley, Augustus N. Clark, William Lord and Calvin Tuck. The price was eight dollars a ton on the wharf, and all of it had to be carted to the public hay-scales, by the old South Church, to be weighed. At the death of his uncle, Capt. Richard Pickett, in 1865, Mr. John Pickett succeeded to the large business of the firm, and while the coasting and fishing trade, in which he has been owner in twenty-eight different vessels, has been reduced to a pretty small factor, the coal trade has been steadily growing, and the facilities, therefor, have been largely increased. The Whittredge wharf and the old sail-loft wharf have been consolidated into one, and large buildings erected there for the storage of Cumberland coal, the demand for which, for steam, purposes constantly increases. In 1855, the present coal wharf, by the junction of Water, Front and Cabot Streets, was built, and enlarged to its present proportions in 1875.

During all these years, the confidence and respect of his business contemporaries and fellow-townsmen, has been manifested in his election as assessor in 1838 and '39, as Representative in 1842 and '44, selectman in 1845 and '46, and in the war period of 1861 and '62, director of Beverly Bank since 1851, and its president since 1872, and vice-president of the Beverly Savings Bank from its start in 1867, to the present time. He has always been interested in matters designed to promote the public welfare, serving as a fireman with Engine No. 2, when eighteen years old, and many years thereafter, and afterwards of the board of firewards. He was early a member of the Beverly Light Infantry, and in its ranks, in its escort service at the independence celebration in 1835, when Edward Everett delivered the oration in the Dane Street Church. He was a member of the Beverly Young Men's Temperance Society in 1835, and always on the side of good morals and good conduct. Early a member of the First Baptist Society, he took an active interest in its progress, especially in the enlargement of its meeting-house in 1830, and serving upon the committee who purchased the present site of the Catholic Church, and took down the old church, and rebuilding it somewhat enlarged in 1837, and still farther interested in its enlargement. After this, Mr. Pickett connected himself with the Dane Street Society, where he has continued his interest in good works. His memory of the waning days of the ancient commerce of Beverly, is quite interesting, and gives glimpses of what was once a great business. Among the historic events of his day, which he recalls with interest, are his presence when Robert Rantoul, Sr., welcomed Lafayette to Beverly on his journey through the town in 1824; and also being at Bunker Hill when Daniel Webster delivered the oration at the laying of the corner-stone of the monument.

December 13, 1832, he married Martha, daughter of John and Rachel Fornis, who died in 1834, leaving an infant daughter, Martha Preston, who survived her mother only about a month. Mr. Fornis was a builder, whose father was David Fornis, also from Marblehead, who built by himself and his sons a large number of the noted Fornis houses, with their three rooms to a floor, which have made so many of the pleasant homes of Beverly. In 1838 Mr. Pickett married Susan, daughter of Seth Clark, a leading citizen of Salisbury, whose record may be found in that portion of the county history relating to that town. After nearly half a century of happy married life, she passed away in 1882. Mr. Pickett, despite his four-score years, gives his constant attention to his many responsibilities, with the same courtesy, diligence and intelligence which has characterized all of his career.

SETH NORWOOD.

Seth Norwood was born in Rockport, Mass., June 23, 1815, a son of Major Francis Norwood, a deacon of the Congregational Church, and a man of good standing in the community, and of his wife Lucy (daughter of Caleb Pool), whose services in the cause of religion and morality entitle her to remembrance as a "Mother in Israel." She was a descendant of John Pool, a carpenter, who, before 1690, worked near Corning Street at Beverly Cove, with Richard Woodbury, who died that year in returning from the Canada military expedition, and whose widow, Sarah (Haskell) Woodbury married said Pool, and emigrated to Sandy Bay (now Rockport). Major Francis, husband of said Lucy, was descended in part from Edmund Grover, whose early home was in Beverly, near the junction of Cabot and Beckford Streets. When Seth Norwood was five years old, his father died, and two years later he went to live with the family of J. O. Drown, a shoe manufacturer at Rockport, learning of him a shoemaker's trade, and attending school at intervals. At the age of twenty, having mastered the trade, he opened a shoe-shop at Rockport on his own account and secured a moderate success. Here he continued till 1839, when he sold out his interest there, and removed to the wider field of Beverly, where he obtained employment as a journeyman shoemaker, and continued therein for about five years. About 1844, with the small capital thus far acquired, he began the manufacture of American Isinglass, at Warner's Mills, in Ipswich, which business he carried on there until 1855, when he sold it out to the Rockport Isinglass Company. In 1856 he bought out the factory and business of Friend & Lord, shoe manufacturers in Beverly, at the corner of Rantoul Street and Railroad Avenue, where the Norwood family now have their large factory; and here he continued the shoe business, taking in as partner, in 1857, Joshua W. Carrier, who retired from the firm after about two years connection therewith, and Mr. Norwood con-





Seth Moody



tinued the business in his own name until 1865, when his eldest son Francis became a partner, and the firm name became Seth Norwood & Co. This name is still retained by his sons, who have continued and much increased the business, the factory having been quadrupled in size to supply the necessary room for their trade. A portion of the factory was burned in 1873, but soon restored and enlarged.

Soon after he came to Beverly, Mr. Norwood became interested in real estate, and many marked improvements grew out of his operations therein. He became a prominent citizen of Beverly; was on the board of selectmen for three years when the water-works were built and other important public improvements were made. He was also a director in Beverly National Bank, a trustee of Beverly Savings Bank, a leading member of the Dane Street Congregational Society, and interested in other good works. Having just about completed sixty years of an honored and useful life, he died of consumption, June 20, 1875, at his home on Cabot Street in Beverly, the former historic homestead of Hon. George Cabot; a mansion hallowed by the belief that George Washington had there sought and obtained rest and refreshment from his trusted friend, Mr. Cabot.

CHAPTER XLIX.

METHUEN.

BY JOSEPH S. HOWE.

THE town of Methuen is situated in the westerly part of Essex County, bordering on New Hampshire, and contains within its limits about twenty-two square miles.

Before the incorporation of the City of Lawrence, it was a section of land on the north bank of the Merrimack River, about nine miles long and three miles wide, following the curves of the river. The north part of the City of Lawrence was taken out of Methuen, on the side next the river, near the middle of the town, thus leaving the two ends three miles wide, and the middle of the town little more than a mile at its narrowest part.

The towns surrounding Methuen are the City of Lawrence and the town of Andover on the South, Dracut and Salem, N. H., on the West, Salem, N. H., and Haverhill, on the North and Haverhill and Bradford on the East. The Spicket River, a narrow and crooked stream, flows from Island Pond, in Derry, N. H., through Methuen, into Lawrence, and empties into the Merrimack in the lower part of the City. The village of Methuen is situated upon both sides of the Spicket, between Lawrence and the New Hampshire line, thus dividing the farming portions

of the town into two not unequal sections. The surface of the town is uneven, somewhat hilly and picturesque, though not ledgy and abrupt. The soil in the main is strong, and good for ordinary agriculture, but like most New England land, more or less rocky, requiring much labor to insure agricultural success, but capable of producing excellent crops under judicious management.

There is a strip of intervale land of varying width on the bank of the Merrimack, free from stone, easy to cultivate and excellent for farming purposes. Leaving this level intervale, the land rises into ridges and hills, much of it covered with a growth of wood. There are extensive peat meadows in both sections of the town, which not only contain large quantities of alleged fuel, but when drained and cultivated, prove to be the most valuable lands for the production of many crops.

The hill formerly known as "Bare Hill," near the house of Joel Foster, is the highest elevation in the east part of the town, and affords a magnificent view of the country in every direction for miles around. As many as fifteen towns and cities may be seen from its summit. It overlooks Lawrence on the South, with the two Andovers beyond, and the spires of Haverhill and Bradford may be seen on the East. Far off to the North can be seen the Nottingham Hills, and in the West the Uncanoonucks, the Peterboro' Hills, Monadnock and Wachusett, "Like giant emeralds in the Western sky." The view, besides being extensive, is one of the most beautiful to be found. In the west part of the town, the highest land is the hill on which is the residence of Stephen W. Williams, Esq.

The view from its top is nearly as extensive, and quite as beautiful, as that from Bare Hill, and it is a favorite resort for lovers of fine scenery.

The ponds in Methuen are few in number.

Harris Pond, in the extreme west part of the town, contains about fifty acres, and drains through "London Meadow" into Spicket River. Mystic Pond, a little west of Methuen village, drains into Spicket River. Worlds End Pond, a mile or more north of Methuen village, lies mostly in Salem, N. H., although a very small part of it is within the limits of Methuen, and drains into the Spicket.

There is also a small pond in Strong Water Meadow, known as "Strong Water Pond," which is undoubtedly a small remnant of what was once a large body of water. Bloody Brook runs from Strong Water Meadow southerly into Lawrence, and empties into the Spicket. Hawkes Brook is in the extreme northerly part of the town, rising near Ayers village, in Haverhill, and emptying into the Merrimack, where Methuen and Haverhill join. Bartlett Brook, in the west part of Methuen, runs from Mud Pond in Dracut, into Methuen, and empties into the Merrimack.

There are no stone quarries or ledges that are

worked in the town. A bed of secondary rock for the most part underlies the town a short distance below the surface, and crops out in a few places, particularly in the neighborhood of the village, but the quality of the stone is not such as to make it specially valuable for building purposes. The rocks found in the soil, and on the surface of the land, are mainly boulders, many of them primary rock, and nearly all of a different kind of stone from the underlying ledge, indicating that the mass of gravel and stones, resting upon the ledge, has been brought there from a distance by glacial action.

There are in Methuen some very marked examples of glacial action in the ridges known to geologists as "Kames," and to the unscientific as "Hogbacks." One of these ridges extends from Tower Hill, in Lawrence, through the west part of Methuen village into New Hampshire, and is a continuation of the series of "Kames" running through Andover and Reading, and known in Andover as "Indian Ridge." There is also another line of "Kames," extending from the easterly part of the City of Lawrence through "Germantown" northward. In the early times these ridges were thought by many to be the remains of ancient fortifications, but the investigations of geologists have determined, beyond question, that they were deposits formed in the great ice age, from accumulations of gravel in the melting ice. Methuen contains few natural objects of special interest, Spicket Falls being perhaps the most prominent. The Nevins Memorial, and grounds of Henry C. Nevins, near by, and the extensive grounds of Chas. H. Tenney, are beautifully laid out and kept, contain many rare and costly trees and shrubs, and are all places which would attract attention anywhere.

It is not now known who the first white man was who settled within the limits of what is now Methuen, nor exactly when or where he settled. We have no historic record of what occurred here previous to that time. Undoubtedly the land was inhabited for centuries by the red men, who were as familiar with all its natural aspects, and as strongly attached to their favorite haunts, as the native children of the town are now.

When the country first became known to the white race, the hills and uplands were mainly covered by a heavy growth of timber. The meadows were mostly cleared and covered with a thick, heavy growth of grass, which the Indians were accustomed to burn in the autumn. These meadows were favorite haunts of deer, who came there to feed on the young grass in the spring, and could easily be killed by the Indians from their hiding-places on the wooded bushy edges. It is said that some of the hills were bare, and others had only a growth of small wood. This would naturally result from the fires set by the Indians in dry weather, which might spread from the meadows to the upland, and kill the standing wood and timber. It would also appear that the Indians cultivated corn

to some extent, and for that purpose selected the lands free from stones, easily worked, on the river intervals or sandy plains. We can easily imagine the appearance of this town as the earliest settlers saw it:

The meadows on Hawke's Brook, in the east part of the town, Bare meadow, Strong-water meadow, Mystic meadows, London meadows, and the meadows on the banks of the Spicket, mostly bare, and producing a heavy crop of grass; the intervalle land on the Merrimack, more or less cleared, and a few spots of plain land here and there, bare of trees and grass, and bearing marks of the rude Indian agriculture, the rest of the lands covered with wood and timber. The only paths traversing this wilderness were Indian trails, of whose location we have now no knowledge, though it is not unlikely that some of our oldest roads were developed from an Indian path.

The earliest settlers found very few Indians living in this vicinity. Some years before the first settlement of this country, a violent war broke out among the Indians living in what is now New England, which resulted in the destruction of a large number. This war was followed by a pestilence which carried off many more, and was especially fatal in the eastern part of New England. This destruction of the Indians was particularly favorable to the occupation of the country by the white settlers. The native inhabitants of the valley of the Merrimack, so far as we know, were the Pennacooks or Pawtucket Indians. These were subdivided into smaller tribes or families. The Agawams had their home on the coast from the Merrimack to Cape Ann; the Wamesits, at the junction of the Concord and Merrimack Rivers, where Lowell now stands; the Pawtuckets, at the mouth of Little River in Haverhill.

No historic evidence appears that any Indian tribe had a permanent home in Methuen, but it is known that Bodwell's Falls (at the Lawrence dam), the region around the mouth of Bartlett's Brook, and the shores of the Spicket, as far as Spicket Falls, were favorite resorts of the Indians, especially during the fishing season. There are also strong indications that there were once permanent Indian settlements near Spicket Falls and near the mouth of London Brook. The stone fire-places or hearths of their wigwams were found years ago, before the ground was disturbed, on the hillside where the east part of Methuen village is now built. Arrow-points, spear-heads and other Indian relics were found while digging the cellars of Woodbury's Block, the hotel stable and in other places. A large stone pot was discovered while excavating for the foundation of Tenney's hat-shop, and an Indian grave was found in the fall of 1886, while digging on Union Street, which contained eight very fine spear-heads, besides arrow-heads and pottery, indicating that the occupant of the grave was a person of distinction. The early records of Haverhill speak of an old wigwam near the "foot of far west meadow,"

which was probably what is now known as "London Meadow." The Indian fire-places can be found there now, where the land has not been cultivated and the stones disturbed. These old hearths and graves would seem to show that the spots where they are found were at some time the sites of permanent Indian villages, and not merely a transient place of abode for a few weeks while fishing.

The rivers in those early times swarmed with alewives, shad, salmon, bass and sturgeon. The salmon was the principal fish used as food, and the shad and alewives were used by the Indians to manure their corn. These fish were caught by them around the falls and rapids in the rivers. It would be natural, therefore, for them to settle about such a spot as Spicket Falls, which must have afforded an excellent fishing-place, while the land south and east of the falls was easy for them to cultivate for corn. The neighborhood of London Brook and Policy Brook—up which the alewives and suckers must have run in great numbers—would also have been an excellent place for an Indian village, particularly as there was plenty of land easy to work near by.

Probably the white man first set foot in Methuen about two hundred and fifty years ago. The settlers at Ipswich and other towns along the coast explored the country before its settlement to find the most desirable places to locate. In 1640 about a dozen colonists from Newbury, headed by Mr. Nathaniel Ward, settled at Haverhill, where the city proper now stands. Two years later they purchased from the Indians a tract of land embracing the greater part of what is now Methuen. The original deed is now in possession of the city of Haverhill, and reads as follows:

"KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS, that we, Passaquio and Sagga-hew, with ye consent of Passaquio's away, have sold unto ye inhabitants of Pentucket all ye lands we have in Pentucket; that is eight miles in length from ye Little River in Pentucket Westward; six miles in length from ye afforesaid River northward; and six miles in length from ye afforesaid River Eastward, with ye Island and ye river that ye Island stand in as far in length as ye land lyes by as formerly expressed; that is fourteen miles in length;

"And we have sold Passaquio and Sagga Hew with ye consent of Passaquio's away, have sold unto ye said inhabitants all ye right that we or any of us have in ye said ground and Island and River,

"And we warrant it against all or any other Indians whatsoever unto ye said Inhabitants of Pentucket, and to their heirs and assigns forever. Dated ye fifteenth day of november Ann Dom 1642.

"Witness our hands and seals to this largynne of sale ye day and year above written in ye presence of us we ye said Passaquio & Sagga Hew have received of ye said Inhabitants, for & in consideration of ye same three pounds & ten shillings.

"JOHN WARD,

"ROBERT CHAMBERS,

"THOMAS COHEN,

"HUGH SHIRREATT,

"WILLIAM WHITE,

ye sign of (1)

"THOMAS DAVIS.

ye marke of
Passaquio (a bow and arrow)

Passaquio. [SEAL]

ye marke of
Sagga Hew (a bow and arrow)

Sagga Hew. [SEAL]"

It is not easy to determine exactly what the Indians intended to convey by this deed, nor does it appear to have been clear to the early settlers. No regular survey was made until 1666, when a committee

was appointed by the General Court to "run the bounds of the Town of Haverhill." They began at the meeting-house which was situated about half a mile east of Little River, near the cemeteries in the eastern part of the present city of Haverhill, and ran due west eight miles, and "reared a heap of stones." Then they ran from that heap of stones due south until they reached the Merrimac River, and due north from the heap of stones until they struck the northern line of the town. The shape of Haverhill, as finally determined, was triangular. Starting from Holt's Rock (Rocks Village), the line ran due northwest until it met the north and south line from Merrimac River, as mentioned above. There is an old plan in the County Records, made previously to 1700, and probably as early as 1675, from which it appears that the Haverhill line started from the little island in the Merrimac, situated nearly opposite the junction of Lowell and North Lowell Streets. From thence the line ran due north, very near the house of A. W. Pinney, across Policy Pond, and struck the Haverhill north line, northwest of Island Pond, including most, if not all, of that fine sheet of water within the limits of Haverhill. Thus it appears that the title to all that portion of Methuen east of the above-described line, came directly from the aboriginal owners.

It is noticeable that the Indian deed conveyed the river and the islands in it, and thus that Haverhill and Methuen are bounded by the opposite shore of the Merrimac, instead of the centre or channel. It will also be noticed that this land was conveyed to "ye inhabitants of Pentucket," and consequently was owned by the inhabitants of the town or colony in common. Here was an example of the common ownership of land by a community, the practical working of which is interesting to follow now, when so many reformers (?) are holding forth the idea that such ownership of the land would be the chief remedy for the evils of modern civilization. But the early settlers were evidently not possessed with the idea that this would be good for them, and did not long cultivate the land in this way, but took steps to let every man have his own land in severalty. The records of the town of Haverhill show that no one was admitted to the rights and privileges of the colony unless first voted in by the town.

In 1643 it was voted that "there shall bee three hundred acres laid out for house lotts and no more; and that he that was worth two hundred pounds should have twenty acres to his house lott, and none to exceed that number; and so every one under that sum, to have acres proportionable to his house lott, together with meadow, and common and planting ground, proportionably."

The site of these "house lotts" was where the city proper of Haverhill now stands, a short distance east from Little River. Here all the colonists had their houses, from which, as a centre, they sought out the



meadows and planting grounds in the more distant part of the town. The meadow-lands seem to have been the most highly valued, and sought after on account of the grass, which was the principal subsistence for their cattle. They cut and stacked the hay in the summer, and in the winter drew it home on sleds. The planting grounds were probably patches of upland which had been cultivated by the Indians, and were free from trees. An early writer says of Haverhill: "the people are wholly bent to improve their labor in tilling the earth and keeping of cattle whose yearly increase encourages them to spend their days in those remote parts. The constant penetrating further into this Wilderness hath caused the wild and uncouth woods to be filled with frequented ways, and the large rivers to be overlaid with Bridges passable both for horse and foot; this Town is of large extent, supposed to be ten miles in length, there being an overweening desire in most men after Meadow-land, which hath caused many towns to grasp more into their hands than they could afterward possibly hold."

Lot layers were chosen by the town to divide the meadows and planting-grounds among the inhabitants, from time to time, as these lands became accessible and in a condition to cultivate. The records of these divisions show that the lots set off at first were small, often not more than two or three acres in a lot, and the meadow-land seems to have been taken up first. So it happened that a man would own lots in the eastern part of Haverhill, and on Spicket River and might be obliged to travel several miles to his planting-ground in another direction. The distribution of land went on from year to year, and the natural result was that land-owners desiring to have their lands as much as possible in one body, traded with each other until they became possessed of a compact body of land sufficient for a farm. The next step was to build and settle on the farm for greater economy and convenience in cultivation of the land, and so the settlers gradually scattered from the first compact settlements out over the town. The descriptions of the lots as set off by the lot layers are recorded in the Haverhill records, but it is very difficult to exactly locate them now, because the bounds were usually marked trees, stumps or other perishable monuments.

These old descriptions show, however, that some of our local names are of very ancient date. In 1658 five acres of meadow were laid off in "Strongwater," near a little pond. In 1666 a parcel of meadow was laid out to Matthias Button, on the south side of "Spicket Hill." In 1659 there was a division of the land west of the Spicket River, with a provision that "if more than two acres meadow be found on any one lot, it shall remain to the town." In the same year we find a record of the laying off three acres of land in "Mistake Meadow" in the western part of Haverhill, whence we may fairly conclude that our

present name "Mystic," was once "Mistake." In 1678 "eleven score acres of upland" were laid off to James Davis, Sr., bounded on the west by Spicket River, Spicket Falls being the southwest bound. In 1683 we find that a lot adjoining, on the southerly side, running from Spicket Falls to "Bloody Brook" on the east was taken up by James Davis, Jr.

These two lots included the land now occupied by the east part of Methuen village. The family of Mr. David Nevins have in their possession a grant from the "proprietors" of the Islands in the Spicket above the falls, to Asa and Robert Swan, for two pounds ten shillings, and bearing the date of 1731. The distribution of the common lands was continued from time to time, until finally, after much contention between the town, and the original settlers and their heirs, the "proprietors" or owners of the common land organized separately from the town, and disposed of the remaining land as they saw fit. Thus it appears that the titles to the land in Methuen, east of the old Haverhill line, have all come from the Indians, Passaquot and Sagadahew, through the "proprietors." The strip of land in Methuen, perhaps a mile and a half in width, between Haverhill line and "Drawcut" or Draught line, seems to have been granted by the General Court to individuals. Major Denison, who had a grant of six hundred acres from the General Court in 1660, owned more than a thousand acres on the river above the Haverhill line, including what is now known as the Bartlett farm, and lands south and west. West of that was Colonel Higginson's farm of over three hundred acres. A little north of these was Marshall Nicholson's tract of three hundred acres. Printer Green had three hundred acres lying on each side of the brook, which runs from "White's Pond," then called "North Pond."

As we have already stated, we can find no record showing when the first settlement was made within the present limits of Methuen, or who made it.

It is certain that the east and south parts of the town near the river, were first occupied, doubtless because they were nearer the villages of Haverhill and Andover. It is said that when repairing the old "Bodwell House," now in Lawrence, some years ago, a brick was found bearing the date 1660, which had been marked upon it before the brick was burnt. This would seem to indicate that a house was built in the neighborhood near that date. It seems doubtful whether there were many settlers in Methuen until near the time it was set off from Haverhill. The Indian troubles which extended over many years previous to 1700, must have seriously checked, if they did not entirely prevent, the settlement on farms. Andover and Haverhill were both made frontier towns by act of General Court, and both towns suffered severely during the Indian War. But we have never seen a record of an Indian attack on settlers living upon territory which afterwards became Methuen. There were many attacks on the scattered settlers in West

Haverhill and in Andover, and if there had been many inhabitants in Methuen, it is hardly probable that the Indians would have passed them by. The incursions of the Indians seem to have come sometimes from the North, by way of Dover and Saco, and sometimes from the West, down the Merrimack valley, as was the case when Hannah Duston was taken captive, and sometimes the depredations were committed by small parties of Indians who had lived among the whites and were acquainted with their victims. In February, 1698, Jonathan Haynes and Samuel Ladd, with their sons, had been to London Meadow from their homes in West Haverhill for hay, each with a team consisting of a pair of oxen and a horse. The path lay along between World's End Pond and what is now Howe Street. When returning home, just northeast of the pond, they were suddenly attacked by a party of Indians who had concealed themselves in the bushes on each side of the path. These Indians, fourteen in number, were returning from Andover, where they had killed and captured several persons. They killed Haynes and Ladd with their hatchets, took one of the boys prisoner and kept him for some years; the other boy cut one of the horses loose, jumped on his back and got away. The Indians then killed the oxen, took out the tongues and rest pieces and went on their way. This is the only authentic instance we can find of an Indian outrage happening on Methuen soil.

In 1712 nine persons living in that part of Haverhill which is now Methuen, petitioned the town to abate their rates for the support of the ministry and the schools, "on account of the great distance they lived from the town, and the difficulty they met with in coming," and the town voted to abate one-half the ministry rates.

The names of these persons were Henry Bodwell, John Guttererson, Thomas Austin, Joshua Stephens, Robert Swan, John Cross, William Cross, Robert Swan, Jr., Joshua Swan.

In July, 1713, a petition was presented the Town of Haverhill by Stephen Barker, Henry Bodwell and others "to grant or set them off a certain tract of land lying in the township of Haverhill, that so they might be a township or parish," but this request was denied.

At the next March meeting the following petition was presented: "Whereas there is a certain tract of land in the west end of Haverhill containing fifty or sixty acres, lying on the south and southwest of a meadow commonly called bare meadow, which land, together with a piece of land lying on a hill called meeting-house hill, in times passed reserved by our forefathers for the use of the ministry, might in hard times make a convenient parsonage; if by the blessing of God, the gospel might so flourish amongst us, and we grow so populous as to be able to carry on the gospel ministry amongst us. We therefore humbly pray that you would take into consideration the circum-

stances we are in, and the difficulty we may hereafter meet with in procuring a privilege for the ministry; and that you would grant and settle and record the above said lands in your Town book, for the above said use, and you will gratify your humble petitioners and oblige us and our posterity to serve you hereafter in what we may." This petition was signed by Joshua Swan and twenty-six others, "was granted according to the proposals therein made," and in July following a committee was chosen to lay out the land.

It seems, from this petition, that the proprietors of the common land had some time previously "reserved for the use of the ministry" two tracts of land in what was afterwards Methuen, but that this land had not been formally laid out. In 1724 Lieutenant Stephen Barker and other inhabitants of the western part of Haverhill, petitioned the General Court for a new town, to be formed by setting off that part of Haverhill above Hawke's Meadow Brook.

The town of Haverhill voted to oppose the petition, and chose Captain John White agent for that purpose. Opposition, however, was unavailing, and the act was passed December 8, 1725, and was as follows:

"AN Act for Dividing the Town of Haverhill and erecting a new Town thereand in parts adjacent, by the name of Methuen. Whereas the West part of the Town of Haverhill within the County of Essex, and parts adjacent not included within any Township is Competently filled with Inhabitants, who labor under great Difficulties by their remoteness from the place of Publick Worship, &c., and they having made their application to this Court that they may be set off a distinct and separate Town and be vested with all the Powers and Privileges of a Town. Be it therefore enacted by the Lieutenant Governor, Council and Representatives in General Court assembled and by the authority of the same. That the West part of the said Town of Haverhill with the land adjoining, be and hereby are set off and constituted a separate Township by the name of Methuen, the bounds of the said Township to be as follows, viz:—Beginning at the mouth of Hawke's Meadow Brook, so called, in Merrimack River, and from thence to run half a point to the northward of the northwest to an heap of stones, or till it intersect Haverhill line; from thence upon a straight course to the head of Dunstable line, and so upon Draught line about four miles to a pine southeast, from thence six miles or thereabouts upon Draught line, South to Merrimack River, and from thence to run down said river ten mile and forty pole till it come to the first mentioned bounds. And that the inhabitants of the said lands as before described and bounded, be and hereby are invested with the Powers, Privileges and Immunities that the Inhabitants of any of the towns of this Province by law are or ought to be vested with.

"Provided, That the Inhabitants of the said Town of Methuen, do within the space of Three Years from the Publication of this Act, erect and finish a suitable house for the Publick Worship of God, and procure and settle a Learned, Orthodox minister of good conversation and make provision for his comfortable and honorable support, and that they set apart a lot of Two Hundred acres of land in some convenient Place in the said Town, for the use of the ministry, and a lot of fifty acres for the use of a School. And that thereupon they be discharged from any further payments for the maintenance of the ministry in Haverhill. And be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, That the Inhabitants of the said Town of Methuen, be and hereby are empowered to assess all the lands of Non Residents lying within the said town, Two pence per acre towards the building of the Meeting House, and settling of a minister there. Provided, nevertheless that there be and hereby is made a Reservation or Saving of the Right and property of the Province Lands (if any there be) within the bounds aforesaid, to this Province."

So far as we can learn, no other town in the country bears the name of "*Methuen*." How this name originated has been a matter of considerable speculation.



Some have thought that it took its name from a town in Scotland called "Methven," and others have supposed that this town was named in honor of Lord Methven of Scotland. But Methuen was not settled by Scotch, nor does there appear any reason why the town should have received its name from a Scotch town or nobleman. A. C. Goodell, Esq., of Salem, who is engaged in preparing the Provincial Laws for publication, suggests a theory which seems most likely to be the true one. It was a common thing in those days, when a new town was incorporated, for the Governor to give it a name. The act of incorporation was passed by the Legislature, engrossed on parchment and sent to the Governor for his signature, with a space for the name of the new town in blank. When he signed the act, he gave the town its name and inserted it in the proper place. The original act of incorporation of the Town of Methuen, in the office of the Secretary of State, clearly shows that the name was inserted by a hand different from the one that engrossed the bill. The act is written upon the parchment in a large, full hand, while the name "Methuen" is written in a small, running hand, and with ink of a different color, but similar to that used by Governor Dummer, in writing his signature. Had the name been suggested by the petitioners for the act of incorporation, it would have been likely to be inserted in the bill and so copied by the engrossing clerk. But a careful examination of the writing leaves little doubt that Governor Dummer wrote the name with his own hand, when he attached his signature. Of course it is now impossible to ascertain with certainty the reason which suggested the name to him. But at that time there was one Lord Paul Methuen, who was Privy Councillor to the King, and who was for some years prominent in the English Government. It is very likely that Governor Dummer was a personal or political friend and admirer of this nobleman, and so named the town in his honor.

The town of Methuen, as originally set off, must have included more than double the territory now within its limits. Starting from the mouth of Hawke's Meadow Brook, the line ran where it now does, through Ayers Village, and continued on until it met the west line of Haverhill, which must have been somewhere southwest of North Salem Village; thence it ran straight to the "head of Dunstable line," which was in Pelham, "in sight of Beaver Brook," and a little to the west of it; thence it ran southeast about four miles to Draught line, at a point about six miles from Merrimack River. The easterly line of Draught has not been materially changed, and therefore the present line, prolonged to six miles, would indicate the old corner of that town. The old plan in the County Records, already referred to, shows that this corner was west of Policy Pond, and must have been in the vicinity of "Spear Hill," almost between the most southern parts of Policy and Cobbett's

Ponds. From this, it would seem that Methuen, as originally incorporated, included nearly all of Salem, Windham village and perhaps two-thirds of that town, and a little of Pelham. Cobbett's Pond and Policy Pond were both in Methuen. The old plan referred to gives the name of Policy Pond as "Poliss' Pond," which fact may possibly furnish a clue to the origin of the name "Policy." The lands in the westerly part of Methuen were evidently disputed territory.

Londonderry, settled by the "Scotch-Irish," was incorporated, in 1722, by the General Court of New Hampshire, and the act incorporating that town included quite a slice of land set off to Methuen by the Massachusetts General Court. It is probable, however, that the territory claimed under both acts was not much settled upon, or considered of much value, until after the line between Massachusetts and New Hampshire was established in 1740.

To organize the new town, it was ordered by the Court "that Mr. Stephen Barker, a principal inhabitant of the Town of Methuen, be and hereby is empowered and directed to notify and summons the inhabitants of the said town, duly qualified for voters, to assemble and meet sometime in the month of March next, to choose town officers according to law, to stand for the year." In compliance with this order, a meeting was appointed for the 9th of March, 1726.

The following is a copy of the record of the first town meeting held in Methuen:

"At our first annual meeting in the town of methuen, march ye 9th 1726, Lieutenant Stephen Barker was leaguly chosen moderator for ye meeting.

"At the same meeting william whittier was chosen town clerk & sworn for ye year insewing.

"At the same meeting selectmen were leaguly chosen for ye yer.

1 JOHN BAILEY,	} Selectmen sworn to the faithful discharg of the ofies of assessers august ye second 1726 before me William Whittier town clerk.
2 EBENEZER BARKER	
3 ASH SWAN	
4 DANIEL BODWEL,	
5 THOMAS WHITTIER.	

"At ye same meeting Richard Swan is leaguly chosen constable for the year insewing.

"Voted that the constable or collector shall be paid one shilling for each twenty shillings of money that he shall collect or gather of the Taxes which shall be laid upon the nomazelande or people which belong to other towns. March ye 9th 1726, the town voted that Thomas silver should be expected to serve constable or collector instead of Richard swan for ye year insewing and ye same day thomas silver was sworn to the faithfull discharge of the office of a constable by the selectmen of Methuen. Robert swan is leaguly chosen town treasurer at the same meeting march ye 9th for ye year insewing. town treasurer sworn.

Swerers of high ways.	1 ROBERT SWAN,	} of highwaye swerers all sworn.
	2 EPHRAIM CLARK,	
	3 BENJAMIN STEPHENS,	
	2 THOMAS MASSER,	

fence viewers	JOHN CROSS,	} 2 Both sworn.
	SAMUEL STEPHENS,	

Tithen men	1 JAMES HOW,	} Both tithen sworn.
	2 WILLIAM GUTTERSON,	

field drivers	1 JOHN HASTINGS,
	2 ZEBADIAH AUSTING.



att the same meeting March ye 9 1725, 6. } SAMUEL SMITH
hog riefs
hog riefs was leaguely chosen } THOMAS AUSTING
Both sworn.

"Att ye same meeting march ye 9. voted yt hogs should go att large according to law.

"Att a town meeting march ye 9 1725, 6.

"Voted that the select men should have power to a gree with an athadoxt minister to serve in the work of the ministry for ye year in, sewing and not to exceed five and forty pounds and find the minister his diet.

The records of the town-meetings held since that time appear to be complete, and the early records quite as full as such records usually are. The first business done by the new Board of Selectmen was to lay out a road "three rods wide, beginning at a white oak tree marked, near Ephraim Clark's land; from thence across Thomas Eaton's, and by the west side of Samuel Clark's cellar; thence by the west side of a white oak tree marked with H, by Hawks' meadow, and so along said meadow, as near as is convenient, to the lower end, crossing the brook between two maple trees marked; from thence, as the trees are marked, to a white oak by Haverhill path, running from the east side of the tree in the path until we come to a stake by James How's well, and thence to a white oak marked with H, the way being to the east." This was undoubtedly the road north of the Taylor farm, on Howe Street, and the above description is a good example of the recorded descriptions of the ancient ways. The records of the town of Haverhill show that previous to this time a large number of town-ways had been laid out in the west part of the town, probably for convenience in reaching the meadows and woodland. At this distance of time it is almost impossible to trace them unless they happen to touch some well-known point. They generally commence at a marked tree by some path, thence to some other tree, thence to a stump marked, and finally come out at another path, and are almost invariably two rods wide.

The roads of those days were probably little better than an ordinary cart-path in the woods. Occasionally we find a record of money paid to the owners of land over which a public way passed, but no money appears to have been paid by the town for building.

In fact, scarcely more than a path was necessary, for there were no vehicles but ox-carts and sleds. People traveled on horseback, and went to market with their goods in saddle-bags. Persons are now living in the town who say they can remember when there were no wagons of any kind, or pleasure carriages, except a few chaises, which were introduced about the beginning of the century.

On the 14th of June, 1726, the second town-meeting was called at the house of Asie Swan, "to prefix a place whereon to build a meeting-house" and make other necessary arrangements for religious service. At this meeting a bitter controversy began about the location of the meeting-house. Votes being called for, the following persons voted for "a place between

James Davis' and Samuel Smith's house," supposed to be on what is now known as "Powder-House Hill."

John Hastings.
Samuel Clark.
John Messer.
Daniel Lancaster.
Thomas Messer.
Robert Cogill.
Samuel Smith.
John Cross.
William Cross.
John Bailey.
Richard Messer.
Thomas Silver.
Nathaniel Messer.
Thomas Eaton.

Thomas Whittier.
Samuel Currier.
Robert Swan.
Ephraim Clark.
James Emery.
Joseph Pudney.
John Rue.
Asie Swan.
James How.
Abraham Masters.
James Wilson.
Abiel Messer.
Daniel Peaslee.
Richard Swan.

The following persons entered their dissent against the meeting-house being carried from the meeting-house land or hill,—

Stephen Barker.
Henry Bodwell.
John Gutterson.
Joseph Morse.
Henry Bodwell, Jr.
Daniel Bodwell.
Samuel Huse.
James Bodwell.
John Harris.
John Gutterson.
William Gutterson.

Benjamin Stevens.
James Barker.
Samuel Stevens.
Zebediah Austin.
Joseph Gutterson.
Zebediah Barker.
Thomas Austin.
Thomas Richardson.
Abel Merrill.
Ebeneszer Barker.
Joshua Swan.

It is likely that these two lists comprise the names of about all the persons entitled to vote then living in Methuen. We infer also that this dispute was one concerning convenience of access to the meeting-house, and that the voters cast their ballots for the location that was nearest or would best accommodate them.

On the 26th of August another meeting was called to perfect the arrangements for building the new meeting-house. It was voted that the meeting-house should be built forty feet long, thirty-five feet in width and twenty feet stud.

It was also voted to choose a committee to procure land to set the meeting house on, to provide timber, and hire a carpenter and other workmen, and provide for the raising, "all upon the town's cost and charge." The meeting then adjourned to meet September 6th. At this meeting the dissenters above named presented the following quaint and vigorous protest,—

"We, the subscribers, dissent against the proceedings pursuant to sundry of the particulars as mentioned in the warrant for this meeting, first, for that in the warrant, the day being prefixed, but the year is not. 2. For the bigness of the meeting-house according to the warrant, to this we dissent, for the bigness cannot be known until a committee be chosen and bound out the land, for the particulars being placed in the warrant agreeably to the old saying 'the cart before the horse,' therefore irregular. 3. To choose a committee to procure so much land as they shall think convenient for to set the meeting-house on, to this we dissent, for that there is no land to be purchased. Our fathers in time past, whilst we belonged to Haverhill, voted and granted a piece of land for a parsonage for the west end of said town, which since by an act of Incorporation of the General Court, is constituted by the name of Methuen a township; and the aforesaid parsonage being most suitable and convenient for the inhabitants to build the meeting-house on, although in a former meeting of this town, as may be seen by the town



book, and a number of freeholders and other inhabitants, did, by a pretended vote, contrary to law, or rather by a petition, carry the meeting-house to another place, which we then gave our dissent against, and do now dissent against the proceedings consequent upon said vote or petition. For a Committee to have the disposal of our estates after the manner as is set forth in the warrant to purchase any land is unreasonable, for that by the warrant they are invested with a power too great. Our estates ought not to float their will and doom. The great Charter of England lately confirmed to us by our sovereign lord, king George, wherein is contained liberty, right and property, reference thereto being had, gives us the disposal and ordering of our estates, all debts and demands to our sovereign lord the king being paid first. What committee then shall assess our lands by tax to pay for the purchase of land without our free consent? 4. That the said committee may procure one acre of land in some convenient place for a burying-place,—to this we dissent. Our right and property that we have in voting and procuring such a place, we deny the giving of it into the hands of a committee in the manner as is expressed in the warrant. For that it is every man's right and property that belongs to the town to have his vote in the choice of a committee, or rather to vote the place where, and not to have them appointed by the Selectmen. 5. The said committee are to provide timber and to draw it to the place, or hire it drawn; we dissent; for that there is no need of making a land tax for such a thing, when every man by consent may draw his own proportion of timber, cutting, &c. 6. To see whether the town will agree that every man in this town shall have an equal proportion of the common land within this town, according to what rates he shall pay in the town; we dissent first, for it is unreasonable that an hired servant, who is rated only for his head, and neither freehold, shall have an equal interest in our right and property; and, further, the Province law provides that all persons that reside in any town, within the space of twenty days, if they trade, shall be rated. By this you will give our right and land to strangers. To the particulars said above, and for the reasons annexed, we offer our dissent as freeborn subjects to the Crown of Great Britain having an interest in the above-mentioned laws and liberties by and from which we expect to be protected."

It seems, however, that this protest failed to convince the obstinate majority of their injustice, but work on the meeting-house went on, and the building was raised on Powder House Hill. As a last resort, the minority then appealed to the "Great and General Court," in a petition that the town be ordered to set the meeting-house on Meeting-House Hill. It seems that a committee of the Legislature was then commissioned to visit Methuen to examine the important question. The only record we find of their visit is, that Richard Swan was afterwards allowed by the town one pound, ten shillings for the entertainment of the visiting statesmen. But the result of it all was, that the town was ordered by the General Court to set the meeting-house on Meeting-House Hill, and accordingly, in 1727 the town voted to remove the frame to that spot, and the minority triumphed. We find from the town records that nine town-meetings were held during the first year, and that the principal business was locating the meeting-house, and perfecting the necessary arrangements for religious service. At that time, and for many years after, the minister and meeting-house were supported by a town tax, as schools and highways are now. The town records show that the Sunday services, as well as the town-meetings were held at the house of Asie Swan until the meeting-house was ready for occupancy. Asie Swan seems to have been one of the men prominent in town affairs, and his house is said to have been situated a little east of Prospect Hill. The meeting-house frame was moved in the fall of 1727, and raised on "Meeting-House Hill" on the

common, a little south of the "Frye place," where it stood for nearly seventy years. It was finished in the spring of 1728, and it appears from the town records that a town-meeting was held in the new meeting-house on Wednesday, August 28, 1728, among other purposes, "To see if the Town will order that the public worship of God should be exercised in said meeting-house," and it was voted "that the meeting for public worship should be removed from the house of Asie Swan, and held at the meeting-house next Sabbath." It strikes one now as a little strange that a community so devout should have begun to use their house of worship without any dedicatory exercises.

The next business of the town was to get a minister.

To that end a town-meeting was called December 16, 1728, of which the first business was to "appoint a day of fasting and prayer to spread our united supplication before the Lord, for his gracious assistance and conduct in our endeavors to settle a minister amongst us, and to act such things as may be necessary in order thereunto," and Wednesday, January 2d, was appointed for that purpose. A committee was also appointed to agree with the neighboring ministers concerning keeping this fast. The records do not tell us how the fast was kept, but Robert Swan was paid twelve shillings for providing for the ministers on the day set apart for fasting and prayer.

On the third of March, 1729, it was voted "That a committee be chosen to discourse with Mr. Christopher Sargent in order to his settlement with us in the work of the ministry." Mr. Sargent was a young man, then twenty-six years of age, a graduate of Harvard, and had been acting pastor of the congregation for some time.

It is a fact of interest showing how permanent the pastoral office was regarded in those days, that at the annual town meeting, held on March 12th, it was voted to give Mr. Sargent eighty pounds a year for the first four years, ninety pounds a year for the next four years and after that one hundred pounds a year. Mr. Sargent's proposal was, that they should pay eighty pounds a year for the first two years, ninety pounds a year for the next two years and one hundred pounds a year, and also thirty cords of wood yearly from the time he began to keep house. After considerable discussion between Mr. Sargent and the people, the terms of settlement were agreed upon, and he was ordained pastor over the church November 5, 1729. Of the festivities which attended that occasion we have no record, but there is no doubt that the day was celebrated according to the customs of the time, with great rejoicing, and by all the people round about.

The new town now seems to have fairly started on its career, and little is to be found in the records worthy of notice. The town meetings were frequent, and the business transacted in those meetings in the different years much the same. The officers of the

town were chosen then, as now, in the month of March.

The officers were about the same as now, with the addition of tithing men and the exception of School Committee.

Persons were annually chosen "to clear the fish-ways" and "to take care that the fish have a convenient course over Mr. Huse's Mill Dam that is in Spicket River."

Two persons called deer reeves were also chosen annually for many years, to take care of the deer, and a reward was generally offered each year for the killing of a grown wolf, and a smaller one for "a bitch wolf's whelp."

Each bill against the town, however small, seems to have been presented to the town meeting for allowance; and there was, nearly every year, one or more roads laid out by the selectmen and accepted by the town.

The amount of money annually appropriated for town charges, outside of the minister rate, for the first fifty years, ranged from forty to one hundred and seventy pounds. This does not include the highway tax, which was paid in labor, and of which we find the first record in 1736.

In 1735 Henry Saunders and twenty-eight others living in the north part of the town,—probably most of them in what is now Salem, N. H., presented a petition to the town setting forth that

"Whereas we, the subscribers, live at so great a distance from the public worship of God in this place, that we cannot attend upon it with our families without a great deal of difficulty, we have therefore been at the charge to hire a minister to preach to us in a more convenient place, which we think is hard for us to do, so long as we are obliged to pay our full proportion towards the support of the public worship of God in this place; and although we have of late made our application to this town for some help under our difficult circumstances, we have been denied any. We therefore pray that you would set us off a distinct precinct by ourselves. . ."

This petition was presented to the town December 15, 1735, and the record says:

"That the town, by a majority vote, manifested their willingness to set off the north part of this town for a precinct by themselves, viz.: Beginning at the north side of the World's End Pond, so running easterly to the south side of Peter Merrill's land, and so to Haverhill line, and from World's End Pond, to a waiting place in Spicket River by Jonathan Cates, and so running with a straight line to a pine tree standing in the line between Duncut and Methuen, on the south side of Parcupine Brook."

The territory north of this line formed what was afterwards known as the North Parish of Methuen, and most of it soon after fell within the limits of New Hampshire.

The relative number of inhabitants in the two parishes at that time cannot be exactly determined.

The nearest approach to a correct estimate may perhaps be made from the statement that the number of highway tax payers in 1736, in the whole town, was one hundred and thirty-six. The number of tax payers of the minister rate in the First Parish in that year was ninety-eight, leaving thirty-eight in the North Parish.

The next important event in the history of the town occurred in 1741, when the State line was run, thereby depriving Methuen of a large part of her territory. Previous to 1740 there seems to have been much controversy between the Province of Massachusetts and New Hampshire about the boundary line between them. The charter first given to the Massachusetts colony granted "all that part of New England lying between three miles to the north of the Merrimack and three miles to the south of the Charles river, and of every part thereof in the Massachusetts Bay; and in length between the described breadth from the Atlantic Ocean to the South Sea." Under the charter the Massachusetts colony claimed that their northern boundary was three miles to the north of the northernmost point of the Merrimack, and they fixed upon a rock near the outlet of Lake Winnipiseogee, as the most northern part of the river. This would have given to Massachusetts a large part of Vermont and New Hampshire, and a large section in Maine. The New Hampshire grantees claimed that under the Massachusetts charter the line could not extend in any place more than three miles from the river. The territory between these lines became disputed ground concerning which there was constant contention.

In 1720 the New Hampshire colonists modified their claim, so far as to propose that the line should begin at a point three miles north from the mouth of the Merrimack, and thence run due west to the South Sea. The Massachusetts colony refused to agree to this, and the contention became more violent, until finally the Legislatures of the two colonies met—the New Hampshire Legislature at Hampton Falls and the Massachusetts at Salisbury—for the purpose of settling the difficulty. They appointed committees of conference, but were unable to agree, and after several weeks of angry discussion by agreement of both parties the whole subject was referred to the King of England for decision. The matter was decided by the king in council in 1740, and it was decreed that the northern boundary of the Province of Massachusetts Bay "is and be a similar curved line, pursuing the curve of Merrimack River at three miles distance, on the north side thereof and beginning at the Atlantic Ocean." The king also decreed that the line should be run and established by the two Provinces, but if either should refuse to act the other might fix and establish it.

Massachusetts was dissatisfied with this decision, and refused to have anything to do about running the new line. New Hampshire appointed George Mitchell to run the line from the ocean to a point three miles north of Pawtucket Falls, and the line was thus established by New Hampshire as it has been recognized by the border towns on both sides of the line ever since. Massachusetts has never formally agreed to this line, and the old controversy has been recently revived. Commissioners were appointed by both



States in 1885 to settle this question, if possible, and they have not yet completed their work. Tradition says that this decision was brought about by sharp practice on the part of the agent appointed by New Hampshire to lay the subject before the king; and it gave to New Hampshire seven hundred sq. remiles more than she asked for. It cut off a large slice of the original territory of the town of Methuen, and nearly a third of the population. The northern and western boundaries of the town have remained unchanged from that time to the present. From 1740 to 1775 we find record of very few important events.

There was no census until 1765, but we judge from the increase in the number of tax-payers, that the growth was simply the slow and steady increase of an exclusively agricultural population. As the land gradually became cleared, it became more thickly dotted with dwellings. The produce raised upon the farms, and food taken from the river supplied nearly all the wants of the inhabitants. The money necessary for their few purchases, and the payment of taxes, was obtained partly by the sale of wood and timber which was rafted to Newburyport, partly by the production of flax which was sold to the inhabitants of Londonderry, and partly, probably, by the sale of some products, such as they could carry on horseback to Salem. We find little information of the part Methuen had in the French and Indian Wars. Two or three extra appropriations for powder and flints, some taxes abated to those who were in the service, and payments of money by the town for "taking care of the French" seem to be all that shows action on the part of the town. Tradition has it that Methuen sent her share of soldiers at that time, but whether there was a company from the town, or whether the soldiers were scattered among different companies from neighboring towns we have no means of knowing.

There seems to have been at this time a remarkable reluctance to hold office, as is shown by the fact that Methuen was fined in 1770, '72 and '73, for not choosing a Representative to the Legislature. Possibly, however, this may have resulted more from a disinclination on the part of the tax-payers to pay for the service, than from a disinclination to serve on the part of the possible candidates. In 1774 the inhabitants of the west part of Methuen petitioned to be set off with the easterly part of Dracut to make a new township, "so that both the above said towns may be better accommodated to attend public worship." The division line of the proposed new town commenced "on the bank of the Merrinack River about four poles to the east of Mr. Daniel Bodwell's ferry (at the foot of Tower Hill), thence running northwesterly to the province line, about one hundred and fifty-six poles to the west of Spicket River, including all to the west of said line," thus cutting off a large portion of the town. There was a strong opposition on the part of Methuen, and the scheme failed. About this

time we begin to find indications of the coming contest. The first record we find of any action by the town in relation to the questions then stirring the public mind, is a vote passed in August, 1774, to pay one pound, sixteen shillings and seven pence, lawful money to defray the charges of the Congress held at Philadelphia. In December, 1774, it was voted that Mr. Enoch Merrill, former constable should pay the remainder of the province money to Henry Gardner, and also "that the Selectmen should conduct themselves respecting the Constable's warrants according to the Provincial Congress instructions." At that time the constables collected the taxes, and paid them over under instructions of the selectmen, and the meaning of these votes probably was, that the province tax was to be paid under the instructions of the Provincial Congress rather than the English Government.

No other record of action at that time appears in the regular records of the town, but on one of the last leaves of the book of records then in use, we find the following:

"At a legel meeting of the freeholders and other inhabitants of the Town of Methuen held by adjournment from the ninth of August, 1774, to the 20th of September, 1774. Taking into serious consideration the State of public affairs, Voted, that a Committee be chosen to consult and Advise with Each other. Likewise with Committees of other Towns, and if need be to communicate to any other Town any measure that may appear to be conducive to the publick Benefit, more Especlay to be Watch-full that no Encroachments are not made on our Constitutional Rights and Liberties, that we may enjoy the Blessing we have Left in peace and not be Deprived of them from any quarter but may Devise prosecute the most vigorous and resolute measures as far as Lyes in our sphere, retrieve our invaluable privileges. Voted that this Committee consist of fifteen persons.

" Stephen Barker, Esq.
John Bodwell,
Nathaniel Pettengill,
Samuel Bodwell,
Cutting Marsh,
David Whittier,
Jonathan Swan,
James Jones.

John Huse,
James Malloon,
John Pettengill,
Lieut. John Sargent,
Richard Whittier,
Ebenezer Colton,
John Masten.

" Voted, that the above should be entered in the Town Clerk's office."

That the people began to contemplate the possibility of war with Great Britain is indicated by the following, which is an exact copy of the original now in possession of A. C. Goodell, Esq., of Salem.

" WHEREAS, military Exercise hath been much belick'd We the Subscribers being the first comptrey in Methuen Do Covenant and Engage to form our selves in to a Bodey in order to Larn the manual Exercise, To be Subegat To Such officers as the Comptrey shall chuse by Voat in all constutenal marshier according to our Chatters.

" Methuen ye 6th of octr. 1774

" James Jones,
Ichabod Perkins,
James Wilson,
Timothy Eaton,
Ebenezer Colton,
Thomas Runnels,
Henry Morss,
Samuel Messer,
Daniel Messer,
Nathl Haseltino,
Richard Hall,
Samuel Parker,

William Runnels,
Asa Currier,
Nathaniel Messer,
Ebenezer Messer,
Nathan Perley,
John Keley,
Asa Messer,
John Eaton,
John Davison,
William Stevens,
Silas Brown,
William Whittier.

Stephen Webster, Jr.
Jacob Messer,
Daniel R. Whittier,
Samuel Webber,
Jacob Hall,
Amos Gage,
John Cross,
Nathan Russ,
Richard Jacques,
Robert Hastings,
James Chase,
Nath. Herrick,
Joseph Hastings,
Randall Carlton,
Richard Corrier,
Ebenezer Eaton,
Simon Hastings,
John How, Jr.,
Parson Hall,
Ephraim Clark.

John Marsten, Jr.,
Nathaniel Smith Messer,
James Silver, Junr.,
Abiel How,
Timothy Emerson,
Joshua Emerson, Jr.,
Oliver Emerson,
Timothy How,
Isaac Barker,
Simon Cross,
Francis Swan, Junr.,
James Davison,
Jacob How,
Elijah Carlton,
Joseph How,
Jonathan How,
Asa Morse,
Nathl. Clark,
John Merrill,
Abiel Cross.

Theodore Emerson.

"the first Company in Methuen meat att Mr. Eben. Carlton in order to chose officers, and they chose Lieut. Benj'm. Hall Moderator, they chose Mr. James Jones for that Capt. Mr. Ichabod Perkins first Lieut. Mr. James Wilson Second Lieut. Mr. Saml Messer Ens. Mr. Nathl Messer Jr. Clarke for said Company.

Clark

"WILLIAM PAGE forsd.

Methuen.

"Methuen ye first Octor 1774."

In January, 1775, the town voted to give to the poor of the town of Boston by subscription, and chose a committee to receive donations. At the same meeting it was voted that the minute-men "drawn out or exposed to train, should have eight pence per day for their trouble to the last of March."

Mr. John Badwell was also chosen at that meeting to meet the Provincial Congress on the first day of February at Cambridge. At the annual meeting in March it was voted to provide bayonets, "which should be brought to Captain John Davis, and after the service was over said Davis is to return said bayonets unto the selectmen of said town." It was also voted that the committee of safety or correspondence should continue a committee for the same purpose, and also that John Masters and Jonathan Barker be a committee to make up the "cartrages" for those persons who were not able to provide for themselves, out of the town stock. Soon after, the town voted to provide guns for all minute men unable to furnish themselves; also to provide blankets and cartridges.

Another interesting document, dated about this time, is also found out of place on one of the last leaves of the book of records, as follows:—

"We, the subscribers, being appointed a committee by the town of Methuen to give some instructions to a certain Committee of Safety and Correspondence, that was chosen by this town in September last or may hereafter be chosen as above, that it is recommended that the above committee do strictly observe and conform to the instructions hereafter mentioned.

"First. That you will be vigilant in this time of public distress; that no infractions, violations be made on the good and wholesome laws of this province, whereby the morals of the people are endangered of being corrupted, and increase you should be unsuccessful in your endeavors in all proper ways, then to publish their names that the public may see and know them to be enemies of their country and the privileges of the same.

"Secondly. That you correspond with committees of other towns, if you see it needful, as may be necessary on all important occasions.

Thirdly. As a Committee of Inspection we recommend to you that you will not buy or purchase any British manufactures or superfluities in your families but such as are of absolute necessity, and likewise that you recommend to others to do the same, for we think that a reformation of this will greatly tend to lessen our private expense and the better enable us to bear the publick charges and prevent those mischiefs that may ensue thereupon.

"Fourthly. That you will suppress as much as possible those persons, if any such there be, who travel as peddlers to introduce British goods and impose on the inconsiderate, which may impoverish us. And whereas, it is said that our enemies are sending out spies in order to get information of our schemes and plans which are contrived for our defence so as they may frustrate them, it is recommended that you take care that they receive that resentment due to their deeds.

"Fifthly. If any trader or other person within this town shall take the advantage of the present distressed circumstances in America and by an avaricious thirst after gain shall raise the price of any commodity whatsoever beyond their usual reasonable price, or shall use their influence by words or actions to weaken the measures advised by the Grand Continental Congress when made to appear to you that he or they persist in the same, you are to publish their names that they may be publicly known and treated as enemies to their country.

JAMES INGALLS,
JONATHAN SWAN,
JOHN HUSE, } Committee.

METHUEN, April 4th, 1775."

It will be noticed that this paper was dated about two weeks before the battle of Lexington. It shows the resolute, deep-seated earnestness with which our fathers entered the contest, and that the men of Methuen were as fully imbued with the spirit of resistance to tyranny as the more widely known men of the time. As might be expected, the town records are silent in regard to the events at Lexington and Bunker Hill. There was no reason why the town as a body should take action in reference to those battles. Nevertheless the men of Methuen had an active share in those great events, and we are not without an official record of the part they took.

The archives at the State House contain the names of those who went from Methuen on the memorable 19th of April, and also the names of the Methuen Company who fought at the battle of Bunker Hill.

There were four Methuen companies at the battle of Lexington, and the following is a full list of the names just as they are found on the original muster rolls now on file in the office of the Secretary of State:

Captain John Davis' Company in Colonel Frye's Regiment, enlisted Feb. 14th, 1775.

*Captain, John Davis,
First Lieutenant, Nathl. Herrick. Second Lieutenant, Elihu Badwell.*

<i>Sergeants.</i>	
Eleazer Carlton.	Richard Hall.
Francis Swan.	Jonas Barker.
<i>Corporals.</i>	
Jonathan Baxter	William Stevens.
John Davison	Joshua Emerson.
<i>Pirates.</i>	
James Campbell.	Daniel Jennings.
Silas Brown.	Wm. Whitther.
Enos Kings.	Nathan Swan.
Asa Morse.	Peter Barker.
Ebenr. Pingrief.	Joseph Jackson.
Simon Tyler.	Aaron Noyes.
Amos Harrimon.	Parker Bodwell.



Daniel Morse.	Solomon Jennings.
James Ordway.	Joshua Bodwell.
Ebenezer Herrick.	Dudley Bailey.
Daniel Messer.	James Silver.
Nathan Russ.	Peter Webster.
James Ingalls.	John Swan.
James Davis.	Daniel Bailey.
Amos Gage (drummer)	Thomas Bane.
Joseph Morse.	Jeremiah Stevens.
Dudley Noyes.	Ebenezer Sargent.
Joseph Hibbard.	John Merrill.
Prince Johnson.	Samuel Barker (fifer).

This muster roll made for seven days, from April 10th. Sworn to
JOHN DAVIS.

Total, 49.

Muster roll of the following number or party of men that belonged to Methuen, in the county of Essex, on the alarm on the 19th of April, 1775, and never joined to any particular commanding officer:

Captain.
James Matton.

Privates.

Abner Morrill.	— Bodwell, 2d.
Isaac Austin.	— Austin, Jr.
Isaac Austin, Jr.	— Parker, Jr.
Benj. Hargrave.	Obediah Morse.
Peter Harris.	Wm. Russ, Jr.
Joseph Griffin.	Wm. McCarthy.
Francis Richardson.	Hazekiah Parker.
Elisha Parker.	Jesse Barker.
John Barker, Jr.	Moses Morse.
Isaac Hughes.	James Dennis.
Timothy Chellis.	

Total, 22.

The pay roll of the company under the command of Major Samuel Bodwell, exhibited in consequence of the alarm on the 19th of April:

1st Lieut., David Whittier.	2d Lieut., Nathl. Pettengill.
Ensign, Enoch Merrill.	Clark, John Hughes.
Sergeant, John Mansur.	

Privates.

Wm. Gunterson.	Joshua Stevens.
Nathl. Pettengill.	John Whittier, Jr.
Thomas Pettengill.	Abel Merrill.
Dudley Pettengill.	Joseph Morrill.
Daniel Tyler.	John Richardson.
John Pettengill, Jr.	Wm. Richardson.
Saml. Cross.	Nathl. Hubbard.
John Bodwell.	James Hibbard.
Ebenezer Richardson.	Edwell Field.
Thomas Fox.	John Ladd.
Wm. Bodwell.	Stephen Barker.
Wm. Morse.	Mitchell Davis.
John Barker.	Ebenr. Barker.
Simon Dawe.	Nehemiah Parker.
Samuel Cook.	Saml. Richardson.
Samuel Hughes.	Enoch Cheney.
John Pettengill.	Jonas Barker, Jr.
John Webster.	Benj. Stevens, Jr.
Benj. Mastin.	John Hibbard.
Elijah Sargent.	Wm. Hibbard.

Total 45.

Captain James Jones' pay roll for the campaign in the defence of the country at the battle of Concord, made at the rate of twenty-eight days per month, four days' service.

Captain, James Jones.
Lieutenant, Ichabod Perkins.

Sergeants.

Timothy Eaton.	Nathan Perley.
Ephraim Clark.	Jacob Messer.

Corporals.

Nathl. Hazeltine.	Elijah Carlton.	Simeon Cross.
-------------------	-----------------	---------------

Privates.

John Kelly (drummer).	John Tippets, 3d.
Abiel Cross.	Oliver Emerson.
William Page.	James Messer.
Moses Sargent.	Henry Mors.
James Fry.	Stephen Webster, Jr.
Thomas Herrick.	Elisha Perkins.
Joseph Granger.	Job Pingrey.
Isaac Barker.	Joseph Cross.
Pay Emerson.	Asa Cross.
Joseph Perkins.	John Morris.
Jonas How.	Kimball Carleton.
Nathl. S. Clark.	

Total 32.

In the Company of Captain Charles Furbush.

Privates.

Theodore Emerson.	James Silver.
Isaac Maloon.	John Hancock.
Jos. Pettengill.	Nehemiah Kidah.
Abraham P. Silver.	Daniel Pettengill.

Total 8.

Grand Total 156.

The number of inhabitants in Methuen in 1776, according to the colonial census, was thirteen hundred and twenty-six.

The tax book of that year gives the names of two hundred and fifty-two poll-tax payers. It is surprising that a town of so small population could have sent so many men at the first call to meet the British. Nothing could more forcibly impress us with the universal, deep-seated determination of our fathers to protect their rights at all hazards, than this simple list of names. When we consider that they were not called out by any order of the authorities, that their enthusiasm had not been stirred by appeals from the daily press or by public speakers, that they only knew from the signal guns and fires on the hills that the British were in motion, and that the war had actually begun, and that nearly every able bodied man in town, more than half the poll-tax payers, must, of their own accord, have shouldered their muskets and marched at a moment's warning to meet the foe, those of us who claim descent from those men cannot help feeling the blood tingle in our veins with an honest pride in such an ancestry. Such facts show better than anything else can, the quality of the Revolutionary spirit, and how it was that the colonies were finally successful. The next important event was the battle of Bunker Hill, on the 17th of June following, in which it is certain that a Methuen company bore an important part. The following is a copy of the original muster-roll on file at the State House.

"CAMBRIDGE, Oct. 5, 1775.

"Return of the men's names, when they enlisted and where they belonged. Belonging to Captain John Davis' Company, in Colonel Frye's Regiment:

Captain, John Davis.

First Lieutenant, Nathl. Herrick. *Second Lieutenant,* Eliphalet Bodwell.
Major, Jonathan Barker.

Sergeants.

Ebenezer Carlton.	Francis Swan.
Richard Hall.	Peter Barker.

Jonathan Baxter.
William Stevens.

Corporals.

Joshua Emerson.
John Davison.

Privates.

Abraham Amess.
John Aston.
Silas Brown.
Parker Bodwell.
David Bailey.
Dudley Bailey.
Timothy Chellis.
David Cortiss.
James Ordway.
Jeremiah Stevens.
James Silver.
Simeon Tyler.
Ames Gage (drummer).
Samuel Barker (drum).
James Campbell.
James Davison.
Mitchel Davis.
Amos Harriman.

Lazarus Hubbard.
Ebenezer Herrick.¹
Joseph Hibbard.²
James Ingalls.³
Dudley Noyes.
Aaron Noyes.
Peter Webster.
James Woodbury.
Ebenezer Sargent.
Samuel Parker.
Thomas Pace.
Nathan Russ.
John Swan.
Nathan Swan.
Ebenezer Pingrief.
Joshua Bodwell.⁴
Solomon Jennings.⁵

It is by no means certain that this list includes the names of all Methuen men engaged in the battle; there may have been some in companies from the neighboring towns. It is known that the Methuen company was in the thickest of the fight, that it was stationed in the redoubt, and was among the last to leave it. It is said that it came near being surrounded towards the end of the battle, and that as the enemy came up on each hand a British soldier ran up to Captain Davis, saying, "You are my prisoner."

Captain Davis, who was a resolute, powerful man, replied, "I guess not," at the same time running the soldier through with his sword. The blood spurted over his breeches as he drew back the sword, but he made his escape. It is also said that Captain Davis took one of his wounded men upon his back just after escaping from the redoubt, and carried him out of the reach of danger. As he was crossing the hollow between the hills, which was swept by the fire from a British vessel, he saw before him a board fence. Captain Davis, tired by excitement and the weight of his comrade, said: "I don't see how we can get over that fence." But in an instant after, a cannon ball knocked it in pieces and left the way clear.

Mr. Asa M. Bodwell tells a story of James Ordway, who afterwards lived on the west side of Tower Hill. Mr. Ordway was in poor circumstances in his old age, and had a bad ulcer on his leg. Mr. Bodwell says that his father sent him one day to Mr. Ordway with a gallon of rum to bathe his lame leg, and with it a message saying that the rum was sent to pay for throwing stones at the battle of Bunker Hill. The story being, that when the ammunition gave out, at the close of the battle, Ordway laid down his gun and threw stones at the British until driven out. Methuen lost three men at the battle of Bunker Hill. Ebenezer Herrick was killed in the battle, Joseph Hibbard was wounded and died June 20th, James Ingalls was wounded and died July 8th. It is impossible to as-

certain the exact number of soldiers Methuen had in the Revolutionary War. The town records give us no information on this point, and the State records are imperfect, but there is no doubt that Methuen kept her quota in the field. After the evacuation of Boston by the British, the seat of war was so far away, that probably few of the soldiers from this town were actively engaged with the enemy.

There are stories told of Methuen men who went to fight Burgoyne, and helped to conduct the captured soldiers to Cambridge, and guard them while there; other soldiers from this town were stationed at different points on the coast exposed to attack.

During those years, the town business went on as usual. A Committee of Safety and Correspondence was appointed each year, and in February, 1778, the town voted that the Selectmen should supply the families of soldiers in the Continental Army with the necessaries of life. At the same meeting the town was called upon to see what instructions it would give to their Representative, relative to a resolve of the Continental Congress for all the United States of America to join in a perpetual union with one another. The subject was referred to a committee, consisting of Major Bodwell, Captain James Jones, Colonel Thomas Poor, Lieutenant John Huse and Mr. Enoch Merrill. At an adjourned meeting, the question was put whether the town would receive and accept the Articles of Confederation and perpetual union, and "voted in the affirmative."

The currency question seems to have been as troublesome in those days as it has been later. At a meeting held April 2, 1778, there was an article in the warrant "To see what the town will do with those persons who refuse to take our paper currency,—and passed a resolve to treat them as enemies to their country, and voted to publish the same in the Boston newspaper." The rapid decrease in value of this currency is shown by the fact, that while, in 1777, £30 was raised for the ordinary repairs of the highways, in 1781 £6000 was raised for the same purpose.

In 1779, Lieut. John Sargent was chosen delegate to represent the town in the convention to be held at Cambridge, to form a new constitution. In 1780, the new Constitution of the State of Massachusetts took effect, and in that year we find the first record of a vote for Governor and Senators. It is evident that party feeling did not run very high, from the fact that for the office of Governor, John Hancock had sixty-four votes and James Bowdoin two.

In that year the town furnished 8780 pounds of beef for the army, and hired sixteen men. The next year they furnished 6957 pounds of beef, and raised twelve men to serve as soldiers.

We find nothing in the town records to indicate the end of the war, except a vote to sell the entrenching tools belonging to the town, and the frequency of military titles, indicating that the soldiers were at home and active in town matters.

¹ Died June 17th.

² Died July 8th.

³ In train June 17th.

⁴ Died June 20th.

⁵ In train June 17th.

From the close of the Revolutionary War, there is little of interest to be gleaned from the town records for many years. About this time we find that the town voted "not to give liberty for inoculation for small-pox," and to "choose a committee of five to take care of those persons lately inoculated with the small-pox, and prosecute them, and take effectual care that the distemper spread no further."

In 1793, a company was organized to build a bridge over the Merrimack at Bodwell's Falls. Up to that time ferries had furnished the only means of crossing this river. We find mention of five different ferries, as follows:

Gage's Ferry, near the end of Pleasant Valley Street.

Swan's Ferry, at Wingate's farm.

Marston's Ferry, at the Alms-house, Lawrence.

Bodwell's Ferry, at the Pumping Station, Lawrence.

Harris' Ferry, a little east of Dracut line.

The early inhabitants did not dream that a bridge could be built across so broad a stream, and a common way of expressing the impossibility of doing a thing was to say, "It is as impossible as to build a bridge over the Merrimack River." It seems, too, that some of the inhabitants did not take kindly to the new project, probably deeming it a base scheme on the part of the proprietors to make money out of the public; for a meeting was held soon after to see if the town would send a remonstrance to the General Court against its erection. This proposition was decided in the negative. The opponents of the bridge then called a meeting to see if the town would petition the General Court to order the proprietors to pay the cost of the town roads leading to the bridge. This also was voted down, and the town decided to repair the road over Currant's Hill to the New Hampshire line.

The bridge was built shortly after, and for some years the travel from thence to New Hampshire passed over Currant's Hill, curving around over the old road—now discontinued—on the hill in the rear of the house of James Ingalls.

The "Turnpike" (now Broadway) was built in 1805-6, by an incorporated company. A system of toll was established, but it caused such dissatisfaction that in a few years the "Turnpike" was made a public highway by the County Commissioners.

The town first voted for a Representative to Congress and for a Presidential Elector, December 18, 1788, the highest candidate voted for receiving twenty-three votes. It seems that at the first Presidential elections, the town voted for only one elector; but in 1804 votes were cast for nineteen electors:

The change from the use of English money to Federal currency took place about 1795-96. The last time we find "pounds" used in making up the town records was in 1795.

In 1805, the town voted that the Annual Town Meeting should be held on the first Monday in

March, for the future; and, at the same meeting, for the first time voted that swine should not go at large. Previous to that time, the town had always voted the largest liberty to swine, except that for a few years this liberty had been coupled with the condition that they should be "yoked and ringed."

In the War of 1812 Methuen sent her proportion of men to meet the old enemy. The only reference to that war in the town records, is a vote passed "to give the detached soldiers a sum to make them up twelve dollars a month while in active service with what Government gives them." We have been told by veterans of that war, now dead, that the number of men called for from Methuen was not large. They were mostly stationed to defend the forts along the coast. It is said, however, that a small number of soldiers went from Methuen to meet the British in Canada, and that they were present at the surrender of Hull. It appears from the census returns and the tax lists that Methuen grew but little in wealth and population, during the forty years subsequent to the Revolutionary War. In 1776 the population of the town number one thousand three hundred and twenty-six, and in 1820 one thousand three hundred and seventy-one.

There was no village in the town at that time, and no neighboring markets to induce growth. At the beginning of this century, there were only six houses in the now thickly settled part of Methuen Village. The Miller Cross house, corner of Hampshire and Lowell Streets; Sargent house, where Exchange Hotel stands; Deacon Fry house, Butters farm; Swan place, Nevins farm; Jonathan Cluff house, Mill-yard; John Sargent house, at elm tree by mill-yard.

There was then one grist-mill, a little south of Fisher's grocery store, another on the opposite side of the river, and a fulling-mill just below the foot-bridge at the falls. From 1820 to 1840 the town gained about seventy per cent. in population, with a corresponding increase in wealth. This was in consequence of the building of the cotton-mills, and increase in the manufacture of shoes and hats. During that time there were few events of special interest to this generation. In 1837 it appears that a new town-house was talked about, and a committee was chosen at the March meeting to select a location and prepare estimates. The committee reported at an adjourned meeting, and the town voted to build. A week or two afterwards another meeting was called, the vote reconsidered and committee discharged. The same year the selectmen were authorized to hire the vestry of the Baptist meeting-house for holding town-meetings, and that house continued to be the place for town-meetings until the present town-house was built in 1853. In 1844 rumors began to circulate of a project to dam the Merrimack, and build factories at Bodwell's Falls. The town voted to give Daniel Saunders and his associates a refusal of the town-

farm, which was situated on Broadway, the buildings being on the east side, south of Haverhill Street, at its cost, with an addition of thirty-three per cent.

The terms on which the Essex Company bonded the land now occupied by the principal parts of the city of Lawrence were, a fair cash value, with an addition of thirty-three per cent. The land was bought in due time, and the "New City" as it was then called, grew with wonderful rapidity. When operations first began there were only nine or ten houses standing on what is now the thickly settled part of North Lawrence. There was a paper-mill, operated by Adolphus Durant, on the Spicket, a little above its mouth. In 1847 Chas. S. Storrow and others petitioned for an act of incorporation of a new town to be called Lawrence. There was a strong opposition to this scheme on the part of Methuen, a town-meeting was called, and John Tenney and George A. Waldo were chosen to oppose the petition before the committee of the Legislature. They were unsuccessful in this opposition; Lawrence obtained an act of incorporation, and Methuen lost a large section of her territory. Another small slice was subsequently taken from Methuen and added to Lawrence, since which time the boundaries of Methuen have remained unchanged. Doubtless old residents of the town will recall many matters of much interest in their day, such as the bickerings about the enforcement of the liquor laws, the efforts made to suppress the liquor traffic in Salem, the contests over the dividing lines of school districts, and the disputes over the building of new roads, but they would hardly be of general interest now. From 1850 to 1860 there was little change in population, and few events of general interest. In 1861 came the war which laid its hand so heavily on the whole land. When the first note of war was sounded, and President Lincoln called for seventy-five thousand troops to protect Washington in April, 1861, Governor Andrew ordered the Sixth Massachusetts Regiment, with others, to start at once. Company F of that Regiment, Capt. Chadbourne, had its armory in Lawrence, and eight members of that company belonged in Methuen as follows:

Henry Cummings,	Frank Sanborn,
Albert L. Dime,	George Thurlow,
Amos G. Jones,	James Troy,
George Kent,	Henry Turkington.

They were notified of the call late in the afternoon, and immediately reported for duty, and the next morning they all left Lawrence for Washington. On the 19th they made the memorable passage through Baltimore where they met the first resistance to the Federal troops. Thus Methuen has had the honor of seeing her sons foremost in the fight in both of our great wars; for as Lexington and Concord were the initial events in the Revolutionary War, so was Baltimore in the Civil War.

The first action taken by the town was immediately afterwards on April 30th, when a town-meeting was

held, and the sum of five thousand dollars voted for the purpose of arming, equipping and furnishing volunteers. A committee, consisting of the selectmen, Eben. Sawyer, J. P. Flint, John C. Webster and Daniel Currier was appointed "to disburse the money." A company was at once formed, all of volunteers from Methuen and vicinity, and most of them from Methuen, and they were uniformed, equipped and drilled, so as to be ready for action. This company became Company B, Fourteenth Massachusetts Infantry, and for some time were stationed at Fort Warren, and went to Washington in the latter part of the summer of 1861. In August of that year, the town voted to pay State aid to the families of volunteers according to law.

In July, 1862, forty-seven men were called for, and the town voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars to each volunteer when mustered into the United States service. On the 2d of August the town held another meeting, in which it was voted to pay two hundred dollars in addition to the sum already voted, making three hundred in all, to volunteers when mustered into the service. Immediately after came another from the President for three hundred thousand nine months' men. A meeting was at once called to adopt measures to obtain the number required from Methuen. It was voted to pay one hundred and fifty dollars to each nine months' man when mustered in and credited to the town.

The next call for recruits came in November, 1863, and the town voted "to fill its quota under the call for three hundred thousand men." A vote also passed to pay the families of drafted men the same State aid that was paid to families of volunteers.

In May, 1864, the selectmen were authorized to pay one hundred and twenty-five dollars bounty to volunteers in anticipation of a call from the President for more men. After this time, however, few recruits were mustered in. The volunteers from Methuen were scattered through several different regiments, but the largest number was in Company B, First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, which was noted as a remarkably well-drilled and disciplined body of men. When the regiments were detailed for the defence of Washington, the Fourteenth Massachusetts Infantry was selected after a competitive inspection with other regiments, for their excellent discipline, well-regulated camp, good appearance and reliable men.

The name of the regiment was changed from the Fourteenth Massachusetts Infantry to the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, and the men remained on duty in the forts in front of Washington, on Arlington Heights, until towards the end of the war, when they were ordered to the front, and performed distinguished service. They were engaged in sixteen to twenty different battles, and at Spottsylvania they occupied an important position in the centre of Grant's army, and held at bay Ewell's force of more than

four times their number, until reinforcements arrived from a distance of five miles, thus preventing Grant's army from being cut in two. For their heroic behavior on that occasion they received the unusual distinction of a special commendation from General Grant. The Methuen men received their heaviest blow in this battle, where fifteen were killed and many more wounded. The news that the company from Methuen had suffered heavily in this battle caused great excitement throughout the town, and a meeting of the citizens was immediately held. Resolutions expressive of sympathy and condolence were passed, and it was voted to send an agent to look after the wounded.

It ought to be mentioned also that the Methuen company held an honorable position in this regiment of eighteen hundred men. At the battle of June 16 the regimental color-bearer was twice shot down. Our well-known townsman, Albert L. Dame, was then given this honorable and dangerous place in the regiment, and had the honor of carrying the colors to the end of the war, and delivering them up to the State. The number of men lost from Methuen during the war was fifty-two, exclusive of those serving in the navy. According to General Schouler, the town furnished three hundred and twenty-five men for the war, which was a surplus of fifty-one over and above all demands. Fifteen were commissioned officers. The whole amount of money appropriated and expended by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was \$38,651.74.

In addition to this amount seven thousand five hundred dollars were gratuitously given by individual citizens to aid soldiers' families and to encourage recruiting. The total amount of State aid, which has been paid to soldiers and their families in Methuen, up to January 1, 1887, is \$56,747.03. There were about a thousand dollars in money raised by fairs and levees, and the ladies of Methuen devoted a great deal of time to work for the soldiers.

There were two societies, the Sanitary Commission and Christian Commission, which performed a vast amount of work whose value cannot be measured in dollars and cents. Thus it appears that there must have been paid out in Methuen, directly on account of the war, considerably more than \$100,000.

As we look back over the record of Methuen in the Civil War, on the readiness with which her men mustered in the field, and the heartiness with which they were supported by those left at home, we cannot deny that this generation has proved itself worthy its Revolutionary ancestry.

On the 7th of September, 1876, Methuen celebrated the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of its incorporation as a town. The day was fine, and the event was observed with great enthusiasm. The booming of cannon in the early morning aroused the slumberers in the valley of the Spicket, and gave the signal for the festivities of the day to begin.

The Town-House and most private dwellings were tastefully decorated, business was suspended and the busy town took on a holiday appearance quite unusual. The exercises of the day began with a procession, composed of a cavalcade of horsemen, a military company improvised for the occasion,—part equipped in the old style and part in the new,—the fire department, carriages representing the different trades and business of the town, school children, distinguished visitors and citizens in carriages, making quite an imposing display. Governor Rice, Surgeon Gen. Dale, Hon. Allen W. Dodge and Hon. Carroll D. Wright, were among the visitors. The president of the day was Hon. Jacob Emerson, orator, Hon. John K. Tarbox, chief marshal, Adjutant James Ingalls, chaplain, Rev. Lyman H. Blake.

The procession, with bands of music, passed through the principal streets of the town to the "Barker Lot," near the corner of Lowell and Barker Streets, where a stand had been erected. Here an eloquent oration was delivered before a large audience, by Hon. John K. Tarbox, a son of Methuen. After the oration a banquet was served under a large tent near by, at the conclusion of which speeches were made by the orator of the day, Hon. Allen W. Dodge, treasurer, of Essex County, Rev. Dr. A. A. Miner, once pastor of a church in Methuen, Hon. Carroll D. Wright, Hon. J. C. Blaisdell, of Fall River, Hon. J. K. Jenners, mayor of Haverhill, Major George S. Merrill, of Lawrence, Rev. Moses How, of New Bedford and several others.

Rev. Moses How was a resident of Methuen in his youthful days, and at this time, though eighty-seven years of age, a hale and vigorous man. After giving his audience many interesting reminiscences of old Methuen, he stated that he had preached eight thousand sermons, attended two thousand two hundred and sixty-five funerals, married one thousand nine hundred and four couples and had distributed five thousand two hundred and eleven Bibles and fifteen thousand Testaments to seamen. The day closed with social and family reunions at the homes of citizens of the town.

The occasion will be long remembered by those who participated in it, for the good fellowship which characterized the day, and the greetings of the sons and daughters of the old town, who had come back to revisit the old homestead, revive the memories of early days and take once more by the hand the companions of their youth.

From the close of the Civil War to the present time, the town has passed through the most prosperous period of its history. The population has increased from two thousand five hundred and seventy-six in 1865, to four thousand five hundred and seven in 1885, and the wealth of the town has gained in like proportion.

The territorial limits have not been changed, although there has been a desire on the part of some

to annex Methuen to Lawrence. The gain has been almost entirely in the thickly settled portions and has been due partly to proximity to Lawrence, but principally to an increase in manufacturing enterprises.

SCHOOLS.—The founders of Methuen seem to have provided for the educational interests of the town at an early date. In 1729 it was voted to lay out a school lot and a parsonage lot north of World's End Pond. These were undoubtedly tracts of woodland, whose income should be devoted to the purposes for which they were respectively laid out. In 1731 it was voted to keep school one month in Ebenezer Barker's house, one month in Thomas Eaton's house and a month at Joshua Swan's. In 1733 we find that Ebenezer Barker, Zebediah Barker and Thomas Eaton were each paid £2 10s. for keeping school. In 1735 the town voted to build a school-house eighteen by twenty feet near the meeting-house, school to be kept two months at the school-house and one month at Spicket Hill. The school appears to have been kept at the school-house part of the time, but chiefly at private houses until 1792. Reading and writing and a little arithmetic were the principal branches taught, and the latter study was not required. The schools appear to have been taught by male teachers only until 1749, when it was voted "to choose school-mistresses to instruct children in their reading." Also voted "to choose James How, Nathaniel Messer, James Ordway and Ebenezer Hibbard a committee to agree with school-mistresses and appoint convenient places for them to be kept in. . ." In 1775 the town was divided into seven school districts, each of which was to have its proportions of the school money, provided it built a comfortable school-house. It appears from the return made by the committee whose duty it was to build the school-houses, that the building of them was let out at auction to the lowest bidder, and that the houses cost about £29 each. The town also appropriated in the same year £30 for schools, and continued to appropriate that amount each year until 1792. £60 a year was afterwards appropriated for three years, or until 1795, when the first mention of "dollars" appears in the town records. A pound at that time appears to have been equivalent to \$3.33. In 1797, \$300 was appropriated, and the amount was increased from time to time, until in 1823 the sum appropriated for schools was \$600. From that time to the present the increase in the annual school appropriation has more than kept pace with the growth in population until the present year, when the amount appropriated for school purposes was about \$11,000.

Up to the year 1775 the selectmen seem to have had usually the sole care of the schools, and from that time to 1798 there was no school committee regularly chosen. It was considered a part of the minister's duty to visit the schools and look after the moral instruction, which in those days formed an important part of the training, as well as to see that the

literary instruction did not fall below the proper standard. But in 1798 the town chose a committee of one from each school district, "to inspect the schools in the town the present year." This way of managing the schools seems to have been followed until 1804, when a committee of three was chosen by the town from each of the nine school districts, making twenty-seven in all. It was also voted "that each committee with the minister visit their respective schools." There seems to have been about this time an unusual interest taken in school matters, for we find among the records of 1800, a system of School Regulations adopted by the town, which show what the duties of School Committees and teachers were then supposed to be, as follows:

"SECTION I.

"Concerning the duty of the School Committee.

"*Art. 1.* It shall be the duty of the school committee to visit the several town schools, in each district twice every year and more if necessary, giving reasonable notice to the Master or Mistress.

"*Art. 2.* It shall be the duty of the Committee to enquire into the regulations, the mode of government, and the method of instruction practised in the school, and it shall be the duty of the committee to use their best endeavors to correct any deficiency in the mode of government, the manner of instruction, or the discipline of the schools.

"*Art. 3.* Should any Master or Mistress appear so essentially deficient in the mode of government, the method of instruction, or the discipline of the school as not to be useful, it shall be the duty of the Committee and Selectmen, a majority of them concurring, to dismiss him or her from the school, and the Committee or the Selectmen, shall provide another who may be more useful.

"*Art. 4.* It shall be the duty of the Committee to close each visit to the school with addressing themselves to the Scholars upon the duty of order, the necessity, respectability and advantages of good education."

"SECTION II.

"Concerning the duty of School Masters.

"*Art. 1.* It shall be the duty of every School Master to open his school in the morning, and close it in the evening with prayer.

"*Art. 2.* It shall be the duty of the master or mistress to adopt such general regulations as will have a tendency to operate uniformly throughout the whole school, that every one may have an equal chance to pursue and improve in his particular branch of study and be subject to the same rules of government.

"*Art. 3.* The instructor shall endeavor to govern his respective school by the skillfulness of his hand, and the integrity of his heart, with using as little severity as he shall judge will be for the best good of the school, but when mild measures will not subject the idle to the good order and regulations of the school the instructor shall have a right to inflict reasonable and decent corporal punishment."

The system of management above outlined continued until 1822, when the town adopted the plan usually followed throughout the State until the abolishment of the School District system, in 1869. This consisted of a superintending school committee of three, chosen by the town, to look after the qualifications of teachers and the management of the schools, and a prudential committee chosen by the district to hire the teachers, furnish supplies and manage the finances.

The school districts were abolished by statute in 1869. In the winter of that year the High School was organized, and has since been in successful operation. There are eighteen schools in town besides the High School, all kept open nine months in the year.

CHURCHES.—The fact that strikes one most forcibly in reading over the early town records is the prominence given to religious observances. The chief and only reason given for setting off the new town was that the people might more easily attend the public worship of God. The first business done was to provide themselves a minister and a place of public worship. The principal money tax was for the support of these objects. Nothing could show more plainly that the hardy pioneers of Methuen were of genuine Puritan stock. Whatever we may think of Puritan austerity and fanaticism and intolerance, we cannot help admiring the indomitable energy, the iron will and lofty purpose of those men who braved the dangers of hostile Indians and suffered the privations of the wilderness, that they might worship God in their own way.

The old papers which have been preserved, the town records, and the old traditions all show that the first settlers in Methuen were men of rugged, vigorous intellect, accustomed to think for themselves, and not afraid to express their opinions.

The early history of the town was almost identical with the history of the church and society for many years. We have already related some of the incidents connected with the building of the meeting-house and settlement of a pastor, and it remains to give some account of the organization and history of the church since.

From the "Church Records," which were kept by Rev. Christopher Sargent during his ministry, we find that "the first church in Methuen was founded by Rev. Samuel Phillips, of Andover, October 29, 1729." On that day a fast, preparatory to the ordination of Mr. Sargent was kept, a sermon was preached, Rev. Mr. Phillips gathered the church, and the covenant was consented to by twenty-four persons, and within a month thirty-five others joined.

A week afterwards Rev. Mr. Sargent was ordained pastor, and continued in the pastoral office until 1783, when the town consented to release him from the active duties of the ministry. Mr. Sargent was born in Amesbury, Mass., in 1704 and graduated from Harvard College in 1725. Although he must have had a large influence in moulding the religious and intellectual character of the people of Methuen, there is now very little to be found to show exactly what manner of man he was. He was evidently a man of strong common sense, good talents, a moderate man, and one who could unite and harmonize the church. We should also infer that he was a more broad-minded man than the average Congregational minister of his day, from the fact that he was several times called upon by some of his hearers to defend his orthodoxy, and that his Calvinism was not extreme enough to suit them. The church prospered under his ministrations, and during his pastorate five hundred and nine members were received into it. He died March 20, 1790, and was buried in the old grave-yard on

Meeting House Hill, close to the church where he had ministered so long. One of his sons, born in Methuen, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargent, became a prominent lawyer, and in 1790 was appointed chief justice of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts. The only evidence we find in church or town records of serious trouble in the church during Mr. Sargent's long ministry of fifty-three years, was in 1766, when the "Second Church in Methuen" was formed. This church was composed of those persons, who, to use their own language, "were dissatisfied with the Rev. Mr. Sargent's doctrine and manner of discipline or church government." The records show that church meetings for business were frequent during these times, the discipline strict, and the members closely looked after. It must be admitted, however, judging from some of the entries, that there was need of vigilance, and even then that sin was not always prevented.

After the retirement of Mr. Sargent it was nearly five years before another minister was settled.

The next pastor was Simon Finley Williams, of Windham, N. H., who was ordained December 13, 1786. He was dismissed in 1791, under suspicion of misconduct. The next pastor was Humphrey C. Perley, of Boxford, who was ordained December 2, 1795. The church was not prosperous during his ministry, although he was a man of good repute, and continued in the pastoral office until May 24, 1815, when he was dismissed at his own request.

Jacob Weed Eastman, of Sandwich, N. H., was the next pastor, was ordained December 13, 1815, and remained till July 4, 1828. He was succeeded by Spencer F. Beard, of West Brookfield, who was installed January 21, 1829, and dismissed April 29, 1832.

He was followed by Sylvester G. Pierce, of Wilmington, Vt., who was installed June 27, 1832, and continued in the pastoral office, greatly beloved by his people, until his death, May 8, 1839. John Charles Phillips, of Boston, was installed as the next pastor December 25, 1839.

He was a broad-minded and cultured man, of fine talents, and his pastorate was characterized by peace and harmony in the church. On account of failing health he resigned, in July, 1860, and gave up active work in the ministry. Edward H. Greely, of Hopkinton, N. H., was the next pastor, and was installed over the church in 1861, and dismissed in September, 1866. The next pastor was Thomas G. Grassie, born in Scotland, and installed in Methuen September 10, 1867. He was dismissed August 7, 1873. Lyman H. Blake, of Cornwall, Vt., was settled in Methuen June 25, 1874, and was dismissed September 4, 1877.

Zephaniah S. Holbrook, of Berea, O., was the next pastor. He was installed December 4, 1878, and dismissed June 29, 1881. He was succeeded by Joseph Henry Selden, of Hadlyme, Conn., who was settled May 10, 1882, and dismissed May 16, 1884. Charles H. Oliphant, of Boston, the present pastor, was set-

tled October 29, 1885, having acted as pastor of the church for a year previous to his installation.

The church now numbers about two hundred and fifty members.

In 1796 the old "athadoxt" meeting-house, first built, was torn down, and a new one built on or near the same spot, the congregation worshipping in the meanwhile in the house of the Second Parish. The building of this house seems to have excited much interest through the town, and it is a curious fact, illustrating the habits of the time, that it was voted "That the spectators be given a drink of grog apiece at the raising." As the village sprung up around Spicket Falls, "Meeting-House Hill" ceased to be the most central place, and to better accommodate the congregation, it was decided in 1832, to remove the house to the spot now occupied by the stone meeting-house. It stood there until 1855, when the wooden house was torn down and the present stone house erected. In 1880 the parish received generous contributions from the family of Rev. John C. Phillips, and also from the family of Mr. David Nevins, for the purpose of erecting a chapel. The stone chapel now on the grounds was built shortly after. The grounds have since been tastefully laid out and adorned by Henry C. Nevins, Esq., and the church property of the First Parish, Methuen, is now unsurpassed in beauty by any in the County.

In 1766, April 16, a second church was organized, and Rev. Eliphaz Chapman was installed as its pastor in November, 1772.

About this time the "Second Parish" was formed by act of the Legislature. Under this arrangement every taxable person in town was taxed for the support of the minister, but he paid to the parish to which he belonged, instead of to the town. The meeting-house of the Second Parish stood on the north side of Pelham Street, a little west of the house formerly occupied by Leonard Wheeler. It was afterwards removed to the hill, near the house of Stephen W. Williams, whence it was removed to Lawrence, and afterwards destroyed by fire. We have found no record of the termination of the ministry of Mr. Chapman, but we find that Rev. J. H. Stevens was ordained May 18, 1791, and was dismissed March 10, 1795. Rev. Josiah Hill was settled April 9, 1832, and retired April 9, 1833. The Second Parish existed for half a century,—until 1816,—when it was united with the First Parish. In 1830 it was again organized, but was again united with the old church and parish. At present there is but one Congregational Church in the town.

The next church in point of age is the Baptist.

To an historical discourse prepared by Rev. K. S. Hall, and delivered at the semi-centennial celebration of that church and society, October 18, 1865, we are indebted for much of what follows. For many years there had been persons of the Baptist faith scattered through the town, and Isaac Backus preached here as

early as March 30, 1756. It is also known that Baptist sentiments were held by the Messer family in Methuen a century and a half ago, and that Jacob Whittier, of Methuen, was chosen one of the deacons of the Baptist Church in Haverhill May 9, 1765. Sometime during the last century a Baptist Church was constituted in the west part of Methuen, but no record is in existence of its formation or subsequent proceedings. A meeting-house was built about the year 1778, near the burying-ground west of the Bartlett Farm, and simply boarded and supplied with a floor. Services were held in it occasionally for some years, but some of the leading families removed from town, and the church ceased to exist. Religious meetings continued to be held occasionally at private houses, and baptisms were administered at different times, until the formation of the Baptist Society in Methuen, March 1, 1815, when a number of the inhabitants met at the house of "Mr. Ebenezer Whittier, innholder," and chose a committee to draft articles of signature, which were signed by seventy-one members during the first year. The Baptist Church was constituted March 8, 1815, and the recognition services were held in the house of Daniel Frye, now the "Butters Place." During the first year of its organization the church held religious meetings in different parts of the town, the church meetings being usually held at the house of Daniel Frye, afterwards chosen deacon. Charles O. Kimball, a licentiate of the Haverhill Church, commenced preaching June 25, 1815, and was ordained pastor of the church and society May 8, 1816.

In the summer of 1815 steps were taken for building a meeting-house, and it was finally voted to build a "two-story meeting-house" on a half-acre lot given by Bailey Davis, where the Baptist Church now stands. Several other lots were contemplated on which to build the house; one, the "mill lot," embracing a quarter of an acre near where the Town House now stands, and another on "Liberty Hill," a little southwest of the stone church on the opposite side of the street. The house was built and publicly dedicated December 5, 1816. During the long pastorate of Mr. Kimball, the church seems to have been characterized by activity and zeal in its membership, and steadily increased in numbers and influence. For the first ten years all moneys for the support of preaching and other expenses connected therewith were raised by voluntary subscription; afterwards taxes were assessed on members of the society. Mr. Kimball closed his labors October 4, 1835. Rev. Addison Parker, of Sturbridge, was the successor of Mr. Kimball, and was publicly installed February 3, 1836. The church seems to have prospered during his ministry, which closed May 1, 1839. Rev. Samuel W. Field was the next pastor, and was installed April 22, 1840. During the first year of his pastorate the old meeting-house was torn down and a new one built on the old site, the congregation holding services in



the Congregational Meeting-House until their vestry was ready for use. Mr. Field resigned August 2, 1846.

In June, 1847, Rev. Joseph M. Graves became pastor of the church, and remained until May 11, 1850, when he tendered his resignation. Rev. B. F. Bronson was the successor of Mr. Graves, and after a prosperous pastorate of seven years and a half, resigned May 30, 1858.

Rev. Howard M. Emerson was ordained pastor January 2, 1861, and continued in the office until his death, May 16, 1862. Rev. King S. Hall was installed December 23 of the same year, and resigned April 30, 1867. He was succeeded by Rev. N. M. Williams, who was settled February 13, 1868, and left March 31, 1871.

Rev. Lyman Chase became pastor in May, 1871, and remained until the summer of 1876. He was succeeded by Rev. Thomas J. B. House, who commenced his labors January 1, 1877, and left April 24, 1883. Rev. Simeon L. B. Chase became the next pastor August 19, 1883, and resigned May 29, 1887.

On Sunday, March 21, 1869, the meeting-house took fire during the morning service, and was totally destroyed. The society erected the house which is now standing in the following summer on the old spot, and it was dedicated January 13, 1870. This church is strong and prosperous, numbers about two hundred members, and is the only one of its denomination in the town.

The Universalist Church and Society was organized in 1824. At first religious services were held at irregular intervals in the different school-houses in town. As the church became stronger, meetings were held regularly in "McKay's building," on Lowell Street, and later in "Wilson's Hall," Hampshire Street. The present Universalist meeting-house was built in 1835-36, and dedicated in July, 1836. Rev. John A. Gurley was the first settled minister, and was pastor at that time. He left about 1837. The next pastor was Rev. E. N. Harris, who did not remain long. Rev. A. A. Miner was settled over the church in November, 1839, and remained until July, 1842, when he left to settle in Lowell. Rev. H. R. Nye was the next pastor, and remained about three years, leaving in 1845. Rev. Willard Spaulding succeeded Mr. Nye, and preached at this time two or three years. Rev. O. A. Tillotson succeeded Mr. Spaulding, and was followed by Rev. William H. Waggoner in 1851 and 1852. Rev. Willard Spaulding was pastor a second time in 1855 and 1856. Rev. Edwin Davis became pastor in the spring of 1861, and remained until 1863. Rev. John E. Davenport followed Mr. Davis, and continued in the pastoral office about two years. Rev. C. A. Bradley became pastor in 1869, and resigned March 22, 1871.

During the pastorate of Mr. Bradley the church and grounds were remodeled and much improved. Rev. W. W. Heywood became pastor in 1871, and his

resignation was accepted by the society March 29, 1875. Rev. R. T. Polk was installed as the next pastor March 21, 1877, and resigned August 31, 1879.

Rev. G. T. Flanders, of Lowell, supplied the pulpit for a year, beginning his labors February 29, 1880, was succeeded by Rev. Nathan S. Hill from November 1, 1881, to March 1, 1883. In October, 1883, the society called Rev. Donald Fraser to the pastorate, and he remained until his resignation in November, 1885. Rev. A. F. Walch, the next minister, was installed October 14, 1886, and is now in the pastoral office. The congregation numbers about one hundred and fifty.

We are informed that the Methodists first held meetings in Methuen in 1833 or '34. They occasionally occupied the Second Parish meeting-house, and held meetings in the school-houses, but after the institution of regular religious services, they occupied "Wilson's Hall." The building now used as a school-house on Lowell Street was built by them for a meeting-house, and occupied for several years, until the establishment of a Methodist Church and society at the new city of Lawrence drew off a portion of the members, and so weakened the society in Methuen that it was thought advisable to sell the building. After the sale of the meeting-house no regular religious services were held in Methuen by that denomination until 1853 or 1854, when a reorganization was effected, and religious services were held in the library room in the town hall. As the society increased in numbers, more commodious quarters were needed, and the society held their meetings in the town hall until 1871, when the present meeting-house was built at the junction of Lowell and Pelham Streets. John Barnes, of Lawrence, was the first pastor after the reorganization, and since then the pastors have been as follows:

Rev. Charles Young, from June, 1856, to April, 1857.
 Rev. Elijah Mason, from April, 1857, to April, 1858.
 Rev. Nathaniel L. Chase, from April, 1858, to May, 1859.
 Rev. John L. Trefren, from May, 1859, to April, 1861.
 Rev. Charles R. Harding, from April, 1861, to April, 1862.
 Rev. Joshua B. Holman, from April, 1862, to April, 1864.
 Rev. William Hewes, from April, 1864, to April, 1865.
 Rev. Nelson Green, from April, 1865, to April, 1866.
 Rev. Larnard L. Eastman, from April, 1866, to April, 1869.
 Rev. James Noyes, from April, 1869, to April, 1872.
 Rev. George I. Judkins, from April, 1872 to April, 1875.
 Rev. Charles A. Cressy, from April, 1875, to April, 1877.
 Rev. S. C. Farnham, from April, 1877, to April, 1879.
 Rev. J. W. Walker, from April, 1879, to April, 1881.
 Rev. O. S. Baketel, from April, 1881, to April, 1884.
 Rev. H. H. French, from April, 1884, to April, 1886.
 Rev. Alexander McGregor, from April, 1886.

The church numbers one hundred and thirty-two members.

In 1833, or thereabout, there was an Episcopal Church formed in Methuen. It seems to have had a short existence as an organized body, and little can be learned about it, except that it held its meetings in "Wilson's Hall." In 1878 another Episcopal Church was organized under the name of St. Thomas'

Church, and a church-building erected on Broadway near Lawrence line. The membership is largely composed of residents of Lawrence.

The first rector was Rev. Belno A. Brown, whose energy and zeal contributed much to the success of the new church. The present rector is Rev. Thomas De Leary.

The Catholics have a large and prosperous branch of that church in Methuen. For many years there have been a large number of persons in the town, holding that faith, who attended church in Lawrence. In January, 1878, a movement was made by leading Catholics in Methuen, and approved by Father Gilmore, then Parish Priest in Lawrence, to establish religious services. The Town Hall was engaged, and has been occupied for that purpose on Sundays ever since. Father Marsden officiated from the beginning until his death nearly two years afterwards.

The pastors who succeeded him have been Father O'Farrell, about one year; Father Riley, about two years; Father O'Connell, about two years; Father Rowan, about two years; and Father Murphy, who is the present pastor. The congregation numbers about four hundred persons.

Methuen has her full share of social and charitable organizations.

Grecian Lodge, F. A. A. M., was formed in Methuen December 14, 1825, and seems to have prospered until the Anti-Masonic excitement overspread the country. In consequence of this it surrendered its charter in 1838. The lodge reorganized in 1847 under the old charter, but within the limits of Lawrence. Methuen Masons associated themselves with the old lodge until 1860, when John Hancock Lodge was constituted. It holds its meetings in "Currier's Building," where it has a cosy well-furnished lodge-room, and numbers about one hundred and fifty members.

Hope Lodge of Odd-Fellows was instituted in 1844, and for a time held its meetings in "Currier's Building." It surrendered its charter to the Grand Lodge in 1855. The lodge was reinstated in 1869, and since that time has flourished. It has pleasant rooms, well-furnished, in Dodge's Building, and numbers about one hundred and forty members.

A branch of the Royal Arcanum was established here in December, 1877. It commenced with a membership of twenty, and now has eighty-five. It holds its meetings in Corliss' Hall, and seems to be a prosperous society—if we can call an Insurance Association of that size *prosperous*, which has had only one death among its members for ten years.

The United Order of the Pilgrim Fathers also have a strong organization in Methuen. It was formed March 15, 1879, and numbers about one hundred members. They hold their meetings in the hall of the Grand Army of the Republic.

Wm. B. Green Post 100, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized in February, 1877, and has seventy-four members. It has one of the finest Grand Army

halls in the region, tastefully finished and elegantly furnished. As the Grand Army is composed only of veterans in the late war, the post cannot expect to increase much in numbers, but the zeal and interest of its members seem in nowise to diminish as time goes on.

In 1873 Minerva Lodge, Daughters of Rebecca, I. O. of O. F., was instituted. It numbers about ninety members.

The "Home Circle," numbering about fifty members, was organized in May, 1880. They hold their meetings in the hall of the Grand Army of the Republic.

A branch of the "United Order of Workmen" was organized January 25, 1886, and has thirty-one members. They meet in the hall of the G. A. R.

The Knights of Labor have a strong and well organized association in Methuen, and hold their meetings in Corliss' Hall.

Methuen does not appear to have been behind other towns of like population and wealth in efforts for literary culture and entertainment. About 1819 a society was formed called the "Addison Literary Society," for purposes of mental culture and improvement. We have been informed by Robert S. Rantoul, Esq., of Salem, that two or three years after, principally through the efforts of Timothy Chaxton, an English mechanic and machinist in the cotton mill, this society was transformed into what was afterwards known as a lyceum. And there is some reason to suppose that this was the beginning of the "lyceum" in this country. This society flourished nearly or quite twenty years, had a small library and erected a building in which to hold meetings on Broadway Street near Park Street. But after awhile, a sinful desire for dramatic entertainment entered into the minds of some of its members, and the acting of farces and short plays to some extent took the place of the sober discussions of great questions which formed the staple of the earlier exercises. The sober, substantial people of the town looked on more in sorrow than in anger, and refused to countenance such loose and immoral practices. From this time on the society declined and fell, and utter ruin overtook it with the performance of Richard III by some of its members.

The building was sold and removed to the west side of the river and converted into a dwelling-house, now owned and occupied by Hon. James O. Parker. For many years courses of lectures were given almost every winter, and sometimes a debating club was organized, until the easy access to Lawrence made it possible for Methuen people to attend entertainments there almost as easily as at home.

In 1873, and every year thereafter until 1887, the town voted that the proceeds received from dog licenses should be devoted to the purchase of a public library. From this small beginning the number of volumes increased year by year until in 1886 a library



of about twenty-five hundred well selected volumes was collected, which was much used by the people of the town, until the Nevins Memorial Library was opened to the public—January 1, 1887.

There is nothing in Methuen in which the citizens take so much pride, and for which they are so grateful, as the Nevins Memorial. The design of this institution is so well stated in the "Note by the Trustees," published in the catalogue of the library, that we quote it entire:

"The Nevins Memorial was founded in memory of the late David Nevins, who was born in Salem, N. H., Dec. 12, 1809, and was brought to Methuen by his parents at an early age, and passed here the years of his childhood. In his later years he assumed the duties of a citizen, and here at the family homestead he was seized with the illness which, on the 19th of March, 1881, unexpectedly closed his active and useful career.

"Desiring to promote the intellectual and moral well being of the community whose material interests had been so greatly advanced by his business sagacity and energy, it was his expressed intention to found, during his lifetime, an institution similar in scope to that of this Memorial. His sudden decease prevented his execution of this design, but the purpose he had declared was at once taken up by his widow and sons, and the Nevins Memorial Building was erected upon the site chosen and purchased for that use some years before his death. The building was planned and its construction supervised by Mr. Samuel J. F. Thayer, architect, of Boston; ground for its erection being broken March 27, 1883, and the completed structure first opened to the public June 11, 1884. It contains a public hall, ample in size and beautiful in decoration, a library, waiting and reading rooms, well adapted to their respective uses, and suitable rooms for the trustees and librarian. The government of the Memorial is vested in a board of seven trustees, five of whom, Mrs. Eliza S. Nevins and Messrs. David Nevins, Henry C. Nevins, Jacob Emerson and John H. Morse, were incorporated by the Massachusetts legislature of 1885 as permanent members. The two additional members are chosen by the town of Methuen for the term of two years, Dr. George E. Woodbury and James Ingalls being the present elective members.

"When experience shall have shown what amount is needed for the proper maintenance of the Memorial, it is the design of the founders to make an endowment sufficient to render it entirely self-supporting. The library comprises nearly ten thousand volumes of standard works, carefully selected, and covering a wide range of general literature and special topics. To Mrs. Ames was intrusted its entire organization, including the selection of the books, the details of classification and arrangement, and the preparation of the catalogue.

"We feel confident that the result of her labors will not only facilitate the use of the library for general readers, but will be found of particular advantage to those pursuing a systematic course of reading, or engaged in special studies. The end crowns the work."

The building is of brick, with freestone trimmings, of beautiful architectural design, and built in the most substantial manner. Every foundation wall and pier rests upon the solid rock, and the walls are exceptionally strong and heavy.

The building is finished in oak throughout, and all the ornamentation, within and without, is in the most exquisite taste. No expense was spared to make it a perfect work, according to the designs of the founders. The library, selected and arranged by Miss Harriet H. Ames, is admirably well chosen, and the catalogue, also arranged and prepared by her, is a well-nigh perfect specimen of the art of cataloguing. It is in two volumes, of nearly five hundred pages each, and is an encyclopedia in itself. The following inscription on the front of the building explains the purpose of the founders:

"This Hall and Library
erected and endowed by
Eliza S. Nevins, his widow
and by David and Henry C.
Nevins, his children,
is a memorial of
David Nevins,
Born 1809. Died 1881."

About three and a half acres of land surrounding the building have been set apart and tastefully laid out and ornamented with rare trees and shrubs. And all this beautiful and costly estate is placed in the hands of trustees, and is to be endowed with a fund to make it self-supporting, for the benefit of the inhabitants of Methuen in all coming time. Surely no more noble or lasting tribute could have been paid to the memory of a beloved husband and father, and no benevolence could have been made wider in its scope or more far-reaching in its influence. The intellectual growth and culture resulting from the use of this library and reading-room will only begin to be seen in this generation; the best results can never be known to those who have established this noble beneficence.

The beautiful and well-kept grounds will be an educator of no small influence, and many a home will be made pleasanter and more attractive from the example there perpetually shown.

The interest already manifested by the young people of the town in the use of the library, and the average high character of the books most sought for, must be to the generous founders a most pleasing feature of the opening of the library to the public.

The first newspaper published in Methuen was the *Iris*, which was removed here from Haverhill in 1833. It was supposed to have been printed as a campaign paper in the interest of Caleb Cushing, and was soon discontinued. The next newspaper was the *Methuen Falls Gazette*, which was first issued January 2, 1835, by S. Jameson Varney. It was "neutral in politics" and not published many years.

The *Methuen Transcript and Essex Farmer* was established in 1876 by C. L. Houghton & Co., and edited by Charles E. Trow, who soon after became its proprietor, and continued to edit the paper until it passed into the hands of Fred. A. Lowell, Esq., its present editor and publisher. It is a weekly paper of excellent moral tone, published every Friday, and the only newspaper now published in Methuen.

The *Methuen Enterprise* was established by Daniel A. Rollins March 6, 1880, and published by him till his death, March 25, 1882, and was a bright, readable, spicy sheet.

After his death it was purchased by Sellers Bros., and published by them until September, 1883, when it was merged in the *Lawrence Eagle*.

In 1826 or '27 a small fire-engine, the "Tiger," was bought, one-half the cost being paid by the Methuen Company, and the other half by Major Osgood, John Davis, Thomas Thaxter, George A. Waldo and J. W.

Carleton. Thomas Thaxter was the first foreman. There is no evidence that the town had any concern in its management. This was the only protection against fire until 1846, when the selectmen were authorized to purchase a new fire-engine and hose, and erect a house. This engine (The Spiggot) was manned by an active and efficient company, and did good service till 1870, when the steamer E. A. Straw, was purchased and the Spiggot laid aside.

Methuen now has an excellent fire department; the E. A. Straw Company of seventeen men, and the Mystic Hose Company of ten men, organized in 1878, all well trained and efficient.

In addition to this there are iron pipes laid through the principal streets, and connected with the powerful engines of the Methuen Company, through which water can be forced, over the principal portion of the village, in case of fire.

One of the first things done by the old settlers was to lay out a place to bury their dead. In 1828 the town voted "that there should be a graveyard provided in the town, somewhere near the meeting-house," and chose William Whittier and Joshua Swan to measure and bound out the said graveyard.

Their report to the town describes the lot as follows:—"Beginning with a small pine tree marked with the letter B, thence running southerly to a pine stump marked with B, twenty rods in length; thence to a pine tree marked with a B, northeasterly about six or seven rods in width, and so to another pine tree marked with a B, northwesterly about twenty rods, and so to the bounds first mentioned." This was undoubtedly the north end of the "old burying-ground" on Meeting-House Hill. In 1803 it was enlarged "on the south side," and a hearse was purchased "for the more convenient solemnization of funerals."

In 1772, the Selectmen were ordered to lay out a burying-ground in the west part of the town. They laid out one-fourth of an acre, on land given for the purpose by Richard Whittier. The lot was afterwards enlarged, and, as the ground became occupied, it was again enlarged in 1876.

The burial-ground on Lawrence Street was purchased and laid out about 1830.

These three burial-places comprise those owned by the town, and are now but little used.

Walnut Grove Cemetery was laid out by an association of individuals, in 1853. It is situated on the high land overlooking the village on the west side, and is a place of much natural beauty, which has been greatly increased by tasteful arrangement of the grounds, and beautiful memorials erected to the dead.

BUSINESS.—The Town of Methuen was at first almost exclusively an agricultural community. Still there is reason to believe that there was a variety of occupations in the town at an early day. There are traditions of coopers, tanners, hatters, shoemakers, morocco-dressers, and there is mention of "Iron

works" on the Spicket, in that part of Methuen now within the limits of Lawrence. Probably there were persons in the town to make almost everything required for use by the inhabitants. There was no village, and these mechanics were scattered over the town, and at first probably found small market for their products outside of the community immediately around them. The farmers were so far from market that their money incomes must have been very small. They depended on the city of Salem as a market for their produce, and their wood and timber was rafted to Newburyport. Hemp and flax perhaps found a market to some extent in Londonderry.

These places were the only outlets of importance for their surplus products, until after the city of Lowell was founded, when everything, except wood, was carried there, and the farmers found the new market greatly for their advantage. Lowell continued to be the principal market for agricultural products, until the building of Lawrence furnished a more convenient and, in some respects, better market than Lowell, and gave the farmers of Methuen as good facilities for the successful cultivation of the land as can be found in any part of New England. Nevertheless, it is a curious fact that the population of Methuen, outside of the village, is no larger now than at the beginning of the Revolutionary War. It is even doubtful if there is a much greater acreage of cleared land now than at that time. It is not to be supposed, however, that there are no more farmers now than then, or that the value of the agriculture of the town is no greater than it was a century ago. The system of farming is entirely changed, and the product of a single acre now frequently has a greater value than the entire crop of a large farm in the olden time.

From the old traditions, we should judge that the manufacture of hats has been carried on in Methuen from a very early date. There are several places pointed out in the east part of the town, as the site of ancient hatters' shops. The work was done entirely by hand, no doubt in a small way at first, and half a dozen men or less could carry on the whole business of a shop. Within the memory of many hatters now living, the manufacture was done entirely in this way. But, with the introduction of machinery, the business has been concentrated into a few factories, by which the production has largely increased. Nearly all the hats now made in the town, are manufactured at the factories of James Ingalls and J. Milton Tenney.

A similar statement would perhaps be true of the shoe business, which for many years has been an important industry in Methuen. In the early days shoemaking was not carried on to so great an extent as hatting. But within the recollection of many now living, there was a shoemaker's shop in every neighborhood and at almost every house.

Shoes were all made by hand, and the workmen took out the stock, all cut, from the shop of their em-



ployer, and carried it home to make up. In those days to be a shoemaker was to know how to make an entire shoe. Farmers' and shoemakers' wives and daughters "bound" shoes, and the board of the shoemakers formed an important part of the income in many families. It would have been hard to find a spot in Methuen, where in the still summerdays, the sound of the shoemaker's hammer did not penetrate. But after the war came on, and labor became scarce, machinery was devised to do the work which had been performed by hand, and the business began to centre into factories, like hatting, where, by the use of machinery, the production is largely increased.

In past times it is probable that more persons in Methuen have been dependent on the shoe business for a livelihood, than on the manufacture of hats. At present the shoe factory of Tenney & Co., is the only one in operation in Methuen.

The first store in town was opened by Abial Howe, at a building on Howe Street, nearly opposite the house of Charles L. Tozier. The exact date is unknown, but it is within the recollection of persons now living. Later, Esquire Russ opened another store a little south of the Russ place, but it does not appear that either of them had an extensive business.

It is not known precisely when Spicket Falls was first utilized as a water-power. A deed is in existence from the widow of John Morrill, dated December, 1709, in which she conveys to Robert Swan, for the sum of thirty pounds, one-fourth of a saw-mill and land "on Spicket River Falls, the mill that was built by and belonged to and amongst Robert Swan, John Morrill and Elisha Davis." Without doubt this was the first mill built. Afterwards a grist-mill was built on each side of the river, and as there was not business enough to keep them both running, it was agreed between them that they should run on alternate weeks. This arrangement was kept up until the cotton factory was built. The first cotton factory was built somewhere near 1812, by Stephen Minot, Esq., of Haverhill, on the north side of the river.

This was burned in 1818, and soon after rebuilt. In July, 1821, the whole privilege and lands connected therewith were purchased by the Methuen Company. The old carding or fulling-mill, which had stood on the south side of the Falls, was moved away and converted into a dwelling-house, which now stands on the north side of Pelham Street. In 1826-27 the brick mill was built as it now stands. In 1864 the property came into the possession of David Nevins, Esq., by whom it was largely increased in capacity and value, and to whose enterprise the town is greatly indebted for its prosperity in recent years. He erected a large addition to the brick mill, and introduced the manufacture of jute, which was continued until his death in 1881. The mill has since been kept in operation by his family. The principal manufacture of the Methuen Company has been cotton goods. "Methuen duck" has been for many years a

well-known article in the market, and "Methuen ticking" has always been a principal article of manufacture. After the death of Mr. Nevins the jute machinery was removed, and, in addition to duck and ticking, the Methuen Company now manufacture awning material and light and heavy cotton flannels.

In 1824 a saw-mill and grist-mill were built where the Methuen woolen-mill stands. They came into the possession of Samuel A. Harvey, Esq., by whom the business of the respective mills was carried on for some years. In 1864 the Methuen Woolen Company bought out the privilege, and erected a factory where the manufacture of woolen goods has been since carried on. The Arlington Mills have a large factory in Methuen, near the Lawrence line, built in 1881, devoted to the manufacture of fine cotton yarn. The other mills of this enterprising and prosperous corporation are situated a little below on the Spicket, but within the limit of Lawrence.

The extensive chemical works of Lee, Blackburn & Co. are also situated in Methuen. They produce commercial fertilizers and chemicals used in manufacturing processes.

The variety of manufacturing interests in the town, the nearness to Lawrence, and close connection by the horse-railroad, which has been in operation since 1867, have combined in times of business depression to prevent that utter stagnation in business, which has been so severely felt in isolated manufacturing towns having only one important industry.

We have thus presented such of the principal features in the history of Methuen, past and present, as space will permit. Many details have been omitted, and some subjects altogether neglected, which would doubtless be of interest to those acquainted with the town, but the limits assigned to this paper will not admit of an exhaustive history.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

DAVID NEVINS.

David Nevins was born in Salem, New Hampshire, December 12, 1809. His parents were John Nevins and Achsah Swan, who removed to Methuen, the native place of his mother, while David was quite young. He received such education as could be acquired at the public schools, and in 1824, at the age of fourteen was, apprenticed to Hall J. Howe & Co., of Boston, a dry goods commission house, and selling agents of the Methuen Company, then just beginning business. He remained with this firm until he reached the age of twenty-one years, and there laid the foundation of those business habits and methods which contributed so largely to his subsequent success. Immediately after coming of age he entered into partnership with Philip Anthony, of New



Very truly
Yours

Bedford, and carried on a flourishing business, fitting out whaling vessels and merchantmen for long voyages. During several years of his life he kept up his interest in shipping, in connection with his firm, and managed this branch of his extensive business so skillfully as to make it also one of his most profitable ventures. In 1838 he married Miss Eliza S. Coffin, of Nantucket, an estimable lady who still survives him. After remaining in New Bedford eight years, he left, and formed a partnership with George Bate Blake, in the dry-goods importing business, under the firm name of "George B. Blake & Co.," in Boston, and "Nevins & Co.," in New York.

While a member of this firm, he occasionally visited Europe, where he made the purchases for the house, and thus acquired an extensive acquaintance with the manufacturers of England and the Continent. Mr. Blake retired from the firm in 1845, and the New York house continued business under its old name. Soon after, Mr. Nevins re-established the Boston house under the name of "Nevins & Co." In 1846 he first became engaged in manufacturing, when with E. R. Mudge and others, he built the Victory Mills, at Schuylerville, New York, in which he was always a large owner. After the financial crash in 1857, he, with George Howe purchased the Pemberton Mills, in Lawrence, which had been built and proved a financial failure. Under the new management, the mills were run with great success until their fall on the evening of January 10, 1860. Mr. Nevins then purchased the ruins, formed a new company, and rebuilt the mills, getting them ready for operation early in the spring of 1861, and continued to operate them as president of the corporation and selling agent, successfully and continuously until his death. In 1864 he purchased the entire plant of the Methuen Company, which had suspended operations at the beginning of the war. The mill was not put in operation, however, until the succeeding year.

In 1870 the mill was greatly enlarged, and in 1871 he introduced the manufacture of fine and coarse jute fabrics. When he bought the mills, they furnished employment to about one hundred and fifty persons; when he died they required six hundred and fifty operatives, and his enterprise had been instrumental in largely increasing the population and business of the town. About 1868, the Stevens' Linen Works, of Webster, Mass., came into his hands through the failure of the former proprietors, and by his energy and ability it soon became a successful business enterprise, and continued so until his death. About 1874 he purchased the mills of the India-Bagging Company, at Salem, Mass., and two years later, the entire plant of the Bengal Bagging Company, of Salem, both of which had been unsuccessful business ventures. He soon made a success of both, and so increased the production of jute fabrics at these and his other mills, that at the time of his death he was the largest manufacturer of this staple in the United

States. His manufacture was not confined to one article, but embraced the four great staples of cotton, wool, jute and flax, and with marked success in all. He carried on his business so successfully that he accumulated a large fortune, and directly employed at his death, probably two thousand people, and indirectly afforded employment to many more.

His extraordinary business capacity was shown in nothing more clearly, than in his ability to take up a broken down business enterprise, infuse into it new life, and make it profitable for himself and the community in which it happened to be located. He was an excellent judge of men, and rarely made a mistake in the selection of those whom he was obliged to place in important positions. So systematically and perfectly had he organized his immense business, that at the time of his death all parts continued to run, like a perfect machine, without a jar or break, a splendid tribute to his foresight and ability, and the capacity and faithfulness of those to whom the details of his business were entrusted. Endowed with an iron constitution he was accustomed from early boyhood to his latest days, to severe and long continued labor, and no task was too difficult for him to undertake. His business career was characterized from the first by an indomitable energy, far-sighted policy and an unvarying attention to all the details. Through all the financial revulsions of over half a century his business credit remained untarnished, and an unvarying success rewarded his strict adherence to rules of probity and honor. In addition to his extraordinary mental powers, keen, quick and accurate in solving the intricate questions presented to him, was a rare taste and love for fine literature which amidst all his cares and duties he found time to gratify and cultivate. He was a devoted student of Shakspeare, Milton and the old English classics, and withal was remarkably well informed on all questions of the time. He delighted in nature, and whether driving his horses over his favorite country roads, or interesting himself in the details of his farm, he manifested a fondness for her beauty and works. He took great delight in the management of his farms, always keeping them in a high state of cultivation, and giving personal supervision to the details. He had a strong affection for the home of his boyhood, and always took an active interest in the affairs of the town. He seldom failed to be present at the town-meetings, and participate in the debates over town matters. Within two weeks of his death he attended the annual town-meeting, and as usual took an active interest in the proceedings. Mr. Nevins was of a social, genial nature, generous in his instincts and liked to entertain his friends. In personal appearance he was nearly six feet in stature, had a superb figure and a remarkably handsome, refined and intellectual head and face, and presented a commanding and patrician bearing.

A few days before his death, he took a severe cold,



which gradually grew worse, and developed heart difficulty, causing his death in the midst of his extremely active and useful career, on the 19th of March, 1881.

He left two sons,—David Nevins and Henry C. Nevins, who with their mother have continued his extensive and varied business enterprises.

CHAPTER L.

GEORGETOWN.

BY HENRY M. NELSON.

INTRODUCTORY AND TOPOGRAPHICAL.

THE town of Georgetown, the twenty-seventh in the sisterhood of Essex County, and numbering three hundred and three in the line of date of incorporation of the towns then existing within the limits of the State, has for its natal day April 21, 1838. Two municipalities besides Georgetown were at that session of the General Court granted permission "to be." One, a poor, feeble child of the commonwealth, on the extreme western border, was, just a week before, in exquisite raillery it would seem, ushered into the family as Boston Corner, and then, after a few brief years, with its square mile of territory and seventy-three inhabitants, was quietly or otherwise disposed of to our New York neighbors. The other, known originally as "Erving's Grant," became the town of Erving, in Franklin County. That town has had a moderate growth in a fairly, fertile agricultural district, and to-day continues with but slight increase from one census point to another. Georgetown is located about six miles northerly of the geographical centre of the county, and on the southern border of the Merrimac towns. It has an outline of five sides known as quinquangular, having that number of rather unequal sides, but bounded, however, by four towns only, viz: Boxford, extending along the west and south; Rowley on the southeast; Newbury on the east; Groveland along the entire north; and without any marked change of boundary line, exists to-day as when set off from Rowley, the mother-territory, nearly a half-century ago. Its greatest length is from west-northwest to east-southeast, nearly five and three-fourths miles. This is from the angle north of the house of Mrs. Edward Poor, on West Street, to a point about one-half mile southeast of the new cemetery in Byfield, and its extreme width, three and one-half miles, is from just north of the Thurlow estate, on Thurlow Street, to the noted boundary-mark where Rowley, Boxford and Georgetown lines diverge a large red oak tree of which the charred stump now

remains, known from early times as the "Three Sisters." A Sunday raccoon hunt by some of our local sportsmen is understood to tell the story of its destruction, a score or more of years ago.

The seventy-first degree west, Greenwich, at the Boxford boundary is just west of the B. & M. R. R., across which the railroad diverges to the west of the line near the residence of H. P. Chaplin, Esq., crossing Georgetown village very nearly where the First Congregational Church stands and Main Street a few rods northwest of the centre, having the eastern corner of Groveland and the villages of West Newbury and Merrimac on the same line at the north. Directly south is the most westerly section of Lynn, East Saugus, West Peabody, Middleton and Boxford village. Located within the latitude of $42^{\circ} 42'$ to $45'$, this town has exactly on the western line the city of Lawrence, the denser part of Methuen, the river side of North Andover, West Boxford, and eastwardly the entire town of Rowley, the Great Neck district of Ipswich, and along the ocean all that part of Plum Island within Rowley and Ipswich. The nearest point to the open Atlantic, from the village centre on the air line, is across Hog Island and just south of the division on Plum Island between Rowley and Ipswich, about ten and one-half miles. The entrance to Ipswich River, the same distance. In favoring conditions of wind and atmosphere, the beating of the surf on Plum Island, after or during a gale, and Ipswich beach before the storm is upon us, is distinctly heard in this town. The nearest point to Merrimac river, is at the boundary between Bradford and Groveland, distance three and one-fifth miles. Direct line to Haverhill bridge railroad station five and one-half miles. Nearest point to State line, a point about midway of Plaistow, N. H., just north of Kenoza Lake, six and three-fourths miles. City of Lawrence eight and one-half miles; and the factory bells are heard frequently and very clearly. The tide-water at Byfield not quite four miles distant.

The topographical features of the town are first, the Baldpate as the most prominent elevation, extending in its foot hills nearly to Central Street on its western side, and includes the entire southwestern section of the town. It attains at its highest altitude about four hundred feet above the sea, with a broad, level tract at its northeast base, terminating sharply at Rock Pond. This hill was known as Baldpate (or including the hill in Boxford near by, known as Shaven-crown) as the Bald hills from early times. The divisional line between Baldpate and its neighbor is distinctly defined, extending over the town limits just beyond the boundary line. This is a well-watered country, Lake Raynor and a small pond at the head of Raynor with a swampy margin, both in Boxford, absorbing all of the several streams, coursing down the southern slope. The eastern water-shed is into the westerly branch of Pen Brook, while the northwestern flowing into Half-Moon Meadow reaches Parker River just

westerly of Scrag Pond. The Uptake district, in the northwest, has its southern side only in Georgetown, quite precipitous and ragged. This district is principally in Groveland. Another hilly section west of Pen Brook and east of Elm Street, separated from the Baldpate district by the plain at South Georgetown called in early times Fair-face, extends from a gentle upland at the northern end of this section, three-fourths of a mile southerly, to an abrupt and peculiar termination, just in the rear of the residence of S. K. Herrick, anciently the home of Capt. Benj. Adams, designated formerly as "Tanner Adams." This is the "Red Shanks" locality, and has been known as such for at least one hundred and sixty years; why it bears this name is difficult to conjecture, although it may have been from the color of the rock formation. East Street traverses a natural notch up the western slope of this district. This tract at its highest point is not far from two hundred feet above the ocean, and has such singular features, that experienced travellers and scientists as Profs. C. H. Hitchcock and J. H. Huntington have noticed and remarked its peculiarities.

Old Californians have claimed, that this, with the moraines and broken country on the opposite side of Fair-face Plains, had striking resemblances to the mineral districts, with which they were familiar, and as evidences are apparent, mineral deposits have been sought for. The water-shed is toward Pen Brook on the one side, and the branch of Pen Brook which flows west of Elm Street, on the other. Still another elevated locality in this town was designated as the Rocky Hills, from the earliest period, showing that familiarity with the peculiar natural features of the place, which results in a characteristic name. Along the base of this rocky front, may have been an Indian trail, travelled by them while on their inland journeys, and from the southern margin of this ragged ledge, our fathers no doubt first saw the country beyond. From this point, just in the rear of the house of E. S. Sherburne, begins an extended tract of upland of varied character, moderate elevation and of peculiar features, unlike any others in town, more especially in the northern section, or in that part known in modern times as Atwood's Hill. Here is a sharp ascent of perhaps one hundred feet, rising quite abruptly from the narrow intervals of Pen Brook below. The country eastwardly is broken and undulating, rising, however, on the south at the Searl place, to a sufficient height to give an attractive prospect. This upland region extends to Tenney Street on the southeast, with a descent on the northeast, to the indentation known as Spruce swamp, encircling a diminutive pond of the same name. The water-shed from this tract, embracing the country from North Street to Marlborough, or Elders Plain, as formerly called, and Tenney Street, is into Pen Brook along the southwest to the northwest side, and on the northern side into Parker River and also into the brook,

which, flowing from Spruce Pond by a northerly course, runs into Parker river.

In the east the waters take a new channel, seeking their level at a branch of Muddy Brook, one of the main feeders of Mill River, that prominent feature in the topography and history of the mother town of Rowley. This same brook also receives the waters of the southerly slope of Long Hill, an elevation having an altitude of two hundred and thirty-three feet, the summit of which is in Georgetown, with its easterly side in Rowley. Here again the water fall of the north is into Parker River, through Wheeler's Brook, and one or two of its branches; but further to the eastward into Great Swamp Brook, another of the numerous feeders of Mill River. Between the eastern branch of Wheeler's Brook (a stream which enters Parker River in Newbury, about one-half mile from the town boundary) and Great Swamp Brook, is a considerable part of the Byfield district, of slight elevation, most of the area being a plain of light soil, known on its eastern side as "Rye Plain," from a very early date.

In tracing the brooks and streams of the town, Parker River naturally becomes the central object. It flows along the northern boundary, at some points so near, as if with an eagerness to cross, and at none of its windings, hardly three-fourths of a mile within the town. Its head waters are but a short distance from Great Pond in Andover, fed by a small pond, and a few streams in West Boxford. Entering Georgetown its first course is through Haseltine's meadow, absorbing the brook from Half-moon meadow, then taking Scrag Pond in its course, now a mere quagmire of bushes, it reaches Rock Pond, a fine sheet of pure water of forty or more acres, and hurrying on by the outlet at its northern end, it enters by a northerly curve, at about eighty rods distance, Lake Pentucket, of perhaps one hundred acres, and passes out at its southeastern margin. At this point, in volume, it begins to show its powers as the servant of the coming man. The Englishman who, on his return home, wrote such a glowing account of Parker River, which he claimed to have explored a score or two of miles into the interior, enlarging upon its great width, making it in resource almost a rival to the Thames, drew on his imagination like a true Munchausen or a modern speculator in Western and Florida lands, and no doubt had a satisfactory sale, for a history so marvelous and entertaining.

One-half mile beyond the outlet, a vigorous brook, it receives through Pen Brook, all the surplus of Lake Raynor and the adjacent country, the watershed of an area of not less than two thousand acres; this grand tribute added, after receiving a slight stream from the north, and the Spruce Pond Brook near the Hilliard tannery, at a mile beyond, it reaches the territory of our northern neighbor.

While at an early period both of our *ponds* were recorded with the names they now bear; the stream be-



tween Scrag Pond and Rock Pond was named "the brook that runneth from Scrag Pond," simply, that part of Parker River which connects Rock and Pentucket Ponds was "Rock Pond Brook," and "that which issueth out of Pentucket Pond" was, when designated, recorded as Crane Brook.

Aside from the limited Long Hill section, which is a supply through Muddy Brook for Mill River, wholly a Rowley stream, until in the salt marshes northeast of the ox-pasture it unites with the Parker, and together they journey to the sea; the whole rainfall of this town, besides that which falls on two or three thousand acres of land in West Boxford and North Andover with that along Lake Raynor, seeking its natural level, enters Parker River, either before crossing into Groveland or even after reaching Newbury.

These brooks and streams—seven in number, and their branches, which are of themselves permanent brooks—are bounded by meadows of varying width, in places a mere fringe of intervals, but mostly of a width of many rods, of peaty soil, aggregating, not less than five hundred acres. This meadow-land of itself was a prize in the eyes of the first settlers. These brooks, bordered by such extensive natural clearings, had a value then that to-day we can scarcely realize. Rowley had none of these fresh meadows at or near the town. The "large accommodations" offered by the General Court of Massachusetts Bay to Mr. Ezekiel Rogers and his company in the winter of 1638 included these *especially* valuable lands in the territory now known as Georgetown. The location was accepted, however, without any definite knowledge of the land of the interior. Neighbors near enough for aid and assistance when needed, with land sufficient for the support of the plantation, was one requisite; another was water communication with Boston. Both were included in the offered grant. All the seaboard in the vicinity of Boston had been already occupied.

Between Newbury, a compact little village of four or five years' growth, not far from the entrance to the river Parker, and Ipswich, already a plant of strength and vigor, having watchful friends at court, was a nearly level tract of three or more miles in width, and at Boston was probably not understood to be included in the privileges of the already-established towns. So near the doors of both towns this pleasant locality became familiar to those who journeyed from Ipswich to Newbury to and fro; and as the limits of the two towns may not have been very carefully drawn, a few settlers, more adventurous or selfish than their associates, had opened up their little clearings, and it is probable had settled here.

The winter of 1638 and 1639, the first winter of Mr. Rogers and his twenty families in New England, was spent in Salem, and was one of suspense and uncertainty. The original company numbered perhaps one hundred persons. One hundred and twenty pas-

sengers was the limit at this time by colonial law for a vessel of two hundred tons burden.

Mr. Rogers, according to Johnson, had given Messrs. Eaton and Davenport encouragement, and perhaps a partial promise, that he would join them in the Connecticut colony, and some of the company having relatives there, as Matthew Boyes it is known had, a party were sent around to investigate and report.

A disturbed feeling having for some time existed in the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, at the widespread movement toward emigration to Connecticut, by planters already settled in Watertown and other places, the officials were led to make strenuous efforts to retain the new arrivals, and special inducements were offered.

Mr. Rogers was well known to the Puritans, both here and in England, as a man of marked ability and high moral worth, and to secure him and his company, some of whom were men of education and perhaps of fortune, and all of the best material for the building of the State, was a work which promised good returns. Those who were already settled in these infant colonies were anxiously looking for emigrants. Men and women of any rank or station were welcomed, who, to maintain a pure faith, were ready to forswear all that England, with the ease and pomp of the State Church, could offer. More than once had the General Court ordered public thanksgiving for the "arrival of persons of special use and quality," and for "safe arrival of ships and many passengers." No mere adventurers were wanted; no schismatics; these were returned from whence they came, and shipmasters warned, under penalty, not to repeat the offence.

Some rivalry is manifest toward Connecticut, probably of a fairly friendly nature; but as regards Mr. Rogers and his company with that colony, the inducements to remain were presented so forcibly that on the return of the party sent for investigation, a definite settlement was made, and the location for the plantation fixed. Another moving cause for the intense pressure used to keep them within the limits of the Massachusetts Colony, was the knowledge that this little company were but the pioneers of a grand exodus of "many persons of quality in England, who depended on Mr. Rogers to choose a fit place for them." The privations of the earlier settlers had in a degree passed; the country in the vicinity of Boston, as has been said, was occupied and gradually becoming cleared; roads opened from one town to another; the foundations of a college laid, and a permanent occupation of the country assured. Mr. Rogers had confidential relations with families of influence in England; he came here as their trusted agent, and, in consequence, these especially "large accommodations" were granted him, with the fond anticipation that at an early day many others would follow. These families of wealth and quality, whoever they were, will perhaps never be known by us, and their

names are now locked in oblivion. Late researches in England by Mr. Waters, of Salem, however, show intimate personal relations between the family of Oliver Cromwell and the immediate family of Mr. Rogers, and possibly they might be traced from this distinguished point.

The conflict between the Cavalier and Roundhead soon raged madly, and thoughts of a voluntary exile to New England, for peace of conscience, gave place to hymns of triumph at home. The rise of the Commons,—the people; a change of a kind such as the world never saw before; a king at the tribunal of the people. Like the image seen in vision by the Eastern monarch, unfortunately part was of iron and part clay; yet truly a mighty work was accomplished, which the world will never forget. All this stopped emigration, as in a moment; and "Mr. Ezekiel Rogers' plantation" is believed to have closed the period by which emigrants came here for settlement, as an organized body, before leaving England.

In the spring of 1639, Mr. Rogers and the new planters, their pinnace laden with the household beginnings of a new republic, anchored at the place designated for the plantation. Eight hundred pounds were expended to buy the claims of the few who had preceded them. Thomas Nelson, the deputy, surveyor, road locator, and the agent of the Colonial government in settling boundary lines, gave of his wealth to establish the plantation, and in his will, nine years later, dated in England, where he was at the time, perhaps there to receive the estate of an elder brother, killed at Marston Moor, refers to "goodman Seatchwell" (Shatswell of Ipswich), to whom he "payd eleven pounds & seventeen pounds" for "his fferme," probably one of the settlers who preceded them.

Clearing land, seed-sowing, the erection of a meeting-house, and also several common houses for shelter, occupied their first year. These common houses were the homes of the two hundred or more settlers for perhaps three years. The lands were held and cultivated in commonalty, for at least that length of time.

Now begins the struggle for the means of living. The dependence on the yearly harvest for existence, until the crops of the next season were gathered, is an impressive feature, both of colonial and town legislation. Rarely any surplus carried over, the pressing need of husbanding all their resources, is seen from the beginning of the history of this plantation; and this was but a type of every other.

The General Court passed a law requiring the inspection of corn, to see that none of a quality fit for human food is heedlessly fed to animals. Here at the outset, with a wise foresight, a community-system was established, where careful watch-care could be had, the true spirit of socialism made imperative, and all waste and selfishness prevented.

Here was a true paternal government, and the result was a most symmetrical system. Streets were located

and lot-laying, with a care and exactness such as but few, if any, other town in New England had. Without change or alteration, those streets exist to-day, and the same careful system of lot-laying was inherited by the descendants of the first settlers, as will be seen in all town action on the division of lots, down to a late day.

In the fall of 1639, the plantation was incorporated, and "Mr. Ezechi: Rogers' plantation shalbee called Rowley." No controversy or war of words, as in this day; but positive, immediate action. Having a limited harvest that year, the General Court granted exemption from taxation in 1640, because, says the statute, "of their hindrance in planting."

When they forsook their common houses, it was to occupy humble family homes, but located so near each other that close communal relations must for some time have continued to prevail.

With roofs covered with thatch, there was at all times great danger from fire, and one early town ordinance called for ladders of a certain length for every house. But it is with the backwoods with which we have to do.

When the first explorations of their territory in the interior took place, it is of course impossible to tell. Naturally, on arrival, curiosity would be awakened to know what the country eight miles from the settlement had that was of immediate value to them. It was theirs, of that they were assured by a satisfactory title, a grant from the Government of Englishmen. No sagamore had as yet asserted his claim, as was done at a later day. The Indians who were here were evidently a dwindling race, and so little regarded that probably because of the annoyance, at about this time, the sagamore of Agawam was forbidden by Colonial law, to enter a white man's house. Curiosity would, of course, be excited by a tramp through the dense wood-growth up the hill now called Prospect, and from the summit of that hill, on seeing the delightful and unlooked-for view, one would then very naturally give to the hill the name it has always borne, and then looking westward, see our Georgetown hill, with its top cleared and barren of trees. Conspicuous as it must have been, encircled everywhere by forest, how naturally would the word Baldpate spring to the lips, and ever after this hill bear this peculiar name.

Besides these first attempts to get a clue to the secrets of the wilderness came eager questionings of their Newbury and Ipswich neighbors. Dummer and Spencer, of Newbury, had gone up Parker River to the falls in 1635, and had the right granted to erect a mill. Two years later the attention at Boston was turned toward "Shaweshin, to see whether or not it be a fitt place for a plantacon." This settlement was not granted, however, until 1641, and then to the town of Cambridge on certain conditions.

As soon as settlements were contemplated, there



may have been those who were bound to know for themselves whether "Shaweshin was fitt for habitation," and Newbury men crossed what is now Georgetown. The opening of roads is always an important work in new countries. Most of the towns were summoned by the General Court, once and again, for their delinquencies in the neglect of the highways.

The first roads for Rowley to attend to were with Newbury and Ipswich, and the law required highways to be opened, of six, eight and ten rods width, to avoid marsh and miry spots. Early in the year 1640 the need of accurate knowledge of their grant led to a sufficiently careful survey of the western boundary, now the Bradford and Boxford lines, to show that the eight miles in a direct line from the meeting-house in Rowley would not reach for two or more miles, the boundary line between Rowley and Cochitawick, that Mr. Rogers claimed he and his plantation were entitled to. Mr. Rogers pressed his claim for this land "upon Merrimack, near Cochitawick," with such tenacity, that, after some hesitation, his wishes were granted, and the first step was taken for a corrected line between Rowley and Andover, that fixed the boundary quite eleven miles from the centre of the village at Rowley. This action of the court was at the October session of that year.

The survey and running of the eight mile direct line from the meeting-house towards the western bounds, if carefully done, must have led directly across the central part of the tract now Georgetown.

The experience of Thomas Nelson would probably designate him for the work, and yet inaccurate, perhaps, at the best, for complaints of defects in the running of town lines were constantly coming before the General Court. These defects are explained when we consider that the lines ran through forest and bog rough and untraveled. Compensation for a prior grant of five hundred and fifty acres to Governor Endicott, and found to be within the limits of the grant to Mr. Rogers, was one cause of a change of boundary, beyond the eight mile limit into the interior. Besides, the original grant of May 13, 1640, declared the bounds in the other direction to be a "cross-line diameter from Ipswich Ryver to Merrimack Ryver."

Had this been adhered to it would have included most of the New Meadows, now Topsfield, and perhaps also the country of the Wills-hill men, in Middleton, a district which seems to have been conceded to these settlements without controversy, at an early date. Perhaps, with Endicott, they could also lay claim to prior grants. The concession of all this tract, bordering on the "Ipswich Ryver," when the boundaries of the grant were so definitely and clearly stated, was also compensated for by this extension westward.

Most of the grants of that day, private or corporate, were loosely drawn, with but a vague and indefinite idea of the geographical situation of the locality, and

disputes in consequence were rife for a long time afterward. Salem had as its grant all the country, from Ipswich River to the sea on one side, Rowley, all between this river and Merrimack on the other. In 1639 these were adjoining towns by Colonial action, but how few in Essex County realize it to-day. This Rowley territory, thus parting Ipswich and Newbury, turned both at the right and left, a few miles from the sea, effectually closing to both towns any extension of growth in the interior, and doubled in area both of those towns combined. At the rapidity with which emigrants had been flocking here for years, and towns becoming incorporated at that time, such "large accommodations" were unquestionably given to the Rowley grantees, to be held in reserve for the large number who were expected to follow Mr. Rogers.

CHAPTER LI.

GEORGETOWN—(Continued).

EARLIEST LAND-GRANTS AND PIONEER SETTLEMENTS.

TWELVE years after the readjustment of the western boundary, Francis Parrot, the town clerk of Rowley, entered in the book of records, under date 1652, this town action, viz.: Thomas Mighill has granted "twenty-three Akers at the place called the pen, where young cattell were formerly kept." The land was said to adjoin Mr. Humphrey Rainers' land, perhaps not attached, but near by. This was stated, evidently to make the record clear. Also laid out "Fifteen Akers meadow commonly called Spruce meadow, and formerly in the possession of John Brocklebank."

The above is the first record on the town books, having a reference to the territory, now the town of Georgetown.

Thomas Mighill, who began at this early day, to show his intentions of making a permanent settlement in this part of the town, was very prominent in the affairs of the church and the town of Rowley from the beginning, and was elected deacon in December, 1639. He was a man of considerable wealth for the time, had many household furnishings brought from England, of which one heavy, leather-seated chair, now owned by some of his descendants in the family of the writer, is said to be a part. Mr. Mighill in everything pertaining to the interests of the town, was active and useful. His death was untimely, occurring March 14, 1664-65. Had he lived, he would probably have made an extensive clearing here at an early day. His will in the possession of Chas. P. Mighill, of Rowley, is an interesting document. Mr. C. P. Mighill and brother, who are direct descendants through Stephen, the youngest son of Thomas (as are all of the name or lineage in this



vicinity), own and reside, upon the original lot on Wethersfield Street in Rowley, laid out to Mighill in 1643, nearly two hundred and fifty years ago. Another fact worthy of mention, is, that this lot in Georgetown at the pen land, has been in the family of the present owner, Mr. Humphrey Nelson (a lineal descendant through a great-granddaughter of Stephen), for many years. Not long after it was laid out, a part of it was fenced, and styled a field. This was done either by the first grantee, or Thomas, the eldest son. In this record, is the first mention of the herding of the young cattle on this common land. Pen Brook constantly referred to, in the land conveyances and allotments of the first hundred years, was the westerly bounds of one piece of meadow, laid out at this time. This is near Union Cemetery. The pasturing of the young stock in these upper commons, began, no doubt, some years before, and had become the established practice. Herdsmen were sent to give the care necessary for the protection of the cattle and sheep. A little later, in a descriptive record, is this, 1661: "Adjoyning vnto the s^d Land at the end where the pen house stood."

There was, it is probable, good pasturage here, for while the country generally was heavily timbered, no doubt, much of the area was free from shrub growth and underbrush, the result of the fires set by the Indians, when grasses, of course, would start up abundantly. This firing of the weeds and valueless growth continued later on.

In the list of the charges for the town of Rowley for the year 1666, is this: "Left, Samuel Brocklebank for burning ye young cattle walk, 5 shillings." This is the first record for town labor in Georgetown.

The pen house had been moved further up. The land spoken of was sold in 1661, "to John Brocklebank, by the men appointed to sell Land, to pay the Legacy to Ipswich Rogers," the record rather curtly says. One of the conditions of Mr. Ezekiel Roger's will was, that the church and town of Rowley, on the receipt of the bulk of his property, were to pay eight-score pounds in country pay, to his nephew, Ezekiel Rogers, of Ipswich, two years after the testator's death. Mr. Rogers died January 23, 1661, and this land was by order of the town sold soon after. This same John Brocklebank, was the youngest son of Jane, a widow, who with her two sons, Samuel the eldest being a boy of eight, were among the original Rowley company.

The Spruce meadow may have been at what is now known as such, south of the Hilliard place on North Street, and yet it seems a question whether at that early period, any land in that locality had been entered.

One fact seems apparent, that the earliest movement for a settlement of Georgetown, was east of Pen Brook, on Mr. Humphrey Nelson's farm, and in that locality on East Main Street. The upland along the Rocky hills, with the meadows southerly, was the

first to be laid out. That extensive tract of meadow along Pen Brook to its source, had been explored at as early a date as cattle had been herded, and at some time prior to 1652, a grant was made to Elder Humphrey Rainer, of at least, most of the land from Lake Raynor for some distance down, and possibly nearly to the pen-land. All the deeds given in what is now South Georgetown as late as seventy-five years afterwards, which have as a boundary these meadows along Pen Brook, describe these pieces of meadow as the "Elder's," or "Elder Rainer" meadow. It can be safely said that this worthy member of a family, noted in the early church annals of New England, was the first landholder in South Georgetown, and probably in the town.

In describing the land laid out to Mighill, it seems to have been well understood at the time where the Rainer meadows were. It was comparatively easy to secure pasturage and protection for the farmer's herds through the summer, but with so little uncleared land and the entire human food-supply of all dependent on the harvest from the land they had slowly and laboriously cleared, the hay from the Rainer meadows was carefully secured and carted to Rowley. The improvement of their highways began to be necessary; in 1661, says the record, of a ten acre lot of land laid out to John Brocklebank; that, "The Town hath secured a sufficient and convenient highway for driving cattle and carts, as they may have occasion to make use of it." The value of the hay from the salt marshes, tradition says was not understood by the Rowley people, until a bull lost from the settlement in the autumn was caught in the spring after a winter of grazing on the marsh grasses in such fine condition, that ever after, these lands were regarded as their most valuable treasure.

The land, both upland and meadow, now owned by S. K. Herrick, has by the elderly people until lately, been called the Rainer land or meadow. The pond in Boxford, at the foot of Baldpate Hill, had the name of "Elders" in the documents of the early period, but later as "Elders, or Baldpate," finally as "Baldpate." It seems, however, like nothing more than justice to an honored name in the early history of Rowley, one who served as deputy in 1649, and especially in the fact, that he was the original owner of the lands bordering this brook, so noted a locality in the early history of Georgetown, to perpetuate his name here by giving this pond the permanent name of Lake Raynor. The earliest name the plain now known as "Marlborough" had, was "Elders Plain," named for this same Humphrey Rainer. It disappears as a Rowley name early in the eighteenth century, and except to a few who make local history a study, has become unknown and as though it had never existed there. A very sad and pathetic story is revealed, where Jachin Rayner, a nephew, about the year 1700, petitions for right to convey land in the interest of a son, who as a confirmed invalid, needed support. This land thus



deeded was in the middle commons, at some point west of Muddy Brook. Jachin was a Rowley tanner and figures prominently for a time. Rev. John Rainer, a brother of Elder Humphrey, educated at Cambridge, England, was the second minister of Plymouth, Mass., dying in Dover, N. H. He and Matthew Boyes, of Rowley, married sisters. They were ladies from a family of distinction in England.

From a grant of land to Samuel Brocklebank of seventy-five acres in 1661, there were fifty, the record states, which was purchased of William Hobson's widow, who before marriage was Anne Rainer, a daughter of Humphrey Rainer; the balance was his own lot and land previously belonging to Matthew Boyes, who was as we have seen also connected with the Rainer family.

These records show the influence of the Rainers in the earliest times, and the intimate connection, which the family in its various branches had with the earliest history of Georgetown.

This piece of upland so early secured by Samuel Brocklebank, was situated easterly of Elm Street, extending southerly nearly to South Georgetown, the locality known at a later day as Fairface plain. The record says this land was bounded on the north by a highway, where cattle used to go over the brook to the pen land, laid out to Thomas Mighill; the westerly side of the tract adjoined a highway leading to Andover; Pen Brook along the east, and extending unto Mr. H. Rainer's land. This Andover road was unquestionably at that time the way for Newbury and Rowley settlers to visit the Rowley Village (now Boxford) people, also the settlement on the Shawshin, then Andover.

Several families had already settled in Boxford; a road by order of the General Court, had been opened from Ipswich to Andover several years before, and to connect with that along Elm Street, the earliest road opened through what is now part of Georgetown.

East Main Street, from Marlborough Village to Elm Street, was as at present. There was some change at Elm Street, the record referring to a highway now in use, and where it is to run, but probably essentially the same. Leaving Elm, this old way passed along Brook Street, crossing Central, into Chaplin's Court, and over Fairface plain to Mrs. W. M. Shutes' on Nelson Street (known years after as Fairface highway), and along Nelson Street, to the residence of Messrs. Patton and Metcalf, in Boxford. About thirty years later Thomas Palmer, had land set off to him, described as extending on one side, from "Elders pond to ye old high way from Andover to Newbury, on ye south side of ye bald hills; which was a continuation of this ancient road, and crossed the Patton and Metcalf farm to connect with the Ipswich and Andover road. This seventy-five acres of land of Samuel Brocklebank's, also included the present homestead of Melvin G. Spofford, upon which a house was built soon after.

The present mansion-like dwelling-house of Mr. Spofford is, in part, at least, unquestionably very ancient, and tradition has it that some portion of the original house, probably the westerly front, is included in this.

In Humphrey Rainer, Thomas Mighill, Samuel and John Brocklebank, we have the pioneers who opened for settlement, the town of Georgetown. At about this time, the country west of the Pen Brook, including all that territory which in 1685 was incorporated as Boxford, was known as "Village lands." Not long before, in 1649, measures had been taken for a settlement, in that part of Rowley situated on the Merrimac River. These lands became at once known as "Merrimac lands," and the division made between what was later known as the Village lands. The settlement had the name of "Rowley Village on the Merrimac," for a time, but in 1675, was incorporated as Bradford.

Boxford for some time had been known simply as Rowley Village, and so continued, even after it had received its corporate name. Zaccheus Gould, of Topsfield, the ancestor of all the Goulds originating in this locality, comes prominently before us in connection with Georgetown's early history, at a period soon after 1650. From the vast land grants which he held, it would seem as if he had something of the spirit of a land speculator and grabber. By some unknown parties he had been employed as an agent to purchase lands, and an extensive tract of not less than three thousand acres, including nearly all of Georgetown west of Pen Brook, was for some consideration, secured to him. Circumstances preventing its disposal, to the parties for whom it was intended, it was sold to Joseph Jewett, of Rowley, as a deed on record says, "for eighty od pounds." It further says, that this was "one sixt part of village land belonging to Rowley, which the sayd Gould bought of Jewett." Carelessly estimated, this evidently was the tract previously named. Gould adds to the above, "As alsoe, the one half of village land, which I, the sayd Zaccheus Gould, bought of Mr. Ezekeiel Rogers & Matthew Boyes." This was dated July 2, 1661, and Mr. Jewett had died February 26th of the same year. Jewett had doubtless been the representative of the town of Rowley, in confirming the grants of Village lands.

There are several deeds on record, of these original grants to Peabody, Bigsbye, Stiles, Gould, Dorman and others, bearing dates from May to July, 1661, and in each the grantors are Philip Nelson and others, as the executors of Mr. Jewett, who probably died suddenly, as the wording of each is, "he having departed this life before a legal assurance was made."

It was necessary that this claim, which Gould had upon what is now Georgetown, should be closed, and on the same date, July 2, 1661, we find Jewett's executors, doubtless by authority of the town of Rowley, selling Gould two-sixths parts village land in Box-



ford; the previous day Stiles and Reddington having had their lands conveyed. From the action of the town of Rowley December 20, 1658, more than two years before, it would seem that Jewett had a claim upon this three thousand acre tract at that time. As a persuasive to yield his claim,

"It was Agreed and Voted at a general and Leagull towne meeting, that Mr. Joseph Jewett, Should have a thousand Acres of Land in ye North, beyond ye Hoeslimes part of ye thousand, in exchange of Three thousand Acres of Land, which is to be laid out as conveniently as can bee, for ye Town of Rowley, in ye village land about ye bald hills, and hee shal have forty Acres of Meadow, as conveniently as can bee with yo town land."

This town action towards liquidating Mr. Jewett's claim (however his claim was founded), began to look like an attempt for a settlement. It is doubtful whether this proposition was accepted at the time; if it was, then the action of Gould with the executors, the July after Jewett's death, was in the form of an acquittance to any claim he had on this famous tract, so tossed about in shuttlecock fashion. Perhaps, in those early days, having hopes that a more speedy settlement of the wilderness would follow, special privileges were granted to such as Jewett and Gould, that they might be encouraged to stimulate and hasten emigration. In the villages along the sea, there was doubtless a fixed timorousness, from fear of prowling Indians; and settlers in the interior gave a sense of protection, and were, to a certain extent, a safeguard.

The colonial laws forbidding persons journeying alone, receiving Indians into the houses of the colonists, and similar enactments, whether from a troubled conscience, because of known wrong in dealing with the Indian, or whatever the cause, all show a sense of lurking danger. To the herdsmen in their loneliness at the pen-house on the rocky hills, there must have been fear in a special manner continually with them, not probably from their aboriginal neighbors of Pentucket and Agawam, but from the unsubjected tribes of the wilderness beyond. Wild and ferocious beasts, and possibly savage men, made every sense alert, and their life here certainly was no holiday task. The nights may not have altogether been spent here, but the days most assuredly were.

While harvesting the hay on the Rainer meadow one can imagine their watchfulness and their thoughts of probable danger. The frequent stories of frontier life are of death from the Indian arrow or bullet, while at work haying in the meadows. When the men of every household were ordered to have their muskets with them while in the meeting-house on the Lord's or lecture days, there was fear of a subtle enemy, and how numerous and powerful they had no possible means of knowing. We, to-day, know that they were but comparatively few in number, but their methods of warfare were such that imagination vastly magnified the numbers of the foe and greatly increased the timorousness and alarm. Besides, in spite of continual colonial restriction against supplying

the Indians with arms or ammunition, there were from the first, those who withdrawing from the settlements, defied the law, and living apart from the white man, fraternized with the Indian to the Englishman's fear and often injury.

At the time the young cattle of the Rowley planters were first herded above Pen Brook, on this tract, which was sometimes called the "Upper Commons," only the few families which were then located at each of the plantations, Pentucket and Cochicowick (Haverhill and Andover), shut off the frontier. All beyond, both north and west, was an untraversed wilderness.

At a later day both of these towns were raided, once and again by Indians, bringing dismay and death to many a peaceful home. The locality, now Georgetown, was doubtless a favorite Indian fishing ground, often visited. Many of the rude Indian household utensils have been turned up by the plough near the brooks and Parker River, and also at a distance from them; by the shores of the ponds; and in Byfield, near Warren Street, quite a large storehouse of cutting instruments and stone points has been uncovered. Perhaps more prolific fields for these coveted relics of a buried past than any other are Parker River, in the vicinity of the woolen-mill, and the southeasterly slope of the foot-hills of Baldpate.

On the warm sunny hillsides near Baldpate, which are sheltered from the driving blasts of winter, the race who got the start and came before us had their frequent camping-ground.

The Indian became extinct in this immediate locality about a century ago; the last representatives were Papahama, a man who died in Groveland, and another who died at Captain George Jewett's, in Rowley.

When our fathers first saw them they were shrunken from their former condition; perhaps they would have rallied and evolved a partial civilization like their New York neighbors, but it was not to be. Another race doubtless preceded them, leaving only faint traces behind.

Professor Putnam, the anthropologist and archaeologist, if we mistake not, places the period of the stone age, to which the triangular stones found buried deeply in the gravel belong, as pre-historic and the work of a prior race; the labor of man just beginning to realize his position, his relations to the animal world around him, and his undeveloped power. These peculiar stones are occasionally found here, and of various sizes, but having similar outlines. A furore for collecting Indian curios was awakened here some years ago, and intensified by the *Georgetown Advocate*, through its junior editor, H. N. Harriman, Esq., who is himself an ardent investigator and enthusiastic collector.

Returning to the early land grants, it is recorded that March 23, 1651, Anthony Crosbie had seven hundred acres laid out; the deed says near Elder's Pond, whether in Georgetown or Boxford it is impossible to



say; but in 1672 he had seventy acres laid out in Georgetown, located somewhere between North Street and Marlborough, and recorded in the Rowley book as "Crosbie's farm," adjoining land of Francis Parrot, also Reedy Meadow, and Deacon Thomas Mighill's land. A part of this land was in the right of Philip Nelson.

This Crosbie was the first physician in Rowley and probably a son of Cushins Crosbie, one of the first settlers of Rowley. Perhaps his death or the Indian war of three or four years later prevented his settlement, as there is no record of any occupancy.

In 1661, besides the Brocklebank grant east of Pen Brook, was an allotment of land, near and on the west side of Pentucket Pond, to Mary, the widow of Mr. Ezekiel Rogers. This lot was bounded on the east end by a highway leading to Andover, and as this highway was probably the Andover Street of to-day, the lot must have reached the town centre, and included the land between the two ponds, eastward to the centre. Those who settled on Mrs. Rogers' land, more than half a century afterward, had farms at several points on this very tract, from above Pond Street westward to beyond Main Street. On the south and west it was bounded by common land. This was a grant in the interest of Thomas Barker (the first husband of Mrs. Rogers), who died in 1650. It was to make his lot proportionable to the lower lots, and a large lot at this distance from the town would not exceed in value a small area there.

January 22, 1663-64, another tract, containing three hundred and seventy acres, was laid out to Mrs. Rogers, also in the right of Thomas Barker. This was situated on the north side of the pond known as Pentucket, and also on the north side of the brook running in and out of the pond, westerly to the great rock, and extending easterly to a marked tree, to the brook which "issueth out of the pond runneth into the Crane meadow, so-called."

At this early day these meadows and Parker River were known as Crane Meadows and Crane Brook. Probably the lot previously laid out extended to the south side of Rock Pond Brook.

In 1666 or 1667 the "Three thousand acre" tract, made public domain once more by the clearance of all private claims, was laid out to the town of Rowley.

John Pickard and Ezekiel Northend, appointed by Rowley for this important work, also laid out, as carefully as their appliances and the wildness of the territory traversed permitted, the balance of the Village land to citizens of Rowley and Rowley Village. This covered all of the town of Boxford, excepting the land already settled upon. The system of divisional grants to individuals was based on the size of the house lots as laid out to the first settlers at Rowley. In this village land allotment some of the larger grants covered land previously laid out to individuals, as, for instance, Mr. Philip Nelson's two thousand acres included the meadow previously

granted to Joseph Jewett, which had been allowed in extinguishment of his claim on the Georgetown three thousand acres.

As Mr. Nelson's first wife was of the Jewett family, perhaps no difficulty arose. Gould received a large tract in one corner of the territory, and any special claims he may have had were, no doubt, satisfactorily cancelled. The action by the executors of Joseph Jewett in 1661, as shown by the deeds on record at Salem, were of at least one-half of the entire territory, confirmed to Francis Peabody, Thomas Dorman, Robert Stiles, Joseph Bigsby, Abraham Reddington, William Foster and Zaccheus Gould. That these deeds were recognized as having at least a partial validity can be seen by examining the list of grantees at this final division, for each of these parties are recorded as having a large grant. These parties had probably been buying for years the rights that families at Rowley had in the village lands; so that when the time came to grant private ownership of what the Henry Georges of to-day contend should never be held as private property—the land, all there was for them to do was to show that they had purchased these rights, and these large allotments were secured. There is no other way to account for the striking disparity in these divisions.

One thing to-day is beginning to be recognized, that as from the land all existence is principally maintained, monopoly in land should be condemned, and no man or family, even in the infancy of a settlement, be permitted to mark off or fence in more than may be cultivated or cared for. A part of a lot south of Lake Raynor, laid out by Ezekiel Northend for himself at that time, was through one of his female descendants, owned by the family for about two hundred years.

At about this period the permanent settlement of Georgetown begins. This westerly part of the town, from the centre across Baldpate Hill, to where, twenty years afterwards, the boundary line between Rowley and Boxford was run, was at last unincumbered, and the Rowley people were discussing earnestly the wisest course to take in the encouragement of a settlement.

Northend and Pickard having completed their work, probably in 1667 (a thankless task no doubt, as for many years afterward it was difficult to get men to serve as lot-layers, many positively refusing to serve), a meeting of the town of Rowley was therefore accordingly called for February 23d, 1667-68. At this date "It was agreed and voted that there should be a small farme laide out in the three thousand Acres of Land that was exchanged for the land at the necke, and the rent of the saide farme it is agreed that it shall be for ever for the use of the ministry or the towne's use." Directly beneath this record, apparently written by another hand, and at a later date, is found this,—"*Sammell Brocklebank that no line convenient will give Leas on.*" The principal busi-



ness of the meeting seems to have been matters pertaining to this "farme," as the next record is "Chose John Pickard, John pearson and Ezekiel Northend, to bee Added to the select men, to make a bargon with any who should appeare to take the saide ferme, provided that they Let not above thirty Acres of meddow, or halfe of the meddow belonging to the thre Thousand Acres, provided also that they put the towne to no charges, provided also that they lay not out above thre-score Akres of upland to the saide farme." The same parties were made the committee, to lay out the "saide farme," which was done that year.

A partial "bargon" had been made with John Spafford, an original settler in the town of Rowley. He was a Yorkshireman, whose family was one of the twenty who were among the first comers, having a house-lot on Bradford, near Wethersfield Street, and not long before his acceptance of the agreement with the town, had leased and occupied the farm of Samuel Bellingham, of Boston, styled gent; and was living on it at the time of its sale to Joseph Jewett, clothier. This farm in Rowley was a legacy to Samuel from William Bellingham, and probably included the house-lot on Holmes Street, adjoining Mr. Thomas Nelson's. March 17th, 1668, is this record: "Seventeenth day of March, in the year one Thousand six hundred sixty-eight, it was agreed and voted, that John Spofforth, if he would goe to the farme that was granted to be laide out in the thre Thousand Akers, that he should have the benefit of penninge the cattell, for the terme of seven years, he keepinge the herde of the younger cattell as carefully and as cheape, as any other should doe."

So carefully had the surveyors supposed they had examined and classified the land, that the thirty acres of meadow was said to be one-half of this class of land, found within the three thousand acre tract. Their meadow land was our bog of to-day, and thirty years ago was free from trees and bushy growth, but much that was at that time familiar to us as cleared meadow, was in the early days, covered no doubt, in patches at least, with a dense growth of maple, birch, pine and other trees. "March 19, 1668-69, John Spofforth took a Lease of this farm, laid out for the vse of the ministry," in a specific document drawn up at considerable length, and signed in the presence of witnesses by "John Spofard, his mark."

"Twenty and one yeares it extended, without rent or rates for the first five, exceptings three hundred of good white oake two inch planke, some time within two yeares, to be delivered at the meeting-house," the secular as well as the religious centre of the town, and "after five years, ten pounds yearly for the saide land and meddow, and thirty shillings for all stocke and land that he shall improve yearly," not in money payment, either, but with a tenderness which might sometimes be extended to the farmer in our day, its value in farm commodities, as "one-halfe in English

corne at price curreant, the other half in fat cattell or leane; if he pay in leane cattell, they are not to excede above seven yeares of age, or in Indian corne if he pleas," however, "what he doth pay in fat cattell, he is to pay at or before Mihilmas" (September 29th). He was restricted to the use of "timber for buildings and other necessaries for farminge," and "no saile of timber but to the town of Rowley, and, no hay exceeding above five loads yearly." "All dunge to be laide upon the saide land, none to be given or soulded." "And what buildings he shall erect, he is to uphold them, and leave them tenantable at the end of his lease, and allsoe all fences that he shall make, and he is to pay yearly cuntry rates, at the last yeare to live in the house untill May day, that so he may spend his fother upon the saide land." The mark of Spofard thus attached is the letter o, horizontally placed.

In locating the land in the preamble to the lease, it is said to be "at the pen where the young cattell of the towne have beene herded this last yeare, called by the name of gravelle plain."

The cabin or log-hut, known as the pen-house, was near by, and the responsible position of the herdsmen was now to pass into the hands of the Spofford family. John Spofford and his sons may have previously been entrusted with the serious duties of seeing that no harm befell this valuable property of the Rowley farmers seven miles away. Mr. Spofford had charges against Rowley the year before, of £3, 13s. for overseeing fences, and of £2, 10s. for killing a wolfe. Perhaps this wolfe was killed here, and, accustomed to live in the wilderness, he readily accepted the offer of the town, and, building his home, became a permanent settler. Soon after this date the town of Rowley required Buxford to pay the bounty on all wolves killed in this part of the town.

This family had a love for border life, or they would not so readily have come here. While there was heroism and daring, one can also conceive that thoughts of the Indian must have stalked like a spectre before their cottage as the nightfall gathered, and that the howling of the fierce winter wind brought vividly to memory stories of Indian cruelty, listened to shiveringly, around the fireside at their old home, to which their loneliness here added a tenfold terror. Especially to the wife and mother the danger doubtless clung, with but little to make life buoyant or cheerful. Besides, with all of that day, they firmly believed and looked for the malice of the prince of evil on every hand.

This darkened their lives, and could this family have looked ahead a century or more, and heard and seen the visible manifestations of an invisible and occult force beneath the roof of some to come after them as bone of their bone, but scarcely an arrow's flight from where they then were, they would all have fled from their wilderness home, back to the village from whence they came. They did remain, however, with



nothing to disturb them, beyond the ordinary difficulties that await those who in a new country sow the seed and gather the harvest. At a period some years before a path of blazed trees had probably been opened toward Andover, but for years at least in the long, wearisome winter, as they looked abroad from this elevated county, not a column of smoke from a neighbor's chimney could be seen curling upward as a friendly sign and beacon. Their nearest neighbors were three miles away, with the old primitive forest between. From the records at Rowley it is probable, however, that before the Spoffords came Captain Samuel Brocklebank had a house at his farm on Pen Brook, which he occupied during the farm-season, spending the winters in Rowley.

This was an occasional occurrence, and the Colonial laws exempted the farmers or their servants from certain duties while living on the farms at a distance from the villages. The road which passed this Spofford cottage connected with the highway, laid out at the same time, from Topsfield to Haverhill, leading from the old Ipswich and Andover road, southwest of Baldpate hill, just east of Shaven Crown, past the present Thwing farm, and across what is now the Andover road, over the "Haselline brook (says the record) where they of Rowley Village have made a bridge over it, near the lower end of Robert Hasilline's meadow, and soe along as the highway now goeth, to A place commonly called the aptake." This aptake or uptake, was evidently then known, and the path from this point was already a highway. It had been used as such for some time, as trees were said to have been marked at various points, but the road had not been definitely laid out. Now changes were made, and the work was final. A report to that effect was made March 16, 1668-69. Two who signed the report were Samuel Brocklebank and Ezekiel Northend.

The connection with this ancient Salem and Haverhill road was by the three-fourths mile of highway, at the northwest foot of Baldpate Street, known now as Spofford Street. For more than a century and a half this was the great central thoroughfare between Northern and Southern Essex, until the rapid growth of "Georgetown corner" turned the course of travel, and attracted it two miles to the eastward. In later years there were many farm-houses scattered along at frequent intervals, where entertainment for man and beast was provided, and "the sounds of revelry" and tales of good cheer had these old inns but a tongue to reveal them, would fill many a volume.

In March, 1662, Rowley appointed Lieut. Samuel Brocklebank and Richard Swan to join with the selectmen of Haverhill to decide where the road from Haverhill to Rowley should be. The preceding year Lieut. Brocklebank had his seventy-two acre farm laid out by Pen Brook, and as his evident intentions were, at that day, to make this his home, performing this duty for the town, he had more than official duty, for by opening up this road he was making his own

property accessible to the Merrimac River settlements, and his own settlement here seemingly an assured thing. The record from the Rowley 1st book, as previously given, is good evidence that this partial settlement actually occurred. The lamented ending of his useful life, may as well be told here.

June 24, 1675, was ever memorable in New England history as the date of the opening tragedy, in that calamity known as King Philip's War. This was followed by an alliance of several tribes, of which some had previously been friendly. This action of the Indians awakened general alarm throughout both Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies. Soldiers were ordered to be raised, and Samuel Brocklebank, now captain, reports on the 29th of November, 1675, to Governor John Leverett that "This may certify, that we have impressid twelve men according to our warrant, and have given them charge to fit themselves well with warm clothing, and we hope they will, and doe endeavour to fixe themselves as well as they can; only some of them are men that but latly come to town, and want arms, the which to provide for them we must press other men's arms, which is very grievous (except they can be provided for upon the country's account, which would be very acceptable if it could be.)"

Writing this kindly note, in behalf of this little company of distressed townsmen, he bids farewell to all those useful labors for the town of his adoption, where, in the forest, he had fixed the highways, since traveled by myriad feet; a lingering look up the long extent of hill and plain, along what is now Elm Street, which he had fondly expected to redeem from the wild reign of Nature, then controlling it; a final farewell to his wilderness home, with the peaceful sound of Pen Brook the only break upon the stillness, and to his village friends, now agitated with many an unwonted fear, and to Boston, and then from Marlborough he makes his report, as a soldier ready for service, if his duty calls.

He wrote to Major Denison, of Ipswich, March 27, 1676, from the place last named. Asks to be dismissed with his men, saying that they can do nothing of advantage where they are. Impatient to escape from this idle waiting, says also "that they have been in the country's service ever since the first of January at Narriganset, and within one week after their return were sent out again, having neither time or money, save a fortnight's pay, upon the march to recruit themselves." The previous day he wrote the Council an interesting letter, with a graphic account of the burning of many houses and barns in Marlborough, ending with a prediction of greater havoc soon to be made.

His premonitions were more than realized. On the 21st of the following April Captain Brocklebank, Captain Wadsworth of Milton, Lieutenant Sharp of Brookline, with about one hundred men, were drawn into ambush by the Indians in the town of Sudbury,



and the three officers and probably upwards of fifty of the men were killed. They were all buried in one grave, in the forest near where they fell. About 1730 President Benjamin Wadsworth, of Harvard College, a son of the captain, erected a plain slab over the burial-place of these men, which, in 1840, was in a good state of preservation. A granite monument was also erected by the State of Massachusetts and the town of Sudbury in 1852, and dedicated November 23d of that year, with an address by Governor Boutwell. The former headstone is placed directly in front of it. Two centuries later, on the anniversary of this sad event, a general observance of the day was had, many visiting Sudbury from the surrounding country. The writer, as a lineal descendant of Captain Brocklebank and as a representative of the town, was invited by the committee of arrangements to be present.

This was the sad ending of the career of a brave and useful man. He had been a deacon of the church in Rowley, probably from the death of Thomas Mighill. His age was but forty-six. Had he lived, undoubtedly his energies and enthusiasm would have been strongly felt in the early history of Georgetown.

Ninety-nine years later, and that same locality was the theatre of events equally bloody, and the descendants of Captain Brocklebank's Rowley neighbors were there by forced marches, too late, however, to join the "embattled farmers as they stood, and fired the shot heard round the world." Coming here a lad of eight, growing up with the Rowley settlement, his tragic ending gives a gleam of story to our history in the seventeenth century such as we get from no other source. But Georgetown in an especial manner can claim his career as her own, for here was his farm, cleared to some extent by him, and here was, we believe, his first habitation looking toward a permanent home. His inventory has this item: "farme toward Bradford, 150 lbs." With house in Rowley is added "kilne." Whole estate, £442 11s. His eldest son, Samuel, born November 28, 1653, occupied the farm in 1685, and unquestionably lived here.

November 29, 1686, a committee met at Samuel Brocklebank's house to consider his claim for damage by a highway opened through his farm. This may have been the Elm Street road, now formally opened, and perhaps by a more direct route to the Ipswich and Andover road than before—crossing Nelson Street at the foot of Adams Hill, near Mrs. W. M. Shute's, and so easterly and close beside the sharp range of hills, parallel with the railroad, until we pass Oak Dell Grove and reach the wooden bridge across Pen Brook, just below Lake Raynor. This ancient way, the direct way to Thomas Hazen's, who, two years before, had settled about midway of a large tract south of and adjoining Lake Raynor, and also to Daniel Wood's was opened probably at this time. In 1712 Hazen sold his three hundred acre farm, all lying in one body and south of the lake, with his dwelling-house in what is now the Samuel Perley lot, and re-

moved to Connecticut. Two hundred and fifty acres were deeded to Jacob Perley, and the balance of sixty acres to Timothy Perkins, of Topsfield. This was a Boxford farm, but the connections of Thomas Hazen were so identified with South Georgetown for nearly a century after that a brief mention does not seem amiss. Sixteen acres of land were granted Brocklebank for damage because of highway. This land given him was on the west side of his farm, with one corner on "Widdow Lambert's farme," who was probably the widow of Francis Lambert, of Rowley. This was the same tract which, nearly twenty-five years before, had been laid out to Mrs. Rogers, but at this time, probably, all of Mrs. Rogers' land had come into the possession of the Lambert family.

Returning to our pioneers on the hill, we find John Spofford continuing his labors from year to year. Without any competitors to cheapen the price of his labor, watching over the young cattle, penning them by night, with freedom to roam where they might by day, generally, however, up the slopes and on the summit of Baldpate, where, from some cause, there was a natural clearing, an entire want of the old timbered growth which covered all the upland beside.

With the regularity of the seasons he gathers the hay-harvest from "Half-moon Meadow," still called by the same expressive name. Only at long intervals, and then in settled weather, would a traveler be seen on foot or horse, journeying along the "old path that goeth toward Andover." Eight years passed, and on the 16th of March, 1677, the lease was transferred by Mr. Spofford to his sons John and Samuel, and extended to the new lessees sixty years from date. Perhaps the father thought the town had driven a hard "bargon" with him, or the "gravelle plain" was not as productive as was expected, or, possibly, further encouragement was needed to keep the young men from returning to Rowley village, but from some cause there was an abatement of the rent. Unlike the hard fate of the Irish peasant, who sees his rent rise with every slight improvement on his acre of bog, their rent was reduced to eight pounds, with the results of eight years' labor added to its original value.

Ministry rates to be paid "for what stocke they keep upon the saide land, and for all broke-up land and unbroke land, as the inhabitants of the town doe pay." "Allso they have liberty to pay in porke their rent if they see cause." Acorns and all species of mast (walnuts of every kind) were especially abundant in all the country south of this parish farm, and swine must have been grown at a nominal cost.

To this day the same district south and east of Baldpate Hill is noted for the abundance of its crop of walnuts, making quite an item in the aggregated products of the farms. Included in this supplementary lease is this clause, "And duringe the times of the Indian wars there rent is to be abated accordinge to the iudgment of indifferent men, if they be hindered in carrying on the saide farme." A strong



probability that they might have to return to Rowley with at least pecuniary loss.

This anticipated danger from the Indian fighter, with the fever for blood raging in him just at this time, reveals the cause which had prevented, more than anything else, that rapid settlement of the three thousand acres expected by the town fathers eight years before. One of the most valued citizens of the town, and to a certain extent their only neighbor, had, but a few years before, given up his life to protect such as they and theirs from the bullet and the torch. In Captain Brocklebank's death the realities of Indian war came home to them with a force never felt before. The conclusion of the lease, showing but a faint conception of the opulence which a century later would surround some branches of the family, is this, "At the end of there lease they are to be allowed for all buildings on the saide farme, to be valued by indifferent men, provided they are not to exceede above twenty pounds." At the date of the lease John Spofford was twenty-nine and his brother Samuel twenty-five years of age. The father probably returned to Rowley village.

The will of John Spofford is on record at the register of deeds' office in Salem. A few bequests are given. He bequeaths a portion to son Francis, and that it may be at his wife's disposal until he become of the age of one and twenty years, and that he may be helpful to her to carry on her husbandry work. Francis to have the small gun and rapier. The long fowling-piece to go to son John. Four acres toward great meadow to go to Francis, and son Thomas his village land. Sons Samuel and John the lease of the farm. Two cows to wife, one cow to each of his daughters. To Francis, two young oxen, one mare and one cart. The gray horse to Thomas. Three sheep to each of his daughters and to sons John and Thomas. One sheep to his wife and one heifer or calf to wife and each of his daughters. The date of this death is not known. Was not living in 1691. His name does not appear in the tax list of that year. Probably owned property in Rowley, on which Francis and the widow lived for a time.

His inventory as valued is recorded as £223 9s. Another of the first settlers of Rowley, whose name figures somewhat prominently in the land transfers of the seventeenth century in this section of the town, now Georgetown, was Richard Swan. It is not thought that he lived here, but he had land bounded by Pen Brook, and partly by ye farme granted to Mr. Samuel Shepard, of Rowley, on the northwest, on the southeast by land of Mr. Edward Payson, on the southwest by land in possession of Ebenezer Boynton and partly by land of Samuel Brocklebank, and on the northeast by Benjamin Plumer's land. This was centrally located, between what is now North Street and Main Street, toward the Marlborough district extending from Pen Brook on the west, over or near the land of John Preston eastwardly, to an un-

known distance. The bounds of this tract were the same as those recorded in the deed of June 5, 1712, from Hannah Swan, the widow, then of Haverhill, to Joseph Bointon, who was doubtless a son-in-law, Swan having died in 1678. That deed conveyed all the lands and meadows within the town of Rowley, which the said Boynton deeded to her late husband, of date May 27, 1678. These lands were seemingly held by Swan but for a few months only, having been bought of Bointon, who held the office of town clerk of Rowley for thirteen years, from 1679 to '91, and who was the original owner. In 1672 these lands were again in Boynton's hands, and that deed was probably a quit-claim by the widow.

Mrs. Swan was then evidently quite aged and probably living with a son, whose house and family during the Indian attack on Haverhill four years before, were saved. Tradition says that several Indians were about to force an entrance into the Swan house through the partially open door, when the wife with Amazonian courage, seizing her spit, which was nearly three feet in length, collected all the strength she possessed, and drove it through the body of the foremost Indian. This was a resistance they little expected, and thus repulsed they retreated and molested them no further.

This land grant adds the names of Boynton and Swan to the list of early land owners, the Brocklebanks (Samuel and John), Humphrey Rainer and Thomas Mighill, having taken much of the land at the south of this.

Besides the above, there was of the Swan land a piece of meadow at the eastward near Stony Brook so called, perhaps the Hilliard Brook. This was owned by Boynton, and sold by him to Benj. Plumer in 1708.

In May, 1714, Joseph Bointon deeded to Richard Bointon one-half of this land, said to have belonged to Richard's grandfather Swan, Richard not being satisfied with previous gifts, and Joseph also agreed "to defend from Benoni Boynton, who aims to cut off Richard from what my father hath given him." This Joseph was said to be a brother of Richard, but there is some mistake, for he must have been a brother of Richard's father. Swan was deputy for several years, and prominent in town affairs.

In town expenses for 1667-68 we find Richard Swan paid for deputyship £3 9s. 6d. In those days the towns bore the expense of deputies. Also "for lainge out land and goinge to Salem and horse hire, 13s." Swan, with others, was selected for locating highways (a very responsible work), also, "to agree with the sons of John Spofford about ye farm," and was appointed, with Lieut. Brocklebank and Ezekiel Northend, February 21, 1672, to lay out the farm of one hundred acres near Crane Meadows, voted to be laid out to the child of Mr. Samuel Shepard at the meeting on the previous January. This Mr. Shepard, the third minister in Rowley, was a colleague with Rev. Mr. Phillips from



November, 1665, to his death, April 7, 1668, at the early age of twenty-seven years. He left one son, an orphan, the mother dying about two months before the father. The town voted in January, 1672, the before-named grant to the Shepard boy, then past three years old, provided "it did live unto the age of twenty-one years," but March 13th, on re-consideration, it was granted without conditions, probably on the remonstrance of the boy's grandmother, Mrs. Margery Hoar, widow of Rev. Henry Flint, first minister of the old church in Quincy, then in Braintree. Mrs. Flint, then sole executor of the will of her son-in-law, Mr. Shepard, and the education of young Samuel Shepard, the son of her daughter Dorothy, devolving upon her, wrote, like a strong-minded woman, a sharp letter to the town of Rowley, which no doubt brought about definite action. The tombstone of Mrs. Flint informs us that for many years she was noted as an instructress of young gentlewomen, many being sent to her, especially from Boston. This "Shepard farm," as it was named, for many years was quite noted as a boundary point in deeds. Young Shepard was graduated from Harvard College in 1685, at the age of eighteen, and this land continued to be held by him until 1694. August 28th, of that year, he, while living in Lynn, probably with his uncle Jeremiah Shepard, pastor of the first church in that town, sold his "ferme" to Joseph and Jonathan Plummer.

This famous Shepard land was doubtless located on the southerly side of North Street, but, perhaps, included both sides of the street, from Pen Brook at the present causeway, to the residence of S. S. Hardy, then eastwardly for some distance at the south of the street, including what was afterwards known as the "Baptist Parsonage Farm." It is said in the deed to be "on the south side of ye old path called Andover path." At about the same time as this Shepard grant, land was laid out to Mr. Francis Parrot, in the vicinity of what is now known as the Searl place, on the hill. This Parrot was town clerk of Rowley for several years, and is said to have returned to England, and died there. If this is correct, this grant was a freehold to his heirs. It adjoined Anthony Crosbies' land, and was near Reedy meadow and also the Shepard farm. In the farm purchase is the first mention of the Plumer name in Georgetown. Originally a Newbury family, the name of Benjamin Plumer first appears as a Rowley resident in 1678.

Returning to 1665, we find from all the records of the town of Rowley, an eagerness for land-grants in the commons. There were, at least, three divisions prior to the year 1700, the first division being made soon after the establishment of the settlement. In the year 1667 the three thousand acres were surveyed. This tract seems to have been nearly preserved intact, the only diminishing of the town commons being the setting off of the parish farm the following year. Dec. 30th of the same year, with perhaps accusation of

favoritism, and complaints of an assumption of authority floating about, "the Lot-layers were ordered by the town not to Lay out any Lands with in the Township of Rowley, but by notis of some Express grant in writing, both for plan and quantity." Envy and detraction were doing its work, and as has been previously said, it was becoming difficult to find men who would perform the duty with the certainty that fault-finding was sure to follow.

The death of King Philip giving a relief from the anxiety of the two years preceding, and renewed courage in back-woods life, it was voted by the town, January 22, 1677:

"That those appointed to Returne Land or cases, to wit, the old Select men, and the lotlayers of both ends of the towne, Should also Examine the right that men have to freeholds they lay claim to, that they may be Recorded."

Human nature is alike grasping, within the narrow limits of Rowley, as on the broad prairies of the West. In 1679 the town went further and chose a committee at the meeting March 27th, to consider the situation, and endeavor to reconcile energy and ambition, with equity and fair-dealing, a problem equally difficult to solve, then, as well as now.

It is to be hoped that they partially succeeded, for the "men chosen to joyne with the Select men, to consider of questions that may arise about the Division of the Comons, and are to Returne their thoughts about them," were men of the prominence of "thomas lambert, John pickard, Mr. (Philip) Nelson, leonard harriman, John tod and thomas leaver, Junior."

May 20, 1685, "At a Leaguel Towne meeting, it was Agreed and voted, that corporal northend, daniel wicam, Ezekiel Mighill, John pickard and ——— Johnson, be a committee to fixe the bounds of the three thousand akers, comonly so-called." Considerable interest began to be felt in roads and other improvements here, and some were considering a possible settlement. It seems to have been feared that this tract might be encroached upon, it having been evidently reserved for a general and careful distribution, and, therefore, this renewed survey was ordered.

For years, the hay on the meadow land, where accessible, had been cut, being the only product of this common land, but at the time of this survey Rock Pond Meadow had been granted temporarily. The meadows were still appreciated so highly, that when Bradford appealed to Rowley in a pathetic letter, dated March, 1680-81 (now in the Rowley records), for an additional grant of land, or aid of some kind, Rowley, a few days later replies, that they cannot grant more territory, but will "give Rev. Mr. Symmes Liberty for Six or Siven Loads of Hay yearly, of that meddow called Rock Pond Meddow, till the towne Shall Se Cause to order it otherwise." It was poor satisfaction for Bradford to ask for a change of boundary, and only get a few loads of meadow hay, with the privilege of cutting it themselves.

But to again continue the earlier land grants.



Before 1687, land was laid out on Long Hill, to John Acie, probably a son of William, who was an original settler of Rowley. This land was inherited by a daughter, who married a Burbank. Acie continued to have land there, as late as 1701. This name seems to be an anomaly among Essex County names. In 1691 Sarah, the widow of John Brocklebank, sold land to a Boynton, probably Joseph. She had been a widow for more than twenty-five years, her husband dying a few years after his grant near Pen Brook, in 1661, perhaps in 1663. The heirs bought some of the Thomas Mighill land. This Brocklebank family had all this land east of the brook, extending to Marlborough, and it is thought, only held it for one generation, when it was probably sold to the Boyntons, perhaps to Ebenezer. What became of them is not known; all of the name in this vicinity are descendants of Capt. Samuel's, eldest and youngest sons. Another name of an early date, is that of David Wheeler, found on a deed of date 1691, on a transfer of land to Nathaniel Browne. He was probably the first to settle in the vicinity of the Goodrich house on North Street. Was the father of Jonathan Wheeler, who a few years later rose to especial prominence. David Wheeler had removed, or was not living in town in 1701, as his name is not found on the list of Rowley men in that locality, petitioning for an abatement of minister rates. He sold June 6, 1693, thirty acres of land to John Spofford, said to adjoin Benj. Goodrich's land.

In 1707 Jonathan Wheeler deeded all the undivided lands in Newbury, belonging to his father, David Wheeler, to a Mr. Coffin.

In 1697 Jonathan Wheeler was said to be of Rowley, and was perhaps living in the town four years before.

August 24, 1693, he deeded about twenty acres of upland and meadow, lying near Crane Pond, said to have been bought previously of Philip Nelson, to the next heirs of the late Benjamin Guttridge (Goodrich), the former deed supposed to have been burnt in the house. This land was granted to Wheeler by the town of Rowley.

"John Spawford's" land was on the northwest; bought the same year of the Brownes. Nathaniel Brownesold Spofford fifty-four acres, his brother, Ebenezer twelve, making with that sold Spofford by Wheeler a tract of ninety-six acres. This land was on or near Thurlow Street, then known as Bradford highway, by which it was bounded, also by the brook (Parker River), and owners of Ox-pasture Hill. The house and land of John Brown is mentioned in David Wheeler's deed; where it was, it is not possible perhaps to tell at this day.

Cornet Parsons' land is said to be on the southwest of the land deeded by Jonathan Wheeler to the Goodrich heirs, and "Three logg bridge" named, was the bridge over Parker River, on Thurlow Street. These three Brownes, John, Ebenezer and Nathaniel,

were on the list of parish petitioners in 1701. Nathaniel soon after removed to Groton, Conn. While there, January 8, 1708, he sold for four pounds a freehold in Rowley to Daniel Wood, of Boxford. Ebenezer probably remained; twenty years later land was known by his name. The mention in Wheeler's deed of the former deed being burned in the house of Goodrich, reveals of itself nothing but a barren fact. We have the story, however. It was the year previous to this just act of Wheeler's when the tragedy we are now to relate occurred.

October 23, 1692, was the Lord's day. Mr. Goodrich living in this locality, in a house of small dimensions, doubtless such as were common on the frontier at that time, was at evening prayer with his family, when the house was suddenly attacked by a small band of Indians, and Mr. Goodrich, his wife and several children were killed. One daughter, a girl of seven, is said to have been carried off a captive, but redeemed at the expense of the Province the spring following.

The house, after being sacked, was at least partially burned. It was a common occurrence for the Indians to destroy in wantonness what plunder they could not carry away, and if time would warrant also, to burn the house raided. This family were living here in fancied security, but for some time before there had been frequent Indian raids on the frontier, especially at the eastward. In 1688 the former enmity incited by the French in Canada was renewed, and the expedition of Sir William Phipps against Canada, in 1690, having proved the most disastrous failure New England had ever known, the Indians became daring, and for two years after were busy with carnage.

This tragedy seems to have been an unpremeditated act by a roving band, and tradition says they were so angered at not accomplishing the object of their raid, the death of some one in Newbury, against whom they had a long standing grudge, that accidentally approaching this house, the unprotected inmates were made the mark for their malice and wrath. As one thinks of it the incident seems hardly credible, and that it could have occurred miles from the border and the raiders escape with their captives and booty. We can imagine the horror felt by the Brownes on the Bradford road, by the Wheelers, Plumers, Poors, and especially so by Deacon Brocklebank's family up by Pen Brook, and the Spoffords on the hill, as guided by the burning house, they hastened, only to find a family silent in death, mangled and bloody, with their house-dog howling his agony over his slain friends and playmates. Whether the house was entirely or partially burned may be a matter of controversy and an open question. In 1840, when Gage's "History of Rowley" was written, a wood-cut of the Lull house, then standing a few rods west of the residence of G. D. Tenney, Esq., was inserted as the house where the massacre occurred, and the window pointed out through which the Indians fired. That

the burning was at least partially accomplished, perhaps all the interior, is from the deed of Wheeler made almost a certainty, and that by the efforts of the neighbors the fire was extinguished and a part of the house saved. From this saved part, east of the front door, extensions were made at different times until the spacious mansion we knew as the old Lull house was the result. It seems that such an event would have been so impressed upon the occupants of the Lull house, from one generation to another, that they could not possibly have been entirely in error when the story was brought down from sire to son, that in *this* room and through *that* window the Goodrich family were shot. The one grave in which they were buried is near by, unmarked, however, by any memorial. It should be a pleasing duty for those bearing the name to place something there in recognition of their sad fate. It is doubtful whether they had lived there above a year or two.

From this date to 1700 every movement looking toward a settlement was in this locality or just eastward.

December 1, 1693, Henry Poor bought twenty-eight acres of land of John Pierson, of Rowley. "Miller" Pierson owned the old Nelson Mill on Mill River. This was a part of Pierson's common land in the third division. John Bayley, probably of Boston, owned land near by. The other boundary points named in the deed were "the meadow laid out to Samuel Shepard (not the Shepard farm), Bradford highway, also southwest of Wheeler's and Goodrich land." Perhaps Poor built on the north side of Thurlow Street. The land extended to "Three logg bridge brook," which must then have been the name of Parker River, at the point where Thurlow Street crosses it.

About thirty years later, Henry Poor and his son Benjamin, in a deed to Benjamin Plumer, sold a corner of the land on which (the deed states), "we now dwell," indicating a change of residence in the meantime. Poor was Newbury born. Benjamin, the oldest son, was married about the time of the change of house.

In 1707 Jonathan Wheeler sold to Nathaniel Coffin, one-half of Poor's interest in the undivided lands of Newbury.

Very early deeds imply that Crane Pond was, for some years after the incorporation of Bradford, included in Rowley. Crane Pond, and the meadows near, were known by the present name, as early, it is thought, as 1670. Many of the earlier grants and transfers were of Crane Pond lands, and the records of the locality refer to an old grant, and a new grant; the former line is supposed to have run north and the latter south of the pond. There are deeds on record from John Wallingford, to his brother-in-law, Jonathan Look, of land near Pond Brook (this pond must have been Crane Pond, for Pentucket and Rock were always designated by their names), also Jonathan Wheeler is said to have had a division with the

above on the south side of the pond in Rowley. Without the pond being named, it seems to show an apparent knowledge of but one pond, and from the names of the parties, Wallingford, Look and Wheeler, it is conclusive that the pond was Crane Pond, and was then (1694), within the limits of Rowley. Look probably lived in the neighborhood of these Crane meadows. Seven years later he signed the parish petition with the others. His name disappeared from Rowley history soon after.

These owners of lands in Rowley were under the old grant. The new grant was made not long after. It will be recalled that in 1681, a request came to Rowley from Bradford, for an enlargement of their territory, and perhaps after many appeals, the town of Rowley, April 7, 1699, appointed a committee, "to meet with the Bradford Committee, when there may be a convenient opportunity, to settle the line between Rowley and Bradford, and what they shall do (says the record), shall be a valid act." Probably the convenient time did not arrive, for in 1701, nothing apparently having been done, Bradford petitioned the General Court to interfere. Rowley, then forced to definite action, chose on September 22, 1701, a committee "to meet a Bradford committee, at the house of Samuel Hale, and to come to some agreement if possible, but if they could not agree, then to refer it for a settlement by arbitration."

Doubtless a satisfactory agreement was reached at that meeting, and the new line run at the south of Crane Pond, as before stated, making it essentially the line between Georgetown and Groveland, as it exists to this day. About the time that the Wheelers, Brownes, Goodrich, Look, Plumer and Henry Poor were taking the first steps toward clearing the land and establishing homes along what is now Thurlow, North and Jewett Streets, complaints were rife of trespassing on the undivided land, to the injury of those who might follow them.

We have seen Goodrich and his family, by one sharp blow taken from this little band of hardy axemen and pioneers, but this did not deter the others; they held the ground gained, but sometimes, no doubt, entertained bitter thoughts against the Rowley men at the village, that they should fret and fume, over the cutting of a little wood and fencing stuff. These were braving all the danger of opening up the wilderness, while their Rowley neighbors were living in peace and security, and one can imagine that a sense of injustice, sometimes impelled them to a degree of lawlessness. However, in spite of any consciousness of freedom, these few families may have felt, the town saw fit to vote, January 14, 1694-95, for an appointment "of a Committee to prosecute any persons, and especially Benjamin Plumer and Henry Poor, that have trespassed by falling or carting away timber." The forest was preserved with jealous care from the first, one town ordinance following another in quick succession, and making the laws operative over the



whole territory, from Merrimac to the sea. The peat-bogs were as yet unopened, although right at their feet. The coal-fields were waiting for the transportation by steam as the motive power, and the vast lumber districts, were practically almost as far away as if in the moon.

This severe ordinance not proving effectual, and the clamors of some of the people still demanding action, an evidently annoyed citizen, at a meeting March 19, 1699-1700, moved, and it was

"Agreed & Voated, that if any person or persons shall fall, top, or Carry away any tree or trees, or part of any of sd tree, from of any part of the Town's Common, called the three Thousand Acres, for any use whats ever, without liberty from the Select men, being met together, & in writing under hands, they Shall pay for every tree fallen, lopped, or carried away, fifteen Shillings, Six pounds & tree (threepence), the one-half of sd penalty to the Informer, the other half to the use of the Towne."

This seems like a kind of half-waggery, and yet it may be that there was a desperation at seeing one of their dearest laws set at naught. "Feb. 6, 1694-5, Committee chosen to Issue a Controversie Between the Town and Benjamin Plumer," about some land that it was thought Plumer had fenced in, supposed to belong to the town.

He rebutted the charges of encroachment, by calling the attention of the town to a highway through his farm. Plumer declared himself ready to submit his case to the committee named. There seems to have been no definite settlement reached for many years, for the next record informs us, of date January 2, 1712-13, that Benjamin Plumer is satisfied about the road across his farm. Probably the question of the land encroachment was also settled.

The roads in this locality were becoming more of a question to consider at the meetings of the town. April 12, 1699, the importance of one road at the northwestern corner of the town resulted in this action: "Rock brook meddow to be leased to Robert Haseltine, Thomas Carleton, Jona. Platts (all perhaps, of Bradford) and John Spofford, of Rowley, for seven years, thy to maintain the bridge called Haseltines, and in addition, to pay three shillings yearly. This was the bridge near the Edward Poor place, on West Street. Nothing looking toward a settlement in South Georgetown had as yet been done. There were a few land grants, however."

At about 1683 or '84, Thomas Palmer had fifty-six acres laid out near Lake Raynor, and at the westerly end, bounded by the old Newbury and Andover road, on the southerly side of the Bald hills. Others, with acreage not stated, were Deacon William Tenney, Thomas Stickney, John Burbank and Samuel Cooper. Some of these lots, as laid out, are said to have bordered "on the path now used from Samuel Spofford to Jacob Pearly." Spofford was then married, and may have built the house that very anciently was built, on what is now the northwesterly limits of the farm on Baldpate Street, now owned by Henry Ken-

nett. It is possible, however, that this house was built at a later day by Richard Dole.

Not far from this time, Thomas Nelson, of Rowley, and John Rolfe, of Newbury, sold this Samuel Spofford two hundred and fifty acres near Shaving Crown hill, which was one-fourth part of Mrs. Rogers' one thousand acre grant. This immense tract came into the hands of Gershom Lambert, as a gift from Mrs. Rogers. Lambert was a brother of Thomas Nelson's first wife, and uncle of the wife of Rolfe, and presented this land to Mrs. Rolfe with the other children of Thomas Nelson, that it might be sold for their benefit.

In 1712 another fourth part was sold to Moses Tyler. Gershom Lambert was a resident of Salem for some time, but as early as 1691 had removed to New London, Conn.

Cooper, Stickney, and Palmer probably about to be dispossessed of their grants for some unknown cause, perhaps because they were laid out on the reserved tract, petitioned the town of Rowley, March 18, 1700-01, to relieve them, and find them some common land, belonging to the town, on the southerly side of the line, between Rowley and Boxford. All these lots had evidently been laid out north of and near Lake Raynor. Cooper seems finally to have secured his grant, for in 1727 a long narrow tract in Boxford, north of the lake, from the shore to the town line, was sold by a Samuel Cooper, to Nathaniel Perkins and Jacob Pearley. May 22, 1704, Captain John Spofford, had sixty acres laid out to him, also on this north shore of the lake. This was a grant to his father, John Spofford, then deceased. It adjoined Palmer's land.

To return for a brief space to another part of the Byfield district, from that already described, we find just as the seventeenth century was closing the name of Benjamin Stickney, as another of the earlier settlers, and who was a brother of Andrew Stickney, who is supposed to have lived near the Rowley line by the Ewell place. This Benjamin is said to have built a log house on the summit of Long Hill, at as early a date as 1699.

In 1700 a framed-house was erected by him, which as late as 1870 was occupied by Mayor Ira Stickney, a direct descendant in the sixth generation. Some few years later it was accidentally burned to the ground. In 1713 the road over Long Hill and past his house was opened. In the great snow of 1717 he kept a path open by drawing a log every day. A bear is said to have once taken a pig from his pen in the night; he arose, caught a whip and chasing the animal, lashed him until he dropped the pig, when he secured it and returned to the house. Mr. Stickney was never known to be sick until he had passed his eightieth birthday.



CHAPTER LII.

GEORGETOWN—(Continued).

PARISH PETITIONERS AND OTHERS WHO SETTLED
PRIOR TO 1730.

At the dawning of the eighteenth century, the question of the validity of the Indian title, to the territory within the original limits of Rowley, began to cause something of a ferment. About 1700 three Indians, who claimed to be grandsons of Musquonomonet, the former Sagamore of Agawam, and were then probably living in this or some town near by, were encouraged by parties, to assert their claim to the territory, on the ground that the aboriginal title had never been extinguished. This claim, if based on precedents, was undoubtedly correct. Many towns had apparently recognized at an early period of their settlement the Indian ownership, and by the payment of some trifle in money or goods, had gone through the farce of a purchase. Rowley, unlike many of her neighbors, had done nothing, however, simply from neglect. At that time, after seventy years of settlement, the claim was made by these Indians, with many precedents in their favor. Late in the year 1700, a committee was appointed by the town, "to treat with the Gentl^m Improved and Impowered as Attorneys for the Indians, which make a Demand of our Lands, & Labour to cleare up our Title to s^d Lands."

Soon after, by the payment of nine pounds to Samuel English, Joseph English and John Umpee, the title to the territory now included in the towns of Georgetown and Rowley, was made good, to the acknowledged satisfaction of these three claimants. These upper commons were still but a slight remove from the ancient solitude.

In 1705 John Holmes, then of Newbury, and connected in some way with Bartholomew Pearson, deeded fifteen acres west of Rock Pond, to Eldad Cheney, of Bradford, and Nicholas Cheney, of Newbury. The highway now known as Bailey Lane was crossed, and the lot touched on Crag (Scrag) and Rock Pond Brooks. Holmes perhaps permanently settled near the Bradford line about 1731. It is thought that he was living in Byfield in 1730, as his name was not on the list of parish petitioners, but it appears in 1732, as dismissed from the church in Byfield, to the church in the west parish in November of that year. We find him in 1722 deeding land to Jonathan Harriman, and again to Harriman in 1725 several lots on range H, in the vicinity of Rock Pond, and at the same time one-eighth part of the iron works, said to be on the south side of Rock Brook, and the deed adds, "with what provision is now made, and the privilege of the yard and stream, for nineteen years from date." These iron works had probably been opened but a

few years at the longest. Gage records that they were worked in 1739, and that a Samuel Barrett lived near by, who it is thought carried them on. Besides the bog ore which was dug near the yard, the farmers carried the ore to be worked at the yard from other bogs in the town.

Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, at a late day, could show places on his father's farm on West Street, where this iron ore had been dug. The remains of these iron works, not far from the embankment of the Georgetown and Haverhill Railroad, were plainly traceable a few years ago.

In 1707, *Benjamin Plumer*, styled clothier in 1718, who had made so much trouble for the town by his trespassing some years before, bought of Mark Prime one-half of the Mrs. Rogers or Lambert farm, for two hundred pounds. Plumer had regained the confidence of the town, for in 1702-3, he was made overseer (the English term) of all the highways in Rowley, above and including "Ry plain bridge" (the bridge near the Georgetown Town farm). This Lambert farm was to a slight extent improved by him, while he is supposed to have been living at the time in the vicinity of Thurlow or Jewett Street, for, in 1713, he bought forty-two acres of land of Jonathan Spofford, where, the deed states, "my house now is." This land, John Spofford, the father of Jonathan, bought of the Brownes in 1693. Joseph and Jonathan Plumer, who had purchased the Shepard farm in 1694, were perhaps brothers of Benjamin, but probably never lived here.

The name of *Jonathan Bradstreet* is seen on the record at about this date, appearing first as an owner of land near Crane pond and brook. This land in Rowley was held in partnership with David Wheeler, John and Ebenezer Browne. Nathaniel Browne, the former owner, had removed to Connecticut. About 1710 or '11, Bradstreet bought of Jonathan Wheeler sixty acres, or a part of the Payson farm. This farm was a special grant of the town of Rowley to Rev. Edward Payson, their fourth minister, and was in harmony with the land-allotment to all the previous ministers. Wheeler had bought this farm not long before this partial sale. The word farm, as used at that time, was misleading, it being in anticipation. The farming operations of the Rowley ministers did not contemplate agriculture in the wilderness, and this grant to Mr. Payson was the last of its class. This land was located near Elder's plain (now Marlboro' district), but on the hilly tract at the north and northeast.

The Bradstreet house may have been that which, for three-fourths of a century, was known as the Kezar house, and was demolished by Dr. David Mighill about 1850. The material was used in enlargement of the Mighill house on Baldpate. The family, in 1739, removed to Lunenburg, Mass. Jonathan Bradstreet, then known as Captain, with his wife, Sarah, and Dorcas Spofford, the wife of his son Sam-



uel, were dismissed to the church in Lunenburg, April 15th of that year.

At the same period when Bradstreet settled, the names of several Boyntons frequently occur. Mention has already been made of Captain Joseph and Richard Boynton, as owners of the Swan lands, extending from Pen Brook north and east of Pen Brook avenue.

Ebenezer Boynton, who may have been a cousin or brother of Joseph, was an early landholder, and owned the house in "Marlboro'," now the property of Mrs. Jacob F. Jewett. The name of this Boynton is found as early as 1714, as the owner of land near that belonging to Samuel Brocklebank.

In 1725, he sold his house and thirty acres of land situated on Elder's plain, to *Joseph Nelson*, for one hundred and forty-three pounds. This farm was a part of the original Elder Humphrey Raynor grant, from which the plain took its name. By inheritance it came to Humphrey Hobson, a grandson, who deeded, in 1709, sixty-two acres to Edward Hazen, said to be an exchange. Hazen, who sold to Boynton, may have built here, intending it for his home. It is supposed, however, that, after selling here, he was the builder and occupant for many years of the ancient house in Boxford, on the Salem road, lately demolished by Thomas B. Masury, upon the site of which the present house stands.

Joseph Nelson, the first of this surname to locate in Georgetown, bought in 1707, the year after his marriage to Hannah, the daughter of Deacon Samuel Brocklebank, the Jonathan Harriman place on Bradford Street, Rowley, and probably lived there until his removal here. There is reason to believe that a part of this house was built by Boynton or Hazen, as early as 1715. Boynton, perhaps, intended after selling to build for himself more to the westward, but was prevented, for we find him selling, the next year, thirty acres more to Mr. Nelson, with a barn upon it. This tract adjoined land he had previously sold to John, the eldest son of Deacon Brocklebank. He also sold Richard Boynton nine lots on range T, in the "Three thousand acres." Nelson had been an owner of land for years in this same Elders plain, buying of Jonathan Boynton and his father-in-law, Deacon Brocklebank.

This *Jonathan Boynton* was, we think, a son of Captain Joseph, and figures prominently in our early history. In 1710 or 1711 Joseph deeds to Jonathan one hundred and twenty acres, located on the east side of the above-named tract of land, then belonging to Hazen. This ran back to the south, reaching the town commons. Doubtless he built on this land; perhaps it included the Tenney estate, on Tenney Street, and that the house occupied by three generations of that name was built by him. Boynton was the first parish clerk, and in office until 1740. A Boynton family removed to Tewksbury from this town about 1738, and a Jonathan Boynton to Lunenburg in 1758. Jonathan

Boynton and wife, Elizabeth, were dismissed in June to the church in that town. It is not known whether this was the parish clerk, or a Jonathan Boynton of a later generation. Others of this surname who were not residents, were Caleb, a land-holder in South Georgetown, and Benoni, who married a sister of Nathaniel Mighill, and had a freehold in this part of the town. It is a curious fact, not generally known, that Sir William Phips at one time bought or rented a Boynton house in Rowley and perhaps resided there.

In the spring of 1714 Deacon *Samuel Brocklebank*, the son of the captain, who was killed by the Indians deeded to his son John for £60, to be paid to his eldest son, Samuel S., (then probably deceased), three daughters £20 to each when they come of age, or marriage, which may come first, all the land "then belonging to this farm, west of the brook, which runs midway of the present Elm and Central Streets, known to the present generation as the Brocklebank house, recently taken down by Mrs. G. W. Boynton, and upon the site of which her present house stands. Its demolition removed a distinguishing time-mark from the central village."

At the time this land was deeded to *John Brocklebank*, Main Street, from his father's house, now M. G. Spofford's, to the present centre, was not opened. There is no reference to a highway or a path even, and the land as deeded beginning in the rear of the Chaplin shoe factories, had the brook for a boundary until it came "unto ye great brook" with that for a bounds until the angle is reached, and from that bend across the wooded upland to the "Andover road," now North Street, at some point east of the Baptist Church. The land of Richard Boynton bounded on the east. The course was then westward, with Andover road as the bounds, until near the house of Miss M. A. Sawyer, on Andover Street. "It (says the deed), come to Land that I had allowed for my highway Through my farm." This old proprietors' way, the westerly bounds of this ancient farm, not far from the railroad, is visible to this day, a lane south of the residence of D. C. Smith, on Central Street, being, perhaps, its southern terminus. This road was used by the farmers on Spofford's hill, until the opening of Central Street from the Brocklebank house to Chaplinville, which was laid out about midway of this farm. The sandy knoll, now Harmony Cemetery, had for some years a watch or block-house on its highest point, built to guard against raids from the Indians. In 1720 Deacon Brocklebank deeded the remaining half of his farm ("where I now dwell," says the deed) to his youngest son *Francis Brocklebank*. The conditions were specified sums, to daughters Elizabeth (Pingry) and Hannah (Nelson), and several granddaughters, with care for himself and wife through life, and Christian burial. The father was living in 1722, and aided in correcting the boundary line west of Baldpate hill. In January, 1715, *Jonathan Harriman*, the same, who several years before had sold his homestead in



Rowley to Joseph Nelson, bought of Thomas Lambert, one-half of the Rogers or Lambert farm, near Pentucket Pond. The other half, it will be remembered, Benjamin Plumer, had been in possession of, since 1707. This extensive tract of six hundred acres or more, not having been divided, a division was then made by Harriman and Plumer. One Bayley had land near this farm. Perhaps the Bailey road was named for him. On the southwesterly side of the pond, it was agreed, that Harriman should have the easterly, and Plumer the westerly part of the farm.

On the northeasterly side, a line was run at some distance from the pond, Harriman to have the land at north of this line, and *Thomas Plumer*, a son of Benjamin, on the southerly side, or nearest the pond. This part of the Harriman land, must have crossed the boundary into Bradford, but when granted to Mrs. Rogers, before the new line between Rowley and Bradford was run, was all within Rowley limits. Such a division seems to have been philosophical and harmonious. In its primitive aspects, it reminds one of the Orient, and recalls the story of Abram and Lot.

The brook above Pentucket was equally divided between Benjamin Plumer and Harriman, both having seen a mill privilege on the brook, and Harriman included in the division agreement, liberty to "Digg rocks and Gravel to make a Damm, and a convenient yard for a Mill."

This deed to Thomas Plumer from Benjamin, was given on the same day as Harriman's from Lambert, and was for one hundred and forty acres. At about this date (1715), was doubtless the erection of the Plumer house on Mill Street, now occupied by Mrs. J. C. Hoyt and Wm. Day. This house on the end toward the lake, has a facing of brick, and is said to have been so built, as a protection against Indians, and on this end only, because of its nearness to the lake, and that in approaching the house for attack, the builders supposed, the Indians would come along the lake in their canoes. This land of Thomas Plumer, all lay at the left of Parker River, as one descends the stream.

No highways are mentioned, therefore Mill Street, the Jacobs Road and North Street, to its junction with Thurlow Street, at Hale's corner in Groveland, were as yet, unopened. Jonathan Harriman, in 1721, then styled Sergt., deeds to his son Leonard, forty acres of the Lambert farm, and one-eighteenth part of the saw-mill. Afterwards, perhaps on the same day, an equal area, with an eighteenth part of the saw-mill to his son Nathaniel. John Harriman, another son it is supposed, built the house now owned by Flint Weston. He was the ancestor of H. N. Harriman, town clerk and publisher of the *Georgetown Advocate*. At a later date a son of his of the same name, built near by. The house of the father, is said to have been on the north side of the upper end of Pentucket Pond.

This land given to Nathaniel Harriman was bounded

on the south by land of *John Adams*. This land of Adams had been bought of Benjamin Plumer, the year before the Harriman purchase, and included, what has been known, since about 1800, as the Jacobs farm. The last of the name to occupy the Jacobs house, supposed to have been built by John Adams, was Israel Adams, known in the parish as "Pond Israel." Mr. Benjamin Jacobs, of Maine, then became the purchaser and lived here. Moses Tenney, the father of State Treasurer Tenney, once lived here.

Nearly a half century ago, the house, a one story building, was removed, and is a part of the Aaron Pillsbury house on North Street.

The deed to Plumer from Prime, in 1707, has no reference to the Bradford road, now Main Street, but this to Adams, in 1714, has and it is so-called. Another of the name of Adams, who bought thirty-five acres of land of Plumer in 1716, was Isaac, who as well as John, was previously of Rowley. This was situated at the southerly end of Pentucket Pond, on both sides of what is now Main Street, and was just one mile in length, on Harriman's line. The deed concludes, that "Whereas there is a road or way laid out over Sd. land, and whereas no Satisfaction has been made for it, Sd. Plumer doth by these Presents, Consign over to Sd. Adams, all that ye towne Shall Allow for it."

This road was Main Street, and the Clark house, now owned by Mrs. Laura Ham, was probably built by him, or *William Adams*, who was doubtless a son, not many years afterwards. This William was living in the parish in 1730. There was an *Isaac Adams*, who, in 1729, bought the homestead of Jonathan Look, in Byfield parish, of forty-five acres, with dwelling-house and barn. This was on the borders of Newbury, and near the brook, called Andover Spring Brook (Parker River), and was in the vicinity of the old Pearson house if not that house itself. The last of the name to live in the Clark house was Capt. Benjamin Adams, known as "Lawyer Ben." He won the title from his pugnacity and fondness for litigation. Capt. "Mirabeau" was another familiar name. He obtained this from a fancied resemblance to the famous French advocate. A family likeness to Isaac, who was probably his grandfather, is seen in the complaint of neglect, and the demand for settlement, of land damages, in the original deed from Plumer. He was captain of infantry in several campaigns during the Revolutionary War, was on duty in Rhode Island, and in New York in 1777. Representative to General Court in 1778 and 1780. He removed to Ohio about 1812, and aged citizens can recall the appearance of the wagons loaded with his household goods as they left the town for the long journey westward. Some years afterwards, a son, who was a physician, returned on a visit, driving a superb pair of horses which created quite a sensation in the town.

Abraham Adams, of Newbury, styled mariner in many deeds of land, began to buy freeholds in 1715.



In 1721, and later, he purchased twenty-eight lots, mostly on Range G, in the "Three thousand acres." He had not less than two hundred acres of land, but whether he ever settled here or not is uncertain. He doubtless had that intention, but, as a mariner, may have been lost at sea. From the name, it is probable that he was the father of *Abraham Adams*, whose name first appears on the parish records in 1755, and who bought the original Chaplin house, which was built about 1723, just front of the present residence of Mrs. W. M. Shute, on the early-named Fairface Plain (now South Georgetown) and Nelson Street. This house was bought of Jeremiah Chaplin or his heirs not far from 1750, and was occupied during the building of the present house, which was erected about 1812. The original building was removed to King Street near Groveland Village and is still occupied. This was a building of two stories, having but one room in width, without a kitchen in the rear.

Rev. Phineas Adams, pastor of Third Church (West Haverhill), was from this house. He had the title of A.M. in 1766, was probably a collegiate graduate, and ordained in 1771. During the investment of Boston by General Washington, after the battle of Bunker Hill, the patriotism of this colonial pastor was shown by a contribution of his entire herd of cattle, numbering twenty or more head, which were driven to Cambridge to be slaughtered for the army. Previous to 1720 there were several other families, settling or buying land preparatory to settlement.

Jonathan Wheeler, a son of Jonathan, then styled merchant, bought in 1715 the balance of the Payson land. This tract was on the southeast of the Shepard farm, and probably included what is now known as the Searl farm, so that Wheeler, as well as Bradstreet, lived near, or on Searl Street. This Captain Jonathan Wheeler and family removed to West Haverhill in 1738, and were dismissed to the Third Church; selling their farm to Samuel Harriman, who was the direct ancestor of Governor Walter Harriman, of Warner, N. H., for Samuel, it has been said, for a time lived in that neighborhood. This Samuel was one of the sons of Jonathan Harriman.

John Hazen, carpenter, son of Edward, of Boxford, built in 1717 a house in South Georgetown on East Street. He was the first to build in that afterwards (for the time) populous locality. He married, in 1715, Sarah, the twin sister of the third Philip Nelson. His house is supposed to have stood on the south side of the street, not far from the Dry Bridge road, and on the road known as the Red Shanks highway. This highway began at what is now Elm Street, near the Deacon Haskell Perley house, and extended along the height of the land, over the farm now owned by John S. Kimball, past the ancient Merrill house at the corner, and southerly to this Hazen house. From this point it crossed the upland to the present Salem road, near Mr. Buckminister's, and then westerly, until it made a junc-

tion with the early-opened Salem road, on the plain near Timothy Perkins' in Boxford, not far from the house of Francis Marden. The Salem road, past Edward Hazen's (now T. B. Masury), was not opened, and some one living there had often said that he hoped not to live long enough to see a highway past this house. His wish was realized, for at about the time this road was opened, tradition tells us, his death occurred. There was also a road over the hills to the westward, leading to the Spottfords', probably the path now used by Sherman Nelson, to the hill known as the Vineyard lands. Where the bridge over Pen Brook, on East Street, now is, was then the fording-place. Edward Hazen having used this path in going to Deacon Brocklebank's and beyond, it became the road. John Hazen's land was south of the fording-place or bridge. On meadow bought of Jacob Perley at this time a dam is mentioned in the deed.

Samuel Hazen had land in 1725 below Pen Brook, and in 1729 had settled, or was about to settle, in this locality. He was, it is thought, the first owner of the farm now owned by John S. Kimball. Until 1717, any land sold in this part of Beverly was somewhat indefinitely located. From the date of the third division of common land, which was made at about 1700, any lots disposed of were in the form of freeholds, but in 1717 the "Three Thousand Acres" was laid out in ranges, not, however, beginning at one boundary line of the town and continuing in regular alphabetical order, but on a method understood at the time. It seems to have been attempted to make a highway, or at least a proprietors' way; a boundary on one or both of the sides of these ranges. A and B were located in the Red Shanks Hill district. L was south of Nelson Street. C and D south of and along Baldpate Street. Around Rock Pond the land was laid out as H. South of Andover Street over the Thurston land (now a part of the Samuel Little farm) was range R, with S and T opposite, on the present Samuel Noyes' place, and beyond westwardly. Land grants were often made before this careful mapping of the territory, and afterwards it would be found that the lot was already included in a previous grant or purchase, as, for instance, eleven years after Isaac Adams bought his farm near Pentucket Pond of Plumer, he found that the town had given John Hazen two acres within the same farm. This was made satisfactory by a deed from Hazen. After John Hazen had built his house on East Street, his father was obliged to get his title to the farm, which he had given John, confirmed by the town. Something of the irritation which resulted can be conceived, and yet one can imagine that at an early period a little of the squatter-sovereignty feeling prevailed, and that possession and improvement were at least considered as nine points in the law. After 1717, the disposal by the town of both the upper and the middle commons was by a methodical system of ranges and lots. It will be remembered that the Brocklebank farms, all



the Elder Reyner lands, which had come to the Hobsons, and by them sold to other parties, and the Lambert farm, at this time owned by the Plumers, Harrimans, Holmes and Adams, were by special grants, and already, in some cases, private deeds had been given, not once but twice, at different dates for the same land. This disposal in 1717 was the balance of the common land above and below Pen Brook, and was by lots, and each lot recorded when drawn. The record of the names, as drawn, is missing from the collection of books at the Clerk's office in Rowley. In the deeds of these lots, given by individuals at a later day, this record was called the Book of Commoners. The diagrams of these ranges, of different lengths, with the lots, from two to forty in number, are on record, carefully executed by some draughtsman before the lots were drawn.

The original titles to all the lands in the "Three Thousand Acres" not previously granted, and much of the intervening middle commons, bear date at this important point, 1717. The community, the corporate body, the town, had the power thus delegated to it by the Colonial Government to grant personal titles to all land included within its domains, and the same power that granted, it would seem, could compel a surrender if needful for the public good.

The lots on these ranges were generally of about five acres in extent, long and quite narrow, a minute subdivision which is seen in the numerous divisions, the stone foundations of which are still visible all over this tract. This division into such small lots led to many purchases by those intending to settle, so as to have acreage equal to the needs of a farm.

Perhaps the first of the early settlers to buy freeholds extensively in the three thousand acre tract was *Richard Dole*, cordwainer, of Rowley. He secured several, and after the division into lots, obtained from one and another by purchase or exchange, lots to the number of twenty-one. His first intentions were perhaps to locate on Red Shanks highway, buying land there in 1722. In 1726, however, he purchased largely south of Baldpate Street, and doubtless built a house there soon after. This house was probably built on land now owned by G. S. Weston, and which had for its last occupant the widow of Captain Moses Dole. Cuffee Dole, an African of ebony blackness, was the servant of this family until the death of the aged widow. It is said, that when but an infant, he was bought by Captain Dole, in Danvers, for about ten pounds. A death-bed confession of the woman who sold him, was, that he was free-born and had been placed in her care by his mother living in Boston. Cuffee, by diligent search, after years of servitude, found the story was true. Still he clung to his old home, until at the demolition of the old mansion, early in the present century, he became a member of the family of Rev. Mr. Braman, where he died. For many years, any invasion of his prerogatives, as caretaker at funerals and other public occasions, met with

his wrath and scorn. His grave in Union Cemetery is marked with this, "A respectable man of color." His estate, of one thousand dollars, was left to Mr. Braman.

There was another house, which was probably built on the Dole lands, not far from Baldpate Street, on land now owned by Henry Kennett. It has been thought that this was an early Spofford house, but possibly it was the original house of Richard Dole. It had the reputation for many years of being "a haunted house." Mr. Nathan Perley, John Bettis and others, watching with sick people, told strange stories of what they heard and saw. It was removed before this century and re-built in Sherman Nelson's house on Elm Street. No person now living can give any definite clue as to who, at any time, lived in it when on its former site.

Richard Boynton, perhaps the same, whose land adjoined the farm of John Brocklebank, near Pen Brook, bought thirteen lots on ranges S and T in 1724-25, on the north side of Andover Street, and built there. The house on the summit of Spofford's Hill, now owned by Samuel Noyes, is in part at least quite ancient, and doubtless is the original house. Moses Boynton, carpenter and bridge-builder, was living there less than three-fourths of a century ago.

Another family of some prominence who settled about a mile to the south, was that of *Burpee*. From the fact that *Thomas Burpee*, the west parish settler, sold his dwelling-house at the east end of the Oxpasture in Rowley, in the winter of 1724, it is probable that he came here soon afterwards. He built on the southerly slope, of what was soon known as Vineyard Hill, on land now owned by Chas. E. Chaplin, and just about midway of Baldpate and Nelson Streets. From its sunny location, and the abundance of choice fruit grown on this sixty acre farm, it obtained the name of the Vineyard. On the height of the hill, just in the rear of the site of the house, on land that is now owned by Sherman Nelson (then Dole lands), stands the walnut tree, which has been a conspicuous mark for sailors, on our eastern coast, perhaps from the time that Thomas Burpee first came here, and it is still fresh and vigorous. There was a cross-way from the parish farm, occupied by the Spoffords, past this house, reaching Nelson Street, near the ancient Elm, at the foot of the hill, by Mrs. W. M. Shute's. From thence it connected with the Salem road past Oak Dell and over Pen Brook. Although this path has not been travelled for nearly a century, it shows in places the marks of the travel of former times. About 1787, this farm was sold, and a part of the house re-built, in the house of L. L. Dole on Elm Street. Amos Nelson who built about 1767, the house of C. E. Chaplin, on Nelson Street, bought the land surrounding this Burpee house, and used a part as a kitchen for his own dwelling. Ebenezer Burpee, who lived here, a carpenter, was probably a son of Thomas, and was parish clerk for twenty-five years.



Nathaniel Perkins, a son-in-law of Edward Hazen, about 1722, began to buy lots on range L, extending from Nelson Street (Fairface highway, then called) to Boxford Line, north of Lake Raynor. Afterwards buying the Cooper land, south of the town boundary, it carried his land to the shore of the lake. He also owned the Raynor meadow, just below and adjoining the lake. His house was about midway between Nelson Street and the lake, and was erected about 1725. This farm was owned by himself and heirs until 1788, when it was sold to Major Asa Nelson, who lived on Nelson Street. Mr. Perkins was not connected with the west parish, and in no wise identified with its interests. In 1766, he aided in the enlargement of the cemetery, near B. S. Barnes' house, in Boxford. In the winter of 1778, there were several sick with the small-pox in the Perkins house and vicinity, the sickness finally became epidemic, and this house being isolated from other habitations was used as the hospital or pest house. Several victims were buried near the foot-path leading to the lake, about forty rods from the house. It was claimed that the smoke, from the chimneys of houses where the sick were, carried the disease from one house to another in this locality. The families of Amos and Asa Nelson, Mr. Perkins' neighbors on Nelson Street, removed, the one to the Burpee, the other to the Brocklebank house, the men only daily returning to care for the barns and farm-stock. This Perkins family, like many others at that time, are said to have removed to New Hampshire. On a little knoll just southeast from Edward U. Nelson's house, who with his sister are owners of this farm, is a hollow, said to have been dug by a member of the Perkins family, as the cellar for an intended house. It is said the death of this young man, during the war of the Revolution, whether abroad or at home, is not known, left this hollow as the only memorial of the house that was to be. This Perkins house had a chequered history, much more than the average New England farmhouse. It was taken down in 1856, the material being used in building the house of W. M. Dorgan, on Pond Street.

William Fiske was settled in this town as early as 1727. His father, Samuel Fiske, of Wenham, bought property in Boxford late in the seventeenth century. In 1716 he deeded to his son William the dwelling-house he was then in possession of. In the spring of 1727 William bought of Abraham How, of Ipswich, a lot on range H below Pen Brook. In October of that year, he was in Rowley. It is said that his house was built east of the house of Mrs. Sylvanus Merrill, near the lower end of the garden. He was a constituent member of the First Congregational Church in Georgetown, being one of the eighteen males dismissed from Byfield, and was at once elected deacon. The family seems to have become extinct at his death.

William Searle was an early settler on the Raynor

Plain (Marlborough). His father, William, came to Rowley perhaps from Ipswich between 1680 and '90, and doubtless died as a member of Captain Philip Nelson's company, in Governor Phips' expedition against Quebec. William Searle, of the west parish, married Jane, a granddaughter of Captain Philip Nelson, about 1722, and settled here soon afterward. The ancient house, supposed to be built by him, was demolished by Deacon John Platts more than a half-century ago. The house now owned by Mrs. Sylvanus Merrill was built on the same site. Mr. Searle was, like his neighbor Deacon Fiske, a constituent member of the First Church, and was also made a deacon at the organization.

Another house, thought to have been built prior to 1730, and still standing, is on Chaplin's Court, and the property of Miss Jane Edmonds. This was perhaps built by *Jonathan*, a brother or son of *Jeremiah Chaplin*. Here lived Elder Asa, and here was born, in 1776, or early resided, his son Jeremiah Chaplin, D.D., the first president of Colby University, Waterville, Me., and who continued in office fifteen years. It is said that Gen. B. F. Butler was under his instruction for several years. Descendants noted as educators and in the world of letters are his son Jeremiah, a Baptist clergyman and writer, the husband of Jane Dunbar, and the father of Heman L., a lawyer in Boston; Mrs. Hannah, wife of Prof. George Conant, of Hamilton, N. Y., in whose family his last years were spent, and other daughters, who married Baptist ministers. Dr. Chaplin united with the Baptist Church in Georgetown before his eleventh year. He was a graduate of Brown University, 1799. An item in the account book of Benjamin Adams, of South Georgetown, is, "Dr., June, 1799, Elder Asa Chaplin for use of chaise to go to Providence to see Jeremiah graduate."

A name of distinction for about three-fourths of a century was that of Thurston. Sergt. Daniel Thurston, of Newbury, bought freeholds west of Pen Brook as early as 1714.

After the division into ranges and lots, he acquired several lots by purchase or exchange on Range R, south of Andover Street, upon which a house was built. It is not known whether he settled here, but *Jonathan Thurston*, probably a son, was living here doubtless in 1731. He and wife Lydia were original members of the First Church, and may have been settled here a year or two prior to 1730. Mr. Thurston was the first parish clerk, holding the office eight years. The house, a spacious mansion with eight square rooms, was sold in 1800, with the farm of forty or more acres to Rev. Isaac Braman. Much of the material of this venerated mansion when demolished was used by George J. Tenney in the erection of Tenney's Hall, now the residence of Mr. H. N. Harriman. Three generations of the Thurston family had dwelt under its roof, Daniel and Stephen finally removing, the one to Ipswich the other to Andover. The descendants who visit with

reverence the spot where the house once stood are numerous and influential.

The southerly slope of Baldpate Hill was partially cleared by Nathaniel Mighill, of Rowley, who was a grandson of Deacon Thomas Mighill (the first who cleared land in Georgetown), at an early date. In 1716 Nathaniel began his extensive purchase of land. Later, perhaps in 1724 or '25, having bought lots on ranges D and E, he built the easterly front of the present Mighill house, on Baldpate Street. It is a family tradition that it was not permanently occupied for some years. Some of the family, it is said, spent the summer months here, returning to Rowley in the autumn, and that one son and then another would attempt to settle, only to go back to the old homestead. Finally, *Stephen Mighill*, the eldest, about 1733 or '34 removed here, was elected deacon in 1747, and was quite active in parish affairs. In all deeds he was styled "maltster." This was the partial occupation of the family in Rowley; the malt-house of Deacon Thomas of date 1650, was located just east of the barn of his descendants, the present owners of the estate. The malt-house at their Georgetown estate was standing and continued to bear this name until within the past twenty years. The family of Deacon Stephen Mighill were quite aristocratic, and had negro servants. One by the name of Sabina was afterwards in Rev. Mr. Chandler's family, and was remembered by him in his will. Chloe was another, and is said to have been purchased by Mr. Amos Nelson. He gave her the freedom she coveted. Another of Mr. Nelson's colored friends lived for many years in Boxford, and annually presented her benefactor with stockings and mittens of her own knitting.

David Mighill, a grandson of the Deacon, graduated at Dartmouth in 1809, and was a town physician for about forty years. He had conferred upon him the degree of LL.D. as well as that of M.D. He first practiced in Dunbarton, N. H., where he married Betsy Mills and where his eldest son John (Mills) was born, who now resides on the old farm. He had quite an inventive gift, and one of his devices, a pump, proved very valuable to the party who obtained the patent. Stephen, a son of the above, was in medical practice for several years in Roxbury and Boston. His sister Irene married Dr. Moses Spofford, who for many years divided the practice of the town and parish with Dr. Mighill, his brother-in-law.

Solomon Nelson was another early settler. Soon after his marriage to Mercy, the daughter of Jeremiah Chaplin in 1725, he and his cousins followed their uncle Gershom to what was then the town of Mendon, now Hopedale, where he bought land in the wilderness, and remained there until 1729. Returning to Rowley in April, he bought a lot of five acres on range M, and probably built that year on the spot upon which the house of the writer stands, now occupied by Leon S. Gifford. The original house, with its additions, became quite extensive, and was taken down in 1838.

Mr. Nelson was highly esteemed by the parish, was frequently an assessor, and was treasurer and collector for perhaps twenty years.

His descendants of special prominence are Hon. Jeremiah Nelson, late of Newburyport, who was a member of Congress from the Essex North district for several terms; Rev. William B. Dodge, who for years was noted as an educator and philanthropist, the "Master Dodge," of Salem, Mass., and General G. M. Dodge, chief engineer of the Central Pacific Railroad, who was urged by President Grant, it has been said, to take the position of Secretary of War in his first cabinet, but declined the honor. A daughter, Huldah, who married Elder Samuel Harriman, died in March, 1848, aged one hundred years and nearly six months. In native vigor of mind and mental acumen, and although comparatively uneducated, having much of the masculine force of the historian Hannah Adams, she perhaps exceeded any other person of her sex ever born in the town.

CHAPTER LIII.

GEORGETOWN.—Continued.

PARISH ORGANIZATION—FIRST CONGREGATIONAL AND BYFIELD.

At the beginning of the year 1700 there were about twenty families settled within the limits of the territory now known as Georgetown. Of this number four-fifths at least were in the easterly or Byfield section of the town. With two possible exceptions, that of John and Samuel Spofford, who went to Bradford meeting, all attended religious services at Rowley. Not less than one hundred and twenty families, with a population of over six hundred, were residents of Rowley at that time. They were liberal toward their ministers. The estate of Mr. Rogers was appraised at fifteen hundred pounds, perhaps equal to twenty-five thousand dollars in our day, while Mr. Shepard, after a pastorate of only about three years died, leaving an estate equal by our standard to nearly ten thousand dollars.

The Rowley farmers were prosperous, and in view of their prosperity there should have been a readiness to aid the weak parishes in the interior. Instead, the people of Rowley village (afterwards Boxford), were to pay *one-half* of their minister-rates to Topsfield.

The Topsfield meeting was the one they attended, and why not have granted them authority to pay all their rates to Topsfield and aid that slow-growing settlement. Communities were isolated, wrapped up in their own local interests, and there was very often manifest, a marked want of breadth and generous feeling. One peculiar feature, shown in documents of the time, bearing on the alliance between church



and State, was that the church preceded the State, the organization of the State being apparently to maintain and perpetuate the church, and therefore we find it made the basis of appeals from communities for incorporation as towns. Under that system the civil law was the source of the strength of the church, and the Boxford petitioners then said to the General Court, when asking for town rights, "now we have no way to compel any person to do his duty, if he will not do it of himself" and to have the power to compel a person, they asked for separate sovereignty, and it was granted. When town incorporation was not thought advisable parishes were established. This word happily becoming obsolete in the New England signification, and probably in its primal meaning (that of the source of a benefice or supply), was first considered as feasible in what is now Georgetown in 1701.

December 16th, of that year, a religious service having been established, perhaps for a year or more westerly of Rye Plain Bridge, the families located there asked Rowley to have their rates abated. This was partially granted, the vote being to abate one-half of the minister-rates of Jonathan Wheeler, Benjamin Plumer, Samuel Brocklebank, John Browne, Nathaniel Browne, Jonathan Look, James Chute, Andrew Stickney, Henry Poor, Duncan Stewart, Ebenezer Browne, Ebenezer Stewart, John Lull, James Tenney, John Plumer, Richard Boynton and Josiah Wood.

This petition and the partial response implies some action already taken, perhaps a meeting-house raised and covered, in which services were held, and on the completion of it the vote of the town, March 16, 1702-3, was passed, which *verbatim* is this: "The Inhabitants of ye Rowley living on the Northwest side of the bridge called Rye plain bridge, and on the North west side of the hill called Long hill, and Joyned with the farmers of Newbury that doth border on us, in building a new meeting house for the worship of God, Shall be Abatted their Rates in the ministry Rate in the Towne of Rowley, if they do maintain with the help of our neighbors of Newbury, an Orthodox ministry to belong and teach, in that meeting-house that they have built, until Such time as it is judged that their is asufishant Number, to maintain a minister in the North west part of our Towne, without the help of our neighbors of Newbury, that doth border upon us, whose names are as followeth:" (The seventeen as above, with Lionel Chute added.) When the population would warrant, another parish was to be formed, exclusively of Rowley families. The first meeting-house in this parish was near where the present house stands. This part of Newbury was the "Falls," and this part of Rowley was "Rowlbery."

In the records of the Rowley church the parish was called Byfield in 1706, and yet that year it was incorporated as "The Falls." Hon. Nathaniel Byfield, of

Boston, perhaps connected with some of the families in the parish, may have aided in building the meeting-house, and some proposed giving it his name. After his gift of a bell, it was decided to call it Byfield in his honor. An endeared name to multitudes living and dead.

Rev. Moses Hale, of Newbury, was ordained November 17, 1706, as the first minister. A graduate of Harvard in 1699. Died January 16, 1744-45.

The records of the Church, to the death of Mr. Hale, are lost. Perhaps a search might be successful. In 1707 the parish lines were established. This included from Rye Plain bridge, up an ancient way near Francis Nelson's house, over Long Hill, across Elder's Plain, by Deacon Brocklebank's (now M. G. Spofford's), and to the Bradford line, including within its limits all of the Lambert farm, near Pentucket Pond, being in all one-half of the area now Georgetown. It probably being "judged that there is asufishent Number to maintaine a minister in the Northwest part of our Town," in the language of the Rowley records, steps were taken, perhaps as early as 1727, preparatory to petitioning for incorporation as a separate parish. Since 1700, and especially since 1725, as is seen in Chapter LI, a rapid settlement had gone forward. We can imagine John Spofford and the Plumers, in earnest conversation with their near neighbors on the question, and some strong assertions that the time had come to build a meeting-house here.

There is no doubt such important action was discussed for at least one or two winters around the broad hearth and in the light of their hickory fires, some confident, others doubting, until at a meeting in some one of the old-time kitchens, it was decided that in the coming winter of 1728-29, they would sled to the Harriman & Plumer mill on Rock Pond Brook, logs for the lumber needed for the house. The Brocklebanks were interested, suggested the lot below Pen Brook on Main Street, at the corner of the early opened road, near where David Brocklebanks' house stands, and the heavy oak frame was provided, squared, and in June 1729 was raised, soon boarded in, and the first rude meeting-house completed. This was a proprietors' building; some in the vicinity were not then interested, and the erection of this first meeting-house was not a general affair. There were no dedication ceremonies, that is an innovation of much later times. The name was properly meeting-house, and at that day it meant nothing more. There was no sacredness in the building itself, for that savored of the Episcopacy they abhorred. In most cases there was no burial of their departed friends in the shadow of these New England houses for meetings.

To be nearly central as possible was one thing, to have it open to the public highway for convenience, seems to have been another.

May 27th, 1730, a petition for a distinct parish was signed by forty-two persons and presented to the General Court.



October 1, 1731, it was ordered "That Mr. Benjamin Plummer, a Principal Inhabitant of the precinct Lately set off from the town of Rowley, and parish of Byfield, is Authorized to Notifie the Inhabitants to convene in some publick Place, to Choose precinct officers, to stand until the Anniversary meeting in March next." J. Quincy was speaker and Jonathan Belcher, governor (later a friend of Whitefield), who approved. The names of Captain John Spofford, Benjamin Plummer and Jonathan Thurston do not appear on the petition. They were, doubtless, originally not favorable to the movement.

"By Virtue of the above Precept the Inhabitants of the New precinct assembled together on the fifth of October, 1731."

Lieutenant John Spafford was elected moderator and Jonathan Boynton clerk, to serve until the meeting in March. Lieutenant John Spafford, Elder Jeremiah Chaplin, Ensign Benjamin Plummer, Mr. William Searl and Mr. Aaron Pengry were elected assessors, and Jonathan Thurston and Samuel Johnson, collectors. These were the first legal officers of most of the territory now known as Georgetown.

Nearly a year before the church was organized, on October 25, 1731, the parish voted "to call Mr. Daniel Rogers, that hath preached with us, to be our minyster." "Nov. 9, 1731, voated that Lieut. John Spafford Should build the Galery Stairs, and Joyce for the Galery flore, and Lay the said flore with Yalow pine boards, and to make three Seats in the frunt Galery, and two Seats on each Side Galerys."

This describes the house in part, a plain building, without steeple or spire, and at this date still unfinished.

"Jan. 4, 1731-32, It was a Greed & Voated to call Mr. Chandler of Andover, the Gentleman that hath preached with us of Late, to be our Minister, and it was Voated by every man then Assembled." Salary to be "one hundred and ten pounds pr. year, to be Stated by the Standard, acording as mony Should Grow better or worse," and "three hundred pounds for Settlement." Five parish meetings had been held.

March 27, 1731-32, First annual meeting "voated Mr. Chandler twenty cords of wood a year." August 8, 1732, voted "By the major part of the Builders of the Meeting-House, that the Rest of the people in said parish should have an Equal prevelige with us, in s^t. meeting-house, so Long as it stands in the place where it now is." John Harriman dissented. Some were not satisfied with the location, and the same dissatisfaction continued for several generations.

Mr. Chandler accepted this purely parish call, and it was voted by the parish, September 20, 1732, for the ordination, October 13, 1732. The minister was in this particular instance selected by the parish, which virtually represented the town of to-day.

Three-fourths of a century of independent churches makes it somewhat difficult to have a clear compre-

hension of the conditions of Church and State, as then existed. The law of the colony recognized but one religious organization, and that equally with all other public interests, was sustained and perpetuated by the "law's strong arm." The church was organized just two weeks before the ordination, for which preparations were going on among the thirty or more families with harmony and enthusiasm.

Perfectly united as the parish was in Mr. Chandler, as Jonathan Boynton informs us in his careful record, we can believe that every housewife did her best to make the important affair something to recall with pride, long afterward. Ten pounds was voted to Jeremiah Harriman to make provision for ministers and messengers and "some other Gentlemen that wates on the ministers," colored servants, probably.

The lofty airs common to their class at this period, on occasions of the importance of an ordination, have often been described. The ministers and their attendants, doubtless assembled at the Deacon Brocklebank house, where his son Francis then lived. It was voted that "William Fiske have ten pounds, to provide for Scholars and other Gentlemen." The churches of Byfield, Bradford, Boxford, Andover, Rowley, and the Second of Newbury were represented. The sermon was by Mr. Rogers of Boxford, from John 21: 15, 16, 17; and the services were concluded by singing part of the 132d Psalm.

At the church organization, two weeks previously, Mr. Hale of Byfield constituted and Mr. Balch of second Bradford (now Groveland), preached a sermon, afterwards printed.

The records of the church from this date are in the minute and delicate penmanship of Mr. Chandler. "Nov., 1732, a Desent Seat for Deacons and a Communion table ordered to be built." "Mar., 1732-33, Ebenezer Burpee instructed to put up two rails, bools and banisters at the end of the pulpit stairs." "July 17, 1733, voted to Joseph Nelson, twelve pounds, to provide for the raising of Mr. Chandler's house and barn." The house was built just west of the church, on the site of which the house of Humphrey Nelson now stands. This house, built in 1733, was burned on Town Meeting day, April 4, 1825. The cause was a defective chimney. Most of the adult males of the parish were in Rowley at the time.

At this date, 1733, the line between Byfield and this parish was settled "with Leonard Harriman's widow and David pearsons to belong to the west parish of Rowley, and so Jedediah pearsons' Land to belong to Byfield." "Dea. Searl was chosen to go down to the Generall Court, to see what may be gotten of the town rents." December, 1735, the same was chosen to receive the money that the parish is to have of the town, and also the rent of the thatch-bank. This land in Rowley, marsh and upland, was often ditched, leased by the parish every three years, and finally, in 1856, was leased for nine hundred and ninety-nine years. The railroad near the Rowley station was laid



out over it for a considerable distance, and land damage awarded in 1839.

Pews in the meeting-house were not made as yet, but in December, 1736, Mr. Chandler had the "Liberty of a pew at the west end of the pulpit." It was also voted "to lease that part of Spofford's farm that has been set off to the west parish." This division of the parish land had been made in July, 1735.

The northerly side of the farm, then occupied by Samuel Spofford, had come to the west parish, one-half of Half-moon meadow, four lots of land in the upper commons, or two freeholds, and the thatchbank at Oyster Point. John and Jonathan Spofford, nephews of Samuel, occupied the southerly half. March, 1737, the parish voted to lease the wood lots, and voted again to lease their Spofford farm. The Parish farm at that time had been improved by the Spofford family for nearly seventy years. Samuel was nearly ninety years of age and an extensive landholder, especially in Boxford. He had seen this farm reclaimed from the wilderness by his father, himself and brothers, and now it was, like the parish, to be divided in twain. He had lived to see a meeting-house, with the houses of energetic farmers, scattered all along the easterly slope below him, and forming in themselves and families the west parish of Rowley. At their first coming this family expected others would soon follow, and no doubt, as the years moved wearily on, with a monotonous tread, and they were still nearly alone, it seemed as if Elders and Fairface plains, the Lambert farm, Red Shanks, the Rocky hills and Baldpate would never have the clearings they so longed to see. He had heard from many a lip the thrilling story of Mrs. Dustin and her Indian captors; saw, perhaps, the murdered Goodrich family buried near where they were slain; the smoke from the burning homes of his Haverhill neighbors had spoken a tale of horror on that fateful October morning, 1706—and still he and his kindred had been nearly alone, doubtless only the Brocklebanks to relieve the solitude. Father and brothers, the only companions of his youth and earlier manhood, had long before passed from this wilderness into the "pleasant land," and still he had lived on, and when an aged patriarch, as the last decade in his life draws near, all at once, as it were, there is the stir of human life on every hand. The sound of the axe and the crash of the giants of the forest is heard, and land grants, transfers and allotments is the animated debate that makes it seem like a new world upon which he has entered. This venerable pioneer, soon after the organization of the West Parish Church, was received into membership, being dismissed from the Rowley Church. He died January 1, 1743, aged ninety-one years.

The farm was leased February 22, 1737-38, for nine hundred and ninety-nine years. Five members of the parish objected.

The divisional parts of the meeting-house were

early called pens, and in the year 1741 the parish voted "to sell the pences in the gallery to David Nelson, also to lay out the Rome for the pences, and sell the Rome for the pences at the hiest bider." In 1742 an addition to the house of thirteen feet four inches was voted, and Richard Thurston was engaged to build this extension.

In 1744 it was voted that the builders of the house should have the two hind seats of the men and the women's below, they giving a bill of sale of the meeting-house. Until then, the proprietors had the house under their control. The pulpit was to be painted, and Samuel Harriman had twenty pounds for "Redding the meeting-house." A few buildings painted that peculiar shade of red, were to be seen thirty years ago. About that date, the Ipswich farmers (afterwards known as Linebrook), petitioned for some families to be set off to them. The Linebrook parish probably asked for a part of what is now Dodgeville, as the west parish ran easterly of what at present is known as the Phillips' place. To illustrate the spirit of the New England minister at this period, while an improvement was shown in the outward work of the parish, Mr. Chandler suggested, in May, 1747, to prevent profanation of the Lord's Day, and as many live at considerable distance, to have a sermon read between public service, through the summer season. This custom was continued for half a century.

A severe drought in 1749, was a cause for alarm, and a church fast was voted June 4th. The hay crop is said to have been so short, that weeds and almost every imaginable green thing was cured for substitutes. The meeting-house needed repairs, and a vote so passed in 1758. The question of removal to the "senter of the parish," was agitated. "Mr. John Brocklebank's corner, near his house," was suggested, the expense to be raised by subscription. In 1759 a motion was made "to get an artice to mesure and draw a plan, to know where the senter of sd parish is." The above motion was promptly negatived. In 1760 the controversy was such, that as some were for repairs and others for removal, or a new house, that arbitration was voted. The committee were Caleb Cushing, Samuel Phillips and Captain Thomas Dennis. Their decision was to continue the house where it then stood. Dudley Tyler, who then owned the Brocklebank house near the meeting-house, was Innkeeper, and provided for the committee. Only some limited repairs voted, while a pediment over the front door and other attractive improvements had been suggested.

In 1762 it was voted that "those that have taken pains to Learn the art of Singing," may set in the front gallery. The first reference to singing, is in the church records for 1736, viz.: "Mr. Burpee continued to tune the Psalm in Publick Worship."

In 1763 an innovation was made, which was "to admit Dr. Watts' Imitation of David Psalms, but not wholly to exclude ye old Version." In 1765 Mr.

John Cleveland (then of Ipswich, Chaplain at Fort William Henry, in 1757), "and other gospel ministers, not intending on Mr. Chandler's ministry," are invited to "Prech Lectors." About twenty years before, Whitefield had crossed parish lines, and itinerated in the open air if the meeting-houses were denied him, but before this, whatever the opposition to the multitude of others, that were busy in religious service in an irregular way, Whitefield's abilities were recognized, and his special work seemingly approved. Still, at this late date, there were many ministers and churches, so trammelled by the fetters of the period, that their recognition of Whitefield was but half-hearted.

Tradition says that Mr. Chandler was earnest in persuading Elder Asa Chaplin to attend a service in Georgetown where Whitefield was to preach, and that the elder objected, saying that he had no fault to find with his own minister. "But," said Mr. Chandler, with an emphatic gesture, "Mr. Whitefield does not preach as I do; he preaches with power."

As early as 1754 Mr. Timothy Symmes began to preach in private houses, and his perhaps intemperate remarks, had produced a feeling, which at about that time, in this church, was something more than an annoyance. In 1768 again the old debate came up on repairing the old house, or building a new house, with a more satisfactory location.

April 8, 1768, another meeting, to see whether they would build on the southeasterly end of Mr. Solomon Nelson Juna house, as near as may be, with convenience." Voted in the affirmative. Later in April, met again, to see if the parish would build at Brocklebank's or Burbank's corner, but the former site had the preference. Meetings were frequently called during the haying season that summer, but the party in favor of building, and of building on Mr. Nelson's land, were always successful. In 1769 the parish ordered to be purchased and a deed taken. At this date, with a new meeting-house assured, we close the chapter.

CHAPTER LIV.

GEORGETOWN—(Continued).

EDUCATION—SCHOOLS, LIBRARIES AND LECTURES.

THE establishing of schools was of colonial action at an early date. In 1637 the college was located; in 1642 legislation for local schools, and in 1647 it was ordered that every township of fifty families should have a school to teach children to write and read, because, says the act, "It being one chiefe prect of ye ould deluder Satan, to keepe men from the knowledge of ye Scriptures," and "y^e learning may not be buried in y^e grave of o^r fath^{rs}, in ye church & commonwealth."

With few evasions, this law was obeyed. One hun-

dred householders required a Grammar-school, and churches were also urged, to aid any "pore scholler" to get a collegiate education. Under this system, the schools were essentially parochial, the teachers serving in that office and as ministers' assistants. When Mr. Rogers, of Rowley, added as one of the conditions in his will, that the church should always have two ruling elders, or pastor and teacher, his intention may have been to bring the secular instruction of the young, within church limits. The residents of the West Parish, or Georgetown, March 20, 1737, voted to "Bould a Schoal House, & to set it between the Brook by Capt. Bradstreets, and M^r Francis Brocklebank's Brook."

The dimensions of this first building erected for schools, was twenty feet long, sixteen wide, with a height of eight feet. The proportions were similar, in all buildings for the same purpose, for a century afterwards. This school-house was on the hill near the Searl place, and was placed there to accommodate Byfield, as well as the West Parish. Later, a vote was passed, "to allow seven shillings and a piney for Rhum, at the Raising of the School House." Instruction on the injurious effects of alcohol on the human constitution would seem rather inconsistent in that school-room.

November 6th Samuel Payson was invited to serve as teacher. Mr. Payson, our first "master," was a son of the Rowley minister, a graduate of Harvard in 1716, and taught in the various sections of the town from 1722 to 1756. Ebenezer Burpee, the carpenter, made the furniture at his house in the Chaplin field, under Vineyard hill, for this primitive school-room, where the sires of our grandparents had their first insight into the mysteries of the three "R's." The vote on the bill to pay Burpee, is novel, and was for "meeching forms and tables, for said school-house."

The above vote was passed November 3, 1740, and the house was doubtless ready for the boys that month. In November or December was the time for this school to begin, and eight weeks' schooling in winter was the rule for more than a century. Doubtless the methods of Pedagogue Payson were strict discipline as the *summum bonum*, and his Bible as a leading text-book. This was a boys' school; the daughters in those days did not learn the art of writing, and to learn how to read the Bible and catechism merely, could be taught as well at home. One can imagine the Spofford boys coming down from the hill, David Nelson and the Chaplins from Nelson Street, the Harrimans, Stickneys and others, with a few from Byfield, all perhaps eager to get the benefit, of this first school.

December 30, 1745, the parish voted another school-house, and to set it at the south end of Francis Brocklebank's Hill, between Mr. Chandler's house and the brook. This was where Edward E. Sherburne's house now stands, and may partly have been known to the present generation, in the "Poole house," burned many years ago, on the site of which,

Mr. Sherburn built his house. This school-house was to cost forty pounds, and to be completed by May 1st. A relative of the writer, Aunt Huldah Harriman, taught the girls and children of the parish, in this building, the useful lessons of knitting and plain sewing, with the equally useful reading and spelling, in their rudiments. After her hundredth year, she would tell the story of the gigantic black snake, suddenly uncoiling itself from the rafters of that same school-house, and dropping into her little company of pupils below. This was known as the "Parish," and the first one built, as the "Upper School-House" for years afterwards.

For several years there was an attempt made to have a school kept in this Parish-House, and in November, 1750, it was voted "that the winter, or writing and Reading School, Should be kept only one-third part of the time at the upper School-House," or the first house. After the parish had employed Mr. Payson as teacher, for some years the town took action, and Mr. Benjamin Adams taught in 1742 and again in 1746, four months the first year, and six the second, half of the time in Byfield and half in the West Parish.

This is the first mention of a school in the Byfield part of Georgetown, and as a geographical centre, was the first point to be considered, it might be possible to locate it. Perhaps it was near the present location of what might properly be called Cleaveland School or No. 7, possibly, however, in a private house. At a later date, early in the century, this school-house was located not far from Stickney's Corner, opposite the Pike House. The peculiar site of the first house on Searl Street, was, as a probable centre, of the west part of Rowley. This teacher was doubtless from one of the Adams families, of Rowley or Newbury. He was evidently not a professional instructor. March, 1753, the parish again took up the question of schools, and voted that the school be kept one-third of the time each, at the Parish, at the Upper House and at the house at the easterly end and northerly part of the parish. The last named house was built about this time, at some point near the Parker River Woolen Mills.

In 1749 the town voted that each parish have a sum granted for the support of schools, in accordance with the county taxes paid by each, and this apportionment continued down to modern times, only with the difference of a division among the school districts, instead of parishes.

October 30, 1770, a committee was chosen to find suitable persons to keep school, and as was done seventeen years before, the parish voted that the time for the school be equally divided between the parish, upper and easterly end. Mr. Moses Johnson, of Rowley, was offered the school at the easterly end for three months, at seven dollars per month. William Chandler was engaged to keep the parish school.

Master Chandler was a cousin of Rev. James

Chandler, somewhat bookish, and may have kept a fairly good school. Not long after this he removed to Salem, Mass., where he died. At that time the selectmen were requested to set up this Second, or Parish School, "ye Monday after Thanksgiving." In the calendar of the New England farm-house, what possibilities have hung on the issues of that day? the beginning of the winter term of the district school. A few weeks of study under the guidance of a skilful teacher has changed the after-life of many a country boy, and made him a man, valuable to himself and the world around him.

November 9, 1773, Mr. Greenleaf Dole was employed as master, for two pounds thirteen shillings per month. Graduated at Harvard 1771, and Georgetown born. Master Dole achieved such greatness as an instructor that his fame has come down to us. His discipline was severe, and it has been said that one swing of his muscular arm, has sent a whole class ignominiously to the floor. We imagine from all accounts that his severity was sometimes scarcely tempered with mercy. He has, however, left behind him a record in the memories of his pupils, such as no other teacher of that age did, and a picture, that needs no fancy to make complete.

March 26, 1776, an attempt was made, to allow the Grammar School to be kept at the South School-House, their proportion of time. This, the first school-building in South Georgetown, was on the corner of Brook and Central Streets, where the brick house of Lowell G. Wilson now stands. The request does not seem to have been acted upon, the war then bursting upon the country with all its uncertainty, drove all other thoughts from their minds. In 1777 the teacher divided his services for the year, with the school at the North, that on Searl Street, the South School and the easterly end of the parish, but not further down than Mr. Phineas Dodge's house, and that each family signify, what school-house they choose.

The Parish School-House needed repairs, and a year later it was attempted to repair, or sell. Also voted that the school at the easterly part of the parish be kept at Mr. Sanders, or at Mr. Jeremiah Searl's. Three days afterward, agreed to build a school-house on Spofford's Hill, near Benj. Thurston's house. If we are not mistaken, this stood at the right of the road, not far from Nathaniel Marble's. The southeasterly part of the parish seems to have been complaining at this time, of unfair treatment in the school appropriation, and December 17, 1778, it was voted that all below Muddy Brook (now Dodgeville), and also Abraham Foster, Samuel Kezer, Jedediah Kilborn, Nathaniel Kezer and Samuel Johnson, draw their part of the town's money for schools, and for no other use.

In November, 1779, "Master Dole" was engaged, and all below Muddy Brook were, probably by the vote allowed to hire whom they pleased. February

3, 1785, the important vote was passed, to build a school-house "Somewhere near the Centure," but February 8th, the vote was re-considered, and that is the last reference to the noted Centre School-House, in the records of the parish. The last record relating to schools was December 4, 1792, when John Brocklebank had twelve shillings allowed, for the use of his house for a school in 1791. This school-room was at the east end of the house, and until the building of the red "centre school-house, served a good purpose." This same old house opened its doors for a popular singing school, and was a sort of a parish centre. On that December day, the record says, "from nine of the clock in the morning, to nine in the evening, under the direction of the school committee, the assessors are directed to order the several districts or part districts in the parish, their proportion in money or wood."

Before 1795 this red school-house was, by order of the town, built on what was then Andover Street, where the soldiers' monument now stands. It soon became the educational centre of the parish, and teachers like Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, Colonel Edward Todd, of Rowley (a good mathematician) and others, for many years afterwards, would talk with animation about their pupils in this famous old house. In later days, neglected and dilapidated, strolling Indians made it their abode, and with unlatched door it was the temporary home of any passer-by. Finally, becoming an eyesore to some enterprising unknowns of the town, on the night of April 20, 1840, it was mysteriously demolished.

Text-books for schools were almost unknown prior to 1800. Bailey's and Johnson's dictionaries, one or two geographies, an arithmetic or two, with an accidence, covered about the list of popular aids to knowledge, at least in the country towns, and these books were of English make. Lindley Murray's grammar, and Walsh's arithmetic did a good work, and the models of eloquence in the English Reader were as a new inspiration to the young, early in the present century.

In 1789 towns were authorized by law to locate school districts. In 1840, by subdivisions of the original districts, Georgetown had seven, and the same number, when by the law district lines were abolished. Could a truthful history of the action of some of these school-district meetings, from 1830 to 1850, be made a part of the annals of the town, it would give a better picture of the times than could be drawn from any other source. The prudential committee-man during his term of office, was the most important man in the district. He employed the teachers, cared for the house and the property of the district. Without compensation he served wholly with an eye to the public good.

For some years the town of Rowley appointed a committee to secure teachers, as under the parish law, but from 1830, or earlier, this was left to the district.

The supervisors, in the person of Father Braman and perhaps Dr. David Mighill, served without pay, because of their interest in the future of the town. Rev. Mr. Pond was paid a small amount in 1843 for school-committee service, and since with but one or two exceptions, the general supervision of the schools has been a part of the expense of the town. The building of school-houses, under the old law, giving districts control, sometimes rent local communities, as with an earthquake. This was the effect in South Georgetown in 1843 or 1844. Frequent meetings were called, and sharp personalities were used. One prominent citizen denounced all who favored the new house as "foreigners," because it happened that those who had just moved into the district were especially prominent in advocating a new house. The present house in District 2 (which it would be well to call the Chaplin District), was built, however, in the summer of 1844, and modelled after the school-house on Topsfield common. Mr. Montgomery, of Londonderry, N. H., was the first teacher. The house in District 5 (which should be called Plumer), was built in 1851, and, if we are correct, was not until after considerable of a contest. The school-house in the central district was situated nearly opposite the Clark house, on Main Street, and began to be inconvenient and at a distance from the centre of population. After much delay and many district meetings, some declared illegal, a vote was secured in 1854 for a brick building. Tristram Brown was a committee. When half built the contractor failed, and the work placed in new hands for completion. The present house, in District 6, (which might properly be called Tenney) was enlarged and improved in 1861, making it almost a new building, and the same work was done, to some extent, in District 1 in 1865. The old house in this district was near the house of Moses Merrill. For this district the name of Chandler is appropriate.

The town High-school, after much opposition and persistent obstruction, was established at the close of the year 1856, in the Town-house (then recently erected), with Wm. Reed as teacher. He is still living, and if we mistake not is the father of Senator Reed, of Taunton, who was a lad at the time, and attended this first term. One or more of the scholars were twenty-two years of age. Dr. D. M. Crafts succeeded Mr. Reed the following year. In 1858 Edwin Parker, of Charlestown, a graduate of Bowdoin, was engaged, and held the position until 1860, when A. J. Dutton was employed, who taught the school until 1862, when the services of S. C. Cotton, of Sandown, N. H., were secured as a teacher. Mr. Cotton taught until 1866, when Edward S. Fickett was engaged, and, as principal, still holds the position. In the year 1868, assistants were employed, Mrs. M. R. Holmes, M. E. Choate and Sarah R. Barnes, serving in that position and the last named part of the following year. Miss Choate was also assistant for 1870 and 1871.

In 1872 there was a change of assistants each term. In



1873 Miss Lizzie N. Bateman, of this town, was engaged and continued as assistant until 1886, when ill health compelled her retirement, and Miss Alfreda Noyes was appointed.

Some years ago an association of graduates and past and present pupils of the High-school was organized, the annual reunion occurring on the evening of graduation day.

Perhaps the teaching of Miss Sarah E. Horner, in her long term of service, has been more productive of good than that of any other teacher in town. Her influence has been felt in every district and about every school-room has been witness to her industry and tact.

One of the teachers of the private schools, J. C. Phillips, of Lawrence, who about 1847 kept a good school in Tenney's Hall, a room on the second floor of what is now the residence of H. N. Harriman, Central Street, was very successful in impressing some love for study on the duller of his pupils. The hall on the third floor was for years the exhibition room for panoramas and the like. Mr. Thompson, afterwards a physician, also taught a school of a high grade about 1850. Besides, there were two teachers of select schools in the vestry, on the second floor of what is now W. B. Hammond's house, on Elm Street. Miss M. A. Nelson, of Worcester, a direct descendant from the Rowley family of this name, taught there several years, perhaps from 1840 to 1846.

The advantages of a town Library were advocated by Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, then a teacher in the town, in 1806, and a small collection of theological and other books was made, known as the New Rowley Social Library. There were thirty or more shareholders. In 1860 an Agricultural Library was purchased by seventy-five of the citizens of the town, and including with it what remained of the former collection, there had accumulated volumes to the number of about eleven hundred, owned by one hundred and seventeen shareholders, at the time George Peabody, of London, in 1868, made his gift of the Library and building, now known by his name, to the town of Georgetown. The former Library was then by vote given to the town, to be added to the Peabody gift, and the two combined at the opening of the Peabody Library, were about three thousand five hundred volumes. At present there are about sixty-four hundred volumes, excluding duplicates.

The Trustees, by condition of the gift, are the pastors of the churches *ex-officio*, and six others, elected at the annual town meeting in March. This Town or Peabody Library was first opened July 3, 1869, and fifty-five books delivered, with O. B. Tenney, Librarian, who was in office until his resignation, in December of that year. Richard Tenney was Librarian until 1880, when the writer was elected, holding the position until the spring of 1887, when Mrs. S. A. Holt assumed the duties. During the incumbency of the writer, J. Henry Scates was assistant. For the

eighteen years since the opening, the combined delivery aggregates two hundred and fifty thousand volumes. The corner-stone of the Library building was laid September 9, 1866, by Chas. Northend, of Connecticut. The hall was added in 1872, and an extension to the hall some years afterward.

The First Congregational Church have a small Library, which was a bequest from Rev. Mr. Chandler. Some of the ancient works are in Latin, and the collection is unquestionably of great value.

About 1830 there was awakened an ardent longing for knowledge and solid reading in many country villages in New England, and to meet this demand in part the Lyceum was founded. Lecture courses were frequent and well patronized. A periodical, called *The Lyceum*, was published in Boston or Salem, illustrative of the Natural Sciences, as shown in practical every-day life, and many of the lectures given were in that field of thought. A familiar talk on the Electric Telegraph, by Professor Morse (then but comparatively little known), in 1843 or 1844, given in Savory's (of late known as Grand Army Hall), was well attended. This oral instruction, so popular at that day, in the elements of Astronomy and Geology (by Dr. Boynton), Chemistry and the like by others, was supplemented by the School District Libraries, which were edited by Alexander Everett, a cousin of Edward Everett. The State of Massachusetts, because of its importance, as urged by Horace Mann, aided in the work by bringing the cost of these standard volumes, which made the bulk of the Libraries, to an extremely low figure. One of the school district officers, annually elected, was the Librarian, and the library was often changed from one house to another.

Most of the districts in Georgetown had these libraries. It was "knowledge under difficulties," but knowledge highly prized. The school district at that time was a little democracy in itself. It was a period of intellectual awakening, and the mental faculties were aroused to grasp at every new feature in mental or physical phenomena. Mesmerism excited more than a nine days' wonder, and Phrenology, as presented by Prof. Fowler, was an accepted truth to many, and his charts Gospel verities.

In 1841, O. S. Fowler was at the house of Benjamin Adams, in South Georgetown, receiving the curious and believers. A general examination of heads, by those who were his disciples and who studied his numerous works, was made, and character and the true path of life mapped out.

These are some of the mental features of the period. They seem contracted to us, who, with the daily paper, have the world at our doors. Mr. John Knapp, now almost a nonagenarian, began the delivery of Boston daily papers in this town about thirty years ago. In his rounds from house to house, the sales from his basket at first were perhaps hardly a score of copies. To-day the sales must average four hundred copies daily.

Before 1850, a Boston daily paper was a rare sight to many. A copy of the *Boston Atlas* or *Times* was occasionally seen. After the erection of Library Hall, the town was annually favored for several years with a course of lectures and concerts of a high standard of merit. Among the lecturers were Chapin and Phillips, whose "Lost Arts" was delivered in the afternoon, also Charles Kingsley, whose only public appearance, with one exception, while in this country, was in this hall. In a letter, included in the volume containing his "Life and Works," is a reference to Georgetown, its inn (Pentucket house), and a pleasant anecdote of George E. Poor, the son of the landlord. Chas. Bradlaugh, Wm. Parsons and others of note, also lectured in this hall, and concerts by the leading musical talent of Boston were frequently enjoyed.

These varied courses were at an annual cost of five hundred dollars. While the town has no gifts as formerly for entertainments of this class, there is included in the gift of Mr. Peabody and his sister, Mrs. Daniels, a fund for the purchase of books, another for expenses of library, and a building fund of about ten thousand dollars, which by the provisions of the gift, can be used at the discretion of the town, in the erection of a new library building, in any location and at any time, after 1889. Georgetown also has in the interest of education, a prospective free school, of a standard above the average high school in country towns, the funds for which, from about thirty-one thousand dollars, at the first report of the trustees in 1865, has now reached nearly ninety thousand dollars. The original sum was the bequest of John Perley and the school when established will be known as the "Perley Free School." Of the original trustees, but one, Geo. W. Chaplin, is now living. The location of this school is not as yet decided upon. To conclude this chapter we record one thing that is noticeable, in the history of the schools of thirty years ago, and that was the frequent change of teachers. Formerly, many were young men from New Hampshire, seeking the means to get a collegiate course. Now permanency in the position, is the rule in this town, rather than the exception. Then the amount of schooling varied, ranging from twenty to thirty weeks in the different districts, now a gradation of classes, and a school year, gives a beautiful system, but whether all the mechanism of to-day, is of especial advantage to the young, is to some minds questionable.

CHAPTER LV.

GEORGETOWN—(Continued).

PARISH AND RELIGIOUS MOVEMENTS CONTINUED TO ABOUT 1830.

In March, 1769, it was decided that the new meeting-house should be set on the southerly side of the

road, and on Mr. Nelson's land; that the front should be to the south, leaving sufficient room on the north for a roadway; a porch eleven feet square was voted for the east end, with one door and window; and this, says the record, "to be all finished in good workmanship, with good stairs up the Gallery, and well painted, all to be Done in workmanship, answering with the new house." This and more is recorded by Jeremiah Searl, with some pride in his new office, and enthusiasm over the prospects of a new meeting-house.

In June, at a meeting of the parish, a committee was chosen to make ready for the raising and provide for the workmen. The stores were to be kept in the school-house, and John Tenney, William Chandler and Jeremiah Hazen were to look after them. A committee was necessary to watch some of the stores and see that they were handled properly. The wise fathers of the parish knew from experience, the danger of careless handling, of that part of the stores which doubtless flowed freely. To conclude the meeting with a climax, all votes for repairing the old house were reconsidered. There was some positive opposition, and ten names were recorded, principally from members living at the north part of the parish as dissenting.

Rev. Mr. Braman in his "Centennial Discourse," December 6, 1832, refers to three of those who are named on the record, as declaring that they would never cross the threshold of the new house. Tradition says that they never did, and that before the house was finished, the following year, death had come to each of them. Whether an "over true tale" we know not; such tales of divine judgment seem frequent at that period. This prospective change from the red barn-like building was so exhilarating that we find the record of the raising given in this precise manner: "Upon the fifth day of July, Anno Domini, One Thousand Seven-hundred Sixty & nine, the Parish Raised their New Meeting-House Frame & Completely raised it in one Day." The expense for refreshment was upwards of twenty pounds, but what the families provided was only told around many a fireside afterwards. The rigging for raising the building was brought from Newburyport by Abraham Foster, and spars were provided by Capt. Moses Dole. Eightpence was allowed John Tenney for two lost mugs.

In October the room was divided, and a committee appointed to "Dignify it, and to sell not below the Dignity, which dignity shall amount to twenty-five pounds old tenor." Family pride and distinction had its votaries here at that time, but better than a flaunting vulgar pride in dollars merely, it had, at least, a certain foundation. Square pews in the gallery and on the floor, twenty-five pews at the right, and twenty-three at the left of the pulpit. On the east end six, and on the west end seven pews. In the old house there were but two or three pews, and these



few, besides plain seats on the men's side and the women's side of the house. The pews in the new house were to be family, and were sold January, 1770, from a plan shown at Mr. Solomon Nelson's house. Two diagrams of these family pews, neatly drawn, are in the ancient book of parish records. They are valuable, as giving us an accurate knowledge of the residents of the parish, in 1770. An eight-square tower and spire was voted, and later a "Wether Cock on ye tops of ye Spindle of ye Spire."

This, the crowning glory, was at one hundred and two feet from the ground, and had an attraction all its own, to successive generations. As it became tarnished, battling with the warring elements, twice, at least, it was regilded. This emblem of courage cost Deacon Thurston four pounds sixteen shillings. Mr. Whitefield made a final visit to this parish, but a short time before his death, and while here preached what the people were pleased to call the dedication sermon. Had it been considered such at the time, with the fame of the speaker, some record, either by the church or parish, would have been made of it, but as there is none, it appears as if it was a little questionable, even then, to recognize Whitefield as exactly regular. The text selected was 1 Kings 8: 11. "The glory of the Lord hath filled the house of the Lord." The meeting-house was unfinished, with unplastered walls, unbuilt galleries and without pews or pulpit. The hearers, however, were many, seated on the timbers, blocks and rough boards scattered through the edifice. It is said the service was in the morning, and probably, either on September 12th or 13th, as he was in Rowley both of those days. A journey of miles seems to have been at any time, but a holiday jaunt for him.

During one of Whitefield's visits to Newburyport, he attended a meeting in west parish, accompanied by a daughter of Deacon Noyes, and dined with "Aunt Jenny Hazen," who lived on East Street, nearly opposite John Hazen's. The cellar of her house is still visible. Her fame as a theologian was widespread. Mr. Whitefield had heard of her, and at this time he came to hear from her. After a pleasant interview with her and the neighbors, he departed, leaving in the memories of those who were present this incident of dining with Whitefield as the most noted event of their lives. During the fatal epidemic among children in 1736, Aunt Jenny lost by death thirteen nephews and nieces in the Hazen neighborhood. About 1770 she removed to New Hampshire, where she died.

Returning to parish action in 1770, a right to erect horse-stables was granted. None were built at that time, and when built were for those coming to meeting on horse-back, but not large enough for vehicles. There were no pleasure-carriages in town in 1771, or even ten years later. Originally, there were two stone horse-blocks, one near the wall on the north of the meeting-house, which was removed at the widen-

ing of the road; the other, similar to it, near the east door, for lady riders coming on side-saddles or pillions.

In 1780 the singing question came up, and Jonathan Chaplin was chosen to assist Colonel Daniel Spafford in "Raising the Tune," and, in addition, Lieutenant Moody Spafford, Phineas Dodge, John Tenney and John Palmer were appointed to invite persons to fill up the singer's seats whom they think best qualified.

The wise system of payment in goods as legal tender not having become obsolete, Mr. Chandler at that time was to have three bushels of Indian corn for taking care of the meeting-house that year. Although the minister was highly respected, a young man as assistant for Mr. Chandler, who was now quite infirm, began to be suggested. Mr. William Bradford was offered as salary ninety pounds yearly, the money to be as good as any year from 1770 to 1775. Continental currency was circulating; it had been issued for a noble purpose, but the government not being strong enough to compel obedience to its fiat, distrust was engendered, and depreciation followed. Mr. Bradford was called elsewhere. The next year the parish agreed to carry on Mr. Chandler's "Husbandry in good Husbandry manner." During the increasing infirmity of the pastor there was some dissatisfaction, and frequent attempts made to have an assistant, but nothing was done. The singing became more popular, and in 1785 women singers were invited to sit in the gallery, and the singing to be performed once on the Lord's day, without the deacons reading the line for one year. It seemed to the deacons as if the world was out of joint. Could they have seen, as was seen about sixty years later, the pupils of Allison Palmer, under the grand leadership of Lowell Mason, in those same galleries, they would have said that the invitation to the women singers had been permanently accepted. A history of the musical conventions which have been held in this grand old house, and the musical talent, both vocal and instrumental, that seems to be a special gift to the citizens of this town, and never more so than at present, or more carefully cultivated, would, if written in detail, make material for a volume.

Sunday morning, April 19, 1789, Rev. James Chandler died in his eighty-third year. He was a native of Andover and a graduate of Harvard, 1728. His wife was Mary, daughter of Rev. Mr. Hale, of Byfield, who survived him. The parish was at the expense of his funeral. The memorial over his grave in Union Cemetery was erected in 1791. The parish ordered a "Decent Monument." Mr. Chandler left his estate to the parish, on condition that his widow and colored servant, Sabina, should be the wards of the parish until the decease of each. Perhaps there were other conditions, but these were the most important. John Tenney, who lived opposite Union Cemetery, was executor of the will. Some difficulty arose between him and the parish, and the conditions



not being satisfactory, a vote was passed to relinquish the gift. Mr. Solomon Nelson accepted the conditions, and the Chandler farm, now in part owned by his grandson, Humphrey Nelson, came into his possession. While "Madam Chandler" lived the parish abated all taxes.

Mr. Tenney had oversight of the property, and was frequently brought in conflict with the parish. At a later date he removed to Northwood, N. H. From Mr. Chandler's death until 1797, when Mr. Isaac Braman, of Norton, Mass., was called as pastor, sixty-four candidates and pulpit supplies made their gifts known to the parish. Samuel Tomb, afterwards of West Newbury, was one of them and popular. Mr. Braman was "voted eighty pounds and ten cords of good merchantable wood, to be delivered at his door, as his yearly salary, and added ten pounds yearly; when corn shall be more than four shillings per Bushel, with two hundred pounds; one-half to be paid in one year; the other half to be paid within two years. Provided he should not remain twenty years, then a part to be refunded; or, if he prefers, one hundred and fifty pounds without conditions; then one-half in one year; the other in two years." Mr. Braman accepted the last amount. Committees were appointed to provide for the council, to shore the meeting-house, to see good order kept, and to keep the parsonage and elders' pews, deacons' and other seats clear for the council and singers. The ordination took place June 7, 1797. It is said to have been a great event; the parish kept open house, and many booths and refreshment wagons supplied the multitude with food. Mr. Palmer, of Needham, preached from Luke xiv. 23. Dr. Dana, of Ipswich, gave the charge; other parts were by Messrs. Cleveland, of Chebaco (now Essex); Clark, of Boston; Bradford, of Rowley; and Phineas Adams, of West Haverhill. The parish were not perfectly united in Mr. Braman. Eighteen members signed a remonstrance on the ground of suspected Arminianism as understood in the theological terms of that day. One would have seemed wild to have suspected it at a later period. Rev. Mr. Braman's first service in this town was November 13, 1796; the text at the morning service was from 2 Cor. xiii. 5, and in the afternoon from Lam. iii. 27. Soon after his settlement, the question was agitated, whether the parish had a title to the lot on which the meeting-house stood, which led to something of a controversy and litigation at much expense. No deed could be found, and what the result was is not known. There were extensive made repairs on the house in 1816. There is an itemized statement of the cost in the hand-writing of Samuel Adams, in the second book of parish records. There was a bell purchased at that time which was hung in the tower. It was cast at Paul Revere's foundry. Its weight was eight hundred pounds, and its cost about four hundred and fifty dollars. The names of the donors of the bell are on record in the second book of the parish and

were seventy-five in number. Capt. Benjamin Adams, father of the parish clerk, headed the list, and Cuffee Dole, with his single dollar, ended it. It is remembered as worthy of note that two men lifted the bell; not a remarkable feat. This same bell now swings in the tower of the new church on Clark Street.

In 1817 there was an attempt to introduce instrumental music into the choir. A bass-viol, bassoon and clarinet were suggested. That year it was negatived; the next year, however, the parish voted that either of the Crombie brothers—Aaron, Benjamin or Nathaniel—were to have five dollars for one year's performance on either of the above-named instruments. In 1819 the parish bought a bass-viol.

At about this time some method of warming the meeting-house was debated, and in 1822 a stove, then just coming into use, was set up, and in 1828 another, on an improved pattern (a gift from Paul Spofford, of New York), was placed in its stead. In 1832 a complete change of the interior was made. The square pews, so familiar for more than sixty years, were all removed, and narrow slips of the modern style built in their room. The pulpit was also removed from the side to the easterly end of the building, and the door where formerly the ladies of the parish had been assisted to dismount from their pillions was boarded up.

Leaving at this point the Congregational Parish in what was then generally called New Rowley in their remodeled house for worship, to commemorate which and the first century of their existence Rev. Mr. Braman, on December 6, 1832, delivered his historical discourse, we return to Byfield, and briefly trace the leading events in the history of that parish, which was apparently of Newbury origin, and yet around which the dearest interests of very many Rowley families have always centred. The pastorate of Mr. Hale was doubtless successful. Rev. Moses Parsons, of Gloucester, the second minister was a graduate of Harvard in 1736, and was ordained in Byfield June 20, 1744. His eminent sons—Eben, the merchant, and Theophilus, chief justice of the Supreme Court of the State—have made Byfield widely known.

In 1746 the second meeting-house, fifty-six by forty-five feet, with steeple and spire, was built. The bell was the gift of Ebenezer Parsons. Its weight was eight hundred and eighty-five pounds. This church and parish were much agitated by the religious excitement that resulted from Whitefield's preaching. A complaint of Benjamin Plumer against Mr. Parsons was that he had never given "Thanks for such an unspeakable favor to the World as Mr. Whitefield."

In October, 1768, "the difficult, perplexed State of our public affairs" called for a church fast. Another fast day was called for in Nov., 1773, "on account of the severe sickness." This sickness was said to have been a malignant fever, perhaps of a typhoid type. Throat distemper was very fatal here in 1735 and '36. From October of one year to the same month in the following year one hundred and four died—said to



have been one-seventh of the population. Nearly one-half of the number are thought to have been from the Rowley families in the parish. Again there was a day of fasting in June, 1774, "That God would interpose for our help, and save this Province and land in this day of perplexity and distress."

Late in Mr. Parsons' life charges were made against him by Deacon Coleman, with Garrisonian vehemence, that he had attempted to sell his colored servant Violet. Coffin, in his "History of Newbury," gives a minute account of this controversy. The third pastor was Rev. Elijah Parish, of Lebanon, Conn., a graduate of Dartmouth in 1785 (Hanover, N. H., then was but little changed from a wilderness) and ordained December 20, 1787. He was remarkable for untiring industry and mental endowments of no ordinary kind. Jointly with Dr. Morse, he published "The Gazetteer of the Eastern Continent" and the "History of New England." "Modern Geography" and the "Bible Gazetteer" are his own works. They were all useful books, and were highly appreciated. At many an American fireside these books were read with deep interest, conveying that information about their own country and the great world without which was never forgotten. After the death of Dr. Parish, which occurred Oct. 25, 1825, a volume of his sermons was published,—a remarkable collection, to have been delivered to a small country congregation. His people strongly objected to his being absent from his own pulpit, and he but rarely exchanged with other ministers. It has been intimated that, to some extent, he was thought to have sympathized with the Unitarian wing of the Congregational body, but his published discourses show that any such ideas were purely imaginary, and born of the agitation of the times.

During the early part of the century, when political spirit ran high, Dr. Parish took an uncompromising stand for the Federalist doctrine, and, in consequence, had some bitter enemies, especially in the Rowley part of the parish. These feuds all died out, however, and this truly noble man left the world lamented by all who knew him. In the religious history of the town we have now to consider the entering wedge of separation from the only legally-recognized, ecclesiastical body of the eighteenth century in New England, viz., the Congregational Church. The thought of any divergence was probably never conceived among the illiterate members of Mr. Chandler's congregation until the awakening caused by the preaching of Mr. Whitefield. Many impulsive men were soon stirred to enthusiasm by his work, and the Middle and Eastern States were alive with itinerants.

The first record of any such irregular work in what is now Georgetown, was, as has been previously stated, early in 1754, when Timothy Symmes was accused of sharp and (as some of the brethren called it) impious criticisms on the preaching of Mr. Chandler at an evening meeting conducted by Mr. Symmes at

Ensign John Plumer's on February 10th. These meetings, held perhaps on Sunday evenings, had evidently been going on for some time, and had been opposed by Mr. Chandler, who in his sermon, February 10th, becoming alarmed at the strength or spirit of the movement, openly condemned it. In 1755 so many had withdrawn that the absentees are referred to as in a way of separation (or in a partial state of organization). The families of Brocklebank, Plumer, Adams and Boynton seem to have been the most prominent.

Their meetings were held in the school-house, which stood near the house of Mr. Wood, now James Gordon's. This movement, originally, perhaps, only the result of a dislike to Mr. Chandler for lack of zeal, finally became so positive that those interested declared themselves Separatists, and in 1757 were so named by the parent Church, and the result was they then withdrew from the Church and congregation permanently. After the new meeting-house was built, the old house was sold to the Separatists, taken down and rebuilt at Hale's Corner, in what is now Groveland. At this time, however, probably through the influence of Rev. Mr. Smith and the Baptist Church in Haverhill, organized in 1765, they began to be called Anabaptists.

January 13, 1769, the parish voted, "to abate the People called Annabaptists their Parish rates the year past, those of them that had tendered their Certificates To the Assessors of said Parish, thereby signifying the Baptist method to be their Pursuasion." In the meeting-house thus rebuilt they held meetings for several years, Mr. Eliphaz Chapman, afterwards of Maine, preaching for them more than any other minister. Rowley, Bradford and Newbury were represented in the congregation. The critics of Rev. Mr. Parsons, of Byfield, were perhaps among them. Mr. Smith, of Haverhill, doubtless had preached here before 1769, and in so satisfactory a manner that even at that early day the Separatists began popularly to be known as Anabaptists. Samuel Harriman, afterwards elder in New Rowley, is thought to have been the first Separatist to unite with the Baptists, he being a constituent member of the Haverhill Church. On May 4, 1781, eight males, three of whom were residents of Boxford, who had been baptized, but were not as yet members of any church, petitioned the Baptist Church in Haverhill to become a branch of that church. Some Baptist churches like Newton, N. H., and this of Haverhill, had several branch churches soon after this time. The old meeting-house having come into their possession, was again taken down, and this time was rebuilt within the old parish limits, to the chagrin, it has been said, of some who twelve years before had been highly gratified to see it removed, and those who worshipped in it, across the parish borders. It was set directly in front of the saw-mill then or soon after owned by John Wood. On August 19, 1785, this branch was established as a



distinct church, with twenty-eight members. Rev. Mr. Smith, of Haverhill, preached on the occasion. In May of that year Elder William Ewing, of Shutesbury, became the first minister of this church, and was dismissed to Medfield in March, 1789. Dr. Jeremiah Chaplin became a member at the age of ten years, during Mr. Ewing's ministry. Rev. Charles Wheeler, a few years later, when a mere boy, also became a member. He was afterwards President of Washington College in Virginia. Both of these were from what is now South Georgetown. In July, 1789, Abishai Crossman, of Chelmsford, was called to the pastorate, and was dismissed in 1793. The membership of the church at this time included Salem, Beverly, Wenham and Danvers. In 1793 forty living in these four towns were dismissed to form the church in Danversport. In June, 1797, Shubael Lovell, of Barnstable, was settled as the minister. At this time the Congregational Treasurer required to be shown a receipt from the Baptists that their parish tax had been paid to their own minister, and that all who had signed the Baptist books, so doing, should then have their tax abated. For several years after Mr. Lovell came, rather inharmonious relations between the old parish and the Baptists existed, finally followed by a civil suit entered against the Congregational parish by Mr. Lovell. The law in 1798 required that any public teachers of piety, religion and morality should be entitled to legal support, and the Baptists, under this law, claimed what was due them. In 1802 the difficulties seem to have come to a settlement. Mr. Lovell's pastorate continued until 1810. He was a man highly esteemed. Josiah Converse, of Portland, came in 1810 and remained until 1818. Mr. Converse was deeply interested in improved agriculture, and is said to have introduced the first merino or fine-wooled sheep into town. June 21, 1811, the First Baptist Society in Rowley (now Georgetown) was incorporated, with forty-eight members. Among them were the Pearsons, Larkins, Dummers and Floyds, of Newbury; Harrimans, Hales and Hardys, of Bradford (now Groveland); Perley and Emerson, of Boxford; Smiths, of West Newbury; and Poors, Thurlows, Tenneys, Chaplins, Nelsons, Jacobs and Morse, of Rowley. The amended law gave any property-holders the right of choice as to the religious organization they would support. Some, perhaps partly from a mercenary motive, chose the Baptist Society at that time, because the expense or tax would be less; others because they were believers in the doctrines of Thomas Jefferson, as the friend of religious liberty; and all, because more or less opposed to the spirit which had wholly in theory, if not in practice, ruled in Massachusetts from the first settlement, of compulsion in matters of conscience. First meeting of the society held on February 13, 1812. Solomon Nelson, afterwards deacon, joined the society in 1812, the church in 1816, and soon after was conceded by all to be the chief adviser and wise counselor of the Bap-

tists. His house on Nelson Street was the journeying ministers' home. One of the last nights that George Dana Boardman, the Karen apostle, spent in this country was under his roof. First annual meeting was held April 7, 1812, with Captain Moses Tenney moderator and Timothy Morse, Jr., clerk. From this date to 1823 committees were appointed annually to fill out certificates of membership, signed by the minister and clerk, as the legal method of exemption from paying parish tax to the Congregational collector. After 1823 the law was changed or became obsolete.

January 7, 1823, sixty acres of the old "Shepard farm," then owned by Samuel and Benjamin Plumer, was deeded to this society, for the support of a Calvinistic Baptist Gospel ministry, and the society was to come into possession at the decease of the grantors. Not long after it came under the control of the society. It had been occupied and improved as the parsonage farm from the time of Mr. Lovell, and perhaps from a much earlier date. The fifth minister was Simeon Chamberlain, of Westmoreland, N. H., who continued from July, 1819 to September, 1825, followed by Ezra Wilmarth, of Wilmot, N. H., who came in 1826, remaining until June, 1834. The old meeting-house which had been twice removed and entirely rebuilt, was in January, 1829, by forty yeas to eight nays voted to be too far gone for repairs. Orin Weston bought this relic of the past at auction in 1830 for eighty-nine dollars. It had seen a century of existence, and was from all accounts but a shell. The birds had nested in its interior above, and mice had played on the floor below; and it has been said that one of Mr. John Woods' hens once "stole her nest" under the pulpit, and would come out cackling in service time.

The sounding-board which had echoed the resonant voice of Whitefield, that wonderful voice, which could be heard a mile, might until recently, be seen near the roadside at the house of Mr. Weston's family on Main Street.

In 1829 a new meeting-house, forty-five by thirty-five feet, was built near the old house on the parsonage grounds, at a cost of seventeen hundred dollars.

As early as about 1800, and perhaps earlier, another class of irregular meetings in the line of the Separatists of a half-century before began to be held to the annoyance of the Congregationalist people and as these meetings lessened the Baptist audiences, when services were held on Sunday, perhaps partly to their annoyance also. These school-house preachers, as Mr. Braman called them, were fluent, possibly vituperative, not bound by formal rules or customs, and were attractive to those eager for novelty. A Mr. Foster was one of the first, although Elias Smith was doubtless the first to speak here, and meetings were held at the Pillsbury-house, near Edwin Brown's, on Pillsbury Street, then the home of Jonathan Harriman and family. Many traveling preachers, of both sexes followed, all glorying in the name of "free-will" as typical of their faith.



Nancy Toles, not claiming much gift of argument, but abundant vehemence and zeal; Clarissa Danforth, keen and energetic; Harriet Livermore, a rare genius, later a pilgrim to the Holy Land, and other women were active in proclaiming the truth. Scores of converts were baptized in Pentucket pond. Mr. Moses Howe, of Haverhill, a Methodist in belief, but independent of church regulations, often preached, as did all the others in the Centre school-house; a man of superior natural gifts, enriched by thought and reading. He lived to a great age. "Christian" itinerants, creedless, and with but that one name, but Baptists in practice, were frequently here in the interests of their sect; among them, Rev. Benjamin Knight, afterwards a Baptist, who died as the Salem city missionary. Unitarians, as Rev. Mr. Loring, of North Andover, (the father of Hon. G. B. Loring) and Dr. Flint, of Salem, both of whom as another class of Separatists, proclaimed the cardinal principles of their faith in that same school-house.

Mr. Nathaniel Nelson, who built in 1797, the attractive old mansion on Elm Street, now owned by his son, William Nelson, was perhaps more continuously active in sustaining these varied religious movements, than any other of the residents of New Rowley. From some cause, they all found a congenial field here, especially the sects which made immersion the baptismal rite. At a later day a meeting-house was in contemplation for the Christians or Freewill believers, and some material purchased, of which the windows can still be seen in the shoe-shop of Joshua How, on Elm Street. The Universalist doctrine was perhaps first announced in town in the school-house at South Georgetown, by a Mr. Flagg, and Mr. Farnsworth at the Centre school-house, succeeded about 1818. It early took a tenacious hold, presented as it was by the leading spirits of the denomination, such as Hosea Ballou, Whittemore, Otis Skinner and others, who often spoke at the same school-house. Gradually the movement developed, until on March 13th, 1829, at a meeting held at the house of Moses Nelson, now Chas. E. Chaplin's on Nelson Street, ten males signed a call for a meeting, to form a religious society to be called the First Universalist Society in Rowley. On March 26, 1829, they met at the Centre School-house, with Captain John Killam, moderator, and Sylvanus Nelson, clerk. Had preaching five times that year, and six the year following.

In 1830, fifty-two males became members of the Society by signing the Constitution. The Lows, Nelsons, Harrimans, Spoffords and Killams were active and especially Colonel John Kimball, the wealthy tanner and farmer, who then owned the Captain Benjamin Adams' place on the Salem road, and who was afterwards regarded, at home and abroad, as the Universalist leader.

In 1831, the Society had services nine times, and probably all held in the school-house, but in February, 1832, at a meeting at Colonel Savory's hotel,

it was decided to build a meeting-house, forty-five by thirty-five feet, which was erected that year at a cost of about twenty-one hundred dollars. The site was on the knoll, much more elevated than at present, where the Town-house now is, and was a part of the old Brocklebank farm. Two stoves were given to the Society, one a gift from John Kimball, the other from David Pingree, Esq., of Salem.

CHAPTER LVI.

GEORGETOWN—(Continued).

GENERAL TOWN HISTORY TO DATE OF INCORPORATION.

FROM 1730 to 1770, there are a few surnames to be added to those which are already given as residents in the west parish of Rowley. One was that of *Daniel Woodbury*, who had doubtless removed here from Beverly, just after the first-named date. Mr. Woodbury, was one of the constituent members of the church in October, 1732, but was not a parish petitioner in 1730. In November, 1732, *Richard Woodbury* was received to church membership from the second church in Beverly. In November, 1734, Daniel Woodbury was dismissed to the church in Townsend. This family while here probably lived in Marlboro'. Early in 1734, Elizabeth, the wife of Richard, was admitted to the church. They must have left this locality soon after this date.

The names of *Moses Cooper* and Phebe his wife, appear on the record in 1735. Several of this surname are buried in Union Cemetery. As the ancestor of this family in Rowley bore the name of Peter, it has been thought that the celebrated Peter Cooper of New York might be a descendant, and attempts have been made to trace the connection, but letters of inquiry were unanswered.

The Pingrees of this date (as did "widow Anne," who was the mother of Job Pingry, a petitioner), lived in the limits of what is now Rowley, on the Bloomingdale road, which was a travelled way as early as 1720.

In 1736, the names of *Robert Grog* and his wife Hannah, were recorded. They lived near Spofford Street, in the vicinity of Lieut. Abel Spofford's house.

In 1737, *Samuel Hazen*, supposed to have settled on the John F. Kimball place on East Street, removed to Groton, Mass. This was afterwards the home of Jeremiah and Moses Hazen. Here on Pen Brook a saw-mill was built about 1750, and was in use as late as 1800. This was the homestead of one of the numerous Hazen families perhaps, until its purchase by Captain William Perley about 1790. About one mile southerly, on land then partially cleared but now forest, was the home of another family of this name, and fifty years ago the barn was still standing.



It is said that in the same locality, in a wood-tract now owned by heirs of W. B. Harriman, there were anciently one or two small houses, one of them occupied by a Crombie family. *John and Rebecca Smith* were living in this parish in 1736, supposed to be on West Street, not far from Mrs. Edward Poor's. They removed to Haverhill in 1738. Of this family was perhaps the John Smith who lived in a West Street house, kept an inn or what was so-called, by trade a cooper, and by virtue of a warning of the town of Rowley, sixty years before, was removed to Newbury poor-house about 1800. The house was then demolished.

The *Kilbourne* family were residents for many years. The name of *Daniel* is found in 1730, *Jedediah* and *Samuel* in 1735, and *David* in 1737. Their house or houses must have been on or near Searl Street.

Richard Easty was living here in 1736.

Robert Moors troubled the parish in the spring of 1738. After the death of *Samuel Spofford* he rented the west-parish half of the farm and cut wood contrary to the provisions of the lease, and other delinquencies. Prosecution was threatened.

Before 1740 *Amos Pillsbury* was here. He is supposed to have built the house on the plain near Mr. Humphrey Nelson's. He appears in 1740 as parish clerk and *John Pillsbury* appears in 1743. These two carried on blacksmithing. The buildings were removed, some by Mr. Nathaniel Nelson, to what is now Chestnut Street, and the shop to Boxford more than sixty years ago by Daniel Davis, the father of Mrs. Francis Marden, who converted it into his dwelling.

In 1742 *John Bayley* and *Mary*, his wife, admitted to church. The name of *Stephen Bayley* recorded in 1746. Supposed to have lived on Bailey lane.

In 1747 Mr. *Moses Holt* was treasurer of parish and quite prominent for some years. The constant use of the title of Mr., indicates a man of importance.

Samuel Johnson's name, in 1730, recorded. This family lived on Searl Street, on the Benjamin Merrill place. His son Samuel sold, about 1800, to Dudley Stickney, who again sold to Merrill Johnson, removing to Winthrop, Me.

The first mention of *Crombies* is in 1742, when *Rebecca*, the wife of *Benjamin*, and Peter, a negro servant of Jeremiah Harriman, in Christian equality, owned the covenant (the half-way covenant, so-called) the same day.

On the church records in 1764, the name of *David Tenney* is recorded as a "Student of y^e College, aged fifteen years and almost seven months." *Jonathan Searl*, also a student, received to church same year.

In 1760, the name of *Benjamin Wallingford* first seen. He, and a son of the same name, lived on Andover Street, where John Pickett's house now is. The Wallingford house was demolished about 1825 by Benjamin S., father of John Pickett. The junior Mr. Wallingford was a lame man, a maker of saddle bags, etc.

About 1760 *Captain Benjamin Adams'* house on Central Street, now owned by S. K. Herrick, was built. Was the first house in the parish to be painted white, and was considered rather aristocratic. Capt. Adams was a large land-holder, both in this town and Boxford.

Other surnames found are as follows:—*Mary Blaisdell* was received from the Byfield church in December, 1732, and *Elijah Blaisdell* was admitted to church in 1736. Dr. Fowler and Margaret, his wife, were doubtless of Linebrook, Ipswich. Joseph Dickinson, Caleb Foster and his wife Priscilla, James Foster and his wife Anna, in 1737. Stephen Cross, Thomas Cross and his wife Mary, in 1742, and Abigail Jackson, in 1743, were of families living within Rowley or Ipswich limits of to-day.

In 1746 *Eleazer Burbank*, who doubtless built the Burbank house of sixty years ago, which stood where the Samuel Little shoe factory now is, removed into this town from East Bradford, now Groveland. The yard in front of the house at a later day extended into the road and enclosed the corner of the street where the pump is now seen.

Moses Tyler built his house about 1700 on land given to Thomas Nelson's children by Gershom Lambert, of Connecticut. This house was taken down about 1792, and Mrs. Edward Poor's house on West Street built on the same site.

The house of Lieutenant Abel Spofford was on Spofford Street, and built about 1745. Here was born, in 1792, Paul Spofford, a grandson, afterwards of the firm of Spofford and Tileston, New York city. Mr. Spofford, now deceased, was for more than half a century a leading merchant, and amassed a large fortune. He supplied the government with vessels for transportation of troops during the Rebellion. He bought shoes for many years of the manufacturers in this town. His son, Paul Nelson Spofford, is the owner of the summit and much of Baldpate Hill. This house, removed about 1830, is now the original part of Little's shoe factory. The house on West Street, now owned by James McLain, the birth-place of Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, was built about the commencement of this period. The Esquire Moody Spofford house on the same street, was burned about 1780, and the house now owned by James Grimes was built on the same site. The present or the original house, doubtless the original, has associated with it a veritable witch story, in the noted meal-chest which, without hands and apparently possessed with occult power, travelled about the attic of the house, to the horror of all beholders. The "Esquire" was away from home at the time the excitement began, engaged in meeting-house building, and was hurriedly sent for by the alarmed family. Nothing unusual occurring, with some misgivings, perhaps, he started on his journey to complete his unfinished work, and had only reached his brother William's house when a messenger came to inform him that this humble but erratic



chest was again in motion. There was an immediate necessity then for some check to be placed on such Satanic action, and, it is said, that it was only by the prayers of Mr. Chandler that this chest was restored to its normal condition. The story is often ridiculed, but good authority states that the "Esquire," Major Asa Nelson, the great-grandfather of the writer, and another townsman, two of whom were men of unusual weight, placed themselves upon it, and yet, in utter disregard of all known laws of natural philosophy, this chest still continued those gliding, sinuous movements along that attic floor. However, quiet finally came, and the cause, if possible, was then to be unraveled. This, the witnesses and investigators of these uncanny acts, attributed to a young girl living in the family by the name of Hazen who, it was said, had been daring enough to experiment with the black art. To-day, with many, a search for the cause would be in the direction of abnormal, electric or magnetic power. It is claimed that this veritable chest is still in existence, and in the possession of a relative of the original owner. In Mr. Spofford's shop who, besides a carpenter, was a noted bridge-builder, Timothy Palmer, also noted in this same work, aided in constructing the model of the first bridge that spanned the Merrimac, Piscataqua, Kennebec, Schuylkill and Potomac Rivers. The latest mention by tradition of a wild bear in this town was in 1791, when one of the sons of Esquire Spofford is said to have seen one in the forest, not far from his father's house. Wolves, down to a century ago, during some winters were quite numerous. Mrs. Huldah Harriman, who lived on Nelson Street, had known them, as late as 1779, to prowl around her father's barn at night. The swamp easterly of the house was a lair for them, and was then and still is known as "Wolf Swamp." There were several other Spofford dwellings built early in the "Spofford hill" district; some are still occupied and in good condition. Col. Daniel Spofford's, now owned by Charles S. Spofford, a great-grandson, is the most ancient. The venerable-looking cottage where the first Spofford families dwelt, near the Colonel Spofford house, was taken down about 1866. It is said that Dr. Amos Spofford, the first physician to practice in New Rowley, who was a son of "Colonel Daniel," occupied this place, and once, as was an occasional occurrence among farmers, exchanged farms for a time with his brother William, who lived a short distance at the westward. At one time there were ten or twelve houses, occupied by Spofford families, almost in sight of each other. The house of Dr. Moses D. Spofford, a son of Dr. Amos, now owned by J. E. Johnson, was owned a century ago by David Thurston, who sold and removed to Maine.

In Bailey lane there may have been two or three houses built at an early day and demolished before the present century. Weird tales anciently clustered around this locality. One of a dismal nature was told of a negro boy, who was seen in company with several

strange men to enter the shadows of the woods near Rock Pond, but was not with them when they again appeared, and from the cries of terror which were heard, it was feared that a foul murder had been committed, and other equally dark and mysterious stories of a later day. A house built on this road by Dr. Amos Spofford, was removed about 1800 by Joseph Nelson to Baldpate Street, and is now owned by Henry K. Kennett.

The Dodge house, where the mother of George Peabody was born, was northerly of the house above named. The mansion of Silas Dole, for many years the home of Major Paul Dole, the millwright, and his brother, Edmund, the inventive genius, almost a recluse, who devised a machine for making shoe pegs, which he kept secluded from mercenary eyes, must have been built, in part at least, prior to 1770. It was taken down with timber still sound by Samuel Little some ten or twelve years ago.

There were doubtless one or more houses built in "Hampshire," or "Federal City," at an early period. About 1800 Stephen Hardy lived there, who removed to Henniker, N. H. This locality has had more than a town fame, rather, has had a sort of immortality conferred upon it by the genius of our native Burdette, the lamented Solomon Nelson. He had the talent which gives prominence in certain fields of literary labor. His descriptive record of war experience when in the southwest with the Fiftieth Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, published in the *Advocate* as a serial was a rare picture. Wit and pathos, with exact fact, were delightfully commingled. Many of the roads were, in 1770, but partially opened. West Street to the old Salem road had four gates as late as 1797. Nelson Street as late as 1770 had its cross fences, and also North Street near the Plumer House. The farmer-boys had many a penny given them by travelers for opening the gates.

The Sherman Nelson house, on Elm Street, was early occupied by William Chandler, who doubtless made it in part what it now is from another house, about 1770. The Sylvanus Nelson house now owned by L. P. Tidd, was built before 1747, by Joseph Nelson, the great-grandfather of the late owner. Other ancient houses are that of James Gordon, on North Street, known as the Wood house, but perhaps originally a Pearson house, and another upon the site on which Eben Poor's small house was built. This was owned early in the century by Paul Stickney, previously by Benjamin Chaplin, and had the reputation in those days of being occasionally haunted. Next was the Peter Clouglin house, now owned by Mr. Virgin. This "Clouglin," from the name, was evidently of the Irish race. Near by was a Cheney house, and beyond was a Pearson house, probably Jedediah's, the parish petitioner. This was owned about 1800 by Henry Hilliard, and was accidentally burned in 1806. Still further eastward, on Jewett Street, there were two or three houses in 1800, built



before 1750, owned by members of the Poor family. The Jonathan Harriman house, on Pillsbury Street, was built by Leonard Harriman, the great-grandfather of Mrs. O. B. Tenney of this town and Jesse P. Harriman, now an octogenarian in his western home Nathaniel, the ancestor of Charles A. Harriman, settled on Pond Street.

In 1713 a road had been granted by Rowley to accommodate the "Weelers and Brownes," and "other inhabitants there about," which is thought to have been North Street, from No. 6 school-house (or Tenney's as it would be fitting to call it), to some point near Newbury line. Some years before Jonathan Look's house had been the only one named. Some of the earlier built houses on Warren Street, and in that part of Byfield near the Jackson and Cheney neighborhood, must have been built before 1750. Several have been leveled within twenty years. The Paul Pillsbury house, with the jutting second story, the only building of this architecture in the town, is unquestionably very ancient. Mr. Pillsbury, nearly related to Parker Pillsbury, until recently the owner, was very ingenious. He made the first shoe pegs ever used in the town.

The Massachusetts Legislature offered, thirty or more years ago, ten thousand dollars to any one producing an infallible remedy for the potato disease. Mr. Pillsbury claimed that he had found it, in the planting of an oyster shell in each hill. For a second wife he married a widow, the mother of the gifted poet and Confederate general of Arkansas, Albert Pike, who visited his old home a few years ago. In 1744, among the surnames in this locality, were Joseph and Josiah Smith. Their home was on Warren Street. Some of this family removed to Hopkinton, N. H., in 1768. An ancient Chute house, perhaps that of James or Lionel, his son, was situated west of the church. The venerable trees which overshadowed it have been felled, and desolation reigns. Ariel P. Chute, a teacher and clergyman, was born here about 1805. One other house of this family, on Chute Street, still exists, with marks of age and the wasting tooth of time. James Chute Peabody, a native of this town, is another in this honorable line of descent. The author of a volume of poetry with the title "Keynotes," which is to be found in the Peabody library in this town, and as a translator of Dante, he is said to have produced a work of rare merit. Dr. Parker Cleveland occupied, as early as 1775, a house on Warren Street which is supposed to have been built long before that time. Parker, a son, was a graduate of Harvard in 1799, and became a professor of mineralogy in Bowdoin College. He was also an author in his favorite science. A brother, John P., was a Congregational minister of prominence. The descendants of Maximillian Jewett of Rowley have been in this neighborhood since about 1700. A house of considerable age which bears the Jewett name is still standing.

The Pike family, originally of Salisbury, Mass., or Newbury, were in the Rowley part of Byfield, as early as 1750; "they were prominent in military and civil affairs. Nicolas Cheney, Timothy Jackman, Jonathan Thurlow, Nathan and Moses Wheeler, Abraham Brown, Joseph Searl, Daniel Chute, Thomas Lull, Jr., Jedediah, Jonathan and David Pearson, and Amos Pillsbury are supposed to have been all Byfield householders in 1744, in what is now Georgetown.

On East Street the Pingree house built about a century ago, was the birth-place of the Pingree brothers, David, Asa and Thomas, who were the heirs of their opulent uncle, Captain Perkins, of Topsfield. David, who lived in Salem, was rated as the only millionaire in the State, and perhaps in New England, forty years ago. He owned immense tracts of wild land in upper New Hampshire, and the Aroostook, Maine, of which some is being surveyed at present. Very costly agricultural improvements were made by Mr. Pingree on the old homestead, forty years ago, but through neglect everything has relapsed to more than its original wildness. Twenty years ago about five hundred acres of forest, belonging to this estate, were cleared of its wood and timber by Lamprey and Eaton, of Haverhill, employing in the work a large force of French Canadians.

Several houses, then standing, were occupied by the workmen. Now all the houses, excepting the farmhouse, are gone, almost dropped piecemeal, and it is indeed a solitude. Here were the Hazen clearings, and here were Nathaniel Burpee, the drummer of the Revolution, returned to New Rowley in the dead of winter, from Lunenburg, about 1795, with an ox sled and his family upon it, a cottage was built, and here they found a home.

At the corner of that part of East Street leading past the school-house, which road was opened in 1829 at a cost of three hundred dollars, was a wide, low house, which crumbled to a ruin one-third of a century ago. This, for many years, was known as a Merrill house, but perhaps built by a Hazen. Here Charles Wheeler lived in boyhood, and went from here South, to the presidency of a college. The house on Nelson Street, owned by Henry C. Perley, was built about 1780 by Nathan Perley, the maternal grandfather of Sherman Nelson. The Dea. Solomon Nelson house was built in 1803. The south roof is still covered with the original shingles laid eighty-four years ago. About 1740 the section of Main Street from the "Corner" to M. G. Spofford's, began to be traveled. Previously the circuit is supposed to have been made over Pillsburys' plain, and the highlands at the east of the village. Where the Pentucket house now stands, and some portion of the hotel, may be of this original house, one of the brothers of John Brocklebank, by whom the Brocklebank house on Central Street was then owned; built a house about 1765. Job Brocklebank lived there for some time, and John Pillsbury was living there before 1800, and



blacksmithing near by. His widow kept a tavern there for many years, which became somewhat noted as a halting-place for travelers.

From about 1780 the "Corner," a point of land largely composed of loose sand, and in its subsoil formation the base of the Baldpate district, and but slightly elevated above the adjoining meadows, then in many places covered with a dense growth of maple trees, began to show its probable future, as the centre of the village. Several other localities for a time had the start, like Elm Street, near the meeting-house, but circumstances unthought of, soon turned the tide in the direction of "Burbank Corner." Some years later, it has been said, that Mr. Bartlett, of Newburyport, while contemplating the founding of the theological seminary looked with especial favor on the extended tract of Spofford's hill as well adapted for the site, but the owner could not be induced to sell. Had Georgetown been selected instead of Andover how different our surroundings might have been from what they now are.

David Tenney was living before 1800 in a cottage on Main St. He was the grandfather of Hon. O. B. Tenney, of this town, and of D. B. Tenney, city clerk of Haverhill. This house was doubtless built by him. It was removed some fifteen years ago to the court not far from the Clark house, on Main Street.

Others living at the village in 1800 were Daniel Clark and Samuel Norris, tailor. The house occupied by Mr. T. J. Elliott, and removed in 1843 or 1844, to a site near the corner of Library and Central Streets was then standing at the corner, upon the site of which Mr. Elliott built his present house.

The Dresser house has for a part of it the building occupied from about 1770 to 1800, by Major Asa Nelson, on Nelson Street, as a grocery, and was situated in front of Deacon Solomon Nelson's house. This, was, perhaps the first grocery store in the west parish. The New Hampshire farmers of those days would make trips in the winter to the sea-board at Salem and elsewhere, with loads of pork, poultry and other farm products, and return with West India goods and other necessities. Ezekiel, the father of Daniel Webster, made it his stopping-place with Major Nelson when on those journeys, who would often buy his load of meats and sell him other goods in return. Mr. Webster would frequently speak of his boys, and would say, "Ezekiel is smart and I think will be somebody, but of Daniel I am a little doubtful."

An Adams house, owned by "Newtown Ben," was situated at the entrance of what is now Nelson Avenue, and was destroyed by fire under rather mysterious circumstances about 1800. Other surnames in town at about this time were those of Lincoln, and a few years later that of Lowe. At about this date, and for half a century afterwards, many of the farmers owned large tracts of pasturage in New Hampshire, and other land in the northern part of Worces-

ter County. Nathaniel and Jonathan Nelson, in partnership with Captain Chaplin, owned a large pasture in Warren, N. H.; Moses Nelson was an extensive owner in Danbury, N. H.; Deacon Asa Nelson, at a later day, owner in Dunbarton, N. H. Annually, in the middle of May, with a large drove of their own and their neighbors' cattle and sheared sheep, parties would start as drovers on their journey of seventy-five or one hundred miles. In October the fall trip would be made, and the stock returned, often half-wild, but in good condition. The Mighills were possessors of many acres in Lunenburg, Mass., on which Samuel C., the father of L. P. Tidd, who married Ruth Mighill, lived for some years. On returning, he built about 1819 the house on Baldpate Street, now owned by J. A. Hoyt. This land in Lunenburg became in late years very valuable, and sales have been made from it in the aggregate to the amount of forty thousand dollars. The tide of emigration prior to the Revolution was generally to Northern Middlesex and Worcester. The writer has found the names of several West Parish or Georgetown natives, at dates of emigration from 1730 to 1750, recorded in the register of deeds office in the city of Worcester. Sterling, with its Nelson Hill, named for a New Rowley Nelson, Leominster and Lunenburg, in Worcester County, Groton, Townsend and Templeton in Middlesex, and other towns near by, are the localities to trace many of the families of this town. Some at one time, however, removed to Killingly, Conn.

From 1800 to 1810 there was but little change. At about the last-named date, Benjamin and Joseph Little moved into town from West Newbury. They opened a store and shoe factory in a long extension, built eastwardly from the old tavern stand of Dudley Tyler and Solomon Nelson, near the meeting-house, and began, by various devices, one of which was to have the roads opened as soon as possible after a snow-storm, to attract the travel from the old Haverhill road over Uptake to this central road. They kept an extensive stock of salable goods; were ready to barter, taking in exchange odd lots of coarse shoes by the dozen pairs, which the farmers brought from Newbury and other places, some coming a long distance on foot, with the shoes under their arms, the work of their off-hours, rainy days and evenings; they were ready to encourage young men to start business, and made the parish generally lively.

With good roads, better both in summer and winter than in Boxford, and fewer hills to climb, the travel was soon turned toward the centre of New Rowley. We can hardly realize the serious loss the change must have caused to the tavern-stands of Capt. Batchelder, now the summer residence of Mr. Ballou, and of Dea. Spofford's, burned some years ago.

Solomon Nelson, the father of Nathaniel Nelson, who was to a marked extent a central figure in the growth and general life of this community, died in 1821, just as the energy of the people was assuming a



new phase. His second son, Jeremiah, was a member of Congress, and elected as a Federalist, and his father was so unflinching a Republican that he always voted for his son's political opponent.

Everything indicated that the junction of the roads would be the village centre, and a removal was made by the brothers Little from their first locality to this centre, where they built, about 1814, the store building which was used for that purpose about sixty years, and upon the site of which the Odd Fellows' Block was erected in 1871. The house now owned by W. K. Lambert was also built at this time. They carried on a large trade, and continued the manufacture of shoes in a building in the rear.

Three or four years later, Benjamin Winter and William Perley opened a store in a building which was situated near where the new business block now is. This building, which was removed across the street, is thought to be that now occupied by John W. Bailey as a stove store. Mr. Perley went to Virginia, where he died many years ago.

Where now is the Main Street extension of Little's shoe factory, Robert McQuestion kept a store for some years, from about 1820. The whole community was astir. The industries of New Rowley were all sustained, rapidly advancing, and general prosperity prevailed. About 1830, several of the houses on Elm Street, near the meeting-house, were built. In 1836, a bank of issue was established, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, with Benjamin Little, President, and George Foot, Cashier. It was styled the Manufacturers' Bank of Rowley. The rapid growth after 1830 gave anticipation of a more rapid increase, and separation from Rowley began to be discussed.

Not very many years after the young and rising business men (who, coming here as strangers, were indifferent to the sentiment that made an attachment to the name of Rowley and all connected therewith, a sacred thing), began to demand and even clamor for a separation. The distance between the two parishes disturbed their business interests. Letters intended for New Rowley were addressed to Rowley, and were delayed in the delivery, often resulting in trouble and difficulty. A meeting in 1837 was called to consider the question and arrange for a division. This was the prelude for a succession of meetings, the west parish demanding a division along the parish line, east of the Phillips' house in Dodgeville, and the first parish declaring that if a division must take place it shall be west of Phineas Dodge's house.

A partial compromise was finally made; Muddy Brook being made the easterly bounds of the proposed new town at one point and Rye Plain bridge, near Newbury line, as a prominent bound at another point. The west parish strove hard to include what is now known as Dodgeville in the new town, but failed, and Warren Street, with three-fourths of the Rowley part of Byfield parish, was allowed instead. (About thirty

years afterward Dodgeville petitioned the legislature to be annexed to Georgetown, but their request was not granted).

A remonstrance against the division was signed by about three hundred citizens, headed by Dr. David Mighill. It was only after considerable debate, that the decision was reached, to call the new town Georgetown. There were those who, for a long time, felt that the name had too pretentious a sound, and were shy about repeating it. There were several names proposed, as Howard, Littleton, Nelson, and Mrs. Lavinia Spofford Weston suggested Lagrange. In the heat of the controversy and perhaps the babel of voices, one facetious individual proposed the name of Babylon. There has always been a conflict of opinion as to the honorable citizen who first suggested the name finally decided upon. By some it has been said to have been Mrs. Judith Daniels, then Mrs. J. Russell, and that it was named in honor of her brother, George Peabody. Others have claimed that they were the sponsors, and, doubtless, at this day it never will be definitely known, from what source, or why it was so called.

The erection of buildings was going on at a rapid rate. Two churches had been built in the village, the old parish meeting-house modernized in its interior, and the church in Byfield, which is within Georgetown limits, also built. In 1840 an outside observer, in a sketch of the town as it appeared at that date, stated that "Georgetown is a pleasant and very flourishing place. Its growth has been more rapid than that of any village in the county. The greater part of it has been built since 1827. Real estate has more than doubled in value during the last twelve years. More than fifty buildings, including shops, were erected in 1839. The inhabitants are probably more extensively engaged in the manufacturing of boots and shoes than those of any place of the same population in the United States." At that date, Spencer, Mass., and Georgetown, with similar industries, were nearly alike in population, with Georgetown, however, slightly ahead in value of manufactured products, having twenty-seven manufactories of boots and shoes: product, \$221,900; invested capital, \$99,000. Nine tanneries: product about \$60,000; invested capital, \$10,300. Carriages: product, \$2,500. The aggregate product of boots and shoes in 1880 was about one-half million dollars.

CHAPTER LVII.

GEORGETOWN—(Continued).

CONCLUSION OF PARISH AND RELIGIOUS HISTORY— UNION AND HARMONY CEMETERIES.

AFTER the re-opening of the Congregationalist meeting-house in 1832, the parish voted the following



April that the town-meeting should no longer be held there. With the rapidly increasing population, had the town not been divided as was done five years later, a commodious hall would at an early day have been necessary. Town-meetings began to be held in Savory's Hall. In 1836 a church vestry was suggested. The building which is now the dwelling-house of W. B. Hammond, was then owned by Benjamin Winter, the second floor of which had been used for vestry purposes and social meetings for some years. In August, 1840, under the influence of the exciting questions of the day, which were then intensely agitating this community, several members of the parish, with one exception now all deceased, petitioned for the use of the meeting-house for discussions and lectures upon the great moral questions of the day. This request was not granted at the time, the meeting adjourning without any action upon the call. A similar petition signed by twenty citizens asking for the use of the house for debates on slavery was approved at a meeting of the parish in February, 1841, and conditionally granted. At this meeting a colleague pastor was voted, and George Prime Smith, of Salem, Mass., who had assisted Mr. Braman, and with marked acceptance was invited, but declined the call. Mr. Smith, who died in early manhood, was of Rowley ancestry, and on the maternal side by the Primes, was a direct descendant of Solomon Nelson, who settled on Nelson Street, in 1729. In February, 1842, a vote was passed to leave it discretionary with Mr. Braman as to the speakers, who, on the slavery question, are to be admitted to the desk. December 8, 1842, Enoch Pond, Jr., was ordained as colleague, his father, Prof. Pond, of Bangor Seminary, delivering the sermon. Rev. Mr. Pond was a young man of much promise, deeply beloved by the church and people and highly esteemed by the whole community. The zeal and energy he displayed, wasted a perhaps not naturally robust constitution. March 15, 1846, he preached his last sermon and returned to Maine, where at Bucksport he died December 17th, of that year, at the age of twenty-six years. One week later his remains were conveyed to this town and buried in Harmony cemetery. The church and parish erected a monument. During the ministry of Mr. Pond in the autumn of 1844, the meeting-house was widened eleven feet on each side by an extension the entire length of the audience-room, of one story in height. Furnaces were added, and in the early part of 1845 a new pulpit, with furnishings, the gift of George Peabody, and a clock, the gift of Mrs. Apphia S. Tenney. In the evening of February 3, 1847, John M. Prince, Jr., was ordained as colleague, the successor of Rev. Mr. Pond; sermon by Rev. Uriah Balkham, of Wiscasset, Maine; Rev. Isaac Braman gave the charge to the candidate. The venerable pastor was nearing the fiftieth anniversary of his ordination, and on Monday, June 7th of that year, the jubilee was observed with a discourse by the aged man, then

almost an octogenarian. The services were held in the afternoon, with assistance from Rev. Messrs. Hartshorn, of the Georgetown Baptist Church, Milton P. Braman, of Danvers (son of the pastor), and Prince, the junior pastor, and original hymns by Mrs. L. S. Weston, of this town, and W. B. Tappan, of Newburyport. A procession was then formed with Dr. William Cogswell as chief-marshal, which marched from the meeting-house to Tenney's Hall, where a collation was served.

There were present as guests,—Drs. Dana of Newburyport, Perry of Groveland, Pierce of Brookline, Cogswell of Boston, Rev. Messrs. Braman of Danvers, Phelps of Groton, Withington of Newbury, Judge Cummings of Boston and A. Huntington of Salem. C. S. Tenney presided.

Several hymns, written by the talented Mrs. Weston, were sung, and a song with music composed by D. B. Tenney, was sung by Messrs. Tenney, Palmer and Holmes, and gifts were presented at the house of the pastor, among them the easy chair from the young men of the parish, so familiar for many years afterwards. The need of a vestry had been felt for years, and during the pastorate of Mr. Pond, the ladies of the church and society were actively engaged in furtherance of the movement. This was especially the work of the "New Rowley Female Benevolent Society," an organization which was begun in November, 1834, with Mrs. Hannah Braman and Miss Susan Nelson (now Mrs. G. J. Tenney), as the first president and secretary. In March, 1849, a committee previously appointed to purchase or build a vestry, reported favorably on the purchase of Adams Hall, now the residence of Jophamas Adams. This building, erected about 1835 by Josiah Adams, had originally a hall used for social purposes on the second floor, a store below, and was bought that year for eight hundred dollars, and used for a vestry until August 25, 1852, when it was sold, becoming the residence of Rev. Mr. Prince, and later the home of Hon. Moses Tenney, the State Treasurer at the time. The chapel, now the Catholic Church, was built in the autumn of 1852, and on completion was at once occupied for vestry meetings. The society under whose auspices this property had been purchased, and held, accepted July 20, 1852, the act of the Legislature of April 23, 1852, incorporating it as the "Woman's Benevolent Society." Rev. Mr. Prince resigned February 8, 1857, and removed to Bridgewater in 1858, where he died the following year. He was born in Portland, June, 1820; graduate of Bowdoin, 1841; Bangor Seminary, 1845.

Rev. Charles Beecher was installed November 19, 1857, as the third colleague pastor with sermons by Professor Calvin Stowe. Other clergymen assisting were Doctors Withington, J. P. Cleveland and Pike, E. B. and Revs. D. W. Foster, McCollum and Willcox.

December 26, 1858, Rev. Isaac Braman died at the advanced age of eighty-eight years. Rev. D. T.

Kimball, of Ipswich, preached the funeral sermon. A suggestive memorial in Union Cemetery marks the grave of the venerated second pastor of this church. Rev. Mr. Beecher continued in active service as pastor until 1870, and nominally for some years afterwards. He is now pastor of a church in Pennsylvania. A daughter, the wife of Mr. G. W. Noyes, still resides in this town, whom he often visits. Mr. Beecher is much beloved by his former charge, and highly esteemed by the community. His presence is ever a benison of peace to many, and the gift of music which God has given him, had its birth in a nobler world than ours. January 30th, 1873, Thomas R. Beeber, now of Pennsylvania, was ordained with sermon by Rev. T. T. Munger, of Lawrence. Ordaining prayer by Rev. Dr. John L. Taylor, of Andover. Doctors Campbell and Fiske, of Newburyport, Rev. Messrs. Marsh, of Georgetown, Voorhees, of North Weymouth, Ecob, of Augusta, Me., and Coggin, of Boxford, aided in the service.

The erection of a new house of worship soon began to be contemplated, and May 16, 1873, the society voted to purchase and build on a lot, then owned by Messrs. Moulton, Chaplin and Noyes, at the left of a court then extending from Central to Middle Streets. Since the erection of the church building this court has been opened beyond to School Street, and to commemorate the Daniel Clark house, which was anciently near by, has been named Clark Street.

December 13, 1874, the final service was held in the old meeting-house, Rev. Mr. Beeber preaching an historical sermon. December 17, 1874, the new church was dedicated, with sermon by Rev. J. H. Ecob, of Maine. Prayer of dedication by Rev. Dr. Seelye. The old house was demolished the following year. August 30, 1876, Rev. Alfred F. Marsh was installed, with a sermon by Rev. Dr. Campbell, of Newburyport. Other parts of the service were by Rev. Messrs. Fulsom, Boyd, Kimball, Childs, Spaulding and Marsh.

The present pastor, Rev. Levi Rodgers, was installed May 4, 1881. The sermon by Professor Smythe, of Andover. Other parts by Doctors Seelye and Spaulding, Rev. Messrs. Kingsbury, Hubbard, Marsh and Barnes. The Sunday-school of this church was begun about 1816. For many years before, exercises in the catechism were sustained on Saturday afternoons by the pastor. This parish have a ministerial fund of seven thousand dollars, a bequest from John Perley.

Should the society cease to have a settled minister, or be dissolved, then the income is to revert to the Perley Free School. This society has a flourishing mission circle. Miss Theodora Crosby, a member, is a missionary in the Pacific Islands.

In the settlement of Mr. Beecher as pastor of the Congregational Church, some positive opposition was manifested by a prominent minority of the parish. The objections, openly expressed at the outset, gath-

ered force, and finally culminated in a public council of ministers and churches, on the ground that the doctrines advocated by Mr. Beecher were not in accordance with the accepted theology of the Orthodox Congregational Church. The result of the council was eventually the withdrawal of those not in harmony with Mr. Beecher, and the establishing by them of a separate religious service in the chapel, as a majority of the members of the society, controlling this chapel property, are said to have been among the ladies who withdrew. They were organized into a distinct church January 27, 1864, Dr. Pike, of Rowley, preaching the sermon on the occasion from Phil. 1: 27. Rev. Mr. McCullom, of Bradford, gave the fellowship of the churches; Rev. Mr. Thompson, of Amesbury, the consecrating prayer; Rev. Mr. Dogget, of Groveland, read the Scripture lesson; and Rev. Mr. Edgell, of West Newbury, administered the sacrament. This church had the pulpit service of several clergymen, most of them young men, and some of rare gifts.

Rev. Eugene Titus, afterwards settled in Gorham, N. H., and Beverly, Mass., a son-in-law of Mr. George W. Chaplin, of this town, a longer period than any other. Mr. Titus, born November, 1834, died July 21, 1876, and is buried in Harmony Cemetery. During the visit of George Peabody, of London, to this country in 1866, he conferred with his sister, Mrs. Daniels, formerly the wife of Jeremiah Russell, Esq. (the first attorney to settle in this town), who was a member of this church, and the result was the erection of the Memorial Church building, which was made a joint gift from the brother and sister, to this new religious organization. The corner-stone of this attractive brick edifice was laid by Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, in the afternoon of September 9, 1866, the ceremonies preceding those at the Library Building on the same day.

This building, the cost of which, including the grounds adjoining, was not less than one hundred thousand dollars, is a memorial to Judith Dodge Peabody, the daughter of Jeremiah Dodge, who removed with his family from his home on the Bailey Lane road, about 1793, to South Danvers (now Peabody), and who was the mother of George Peabody and Mrs. Daniels. The house was dedicated January 8, 1868, M. P. Braman, D.D., of Danvers, delivering the sermon, and a dedication hymn by John G. Whittier, with an additional service in the evening, and sermon by Mr. Richardson, of Newburyport. Two tablets in the rear of the desk are memorials, one of Mrs. Peabody, the mother of George Peabody, who while living in New Rowley, was a member of the Congregational Church, and the other of Rev. Isaac Braman.

Rev. David Dana Marsh, the first and present pastor, was ordained September 12, 1868; Rev. Mr. Barbour, of Peabody, delivering the sermon. Ordaining prayer was by Rev. Dr. Pike, of Rowley. Other exer-



cises were by Messrs. Tolman, of Wilmington, Kingsbury, of Bradford, and McCullom, of Medford. The Sunday-school connected with this church was established where public services were begun, and has John F. Jackson as present superintendent, and Henry Hilliard as Librarian.

There is also a society of Christian Endeavor, organized at an early period in the formation of these societies, and a flourishing branch of the "Woman's Missionary Society." The original benevolent society, dating back to 1834, of which this church is regarded as the direct sequence still exists with regular meetings, and annual meeting in November. The fine house adjoining, formerly the home of Mrs. Daniels, and a place that in its quiet had more attractions to Mr. Peabody, when in this country, than any other, is now the permanent residence of the pastor. This church is in no wise allied to a parochial, secular body or society, but is incorporated, and controls all its property in its own name.

The Byfield parish were afflicted March 1, 1833, by the loss of the meeting-house by fire. Their third and present house was built the same year, and dedicated November 7th, with a sermon by Rev. Dr. J. P. Cleveland, then of Salem, Mass. Rev. Henry Durant, the fourth pastor, was ordained December 25, 1838. He continued in the pastorate until March 31, 1849. About two years previously, the Trustees of Dummer Academy had urged his acceptance as principal of that institution, but his Byfield parish were decided in retaining him as pastor. Rev. Francis V. Tenney was installed March 1, 1850, and was the pastor until April 22, 1857.

June 16, 1858, Rev. Charles Brooks was settled. Other pastors who followed, are Rev. James H. Childs, who was ordained October 7, 1875, and dismissed December 22, 1880. The present incumbent, Rev. Geo. L. Gleason, of Manchester, Mass., was installed September 29, 1882. The cemeteries of this parish are near, and adjoining the church. The first interment, was that of Mrs. Mehetable Moody, a daughter of Henry Sewall, in 1702. The new cemetery was opened some years ago, and already many have been buried there. All the surroundings of this church are peculiar and English-like, and the parish, in its entire history, is unique and attractive.

This history in Chapter LV. left the Baptists in possession of their new meeting-house. Rev. Ezra Wilmarth, after his dismissal from the pastorate in 1834, remained in the town, as several of his daughters were married here, residing here until his death, which occurred November 28, 1846. He was born January 19, 1772. He was buried in Harmony Cemetery. For eighteen months the church was without a pastor, and the pulpit supply for much of the time was Rev. Daniel F. Richardson, afterwards a tutor in Wake Forest College, N. C., and later, for many years, the postmaster of Hanover, N. H., where he died a few years ago.

February 4, 1836, John Burden, of Hampstead, N. H., was ordained the pastor, with sermon by Rev. John Holroyd, of Danvers; Dr. Jeremiah Chaplin, who had not long before resigned his position as president of the college at Waterville, Me., was then the pastor of the Baptist Church at Old Rowley, and counselled the young candidate of this church, into whose fellowship he had been baptized about a half century before. Late in 1837, or early in 1838, the meeting-house was removed from its site near the mill, now the woolen-factory, to where it now is. This removal was in the face of much opposition, largely from the Thurlows, Pearsons and other members of the society, living in the vicinity of Byfield. The founding of the Methodist interest at Byfield Mills can largely be attributed to the removal. Rev. Mr. Burden continued as pastor until the autumn of 1840. He was a warm anti-slavery advocate, and during his ministry much of the moral atmosphere was seething hot with reform movement, and he was not backward about entering the lists. The Grimke sisters spoke from the Baptist pulpit, with Deacon Solomon Nelson, although a Henry Clay moderate, willing listener until Angeline denounced Washington as a man-stealer, then he could listen no longer. The appeal had been made to the Congregational Parish for a recognition of the importance of this slavery question, but at first without a hearing.

The community at large had already become one of the most active in the propagation of the new ideas. The Baptists did not wholly indorse the views of Garrison and his associates on the issue of southern slavery, woman's rights and kindred topics, but were ready to grant them a candid hearing. The *Liberator* was read approvingly by some of them, the abolition almanac was cherished as almost a sacred thing, as the writer well remembers he so regarded it in his boyhood, and many of the most active of the women, who met to pray for the emancipation of the slaves were of the Baptist people. The *Liberator*, that fire-brand, was excluded from the United States mails in the South, but the writer and his brother with boyish enthusiasm were agents in sending several copies to Charleston, S. C., in the packing of their father's shoes, for which they received a severe reprimand, when complaints came as they soon did from the Southern consignee. The Moral Reform Society, an organization of ladies, for the lifting up of their unfortunate sisters, was active from 1835 and onward, and was largely under Baptist auspices. For some years after the resignation of Mr. Burden, the Baptist church except for a brief period, when Rev. L. E. Caswell was pastor (afterwards for many years a popular city missionary in Boston, was pastor, was without a settled minister. They had, however, the services of some men of fine talent, especially Rev. Mr. Moody, of England, who not long after he preached here returned home.

Others who supplied were Mr. Freeman, who went



South; Horace Richardson, later noted as an educator in California; Isaac Sawyer, of Deerfield; Stephen H. Mirick, George Keely and his son, Josiah B., of Haverhill. October 9, 1844, Joseph C. Hartshorn, of Chelsea, was ordained the pastor, with sermon by Dr. Barnis Sears, the successor of Horace Mann as Superintendent of State Board Education. Rev. Mr. Hartshorn was scholarly, had a very successful pastorate, and much esteemed in the community. His resignation occurred August 29, 1848. He soon after retired from the ministry, entered into business as a manufacturer of gas-fixtures in Providence, R. I., and acquired an ample fortune. He is now a resident of Newton, Mass., retired, but perhaps retaining an interest in his former business.

The public gifts of Mr. Hartshorn, expressive of his peculiar character, are ten thousand dollars to Dr. Cullis's Consumptives' Home, for a ward which is known by his name, and a very large sum in 1884 to found and endow the Hartshorn Memorial College for females only at Richmond, Va., a gift in memory of his wife Rachel Thurber Hartshorn, who was a sister of one of the leading members of the Gorham Silver Ware Company in Providence, and who died very suddenly, a few years ago. In the summer of 1844, the meeting-house was lengthened, by the addition of about fifteen feet at the easterly end, the pulpit removed from the west, between the entrance doors, to the east end, and the slips reversed, to front the pulpit in its new position. A bell was also hung in the belfry.

In December, 1848, Rev. Arlow M. Swain, of New Hampshire, became the tenth pastor. While he was with the church, a vestry for social meetings was finished in the basement of the house. In July, 1850, Rev. Paul S. Adams, of Newburyport, became the eleventh settled pastor. The rightfulness of capital punishment, was under general debate at the time. Mr. Adams taking the affirmative, had a sharp controversy with Rev. Mr. Baker, the Universalist minister. Mr. Adams was chaplain of a New Hampshire Regiment during the Rebellion, and died not long since in Newport, N. H.

In September, 1859, the Salem Association met with this church. In November, 1851, Rev. Philemon R. Russell, ordained a minister of the Unitarians, and later a Universalist Restorationist, became the pastor, and continued until May, 1853. In the summer of that year he was residing in the Baptist parsonage, where his wife, one Sunday afternoon, just after returning from church, was seated with an infant in her arms, during a violent shower, and was instantly killed by lightning. The child escaped unharmed.

In November, 1855, Rev. William Read, of Raynham, was settled, resigning in March, 1857. Both Mr. Read and wife were of literary tastes, a gift which is inherited by their children. Rev. Joseph H. Seaver, of Salem, Mass., was settled in November, 1858, resigning in April, 1862. Rev. Joseph M. Burt succeeded, assuming the pastoral office in March, 1863,

resigning in March, 1871. During his pastorate the meeting-house was modernized in the interior, with other improvements, at an expense of about one thousand dollars.

The parsonage property was, by permit of the legislature, sold, and valuable property opposite the church building, for some years the residence of Dr. H. N. Couch, bought for a parsonage with the proceeds. Mr. Burt removed to Buxton Center, Me. He was chaplain of the State Almshouse in Tewksbury for some years previously, was also founder and sole proprietor of the *Christian Era*, a Baptist weekly paper, now merged in the *Watchman*. Rev. R. G. Farley was installed in the evening of May 31, 1871, with sermon by Dr. Bosworth of Haverhill. Mr. Farley was superintendent of the public schools one year during his pastorate. He removed to Maine.

In May, 1874, Rev. E. T. Lyford, of Rowley, was settled and was pastor until May, 1878, when he removed to Billerica, Mass. Mr. Lyford was chaplain of the Eleventh Regiment, New Hampshire Volunteers (Colonel Harriman), during the Rebellion. In March, 1879, Rev. N. B. Wilson, a city missionary in East Boston, succeeded, but resigned, and in the following January removed to Newton, N. H. He was much esteemed in town, and found a congenial field in the active temperance work of the time.

In 1880, Rev. J. M. Burt again assumed pastoral duties, remaining until the spring of 1881, when he returned to Buxton, Me. W. D. Athearn, a student of Newton Seminary, was pulpit supply until 1883, when he became the pastor of the Baptist Church in Spencer, Mass. Other students followed, among them Robert MacDonald of Boston, who on graduation accepted the call of the church and was ordained pastor, early in June, 1885, Rev. Mr. Braislin, of Newton, Mass., preaching the sermon. Other parts by Rev. Messrs. Gardner, Stetson and Tilson. Extensive improvements on the church building began November 9, 1886.

The Sunday-school was founded in June, 1820, and Deacon Solomon Nelson and wife were especially interested in its organization. The Sunday-school Convention of the Merrimac River Association, with George S. Merrill, of Lawrence, secretary, met with this church in June, 1870, to commemorate the fiftieth anniversary of their school. For many years prior to 1840 the ladies of this church had a mission organization known as the Female Mite Society.

The Universalist Society held services about one-fourth of the time, as speakers could be obtained, until the spring of 1835, when Rev. Joseph B. Morse was engaged for one-half of the time, and this engagement was renewed for 1836. The three following years their meeting-house was opened about one-half of the Sundays of the year, with a frequent change of ministers, until 1840, when Rev. D. P. Livermore, afterwards the husband of the now famous Mrs. Mary A. Livermore, was engaged and the Society had his

services regularly for that year. The next year he preached one-half of the time. In 1842 some improvements in the meeting-house and various speakers as before. In 1843 Rev. George Hastings supplied regularly for that year, but the next year but one-half of the Sundays. Mr. Hastings was a practical machinist, working at his trade when not employed in pastoral duty. He also served as school committee.

James T. Dunbar, then the hotel-keeper in the house now the residence of Dr. R. C. Huse, was quite active in the affairs of this Society at this date, and for several years afterwards. After Mr. Hastings, who had married a daughter of Jonathan Harriman, left town, services were not held regularly, and Mr. Dunbar, who was the financial representative of the Society, had authority to hire whom he pleased. In December, 1849, Rev. Henry H. Baker, from Essex, Mass., was engaged for three months, and the engagement successively renewed for the two following years, retiring in the spring of 1852. He was the representative of the town in the legislature in 1852.

Charles H. Webster, whose name was changed from Kent, born in the Merrill House on East Street, was from 1849 one of the active and talented young men of this Society. He became a Universalist minister, had several pastorates in this State, was once pastor at Dedham, was a chaplain in a Massachusetts regiment during the Rebellion, and died some years ago in Maryland.

Samuel Chase was another Universalist minister who attended service here. So did his brothers, John K. and James Chase, for a time; both afterwards became Baptist ministers of considerable note, of whom John K. is still living. These young men were all shoemakers, working in the cozy home shops and in the old-fashioned manner, debating and studying while their hands were employed. After Mr. Baker left, and Spiritualism making inroads into this Society, the interest in sustaining religious meetings of the denomination gradually lessened, until the Proprietors decided to sell their property.

March 27, 1855, a committee reported the sale of the meeting-house and lot to the town of Georgetown, for two thousand dollars. The church building was sold by the town for about three hundred dollars, removed to land owned by William Boynton, made into a dwelling-house, is at present occupied in part by Edward S. Fickett, Principal of the High School. The Society held an occasional preaching service, and much of the time a Sunday-school. W. H. Harriman, the successor of Sylvanus Nelson as Society clerk, was more prominent than any other person in sustaining the school. After the sale of the meeting-house and erection of the Town Hall on the site, all meetings held were in the hall and those supplying were generally of high denominational talent, as Drs. Patterson, Miner, St. John Chambre, Rev. Willard Spaulding and others equally noted. This appointment of Mr. Fickett as teacher of the High School, with his

known religious views, encouraged the members of the school to renewed efforts, and for a time while he was superintendent there was a large membership, but since about 1872 or 73, all meetings of the denomination have been discontinued.

This Society never had a church organization, although at times the question was under favorable consideration. There was fine musical talent among them and the services of the choir were always of a high order. Their observance of Christmas, with decorated house, sermons, songs and choruses, now general in all denominations, was then regarded as a dangerous innovation, almost heathenish even, by the other churches. Perhaps the last service of local importance, held in the church, was that of the funeral of Mr. Nathaniel Nelson, in March, 1853.

The first Roman Catholic service held in this town was in 1849, in Mr. Nathaniel Nelson's house on Andover Street, now the residence of J. P. Jones, Esq., with Rev. Mr. Lannen of Newburyport, as officiating priest. The Newburyport parish included at that time all Northern Essex. This celebration of mass was in the part of the house then occupied by James McLain, now living on West Street. Several Irish emigrant families, antedate Mr. McLain by many years. Mr. Delaney, a Connaught-man, Mr. Dorney, the harness-maker, who it is said began a course of study for the priesthood, Timothy O'Brien, and perhaps two or three others, were in town as early as 1842 or 43, but Nicholas Reynolds, who returned to Ireland and whom L. H. Bateman afterwards visited, was perhaps the first Irish born resident of this town.

From 1840 to 50, Mr. Nathaniel Nelson had several farm laborers of Irish birth transiently employed. In 1850, Father Lannen officiated in the service of the mass several times in the Brocklebank house on Central Street, then occupied by James Molloy. The opening of the Newburyport Railroad, led to the permanent location of several Catholics in town, who had been employed, among them Michael and Dennis Buckley. Three brothers of the same name of Molloy, cousins of James, one of whom had arrived in 1849, were settled here 1852. The families of Hughes, Haley, Barry, with Gauley, O'Doyle, Monaghan, appear at about this date, some before and others a little later, most of whom remained and are permanent residents. Several young men also arrived and located, as Donaghue, Moan, Kane and others, and but little time elapsed before the Catholic population was sufficiently numerous to require a frequent service of their church.

The attic hall, known as Tammany, in the Boynton building, burned in the October fire of 1874, was temporarily engaged, afterwards an upper room in the Masonic building, and at a later date, the Town Hall. Haverhill was then a parish centre, and Georgetown was attached to it, with Rev. John McDonald in charge of the service here, continuing to about 1870. The next appointment was that of Rev.

Richard Cummings, who was recalled from the parochial oversight in 1871, and Rev. John Cummings appointed, who soon located here, living at first in the family of Dennis Donaghue, afterwards renting the house at the head of Clark Street, near the carriage factory. In 1870 the Congregational Chapel, which the Memorial Church had vacated four years before, was purchased for the Catholics, of Mr. G. J. Tenney, by Mr. Donaghue, at a cost of one thousand dollars. It was soon made ready for occupancy, and the first mass was celebrated in what was then known as St. Mary's Church, in October of that year. In addition to the original cost, there has been expended on improvements, before and since entering, an estimated sum of not less than another thousand of dollars. Rev. John Cummings was removed about 1876, and Rev. Thomas O'Brien, of Somerville, was the priest, until about 1878, when Rev. Edward L. McCure, who had been very successful in general parochial work in Woburn, Mass., was assigned the care of this parish.

About 1881 the very attractive dwelling-house and grounds of Mrs. G. W. Boynton, on Central Street, was purchased for a parochial residence, at a cost of about four thousand dollars. About one-fifth of the Catholic population at present, are of French Canadian descent. For many years there were but two families of this race in the town, and not until six or seven years ago, were they sufficiently numerous to be noticeable.

Most of the prominent divisions of the religious world have had their representatives in this town. The Mormon faith, while strongly entrenched in Groveland, had an outpost here on Main Street, and some converts. In 1846 Elder Nathaniel Holmes was a firm believer and zealous worker for the doctrines of that church, as preached by the pioneers, but a strong opposer of the spiritual wifelyhood or polygamy views, as was then advocated. It has been said that they had a church organization for a time.

The opinions of Wm. Miller, and the excitement of 1843, were not popular here. As far as is known, there was but one person in town, who practically acknowledged faith in the speedy closing of all things earthly.

Late in December, 1849, a movement toward Church Union, led to the founding of an organization, composed of some previously connected with both the Congregationalist and Baptist churches, and the engaging of the Universalist meeting-house for services, when it was not wanted by the Universalists. These were known as "Christian Unionists," and regular services were held in Savory's Hall, when the meeting-house could not be had. Their minister who was an "Oberlin Perfectionist," founded a church, and claimed that all the true element in town would eventually rally under their name.

After 1841 or 42, they suspended all meetings. The "Comeouterism" which soon rocked the churches here

like a whirlwind, was to some extent the outgrowth of this union movement, and was also the result of the abolition agitation of the preceding year. Shut out from the meeting-houses, as Henry C. Wright, Parker Pillsbury, S. S. Foster, Abby Kelly, Rev. Mr. Beach and the other earnest enthusiasts claimed they began to gather audiences in the open air. Their cry was "come out from the churches," and from this they derived their name. Addresses were made in this town from the Central Street front of Little's shoe factory, the barn belonging to T. J. Elliott, in Little's grove, and elsewhere. The Sunday question was soon brought in, and that all days were alike holy, and that there was no especially holy time. The believers claimed that this Gospel of Liberty, was taught by Jesus, when he plucked the ears of corn on the Sabbath day, and for a sign to their enslaved neighbors, they conspicuously performed unnecessary labor on Sunday, seeking persecution in so doing. One sister carried her knitting to the Baptist Church, the click of her needles, keeping time with the exhortations of the speaker. Practical non-resistant as she was (and as they all were), and refusing voluntarily to leave the meeting-house, she was forcibly carried out, the next day. She was carried up the narrow stair-way at Savory's Hall for trial on the charge of disturbing religious worship. Immensely corpulent as she was she gave another severe burden to the officers, in carrying her to the vehicle which conveyed her to the Ipswich House of Correction.

Physical reforms were also made a religious duty, and a vegetarian and Graham diet with daily ablutions and shower baths were supplemented by open discussions on the delicate questions of Heredity, Marriages and congenital topics.

At one of the grove meetings, while a speaker was fluently denouncing the eating of meat and applauding the use of Graham flour, the audience were electrified by a facetious listener shouting, as a poser, "Peter was commanded to slay and eat. Could he slay bread?" It was a queer period, and Georgetown more than most towns in the county was a sort of a battle-ground. There was but little persecution here, only legal correction, when some of the most earnest persisted in invading the churches and interrupting meetings, but much undisguised dislike and scorn. Their radical crusade against Southern Slavery is now endorsed, and the statue of Garrison, their grand pioneer, is one of the glories to-day of that mammon-worshipping Boston, that sought his death. Spiritualism had many disciples in this town at an early period of the manifestations, but while public services are rarely held, there are many who still hold to this belief embraced a score or more of years ago. Frank Baxter has spoken in town, as have several others equally celebrated, and until recently private seances were occasionally held. A Methodist class-meeting was established some twenty years ago, in the hope

that it would result in a permanent interest of that denomination, but it soon died out. The Seventh-day Adventists held a series of tent-meetings in the summer of 1877 or '78, at the easterly end of Lincoln Park. Elder Haskell, prominent in the denomination, was the active spirit. For a time there were a few persons who adhered to the distinctive tenets of their faith and observed Saturday as the Sabbath, but with but one or two exceptions, they returned to their former views. About 1881-82 Episcopal services were held in town; at first in Grand Army Hall in the hotel building and afterwards in Library Hall. These services were the result of the efforts of the Misses De Wolf, young ladies residing in the town. The rectors of South Groveland and Trinity Church, Haverhill, officiated, and the diocesan missionary was here several times, but there was not sufficient interest aroused to give permanency to the movement, and, after a few weeks, meetings were suspended. The Bible-readings of Mr. Charles in 1877 and '78 were popular at Byfield depot village, and several families living on North Street, near the Newbury line, became believers. Dwelling-house services are still held in that locality. A few open-air meetings were held at Georgetown Corner, with but little encouragement. The Salvationists, with Haverhill as headquarters, are the latest attempt of a new religious organization to secure a hold in this town. Two or three short campaigns have already seemed abortive. The present may be more of a success than any that have preceded it.

CEMETERIES.—*Union Cemetery*, for more than one hundred years the only public burial-ground, is located in the Marlboro' district. The original part, at the extreme easterly end, of one-fourth acre, was purchased of Joseph Nelson, March 6, 1732-33. Mr. Nelson's wife, Hannah, who was the grand-daughter of Captain Brocklebank, killed, as has been said, many years before, by the Indians at Sudbury, had been already buried there, dying in June of the previous year, and during the following autumn and winter, several others who had also died in the parish, had been buried beside her. In 1755 the first enlargement was made, and the following year, the ground was enclosed by a close board fence, colored with "Spanish brown" (as reads the record) in front, and a substantial stone wall, four feet in height, in the rear. In 1769 a stone wall was built along the road, replacing the fence of some years before. The entire fence was rebuilt in 1783. A further enlargement in 1805, of land bought of Job Brocklebank. Dr. Amos Spofford, one of the committee chosen by the parish to purchase this land, was the first person who died in the parish after it was made. His death occurred December 20, 1805, and he was buried in the new ground. The following year a faced wall was built along the front, which continued until the erection of the present iron fence, which was set upwards of forty years ago, and was a gift to the town by David

Pingree, of Salem. A burial-cloth was purchased by the parish in 1836, another in 1800, and a hearse in 1819. Mrs. Huldah Harriman was the oldest person ever buried there. She died March 5, 1848, aged one hundred years, five months and twenty-six days. By the last enlargement, now many years ago, this upland knoll was then entirely enclosed for the purpose for which the first quarter of an acre was selected more than a century and a half ago, and no further increase of suitable land was possible, consequently, nearly a half century ago, the selection of another locality for a cemetery began to be agitated. In 1845, the opening of the "New Yard," as it was at first called, awakened an intense interest throughout the community.

The first interment in the new yard, now known as *Harmony Cemetery* was that of a lady named Mrs. Cram. The father of J. M. Clark was the second person buried. As we think of some who are buried there, we recall events peculiarly painful in the history of the town, as that of the Beecher sisters, Esther and Hattie, younger daughters of Rev. Charles Beecher, who, with their cousin, a son of Rev. Edward Beecher, were drowned by the capsizing of a boat on Lake Pentucket, at noon-day, August 27, 1867. Lieutenant Frederick Beecher, who was killed with General Custer, is also remembered by a stone near by. Here were also laid, during the Christmas season of 1885, George A. Chase and Joseph A. Ilsey, the two young men who were almost instantly killed in the service of the town, while battling against the incipient fire that then raged, threatening to destroy the village, and a few weeks later their comrade, Clarence M. Clark, who was spared for but a few weeks of suffering. Captain George W. Boynton, chief constable of the State, who died March 23, 1877, is also buried here. John Perley, who bequeathed the fund for the Prospective Free School, has a memorial of Italian marble, said to have cost upwards of three thousand dollars, an exact copy of that erected to the memory of Sir Walter Scott. This in a central position, and on the highest part of the ground, probably covers the spot upon which the ancient watch-house stood.

The burial of the Catholic dead of the town is in the cemetery at Haverhill. Twice, at least, some steps have been taken by some of that faith towards the purchasing of ground for a Catholic cemetery in this town. At one time the lot at the corner of Mill and North Streets was suggested, and at a later day land of Sylvanus Nelson's, on Elm Street, but nothing resulted, and for some years the matter has not been considered.

The only family burial ground ever in the town was many years ago on North Street. This was used for the interment of several persons. The removal of those buried there to the public cemeteries, was in harmony with the almost universal sentiment in Northern Essex, as regards the burial of the dead.



CHAPTER LVIII.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

THE MANUFACTURING INDUSTRIES.

THE colonists, at their first settlement in New England, were alive to the importance of encouraging home industries. Burr-stones, for milling use, were shipped here as early as 1628, and the emigration of coopers, millers and all artisans, was especially urged. In 1639, millers, ship-carpenters and others, were exempted from the burden of training-day. As soon as Thomas Nelson had taken a survey of the out-lands around the village of Rowley, he found a good location for a mill; and but a year or two elapsed before a grist-mill was in operation. A fulling-mill and clothiers' works soon followed. Many of the early settlers of Rowley were skilful cloth-makers, having a celebrity throughout the colony for skill in this particular industry.

One of the first mills built to accommodate what was afterwards the west parish, was by Sergt. Jeremiah Pearson. The town granted him authority in 1697, to build a mill, provided a convenient place could be found. In January, 1699-1700, a lot of land, which had been granted to Samuel Platts, Jr., was returned to the town, Platts receiving other land in exchange; and on this convenient site Pearson erected a grist-mill, which was in use about one hundred years. This was situated near the afterwards somewhat famous Stickney mills. How long a time the Harriman mill on Rock Brook was run is not known, but, whatever the length of time, it was unquestionably the first to be built within the limits of Georgetown.

Some, if not all, the earlier-built houses in this west parish, were of logs. Pine trees were scarce down to a late day in this locality. A severe penalty was imposed by special statute, in Massachusetts, for unnecessary injury to pine trees, as late as 1790; and this species were so rare where now they are almost the exclusive growth, that Capt. Solomon Dodge has been known to say that, when a boy, a pine tree was something of which but few could be seen for a long distance around his home in Dodgeville. The boarding of the houses was of oak, as well as the frames, until past the middle of the last century; and whether originally the boards were sawed or split, with a shaved surface afterward, is uncertain. There was a class of mechanics known as sawyers at a very early day, and perhaps the boards may have been worked out by hand with pit-saws. The shingles were split, and the durable ones are said to have been from trees killed by burning, while in a growing, vigorous condition.

The Harriman mill was doubtless a saw as well as grist-mill, for, at the time it was first projected, there were several houses in contemplation, and evidently much enterprise in the eighteen mill-owners. Deacon

Abner Spofford had a saw-mill in operation, in 1734, on the stream which finds its outlet at Parker River, above Scrag Pond. Forty years afterward, his half-brother, Col. Daniel Spofford and his sons, run a grist-mill at the same site, and three thousand bushels of grain, grown in the neighborhood, have been ground there in a single year. The same mill-stones, no doubt, had been previously used in another grist-mill, a sort of an improvised affair, on a dry spot originally, the only power being what water was conveyed by several uncertain streams. This mill was in the rear of William B. Howe's house, and was run by John Spofford, another of this Spofford family.

About 1740 Daniel Pierce, perhaps the grandfather of the late Major Daniel Pierce, commenced digging a canal below Pentucket Pond, preparatory to the erection, or possible enlargement, of a mill already in operation, and at the site now occupied by the Parker Woolen Mills. The interest that Pierce had was soon sold by him, the purchaser running a grist-mill, which, for a century, was in use from the middle of October to the middle of April of each year.

In 1807 John Wood, who lived near by, was the owner, and added a saw-mill. Paul Stickney was at one time the proprietor, and also Major Paul Dole, for more than twenty years. About 1851 or '52, money was raised by subscription, land damage paid; the meadow around Pentucket Pond flowed through the year, and the mill was run constantly during the summer months. This made a precedent; the result of which has been the permanent flowage of these lands, or sufficiently so, as to make them valueless.

About 1863 Hon. Moses Tenney bought and enlarged the mills, adding improved machinery at a large expense. Many were hoping when the purchase was made, that the intentions were to remove the entire structure, and thus give unobstructed passage to the vast body of water which flowed, or would flow, if unchecked, through the central and southern part of the town; but their hopes were doomed to disappointment. About five years ago, the property changed owners, and the manufacture of blankets was begun, with an enlargement of the buildings. Under the present competent management, the production is largely cassimeres. There are about fifty employees, with Edward C. Aldrich as superintendent, and the corporation name is the "Parker River Mills." Returning to the last century, we find other industries. The iron works have been referred to, and the Hazen Saw-mill at J. S. Kimball's place. All the little streams, only available for one-half of the year, were utilized.

Eleazar Spofford, the son of Deacon Abner, began about 1775 the work of wire-drawing near his father's saw-mill. Jonathan Chaplin, the father of Captain Eliphalet, built a rope-walk where the road now is, just north of Wilfred S. Chaplin's house. Deacon Stephen Mighill, like his predecessors, manufactured malt. The Burpy family dammed a swift-running



little brook that coursed through their land, and made a rude mill for breaking flax. Jeremiah, the father of Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, had a mill for the making of snuff in operation during the Revolution. Molasses was made from Indian corn-stalks and water-melons during this war. Saltpetre was made from the dried earth found under old buildings. A part of the house of the late Deacon Moses Merrill was the workshop of Deacon Thomas Merrill, in which his eldest sons were employed during the Revolutionary War in making nails with forge and hammer.

Benjamin Wallingford, Sr., and son of the same name, manufactured, in a humble way, articles from leather, as saddle-bags, harness and horse-collars in their house on Andover Street. Mr. Burbank, who lived at the "Corner," was a chaise-maker before 1800. One of the chaises of that period—perhaps of his make—was called the "Ark;" doubtless the name was appropriate.

The old gambrel-roofed shop of Burbank, which stood in front of where Mr. Pettengill's brick blacksmith shop now stands, was on the same site at the "Corner" some years after his death. There were several cooper-shops in the parish. One was where L. G. Wilson's house now is.

Charcoal-burning was common as late as seventy-five years ago. The farmers often find the remains of the charcoal pits turned up by the plough. Philip Nelson had a blacksmith shop near the "Pound" in 1750. He afterwards removed to Haverhill. Several fishing-vessels of eighteen or twenty tons burden were built near the meeting-house by Solomon Nelson and his sons, nearly one hundred years ago. These were for Chebaco (now Essex) parties, and were hauled to the water, either at Rowley or Byfield, to be floated around. Up to about 1860 there have been those at different periods who did considerable business in cutting and roughing ship-timber and plank for the Essex and Newburyport builders.

At one time, when repairs were being made on the frigate "Constitution," some valuable timber cut on Baldpate Hill was used. Captain Eliphalet Chaplin, who kept several pairs of oxen, and employed a number of men, was, in the first quarter of this century, largely engaged in this ship-stock industry, also Mr. William and Ensign Daniel Spofford, and, in after years, Mighill Nelson, father of the writer. The clipper-ship building of forty years ago, drew heavily on the primitive timber-growth, which had been spared up to that time.

Captain Benjamin Adams began the tanning and currying of leather at his home on the Salem road, now Central Street, about 1780. The next to begin this important industry was Captain William Perley, at the Hazen, now Kimball place, where he for some time ground bark by water-power. Deacon Solomon Nelson, on Nelson Street, and perhaps Daniel Clark, on North Street, where Henry Hilliard afterwards

carried on the business, continued by a son and a grand-son, both of the same name, which at present is the only manufacture of the kind in town. Some domestic or slaughter hides (the skins of cattle killed in the vicinity) with the dressing of skins of some unusual kind, is now the only work performed, and the business is more from pleasure, as one of the past customs of the family, than from necessity or special profit. Another yard opened was that of Noyes Pearson, on a little romantic stream which crosses North Street, near the Newbury line, having its outlet eastwardly, at Wheeler's brook. Others, established at an early day were the Westen and Phineas Hardy yards, on "Rock Brook," or Parker River, very near the site of the Harriman mill of nearly a century before. At about the same period Nathaniel Nelson began the same industry near the meeting-house.

In 1815, or near that date, Deacon Asa Nelson, who had served his three years' apprenticeship with his relative, Deacon Solomon Nelson, and had worked at the business for two or three years at the Pearson tannery, on North Street, began operations at his home on Elm St., now owned by his son, Sherman Nelson. He conducted a large business. About 1821 or '25 Major Jeremiah Nelson, a son of Stephen M., who had also learned the trade of Deacon Nelson, began the same business near the meeting-house, and about 1835 was the first to introduce steam as a motive power into town. This engine, with the buildings, was the property of a corporation. Nathaniel Morse had also a yard near by. Most of the young men who learned this trade in New Rowley from 1810 to 1830 served their apprenticeship to Deacon Solomon Nelson. The privileges of the apprentice were to dress for himself two dozen calf-skins, one-half dozen sides of leather, and as many sheepskins as the apprentice pleased. These were not statutes from the law-books, but were recognized as having equal authority. Colonel John Kimball, about 1825, began an extensive manufacture of leather at the Captain Adams tannery, then owned by him. One year he tanned and curried four thousand South American horse-hides. Many of the imported skins of those days were of Russian red cattle. Besides those in town who had yards and were employers of labor, there were those who, like Amos Nelson, had the use of pits and carried on an independent business of their own, and Benjamin Low, who was a currier, and worked in his own shop for many years. Patented leather splitting-machines, worked by hand, were an awkward thing, but only one could be used in a town. New Rowley manufacturers, to evade the law, had one in Gideon Baker's barn, just beyond the Boxford line. An extensive business in the slaughtering of cattle was carried on in town early in the present century and during the war with England. This was conducted principally by Deacon Solomon Nelson and his cousin, Nathaniel Nelson. Drovers of fifty or more head were often



purchased at one time. Cattle were frequently bought of Governor Colby, of New Hampshire. The deacon was also State inspector of beef. The cellar-floor under his house has at times been completely covered with barrels of beef awaiting shipment. The hides were converted into leather, and both industries carried on simultaneously. The shoe business, in its manufacture outside of family use, is thought to have been begun by Deacon Thomas Merrill, father of I. Newton Merrill, at his home in Marlboro'. He used to carry in his horse-cart the shoes which he had made, to Gloucester, Marblehead and Salem, for sale, as four-wheeled vehicles had not then become common.

There were cordwainers from an early day who had their patrons, and going from house to house would, in the corner of the farmer's kitchen, make the shoes needed for the family. John Bridges, in 1775, worked in this way through the west parish. After the shoe industry was started, there were many who had much of the cutting, making, dressing and other parts of the work done in their dwelling-house. It was with most a mixed industry, combined with farming or some other employment. The Brothers Little were at Solomon Nelson's, near the meeting-house, manufacturing in 1810, and were afterwards at the "Corner," but in both places combined the business with trade in general merchandise. Richard Tenney and his son, Amos J. Tenney, began early at their home on Tenney Street. Deacon Nelson on Nelson Street, and Nathaniel Nelson at his home, were both engaged in shoemanufacturing before 1812. To have, as it were, "many irons in the fire" was the rule with these business men of that day. Benjamin Winter followed a few years later, and is said to have made the first boys' brogans ever made in town. Stephen Little claimed to have made the first pegged shoes; Paul Pillsbury, as has been said, the first shoe pegs. Paul Spofford was the consignee or purchaser of many goods shipped at that early period. A bill of lading before the writer while penning this, is for shoes shipped to Spofford, Tileston & Co., New York City. Deacon Asa Nelson soon added the shoe manufacture to his tanning business. D. M. Winter began a limited business about 1830. Amos J. Tenney and his son, George J., built at the Corner the dwelling-house and factory in 1829, which were burned in the first extensive fire in 1874. The boots made by the Tenneys soon became generally known in the boot and shoe towns of the State as a standard make both in style and quality, and the firm became known as a leading firm in the business centres of the country. Samuel Little began the same business in 1831, establishing a trade with Pittsburgh, and, as the population spread westward, with points beyond Western Pennsylvania, and finally, under the firm name of Little & Noyes (Hiram N.), afterwards Little & Moulton, became the leading business house of the town.

It is a fact worthy of record that Daniel Wood, of

Boxford, who worked for Deacon Solomon Nelson as early as 1813, carrying home his stock and returning with his saddle-bag of shoes on horseback, as Mr. Amos Nelson, now an octogenarian, well remembers seeing him, is at ninety-five years of age, still at work on his shoemaker's bench. The business was managed loosely, as it would be thought to-day, the shoemaker sometimes taking the uncut leather, and cut, as well as made, the shoes. About every farm-house by 1830 had its shop near by. The trade was largely with Baltimore, Norfolk and Charleston, as well as with New York City. At first goods were carried over the road to Boston in medium-sized wagons, but as the business became extensive, large baggage-wagons, drawn by six horses, were in use for carrying shoes, with a return load of West India goods for the several stores. After the opening of the Eastern Railroad boots and shoes were sometimes carted to Rowley, and shipped by rail from there. By 1840 thirty or more persons in the south part of the town had been, or were to some extent, engaged in the shoe industry. Besides those already named, there were the brothers C. G. & John Baker, Benjamin Adams, John A. Lovering (continued recently by his son, John H. Lovering), George W. Chaplin, Mighill, Asa and Harrison Nelson, Ignatius Sargent (a partner of the last-named) and many others. There were several in Byfield, as James Peabody, near the Newbury line, the Jackmans and perhaps others. Nathaniel and Major Jeremiah Nelson did an extensive business, and something was done in Marlboro'. Somewhat later there were M. A. Tidd (who removed to Iowa), in what is now C. G. Baker's shop; Henry P. Chaplin, in what is now Mrs. Allen G. Hood's home; G. M. Nelson and Coleman Platts, where A. B. Noyes now is, and where David Holmes, G. H. Carleton and others have carried on business in the past; W. B. Harriman, on Elm Street, continued by his son, Horace E. Harriman, John P. Coker and others. Moses Spofford did a small business in a building where G. S. Harnden's house now stands. Perhaps the first light work made in town was by Alfred Hale, in the building, on Main Street, formerly the residence and private school of the Misses Cross. Besides these there have been Charles M. Stocker, George B. Miller, one or two Haverhill firms, who have had for a time the third floor of Odd Fellows' Block in recent years, and, in a limited way, one or two others. In addition to those named, there are at present using steam-power W. M. Brewster, on Park Street, who makes a specialty of boots, many of high grade, and has had from seventy-five to ninety employed; A. B. Noyes & Co., on Main Street, largely engaged in miners' wear, and George W. Chaplin & Co., on Central Street, who make a varied stock, some miners' goods, and of late are manufacturing new styles. Those not using power are the Boot and Shoe Corporation, with E. S. Daniels, superintendent, in the Samuel Little factory, and took at their organization, 1881, the trade Mr. Little had when business



was suspended by him, H. P. Chaplin, on Central Street; J. B. Giles, who occupies the D. M. Winter factory on Elm Street; H. E. Harriman, also on Elm Street, makes boots for Essex County and home trade generally, and C. G. Baker with a similar product. Mr. George W. Chaplin, now the veteran of this industry, can recall more than fifty persons in this town, mostly in South Georgetown, who have at one time or another manufactured boots and shoes. From 1830 to 1850, there were two harness-shops in town, with several journeymen and apprentices; Robert Savory had one of the establishments. Later this work was limited to one or two persons. At present T. F. Hill conducts a successful business of this kind.

Perhaps about 1843 or 1844, Moses Atwood began the manufacture of "Atwood's Bitters." This has become one of the standard patent medicines of the country. Moses Carter and Lewis H. Bateman afterwards individually continued this same manufacture. These three persons became to some extent manufacturing druggists, of which the business of Mr. Carter is continued in that of Luther F. Carter, his son. Mr. Atwood removed West, and the widely known "Bitters," are now it is believed, the product of a New York city firm. A deposit of ochreous earth was discovered by Mr. Atwood at the base of the hill known by his name about 1846 or 1847, and from it many buildings in town were painted. The newspaper printing business and job work were begun in June, 1846, in Little's shoe factory, or the "Phenix Building," as the advertisement reads, and the *Watchtower*, a semi-religious weekly, issued. This paper was also published and mailed from Newburyport; Rev. Allen Garnett was editor, and William Cogswell, proprietor. Volume ten began March, 1848; this was sustained for about three years, when after a brief interim the *Georgetown Reporter*, another weekly or semi-monthly published by a Mr. Green, became the village paper, but of a lower standard than the *Watchtower*. This paper was continued until about 1853 or 1854. In 1867 the town had occasional newspaper ventures in the *Examiner*, published by Major Moses Tenney & Son, partially for trade purposes, and in 1871 the *Star*, which was issued monthly throughout the year by Calvin E. Howe, and another trade sheet, the *Granger*, in 1874.

September 23, 1874, W. B. Hammond, of Peabody, who had been running a job printing office in Odd Fellows Block for about two years, issued the first number of the *Georgetown Advocate*. The following year he entered into partnership with the present town clerk, H. N. Harriman, who for some time previously had been a member of the State Constabulary, and located at Salem, the firm greatly enlarging the size of the paper. They print a weekly edition of about twelve hundred copies, have a well-appointed office, issue a sheet deservedly popular, from its typography and general make-up, the files of which will, to the future local historian, be invaluable. A

steam-power press is used. The making of men's clothing was anciently done by itinerating tailors going from family to family, as women tailors did half a century ago. "Tailor Thurlow" was perhaps the most noted in this town.

Samuel Plumer, of Rowley, who had been living in Haverhill for a year or two, began the manufacture of clothing in town in 1838. Was in partnership with Stephen Osgood for some years, but later with H. L. Perkins. He is still in business, and after some removals, again occupies his old stand of nearly fifty years ago. Mr. Blodgett was in the same industry, from about 1842, for some years. Had some twenty or more employees. Was of an inventive turn and devised the first sewing-machines, but it was only by the aid of a Boston machinist that it was made practical. Afterwards took out patents in England; located in Philadelphia and became wealthy. David Haskell, an ingenious carpenter of this town, invented an attachment to the sewing machine, now in universal use, but others secured the money-value. Stephen Osgood began the clothing business in 1848; afterwards a "Forty-niner" in the early California furore, and for many years has been extensively engaged as a merchant-tailor, having for style and finish of garments a very wide celebrity. He was a member of the Massachusetts Senate. H. L. Perkins, for some years in partnership with Mr. Plumer, but of late in business in Odd Fellows' Building, recently removed to Haverhill. He makes a specialty of particular lines of gentlemen's wear. L. H. Bateman twenty years ago manufactured cigars in the second story of the store which formerly was near Dr. Huse's residence. Shoe-pegs were made by Charles Coburn forty years ago, in a building on Chestnut Street. The tannery of Deacon Solomon Nelson was improved by the father of the writer about 1843, a bark mill, circular saws and lathe added. Shuttle stock for the Lowell mills, carriage, laths and fencing stuff manufactured, grinding bark for the tanneries, then doing business and threshing grain, nearly every farmer growing the small grains at that time.

The first use of steam for manufacturing purposes, was on Chestnut Street, about 1835, as has been stated. Since that time, an engine was run for about two years, near the Pingree farm-house, to saw the timber into lumber, at the time of the extensive clearing of the forest; another, about twenty years ago, on West Street, by Patrick Grimes, in a wool-cleaning business, in a building just in the rear of the James Grimes (formerly the Esquire Spofford place), also one in the building on Main Street, near Pen Brook Avenue, where, a few years ago, parties from Haverhill extracted oil from leather waste and still another in an apple-evaporating business, about five years ago, in the building on Main Street, formerly the residence of the Misses Cross, upon the site of which the Bailey block of stores and tenements now stands. The carriage manufacture was introduced



some years ago, by a brother of Stephen Osgood, in the large and convenient building erected for the purpose, at the head of School Street, but unfortunately did not prove remunerative. Here steam power was also used. George S. Weston has steam power in a cider factory, erected some ten or twelve years ago, near his residence on Main Street. Mr. Weston and his cousin Charles, run in the winter season, the old Spofford saw-mill on Andover Street. Henry Pettengill, has in his old blacksmith shop, the engine formerly used in the Batchelder peg-mill, in Boxford, which was burned about 1848. In 1866 a company of capitalists in Newburyport, began the manufacture of peat at the Raynor meadows, on the west side of Central Street, not far from the Boxford boundary. A building of three stories was erected, machinery and steam power put in, upland graded for drying ground and much expense incurred. The result was not satisfactory, and after a few months, work was suspended. This locality, now owned by Boston parties, is locally known as "Peatville."

During the silver mining excitement, in 1875 and '76, a shaft was sunk by a Dr. Taylor, on Hilliard land, near the Parker River Mills, and much experimenting and land-bonding in that locality, and along Red Shanks and on Nelson Street, was the result. Some gold and silver was found. Recently, further mining operations have been made near C. E. Chaplin's, on Nelson Street, on land then owned by parties in Providence, R. I.

The business of a machinist was carried on for several years by Manly Morse, son of Nathaniel Morse, and by George Hasting, the Universalist minister.

The first wind-mill erected was that of Robert Boyes, about thirty-five years ago, for wheelwright purposes, on the building in the rear of Little's shoe factory, now occupied by J. E. Messenger. Lately modern wind-mills have been in use for stabling purposes by Jophanas Adams and G. H. Carlton.

Soap manufacture has been carried on for some years by Charles Smith, on North Street, and John T. Hilliard, on Thurlow Street. Elisha Hood, of South Georgetown, was at one time in this business.

The shoe-box industry, at present carried on by M. F. Carter at the steam factory near the railroad station, was begun twenty or more years ago on Pond Street, by J. P. Folsom, and continued by William Sawyer, who removed here from Boxford.

The cutting of ice from Lake Pentucket was begun as early as 1853 or 1854, by Messrs. Little and Tenney, and soon after the buildings were erected. This Pentucket ice industry was afterwards the property of Sherman Nelson, but at present, and for some years past, is controlled by John A. Hoyt & Sons.

A few years ago two brothers by the name of Abbott, who are in the business elsewhere, began cutting ice from Rock Pond. They cut and store wholly for shipment, while much of the Pentucket product is for local consumption. Besides the blacksmith shops

named there was, as early as 1740, that of Amos Pillsbury, on Pillsbury Plain, near Humphrey Nelson's, later, another Dresser shop near Library Street, afterwards occupied by Captain Asa Bradstreet and D. W. Perkins. Fifty years ago South Georgetown had Goodrich and Richards in this industry, and during work on the road-bed of the Danvers Railroad, a shop was built at the corner of Chaplin Court, afterwards burned. Byfield had one or two on Warren Street, and has at present, on North Street, a very enterprising establishment, in the carriage and smith shop of Morse & Poor. At the village there have been the shops of J. A. Hilsley, James Cogswell, now Charles Holmes, also that of McKenney, Morrill and the veteran Henry Pettengill, now of nearly sixty years labor in this town. One curious feature of the early times was, that before the use of "slings" when oxen were to be shod they were turned upon their backs, a custom still in use in Syria.

Many of the earlier house-builders have been already named, as several of the Spoffords, eminent in this especially honorable avocation, also two or three of the Hazens, and others. Captain John Kilham was, for about half a century, a skillful artisan, and many of the dwellings in town are the results of his steady and painstaking industry. Isaac Wilson, residing on Spofford hill, William George, who died recently at the age of ninety-six, Sylvanus Nelson, S. Eustace Clark and others, now gone to join the silent majority, were always busy in the duties of their calling.

The Kimball brothers, of which John, survives, were active for many years in their chosen work, and is now repeated in their sons also; also John W. Pingree in South Georgetown, Chauncey O. Noyes, Caleb S. Chaplin, in Byfield, George B. Poor and James E. Messenger, of whom the last-named has a business varied with carriage repair (assuming the work laid aside by Joseph Currier and Robert Boyce) are, with perhaps others not named, the active members of the fraternity in the town to-day. A few contractors have, at times, resided here, but in most cases their labor was not as productive of good to the community, as was anticipated.

One industry to be added to the foregoing is that of heel-making, which is connected naturally with the shoe and leather interests. This business is of considerable importance in towns near by, but from some cause has not been successful in this town. Recently an attempt was made to conduct this industry on a large scale, but all work, after several months of trial, has been suspended. Previously the Cokers, father and son, for a time did a moderate business. Another quite important industry to be added is the manufacture of lasts by Cyrus Dorman, who conducted this business at the head of Mechanics' Court for several years.

A bakery was established by John Hale in a building erected for the purpose, near Peabody Library,



ten years or more ago. The public demand hardly warranted the outlay, and the business was not a success. Later J. S. Hilliard carried on the same business in Little's Block, selling out some three years ago to S. D. Bean. Nearly, or quite, forty-five years ago William Boynton, now of Melrose, conducted quite a trade in, and some manufacture of, furniture on Central Street. He was also undertaker for the town. The Farmers' Mutual Company, of Georgetown, organized about forty years ago, had its office under his roof, an institution of which he was treasurer. This company has been extinct for about twenty years.

CHAPTER LIX.

GEORGETOWN—(*Continued*).

THE MILITARY HISTORY.

IN examining the early history of New England towns for their military records, one fact impressed on the mind by all investigators is the frequent use of military titles in the records both of the parish and town, and especially from about 1700 down to 1850, while with us some of the captains, majors and colonels are still living, and are familiarly so called. A pride in military duty parade seems to have been a trait in some families, and in this vicinity, for a century or more, in the Spofford family, more than in any other. Perhaps the first names found in active service as Indian fighters, are those of the Stickneys on Long Hill, one of whom was called out for a short campaign against the Indians at the eastward about 1707. Jonathan Wheeler was on duty at Fort Independence, Boston harbor (then Castle William), at some date not later than 1735. He was probably the Marlboro' resident. Lieutenant Benjamin Plumer, perhaps Ensign Benjamin, who was prominent in parish work, was on the eastern frontier in 1751. Two or three from this part of Rowley were at Lake George in 1755 with the Rowley Company. At this early period of the French war, our soldiers wore their homespun clothing, and carried their own muskets, blankets only provided. The militia was organized, and, in the prospect of a prolonged war, were frequently drilled. In 1757 Ebenezer Burpee, the parish clerk, was lieutenant, and Deacon Stephen Mighill was clerk of Capt. Pearson's company of cavalry. In the return of militia for 1757 Captain Richard Thurston's train-band, or West Parish Infantry, had fifty-four men. The crisis in our country's history, when the French were victorious in every important encounter, brought the realities of war to the homes of these West parish farmers. The contest at this time had peculiar features all its own. The Fort William Henry massacre soon followed, and as the wearied and disheartened soldier returned

after the campaign, it was to tell the story of tortured prisoners and cannibalism, and of a French and Indian alliance, which it seemed the colonies were almost powerless to meet. The alarm list at this period was headed by Mr. Chandler, the pastor, and others on the list were Thomas Merrill, who, about 1750, had removed from what is now the Eldred Parker place in Groveland, and had bought the Joseph Nelson house in Marlboro' district, now the Jacob F. Jewett house; also Dudley Tyler, the inn-keeper, at that time, the owner of the Francis Brocklebank place, near the meeting-house, and seventeen others, equally prominent. Dudley, a son of Mr. Tyler, was in active service in 1757, again in 1759, and perhaps in later campaigns. He was a public charge for the last ten or fifteen years of his life, making it his home most of the time, with Moses Nelson, on Nelson Street.

At Mr. Solomon Nelson's request, the town at the annual meeting, in view of Mr. Tyler's military record, both in this and the Revolutionary war, always granted him liberty of choice (with much opposition, however,) as to the family where he wished to live. The Tyler family becoming embarrassed, Mr. Nelson had bought, about 1765, their place, now owned by M. G. Spofford. This place descended from Mr. Solomon Nelson to his son, Major Paul Nelson, from whose heirs it was bought by Rev. Charles Beecher, and by him sold to the present owner. The sign which swung before this ancient tavern for many a year, with its painted soldier, in the uniform of King George's army, is now the property of Mr. Humphrey Nelson, of this town. During the French, and part of the subsequent war, the enlistments were for a short service or for the campaign, the soldiers usually entering the army in the spring, and returning home in the early winter of the same year.

In 1759, Francis Nelson, who lived near the Long Hill road, was a soldier under Captain Herrick, of Boxford. Amos Nelson, who afterwards built the Charles E. Chaplin house on Nelson Street, was in service in 1757, and was in Colonel Appleton's regiment, in 1759, and Benjamin Winter, the grand-father of Benjamin and D. M. Winter, was in the army the same year, and also in 1760. Other names, in different campaigns, from the West parish and Byfield families, were Richard Easty, Robert Gragg, Abner Moores, Thomas Pike, Ezra Burbank, David Plumer, John Plumer, Jonathan Gragg, Abner Burbank, Moses Harriman, John Jackman, Mark Thurlow, Abel Dodge, Rufus Wheeler, Peter Hardy, John Crombie, and doubtless many others.

In 1756, the Province of Massachusetts called for volunteers, and if there was not the requisite number at the given time, then a conscription was to be ordered. A bounty of six dollars was offered, and pay for privates of one pound, six shillings a month. If the volunteer brought his own gun, a bounty of two dollars extra. Their powder-horns, with figures and



ornamentations on them, the work of these men in their idle hours, are now heir-looms in families, and curios in cabinets.

The Province, as "the combat deepened," increased the supplies, providing in 1756, bullet-pouch, blanket, knapsack and wooden bottle, besides the powder-horn and musket. Later a uniform of breeches of blue and red was added. This forced travel from home by the stern demands of war to the novel sights at distant Louisburg, in Acadia, along Lake George, Oswego and elsewhere, gave an impetus to the peaceful emigration to New Hampshire, Vermont, and New York, which took place at the close of the contest.

In 1764, the West Parish Militia was organized into one company, with Daniel the great-grandfather of Charles Sewall Spofford, as Captain. Dudley Tyler, who married a daughter of Dea. Abner Spofford, was Lieutenant and Eliphalet Spofford, the grandfather of the late Dea. Jeremiah Spofford, was Ensign. Some of this company had survived the dangers of one conflict, with personal experiences of Indian ambuscade, pestilence and all that made the seven years' French war, a trial which tested the strength of the country, apparently to the utmost, but another, and a more terrible test of the abilities of the colonies was coming.

In 1770, papers were in circulation, pledging the subscribers to non-intercourse with Great Britain. This Whig covenant was an agreement not to use in their families, any goods of English manufacture or any imported from England, while tea was especially named. The paper which circulated in Byfield had the names of such patriots, as Reuben, Moses, Jeremiah, Enoch, Daniel, Jacob and Noyes Pearson, Jeremiah and Henry Poor, John, Samuel and John Searl, Jr., Benjamin and Amos Stickney, Mark, Jonathan and John Thurlow, Nathaniel and John Tenney, Samuel Northend, William Longfellow, Oliver Dickinson, Amos Jewett, Abraham Sawyer, Israel Adams, Moses Lull, Benjamin Jackman, Samuel Pike, Moses Smith and Abraham Colby. A few of these were, perhaps, not residents of the Georgetown part of the parish. Special enlistments as minute men were voted by the town, as early as January, 1775, and a weekly one-half day's drill was begun. The West Parish voted February 9, 1775, that minute men should be raised according to the advice of the Provincial Congress.

In March military drill, of two half-days in each week, was begun. Daniel Spofford, then colonel, led his regiment to Cambridge, on the report of the Lexington fight. Who were engaged in the battle at Bunker Hill from this part of Rowley, except Dudley Tyler and James Boynton, who was killed (a brother of Moses), it seems to be difficult to ascertain.

The firing of the artillery was distinctly heard here, as we have often learned from aged citizens, and the alarm and anxiety must have been intense. Captain

Eliphalet, the grandfather of Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, commanded a company in his brother Daniel's regiment, in which the doctor's father was a private, and some of these Spoffords may have been at Bunker Hill. Jeremiah and William Chaudler, the only children of William, the schoolmaster, were in the army in 1775, and again in 1778; one of them never returned to his wife, whom he left behind him, but at the expiration of his term of service, remained in Pennsylvania, and, it is said, married there. Twice, at least, the town was divided into classes, intermixing the poor with the rich, and each class was called upon to procure a soldier.

One of the classes had Lieutenant Benjamin Stickney at the head. Among those who were in this war, was one captain,—Benjamin Adams,—at least five lieutenants, viz.: Thomas Pike, who lived early in this century in the Sherman Nelson house, on Elm Street, and who was a pioneer advocate of Universalism, removed to New London, N. H.; Moody Spofford, the bridge and church builder, who was at Ticonderoga, and commonly known as "Esquire Spofford;" John Tenney, Benjamin Stickney and Rufus Wheeler. Nathaniel Burpee was drummer. David Poor was a corporal. A few names of privates are Abel Dodge, the cooper, who occupied, and perhaps built, the house on Main Street, until recently the Daniel W. Perkins house; Paul Stickney, William Searle, Joseph Nelson, who removed to Wallingford, Me., soon after the war; Jeremiah Dodge, maternal grandfather of George Peabody; Samuel Plumer, supposed to be the father of the Plumer brothers, who gave the parsonage farm to the Baptist Society; Francis Nelson, afterwards drowned in Rowley River; Aaron Crombie, father of the well-known Crombie brothers; John Crombie, probably a brother, who died of small-pox in New York State; Silas Dole, and many others. Some of these were living when the pensioning of aged soldiers, and the Revolutionary veterans in particular, began, which, it is said, was first suggested by President Monroe, because of finding, when on his tour through the North, an army chum, by the name of Barnes, in the Waltham Almshouse, who was a fellow-officer with him in the Revolutionary War. Doubtless the last worn survivor of that war in this town was John Phips, a native of Gloucester, who died in the family of Dr. David Mighill about 1843.

During the Shay insurrection, Joseph Pike of Byfield enlisted for thirty days, the time called for. Militia organization was maintained by careful legislation, after the formation of the new government.

The death of Washington in 1799, caused a general outburst of sorrow and a special recognition from the militia. The writer has an order of January 1800, requiring all the members of the company of cavalry (a company composed of Topsfield and Boxford, as well as Rowley men) then living in the West Parish, to attend religious service in uniform and mourning



emblems for six months. This order came to Stephen M. Nelson, who was sergeant. In 1807 troubles were threatened because of the embargo and other disturbing acts, and volunteers were enlisted.

At that time what is now Georgetown began to be called New Rowley, and from the place were enrolled Joseph Adams, Robert Bettis, John Bridges, Jr., Richard and James Chute, Jr., Andrew Horner, Stephen W. and Moses Nelson, Benj. S. Picket, Paul Stickney, Jr., and Samuel C. Tidd.

In the second war with England, there were but few in service from this town, and these in the sea-coast defence for one month only. From New Rowley were John Bridges, Jr., David Broocklebank, Edmund Dole, Paul Dole, Jr., Ralph Dole, Phineas Hardy, Thomas Merrill, Jr., Daniel Palmer, Paul Stickney, Jr., and Mighill Spoilford. During the contest party spirit ran so high and opposition to the measures of the National Government was so general in Massachusetts, that the position assumed was but little removed from an armed neutrality. It has been said that the English naval forces on our coast, received supplies by boats from Rowley River. This may seem to have been rather unpatriotic, but perhaps not more so than supplying the Southern Confederacy with shoes, by the blockade runners, *via* St. John, New Brunswick. Fears of British invasion were so rife at one time, that specie and other valuables were taken for safety into the interior. Several thousand silver dollars, the property of a Rowley man, were secreted for several months in Deacon Solomon Nelson's house.

In the Florida War only one person who was living in Georgetown is known to have enlisted: this was Samuel C. Hood, a native of Topsfield. The north-eastern boundary difficulty, known as the Aroostook War, looked threatening for a time, and it was expected that troops would be ordered from this State. These were happily not called for. Charles E. Chaplin, of this town, then living in Maine, was in the detachment of State Militia ordered out, and was in service about three months in the early spring of 1849, at Fort Fairfield, below Houlton.

Before leaving the frontiers, these hastily, half-equipped troops were reviewed and complimented by that stern old martinet, Winfield Scott. At least three residents or natives of Georgetown were in the Mexican War. Laban S. Keyes, who recently died in New Hampshire, was one; also Edward Currier; and a resident of Byfield, was, if we mistake not, another.

To many now living, the excitement and attractions of the "training field" of their earlier days is ever pleasant to recall. Twice the Brigade of Northern Essex mustered on Pillsbury's Plain, near Mr. Humphrey Nelson's house; the first time about 1820, and again in 1822. Several thousand of the militia were present, with General Solomon Lowe, of Boxford, commanding. These October gatherings were made a general holiday, and the principal one of the year.

The observance of Independence Day, until 1835 or 1836, was of a quiet, reflective, semi-religious character, very different from what followed for thirty years or more, when it became the chief holiday of the year, and enthusiastic public demonstrations were made everywhere. Until the date named, an occasional address like that of Mr. Braman's or Caleb Cushing's, with possibly the formality of a military escort to the old meeting-house, and calm thoughtfulness on the part of the people, made the day but a slight remove from a Sunday service. They were too near the actual events to encourage the noisy demonstrations of a later day. For this middle period, the Fourth of July, as a public holiday, had the pre-eminence, but later, under the shadows of our last and greatest conflict, this has been transferred to Memorial Day. Under the old militia law, three seasons for drilling, besides the October muster, were required. Many parades were, for convenience, by detachments or battalions. On the farm of De Witt C. Mighill, in Boxford, about 1814, the New Rowley and the Boxford Militia drilled in companies, having a sham fight, and, as a special feature, a sham ambuscade of fifty or more soldiers dressed as Indians. About 1815, at a brigade training on the Dole or "Esquire Gage" Farm in Byfield, now the Town Farm, Governor Brooks was present, and it was a great day generally for Northern Essex.

When Governor Everett began to express his disapprobation of the general militia system, and the demoralizing influences of muster days, the law soon became obnoxious, and intentionally was made ridiculous by those liable to do duty. Men came to the parade-ground in their working clothes, and these Falstaffian soldiers, in derision, had the expressive name of Stringbeaners flung at them, by the stylish, independent companies, which began to be popular.

Georgetown had, at that time, the La Fayette Guards, a company of infantry highly commended for drill and discipline. By 1843 or '44 most of these military organizations had disbanded.

About 1858 or '59 an independent company, commanded by Capt. Joseph Hervey, known as the "Citizens Guard," was organized, largely through the influence of the gentleman afterwards elected commander, and was in regular drill-practice, when the War of the Rebellion opened. When Company "K," of the Fifth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers went into camp at Boxford, this independent corps performed escort duty. This Company K was recruited largely from this town, and several of the recruits were previously members of the Citizens Guard. On the morning in August, or early September, before they entered camp, a public testimonial, in the form of a breakfast, at the Town Hall, was tendered them. There was a reception, at a later day, with a parade of the regiment through our streets.

Of this company several never returned to the home of their birth. At Baton Rouge, Island No.



10, and at other points near the broad Mississippi, they lie, far from their friends and kindred. Much indignation was felt that the survivors, while returning from their service of nearly a year in the defence of their country, had in the rude provision made for their journey across the country, only coarse box-cars, filthy from use in the transportation of cattle. Many of the Georgetown soldiers were prostrated by the malarial influences of the Lower Mississippi, and the rough ride still further reduced their strength, so that several crossed the home threshold, but to die. Others lived, but recovery was only after a long and tedious illness.

The funeral services of Spofford, Pickett, Sherburne and others followed in quick succession. With C. W. Tenney, the expressman, S. S. Jewett and others, it seemed for a time, that in an unfavorable moment, they also would be swept on to join their comrades. In March, 1865, Capt. G. W. Boynton visited Louisiana, exhuming the bodies of his son George, and comrades R. D. Merrill and Amos Spofford. On his return a joint funeral service was held in the Town Hall, with a sermon by Rev. Chas. Beecher, from the Scripture which refers to the three mighty men, who drew the water from the well at Bethleheim, for David to drink. The little hamlet at "Marlboro'," sent five of its young men to an early grave in the first years of the war, four of whom were of this company. The names of Amos G. Dole, Charles A. Spofford, M. F. Jewett, R. D. Merrill and Leonard Howe, will ever be held in tender remembrance. The first town action in reference to the War was on April 30, 1861. The meeting was called seven days earlier. It was voted to appropriate the sum of five thousand dollars, to aid enlistments, and further voted, a committee of one from each school district, to see what supplies may be needed by volunteers or their families.

Many of the recruits in Company "C," Nineteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, were from this town.

D. Webster Spofford, of Boxford, now a resident of the town, was a private in Company "A," same regiment, and saw four years of service in this hard-fighting body of volunteers.

The first death in the service from Georgetown, is supposed to be that of Isaac V. Bickford, of Company A., Seventeenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, who died in Baltimore, Md., January 29, 1862. He enlisted December 24, 1861.

The Seventeenth Company Unattached Infantry went into camp at Readville, in August, 1864, expecting to do service in the forts around Washington. This company was afterwards assigned to duty in Salem harbor. This was a one hundred-day service, and at the expiration of their term of enlistment many of the men re-enlisted for one year. John G. Barnes, who commanded, had served as captain of Company "K," Fiftieth Regiment, in the South in 1862-63. Many of this unattached company were from Georgetown. The

Fourth Regiment of Heavy Artillery had several men from this town. Several of our musicians belonging to the band of the Seventeenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers were also from this place. One soldier, M. W. Follansbee, suffered in Salisbury, N. C., prison, and returned home but to die. Another, Ariel Peabody, was a prisoner in Andersonville. A few were in the navy. John Spofford and Lewis M. Perley were two of the number. More than two hundred in the different arms of the service enlisted from the town. Memorial day was first observed May 30, 1867. The school children were in the procession, and for many years afterwards, the Fire Department also joined in the observance of the day.

In 1872-'73 the erection of a soldiers' monument began to be discussed, and an aged lady is reported to have offered the sum of one hundred dollars as a basis of subscriptions for the purpose. Finally town action was taken, and after much earnest and perhaps acrimonious debate, the locality was decided upon, and the granite memorial, which very nearly occupies the site of the "Old Red School-house," was erected. The dedication took place May 30, 1874, with an address by W. H. Cudworth, D.D. Thousands of spectators were present. The names of fifty soldiers, dying in the service, are inscribed upon it. The entire cost was about thirty-five hundred dollars.

Post 108, G. A. R., was organized August 18, 1869, by George S. Merrill, of Lawrence, Mass.; Count L. B. Schwabe was largely instrumental in the work. Charter members were C. O. Noyes, E. P. Wildes, G. H. Spofford, J. G. Scates, Solomon Nelson, Isaac Wilson, R. C. Huse, F. M. Edgell, H. N. Harriman and J. O. Berry. The Post was named for Everett Peabody, of Springfield, a son of W. B. O. Peabody. Born June, 1830, he graduated at Harvard University, and was a civil and railroad engineer at the West. While colonel of the Twenty-fifth Missouri Regiment, he was killed at Pittsburgh Landing, April 6, 1862. The Peabody family annually remember this Post by gifts of value.

Past Commanders, C. O. Noyes, F. M. Edgell, J. G. Scates, E. P. Wildes, Cleveland Gould, H. N. Harriman, Patrick Cole, W. E. Day, Charles Smith, D. N. Bridges, C. W. Tenney; present Commander, John Munroe. Other officers are Walter Brown, Plummer Falls, I. S. Dodge, H. N. Harriman, Allen Robinson, Colonius Morse, R. C. Huse, M.D.; chaplain, Rev. C. L. Hubbard; L. G. Wilson, J. F. Harvey.

Relief Corps No. 4 organized April 2, 1883, with Sarah S. Harriman, Emma M. Howe, Emily A. Wadleigh, Jane T. Merrill, Naomi C. Dodge, Susan S. Bickford, Lizzie C. Putnam and others, charter members. The presidents have been Susan S. Bickford, Sarah S. Harriman, Emma M. Howe, Lizzie A. Putnam, Emily A. Wadleigh.

General Burnside Camp, No. 12, S. of V., was organized December 1, 1881, with James R. Smith, captain; relinquished its charter in 1884.



CHAPTER LX.

GEORGETOWN—(Continued).

THE LATER HISTORY AND CONCLUSION.

IN the general history of the town there were but few events of a marked character, aside from the opening of railway communication with Newburyport, Haverhill and Boston direct *via* Danvers, during the two decades from 1840 to 1860. The first road to be opened was that to Newburyport, about 1849. Previous to the final decision to run this line where it now is, a movement was projected in 1847 to connect Newburyport with Haverhill, nearer the Merrimac River, passing through West Newbury and East Bradford, now Groveland, and later a movement to connect with the Eastern Railroad, at Rowley instead of Newburyport.

At a meeting of the town, when but few voters were present, the town's proportion of the "surplus revenue," the income of which had been used for school purposes, was voted in aid of the railroad. At a later day this fifteen hundred dollars in the town assets was recorded by ciphers. In the early history of the road two accidents, resulting in death, occurred. Both of the killed were citizens of this town. One was Benjamin Hilliard, for some years a stage driver and expressman, who was, while conductor, crushed beneath an overturned car, July 16, 1851; the other was Leander Spofford, killed September 7, 1853, by the bursting of the boiler of the locomotive "Baldpate," at Groveland.

The stage-coaches, with the veterans Pinkham and Carter as the presiding genius of each, one of them making Lowell and Newburyport the termini, had reached the acme of their fame, although the first-named still continued his Salem and Haverhill journeys until the opening of the Georgetown and Danvers Railroad, in October, 1854. The Haverhill branch some time previously had been opened for travel.

George Spofford, an expressman between this town and Boston, was appointed the first ticket agent, and the passenger station was the westerly half of the building at the east of Main Street, which was afterward removed to the site of the present station, and was used as the station until the erection of the present building. The easterly part of the original depot remained, and is now the freight house.

The California fever, in 1849, drew a number of the citizens into its vortex. Among them were Messrs. Osgood, Elliott, Hosmer, and perhaps others at the village, and the brothers Marshall, Nelson, McLaughlin and Follansbee, from South Georgetown.

In the early part of this period the Derry Fair, an assemblage peculiar to some localities, was in active operation in this town, once and again. The Essex Agricultural Society held here its earlier annual exhibitions, several times previous to 1849, and again in 1841 or 1842, and not again until 1862, when, amidst

the throes of the War of the Rebellion, this Society continued, under difficulties, to carry forward its chosen work.

The temperance movement began in this town as early as 1815, and was continued in an organized form, as the New Rowley Temperance Society in 1829, with a large membership of both sexes, and Rev. Isaac Braman, president. This broadened and deepened until the Washingtonian movement stirred the country. That in its turn started the Cadets of Temperance, a juvenile body, which existed here about 1844, and the Cold Water Army. The Band of Hope was of later origin, and in the next decade the Good Templars were active for a time.

The Reform Club some years ago did good service here, and Floral Division, Sons of Temperance, although its fortunes have varied, still exists, with a record of much good done.

The stores during the period named did a thriving business. One of the best was that of C. G. Tyler in South Georgetown, who was a skillful buyer, and whose goods were in great variety. This building, now the shoe-factory of C. G. Baker, has had as grocers in trade, Leverett S. Crombie, C. H. Adams, and later John A. Hoyt, M. N. Boardman and T. B. Masury.

Moses Carter in the old establishment, previously kept by his relatives the Bros. Little, did a large business. He made a purchase at one time of one hundred hogsheads of molasses for retail trade, an article used to a much greater extent forty years ago than at present.

Other dealers were Jos. P. Stickney in the Phenix Building. George Spofford, J. Gove Low, and later Nathaniel Lambert, were all in the old store which stood near where Geo. J. Tenney's house now is. Wicom Savory and William Boynton & Son occupied at different times a building further westward, since burned.

The names of Lake, Hathaway, Wilson, Nelson, Tenney, Haley, one can recall in this connection. William E. Wheeler, on North Street, is one of the traders of to-day, as are S. T. Poor, Dennis Donaghue and M. N. Boardman. As a druggist, the name of Bateman has descended from father to son. Wm. B. Dorman had the corner drug-store in Little's Block (now occupied by L. H. Bateman) for some years. He also manufactured colognes and other articles in variety. The telegraph-office is in the drug-store, with Mr. Bateman as operator.

On Jewett Street, at Stickney's corner, the father of Joseph P. Stickney had a grocery in a building opposite his dwelling-house; the latter is now the home of Daniel Dawkins. This store was for many years quite a village centre, for Warren and Jewett Street residents.

This town has never had a celebrity for special agricultural work.

Samuel Little, about 1854, bought the Silas Dole

estate, including the ancient Thurston place, and at once began extensive improvements. He built a barn of an octagonal form, at an expense of not less than ten thousand dollars, the most costly at the time in the county, and expended, it is thought, in varied work, not less than sixty thousand dollars. Since the decease of the owner, and the destruction of this immense barn by fire, in July, 1885, with a succession of peculiar events, much of the expense incurred has to the outward appearance become wasted, and the stimulus to the agricultural interests of the town lost. Byfield at present shows a spirit of advancement and sustains a Farmers' Club. C. W. Nelson, the Superintendent of the Georgetown Town Farm, is president. They meet frequently and are doing a good work. In harmony with this work, was the Village Improvement Society of Georgetown, which existed several years ago, accomplishing as its work an improved condition of East Main Street, in the enclosed square, etc., and the building of several sidewalks in different parts of the town. Deacon Asa Nelson was perhaps in advance of any other farmer at one time, in practically encouraging new and improved farming. Marked changes in methods of farming are, however, taking place. The time was when not less than five hundred tons of salt-hay was carted annually from Byfield and Rowley, for use in this town, while now, perhaps, one hundred tons would be the entire amount. Eight silos have been built, and ensilage is, with a few, a popular food for stock.

Rev. O. S. Butler, of this town, has become quite noted for his public advocacy of the silo, as a necessary adjunct to successful farming.

In July, 1860, the Essex Agricultural Society took the initiative, it is believed, among the kindred societies of the State, in suggesting "Fairs" for the sale and exchange of farm stock and other products, on the English system. A trial day was had in Georgetown, and what is now Lincoln Park, was alive with a practical exhibit of the working of the mowing-machine, then a new invention. The result was very unsatisfactory in the use of the machine, as the grass was wet, and the whole affair was an experiment, not again repeated.

The two lakes, Rock and Pentucket, just on the borders of the "Corner" village, give a peculiar attractiveness to this town, that it seems might be made of advantage to the future growth of the town.

This feature in the natural surroundings of Georgetown is what but few places in the county can show, as most of the ponds and lakes are at an inconvenient distance from the village centres. Both lakes were partially stocked with black bass some ten years ago, but with indifferent success. Experienced anglers say that on the removal of the prohibition against fishing, which was enforced for several years, the "luck" of former times has never returned. Both of the bodies of water are very pure. Rock nestles at the foot of gravelly and grassy knolls, and Pentucket for nearly

one-fourth of a mile, has on Pond Street a pebbly beach, as its eastern limit. The maximum depth is doubtless in Rock, and perhaps forty or more feet, while Lake Raynor (although within the limits of Boxford, with South Georgetown so near at hand as to be practically claimed by it as their pond), has at one point at least seventy-two feet depth of water. This lake, three-fourths of a mile in length, has about eighty acres area, is largely fed by springs and nearly enclosed by upland; has a pebbly bottom and water clear as crystal.

From Baldpate Hill near by, with its four hundred feet altitude, and said to exceed in height any land between it and the "Blue Hills" of Milton, almost exactly south, a wide extent of country is visible; reaching from the White Mountain district on the north to Bunker Hill Monument at the south, old ocean and Southeastern Maine on the east to Mounts Wachusett and Holyoke beyond at the west. The present year, Boston and New York capitalists have had in contemplation the erecting of a boarding house or private residence upon the summit, at some future day.

Little's Grove, a part of the Silas Dole farm, situated just west of the B. & M. R. R., was, for Boston parties and for people from other places, a popular picnic resort from about 1850 to '60. The citizens of this town have had several Fourth of July gatherings in this Grove; the last being in 1858, with music by Gilmore's band. A fine floral procession by the public schools, was arranged and partly carried out, but a torrent of rain marred the beauty of the affair. Abolition, Comeouter and Moral Reform gatherings, as has been said, frequently met here on Sundays and public holidays. In August, 1854, a Know Nothing Convention attracted many; but the day of days was October 16, 1856, when the "Fremont Mass Convention" brought together the masses, who formed a procession of one mile or more in length. This Convention was attended by ten thousand persons. All northern and eastern Essex were well represented.

In the political divisions of the past, this parish was largely of the Federal faith, while Old Rowley had many Republicans. The Republicans, or Jefferson party, gradually gained in numbers in New Rowley, absorbing the attendants at the Baptist meeting-house. Anti-Masonry was not organized, although wordy encounters were frequent with Dr. Mighill and others of the craft. After Jackson and Van Buren, Democracy got a small but tenacious foothold, with Major Paul Dole as an active partisan. Harrison and the Whig party, however, swept the town. The great September mass meeting in Boston, in 1840, was never forgotten by the participants. Those living speak of it now with pride.

The Birney party had a few disciples, departing from Garrison's teachings in part. These were mostly young and ardent men. H. N. and his brother A. B. Noyes early embraced this faith, as did Asa Nelson,



Jr., J. P. Coker, Deacon Moses Merrill and others. In 1845, the Native American faith was accepted by several, and the *Tocsin* read. The "Free Soil" stir of 1848 aroused this town, and the third party began to show noticeable strength. Still it was a Whig town, with Colonel John Kimball especially prominent. The State "Know Nothing" movement, as elsewhere, however, left both of the old parties stranded.

The "Republican" party of 1856 embraced all but half a hundred sturdy Democrats, as J. P. Jones, Esq., the brothers J. K. and W. H. Harriman, Dr. H. N. Couch, Seth Hall and others; and a few voters still firm in the "Know Nothing" faith. That year, Hon. Moses Tenney, who had been in the Senate, was elected State Treasurer, and continued in office the constitutional term, until 1861. The Republicans were the powerful majority until 1864, when a slight increase of their opponents began to be seen in the McClellan vote.

The Irish strength now began to be felt as a new factor on the Democratic side, and continued until the Labor Reform, followed by the Greenback party, checked the rapid Democratic growth.

The Greenback ideas were at once embraced by Captain Moses Wright, who, as an abolitionist and a personal friend of Garrison and all the early reformers, remained steadfast to the faith. He died suddenly, September 18, 1887, at the age of eighty-one years. At the last anti-slavery convention ever held in this town, which was of three days' continuance, Captain Wright presided. It was held in the town hall in the summer of 1860, and was addressed by J. Ford Douglas, C. C. Burleigh, Remond, of Salem, and others.

Oak Dell, a grove in South Georgetown, was originally opened, for a Greenback convention, September 8, 1881, with addresses by J. N. Bullum, of Lynn, Wm. Weaver, of Nashua, N. H., and several others. July 4, 1882, at another convention of this party, the fall campaign was opened, in the same grove, with an address by F. Moody Boynton, which was immediately circulated as a key-note by the press of the country. This party for several years, had in this town a large following both in State and legislative action, but of late has become reduced in numbers.

At a few elections in recent years, some members of the leading parties have, on personal grounds, voted independently, and the result has been the partial success of the Democratic ticket; but, on general principles, the Republicans are still in the ascendant. The distinctive temperance vote is usually a very small minority. Besides the groves already alluded to as noted for public occasions, there was held in 1869 a celebration of the 4th of July, in a grove near the Paul Pillsbury place in Byfield, with Rev. J. C. Fletcher as orator, and also a series of religious meetings in the summer of 1868, in a grove on Nelson Street, near the residence of Henry E.

Perley. The various clergymen of the town conducted the services.

The town-house, begun in 1855, was completed the following year at a cost of twelve thousand dollars. The cupola, a somewhat unsightly addition, was taken down some years ago, which gave an improved appearance to the building. The engine-house on Middle Street, was built in 1875, at a cost including furnishings, of about five thousand dollars. In this building are rooms for the selectmen and the fire department. Little's Block, at the corner of North and West Main Streets, was erected by a stock company in 1871, at a cost of about forty thousand dollars. This elegant structure for business purposes, has its fourth floor exclusively occupied by Protection Lodge, I. O. O. F. The building covers the site of the humble store and shoe-shop, built and occupied by the brothers Joseph and Benjamin Little, about seventy-five years ago. The Masonic block, a wooden structure, stood near the site where the business block built in 1886 stands, and was erected in 1867. Captain G. W. Boynton was a large owner of stock. This valuable property was always rented, and was of three full stories, besides hall-room above. This block was partially burned in 1874, and completely destroyed by the fire of 1885.

The skating rink on Park Street, opposite the shoe factory of W. M. Brewster, was built in 1883, removed in 1886 to North Street, near the mills, and has been converted into a double tenement dwelling-house. It is understood to have been originally the property of members of the Georgetown Cornet Band. This musical organization, with E. A. Chaplin, leader, is the successor of several similarly organized bodies, but, unlike those preceding it, shows a determination to "stick," and reap the reward due to energy and perseverance. Their efficiency is recognized beyond this immediate locality. The talent of several of the members is such that special engagements are of constant occurrence.

The brick blocks of four and five stories, with the narrow space between them bridged, of which the one fronting on Main Street was destroyed in the fire in 1885, were built in 1875. Steam-power in the Main Street building was supplied to both. These blocks extended from Main, nearly to the corner of Park and Maple Street.

The Pentucket House, as it now is, was built and occupied by Col. J. B. Savory in 1825. For hotel and boarding purposes it was first erected, and has so continued as "Savory's tavern," and under its present name, to this day. The original Brocklebank house, afterwards Pillsbury tavern, a one-and-a-half story structure, was removed to the rear, and converted, it is thought, into the "L." Here was located for many years the Manufacturers Bank, into the vaults of which the noted bank burglar, "Bristol Bill," once arranged to enter, but was deterred from his design. On the second floor of the "L" is the hall, which has been



known at various times as Savory's, Mechanics', and Grand Army hall, where, for many years, Panoramas, Indian shows, learned pigs, etc., were exhibited, *ad infinitum*. This hall was the head-quarters of the Good Templars and Sons of Temperance for a long time.

The town farm was bought of Thomas Gage, Esq., in March, 1822, and, including the outlands, cost three thousand dollars. In the division of the town, this farm was included within the limits of Georgetown. The "pound," an important institution in early times, was voted by the parish, March, 1740. Joseph Nelson gave the land to "set the pound on." The parish were to have it for the purpose as "long as said pound shall stand." Estrays were common, and early colonial action was intense against wandering swine, goats, asses and other domestic animals. The pound-keeper's office, now a sinecure, was, until recently, a position of trust, and the "Field driver" had the authority of an English beadle. Personal piques were sometimes taken advantage of by the field-driver, and the frequent result, here as well as elsewhere, has been neighborhood quarrels.

At the present time there are no public flag-staffs, or "Liberty poles," in town. The Everett Peabody Post, G. A. R., have recently taken such action, that the national flag will float from their headquarters in future on public occasions. One in the square where the Soldier's Monument now stands was blown down in a violent gale, July 4, 1867. This was probably set about 1845. There have also been one or two others placed in front of one of the early engine houses, which stood where the grocery of Dennis Donaghue now stands. The first flag-staff referred to, was in front of the Tenney building, now the residence of H. N. Harriman.

On the ground floor of this building were kept the first machines of the fire department of that town, viz., the Watchman and Pentucket.

The annual firemen's parade, forty-five or more years ago, was always quite animated and enthusiastic. The engine-house on Main Street, just above Little's block, was removed to North Street, near the Mills, and changed into a tenement-house. Another engine-house on Main, very near Library Street, is now owned by J. E. Bailey. This, for about twenty years, was occupied by Empire or No. 2 Company. In 1875, Washington No. 3 house was removed to South Georgetown. For some years from 1863 or before, Warren Street was provided with an engine, which was then known as No. 3; and North Street also, where Erie Company No. 4 is still located; this company now has horses ready at a moment's warning, and has reached, it is conceded, marked efficiency. The Pentucket Hook and Ladder Company was organized in 1872. The Steamer No. 1 Company was organized in 1875. Two or three fall parades, with a visiting company, have been held, the last one in October, 1884.

Since the incorporation of the town, the first fire which occurred was March 4, 1840, when the barn of S. P. Cheney was destroyed by lightning. The second was the house of Nath. Sawyer, in 1841 or '42, then just completed, upon the site of which the brick house now owned by L. G. Wilson was at once built. This was an incendiary fire, and was set by John Sawyer, an insane person. On the night following the 4th of July, 1859 or '60, there was a partial destruction of the stable adjoining, and the rear portion of the store building, then occupied by Nathaniel Lambert's grocery. The Dunbar Hotel, which is now the residence of Dr. R. C. Huse, was in great danger, but escaped harm. The next fire of magnitude, was a stable on the same site, Fast morning, some eight or nine years later. The building and several horses were burned. October 26, 1874, a fire occurred in the stable of G. J. Tenney, soon became uncontrollable, and raged from seven in the morning until about noon, destroying property to the value of about one hundred thousand dollars. It was only by aid from other places that the fire was stayed. The residence and shoe-factory of G. J. Tenney, with the store building in danger in the former fire, were entirely consumed. Stables and other store buildings, the old Boynton among them, met the common fate, and only held in check at the Masonic Block and Pentucket House on the one side, and, as before, the present Dr. Huse house on the other. The fourth and latest fire in that same locality, was on the night following December 25, 1885. Two members of the Steamer Company, Messrs. Chase and Hsley, met their sad fate at the outset, the brick wall of Adams Block falling, and crushing them instantly, and injuring several others, one of whom was E. A. Yeaton, who was after a time restored to health, while another, C. M. Clark, a member of Empire Company, died after amputation and weeks of suffering. This calamity was followed by a conflagration much exceeding the former, twelve years before. The fine brick residence of G. J. Tenney went in a moment, after the burning of the Main Street business block, which had the Banks, National and Savings, Post Office, law office of W. A. Butler and boot and shoe factories of A. B. Noyes and G. J. Tenney. Steam power, supplying the Brewster block on the rear, was also destroyed. Again the Dr. Huse residence was the terminus eastward, and the Pentucket House westward. This fire exceeded in loss the former. In August, 1882, the buildings of Amos Ridley, on Andover Street, were burned from lightning. Other fires have been mostly of barns and out-buildings.

The opening of Tenney's field, now Lincoln Park, for the erection of houses, was in 1868. At about that period, and a few years later, Nelson Avenue was extended and other streets opened. Since 1880 nothing of special note in town enlargement has been attempted.

The Georgetown Savings Bank was incorporated in 1868, with J. P. Jones, president, and W. H. Harriman,



treasurer. The office was at Harriman's drug store, on Central Street, which is now owned by G. L. Metcalf. It was removed about ten years later to the Tenney Block, on Main Street. O. B. Tenney, Esq., elected treasurer, who is still in office. Mr. Tenney is also Trial Justice, has been a member of the Massachusetts Senate, a special commissioner for Essex County, and was for many years one of the selectmen of the town. The Georgetown National Bank has been in existence some fourteen or more years. It had originally a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, with H. P. Chaplin as president, and George H. Carlton, cashier. Lewis H. Giles is cashier at present. Both of these institutions found quarters in Little's Block after they were burned out in the late fire, and are now in Union Block.

Of the fraternal societies the Free Masons are first, in point of seniority. The petition of thirty-four craftsmen was approved, and a Dispensation granted April 5, 1867, to constitute a lodge. This was signed by C. C. Dame, then Grand Master, whose name the lodge afterward assumed. The first officers were elected April 15, 1867, at a meeting in Empire Hall. December 26th of the same year the Masonic building and elegant lodge-rooms having been completed, the lodge was constituted, the officers installed and the hall dedicated. Among the members occupying the chair, have been Stephen Osgood, Sherman Nelson, H. N. Harriman, G. H. Tenney, Isaac Wilson, W. A. Harneden, E. A. Chaplin, M. F. Carter, and others.

The headquarters of the earlier Masons, sixty years ago, was at the old Spofford homestead on Andover Street. Twice Charles C. Dame Lodge, because of being burned out, found in the hall of the Odd Fellows a place for meeting. During Christmas week, 1879, this fraternity had a very successful Fair.

Protection Lodge, I. O. of O. F., was instituted October 7, 1868, by Levi F. Warren, Grand Master of Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, with Paul R. Pickering, N. G. Most of the earlier members had been previously connected with the order in Newburyport. Since the founding, the brothers elected to the position of N. G. have been W. H. Harriman, Jos. E. Bailey, D. E. Moulton, J. P. Stickney, J. G. Scates, H. L. Perkins, E. S. Daniels, G. H. Carlton, W. H. Illsley, Fred. M. Edgell, M. D. Chase, Perley Bunker, John Munroe, H. A. Bixby, W. G. Wadleigh, I. S. C. Perley, G. E. Dawkins (Groveland) S. R. White, Henry Hilliard, J. H. Scates, G. L. Metcalf, J. T. Jackson, A. B. Hull, B. A. Hilliard, W. S. Symonds, Clarence Stetson (Groveland), Charles H. Pingree. Present term, G. L. Mighill. They occupy an elegant hall in Little's Block, with the furnishings and all the surroundings in perfect completeness. This hall was dedicated November 15, 1871, by the Grand Master, A. B. Plympton. The number of charter members, nineteen. Present number, one hundred and sixty-nine. This lodge had a successful Fair the last week in February, 1874. A Rebekah Degree Lodge existed at one time.

Good Will Assembly, 2229 K. of L., was organized in Grand Army Hall, September 13, 1882, by A. A. Carlton, of Lynn, now of the General Executive Board of the Order, with thirteen charter members. This order has had as meeting-places, the hall where they were organized; also Empire Hall, a hall in Masonic building, where they were burned out in 1885, and have met frequently in Town Hall. At present they have rooms in Union Block.

The latest secret order of the town is the A. O. of U. W., organized by Clarence E. Embree, and instituted December 20, 1886. Present officers are P. M. W., S. T. Peakes; M. W., S. K. White. Other positions are held by W. Urquhart, F. V. Noyes, A. B. Comins, E. S. Daniels, F. M. Vining, L. H. Giles, A. C. Hall, M. L. Hoyt, L. F. Carter, T. F. Hill, and M. N. Boardman.

One or two other organizations of a local character have existed here in the past, and perhaps do at present. At the outset of the organization of Patrons of Husbandry, when there were but five Granges in existence—two in New York State, two in Illinois and one in Washington, D. C.—the writer labored to start a Grange in this town. He entered into correspondence with an officer of the National Grange (just organized) then living in Ansonia, N. Y., and hoped to awaken an interest here, but could not arouse sufficient to warrant the founding officers visiting us.

Among the officers of the town, one or two names have special prominence. One is that of Sherman Nelson, who for nearly twenty years was a member of the Board of Selectmen. Another, which may have been already stated, is that of J. P. Jones, Esq., for years deeply interested in the schools and prominent on the school committee; and still another to be named in this connection is Gorham P. Tenney, who, as visiting committee, was greatly beloved by the young people of the town.

The first election of town officers was April 28, 1838. Robert Savory was elected moderator; George Foote, town clerk; John A. Lovering, Sewall Spofford and G. D. Tenney, selectmen and assessors; James Peabody, Moses Thurlow and Jeremiah Clark, overseers of the poor; Robert Savory, Moody Cheney and Charles Boynton, constables; Benjamin Winter, treasurer and collector; Joseph Little, John B. Savory and Amos J. Tenney, fire wardens; Rev. Isaac Braman, Rev. John Burden and Moody Cheney, school committee. George Foote's term of office as town clerk was until 1841; J. P. Stickney, 1841-45; H. N. Noyes, 1845-47; Thomas A. Merrill, 1847-49; J. P. Jones, 1849-50; L. S. Crombie, 1850-51, and died in office; Otis Thompson, *pro tem.*, 1851; L. H. Bateman, 1852-55; J. P. Stickney, 1855-59; C. G. Tyler, 1859-60, and died in office; Chaplin G. Tyler, *pro tem.*, 1860; C. E. Jewett, 1860-71; O. B. Tenney, 1871-73, and resigned the office; J. E. Bailey, 1873-76; Fred. M. Edgell, 1876-77, and died in office; H. N. Harriman, *pro tem.*, 1877-78; J. E. Bailey, 1878-

84; H. N. Harriman, 1884, and also present incumbent.

The post-office in Georgetown, formerly called "New Rowley Post-office," was established in 1824, with Benjamin Little as postmaster, who continued to formally discharge the duties in the old corner grocery until his death, in 1851. The original case of boxes is now preserved in the gallery of Peabody Library. J. P. Stickney, who for some time had performed the principal work, with the office in his store at Little & Noyes' shoe factory, was his successor. Samuel Wilson, who lived in the house now G. L. Metcalf's, was the next incumbent, with the office in what is now the store. This was during the Pierce administration. Captain Joseph Hervey was the official for a time, during Pierce's term, in the corner grocery. During Buchanan's term, J. P. Jones, Esq., was the official, with his brother Cyrus as clerk. The election of Lincoln placed Richard Tenney, Esq., in the office and in a building which was located in what is now the yard of the Memorial Church. The erection of the church caused the removal of this building to North Street, filling a spot now covered by the extreme northerly end of Little's Block. Here C. E. Jewett for a time had the office on the lower floor, and with Johnson as President, C. W. Tenney assumed the duties. Dr. R. C. Huse rented the upper floor on his settlement as physician in town. The next incumbent was Rev. O. S. Butler, holding the office for sixteen years and more, or during the Grant, Hayes, Garfield and Arthur terms. The location of the office under the care of this official was in several places, twice at least in different parts of Masonic Block, and after the 1874 fire temporarily in the Pen-tucket House. During several later years a convenient room in the Tenney Block on Main Street was provided, which continued as the office under the administration of the present official, S. A. Donoghue, until burned out in the late fire. The office was then hastily set up in the grocery of Dennis Donaghue, and from there removed to the room of the expressman, C. W. Tenney, and but recently has been established in the new (Union) block.

Of the professions, and partially allied thereto, the ministers have been already named. Jeremiah Russell, from New Hampshire, was the first lawyer. He built and occupied what is now the Memorial parsonage. J. P. Jones, who began practice about 1842 or '43, was also from New Hampshire. He married the youngest daughter of Nathaniel Nelson, and resides in the old Nelson home. His eldest son, Boyd B., now of Haverhill, resided in town for some years after his marriage. The office of father and son is in Haverhill. Benjamin Poole had an office in town some forty years ago. W. A. Butler, son of the late postmaster, who studied at Boston University, also practices here.

Of physicians, besides the Spoffords—father and son—and David Mighill, already named, there have been Stephen Mighill, who had at one time an office

on the second floor of the South Georgetown grocery, afterwards removed to Boston; William Cogswell, now of Haverhill; George Moody, on Elm Street; H. N. Couch, on North Street (at one time taught the winter school in South Georgetown); Dr. Grosvenor, on Main Street; Martin Root, in Byfield; De Wolf, with an office in the Baptist parsonage, who went West; Spalding, now located near Boston, and Drs. R. C. Huse and R. B. Root, the two last-named having been in practice here since 1866. Others in the past were Rogers, Braman and Perley.

The only practitioners of dentistry ever permanently settled in town were Dr. Reed, about 1856, for a short time, and Thomas Whittle, who removed here from Ipswich several years ago, and is regarded as very successful in his profession. Dr. Howard, however, has for a long time resided in town, but has an office in Haverhill.

Photography was for ten years or more the partial employment of W. H. Harriman, on Central Street, in the rooms of his residence, now occupied by Mrs. Hoyt. About 1872 or '73 S. C. Reed, of Newburyport, an artist of genius, took the rooms of Mr. Harriman, and resided here for two or three years. The first daguerreotypes ever taken in town were by a Mr. Atwood, brother of Mrs. David Haskell. This was in the autumn and early winter of 1847, in the house of T. J. Elliott, and in the room at the corner of Central and Main Streets. It is very easy to recall the mystery that most felt at the report of this new discovery, and the peculiar solemnity experienced in sitting for a picture.

If space permitted, some reference to the changes in country life on the farm, and in the country home generally, might be of interest.

It is said that the first cook-stove used in town was in 1815, and in the house of Thomas Nelson, formerly the Perkins house, near Lake Raynor. This was of the old James pattern, and manufactured in New York State. John Wood, who lived in James Gordon's house, near the mills, was the next to buy this help in the farmer's kitchen. Much fear had been felt that the fuel supply would fail, from the great consumption of wood in the New England States, as population increased, and this invention, greatly lessening the quantity needed, was by many at once taken advantage of. The discovery of peat early in the century, for use as fuel, was much appreciated, and was constantly used in many families.

The first carpet ever brought into the town was of English make; was bought by Deacon Solomon Nelson and wife in 1816, they taking a special journey to Boston for the purpose. This carpet is still in use and in good condition. Those journeys by horse and chaise to Boston, and on visits in New Hampshire, were not then considered at all wearisome by those making them. In 1804, the parties just named, accompanied by friends from Spofford's Hill, journeyed with horse and chaise to the springs at Saratoga, then just



becoming known. At many of the stopping-places in New Hampshire and Vermont, they found relatives of their own or other Rowley families, and an acquaintance was easily made.

As we are about closing this sketch, we will refer briefly to a few special agricultural features, and natural productions of the town.

Apples and pears were formerly largely grown here. A few of those original fruit-trees still remain. Their vigorous growth marks a century from the seed. The temperance reform of fifty years ago checked the manufacture and use of cider, and the old trees which had borne abundant crops of natural fruit, were levelled to the ground. Every farmer, in former days, stored from twenty to a hundred barrels of cider, and some also manufactured many barrels of perry. One hundred barrels of winter pears have annually been grown on a single farm on Nelson Street. There were not less than a dozen cider-mills in town.

Of forest trees of special size there are several in town worthy of mention. The Pickett Elm on Andover Street, and the Chaplin or Shute Elm on Nelson Street, must have attained some growth at the first settlement of the town. Of the last named, Mrs. Huldah Harriman, whose memory went back to about 1750, frequently said that it was as large in her childhood, as in the last years of her life. There is a buttonwood, on Nelson Street, in front of the site of the old Nelson house, which was planted one hundred and thirty-seven years ago by David, the great-grandfather of Sherman Nelson. At Henry E. Perley's there are two immense pasture oaks well worthy of note. There are trees near Humphrey Nelson's said to have been set by Rev. Mr. Chandler, and a very large elm in front of the house of Mrs. Sylvanus Merrill, known as the Searl elm.

Some sections of the town, and especially South Georgetown, are rich in botanical treasures. At the last field meeting of the Essex Institute, held in this town, which was at Oak Dell, June 17, 1883, Mrs. C. M. Horner, a resident of this town, and favorably known to students of nature throughout the State as an enthusiastic botanist, said that more than three hundred species of plants had been collected by her in that locality alone.

A brief mention of several persons who are natives of Georgetown, in addition to those previously named, having more than local celebrity, would not be amiss.

Mrs. A. W. H. Howard is a regular or occasional contributor to the press of Providence, R. I., and Philadelphia, Pa. She and her sister, Miss Sarah E. Horner, have been unwavering advocates for woman suffrage for years, and have invariably voted for school committee at the March meeting, since the suffrage was extended to women.

The Searl and Merrill families, in the village of "Marlboro'," gave to the Baptist and Congregational ministry, early in the present century, six of their sons—three from each family.

George Peabody Russell, a native of the town, was a favorite nephew of the banker George Peabody. He resides in England, and has, it has been reported, a home in the Isle of Wight. He was bequeathed a large fortune by his uncle, and was appointed one of the trustees of the Southern Educational Fund. This mention of Mr. Peabody recalls the famous public reception given to him at the old meeting-house in April, 1867, when, seemingly, the entire population of the town were present with their cordial greetings. Old and young entered heartily into the spirit of the occasion, and none more so than Mr. Peabody himself. J. P. Jones, Esq., gave the address of welcome, and Hon. O. B. Tenney was master of ceremonies and introduced the people to the honored guest.

Augustus M. Cheney, of Byfield, is connected with a leading publishing house in the West. He has recently visited the old homestead on Jackman Street.

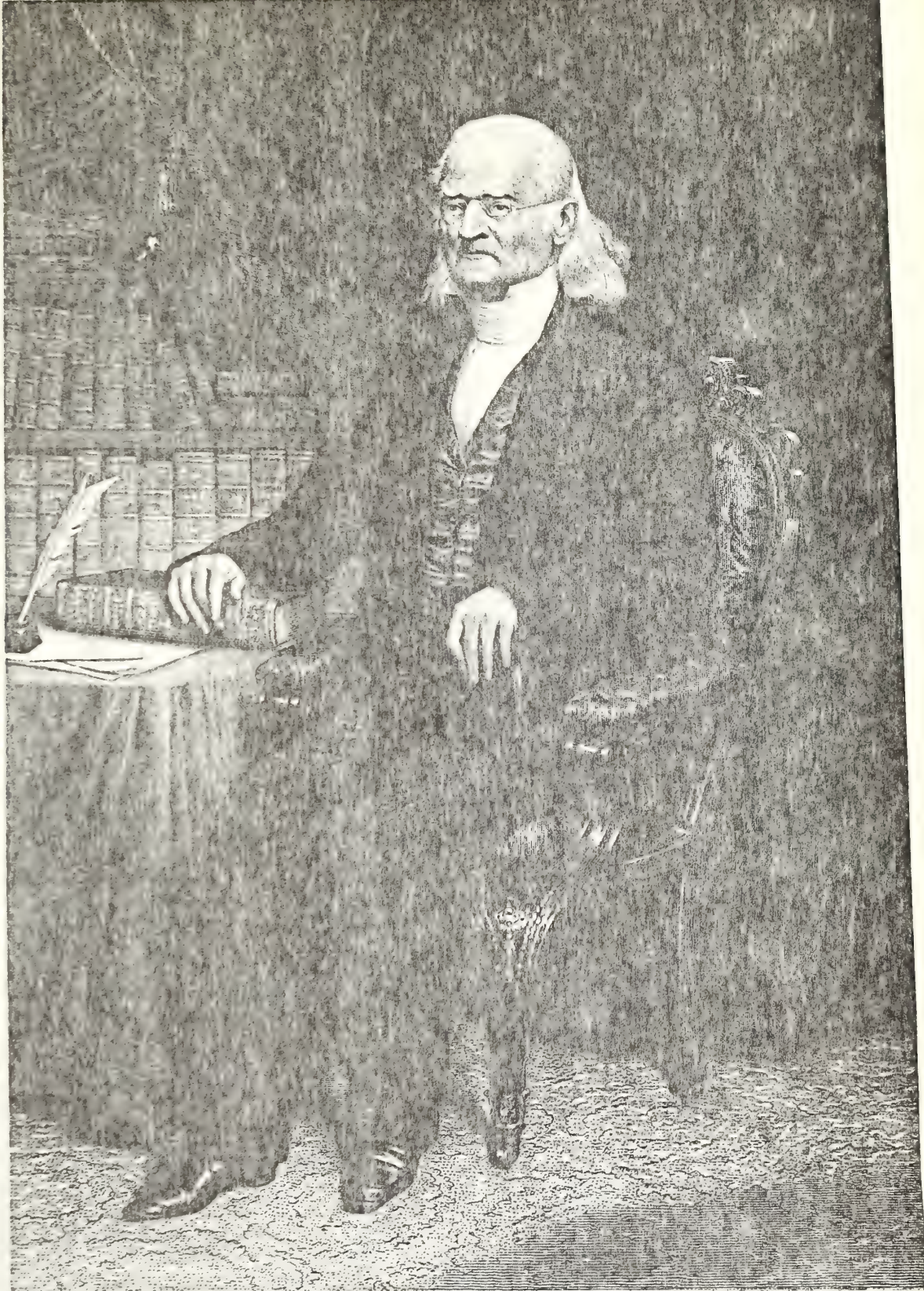
Mrs. Lavinia Spofford Weston, having considerable local fame as a poetess, was born in the last month of the last century. Is actively engaged in composition, equaling in vigor the production of her early years.

Milton P. Braman, D.D., a prominent theologian and a close student of history, the son of Rev. Isaac Braman, was a clergyman in Danvers many years. To alleviate the infirmities of her husband in his loss of sight and declining age, Mrs. Braman, whose maiden-name was Parker, and born, as was her husband, on Andover Street, acquired, after she had reached her seventieth year, sufficient knowledge of the Greek language to read it to him with readiness and appreciatingly.

Lyman G. Elliott is a lawyer in California, who is highly esteemed as a citizen in his adopted State, and has achieved success in his chosen profession.

In recent years several teachers of prominence have gone out from this town. F. E. Merrill, now of Utah, was lately nominated as superintendent of schools for the Territory. B. H. Weston recently had charge of an Indian school in the West, and was at one time principal of Atkinson Academy. B. C. Noyes has been for many years principal of the high school in Dayton, Ohio. N. Marshman Hazen is prominently connected with the publishing-house of the Appletons. As a romantic adventurer, Nathaniel Savory, said to have been born in the lately demolished "Brook house" on Thurlow Street, achieved a fame that but few Americans ever equaled. His career as an island king, and his projected confederacy of the Pacific Islands make a unique chapter in a sailor's life.

As we have already given the list of the first officers of the town, we will here record the names of those who are at present in office, at the close of its first half-century: Moderator, O. B. Tenney; Town Clerk, H. N. Harriman; Selectmen and Assessors, J. E. Bailey, James Donovan, C. E. Tyler; Treasurer and Collector, J. E. Bailey; Overseers of the Poor, John A. Hoyt, James Donovan, A. A. Howe; School Committee, G. D. Tenney, O. S. Butler, D. D. Marsh;



Affectionately your pastor
Isaac Braman.

Georgetown Mass.

Jan 1st 1852

Constables, D. M. Bridges, A. B. Hull, Leon S. Gifford, Frank Riley, C. W. Nelson, S. S. Hardy.

The half-centennial of this town and the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the arrival of John Spofford with the Rowley emigrants, can each with propriety be celebrated next year by the Spofford family at their proposed gathering, so prominent as the family have been in the early history of the town, and the foregoing historical sketch, written just at this time, seems to be appropriate and in harmony with this event.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

REV. ISAAC BRAMAN.¹

Rev. Isaac Braman was born of God-fearing parents in Norton, Bristol County, Mass., July 5, 1770. His father died when he was twelve years of age. He always dwelt with peculiar satisfaction upon the fact that his mother continued family worship as long as her children remained with her, and he often expressed gratitude to that Providence that, upon their separation after her second marriage, cast his lot in a family where the voice of daily prayer was heard.

The date of his birth, being but five years before the beginning of the Revolutionary War, his memory was full of the struggles and hardships preceding and following this contest, of which he gave many interesting anecdotes in his jubilee sermon. He had a great desire, in early life, for a collegiate education, but, his guardian refusing, the matter was deferred. At length he says, "I was determined to break through all obstacles, and accomplish my object. I commenced my studies near the close of my eighteenth year, entered Harvard University in the year 1790, graduated in 1794, being, of course, twenty-four years old." Mr. Braman's modesty prevented any allusion to his scholarship and social standing which were so remarkable that the senior class considered it an honor to associate with him while he was still a junior.

"Having, with prayerful consideration," continued Mr. Braman, in his jubilee discourse, "chosen the Gospel ministry for my profession, though sensible of great unworthiness, I did not long neglect to seek a place where I might study to prepare myself for the work. It is doubtless known to most of my hearers that there were no theological institutions, at that day, in which young men might be educated for the ministry. Those who sought the employment were necessitated to put themselves under the tuition of some individual minister for the purpose. There were several clergymen in the vicinity of my residence, who were in the habit of taking pupils. But there was no small difficulty in making a choice. Some

were called Hopkinsians, some Calvinists, some moderate Calvinists and some Arminians. Between the last two of these, moderate Calvinists and Arminians, there was no essential difference. They both held that men were to be saved by their virtuous deeds without any radical change except what they could effect in their own strength. The other two sects—Hopkinsians and real Calvinists—held to what are called the doctrines of grace, though there were some shades of difference in their manner of explaining them. But against Hopkinsianism there was a strong prejudice . . . I freely confess that I partook of the prejudices of the time and place in which I lived, though I am now convinced that the more intelligent part of the Hopkinsian order understood the doctrines of the Gospel as well as did the most who opposed them."

These are noble words of strength and liberality. "In memory's sunset air," the points over which there had been such angry contention, seemed to the good old man only the "prejudices of the time and place" in which he lived. "I did not," Mr. Braman continued, "study with a Hopkinsian, but with several distinguished men who did not harmonize in all things with that denomination."

Mr. Braman was ordained and married the same year, in Georgetown, June 7, 1797, in a new meeting-house, which had the honor, before it was finished, of a dedication sermon by the great Whitefield, from the text, "The glory of the Lord hath filled the house of the Lord." 1 Kings 8: 11. It was delivered less than a month before his death at Newburyport. It was probably one of his latest efforts, and singularly enough it was preached the very year the future pastor was born. The church was organized in 1732 without a creed, but with a beautiful covenant of duties Godward and manward. This identical covenant is still in use at the present day. The church had but one pastor, Rev. James Chandler, before Mr. Braman's settlement. But in the six years' interval, between Mr. Chandler's death and that event there were sixty-four candidates, Mr. Braman being the last and the final choice of the majority of a divided people.

"Do you inquire," said Mr. Braman, "what got this people into this divided state and led them to think so differently on the subject of religion? I will mention one thing which tended greatly to produce this unhappy effect. There was in the vicinity a theological controversy between two divines of distinction, the one called a Calvinist, the other a Hopkinsian. The dispute was somewhat warm, and the people here, as well as in other places, took sides. Some were Hopkinsians, and some were Calvinists. None of the people were willing to be thought deserving a lower name than one of these; and, having no minister, each party was determined to obtain one of their own stamp. As for myself, I had not studied divinity systematically, and consequently was not

¹ By Apphia Horner Howard.



particularly well versed in the issues which prevailed here, nor in any other theological ism of the day. My object was to exhibit the Gospel in its purity without considering whom it might please or displease. The consequence was that they knew not on which side to place me, and some of the more prominent persons of both sexes favored my settlement, and some of both were opposed. Among the latter, as well as the former, were respectable men and women also."

This candid statement gives a hint of the troubles that met the young minister at the beginning of his career. Indeed, he said in his jubilee sermon that he had "waded through a sea of troubles." Yet they were only the troubles incident to human nature. He survived them all, celebrated his jubilee with honor, lived harmoniously with three successive colleagues, retained his office sixty-one years and died still the senior pastor of the church he loved so well.

There stands in the old cemetery in Georgetown a marble desk, on which rests a Bible open at the words "Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life." On one side are the dates of Mr. Braman's birth, collegiate course, settlement and death, December 26, 1858, and the statement that the monument is erected by his parishioners and friends. On the other side are words which tell the story of his success in the ministry as follows:

"Rev. Mr. Braman was a man of decided piety, of great amiability and much beloved. He possessed a strong mind, sound judgment, uncommon moral courage and remarkable discretion. He was well versed in theological learning, a firm believer in the entire inspiration of the Scriptures, and an able and strenuous advocate of the primitive orthodox institutions and general principles of the New England churches. In his preaching he presented divine truth with clearness and a close application to the consciences of his hearers. In giving counsel, both public and private, he was conspicuous for integrity and wisdom. His love for his people, his friends, his country and the whole church of Christ was strong and sincere."

"In the pangs of his last sickness he was patient and submissive to the divine will, and if not in triumph yet in hope he peacefully yielded up his soul to the God who gave it."

I gained an intimate knowledge of Mr. Braman's blameless and consistent life from the fact that I was born and lived twenty-two years in the house next to the home of his later years, in such close neighborhood that the two families could speak across the small separating yards. Punctually at 2 o'clock every Monday afternoon Mr. Braman, in long flowing gown, left the side door of his house, crossed the yards and appeared at the side door of our house for an informal call on my mother. Great was the awe of the young children on these occasions, often repeated though they were, especially when he was asked to offer prayer.

The engraving accompanying this sketch is a strik-

ingly exact likeness of Mr. Braman, who was a person of very imposing presence, though his clear blue eye always had a kindly gleam for children and young people.

His reticent manner was the result of a shy and sensitive temperament. Those who knew him well found beneath it a fund of wit, humor, appreciation, and all engaging attributes, while his sarcasm, when he considered it merited, was of a fine and keen quality. It obtained for him in college the name of "Razor."

Mr. Braman's punctuality in a neighborly call, to which I have referred, was the habit of his life in all things. It was developed in a severe school.

For many years after his settlement he was without a time-piece. The rigid economy that he was obliged to practice to meet the demands of an increasing family and the hospitality expected in his profession, forbade the possession of such a luxury. Living then as he said, "a large mile" from his church, he was guided by the movements of a neighbor, who was always in season, as to the time of starting, and he was never known to be late at church or on any other occasion. His promptness in opening and closing meetings established a precedent that is still followed in the town, while the tradition of his brevity at weddings and funerals has descended from parents to children.

Mr. Braman was a true conservative. He walked in the safe and beaten paths of the fathers of the church. He disliked controversy. He did not favor speculation. His answer to questions from those who had projected their imagination beyond the written word was, "The Scriptures are silent upon those points." Their silence was to his reverent nature as impressive as were their affirmations.

He shrank from changes. Yet when a new enterprise commended itself to his mind as in the order of Gospel progress he welcomed it. Among the changes of this description in his time was the awakening of interest in foreign missions and the formation of the American Board. The first copy of *The Missionary Herald* was taken in Georgetown. Women, in their zeal, saved money for the cause of missions by denying themselves sugar in their tea and coffee, while little children, before they could speak plainly, were taught to save their pennies for the help of heathen babes.

Mr. Braman, on a farm of about forty acres and on a salary of about three hundred and fifty dollars (then reckoned in British currency) and ten cords of wood, kept his carriage, his cow and other domestic animals.

He gave the three survivors of his five children the best education of the period, and they did ample credit to his care.

One son, James Chandler, named by Mr. Braman with a pleasant bit of sentiment for the predecessor whom he never saw, died in his youth. His father



could never mention his name without emotion. One daughter died in early womanhood. Two sons, Milton P. and Isaac G., became eminent in their respective professions of divinity and medicine. A daughter, the widow of Rev. John Boardman, of East Douglas, returned to her native town, where she became, for many years, an efficient helper in the church, and joined with her step-mother, to whom she was tenderly united by sympathy in the care of her father, whom she survived twenty years. She inherited her mother's beautiful voice and her father's discretion. She was noted for fine conversational powers, and was an ornament to every circle in which she moved.

Mr. Braman was very fortunate in his domestic relations. The wife of his youth, Hannah Palmer, of his native town of Norton, was a woman of beauty, energy, demonstrative manners and great executive ability. She had a high sense of the importance of the pastoral office and gladly assumed all family burdens to allow Mr. Braman time for the preparation of the two sermons a week which were then demanded. Mr. Braman wrote his sermons carefully, and was closely confined to his notes in their delivery, which was with rapid but distinct utterance.

Mrs. Braman's domestic generalship enabled her husband to accomplish in the pulpit, the family, the parish and at his hospitable table great results with small means.

She died in 1835, and in tender appreciation of her worth, Mr. Braman placed on her burial stone the tribute Proverbs 31: 10, 11, from King Solomon's description of "the virtuous woman," in whom the "heart of her husband doth safely trust."

Mr. Braman married, in 1837, Miss Sarah Balch, a lady of wealth, gentle birth and breeding, from the historic old city of Newburyport. She was as well adapted to the emergencies of his declining powers, when the burdens of life began to fall heavily upon him, as was her predecessor for the pioneer period of his ministry. She was many years his junior, and still lives, after a residence in the town of fifty years, during which her course has been so wise, winning and beneficent, that no person was ever known to criticise her. This unprecedented record makes her jubilee of residence in the town as noteworthy as was Mr. Braman's jubilee of service in the sanctuary.

Her face retains much of the comeliness of her prime when she came to the people. It has also the added charm of that beauty which sometimes comes to the aged. It never passes away, for it is the result of a life of sweetness and purity. It reminds one of the heavenly peace which Turner has made to rest upon the brow of the "Lady Abbess," in his exquisite picture of "The Last Hours."

CHAPTER LXI.

LAWRENCE.

BY JOHN R. ROLLINS.

IN the autobiography of Hon. Daniel A. White, prepared for his children in 1836, he writes of his early home as follows:

"The situation is upon a broad plain, nearly equidistant from the Merrimac and Spicket Rivers. My father's farm was bounded south on the former, and north on the latter river—a noble farm of nearly three hundred acres, abounding in wood and rural scenery, in fruits, such as strawberries, blackberries, etc., with a fine orchard of apples at that time in the great pasture, now wholly gone. The prospect all around us was far more picturesque and beautiful than since the woods have been cleared away.

"The rural beauty of the farm, especially that part of it lying between the main road and the Merrimack, consisting of almost every variety of meadow and upland, pasture, mowing and woodland, with running brooks, can hardly be imagined by one who sees it now, stripped bare of its grandest foliage, cut up by turnpikes and made a public thoroughfare by the roads passing through it, and the bridge over the Merrimack, which was first built the year I entered college (1773)."

Ten years after this was written, not only the woodland and running brooks had disappeared, but all the concomitants of the farm had given place to large manufacturing establishments and the numerous streets of a bustling town. It was this farm of which Judge White thus pleasantly wrote, which covered what is at the present day a considerable part of the very heart of the city of Lawrence.

The city is situated on both sides of Merrimac River, embracing within its limits somewhat more than four thousand acres taken in nearly equal parts from the towns of Andover and Methuen. The northerly portion, which is the most densely peopled, is very pleasantly situated on a gently sloping plain, partially surrounded by hills of considerable elevation—Tower Hill, on the west, Clover Hill, formerly called Graves' Hill, on the north, and Prospect Hill, on the east—all of which are dotted with pleasant residences and from which are fine views of the town, the river and the adjacent towns. The southerly portion, which is quite rapidly increasing in population, of more level character, was originally covered with pines, and was, in its early days, known as the "moose country." The early settlers seem to have taken pleasure in bandying epithets, the northern people giving to the portion of Andover lying near the river the title of "Sodom," while in turn the north side was "Gomorrhah," and as far east as Newburyport Methuen was known as "The End of the World," one of its ponds still bearing the name of World's End Pond.

The town is about twenty-three miles from the mouth of the river, twenty-six miles from Boston, ten miles northerly from Lowell and eight miles west of Haverhill. The Merrimack River passes through it, the Spicket through its northerly portion, entering the Merrimac from the north, within the bounds of the city, and the Shawshean River falls into the Mer-



rimack from the south, forming a part of the south-eastern boundary. The last named furnishes no power within the limits of Lawrence. The Spicket furnishes water to establishments in Methuen, and to the Arlington Mills, Stuart's Dye House, the Wamsit Mill and the Globe Worsted Mill in Lawrence. The Merrimack is the principal source of power, supplemented in seasons of drought by Lake Winnipisogee, whose waters, as well as those of its many tributary streams, are retained as a reserve.

The total length of the Merrimack, from its origin, at Franklin, N. H., to its mouth, at Newburyport, is about one hundred and ten miles, and the total area drained is about four thousand nine hundred and sixteen square miles, of which three thousand seven hundred and eighty are in New Hampshire and one thousand one hundred and thirty-six in Massachusetts. The average fall of the stream is two hundred and forty-five feet per mile, or two hundred and sixty-nine feet between Franklin and the sea.

Before the river was harnessed to the cars of industry along its banks, it was well stocked with fish. Shad, salmon, alewives and sturgeon abounded in their season, and immense quantities of lamprey eels were to be found—in fact the latter were so abundant that they were sold by the wagon-load instead of the pound.

Hon. R. H. Tewksbury, in his history of Andover Bridge, relates the following story of one of the directors, who was a large farmer and fond of experiments,—“A spring freshet brought up great quantities of eels, and subsiding, left them high and dry in pools and hollows. He considered the idea of boiling them and feeding to swine, of which he had many. His ‘hired man’ remonstrated, telling him ‘twas agin natur to try to fatten pork with fish;’ ‘besides, Deacon,’ he said, ‘if you succeed, we sha’n’t know what we’re eatin’, pork or lamper eels.’ But the deacon had a cart load of eels drawn up to the barn, and filled the great kettles in the back kitchen with eels, Indian meal and water, kindled the fire, and laid down for a doze. But animals that squirm in the frying-pan would not submit to boiling without protest; the hot water revived them, and each one became an agonizing serpent. They covered the floor of the old room, writhing in their agony and knocking the fire brands about the floor. The deacon nerved himself for the contest and commenced the slaughter of the innocents. An old negro, a newcomer, who lived with a neighbor, and knew nothing of live eels, heard the racket, and, looking in, saw the sea of serpents and fire brands, and the good man ‘laying about’ him. He ran howling home, saying that more than a thousand devils had the deacon penned up in the kitchen, but he was fighting and prevailing against them, calling mightily on the Lord for help. The deacon owned that though they were not Satanic foes, it was the hardest job of his life to subdue these eels, maintain his standing as a deacon,

and at the same time express himself in language sufficiently emphatic.”

The eels, however, were not usually given to swine; they formed a staple article of food for the farmers and others all along the river and adjacent territory.

William Stark, in a poem delivered at the Centennial celebration at Manchester, thus speaks of them,—

“The fathers treasured the slimy prize,
They loved the eel as their very eyes,
And of one ’tis said, with a slander rife,
For a string of eels he sold his wife.
From eels they formed their food in chief,
And eels were called the Derryfield beef;
And the marks of eels were so plain to trace,
That the children looked like eels in the face.
And before they walked, it is well confirmed,
That the children never crept, but squirmed.
Such mighty power did the squirmers wield
O’er the goodly men of old Derryfield,
It was often said that their only care,
And their only wish and their only prayer,
For the present world and the world to come,
Was a string of eels and a jug of rum.”

That the territory now embraced in the limits of Lawrence was once occupied either permanently or temporarily by the native Americans (Indians), we have abundant proof, in the multitudes of Indian implements of almost every variety, which have been found in several localities, and of which some fine collections have been made. One, perhaps the largest of these, in possession of Mr. Charles Wingate, includes arrow and spear heads, stone axes, gouges, pestles and other implements, some rudely and others beautifully finished.

One burial-ground of the red men was within the city limits, in the westerly part of South Lawrence, and quite an extensive one was further up the river in Andover. It is quite probable that the land near the river was occupied in many places as a summer encampment, to which year by year the natives returned on account of the abundance of fish and game. Most of the stone implements found, and the chips made in fashioning them, are of material not found in this locality.

While the parent towns, Andover and Haverhill, suffered considerably from Indian raids, Lawrence is not historic ground in that regard. It is said that the Indians once made a foray along the banks of the river, and a man named Peters, who lived about a mile above the dam, refusing to flee with his neighbors, was murdered at his home.

In 1676 a party of savages crossed the river at Bodwell's Ferry (about a mile above the dam), chased the people of Andover, killed a young man named Abbott, and took his brother captive. There is a tradition that old Mr. Bodwell, while standing near the present site of Mr. Davis' foundry, saw one day an Indian prowling upon the other side of the river, evidently bent on mischief. Mr. Bodwell instantly suspected that he was a spy sent to examine the settlement for the purpose of destroying it. Fortunately, the old



man had a gun of extraordinary length and range, and he resolved to let the Indian report go no further. As soon as the savage discovered Mr. Bodwell he made an insulting gesture, thinking himself fairly out of the range of the enemy's gun. Mr. Bodwell immediately fired, and the Indian fell. At dusk the same day Bodwell took a boat, crossed the river carefully, and found the Indian dead, lying in the grass. He rolled the body into the river, having first secured a valuable beaver-skin robe.

Possibly another instance of savage hostility may have occurred here. It is related in "Chase's History of Haverhill."

"Feb. 22, 1668, on return from an attack upon Andover the Indians killed Jonathan Haynes and Smd. Ladd of Haverhill and captured a son of each. Haynes and Ladd who lived in the eastern part of the town, had started that morning with their teams consisting of a yoke of oxen and a horse, each accompanied by their eldest sons Joseph & Daniel to bring home some of their hay which had been cut and stacked the preceding summer in their meadow, in the extreme western part of the town. While they were slowly returning, little dreaming of present danger, they suddenly found themselves between two files of Indians who had concealed themselves in the bushes on each side of the path. Seeing no hope of escape they begged for quarter. Young Ladd who did not relish the idea of being quietly taken prisoner, cut his father's horse loose, and giving him the lash, started off at full speed, tho' repeatedly fired upon, and succeeded in reaching home and giving an immediate general alarm. Haynes was killed because he was too old and intent to travel, and Ladd who was a fierce stern looking man escaped, as the Indians said 'he so sour.'"

Young Haynes was carried prisoner to Canada, where he remained several years, and was at last redeemed by his relatives. A cane given him by his Indian master, came into possession of Guy C. Haynes, of East Boston, and is now in the rooms of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society. As Haynes resided in the western part of Haverhill, and his meadow was in the extreme western part, this must have occurred either within our limits or in Methuen, which was set off from Haverhill and incorporated in 1725.

Nearly a hundred years had rolled on after the incorporation of Methuen, and this territory had been converted into peaceful farms, occupied by less than two hundred people. Dams had been built upon the Spicket River, and small paper mills and the mill of the Messrs. Stevens, for the manufacture of piano-forte cases, now the site of the Arlington mills, had been erected, but the Merrimack River flowed in its natural channel unvexed by the arts of man, from its source to the sea.

At this time dwelling-houses were not numerous, and, as in other farming towns, were somewhat remote from each other. Most of those on the north side were located on the road leading from Lowell to Haverhill (now known as Haverhill and East Haverhill Sts., and on the "Londonderry Turnpike" (now Broadway). One of the oldest houses known to have been built within the city limits was situated on the spot which is now the corner of Newbury and Essex Streets. One of the old houses was removed to make room for the High School building; another was de-

stroyed to make room for the dwelling which is now 115 Haverhill Street; this was the house in which Hon. Daniel A. White was born. Another stood on the corner of Haverhill and Amesbury Streets. Another was near the spot where No. 264 Haverhill Street now stands. No. 129 Bradford Street, at the corner of Bradford and Broadway, was originally the farm-house of the Methuen town farm. The oldest of all is No. 34 East Haverhill Street, the old house of the Bodwell family, though not their first residence. This house is more than one hundred and thirty-three years old, perhaps more than one hundred and fifty, and is the only monument of early days that Lawrence can boast. "The building has been much changed by successive repairs and alterations, but the foundations are made as if to last forever. The chimney is of immense proportions, measuring twenty by thirteen feet at the base; a modern chimney in the city, one hundred feet high, measures at the base only seven by seven feet."¹ There stands in the front yard of this house a noble old elm tree, which has braved the storms of over a hundred years, and is to day apparently vigorous. It is said that Mrs. Bodwell employed a man to bring the tree, then a sapling, from the woods, and plant it in front of her door. The man was a soldier of the French War, and had just returned from the capture of Quebec. In return for his service Mrs. Bodwell rewarded him with a quart of molasses. The ancient house was occupied in recent years by the late William B. Gallison, and is perhaps better known to the present generation as the Gallison House, and it is at present the residence of Miss Emily G. Wetherbee, who pleasantly commemorates the ancient tree in verse:

"I love thee, Oh! thou grand old tree,
Thy towering branches rise,
As if they held, in majesty,
Deep converse with the skies.
Could'st thou but speak, how strange a tale
Would be thy theme to-day,
About the many vanished years
That God has rolled away.

"The hand that planted thee is dust,—
Thy nurture was its pride,—
And many generations since
Have played their parts and died.
The peltrings of unnumbered storms,
Unnumbered years thou'st braved;
And still we see thee hale and green,
Majestic and unscathed.

"From out your antiquated door,
The children oft have strayed,
And trooped along in merriment,
To gambol in thy shade;
When years had flown, and womanhood
And manhood, brought its care,
Again they came with burdened hearts,
Thy sweet relief to share.

A trysting place for lovers, too,
Thy arching branches made;
When night was silvered by the moon,
And dew shone o'er the glade,

¹ Rev. W. E. Park.



And often, when yon brilliant queen
Did thee and them good-night ;
Thou'st heard the parting kiss they gave,
And shared in their delight.

" A bride, with flowing robes of white,
And garlands in her hair,
Came forth to leave the dear old home,
Another's lot to share.
In purity and innocence,
She chose another life,
And beautiful that summer morn,
Appeared the youthful wife.

" The morning fresh and sweet, and clear,
Began the quiet day,
The birds among the swaying leaves,
Trilled out their roundelay.
And gladdened by the glorious sight,
(Thy branches low did bend :)
Her heart leaped out in ecstasy,
To thee, her childhood's friend.

" From infancy her radiant eyes,—
The reflex of her glee,—
Had scanned each bough and branch and leaf,
Of her familiar tree ;
And now like one who sighs to think
That separation's near,
She turned her saddened face away,
And shed a silent tear.

" Alluring scenes of other climes,
And nature's grand displays,
But made her yearning heart still more
Exultant in thy praise.
Excitement at its growing whirl,
Wherever she might roam ;
But with a longing heart she sighed
For thee, and dear old home.

" The aged sire and matron too,
When life was nearly o'er,
Have leaned against thy trunk, and talked
Of memories of yore,
And watched the same old sun go down,
In splendour in the west,
Not thought how fast the fleeting hours,
Were bringing them to rest.

" Oft have I stretched me here and seen,
With faith's farseeing eye,
Thy very counterpart old tree,
Implanted in the sky,
And wished, when came the silent voice
From onward eternity,
My fading sight might rest at last
Complacently on thee.

" I love thee, Oh ! thou grand old tree,
Thy towering branches rise,
As if they held, in majesty,
Deep converse with the skies.
Couldst thou but speak, how strange a tale
Wouldst be thy theme to-day,
About the many vanished years,
That God has rolled away."

Roads were still less numerous than the buildings. The prominent ones were the old Haverhill road, before named, the road at the west part of the town leading to Bodwell's ferry, near the pumping station, the road at the easterly end leading to Marston Ferry, near the present gas works, and on the construction of Andover Bridge, a road leading from the bridge to the corner of Amesbury and Haverhill Streets. On

the south side of the river were the Salem turnpike and the old road to Lowell. Here was a more compact settlement—the Shawsheen House, the Essex House, converted into a dwelling, the old pioneer store and the brick building occupied by the late Daniel Saunders and a few others yet remaining.

Prior to 1793 communication between the two towns was by means of the ferries. In that year the Legislature passed an act incorporating Samuel Abbott, John White, Joseph Stevens, Ebenezer Poor and associates as a body politic, under the name of "The Proprietors of Andover Bridge," and the act was approved by John Hancock, Governor, March 19th. The charter provided that the building should be completed within *three years*. It was opened for travel November 19th, just eight months from the date of the charter, and the opening was celebrated with great rejoicing—the clergy of the two towns, the stockholders and the prominent men of Essex and Rockingham Counties being invited, and an entertainment furnished by the directors—the militia, infantry and cavalry parading in honor of the event; it was celebrated still further by killing a boy, who was bayoneted by one of the soldiers for attempting to pass the guard. The bridge was a wooden structure, resting on wooden piers, and after a short life of nine years, went down in ruins during the passage of a drove of cattle. It was rebuilt in 1802-03; again travel was interrupted by the fall of the large central span. This was promptly repaired; but four years later, in 1807, a heavy freshet again destroyed it. The discouraged proprietors petitioned the Legislature for leave to raise money by a lottery, but were refused.

The bridge was rebuilt upon stone piers, and moved further up the river, having previously spanned the river where the railroad bridge now stands. In 1837 it was rebuilt by the late John Wilson, of Methuen. It was rebuilt again by the Essex Company in 1848, into whose hands the franchise had then passed, and was raised to its present level by Stone and Harris, contractors, and the piers were thoroughly repaired by Stephen P. Simmons.

In 1852 a great freshet carried away the toll-house, south abutment and fishway at the dam. In 1858 it was again thoroughly reconstructed by Morris Knowles. In 1868, by an act of the Legislature, it became part of the public highway. The bridge was in a peculiarly unfavorable location for durability. Situated near the dam where it was alternately exposed to a dry and then a moist atmosphere, the timbers were constantly decaying, and after many more repairs and partial rebuilding, it was destroyed by fire July, 1881, and a fine new iron-bridge marks the resting-place of almost the only historic structure in the town.

To add to the troubles of the early proprietors, in 1822 other parties petitioned the Legislature for another bridge a little further up the river. In op-



posing this petition the proprietors made a formal statement that the bridge cost originally twelve thousand dollars. In twenty-eight years the cost had been twenty-nine thousand dollars more, with only fifteen thousand dollars of income from tolls; added to this was the loss of interest and their property consisted of an old bridge just damaged by a freshet to the amount of six thousand dollars.

Had the old bridge been charged from the start with accumulations, interest and expense, and credited with income, the actual cost at the time Lawrence was formed would have been upwards of half a million dollars—a practical illustration of the rare economy of building bridges of wood.

The first toll-gatherer was Asa Pettengill, with the enormous salary of \$33.33. He was required to give a bond of £400, and both he and his wife were sworn to the faithful performance of their duty. After thirty years, the salary was raised to \$9.00 and a gallon of oil per month, and the use of the proprietors' cookingstove for \$3.00 rental yearly. Under the Essex Company, James D. Herrick was collector for twenty-two years, until the bridge became free. Among the officers and directors of the old corporation were Loammi Baldwin, the first President, a noted engineer; Benjamin Osgood, of Methuen; Gayton P. Osgood, of Andover; Abbott Lawrence, and Charles S. Storow. The Treasurers, after 1845, were Nathan W. Harmon, Jno. R. Rollins and Henry H. Hall.

LAWRENCE BRIDGE.—In 1854, for the purpose of better accommodating North Andover and Lawrence, and also for avoiding the railroad crossing, at grade, near the Andover Bridge, a charter was granted for another bridge, at the east end of the city, to George D. Cabot and others. This bridge was built in 1854-55, and remained a toll-bridge till 1868, when this also, with the other bridges across the Merrimac, became free. George D. Cabot was Treasurer, and Nicholas Chapman, toll gatherer, from the beginning. This bridge was destroyed by fire in 1887, and will be replaced by an iron bridge, now under contract with the Boston Bridge Company.

As early as 1820, the Merrimac Canal Company was incorporated for the purpose of building a canal, to extend navigation from tide-water at Haverhill to the new town then forming at Pawtucket Falls (Lowell); their charter was extended, but nothing was done toward carrying the plan into execution. An attempt was made a few years since to render the river itself navigable from Lawrence to Haverhill, and much money was expended by the United States Government in removing boulders and deepening the channel at the rapids between the two cities. The Pawtucket Navigation Company was formed ostensibly for the purpose of supplying the Merrimac valley with coal, it being claimed that water transportation could be conducted at much cheaper rates, and consequently that great benefit would ensue to the people

from the diminished price of fuel. By the use of light-draught steamboats coal was brought up the river, and a depot for its sale was established in Lawrence; but from the fact that the river remains frozen for four or five months in the year, and that in summer droughts it could not be made navigable without enormous expense, the enterprise was abandoned. The amount of coal actually transported was not sufficient in an entire season to supply the single corporation, the Pacific Mills, which consumes twenty-three thousand tons per year, or little over seventy-five tons per day. It was thought by many that the whole scheme was inaugurated rather for political purposes than with any hope or expectation of benefiting the public.

Nothing had been done toward utilizing the power of Merrimac River, until Mr. Daniel Saunders, then a resident of Andover, believing that valuable power could be attained at this point, took steps to interest capitalists in a new enterprise here.

Mr. Saunders, who "had learned the business of cloth-dressing and wood-carding in his native town, Salem, N. H., removed to Andover in 1817, and after working on a farm, entered the mill of Messrs. Abel and Paschal Abbott, where he ultimately obtained an interest in the business, taking a lease and managing the mill,—subsequently returned to his native town and started a woolen-mill there, but returned to Andover in 1825, settling in the North Parish, for a time leasing the Stone Mill, erected by Dr. Kitredge, and afterward building a mill on a small stream that flows into the Cochichewick. In 1839 or '40 he purchased a mill in Concord, N. H., and carried on manufacturing there, retaining his home in North Andover. About 1842 he relinquished the woolen-mill at N. Andover, sold his house to Mr. Sutton and removed to the West Parish, now South Lawrence, nearly opposite the Shawsheen House." Here he passed the remainder of his days, ceasing from the labors of a busy life October 8, 1872, *æt.* seventy-six. It was quite natural that having thus been engaged in manufactures, that the falls in the Merrimac so near to his residence should suggest to him the possibilities and capabilities of the river. To him, therefore, must be credited the foresight and sagacity of securing quietly in his own right the falls above the present dam,—known as Peter's Falls,—which virtually gave him control of the water-power of the river at this point. The development of this power would require a large outlay of money, and further progress must depend upon the willingness of capitalists to embark in such an enterprise. Messrs. J. G. Abbott, a nephew of Mr. Saunders, Samuel Lawrence and John Nesmith, of Lowell, to whom Mr. Saunders had communicated what he had done, readily undertook to interest others, and in 1843 Samuel Lawrence, J. G. Abbott, John Nesmith, Judge Thomas Hopkin-

¹ Sarah L. Bailey, History of Andover.

son, Jonathan Tyler, Chas. W. Saunders, of Lowell, Daniel Saunders, Daniel Saunders, Jr., Gayton P. Osgood, Nathaniel Stevens, Joseph Kittredge, of Andover, Edmund Bartlett, of Newburyport, John Wright, Josiah G. White, Joseph H. Billings and Henry Poor (perhaps others), formed the Merrimac Water-Power Association, of which Samuel Lawrence was chosen president and treasurer, and Daniel Saunders agent.

At the winter session of the Legislature of 1844-45 this company petitioned for a charter, which was granted, and the act was approved by Gov. Briggs in March, 1845.

CHAPTER 1841.

"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same as follows:

"**SECT. I.** Samuel Lawrence, John Nesmith, Daniel Saunders and Edmund Bartlett, their Associates and Successors, are hereby made a corporation, by the name of the Essex Company, for the purpose of constructing a dam across Merrimack river, and constructing one or more locks and canals in connection with said dam, to remove obstructions in said river by falls and rapids, from Hunt's Falls to the mouth of Shawmut river, and to create a water-power to use, or sell, or lease to other persons or Corporations, to use for manufacturing and mechanical purposes, and for those purposes, shall have all the powers and privileges, and be subject to all the duties and liabilities and restrictions set forth in the acts and Acts Chapters of the Revised Statutes.

"**SECT. II.** Said corporation may hold real estate not exceeding, exclusive of the expenditures for the dam and locks three hundred thousand dollars. All the whole capital stock of said corporation shall not exceed one hundred shares, and said stock shall be divided into shares not exceeding one hundred dollars each.

"**SECT. III.** The said corporation is hereby authorized and empowered to construct and maintain a dam across said river, either at Deer Jump Falls, or Reddell's Falls, or some point in said river between said falls, and all such locks and locks as may be necessary for the purposes aforesaid, and for the purpose of making said dam, and constructing the main canal for navigation on the river, may take, occupy and inclose any of the lands, cutting said canals and locks, or dam, which may be necessary for building or repairing the same, for towing paths and other necessary purposes, not exceeding twenty feet on each side of said canal or locks, and may blow up and remove any rocks in said river, and dig in any of the lands near the said river, through which it may be necessary to pass said main canal, *provided* that said corporation shall not obstruct the passage of rafts, masts, or floats of timber down said river, earlier than the first day of June, in building said dam, nor keep the same obstructed for a longer time than five months before the opening of said canal for the passage thereof.

"**SECT. IV.** If there shall be occasion, in the prosecution of the powers and purposes aforesaid, to make a canal across any public highway, or a highway shall hereafter be laid out across such canal, it shall be the duty of said corporation to make sufficient bridges across said canal, and to keep them in good repair.

"**SECT. V.** The said corporation shall make and maintain in the dam and locks, and in the canals, suitable and reasonable fishways, to be kept open at all seasons, so far as necessary and usual for the passage of fish.

"**SECT. VI.** The said corporation shall erect, and forever maintain such canal and locks as shall be necessary around any dam constructed by them; the lock to be not less than twenty feet in width, and ninety feet in length; and said canal shall be so constructed, that there shall be easy, safe and convenient access to, and egress from, the same, with fastenings and moorings for the reconstruction of rafts or floats, after the egress; and shall be free, and not subject to any charges whatever for the passage of rafts of wood and lumber, masts and floats of timber, and be used by a keeper employed by said corporation, and opened at all reasonable times, promptly, for such passage.

"**SECT. VII.** The fishways in said dam, and the entrance and exit of said canal, and the moorings and fastenings at the exit, shall be made to the satisfaction of the County Commissioners of the County of Essex, who shall, on application to them by said corporation, after due notice, in

such manner as they shall deem reasonable, to all persons interested therein, and a hearing of the parties, prescribe the mode of constructing the same; and any person who shall be dissatisfied with the construction thereof, when the same are completed, may make complaint to said County Commissioners, setting forth that the same, or either of them, are not constructed according to the prescription of said commissioners; and said commissioners, after due notice as aforesaid, shall proceed to examine the same, and shall accept the same, if they shall be of opinion that they are built and made according to such prescriptions; or if they shall be of opinion that the same are not made according to the prescription, may require the same to be further made and completed till they shall be satisfied to accept the same; and the expenses of said commissioners, in such examination shall be paid by said corporation.

"**SECT. VIII.** Any person who shall be damaged in his property by said corporation, in cutting or making canals through his land, or by flowing the same, or in any other way in carrying into effect the powers hereby granted, unless said corporation shall, within thirty days after request in writing, pay or tender to said person a reasonable satisfaction therefor, shall have the same remedies as are provided by law for persons damaged by railroad corporations, in the 39th Chap. of the Revised Statutes.

"**SECT. IX.** For the purpose of reimbursing said corporation in part for the cost and expense of keeping said locks and canals in repair, and in tending the same, and in clearing the passages necessary for the transit of boats and merchandise, and other articles through said canal, the following toll is hereby established and granted to said corporation, on all goods, boats and merchandise, except rafts of wood and lumber masts and floats of timber passing down said canal, and on all goods carried up through said canal, namely: on salt, lime, plaster, bar iron, pig iron, iron castings, anthracite coal, stone and hay, eight cents per ton of twenty-two hundred and forty pounds; on bituminous coal, twelve cents per chaldron of thirty-six bushels; on brick, sixteen cents per thousand; on manure, fifty cents per load; on oak timber, thirty-five cents per ton of forty cubic feet; on pine plank and boards, thirty cents per thousand, board measure; on ash and other hard stuff, forty cents per thousand, board measure; on posts and rails, fifteen cents per hundred; on tree nails, thirty cents per thousand; on hop poles, twenty cents per thousand; on hard wood, twenty cents per cord; on pine wood, sixteen cents per cord; on bark, twenty cents per cord; on white oak pipe staves, one dollar per thousand; on red oak pipe staves, sixty-seven cents per thousand; on white oak hoghead staves, sixty cents per thousand; on red oak hoghead staves, forty cents per thousand; on white oak barrel staves, twenty cents per thousand; on hog head hoops, sixteen cents per thousand; on barrel hoops, twelve cents per thousand; on hoghead hoop poles, thirty cents per thousand; on barrel hoop poles, twenty cents per thousand; on all articles of merchandise not enumerated, ten cents per ton of twenty-two hundred and forty pounds; *provided* that the rates of toll aforesaid shall be subject to the direction of the Legislature.

"**SECT. X.** The said dam shall not be built to flow the water in said river higher than the foot of Hunt's Falls in the ordinary run and amount of water in the river, and a commission of three competent persons, to be appointed, one by the said corporation, and one by the proprietors of the locks and canals of Merrimack River; and a third by the two thus appointed, shall, upon the application of either party, fix and determine, by permanent monuments, the point in said river, which is the foot of Hunt's Falls; and shall also, upon the like application, fix and determine the height of the dam of this corporation, and of the flash-boards to be used thereon, whose award and determination shall be final and binding upon all parties forever. And if either party shall refuse, after request in writing by the other, for the space of thirty days, to name such commissioner, or in case of a vacancy in such commission, for any cause, either party may apply to the Governor of this Commonwealth, who is hereby empowered to fill such vacancy. And the said point of the foot of Hunt's Falls shall be fixed within sixty days after such application to the commissioners, and the height of the permanent dam shall be fixed and determined within one year after such application.

"**SECT. XI.** This act shall take effect from and after its passage. (Approved by the Governor March 20, 1845.)"

On the same day that the act received the approval of the Governor, a party of gentlemen, the pioneers in the establishment of American manufactures, visited the Falls at Andover, and before the close of the day had purchased of the Water-Power Association



all their right and interests in the Falls for the stipulated sum of \$30,000. This party included Abbott Lawrence, William Lawrence, Samuel Lawrence, John A. Lowell, George W. Lyman, Nathan Appleton, Theodore Lyman, Patrick T. Jackson, William Sturgis, John Nesmith, Jonathan Tyler, and the engineers, James B. Francis and Charles S. Storow.

On the 22d (two days later), subscriptions were received to the stock of the new company, Mr. Abbott Lawrence heading the list by a subscription to one thousand shares of one hundred dollars each; others followed in varying sums—fifty, forty, thirty, twenty and ten thousand dollars each, and less, until the whole amount of stock, one million dollars, was taken, and with little delay, for on the 16th of April following the company organized by the choice of Abbott Lawrence, Nathan Appleton, Patrick T. Jackson, John A. Lowell, Ignatius Sargent, William Sturgis and Charles S. Storow as Directors.

At the first meeting of the Directors, Abbott Lawrence was elected President, and remained in office till his decease, with the exception of the time when he was the American Minister to England, when J. Wiley Edmands occupied the position. Mr. Storow was the Treasurer and General Agent of the Company till 1882, when he was succeeded by the present Treasurer, Howard Stockton.

A very cursory glance at the history of these men will suffice to show that they were eminently qualified for the task they had undertaken of founding a new town.

Patrick Tracy Jackson, the youngest son of Hon. Jonathan Jackson, of Newburyport, was born August 14, 1780; received his early education in the public schools of his native town, and afterward at Dunmer Academy, Byfield. When about fifteen, he was apprenticed to Mr. William Bartlett, a merchant of Newburyport. At the age of twenty-eight, he engaged in mercantile business in Boston, his acquaintance with the East India trade (he had made several voyages to India) specially fitting him for that branch of business; and he continued in the East and West India trade till the breaking out of the War of 1812. At this time, his brother-in-law, Francis C. Lowell, who had returned from a long visit to England and Scotland, conceived the idea that the cotton manufacture, then almost monopolized by Great Britain, might be advantageously prosecuted at home. We had the raw material; and the character of our population—educated, moral, enterprising—could not fail, he thought, to secure success, though England had the advantage of cheap labor, improved machinery, and reputation.¹ Most of us, at the present day, surrounded as we are with manufacturing establishments, are not apt to realize the boldness of this undertaking, or the obstacles to be overcome. Neither machinery, patterns, nor drawings could be had from England,

for we were then at war; and even in time of peace, it would not have been an easy task, since it was but a few years before (1809) that William Hewitt was fined at the Middlesex Sessions in the sum of £500 and imprisoned for three months, for enticing an English artificer, John Hutchinson, a dyer, to emigrate with him to the United States, to be employed in a cotton manufactory; and Hutchinson himself was put under bonds to remain at home. Messrs. Knapp & Baldwin, attorneys at law, in writing of this case, proceed to say: "This is an offence against the law, of which few are aware of the consequences, or of the national loss arising from its infraction; yet it is a statute which—as a nation of trade and agriculture, of the arts and sciences—is highly necessary to the welfare of our country. To have the secrets of our inventions clandestinely carried into foreign countries, must certainly rob us of a part of the fruit of our ingenuity, and consequently reduce the price of labor," &c.²

At this time there was not a power-loom in the United States—mills for spinning were in operation—but weaving was performed by hand-loom. Mr. Lowell associating with himself his brother-in-law, Mr. Jackson, in the enterprise which he proposed to undertake, gave his first attention to the invention of a power-loom. Partially successful in this, he called to his aid Mr. Paul Moody, an ingenious mechanic of Newburyport, subsequently eminent at Lowell. The loom, after some alterations, was brought to completion, other machinery invented, and in 1813 the "Boston Manufacturing Company," at Waltham, was chartered, and erected the first mill, complete in itself, which converted the raw cotton into finished cloth.³ Of this company Mr. Jackson became President. In 1817, after Mr. Lowell's death, Mr. Jackson relinquished mercantile pursuits and devoted his attention to manufacturing. In 1821 he purchased the Pawtucket Canal, and secured the water-power of the Merrimack at Chelmsford, and thus laid the foundation for the town, which was incorporated in 1825, under the name of Lowell, in honor of his friend and co-worker, Francis C. Lowell. On the completion of the Merrimack Manufacturing Company's mills, Mr. Jackson became a director. He was Treasurer of the Hamilton Mills, Lowell, 1829 to 1832; also Treasurer of the Proprietors of Locks and Canals, 1838 to 1845.

In 1830, better facilities being needed for transporting the products of the new mills to the seaboard than were offered by the old-time canal and baggage-wagon, Mr. Jackson, in connection with Mr. Kirk Boott, determined upon the new project of a Railway. They had watched with much interest the proceedings of Mr. Stephenson in England, and the apparent suc-

² See "Newgate Calendar," vol. 5, London.

³ The first mill for producing yarn by machinery was built at Beverly, 1789, the members of that corporation being John, George, Andrew and Deborah Cabot, Joshua Fisher, Henry Higginson, Moses Brown, Israel Thorneilike and Isaac Chapman. This was a brick mill, driven by horse-power, and was assisted by the State.

¹ Mrs. E. Yale Smith's History of Newburyport.



cess of Stephenson's experiments encouraged the Legislature to grant a charter for the purpose of carrying out the project. Engineers were consulted here and abroad, and the first passenger railroad in New England, the Boston and Lowell, was opened for travel in 1835.

Nathan Appleton was a son of Deacon Isaac Appleton, of New Ipswich, N. H., and a descendant of Captain Samuel Appleton, of Ipswich, who commanded the Massachusetts troops in the Indian war known as King Philip's war, 1675. He was born in 1779, and, after fitting himself at the New Ipswich Academy, entered Dartmouth College at the age of fifteen. He changed his plans and went into mercantile business with his brother Samuel in Boston. In 1810 he made a visit to Europe for the purpose of extending his business relations; and while there met with Francis C. Lowell, and became interested in his plans of introducing manufactures in the United States, and on his return was associated with Messrs. Lowell & Jackson as one of the proprietors of the Waltham Factory. He was also associated with Mr. Jackson and Kirk Boott in the purchase of the water-power at Pawtucket Falls, and was the projector and largest proprietor of the Hamilton Company at Lowell.

Mr. Appleton was in the Massachusetts Legislature in 1815, and served till 1827, and three years later (1830) was elected to the House of Representatives in the United States Congress.

On the expiration of his term he declined a reelection, but in 1842 was again elected to supply the vacancy caused by the resignation of Mr. Winthrop. He was the author of several pamphlets on currency, banking and the tariff.

Robert C. Winthrop wrote a memorial of him, in which he says,—

"Persistent courage and inflexible integrity were indeed the two leading elements of Mr. Appleton's character, and constituted the secrets of his great success. To these, more than to any thing else, he owed his fortune and his fame. He displayed his boldness by embarking in various enterprises, by advocating unpopular doctrines, by resisting popular prejudices, by continuing the most powerful and accomplished opponents in all his written arguments, and by shrinking from no controversy into which the independent expression of his opinions might lead him. His integrity was manifested where all the world might read it, in the daily dealings of a long mercantile career, and in the principles which he inculcated in so many forms of moral, commercial and financial discussion."

And in 1861 Mr. Winthrop again writes,—

"Not many men, indeed, have exercised a more important influence among us during the last half-century than the late Hon. Nathan Appleton; not many men have done more than he has done in promoting the interests and sustaining the institutions to which New England has owed so much of its prosperity and welfare. No man has done more by example and by precept to elevate the standard of mercantile character, and to exhibit the pursuits of commerce in proud association with the highest integrity, liberality and ability."

A street in Lawrence bears his name, on which are located two of the public buildings, the city hall and court-house.

John Amory Lowell was son of John Lowell and grandson of Judge Lowell of the United States Circuit Court. He graduated (Harvard College 1815) at the age of sixteen, and commenced his business education at the house of Kirk Boott & Sons, to whose business he succeeded in partnership with the eldest son, Mr. John Wright Boott.

In 1827 he was treasurer of the Boston Manufacturing Company at Waltham, succeeding Patrick T. Jackson, and held that position till 1844. In 1835 he built the Boot mill at Lowell, and was treasurer of the Boott Company thirteen years, and, as president and director till his death, contributed largely to its success.

In 1839 he built the Massachusetts Mills, of which he was also the treasurer till 1848 and a director through life; was also a director in the Lake Company and the Lowell machine-shop. He was associated with Abbott Lawrence and others in the creation of the Essex Company at Lawrence and a director of the Pacific Mills until age compelled him to relinquish some of his cares.

Mr. Lowell was also for fifty-nine years a director of the Suffolk Bank, Boston, and in 1824 originated the system of redemption of country bank notes. He was also one of the fellows of Harvard College for forty years, and for a longer period trustee of the Lowell Institute. He was an accomplished classical scholar, an eminent mathematician, an able botanist and a rare linguist. Generous in his impulses, he delighted in aiding younger men, and was always ready to give to any cause that appealed to his generosity. Such a union of business capacity, literary and scientific attainments, unsullied integrity and unostentatious generosity, formed a rare combination, and enabled him in a long life of untiring industry to do much for the advancement of his generation, and to add a lustre to the honored name he bore. Born November 11, 1798, he died October 31, 1881.²

Hon. Charles S. Storrow graduated from Harvard College 1829, and subsequently pursued his studies three years in the School of Engineers and Mines, at Paris, France. He was one of the engineers engaged in building our first New England Railway, and on its completion, became its general manager for several years, and until the new enterprise at Lawrence was commenced, when he was appointed agent and treasurer of the new company, and at first its engineer. The first step to be taken was the construction of the dam, and this was planned and its construction commenced under his direction; and if nothing else remained, this alone would be an enduring memento of his thorough and skilful work. On the completion of the Atlantic Cotton Mills, which were built by the Essex Company, Mr. Storrow became the treasurer. On the establishment of the first Bank (the Bay State), he was its first president.

¹ See "History of New Ipswich," N. E. H. G. Society Biographies.

² From "Records of Old Residents' Association," Lowell.

And when the town adopted a City charter, he was very appropriately elected its first mayor. In the multifarious duties devolving upon him in the prosecution of the plans of the company, in 1846 he called to his aid as engineer Capt. Charles H. Bigelow, a graduate of West Point Military Academy, who had been captain in the Corps of United States Engineers, and was then employed on the forts in Boston Harbor, and Mr. Storow gave his attention mainly to the financial and general affairs of the company. Having seen the City grow to its present proportions, and the company fully and successfully established, he removed to Boston. He resigned his office as treasurer and agent in 1882, and was succeeded by Howard Stockton, but retains his interest in the company, being its president at the present time. He was, for a short time, one of the Park Commissioners of the City of Boston, and also consulting engineer at one time of the Hoosac Tunnel, and in 1862, at the request of the Commissioners, made a visit to Europe, to examine the European tunnels,—upon which he made an extremely interesting and elaborate report, which was published, and furnished much valuable information in the prosecution of the work.

Abbott Lawrence, born in Groton December 16, 1792, received his education at the district school and academy in that town, now known in consequence of the benefactions of the family as Lawrence Academy. At the age of sixteen he went to Boston as an apprentice to his elder brother, Amos, and six years later, 1814, at the age of twenty-one, he became a partner in the house of A. and A. Lawrence, which, for a long series of years, deservedly held a very high place in the mercantile community of that City.

Under the influence of the War of 1812 the manufacture of cotton goods in New England had largely increased, but the methods of manufacture were imperfect. The return of peace gave the movement a severe check. It took a fresh start in connection with improved machinery, and made a prosperous advance under the tariff of 1816, which Messrs. Calhoun and Lowndes, of South Carolina, were so prominent in framing into law, and in connection with which Mr. Clay first appeared as the advocate of "a thorough and decided protection to home manufactures by ample duties." The tariff of 1824 still further promoted the manufacture of both cotton and woolen fabrics.

Originally importers of foreign goods, the Messrs. Lawrence engaged early, in the sale of cotton and woolen goods of American manufacture, and became large proprietors in the Lowell Mills, ceasing to import, and becoming for a long period the leading house for the sale of American fabrics. When the new enterprise at Lawrence was projected, Mr. Lawrence, as has been previously stated, took a prominent part, and on the completion of the Atlantic Cotton Mills, in which he was a large stockholder,

he became president of that company, and later, in 1853, he was president of the Pacific Mills Company, in which office he continued till the close of his life.

During the year following the organization of the company, and many years afterward, the territory was a scene of intense and phenomenal activity. The dam and canal were constructed, boarding-houses and a hotel erected (the Franklin House), the large machine-shop constructed, saw and planing-mills built, and the entire region cut, gashed and seamed in the laying out of streets, the construction of sewers, building gas-works and water-works, and in sales of land and in planting trees, which now furnish a grateful shade and add so much to the beauty of many of the principal streets.

Their first and most important work was the dam. This was designed by the agent of the company (Mr. Storow), and at the time of its construction, was the longest of its kind in the world. The whole length is one thousand six hundred and twenty-nine feet; distance between the wing walls nine hundred feet. It is thirty-five feet thick at the base and three or three and one-half feet at the top; built of granite, laid in cement, arching toward the stream fifteen feet; the lower course of stone bolted to the ledge at the bottom of the river. Greatest height forty and one-half feet, mean height thirty-two feet, average fall of water twenty-six feet. Three years were occupied in the construction, and it is, and will remain, an enduring monument of skill, firm as the natural ledges upon which it is constructed.

A serious accident happened during its construction, by the partial destruction of the coffer dam. Two men were killed and five injured by the accident, and the engineer, Capt. Bigelow, barely escaped with his life. He was temporarily disabled, and the coffer dam was repaired by Capt. Phineas Stevens.

The first stone of the dam was laid on the 19th of September, 1845, at five o'clock P.M., near the centre of the river, by John A. Carpenter, of the firm of Gilmore & Carpenter, the contractors, and the last stone was placed on the 19th of September, 1848, at 5 P.M.

The canal on the north side of the river, a little more than one mile in length, runs parallel with the river and four hundred feet distant, and on the space thus enclosed are constructed the large mills which occupy the entire territory as far as Union Street; while below are the Lawrence Woolen-Mills, Lawrence Machine Company, Davis' Foundry, Webster's Grist-Mills, the Wright Braid Company, Dustin & Webster's machine-shop and others. The Everett Mills receive their water from the canal and discharge into the Spicket, as does the Russell Paper Company in part, while below the terminus of the canal other establishments receive water by a penstock carried across the Spicket River, discharging into the Merrimac.

The total cost of the dam and canal, including in-



terest, damages, detention to fisheries and navigation, engineering and general expenses was \$525,773.76. The canal is one hundred feet wide at its commencement, narrowing to sixty feet at the waste weir, and 12 feet deep, and is connected with the Merrimac by guard-locks, made of hammered stone laid in cement, ninety-five feet by twenty-one feet each.

A smaller canal on the south side of the river, projected to extend as far as Union Street, has been more recently built, which is sixty feet wide and ten feet deep, furnishing power to the Lawrence Bleachery, the Prospect Worsted Mills, paper-mills, leather board mills and other establishments.

Other larger enterprises of the company were the building of the machine-shop and foundry, the first stone for the foundry being laid July 10, 1846. The main building was four hundred by sixty, and four stories high, built of stone; and the foundry, also of stone, was one hundred and fifty by eighty-six, two stories in height, the two giving employment to six hundred or eight hundred men.

The company also commenced building the Atlantic mills and boarding-houses in 1846, and have since built the Pemberton, Duck and Pacific Mills. They also excavated a lumber-dock, established the lumber-yard, with saw and planing-mills, which they owned and operated till they ceased building mills, when this property was sold.

Among those who were employed by the Essex Company to execute their plans were Hiram P. Curtis and Joseph Bennett, Benjamin and Thomas B. Coolidge, James K. Barker, among the early engineers, and in 1846 Captain Charles H. Bigelow became chief engineer, with the Messrs. Coolidge as assistants. Deacon William M. Kimball had charge of the company's lumber-yard, with Luther Ladd as foreman, the latter of whom after the sale of the yard became agent and treasurer of the Lawrence Lumber Company. The late Abiel R. Chandler had for twenty years the care of the dam and guard-locks (died May 28, 1887), and George Sanborn had charge of the company's repairs from the beginning and is still in service. Among those who as contractors or otherwise were engaged in building were John A. Carpenter, one of the contractors for building the dam, Morris Knowles, Harrison D. Clement and his partner, William R. Page, Levi Sprague, Isaac Fletcher, William H. Boardman, Stephen P. Simmons, William Sullivan and John Hart.

Of these Isaac Fletcher, born in Maine, 1809, was in partnership with William H. Boardman in Bangor till 1846, when they came to Lawrence and engaged in the quarries of the Essex Company, furnishing large amounts of stone for the dam, and continued in that business together or separately during most of the time of their residence. In 1846 Mr. Fletcher established the Monumental Marble Works, now conducted by John Leonard, was one of the building

committee of the First Baptist Church, and superintended its construction, and was one of the selectmen of the town in 1849. He died August 20, 1885.

Harrison D. Clement was born in Warner, N. H., May 17, 1809, a lineal descendant of Robert Clement, one of the earliest settlers of Haverhill, Mass. At the age of eighteen he learned the trade of carpenter and joiner at Peterboro', N. H., and in 1830 commenced work on the old town-house on Merrimack Street, Lowell, and at the Merrimac Mills and Lowell Machine-shop. In 1831 he went to Baltimore, and thence to Washington, where he was employed on the old post-office, then being fitted up. Finding the moral atmosphere uncongenial he returned to Lowell in 1832, where he remained five years, assisting in building the Suffolk, Tremont and Lawrence corporations, and ten years longer in repairs on the Lawrence corporation: removed to Lawrence in 1846, where he built for the Essex Company the fifty tenements forming the square bounded by Union, Orchard, Garden and Newbury Streets, and in partnership with Wm. R. Page (who died in Kansas October 19, 1879), also from Lowell, fitted up the shop over the Essex Company's Planing Mill. He continued in partnership with Mr. Page four years, engaged in building principally for the Essex Company, boarding-house blocks, also mechanics' tenements for the Atlantic corporation, the First Baptist Church and dwelling-houses. In 1851 the partnership was dissolved, and for five years Mr. Clement was engaged in building the boarding-house blocks and overseers' tenements for the Pacific, Pemberton and other corporations, a portion of the Oliver School-House, and private dwelling-houses in Lawrence and elsewhere. In 1856 he entered into partnership with Leonard F. Creasy, and continued and extended the building of boarding-houses and tenements for the Everett and Washington corporations, store-houses and tenements for the paper-mills, etc. They also extended their operations beyond Lawrence, building the larger class of buildings, such as churches, school-houses, court-houses, hotels and bank buildings, and government buildings in the navy yards at Kittery, Charlestown and Norfolk, Va. The partnership with Mr. Creasy continued for twenty years, from 1856 to 1876. He remained, however, a silent partner in the firm of Creasy & Noyes, who built the Insane Asylum at Danvers, and a cotton-mill at Dover, N. H. After the dissolution of this late partnership, Mr. Clement engaged in rebuilding a portion of the Old Catholic Cathedral at Cape Haytien, for the Republic of Hayti, which had been in ruins for many years.

He had neither time nor ambition for practical honors, but served one year as an assessor of taxes, and represented the city in the Legislature in 1861 and 1862. Mr. Clement died 1886.

Hon. James K. Barker was born in Londonderry, May, 1817, removed to Methuen, 1838, where he was employed as a teacher in the public schools (and as



master in one of the earliest terms of the grammar-school in Lawrence, studied engineering and architecture, and in 1845 removed to Lawrence and entered the service of the Essex Company, and after remaining with the company several years, opened an office on his own account. Most of the streets and building lots and sewers up to the time of his decease were surveyed and laid out by him, and he was the architect of the Court-house and Central Block. He was several years a member of the school committee, and in 1860 was elected mayor, serving during the first year of the war. Died January 13, 1868.

Morris Knowles, born in Northwood, N. H., came hither, also from Lowell, where he had been employed, and superintended all the wood-work of the large machine-shop buildings, and of all the large mills except the Bay State, and during the past year has been actively at work for the Arlington Company.

Stephen P. Simmons, a native of Rhode Island, came to Lawrence in 1847. He assisted in work on the dam, built the stone chimney of the Lawrence Machine-Shop Company, and other large amounts of stone-work for the Essex Company. He also constructed Grace Episcopal Church, the stone church at Methuen and the foundations of the Lawrence jail.

William Sullivan was contractor for most of the excavation and filling during the construction of the large mills and boarding-houses.

Levi Sprague constructed the brick-work of the Atlantic mills and boarding-houses, and of the fifty brick tenements of the machine-shop, and was largely engaged otherwise in early building.

The first cashier of the company during its earliest and busiest years was Geo. D. Cabot, who resigned in January, 1853, and after a short period of rest became agent of the Lawrence Gas Company. He was succeeded by John R. Rollins who remained somewhat more than eleven years till the summer of 1864, when Henry H. Hall became cashier, succeeded by Hon. Robert H. Tewksbury. Present organization,—Hon. Chas. S. Storrow, president; Howard Stockton, treasurer; Hiram F. Mills, chief engineer.

The first dwelling-houses erected after the incorporation of the company, were built by them on the westerly side of Broadway—one of which was occupied by Mr. and Mrs. Timothy Osgood, who for many years, there and later in another part of the city, kept an exceedingly good and popular boarding-house.

The first sale of land was made in April, 1846, to Samuel T. Merrill, who came from Georgetown, and on this he erected the first dwelling-house in town after those built by the Essex Company—others followed rapidly. But many came without pecuniary means, among them many Irish laborers, who must in some way be provided for—for them the Essex Company furnished a large tract on the south side of the river near the dam on which they might erect shanties, only on condition that liquors should not be sold on the premises. And the settlement thus

formed with its quaint narrow avenues and rustic division fences was one of the most interesting spots in Lawrence, one which visiting strangers were always pleased to see.

These shanties were originally erected on the north side, but as the water was raised by the construction of the dam, and the territory west of the railroad was occasionally overflowed, the occupants removed to the south side to higher and dryer ground.

The writer has pleasant recollections of one of these men who was among the earliest to build a tasteful cottage, about which he arranged a pretty flower garden, and surrounded the premises with a neat, well-painted fence; the interior was as well arranged as the exterior, and he took much pride in this effort; some of his neighbors, however, thought he was "putting on too many airs," and annoyed him at first by defacing his work. This did not long continue; their own ambition was stimulated, others purchased, new streets laid out, and the original shanties in a few years gave place entirely to substantial buildings.

The first brick store buildings were erected by J. N. Gage on the south side near the bridge in September, 1846.

The first on the north side by Albert and Joseph Smith and Daniel Floyd, on Common Street, below Newbury.

Among the pioneers was Amos D. Pillsbury, of Georgetown, who came to procure a shop for the manufacture and repair of boots and shoes; but finding no place wherein to commence work, he went to Newburyport, purchased a gondola, thirty-two by twelve feet, on which he built a "State-room," put in a stock of boots and shoes, leather, tools, cooking apparatus and provisions, arrived at the "New City" just before the first land sale, anchored in the river below the bridge, threw out his plank and commenced work. Here he continued till cold weather, when he removed to a store on Essex Street, which was then ready for his occupancy.

He built, in 1847, a building near the lower end of Common Street, and while Mr. H. D. Clement was building a house for his own use near by, he boarded with him for a short time. In a paper read before the Old Residents' Association, Mr. Clement thus speaks of him: "By persistent interviews with the proprietor I learned that the building was intended for the promotion of the arts and sciences, and for the physical, mental and moral improvement of wayfaring men, and was to be called the Montezuma House. The builder himself was a problem past finding out. From his knowledge of ancient lore, and his love of the fine arts, he might have been a pupil of some of the old masters. From his apt quotations of Scripture, his fluency of speech and his broad philosophy, he might have been mistaken for a clergyman, while from his good looks, his pleasing manners and his generous sympathy for all man and womankind, he might have been taken for one of our pioneer physicians; and



from his knowledge of law and politics, and his skill in mystifying the truth, he might have been taken for one of our early Lawrence lawyers. He must have been intended by nature for one of our greatest men, with some unaccountable mistake made in finishing. As the building progressed, I noticed the absence of plan or system, and the eccentric oddity of its owner, conspicuous in all its parts. The frame from its odd appearance, might have done service at some remote age in the past; the usual order of proceeding was reversed by commencing at the top and leaving off at the cellar, it being raised and the roof covered before the cellar was dug, and although I could not understand the principle of gravitation and cohesion that was to keep it up and together, yet he could explain it in the most satisfactory way. After a slight application of Spanish brown paint, and the word *Montezuma* in large letters somewhere, though not where one would expect to see it, the building was completed.

"I sought shelter there late one night, was kindly received by the proprietor, who seemed to combine within himself the offices of usher, steward, male and female waiters, and sometimes hostler, was shown to a very small room, and was soon asleep, without examining the surroundings. On waking the next morning I found the room had been newly plastered the day previous, the bed clothes wet and slightly frozen, and myself with a cold in the head, but thought myself fortunate in being able to obtain such accommodations, and secured them until my own house should be finished.

"The furniture was of unique style and of ancient date, each piece having a history of its own. The ornaments were numerous and varied, consisting largely of mottoes and emblems, both sacred and profane, usually a mixture of both which none could explain or interpret so well as the host himself. He had also in and about the premises a good supply of cats, dogs, fowls of various kinds, also several kinds of wild animals, whose habits he could explain admirably when he chose to do so, which was not often.

The tables were an important part of the domestic arrangements, as all seemed to be hungry at that time, though there were not so many thirsty ones as appeared later, and although it was a mystery sometimes hard to solve whether our food was flesh, fish or fowl, and harder yet to learn how it was cooked, and though we could find no fault with the tea or coffee, not knowing the name of the liquid set before us, it all served an excellent purpose and was sure to find a ready market.

There was a furnished room in the basement front, but for what purposes it was used were beyond my ability to discover. Some inquiries were made if liquor was not sold there, but I think there could not be, as liquor selling and liquor drinking seemed to be the special abhorrence of the proprietor, and I looked in several times without seeing any signs of the traffic;

besides there was an emblem hanging on the wall which forbade such a conclusion: it was a painted circle with a black dot near the lower edge, which by his interpretation signified departed spirits. From some of the religious mottoes on the wall, and the free quotations of Scripture by the proprietor, the company might sometimes be taken for a religious class-meeting; from the pictures of fast horses and rare animals, and the appearance of the company at other times they might have been considered sporting characters; while from the mysterious emblems around, and in connection with remarks and explanations thereon by the owner, they might have been mistaken for a branch of the Concord School of Philosophy.

Horace Greeley visited the new city about this time, and on inquiring for the first class hotel was referred by the hackman to the Shawsheen house, and asking if they sold liquor there was answered "yes." On inquiring for the second class hotel he was referred to the Oak Street House, and repeating his inquiry was again answered in the affirmative, and on inquiring for the next house was referred to the Montezuma, and asking the same question was answered in the negative, and the coachman was ordered to drive him there. I did not witness his reception, but it must have been interesting if the host knew his guest. If this original genius did not know how to keep a hotel he certainly knew many other things, and I feel sure we shall never look upon his like again. After leaving Lawrence he purchased an island near where Rowley River enters Plum Island Sound, where he spends his later days with some congenial spirits and calls it the Isle of Patmos.

The first dry goods dealer on the ground was Artemas W. Stearns (born in Hill, N. H.), who opened a store on Amesbury Street in 1846. Mr. Stearns erected the building on Essex Street in 1854, which he still occupies, actively engaged in business. The building was enlarged in 1877, and is being still further enlarged and improved, 1887, presenting one of the finest fronts on the street.

The oldest clothing dealer in the city is Captain William R. Spalding (born in Milton, N. H.), who came also in 1846, and still continues in the business.

Another early trader was John C. Dow, who opened and conducted for several years a book and stationery store. John Colby opened one a few months previously. Mr. Dow subsequently (1872) changed to his present business, a dealer in crockery and glassware.

Among the early physicians and surgeons the first to settle here was Dr. Moses L. Atkinson, born in Newbury, Mass., July 14, 1814, graduated at Dartmouth College, 1838, and Harvard Medical School, 1844; commenced practice in Lawrence, 1846, and died July 13, 1852, aged thirty-eight. Others early on the ground were J. S. Curtis, E. W. Morse, G. W. Sanborn, J. Brown, Charles Murch, E. B. Allen, A. D.



Blanchard, who relinquished practice for other business; William D. Lamb, who has retired from practice and removed to Southbridge; Julius H. Morse, deceased; Seneca Sargent, born 1803, commenced practice 1826, one of the first settlers of Lawrence, where he died August 7, 1873; Isaac Tewksbury, born 1795, studied with Dr. Robinson, of West Newbury, and Kittredge, of Andover, commenced practice in New Hampshire, 1817, came to Lawrence 1847, was in continuous practice between sixty and seventy years; Aaron Ordway, born 1814, came to Lawrence, 1847, as an apothecary and botanic physician, and continued in the business for about twenty-five years, retiring and devoting himself to other pursuits; David Dana graduated from Harvard Medical School 1847, and after practicing a year in public institutions in Boston came to Lawrence, and is the only one remaining of the early physicians now in active practice. He served in the Civil War two years as surgeon of the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery; he was the first city physician of Lawrence, and also the first appointed for the jail and house of correction.

Among the early attorneys were Daniel Saunders, Jr., who was on the ground before the Essex Company was formed, mayor in 1860; Joseph Couch, the first trial justice; Henry Flanders, afterwards somewhat prominent in Philadelphia; Charles Stark Newell, who removed to New York City; Dan. Weed, who removed to Washington, where he died September 5, 1884; Perley S. Chase; Joseph F. Clark; Thomas A. Parsons, retired to a farm in Derry, N. H.; David J. Clark, graduated at Dartmouth College 1836, came to Lawrence 1847, removed to Manchester, N. H., 1850, in partnership with his brother, Hon. Daniel Clark, was postmaster at Manchester 1866, deceased; Ivan Stevens, graduated at Dartmouth College 1842, read law with Hon. James Bell and Hon. Amos Tuck, commenced practice in Lawrence 1846, died April, 1880; Thomas Wright, born in Lowell, educated at Harvard University, studied law with his father, a very prominent lawyer in Lowell, came to Lawrence 1846, represented the city in the Massachusetts House of Representatives, and the district four times in the Senate; Wm. H. P. Wright, brother of the preceding, educated at Cambridge, came to Lawrence 1847, continued his studies with Hon. Daniel Saunders and with Wright & Flanders, was in partnership with his brother till 1861, when he was elected mayor and served with earnestness and marked ability during two years of the war, represented the city in the Legislature 1867-68, and was one of the associate justices of the Police Court; Benjamin Boardman; Benjamin W. Ball; Nathan W. Harmon.¹

None of the preceding now remain in Lawrence except Mr. Saunders and Judge Wright.

The first grocery store was opened in 1845, on the south side of the river, by Josiah Crosby, of Billerica.

This was the only store of its kind for nearly six months, and its ledger contained upwards of six hundred names before another store was opened. In addition to groceries Mr. Crosby appears to have been the first ice dealer, offering to supply ice from his two ice houses, one situated on the south side of the river below his store, the other at his farm in North Andover, filled with "lake ice." This store and stock was purchased in 1850 by Joseph Shattuck, who, with his brother, Charles W. Shattuck, have conducted the business since, first at South Lawrence, and later in a new brick building built by them on Essex Street, till 1887, when they retired, and were succeeded by Henry A. Buell & Co., who had elsewhere in the city been long engaged.

Another early dealer was Charles Smith, who came early from Lowell and yet remains here, having also retired after a very active and busy life.

The first lumber dealer, Mr. Hezekiah Plummer, born in that part of Andover now included in Lawrence. He was engaged in the manufacture of sashes and blinds, &c., in 1846, but soon erected a steam mill in South Lawrence for supplying lumber for the growing wants of the new town. Besides those not elsewhere mentioned many others have been prominent, many of them residents for a long period and actively engaged in business, contributing their share to its material growth and prosperity. Among them may be named one of the earliest dealers in dry goods, Joseph O'Hea Cantillon, born in Ireland, 1810, came to Lawrence, 1846, was a leading spirit among his countrymen and popular with all classes; he was a very active man in temperance work and public affairs, and was one of the board of assessors in 1854. He removed to the West, was at one time mayor of the city of Dubuque, Iowa, died in 1879. John J. Doland, born in Derry, N. H., August 29, 1826, came to Lawrence, 1849, from Manchester, where he had been employed in the Amoskeag Mills. He was an overseer in the Atlantic Mills till 1871. Mr. Doland was a descendant of patriotic ancestors, and is the oldest lineal descendant of one who fought in the Revolutionary War. He was a member of the distinguished military order of the Cincinnati. Eben L. Chapman, J. Merrill Currier, Milton Bonney* (mayor in 1865), William P. Clark, Peter Holihan, Patrick Sweeney, Jordan Bros., Henry M. Whitney, J. P. Kent,* William H. Bridgman,* Dana Sargent (afterward mayor of Nashua, died November 23, 1884), John Beetle (died June 20, 1879), John F. Bingham, George B. Smart, John Kiley,* John B. Atkinson,* Alonzo Briggs (deputy sheriff), Martin Bros., Albin Yeaw, Charles R. Mason, E. J. Mason (died December 4, 1880), David S. Swan,* James A. Treat (died April 24, 1886), Henry Barton, Byron Truell (House of Representatives 1875, 1876, Senator 1877, 1878), Simpson & Oswald, Rufus Reed (died 1886), Charles

¹ See Chapter II. Bench and Bar.

* Deceased.



A. Brown (now of Portland), Joseph Norris,* Carney Bros., William A. Kimball* (died March 6, 1880), J. Smith Field, Horatio Smith,* Amasa Bryant,* John Gale,* A. A. Lamprey, James R. Simpson (mayor 1878, '79, '80, '85), J. G. Abbott, J. Clinton White, M. P. Merrill* (many years an assessor, died June 14, 1886), Levi Emery,* George W. Hills, John F. Cogswell, William E. Gowing, Lawson Rice, Robert R. Whittier, Robert M. Bailey, N. B. Gordon. Another of the oldest residents is Samuel M. Davis, who was an engineer on the Boston and Maine Railroad, came to Lawrence in 1847, and ran the first locomotive into town over the new railroad bridge. Captain John Smith, one of the earliest, who came in 1845, died September 19, 1879, aged eighty-seven. Ford Bros., Joseph Stowell, Albert Emerson, G. W. Chandler, Walker* and Freeman Flanders, H. J. Couch, Alonzo Winkley, John Daly, Henry A. Prescott and Moses Wingate.

The first marriage in town took place May 15, 1847. The parties were Mr. James M. Currier of Lawrence and Miss Mary E. Libbey of Conway, N. H. Rev. John C. Phillips was the officiating clergyman. The first public marriage occurred October 17, 1847, at the Baptist Chapel. Mr. Edwin R. Gage of Lawrence and Mrs. Abby B. Richardson of Methuen were married by Rev. John G. Richardson of the Baptist Church.

Mr. William W. Dean of the firm of Dean & Hazeltine, on Broadway, is the first child born of American parents in Lawrence, having been born in April, 1847. Mr. A. Joplin of Hampton comes next, who was born in February, 1848.

To go further into details, or to name even the various merchants and mechanics who have grown with the growth of the town and city would be making a directory, which would be foreign to the purpose of the present article.

During the first years, communication with the outside world was by means of the old-fashioned stage-coaches.

* See a REGISTER for 1847.

"For Manchester, Tuesday, Thursday and Saturday 8½ A. M., L. W. Currier, Driver.

"For Salem, every day except Sunday at 2½ P. M., Shackley & Clement, Proprietors.

"For Lowell, every day 6 and 10 A. M., 2½ and 4 P. M., and on Sunday 8 A. M., Currier & Abbey, Proprietors, Chamberlain & Charles, Drivers.

"For Andover, 6½, 8, 10 A. M.; 2½, 5½ P. M., Morrison & Lougee, Proprietors & Drivers."

Boston and Maine Railroad was extended into Lawrence early in 1848. Lowell and Lawrence Railroad was opened July 2, 1848, and extended to North Lawrence in 1879. Essex Railroad to Salem opened September 4, 1848. Manchester and Lawrence completed October, 1849. The Merrimack Valley Horse Railroad was incorporated in 1863, charter renewed 1866. The incorporators were George D. Cabot, Wm.

H. P. Wright and Wm. R. Spalding, and the road was opened for travel from the Paper-Mills to Methuen, 1867; extended to North Andover, 1868; and to South Lawrence, 1876. Additional facilities for travel have been furnished by further extensions in 1887. The enterprise of doubtful issue at first has proved remunerative, and the stock has advanced materially in value. Wm. A. Russell has been president and James H. Eaton treasurer from the beginning.

HOTELS.—Before operations commenced by the Essex Company, there were two hotels, the Shawsheen House (now called Revere) and the Essex House, since converted into a dwelling-house, situated in South Lawrence, on the old Londonderry turnpike (now Broadway). The first hotel built by the company, the Franklin House, was opened November 1, 1847, by Major T. J. Coburn, previously of the Eastern Exchange Hotel, Boston. It has been since kept by J. L. Huntress, Charles B. Melvin, Jefford M. Decker, Col. Larrabee (formerly of the Merrimack House, Lowell), Thomas W. Huse and is now conducted by Mrs. C. E. Huse.

The Merrimack House was built about the same time at the corner of Broadway and Tremont Street; this was burned in 1849 and was not rebuilt. The United States, another large building in Essex Street, nearly completed but not occupied, was also burned in 1859. It was somewhat imposing in its external appearance, but very cheaply built, and almost as soon as touched by fire fell in ruins, as it deserved, but unfortunately causing the loss of life of three persons.¹ Hotels have since multiplied, and we have now on the main business street the Essex, Central and Brunswick, besides many others of less prominence in other parts of the city.

The Lawrence post-office was opened for the first time September 7, 1846, by George A. Waldo, postmaster. He remained in office three years. William Pierce, of Andover, followed for six months, when Nathaniel Wilson followed and served four years. Mr. Wilson was the first druggist in town, and was for eight years city treasurer. By a change of administration Major B. F. Watson became postmaster, and held the office eight years. He was succeeded by Major George S. Merrill, who retained the position twenty-six years, from 1861 to 1887, when Patrick Murphy, who had been city treasurer from 1883, was appointed to the place.

From the first sale of lands, April 28, 1846, to October 10, 1846, the growth of the new settlement had been so rapid that the population had increased from less than two hundred to about twenty-five hundred, and there had been erected one hundred and thirty-five stores, shops and dwelling-houses. The obvious inconvenience of taxation, education, etc., in two sep-

¹ George Stanley, a printer; Frank Henry, auctioneer; Lyman H. Larkin, mill-hand.

* Deceased.



arate townships led to a petition to the Legislature for a charter for a new town; this petition was opposed by the town of Methuen.

As early as February, 1847, a town-meeting was called to see what action the town would take on the petition of Chas. S. Storrow and others to be set off in a new town by the name of Lawrence. The meeting was well attended, from two hundred to three hundred being present. John Davis was chosen to preside, and the meeting was addressed by George A. Waldo, J. W. Carlton and John Tenney, all in opposition to the proposed division. Messrs. Waldo and Tenney were chosen a committee to take all honorable and legal measures to thwart the design of the petitioners, and to employ counsel if necessary.

The opposition was unavailing, and on the 17th of April, 1847, the Legislature of Massachusetts granted a charter to the town of Lawrence, of which the following is a copy: (Other names had been suggested, such as Essex and Merrimack, but Lawrence was adopted in honor of the original founders.)

"SECTION 1. All the territory now within the towns of Methuen and Andover, in the County of Essex, comprised within the following limits: that is to say, by a line beginning at the mouth of Shawheen River, at its easterly bank, thence running southerly by said easterly bank to a stake at the bend in said River, a few rods westerly of the bridge where it is crossed by the Salem Turnpike, thence in a straight line westerly to a marked stone in the wall at the easterly corner of the intersection of roads by Jacob Barnard's house: thence Northerly in a straight line across Merrimack River, passing between the house of Asa Barker and that of Ebenezer Barker, on the Tower Hill road, leading from Methuen to Lowell, to a stake about 2100 feet Northerly from where the line crosses said road: thence North-easterly to a monument on the easterly side of Lordbury Turnpike, passing a little northerly of the house of Abiel Stevens: thence Easterly in a straight line to a monument at the intersection of Lawrence Street with the old road which runs easterly from Stevens' factory toward Haverhill: thence in a straight line, easterly, passing north of William Swan's house through a monument about 400 feet south of the intersection of the road to said Swan's house, to the line of the town of Andover in Merrimack River: thence running by the said line of Andover westerly to the easterly bank of the Shawheen River at the point of starting: is hereby incorporated into a town by the name of Lawrence, and the said town of Lawrence is hereby invested with all the privileges, powers, rights and immunities, and subject to all the duties and restrictions to which other towns are entitled and subject, by the constitution and laws of this Commonwealth.

"SECTION 2. The town of Lawrence shall make and maintain all bridges over the highways over the Shawheen River, so far as the easterly bank of said river is a boundary of the said town, including the necessary of said bridges on the easterly bank thereof.

"SECTION 3. The inhabitants of the said town of Lawrence shall be holden to pay all arrears of taxes which have been legally assessed upon them by the towns of Methuen and Andover respectively: and all taxes heretofore assessed, and not collected, shall be collected and paid to the treasurer of the towns of Methuen and Andover respectively, in the same manner as if the act had not been passed: and also their proportion of all County and State taxes that may be assessed upon them previously to the next State valuation—that is to say, two-thirds of the State and county taxes that may be assessed upon the town of Methuen, and one-eighth of the State and County taxes that may be assessed on the town of Andover, till the next State valuation.

"SECTION 4. The parts of the said town of Lawrence now belonging to the towns of Methuen and Andover, respectively, shall remain parts of the said towns of Methuen and Andover, for the purpose of electing State officers, senators, representatives to Congress, and electors of president and vice-president of the United States until the next decennial census shall be taken in pursuance of the 13th Article of Amendment to the Constitution: and the meetings for the choice of

such representatives and other officers aforesaid, shall be called by the selectmen of said towns, respectively: the selectmen of Lawrence shall make a true list of persons belonging to the territory of each of said towns hereby incorporated into the town of Lawrence, qualified to vote at every such election, and the same shall be taken and used by the selectmen of said respective towns for such elections, in the same manner as if prepared by themselves.

"SECTION 5. The said towns of Methuen, Andover and Lawrence shall be respectively liable for the support of all who now do or shall hereafter stand in need of relief as paupers, whose settlement was gained by, or derived from a residence within their respective limits; and the said town of Lawrence shall, within one year from the time of its organization under this act, pay to the town of Methuen one thousand dollars as and for their just proportion of the debts of the town of Methuen, owing at the time of the passage of this Act, exclusive of the amount of the surplus revenue of the United States in the treasury of the town of Methuen: and the town of Lawrence shall also pay two-thirds of the amount of said surplus revenue whenever its repayment shall be demanded by the United States according to law: and shall also pay to the town of Methuen the amount that said town shall pay for building Haverhill Street, so called, within the limits of the said town of Lawrence, as ordered by the County Commissioners for the County of Essex.

"SECTION 6. Any justice of the peace in the County of Essex is hereby authorized to issue his warrant to any principal inhabitant of the town of Lawrence, requiring him to notify and warn the inhabitants thereof, qualified to vote in town affairs, to meet at the time and place therein appointed, for the purpose of choosing all such town officers as towns are by law authorized and required to choose at their annual meetings: and such justice, or, in his absence, such principal inhabitant, shall preside till the choice of a moderator in said meeting.

"SECTION 7. This act shall take effect from and after its passage."

TOWN OFFICERS FROM 1847 TO 1853.

1847. *Selectmen*:—William Swan, Chas. F. Abbott, Nathan Wells, James Stevens, Lorenzo D. Brown. *School Committee*:—James D. Herrick, Dr. William D. Lamb, Dan. Weed. *Town Clerks and Treasurers*:—E. W. Morse, clerk, Daniel Saunders, treasurer, Bailey Bartlett, collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1848. *Selectmen*:—David J. Clark, Chas. F. Abbott, Wm. D. Joplin, Levi Sprague, John M. Smith. *School Committee*:—Rev. George Packard, Rev. Lyman Whiting, Rev. Henry F. Harrington, Nathan W. Harmon, James D. Herrick. *Town Clerks and Treasurers*:—E. W. Morse, clerk, Nathaniel White, treasurer, Parker Smith, collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1849. *Selectmen*:—Chas. F. Abbott, Levi Sprague, Isaac Fletcher. *School Committee*:—Rev. George Packard, Rev. Lyman Whiting, Rev. Henry F. Harrington, Henry K. Oliver, James D. Herrick. *Town Clerks and Treasurers*:—E. W. Morse, clerk, Daniel Saunders, treasurer, N. G. White, collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1850. *Selectmen*:—Artemas Parker, Jr., Wm. Gile, Wm. R. Page. *School Committee*:—Rev. George Packard, Rev. Lyman Whiting, Rev. H. F. Harrington, Rev. Geo. H. Clark, Rev. J. G. Richardson. *Town Clerks and Treasurers*:—Geo. W. Benson, clerk, Geo. W. Sanborn, treasurer, N. G. White, collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1851. *Selectmen*:—Wm. R. Page, Levi Sprague, Joseph Norris. *School Committee*:—Chas. S. Storrow, Nathan W. Harmon, Rev. Geo. Packard, James D. Herrick, Dr. Moses L. Atkinson. *Town Clerks and Treasurers*:—Geo. W. Benson, clerk, Geo. W. Sanborn, treasurer and collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

1852. *Selectmen*:—Wm. R. Page, Levi Sprague, Joseph Norris. *School Committee*:—Rev. Geo. Packard, A. D. Blanchard, Rev. Samuel Kelley, Nathan W. Harmon, John A. Goodwin. *Town Clerks and Treasurers*:—Geo. W. Benson, clerk, Geo. W. Sanborn, treasurer and collector, Ivan Stevens, auditor.

During the continuance of the town government the population increased from six thousand in 1848 to nearly thirteen thousand in 1853. And to any one familiar with the routine of town government, it will be apparent that the officers of the new town had plenty of employment,—constant meetings in the early years, for organization, to provide for schools, cemetery, po-



lice and the usual concomitants of advancing civilization, lockups or prisons for the turbulent and unruly, erection of public buildings, building of roads, etc., all expenditures of the public money being voted upon by the people in town-meeting assembled. The inconvenience of this method of conducting affairs led the people to apply for a city charter, which was granted, and the act signed by Governor Clifford March 21, 1853.

Besides the inconvenience of attending frequent meetings, vexatious delays were liable to occur, in consequence of the rancor of party spirit, and the old saying, "in the multitude of counselors there is wisdom," proved not always true. This was amusingly and provokingly illustrated in the attempt to fix the location of the town hall, and in the refusal to accept from the Essex Company the gift of the common. But no meeting of the people was perhaps more exciting than the meeting of 1852 (the last under town government). Mr. Hayes, in his "Sketches of Lawrence," printed in 1868, gives the following account of the meeting: "Early in the day Mr. B. F. Watson, the leader of the Democrats, made some motion intended to give advantage to his party, and was declared out of order. Exasperated at his failure, he planted himself in the way to the polls, and in a loud voice announced, 'There shall be no voting here to-day,' and called upon his friends to block the passage to the ballot-box. The hall was filled with excited men, who rushed to the point where Watson was standing. A party fight on an extended scale seemed almost unavoidable, when above the din of the angry tumult the clear, calm voice of William R. Page (chairman of the selectmen) echoed through the hall, 'Gentlemen will bring in their votes.' Instantly General Oliver started for the ballot-box, and, after a severe struggle, finally arrived at the object of his aim, but minus his coat-tail.

"The incident operated like magic in allaying the disturbance. All parties regarded it as a joke worth laughing at, and as the two emotions—laughter and anger—cannot exist together, order was far more easily restored than the coat-tail. Probably not a man in Lawrence, who esteemed order as a law of heaven, felt any regret that a town organization, which drew together in one hall all the voters of the place, was to give way to a division of these voters into wards under a city organization."

The first election of city officers was held April 18, 1853, and the new government was inaugurated May 10th. Three parties presented candidates for mayor, Charles S. Storow, treasurer of the Essex Company, being the candidate of the Whig party, Enoch Bartlett of the Democratic, and James K. Barker of the Free Soil or Anti-Slavery party. Mr. Storow was elected, and associated with him in the Board of Aldermen were George D. Cabot, Albert Warren, E. B. Herrick, Alvah Bennett, Walker Flanders and S. S. Valpey; and in the Common Council were Josiah

Osgood (president), Nathaniel G. White (many years president of the Boston and Maine Railroad), Dana Sargent (subsequently mayor of Nashua), William R. Spalding, Elkanah F. Bean, Daniel Hardy, Isaac K. Gage and others, the members of both boards being selected by the people more with a view to their business capacity than to their political activity, and forming an exceptionally capable government for starting the machinery of the new city.

In 1848 the classification of the population was:

Born in America.....	3766	Colored, 16.
Ireland.....	2139	
England.....	28	
France.....	3	
Wales.....	2	
Scotland.....	9	
Italy.....	1	
Germany.....	1	
	5949	

In 1885, according to the State Census:

Born in United States.....	21,705	Colored, 84.
Ireland.....	7,543	
England.....	3,928	
Scotland.....	832	
Germany.....	1,199	
Wales.....	31	
France.....	31	
Canada (English).....	969	
Canada (French).....	1,921	
China.....	9	
Other Countries.....	234	
	38,862	

Male population, 45 $\frac{1}{2}$ % per cent. Female population, 54 $\frac{1}{2}$ % per cent.

CHANGES IN POPULATION, VALUATION AND TAXATION.

YEAR.	POPULATION.	VALUATION.	SCHOOL CHILDREN.	POLLS.	TAX PER \$1000.
1845 ¹	150	.....	51	33	.....
1847	3,577	\$1,709,210	404	497	\$3.50
1848	5,919	3,814,426	620	1,321	4.20
1849	7,225	5,309,710	1,089	2,318	3.90
1850	8,282	5,902,741	1,308	2,219	4.90
1851	9,000	6,467,926	1,593	2,542	5.90
1852	10,540	6,371,135	1,630	2,514	5.31
1853	12,117	6,947,160	1,869	3,006	7.00
1854	11,951	8,812,915	2,167	3,266	7.00
1855	16,081	9,954,011	2,308	3,659	7.80
1856	16,800	10,183,725	2,792	3,525	7.60
1857	17,800	10,228,400	3,021	3,898	8.20
1858	15,360	10,249,009	2,610	2,962	8.40
1859	16,660	10,022,947	2,702	3,007	7.20
1860	17,630	10,812,23	3,171	3,609	8.40
1861	18,100	10,769,615	3,210	3,266	8.80
1862	18,500	10,777,920	3,310	3,378	9.00
1863	19,550	10,939,450	3,381	3,282	11.20
1864	20,700	11,674,430	3,195	3,392	11.60
1865	21,698	12,783,273	3,613	4,147	13.50
1866	22,750	14,798,385	4,026	5,230	13.50
1867	26,000	14,684,000	4,162	5,714	17.20
1868	27,500	15,570,000	4,359	5,960	13.50
1869	28,000	16,647,000	4,165	6,336	13.50
1870	28,921	17,912,507	4,846	6,406	17.20
1871	29,000	18,552,000	4,856	6,625	16.80
1872	31,000	20,765,693	4,847	7,600	15.80
1873	33,000	21,687,732	5,141	7,557	16.00
1874	33,800	22,018,775	5,885	7,728	16.20
1875	34,846	24,117,373	5,648	8,120	17.00
1876	35,000	25,903,508	5,614	8,026	19.60
1877	36,900	25,902,537	6,088	8,139	16.60
1878	37,500	27,114,017	6,468	8,542	15.00
1879	38,600	27,088,897	6,836	8,767	16.40
1880	39,151 ²	27,142,721	6,865	9,024	16.80
1881	.....	25,348,620	7,143	10,023	16.00
1882	.....	26,277,223	6,698	10,435	16.60
1883	.....	26,922,500	6,896	10,745	16.60
1884	.....	27,069,095	7,177	10,548	16.80
1885	38,862 ³	27,111,650	6,947	9,981	16.60
1886	.....	27,145,590	7,277	9,967	16.40
1887	39,299 ⁴	28,324,373	.....	10,129	17.80

¹ A part of Methuen and Andover. ² Assessor's estimate.

³ U. S. Census. ⁴ State Census.

CITY OFFICERS, 1853, TO THE PRESENT TIME.

MAYORS.	CITY CLERKS.	TREAS. & COLLECTORS.
1853, Charles S. Shaw.	Geo. W. Benson.	Brackett H. Clark.
1854, John R. B. M.	Edwin H. Boardman.	Nicholas Chapman.
1855, Albert W. Tarbox.	W. John Moore.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1856, John R. Rollins.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1857, John R. Rollins.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1858, John R. Rollins.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1859, Henry K. Oliver.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1860, John R. Rollins, Jr.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1861, James K. Barker.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1862, Wm. H. P. Wright.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1863, Wm. H. P. Wright.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1864, Alfred J. French.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1865, Wm. H. P. Wright.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1866, Paul H. Abbott.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1867, N. P. H. McVane.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1868, N. P. H. McVane.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1869, Frank H. Bates.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1870, N. P. H. McVane.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1871, N. P. H. McVane.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1872, N. P. H. McVane.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1873, John K. Tarbox.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1874, John K. Tarbox.	Geo. R. Rowe.	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1875, John K. Tarbox.	Walter H. Rowe.	Edwin W. Colcord.
1876, Edmund R. Hayden.	Walter H. Rowe.	Albert V. Bugbee.
1877, John K. Tarbox.	James E. Shepard.	Albert V. Bugbee.
1878, James R. Simpson.	James E. Shepard.	Albert V. Bugbee.
1879, James R. Simpson.	James E. Shepard.	Albert V. Bugbee.
1880, James R. Simpson.	James E. Shepard.	Albert V. Bugbee.
1881, Henry K. Webster.	James E. Shepard.	Albert V. Bugbee.
1882, John K. Tarbox.	James E. Shepard.	Patrick Murphy.
1883, John K. Tarbox.	James E. Shepard.	Patrick Murphy.
1884, John K. Tarbox.	Timothy E. Kennedy.	Patrick Murphy.
1885, James R. Simpson.	William T. Kimball.	Patrick Murphy.
1886, Alexander B. B.	Timothy E. Kennedy.	Patrick Murphy.
1887, Alexander B. B.	William T. Kimball.	Edward P. Poor.

Two of the citizens of Lawrence have represented the district in the United States Congress—Hon. John K. Tarbox in the Forty-fourth Congress, and Hon. Wm. A. Russell in the Forty-sixth.

In the Massachusetts Senate the city and Senatorial district has been represented by Daniel Saunders, Jr., Thomas Wright (four terms), Ben. Osgood, N. W. Harmon, John K. Tarbox, Horace C. Bacon, Byron Truell, Edward F. O'Sullivan. Members of the House of Representatives,—Wm. A. Russell, Fred. Butler, George E. Davis, John K. Tarbox, Robert Bower, Patrick Sweeney, Henry J. Couch, William S. Knox, Patrick Murphy, Horace C. Bacon, Byron Truell, Edwin Ayer, Melvin Beal, Morris Knowles, George D. Lund, James K. Barber, Thomas Wright, Charles Stark Newell, Josiah Osgood, E. B. Currier, Eben Bartlett, David Westworth, Lincoln Pratt, Amasa Bryant, Thomas A. Parsons, John A. Goodwin, Timothy V. Coburn, Benjamin Harding, John Gale, Rev. J. R. Johnson, Thomas W. Floyd, Walker Flanders, Wm. Hardy, N. W. Harmon, Cyrus Williams, Levi Emery, John C. Sanborn, Michael Rinn, Abel Webster, Jesse Moulton, John C. Hoadley, A. J. French, Geo. W. Benson, H. D. Clement, John J. Doland, L. A. Bishop, E. J. Sherman, W. H. P. Wright, Albert Flood, Henry M. McIntire, John J. Nichols.

Hon. John Kimball Tarbox was born in that part of Methuen now within the limits of Lawrence May 6, 1838. In his boyhood he resided for a time in North Andover, and later entered the drug-store of Henry M. Whitney in Lawrence. His tastes led him to the study of law, which he read in the office of Colonel B. F. Watson, and while thus engaged he

contributed largely to the editorial columns of the *Lawrence Sentinel*, and was for a considerable period its editor. He was admitted to the Essex bar in 1860, and entered into partnership with Mr. Watson, and conducted the business of the firm while the senior partner was in service in the first campaign of the Sixth Regiment in 1861. In the fall of 1861 Colonel Watson was appointed paymaster in the army, and Mr. Tarbox went with him as clerk, and was engaged in that and the following year in payment in the field of the armies of the Potomac and Gulf Department.

In the summer of 1861 he united with Eben T. Colby and George S. Merrill in raising a company under the call of the President for nine months' troops. A call for volunteers was issued, which appeared on the bulletin boards one Sunday morning, and Tuesday night following one hundred and sixteen men were enrolled. Mr. Colby was chosen captain, Mr. Merrill first and Mr. Tarbox second lieutenants. This company and one other, raised immediately after by John R. Rollins, James G. Abbott and Hiram Robinson, went into camp at Wenham, were attached to the Forty-eighth Regiment, from which they were detached, owing to the exigencies of the service, and sent to complete the Fourth Regiment, which had for the second time volunteered its services to the government. The regiment served about a year in the army in Louisiana, at Brashear (now Morgan) City, at the battle of Franklin and in the siege of Port Hudson, and was among the first to enter the captured works. Mr. Tarbox during this time was once acting adjutant of the regiment, and commanded the company at the battle of Bisland (or Franklin), while Captain Merrill was in hospital with malarial fever.

After the return of his regiment Mr. Tarbox resumed the practice of law, but his taste for political affairs and his ability as a writer and speaker brought him prominently before the public, and he was chosen representative to the Legislature in 1868 and again in 1870. In 1872 he was a member of the Senate, elected mayor of Lawrence in 1873, and re-elected in 1874, and in 1875, '76, '77 he was a member of the House of Representatives in the United States Congress. In 1882 and 1883 he was city solicitor of Lawrence, and in April, 1883, was appointed by Governor Butler insurance commissioner of the commonwealth, and re-appointed by Governor Robinson—a position in which he displayed marked ability, and conducted the affairs of the office so as to win the commendation of all parties.

In public, political life Mr. Tarbox was an earnest partisan; in his business transactions he was a man of strictest integrity and honorable dealing, and in his social relations warm-hearted and genial. Educated only in the common schools of New England, but possessing a refined taste and poetic temperament, he cultivated and improved his powers by ex-



tended reading of the best in literature. The keynote of his short life may be found in his own words in an address delivered before the Old Residents' Association. In speaking of Lawrence, his remarks were as follows: "Lawrence has no conspicuous history to point at for the world's marvel. It came not out from some mystic past of romance and tradition. It had no Theseus or Romulus of divine progeny for its founder. But it is nobler to make a history than to inherit one, to begin than to end an ancestral line, to set up a beacon of fame than to shine in its reflected beam."

Lieutenant Tarbox never recovered from the malarial effects of the Louisiana swamps, and died in Boston May 27, 1887.

PUBLIC BUILDINGS AND PARKS.—In 1848, the year following the incorporation of the town, steps were taken for the construction of a town hall, and the foresight of its projectors was manifested in the construction of a building which should be adapted not merely to the necessities of a township, but the wants of a future city. The plan of the present city hall was prepared by Ammi B. Young, of Boston, and the committee appointed to take charge of the construction was Hezekiah Plummer, Wm. M. Kimball, Capt. Charles H. Bigelow and J. M. Stone. There was an angry controversy in regard to the location, some desiring to place the building at the corner of Lawrence and Common Streets, some on Jackson Terrace, others, who finally prevailed, in its present comparatively central and convenient place. Had it been built on Jackson Terrace our citizens would have been deprived of one of the most quiet and beautiful spots for private residences; the other location would have been a desirable one, but only a few feet farther west, and at this day it is difficult to understand how so much controversy could have taken place respecting the difference 'twixt tweedle-dum and tweedle-dee. The building, which is a very substantial one, of brick, with a basement story of granite, reflects credit upon the architect and builders. It is surmounted by a wooden tower of pleasing style, in which a fine-toned bell for many years summoned the people to church and school, and to fires until the introduction of the fire-alarm telegraph. The tower is crowned with a gilt eagle which is worthy of mention for its symmetry, designed and carved by Mr. John M. Smith, a member of the Board of Selectmen for that year. The eagle measures seventeen and a half feet from tip to tip of the outspread wings, and ten feet two inches from the back to the end of the tail.

A great defect was found in the acoustic properties of the large hall, rendering it very annoying to public speakers. This was partially remedied in 1858 by hanging the walls with drapery. In 1872 the hall was entirely remodeled by building galleries, and the erection of stage scenery, and now, for its size, it is a pleasant hall for speakers as for other purposes; second only to the opera-house, a private establish-

ment owned by the Lowell Railroad Company, and located over their station-house.

Lawrence Jail was built in 1853 on the southerly bank of the Spicket River, on land purchased by the town, a substantial building of stone in a good location, and as well arranged in sanitary respects for its unfortunate inmates as the dictates of humanity can suggest, while the front portion, occupied by the keeper, opens upon spacious ground and has an outlook upon a public park of an acre in extent. The building has been severally in charge of Sheriffs Thomas E. Payson, James Carey, and the present sheriff, Horatio G. Herrick.

Lawrence Court-House.—For several years the people of Lawrence in civil and criminal cases were obliged, at considerable inconvenience, to attend courts either in Newburyport or Salem; a term of the courts was established here for a time, and the sessions were held for a few years in Lawrence Hall, fitted up for the purpose by the city. The building was not suitable for the purpose, and after considerable opposition from the older parts of the county, a board of county commissioners was formed, who determined that Lawrence furnished a sufficient amount of business to the courts to entitle it to some degree of consideration. Accordingly, in 1858, by united efforts, a court-house was built, the Essex Company giving the land, and the city building a foundation acceptable to the commissioners, and the commissioners erecting the building. The architect was James K. Barber (then city engineer). To two of the commissioners at the time—Mr. Wilson, of Marblehead, and Ebenezer B. Currier, of Lawrence (a majority of the board)—Lawrence is indebted for its construction. A term of court for civil cases is held here in March, and a term for criminal cases in October. The Probate Court also has sessions in January, March, May, June, July, September and November. The court-house was but just finished, when a destructive fire, originating in the new United States Hotel, 1859, destroyed it completely. It was rebuilt in 1860.

Police Station.—The building now occupied by the Police Court and police offices was built in 1867. Prior to this the headquarters of the police was at the city hall, and prisoners were confined in two lock-ups, miserable wooden buildings, confinement in which, before trial, was greater punishment than the guilty suffered subsequent to trial in the vastly better quarters to which they were sentenced. This building is well arranged, having cells in the basement, offices on the first floor, a court-room and offices on the second floor, and a hall which was at one time occupied as an armory; now, convenient for many purposes.

Parks.—The largest of these is the Common, a fine tract of more than seventeen acres in the centre of the city, reserved by the Essex Company while making their plan of streets, and offered to the town, with



the simple restrictions that it should not be diverted from its purpose, or built upon, that the town should expend a small sum, not less than two hundred dollars, annually for its improvement, and that it should be under the care of a committee consisting of the chairman of the selectmen or mayor, the agents of the Essex Company, the Atlantic and Bay State Mills. At a town-meeting in September, 1848, the town, on motion of some scheming politicians, voted not to accept the gift! At a subsequent meeting in October the people, awake to the ridiculous position in which the town had been placed, reversed the decision, for which action all who have since resided here have been grateful. The several committees have taken much interest in improving and beautifying it, and much larger sums of money have been appropriated for the purpose than were required by the terms of the gift. Perhaps no one in the earlier days devoted more time and attention to the planting and rearing of the noble trees which now shade its broad avenues than Levi Sprague, one of the selectmen in 1848, '49, and Gen. H. K. Oliver, then agent of the Atlantic Mills; though others have in various ways contributed their share. The trees around the pond were planted under the direction of Mayor W. H. P. Wright. The unsightly wooden fence was removed during the mayoralty of Hon. John K. Tarbox, and the present curbstone substituted. For the pond on the Common the citizens are indebted to the exertions of the late Dr. J. H. Morse, who obtained by subscription half of the cost, the city appropriating the balance in 1857.

Another tract of ten acres, Storrow Park, on Prospect Hill, was deeded by the Essex Company to the city in 1853. This is in part shaded by trees, young oaks of native growth, is on high land, and commands pleasant views of the busy town below.

"The Amphitheatre," so-called, sometimes named Happy Valley, was dedicated to public use in 1873, by the company. This is a beautifully located tract in the western part of the city, inclosed on three sides by a ridge of hills giving it the resemblance from which it was named. This tract embraces seven acres, and forms a pleasant and quiet retreat for the citizens of that region.

Another park, the finest of all except the Common, now owned by the Essex Company in South Lawrence, comprises eleven and a quarter acres, and is named Union Park; bounded by South Union, Osgood, Salem and Market Streets.

CEMETERY.—In 1847 the town purchased five acres of land in the western part of the city for burial purposes. This has been gradually enlarged until *Belle-vue Cemetery* has, by judicious management and constant, but continued, improvement by the city and the good taste of the citizens, become a very beautiful resting-place for the dead, a spot where the grave is robbed of half its horrors by the beauty of the surroundings, and where one, in the language of Bryant,

might feel that he "could wrap the drapery of his couch around him and lie down to pleasant dreams." West of this is St. Mary's Cemetery, and still further west, partly in Methuen is the cemetery of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, both of which have much improved.

The city also, in anticipation of prospective wants, has purchased in North Andover about ninety acres, at a spot known in the vicinity as Den Rock. This is somewhat difficult of access, but capable of becoming in the future an appropriate place, and from its natural scenery may be made, by the aid of art, a beautiful ground for the purpose intended.

BANKS.—The first bank, the Bay State, incorporated February 10, 1847, was located at a point very nearly corresponding with the geographical centre of the city, the junction of Lawrence and Essex Streets. Its capital was originally two hundred thousand dollars, increased to five hundred thousand dollars, and subsequently reduced to three hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars, the par value of the shares being at present seventy-five dollars each. The first president was Hon. Charles S. Storrow, who resigned after twenty years of service, and was succeeded in 1867 by Hon. George L. Davis. Nathaniel White, the first cashier, was previous to this cashier of the Powow River Bank at Salisbury, to which office he was appointed on the organization of the bank in 1836. He was succeeded by Charles A. Colby, who had been several years teller of the bank, and on Mr. Colby's resignation and removal to New York City, Mr. Samuel White, then of Haverhill, was elected cashier and is still in service.

Intimately connected with this bank was the first institution for savings in Lawrence, the Essex Savings Bank. This bank was incorporated in March, and organized September, 1847, and for a long period its business was managed by the president and cashier of the Bay State Bank at their rooms. James H. Eaton was appointed assistant treasurer in 1865, and on the decease of Mr. White he became treasurer, 1866. George D. Cabot succeeded Mr. Storrow in the presidency, and after faithful service of about twenty-five years, including eleven years as president, he resigned, and was succeeded by Joseph Shattuck, who has since remained in office. This savings bank is the oldest in the city, its deposits amount to more than four millions of dollars, and it has never omitted a dividend.

The *National Pemberton Bank* was organized in 1854, Levi Sprague being the president from the beginning to the present time. The first cashier was Samuel C. Woodward, who was succeeded by William H. Jaquith. James M. Coburn followed Mr. Jaquith, and remained till 1879, when he went to a more promising field in the West, and J. A. Perkins has been cashier since that date. The capital of this bank is one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Number of shares, fifteen hundred.



The *Lawrence National Bank* was organized in February, 1872. Dr. A. J. French was president till 1878, when he was succeeded by Artemas W. Stearns, who yet retains the office. P. G. Pillsbury was cashier till 1879, when, having been turned from the path of duty by the glittering allurements of Western mining schemes, his connection with the bank ceased. No loss was incurred by the bank, however, as the directors paid personally all remaining deficiencies. John R. Rollins, who had been thirteen years cashier at the Pacific Mills, succeeded Pillsbury, and after a service of nearly eight years was succeeded in 1887 by H. Leslie Sherman. The capital stock of this bank is three hundred thousand dollars, in three thousand shares.

The *Pacific National Bank* was organized January, 1877. President, James H. Kidder; Cashier, William H. Jaquith, formerly of the Pemberton. Fifteen hundred shares, one hundred dollars each.

Lawrence Savings Bank, organized 1868. Milton Bonney was its first president. Mr. Bonney died, and Hezekiah Plummer has since been president, while William R. Spalding has been the treasurer from the beginning.

The *Broadway Savings Bank* commenced business in 1872. John Fallon, then agent of the Pacific Mills, was chosen president, and so remains. The treasurers have been James Payne, John L. Brewster and the present treasurer, Gilbert E. Hood.

All these banks have in the main been judiciously managed, and have met with a reasonable share of success.

FIRE DEPARTMENT.—Before the organization of the town the Essex Company took early steps to protect themselves against fire by purchasing the engine "Essex," which was manned by persons in the employ of the company. As soon as the town government was fairly started fire-wards were appointed, viz.: William M. Kimball, Josiah Johnson, Nathaniel Wilson, Charles Smith and Samuel I. Thompson; and a committee consisting of William M. Kimball, Nathaniel Wilson and Caleb M. Marvel was appointed to purchase engine and apparatus, and erect a house for the same.

In 1848 the Legislature passed an act establishing the Fire Department of Lawrence. In November, 1847, the committee above named purchased two engines—"Rough and Ready," located on Newbury Street, afterward removed to Garden Street (and at a still later date the name was changed to "Niagara"), and "Syphon," located on Oak Street. In 1850 a fourth engine, "Tiger," was placed in South Lawrence.

In 1851 the Essex Company, the Atlantic and Bay State Mills, for still further protection, built a reservoir on Prospect Hill, holding one million gallons, and connected it by proper pipes with pumps operated by the mills; a company was subsequently formed under the name of the Lawrence Reservoir Associa-

tion, and operated by associated corporations. The reservoir was designed for the benefit of the corporation solely, not being of sufficient capacity for general use; but the company generously allowed pipes and hydrants in several of the principal streets to be used exclusively in case of fire, and they also allowed the use of water without charge for the pond on the Common. Edward B. Herrick, of the Bay State Mills, was agent for the company from the beginning till his death, November, 1878; he was succeeded by Mr. Rollins, who served till June, 1879, when the care of the reservoir was placed in the hands of Mr. Rogers, the agent of the City Water Works.

The first chief of engineers was William M. Kimball,—others have been James D. Herrick, Samuel I. Thompson, Luther Ladd (who had been connected with the Fire Department from the beginning, and served in all seventeen years as chief), Colonel L. D. Sargent, Benjamin Booth, George K. Wiggin, Albert R. Brewster, Colonel Melvin Beal, Michael F. Collins, Dennis Wholley and William E. Heald. The present chief is Z. Taylor Merrill.

Under the former organization, with the hand engines, about two hundred and fifty men were employed, and in their trials of skill, as well as at fires, there was a friendly rivalry among the companies, each striving to be first on the ground and earnest to get the first stream upon the fire, plenty of noise and fun, not only among the firemen, but from their adherents, who, proud of the "machine" from their own district, usually accompanied in crowds to cheer them on, so that, whether by night or day, with bells ringing and the cheers of crowds, pandemonium seemed to have broken loose.

After the invention and introduction of steam fire-engines, "those fleshless arms whose pulses beat with floods of living fire," all this was changed, and while by no means depreciating the promptitude and efficiency of the older department, fires are now managed with much less confusion, with far greater efficiency, and with less than half the number of men.

The department now embraces five powerful steam-engines (the first purchased in 1860, two more in 1862, the fourth in 1864, fifth in 1871), one chemical engine with double tanks of seventy-five gallons each, built in 1880, two hook-and-ladder companies;—four engines and one hook-and-ladder company in active service, the others held in reserve. The fire-alarm telegraph was introduced in 1859, and the apparatus was put up by Mr. J. H. Stevens, under contract with the Gamewell Fire-Alarm Company, at a cost to the city of eight thousand dollars. This has been gradually extended, until now fifty alarm-boxes warn the department of the locality of a fire, and avoid many fatal delays.

WATER-WORKS.—As early as 1848 a plan was formed for supplying the town with water, and a charter was granted that year to John Tenney, of Methuen, Alfred Kittredge, of Haverhill, Daniel

Saunders, of Lawrence, and others, under the name of the Lawrence Aqueduct Company. The plan of introducing water from Haggett's Pond was found impracticable and the enterprise abandoned. In 1858 a petition from prominent citizens was laid before the city government, requesting that steps be taken for a supply of water. The formidable expense that would be incurred led the government to consider the petition as premature, and nothing was done.

In 1871-72 the subject was again agitated, and with good reason; in twenty-five years of rapid growth large numbers of the wells had become mere cesspools, and the water unfit for drinking or culinary purposes, especially in the compact portions of the city. A petition to the Legislature resulted in an "Act to supply the city of Lawrence with water" was passed and approved by the Governor March 8, 1872. This act was accepted by the legal voters, twelve hundred and ninety-eight voting in favor and eight hundred and thirty in opposition. In June a joint committee, consisting of Aldermen James Payne and James A. Treat, and L. D. Sargent, Henry J. Couch and George W. Russell, of the Common Council, was appointed to obtain estimates of cost, etc. An engineer, L. Frederick Rice, of Boston, was consulted, the committee made an elaborate report, and in April, 1873, an ordinance was passed providing for the election of water commissioners, and in May the Board of Commissioners was organized, with William Barbour chairman, Patrick Murphy clerk and Morris Knowles.

Walter F. McConnell, of Boston, was appointed chief engineer and James P. Kirkwood, of Brooklyn, N. Y., consulting engineer.

The water is taken from the Merrimac River at a point about three-quarters of a mile above the dam, where, in a building of brick, are placed two pumping engines, built by I. P. Morris & Co., of Philadelphia (Leavitt's patent), capable of forcing two hundred thousand gallons per hour each, from the river to the reservoir on Bodwell's Hill, about a mile from the centre of the city, the water being conveyed in a pipe thirty inches in diameter and about five thousand feet in length.

The reservoir is constructed in two divisions, either of which may be used independently of the other—both having a capacity of thirty-nine million gallons. From this reservoir cast-iron pipes convey the water to the various parts of the city, on both sides of the river.

In 1875 an ordinance was passed establishing rates and providing for the permanent management of the works; and a Water Board was appointed, consisting of Milton Bonney, Robert H. Tewksbury, N. P. H. Melvin, William Barbour and James Payne—one member retiring each year.

The total cost of the water-works was not far from one million five hundred thousand dollars. The

works have proved of great value to the city in furnishing an abundant supply of water for domestic purposes, and in the protection afforded against fire. On January 4, 1886, nearly five hundred hydrants had been placed (Lowry pattern), seventeen drinking fountains established, fifty-two miles of main pipe laid, and a supply of water furnished to about thirty-five thousand persons in families and boarding-houses.

SANITARY ARRANGEMENTS.—Early provision was made by the corporation for the cleanliness of their premises and the sanitary condition of dwelling-houses. In the construction of sewers the Bay State Mills expended thirty thousand dollars; and in the construction of other blocks, the first thing was to build beneath the cellars a sewer, through which a swift current of water flows, carrying away at once all waste into the Merrimac River. In the construction of sewers, however, some mistakes were made by the different city governments. Several sewers and many drains opened into the Spicket River; this being a sluggish stream, especially between the dams, and oftentimes low, became in time an open sewer, rendering the valley in its neighborhood not only offensive, but dangerous to health. One of our local poets (truly not a very poetical subject) thus wrote of it:

"It is not claimed that power divine
Did wash Cologne's foul river, Rhine;
Nor will benign Supernal powers
Conspire to cleanse this Rhine of ours,
Whose sickening tides, it is well known,
Are foul as ever washed Cologne,—
They scored but two and seventy stenchers there,
So the old rhymester in the canto tells;
We count a hundred, with enough to spare
To hold high carnival of extra smells!

* * * * *
Saints dwelling on the river's bank
Blaspheme its flood like impious Thugs!
With smelling all its impious scents
Our noses all are turned to pugs.
Surely the witches of Macbeth
Never told of caldron's mixture worse,
For I find worm's sting, and adder's breath
Combined, would prove a lighter curse."

A large sewer now receives all these drains, and the river has resumed its nearly normal condition.

For several years the selectmen and Board of Aldermen were the health officers. With all their other duties, proper attention could not be given to sanitary matters. Since the organization of a special Board of Health much more time has been devoted to this subject, and the city will compare favorably in this regard with other municipalities.

POLICE DEPARTMENT.—In the early years of Lawrence every one was too busy to be engaged in roguery, and in subsequent years a vigilant and efficient police has preserved good order, seldom disturbed by any very notable events. One of the earliest attempts at burglary was an effort to rob the Essex Co.'s safe. The company at that time occupied the one-story

building near the guard locks. The plan was frustrated by Marshal Tukey, of Boston, and two notorious burglars, who for a considerable period had baffled the marshal's efforts, were captured.

In the second year of the city government (1854) a disturbance occurred which came near proving a serious riot. A flag had been discovered, Union down, on a building on Oak Street, *supposed* to have been raised purposely by an Irishman (really by an American) as an insult to the flag. A crowd soon assembled composed of the more excitable element of the Know-Nothings (literal know-nothings, since they had not taken the trouble to ascertain truth); collision ensued, and on Common Street the front of one building (Bangor Block so-called) was considerably damaged. Stones were freely used, and some shots were exchanged; the riot act was read by Mayor Bartlett and the crowd dispersed. Fearing further trouble, about three hundred extra policemen were sworn in, but no further disturbance occurred, and the skies once more shone benignantly over a bloodless field.

Again, in 1875 a small body of Orangemen, returning from a picnic, were assaulted by a crowd of the thoughtless and reckless portion of the people, forgetting (if it ever occurred to them) that it is a free country, where all have equal rights. Seeking protection at the police station, the mayor, R. H. Tewksbury, and some policeman escorted them to their destination. Stones and other missiles were pretty freely used and some pistol-shots discharged. Some were slightly wounded, but nothing of a serious nature resulted.

These items are mentioned merely as incidents in history and not as possessing any serious import. In both instances the collisions were the natural results from the impulses of unthinking and unreasoning men. When serious trouble came in 1861 men of all nationalities—American born and foreign born, Catholics and Orangemen—vied with each other in maintaining the honor of our national banner by land and sea.

The city has been the scene of one deliberate murder. Albert D. Swan was shot by Henry K. Goodwin August 27, 1885. There had been between the two men a dispute of long standing in regard to the use of some invention connected with the telephone in which both were interested, and for the use of which Goodwin claimed that Swan was indebted to him in a considerable amount. Swan claimed that he owed him nothing. On the day above named Goodwin borrowed a pistol, and, going to the counting-room where Swan was seated at a desk, he renewed his demand, and as it was not responded to satisfactorily, he fired with fatal effect.

Mr. Swan was born in Tewksbury May 10, 1845, and came with his father, the late David S. Swan, to Lawrence in 1848. He was educated in the schools of Lawrence and at Comers' Commercial College, Boston; commenced life as a clerk in the banking-

house of Hallgarten & Herzfield, New York, and was afterwards gold paying teller and attorney for the firm in the New York Stock Board; entered into partnership with his father under the name of D. S. Swan & Son in Lawrence, 1866, in fire insurance business. The father died 1874, and the business was continued by the son, who was also at the time of his death a director in the Bay State Bank.

POLICE COURT.—In April, 1848, the Police Court was established by act of Legislature. Prior to this, justice had been dispensed by Trial Justice Joseph Couch. The first judge appointed was William Stevens, who, after a service of thirty years, resigned, and was succeeded by Hon. Nathan W. Harmon in 1878. After a service of nine years Judge Harmon resigned on account of impaired health, and was followed by the present judge, Hon. Andrew C. Stone. Associate justices have been Hon. Wm. H. P. Wright, W. Fiske Gile, Charles U. Bell, Gilbert E. Hood. Among those who have held the office of clerk, formerly appointed by the mayor and more recently elected by the people, have been Wm. H. Parsons, W. H. P. Wright, Edgar J. Sherman, Henry L. Sherman, Charles E. Briggs, Jesse G. Gould and the present incumbent, Henry F. Hopkins.

At the first town-meeting ten constables were appointed, who were also field-drivers—Gilman F. Sanborn, Bailey Bartlett, J. N. Gage, Phineas M. Gage, C. N. Souther, H. T. Nichols, E. Bartlett, N. Hazelton, Nath'l Ambrose, W. A. Goodwin.

Of these, three—Gilman F. Sanborn, Nathaniel Ambrose, and James D. Herrick—were successively at the head of the town police. Phineas M. Gage was the owner of a fine farm in the easterly portion of the town, embracing what is now Jackson Court and a portion of the Common,—Orchard Street taking its name from his orchard, and Garden Street from his garden.

The venerable Bailey Bartlett (a son of Hon. Bailey Bartlett, of Haverhill, who was appointed sheriff of Essex County by Gov. John Hancock) resided for several years in Newburyport, afterward in Salem and came thence to Lawrence. He was, as above stated, one of the first constables chosen in Lawrence, and on the decease of Joshua Buswell (the first deputy here), he was appointed deputy-sheriff, an office which he filled acceptably for many years. After this he was appointed a constable for civil service by successive city governments, and was remarkably active till a year or two before his decease, which occurred 1887, at the advanced age of ninety-two. James D. Herrick, educated at Phillips Academy, Andover, entered Dartmouth College, but did not continue a college course; was a teacher till 1846, when he came to Lawrence, and for twenty-two years was in the employ of the Essex Company as toll-keeper at Andover Bridge. He was one of the first members of the school committee and served on the committee at different periods for ten years; was at one time chief engineer of

the Fire Department and a member of the Board of Aldermen.

Under the city government, the various marshals (chiefs of police) have been Harvey L. Fuller, Chandler Bailey, Leonard Stoddard, Joseph H. Keyes, John S. Perkins, George W. Potter, John W. Porter, Edmund R. Hayden (afterward mayor), Noah Parkman, Col. Chase Philbrick, Capt. James E. Shepard, Lyman Prescott, James M. Currier, Moulton Batchelder and James T. O'Sullivan.

INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL.—This school was established in 1875, to provide a place for boys "who are growing up without salutary control; or no control at all; who either have no homes or homes merely in name; who lead idle lives and are habitual truants; who may indeed have been guilty of petty offences, but who may be reformed by kind treatment—a place where they may receive useful instruction in books and manual labor." The school opened with two boys July 3, 1875, under the direction of Captain H. G. Herrick, Rev. George Packard, Hon. Milton Bonney, Rev. John P. Gilmore and Frederick E. Clarke as trustees. The school has proved a very wise and useful establishment, and has accomplished much good. Many boys, who would otherwise have grown up to become pests of society, have gone from this school to become useful and industrious citizens. It is really a *home*, and by no means a prison, and is and has been for several years under the charge of Mr. and Mrs. Robert B. Risk.

Of the original trustees, Messrs. Packard and Bonney have died, and Rev. J. P. Gilmore has left the city. Messrs. Herrick and Clarke have from the beginning devoted much time to the interests of the school.

Judge William Stevens was born in North Andover, Mass., 1799; entered Harvard College at the age of sixteen, graduating in 1819; went to Nashville, Tenn., where he commenced the study of law; was admitted to the bar and practiced law in that city till 1826, when he removed to Belfast, Me., and became the law partner of John Wilson. The copartnership was dissolved in 1829, at which time he was elected to represent Belfast in the Legislature of Maine, nine years after the separation of Maine from Massachusetts. During his residence in Belfast he was active in public affairs, and is mentioned in the history of that town as a "distinguished and prominent" citizen; was a leader in the Debating Society, president of the Belfast Lyceum, editor of the *Maine Farmer and Political Register*, and a leading member of the Fire Department. Mr. Stevens removed subsequently to his native town, and soon after was elected to the Massachusetts Legislature, and served several terms. In 1836 he was appointed cashier of the Essex Bank in Andover, a position which he held till November 20, 1847, when the business of that bank was closed, and the cashier was ordered to dispose of the notes and other property. He removed to Law-

rence July 3, 1848, at which time he was appointed by Governor Briggs judge of the Lawrence Police Court.

This position he held till May, 1877, and during this period was for three years a member of the School Committee. Failing health, loss of eye-sight, compelled his resignation, and on the 4th of June, 1878, he was stricken with apoplexy and died in a few hours.

Judge Stevens was a gentleman of the olden time, very urbane in manner, kind to a fault to the unfortunate and erring; as a judge, sometimes deciding cases according to equity, rather than strict law; a public-spirited citizen and a sterling patriot. Two of his sons, fully imbued with the father's devotion to country, gave their lives to its service in the Civil War.

NEWSPAPERS.—The first newspaper in Lawrence was issued in October, 1846, by J. F. C. Hayes, and was called the *Merrimack Courier*. It continued under the editorial management of Mr. Hayes, John A. Goodwin (subsequently of Lowell), Homer A. Cook, Rev. Henry I. Harrington and Nathaniel Ambrose till 1862. In 1848 a Democratic paper, entitled the *Vanguard*, was published by Fabyan & Douglas. The name was subsequently changed to *The Sentinel*. This paper has been edited in the course of its existence by Harrison Douglass, Colonel B. F. Watson, Geo. A. Gordon, Benjamin Bordman, John Ryan, Hon. John K. Tarbox and Abiel Morrison, and is yet issued as a weekly paper.

In 1855 the *Lawrence American* was commenced by George W. Sargent and A. S. Bunker; it was continued by Mr. Sargent alone, and then Major Geo. S. Merrill became associated with him, and has since been the editor. This paper is Republican in politics, and is issued daily under the title of *Lawrence American*, an evening paper, and weekly as the *Lawrence American and Andover Review*. This is believed to be the first newspaper and printing-office in the world where the presses are all run by electric power, introduced in 1884.

In 1867 the *Essex Eagle* was commenced by Merrill & Wadsworth; now published by H. A. Wadsworth. This paper has two editions—a weekly and morning daily.

The *Lawrence Journal*, another well-conducted paper, was commenced by Robert Bower as the organ of workmen. It was purchased in 1877 by Mr. Patrick Sweeney, one of the earliest residents of the town, Democratic in politics, with a good share of independence.

The *Sunday Telegram* has been more recently established. Several other papers have had an ephemeral existence.

CHARITABLE AND OTHER ORGANIZATIONS.

MASONIC.—*Grecian Lodge*, the oldest in the city, was chartered in Methuen December 10, 1825, but in



consequence of the opposition to secret societies in anti-Masonic times, the meetings were practically abandoned. December 14, 1846, the first Masonic meeting was held in Lawrence, and at an adjourned meeting, one week later, it was determined to petition the Grand Lodge for a charter under the name of Grecian Lodge, in which it was hoped the Methuen Masons would join, and it was proposed that they should meet weekly from the 28th of December. Benjamin Boardman was proposed for M., Geo. E. Tyler for S. W., and J. F. C. Hayes for J. W., and a committee was appointed to take steps for procuring a charter, which was granted in February, 1848.

Tuscan Lodge was chartered December 10, 1863; *Phœnician Lodge* November 5, 1879.

Mount Sinai Royal Arch Chapter was chartered October 1, 1861.

Bethany Commandery, Knights Templar, was chartered December 29, 1864.

Lawrence Council, R. and S. M., was chartered December 9, 1868.

Lawrence Masonic Association was formed November, 1871.

Lawrence Masonic Mutual Relief Association was chartered July 20, 1874.

ODD FELLOWS.—The first lodge of the I. O. O. F. was organized May 19, 1847, and the order is represented in Lawrence by the following: *United Brothers Lodge*, formed in 1847; *Monadnock Lodge*, No. 150, organized 1867; *Lawrence Lodge*, in 1869; *Kearsarge Encampment*, No. 36, September 11, 1868; *Lawrence Encampment*, No. 31, in 1852, and re-instituted 1874. The *Lawrence Odd Fellows' Building Association*, formed in 1874-75, erected the fine brick building at the corner of Essex and Lawrence Streets; the lower floors of this building are occupied by stores; the second floor has been, for several years, occupied by the Lawrence Public Library, and the upper stories have been finely fitted and furnished for meetings and banquet halls of the various associations of the order.

Among the **BENEFIT INSURANCE SOCIETIES** are *The Knights of Honor*; *Knights and Ladies of Honor*; *United Order of Pilgrim Fathers*, five divisions; *The Royal Arcanum*; *The Home Circle*; *The American Legion of Honor*; *The Northern Mutual Relief Association*; *Ruth Lodge, Daughters of Rebecca*; all of which are recognized by the State, and their financial standing reported in the Insurance Reports.

Other benevolent societies are the *Knights of Pythias* (a secret order); the *Order of United Friends*, represented by two organizations,—Alpha Council, No. 7, and Ba7 State Council, No. 162; *Knights of St. John*; *Knights and Ladies of the Golden Rule*; the *Golden Rule Alliance*; *United Order of the Golden Cross*, in three divisions,—the Olive, Eastern Star and Loyalty Commanderies; the *Ancient Order of Foresters*; all having for their object mutual assistance to sick and distressed members.

The Ladies' Union Charitable Society, incorporated 1875, has the charge of the hospital for the care of acute cases of sickness and accident; nursery for day care of small children; training-school for nurses.

The German population has two associations of the *Order of Harugari*, known as *Schiller Lodge* and *Freiheit Lodge*, with Masonic features and benefits; also an Aid Society, a Sick Relief Association, and the *St. Aloysius Aid Society* (Catholic).

The benevolent societies of the French population are *L'Union St. Joseph* and *La Societe St. Jean Baptiste*.

Other large benevolent societies are *The Irish Catholic Benevolent Society*, organized October, 1863; Two lodges *Ancient Order of Hibernians*; *The Protectory of Mary Immaculate*, better known as the Orphan Asylum, as its name implies, an orphan asylum and home for invalids, the first institution ever erected in the city for charitable purposes; and the *Conference of St. Vincent de Paul*.

There are in Lawrence also several social and literary clubs, among which are the Home Club, with handsomely furnished rooms, centrally located on Essex Street; the Caledonian Society (Scotch); Sons of St. George (English); Le Cercle Montcalm (French); the Turn-Verein (German); the Knights of St. Patrick and the Old Residents' Association, to which all are eligible who have resided in Lawrence twenty-five years or more, Miss E. G. Wetherbee, president.

A Natural History and Archaeological Society, embracing nearly one hundred members, has recently been formed, R. H. Tewksbury, president; John P. Langshaw, secretary; G. R. Sanborn, treasurer.

Needham Post (No. 39) of the Grand Army of the Republic combines the two objects of good-fellowship and benevolence to needy and sick comrades.

The post was named after Sumner Henry Needham, a member of the old Sixth Regiment, and who was among the first martyrs of the Rebellion. He was killed at Baltimore on the 19th of April, 1861. His remains were brought to Lawrence and interred in Bellevue Cemetery with public honors. Business was suspended throughout the city, and flags at half-mast, with other demonstrations of grief, marked the public respect for his memory.

He was born at Bethel, Me., and had been twelve years in Lawrence when the war broke out. With the name of such a hero as its patron, Post 39 could not help but increase in numbers and usefulness. To-day its membership is one of the largest of any post in the State outside of Boston. Its roll represents over three hundred members in good standing, with fresh accessions coming in at every meeting. It has disbursed for charitable purposes during the last ten years from seven hundred dollars to twelve hundred dollars annually.

The first commander was Major George S. Merrill, and such soldiers as Col. L. D. Sargent, Col. E. J.



Sherman, Major E. A. Fiske, Col. Chase Philbrick, Major L. N. Duchesney, Adjutant Frank O. Kendall, Ex-Mayor Davis, Stephen C. Parsons, James Noonan, Daniel F. Kiley, David Johnson, William H. Coan, Hon. A. C. Stone, John F. Hogan, James J. Stanley, George H. Flagg and Charles H. Couillard were his successors. Of the above, Mr. F. O. Kendall has been appointed and served as adjutant under eleven commanders, this being a longer period than can be said of any other member of a G. A. R. Post in the State. The charter members of Needham Post were Melvin Beal, James G. Abbott, Frank Davis, E. L. Noyes, Chase Philbrick, A. A. Currier, George S. Merrill, E. J. Merriam and S. M. Decker. The charter is dated December 10, 1867. The present commander of Needham Post is Charles U. Bell, Esq.

MUSICAL ASSOCIATION.—*The Oldest Musical Association* in the city is the Lawrence Brass Band, formed in February, 1849, a very patriotic association, which in the Rebellion sent twelve of its eighteen members into the Union army.¹ For many years it was under the leadership of D. Frank Robinson. The present leader is Mr. E. T. Collins.

The Lawrence Cornet Band, F. J. O'Reilly, leader; *La Bande Canadienne*, J. R. Lafricaine, leader; the *Lyra* and *Glocke Singing Societies* (German); the *Ladies' Choral Union*, under the direction of Mr. Reuben Merrill; two *Orchestral Associations*, one directed by E. T. Collins, the other by C. J. A. Marier.

YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION.—Organized October 12, 1876; incorporated January 14, 1880; reorganized February 6, 1883. The association has pleasant and convenient rooms, which are open daily from 8 A.M. to 9½ P.M. The following privileges are free to all persons: Reading-room well supplied with papers and periodicals, parlor games, boarding-house register, employment bureau, song service and facilities for letter-writing. In addition to the above, members of the association are entitled to the use of the gymnasium, bath-rooms, members' parlor and admission for member and lady to the annual course of entertainments. Any young man of good moral character, regardless of religious belief, may become a member on payment of an annual fee of two dollars. Fee for membership, with use of the gymnasium, five dollars.

The building occupied by them was built for and occupied by the Eliot Church. This was sold when the Eliot and Central Churches united, and was purchased by Hon. Wm. A. Russell, who conveyed it to the association, generously deducting from the payment the sum of ten thousand dollars of the actual cost.

LAWRENCE CITY MISSION.—In the great influx of population naturally attendant upon founding of the new town many came with limited means, who, either from want of immediate employment or illness,

needed assistance. Poor, but not by any means paupers, a little aid from those more fortunate would help them on in their struggle for success. Among the first to recognize the importance of system in the distribution of aid was Rev. Henry F. Harrington, then pastor of the Unitarian Church, who said to his people: "If you will place your charity money in my hands, and send your applicants for aid to me, I will look up the cases and help as I shall see help is needed."

December, 1854, seven gentlemen met for the purpose of forming a "Relief Society." These men were Rev. George Packard, John C. Hoadley, William D. Joplin, James K. Barker, Rev. Richard S. Rust, Ebenezer B. Currier and Rev. H. F. Harrington. At a subsequent meeting John C. Hoadley was chosen president, the city was divided in six districts, a division committee of three persons from each ward of the city was appointed, and to each section was assigned a visitor. The first general agent was Wm. D. Joplin (who died August, 1870). Mr. Joplin served one year, and following him Henry Wittington, who served more than two years, both devoted to the work without compensation, the last-named giving his entire time during the winter months. The society continued four years, and rendered important aid, particular during the stagnation of business in 1857. In February, 1859, the society voted that a committee of two from each religious society be invited meet in convention with a committee of two from the association to consider the establishment of a city mission. The first meeting was held March 3, 1859, in which twelve religious societies were represented. The meeting unanimously decided in favor of forming a mission, and a committee was appointed with Hon. Chas. Storow as chairman, who reported that the proposed measure "promises results of a most beneficial character, not only to those who are to be more particularly the object of the labors of the mission, but also to those who, by joining in its support, whatever be their peculiarities of religious opinion, thereby create and strengthen within themselves that bond of truly Christian fellowship which unites all who co-operate in good work." They also reported that Geo. P. Wilson (of the Methodist Church) was a person containing in an unusual degree the qualifications and experience requisite for the proper discharge of the duties of city missionary. The report was unanimously adopted, and the wisdom of their choice was fully proved,—beloved and trusted by all, Mr. Wilson devoted all the energies of his benevolent and unselfish nature to the wants of the unfortunate and suffering, and during thirteen years of service, in the trying times that succeeded the fall of the Pemberton mill, and during the four years of war, in counsel as chaplain at the jail, and in every way in which he could, he was always found ready to do all in his power for the benefit of suffering humanity, and in all his charitable work he had the full sympathy

¹ Tewksbury.



and aid of his equally devoted wife. He resigned in 1872 and went to Boston in the service of the Boston Missionary and Church Extension Society. A plain monument in Bellevue Cemetery, erected by the citizens of Lawrence, marks his resting-place; it bears this simple inscription:

"To the memory of
GEO. P. WILSON
City Missionary of Lawrence for thirteen years
Born Jan'y 29, 1830
Died July 10, 1873
He lived for others."

April 1, 1872, Rev. Charles U. Dunning was appointed to succeed Mr. Wilson, and for about thirteen years, with the earnest co-operation of Mrs. Dunning, faithfully and judiciously carried on the work so auspiciously commenced, and was succeeded by Francis S. Longworth, the present missionary. The mission is sustained by voluntary contributions, and the salary of the missionary is paid by the different manufacturing corporations, divided in proportion to their capital. The president of the society, Rev. George Packard, died, after eighteen years of devoted service, November 30, 1877, and Gilbert E. Hood was chosen to succeed him.

The mission has from the beginning accomplished much, and by its usefulness in various ways has commended itself fully to the people. In 1885, in the hope of making it still more systematically useful, it became a bureau of charities on the basis of associated charity, having for its objects, "to secure harmonious co-operation between the different churches, charities and charitable individuals of Lawrence, in order to assist the deserving poor, prevent begging and imposition, and diminish pauperism; to encourage thrift and self-dependence, through friendly intercourse, advice and sympathy; to aid the poor to help themselves, and to prevent children from growing up as paupers." Such have ever been the aims of the mission, but whether all the societies will co-operate is a problem for the future.

Independently of the city mission, yet as an auxiliary to it, several benevolently disposed young ladies had for several years maintained a

FLOWER MISSION, the object of which has been to brighten the homes of the sick with flowers, and otherwise distributing among them fruits and delicacies suitable for invalids, and in this work they have been generously aided by the people of Andover and North Andover. Early in October, 1875, at the invitation of the City Missionary, a number of ladies met at the mission rooms to take into consideration the formation of a Day Nursery, for the care of children whose mothers were employed in the mills, and for such hospital work as might be found at hand. And on the 8th of October the Ladies' Union Charitable Society was formed, and organized by the choice of Mrs. Alfred P. Clark, president; Mrs. Wm. A. Russell, secretary and treasurer. The other officers representing the different churches were:

Mrs. J. Morrison.....	Grace Church
Mrs. N. G. White.....	Lawrence Street Church
Mrs. Wm. Shackford.....	Second Methodist Church
Mrs. Joseph Shattuck.....	Unitarian Church
Mrs. G. D. Armstrong.....	First Baptist Church
Mrs. L. Beach, Jr.....	First Methodist Church
Mrs. S. Webster.....	Parker Street Methodist Church
Mrs. H. F. Mills.....	Swedenborgian Church
Mrs. A. McFarlin.....	Universalist Church
Mrs. S. W. Wilder.....	First Baptist Church
Mrs. Fred. Butler.....	St. John's Church
Mrs. C. Payson.....	Second Baptist Church
Mrs. A. C. Clark.....	Central Church
Mrs. J. Hogg.....	Presbyterian Church
Mrs. Clark Carter.....	South Congregational Church

A public meeting was held at City Hall on the 19th, and at this meeting sufficient encouragement was given to warrant the society in commencing work. A building was purchased, completely furnished, and opened to receive children in November. January 4, 1876, the society was incorporated, and the building was removed to land of the Washington Mills, and enlarged by the addition of three rooms in the rear; but as there was no room to be spared for the care of the sick, an invalid's home was opened on Montgomery Street. A few years later the Washington Mills having other use for their land, removal became necessary. It was also essential that the nursery building should be in the vicinity of the mills, and it was determined to purchase a lot of land for the purposes required. This was accomplished, and money raised by subscription for erecting a larger building where the nursery and home should be combined. The different manufacturing companies gave three thousand dollars. Other sums were obtained from citizens, and the front of the building, now used as a hospital, was erected and dedicated February 9, 1882, the old buildings being placed in the rear and used for culinary purposes. The physicians soon began to urge upon the society the necessity of opening the hospital department to men as well as women, as most of the accidents in the mills occurred among the men, and there was no place in town for the care of many of these cases, and, heretofore, it had been customary to send to hospitals in Boston. This movement created the need of a larger building, and the society immediately gave their attention to increasing their accommodations. May, 1885, they succeeded in purchasing a lot adjoining the hospital from Mr. Chas. A. Brown, which was enlarged by the gift of an unknown friend of twenty-five feet front additional, thus giving them a lot of one hundred and thirty-five by seventy-eight feet. In 1885 the home for children was finished, free from debt, and in March, 1886, the hospital ell was completed and dedicated. The hospital, which will accommodate twenty patients, and the day nursery are both still under the charge of the society, and both have proved of great utility.

Not yet satisfied with their earnest and successful efforts, the society, in October, 1882, established a training-school for nurses, which is yet in successful operation. Eight nurses are in constant attendance,



graduating after having passed a successful examination and two years' training in the hospital. A directory for nurses was opened in 1885, aiming to assist persons requiring a nurse, and to aid nurses desiring work in their chosen profession. In these various works the ladies have been materially aided by the physicians of the city, who have cordially cooperated in much gratuitous service, and by lectures and aid in the training-school. One pleasant custom has grown up in connection with this enterprise which is worthy of mention. For the purpose of raising funds in support of the nursery and hospital, some one (it is believed Mr. and Mrs. Dunning) suggested having a public breakfast on the 1st day of May; this has grown gradually in favor, and seems to have become a permanent institution, the City Hall being usually filled from early morning till the middle of the forenoon, where the citizens meet in social intercourse, and no inconsiderable sums are realized from the entertainment.

The present president of the society is Mrs. Wm. E. Gowing, and for the past four years Miss A. E. Andrews has been the efficient head of the hospital.

PUBLIC SCHOOLS.—Forty years ago, 1845, there were within the present limits of Lawrence three of those small one-story buildings known as school-houses, where, as in other district schools throughout New England, the children had the benefit of a few weeks' instruction in the common branches of education in the two terms of summer and winter. They were, no doubt, like their prototypes, plain, rude and neglected, with cold floors, a uniform pattern of desks for pupils of all sizes, and these unpainted, on which, even if not instructed in the art, the male portion of the pupils were self-educated in the rudiments of sculpture.

In 1846 another building was prepared by the Essex Company, and under the direction of the Methuen school committee—Dr. Stephen Huse, James D. Herrick and Rev. Willard Spalding—was opened for pupils, with Nathaniel Ambrose¹ as teacher. This school soon increased in numbers from twenty-five to one hundred and fifty, and was continued till after the acceptance of the town charter.

At the first town-meeting Dr. William D. Lamb, James D. Herrick and Dan Weed were elected members of the school committee. In their report they give the record of five schools, located on Tower Hill, Hampshire Street, Jackson Street, Prospect Street and "Andover side." The rapid influx of scholars rendered active measures necessary, and as future success depends largely on right beginnings, the agent of the Essex Company, Mr. Storrow, requested Hon. Horace Mann (then the best authority in educational affairs) to meet the committee and devise with them

some systematic plan adapted to the growing wants of the city.

The plan then adopted contemplated the establishment of primary and intermediate schools scattered over the territory of the town, one grammar school upon the north side of the river, one grammar school upon the south side and one high school for the town.

At the town-meeting of 1848 five persons were chosen members of the committee,—Rev. Henry F. Harrington (now superintendent of schools in New Bedford), ²Nathan W. Harmon (since judge of the Police Court), ²James D. Herrick, Rev. Lyman Whiting and Rev. George Packard.

The plan matured and carried into execution at that early day, and which has continued to the present time, of dividing the schools into primary, middle, grammar and high grades, has proved by time to be the best and most economical. The government, the people and the non-resident owners of our large manufacturing establishments were liberal in the expenditure for schools, as, in fact, they have ever been since. The manufacturing companies paying at that time sixty-five per cent. of all the taxes, expressed their feelings in the language of one of their representatives, "Let the schools be the best that can be made at any cost," fully realizing the importance of early discipline in habits of method and order, of those who are ultimately to be the sovereigns of the State.

This same year the committee called the attention of the town government to the requirements of the statute for a building for a high school; twelve thousand five hundred dollars was promptly appropriated for the purpose, and the building now occupied by the Oliver Grammar School was erected, and named the Oliver School.

LAWRENCE HIGH SCHOOL.—In January, 1849, T. W. Curtis was elected principal of this school, to which seventeen pupils were admitted that month. In September twenty-two more were admitted, and Miss Sarah B. Hooker was elected assistant teacher. Mr. Curtis resigned in 1851, and for the remainder of the term Rev. H. F. Harrington, of the committee, was the instructor. In 1851 Mr. C. J. Pennell became principal. Miss Hooker resigned in January, 1852, and was succeeded by Miss Jane S. Gerrish, of Newburyport, who remained in service till June, 1873. In 1853 Mr. Pennell resigned to accept a professorship in Antioch College, Ohio.

He was succeeded by Mr. Samuel John Pike, then a tutor in Bowdoin College. After a service of three years he removed to Somerville. For a few months the position was filled by Mr. Wm. H. Farrar, and, in May, 1857, Mr. Wm. J. Rolfe was elected principal. Mr. Rolfe remained four and a half years, and removed to Boston, where he became associate editor of the *Boston Journal of Chemistry*, and is widely known as the author of several valuable works. For three

¹ Mr. Ambrose died September 30, 1878, at the age of sixty-seven. He was chosen annually during the continuance of the town a constable and part of the time inspector of police and captain of the watch.

² Now deceased.



months after the withdrawal of Mr. Rolfe, Mr. Thomas G. Valpey, an instructor in another institution, spent his vacation as principal of the High School, and in December, 1861, Mr. Henry L. Boltwood became principal. He was succeeded in 1863 by Albert C. Perkins. Mr. Perkins remained till 1873, and resigned to become principal of Phillips Academy, Exeter (and is now principal of the Adelphi Academy, Brooklyn, N. Y.). The subsequent teachers have been Charles T. Lazelle, 1873 to '75; Horace E. Bartlett, 1875 to '79; Edward H. Rice, 1879 to '80; Edwin H. Lord, 1880 to '84 (recently elected principal of the new Brewster Academy at Wolfboro'), and the present principal, Frank P. McGregor.

A second assistant, Miss Harriet C. Hovey, was elected in 1856, and, after a faithful service of seven years, was succeeded in 1863 by Miss Marcia Packard, who left the service in 1881. Other assistants have been Miss Alice E. Birtwell, 1873 till her decease, in 1883; Miss Emily G. Wetherbee, Mary A. Newell, Ada Lear, Katharine A. O'Keefe, Louisa S. Halley and Julia J. Underhill, the six last mentioned being still in service.

A sub-mastership was created in 1872, and the position has been held by Herbert S. Rice, 1872 to '77; Parker P. Simmons, to 1879; Anson M. Richardson, 1879 to '85; Edward J. Sartelle, and Edwin H. Lord, Edward H. Gulick.

The Oliver Grammar School commenced with a little over one hundred and forty scholars in the spring of 1848, in a wooden building where the Unitarian Church now stands, under the direction of Mr. Geo. A. Walton (now of the State Board of Education). It was supposed that this house would accommodate the grammar school on the north side of the river for an indefinite period; but before the walls of the High School building were up it was found necessary to alter the plan, and as soon as finished the grammar school was placed in the upper story, with seats for one hundred and eighty-four scholars. This soon proved too small, and in 1851 the three-story transverse section was built; again in 1867 the front portion of the original building was raised to its present height. Its name, *Oliver Grammar School*, was given in honor of the late General Oliver. In 1865 Hon. Milton Bonney, then mayor, who had been a member of the school committee for three years previous, and foresaw that the increasing growth of the grammar school would soon demand the use of the whole building, called the attention of the government to the necessity of providing a new building for the High School, and land was secured for the purpose, on which, in 1866, the new High School building was erected; but before its completion the sessions of the High School were held in the vestry of Trinity Church, and the entire original building was given up to the *Oliver Grammar School*.

During this time twelve other school-houses had

been built or enlarged in different parts of the city.

The committee were quite fortunate in securing the services of Mr. Walton, as he served as an able coadjutor in carrying into effect the plan adopted, and being zealous in his chosen profession, he brought the school to a high state of excellence. The Quincy School of Boston was the model on which the grammar school was built, then the only one of its kind in New England. Mr. Walton continued in the mastership of the school from April, 1848, for sixteen years, till the summer of 1864; was succeeded by James H. Eaton, who had been assistant teacher (now treasurer of the Essex Savings Bank), Mr. with Albert F. Scruton as assistant. After Mr. Eaton's resignation, Mr. John L. Brewster was elected (who was subsequently superintendent of schools from 1880 to 1887). Successive principals were James Barrell, Park S. Warren, Barrett B. Russel and the present principal, Benjamin F. Dame.

The school, commencing with two classes in 1848, has now eight grades under sixteen female teachers, with one head master and seven hundred pupils; the building will accommodate eight hundred and forty.

Packard School.—This is at the present time the grammar school of South Lawrence. The building was originally a brick building of eight rooms and was first occupied 1872. In March, 1885, it was destroyed by fire, but has since been rebuilt and contains ten rooms and a hall. The other buildings, the Lawrence and Union Street School buildings, on the south side of the river, are occupied by the primary schools.

The grammar school has been successively under the charge of Isaiah W. Ayer, Jonathan Tenney, John B. Fairfield, Wilbur Fiske Gile, John Orne, Jr., J. Henry Root, Jefferson K. Cole, Edward P. Shute and Albert P. Doe.

It would be impracticable in the limits of this article to give a more extended sketch of the growth of the schools of Lawrence, and mention the various faithful teachers who have been here employed. Suffice it to say that, in addition to the three previously named, Lawrence has seventeen public schools, employing seventy-two teachers, the total number of teachers being one hundred and eight in active employ; the average number of pupils for the year 1886 being nearly five thousand; average attendance, 96.42 per cent.

Free evening schools were established in 1859—for the benefit of those who are unable to attend school during the day—taught at first by volunteer teachers. The evening school started as an experiment, under the direction of Mr. George P. Wilson, the city missionary, in the old Odd Fellows' Hall. It was removed later to the basement of the City Hall. The school gradually grew in favor, has become a part of the public-school system, and the expense



is assumed by the city. There are now maintained one school in the westerly part of the city, one on the south side of the river, and a large one in the Oliver building for ordinary English branches of study, and a High School for instruction in algebra, chemistry and drawing.

Sewing has also become a permanent addition to the work of the middle or intermediate schools, and very creditable work of the pupils has been exhibited.

A sewing-school had been established in April, 1859, by the city missionary, and for twenty-five years was sustained under the care of the mission, charitable and competent ladies volunteering their services as instructors from year to year.

TRAINING-SCHOOL.—Among the schools a very valuable addition was made in 1869 by the establishment of a training-school for teachers, in which persons who could not perhaps incur the expense of absence from home in the normal schools of the State may have an opportunity to educate themselves for the business of instruction. The object of the school is to fit teachers for the work of organizing, governing and teaching in the public schools. The school has been under able management, and has proved of great value. The first instructors were Misses L. J. Faulkner and Fannie A. Reed, the latter of whom continued in the school for about ten years. In 1879 Miss Lily P. Shepard, a graduate of the Westfield Normal School, a teacher of experience in the training-school at Springfield, was placed at the head of the school, and has continued till the present. Her first assistant was Miss Clara Lear, who served one year, and was relieved at her own request, succeeded by Miss Clara T. Wing. Miss Wing resigned, and was followed by Miss Janet G. Hutchins, who, in 1887, accepted another position in Lewiston, Me.

PRIVATE SCHOOLS.—In 1847 several private schools supplied the wants of the people, in addition to those under charge of the town. Among these was a school opened near the commencement of 1847 by a Mr. Ward, assisted by Misses Proctor and Chapman, commencing with twenty-four scholars, which in its fourth term numbered forty.

Messrs. Twombly and Judkins had also a flourishing school; another was taught by Messrs. O'Connell and Bresnahan; and still another was opened in February, 1848, by Mr. and Mrs. Silas Blaisdell. This latter school continued for several years and was well patronized.

At the present time the St. Mary's parochial, a private school, embraces about twelve hundred pupils.

The French population also maintain a private school, and the German population also have a small school of sixty pupils. A successful private school is also under the charge of Misses Marcia Packard and Cornelia Harmon. Gordon C. Cannon has for several years conducted a flourishing commercial school.

MANUFACTURING.

THE LAWRENCE MACHINE SHOP was built and owned by the Essex Company, the main building, foundry and chimney being very substantial structures of stone, commenced in 1846 and finished in 1848. The works were operated by the Essex Company until 1852, Caleb M. Marvel being the superintendent. The machine-shop played an important part in the early days of Lawrence, was supplied with every variety of valuable tools and machines, and gave employment to a large number of skillful mechanics. Some of these still remained in Lawrence, though a large number, on the closing of the shop, sought other fields, and other places in various parts of the Union have had the benefit of their skill. Many locomotive engines were built here, the first of which was the "Essex," which was used on the railroad between Lawrence and Boston. Others were the "Welland" and the "Trent," which went to Ogdensburg; others went to the Erie Railroad, and many others later to other roads.

The Hoadley Portable Engine, which acquired extended celebrity, was first built here by John C. Hoadley, who subsequently established his works on the North Canal, whence large numbers of the engines went to the West and California. Here also the steam fire-engine, which, with modifications, is now in so general use, was first brought out by Thomas Scott and N. S. Bean. The first engine built, named the "Lawrence," was purchased by the city of Boston. Mr. Bean subsequently removed to Manchester, where the manufacture of these engines has since been carried forward. Considerable amounts of cotton machinery were also built here.

In 1852 the property of the machine-shop was transferred to a new company—the "Lawrence Machine-Shop Company," having a capital of seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars, the value of shares being fifty dollars each. The officers were Samuel Batchelder, president; J. H. W. Paige, treasurer; Gordon McKay, agent; and John C. Hoadley, superintendent, who, on the resignation of Colonel McKay, became agent.

The company suffered in common with others in the general depression of business in 1857, remained idle two years, and the property was sold to the Everett Mills Company.

The following just tribute to the memory of Mr. Hoadley, written by a gentleman in Boston, appeared in the *Advertiser* soon after his decease:

John Chipman Hoadly, born in Turin, N. Y., 1818, the son and grandson of farmers, passed his youth in Utica, N. Y. At the age of eighteen he was employed in preliminary surveys for the enlargement of the Erie Canal, and his ability as a draughtsman brought him quick promotion and more responsible work. In 1844 he went to assist Horatio N. and Erastus B. Bigelow in the foundation and development of the manufactories and town of Lancaster (now



Clinton, Mass.). Four years later he, with Gordon McKay, formed a partnership for the manufacture of engines and other machinery in Pittsfield. In 1852 he was called to the position of superintendent of the Lawrence Machine-Shop, and soon after reluctantly accepted the position of agent, well knowing that the failure of the company was only a question of time.

After the closing of that company he engaged in the manufacture of portable engines, then but little used in this country. Their skillful design and honest construction soon gained a name and a large market for them all over the country, especially in California. After a number of very prosperous years the crisis of 1873, with its shrinkage of value and bad debts, forced the company to close its affairs. During a part of this time Mr. Hoadley was also interested in the organization of the Clinton Wire-Cloth Company, agent of the New Bedford Copper Company and the McKay Sewing-Machine Association, and was one of the founders and president of the Archibald Wheel Company. Since 1876 he engaged in various interests, especially as an expert in mechanical and engineering questions, serving in important cases in the courts and in responsible positions in the great mechanical exhibitions.

The Massachusetts Institute of Technology, of which he was one of the original trustees, claimed for many years a part of his interest, and as a member of the State Board of Health during more than seven years, he did his part in this most useful work, besides filling other positions, as alderman in Lawrence, a member of the Legislature in 1858, and Presidential elector in 1862. Commissioned by the State during the Rebellion, he visited England to inspect ordnance for harbor defense.

This brief summary comprises, however, only a fraction of Mr. Hoadley's real interest. The unique feature of his life was his intense enthusiasm in many paths of literature and in the higher lines of thought. If mechanics was his pleasure, literature was his delight; no pressure of business could draw him wholly away from his books.

At the age of nineteen supporting a mother and six sisters, in the following year earning a reputation and a fortune, he kept out of the rut of a mere business man; studied French, German, Latin and Greek, and was as familiar with Homer's *Odyssey* and its translations as with the designs of his engines. Collecting about him a rich and choice library, reading in curious and out-of-the-way lines, as well as in the English classics; of marvelous memory, which seemed to retain everything he ever read, he became a centre around whom a group of inquirers would easily gather, and from whom they could always draw facts most correctly stated and poetry most musically spoken.

But beyond the intelligence and learning of the man, it was the character of Mr. Hoadley that im-

pressed all with whom he came in contact. He was more than honest; there was a touch of ancient chivalry in his sense of honor. He trusted men, and he expected and always acted as if he expected the same honorable sense in others that was found in him; and though at times sadly disappointed and cruelly treated, he never lost his confidence in man.

Many civil and mechanical engineers throughout the country owe to Mr. Hoadley their early enthusiasm, their free lessons in drawing and their present positions.

Politically he was one of the founders of the Republican party in Lawrence, and on the breaking out of the war none were more earnest to sustain the government, furnishing time and money to the cause of the Union, and had it not been for the unfortunate physical defect of deafness, he would, without doubt, have taken a still more active part in the military service.

Back of all else was the deep religious faith which supported his principles, and was revealed in every word and deed. He was a devout member of the Episcopal Church, and for many years was warden of Grace Church, Lawrence. He died in Boston at the age of sixty-seven years and ten months.

BAY STATE MILLS.—The Legislature of 1845 and '46 granted charters to the Bay State, with one million dollars capital, and Atlantic Mills, with two million dollars capital, the Union Mills, with one million dollars capital, and the Bleaching and Dyeing Company, with five hundred thousand dollars capital. The two latter never went into operation. The Bay State was the first of the manufacturing corporations, commencing in April, 1846, and the buildings were so far completed that the wheel of the River Mills was first set in motion February, 1848, and the manufacture of cloth commenced in June following. The buildings of this company were planned upon a large scale, consisting of three buildings, each of them, including the attics, nine stories in height; and the River Mill, with its wings, from three to five stories high, and fourteen hundred and eighty feet in length; all erected under the superintendence of Captain Phineas Stevens, of Nashua, an experienced engineer. These mills manufactured many varieties of woolen goods, new to American manufacture, and at one time were especially well known as manufacturers of the "Bay State Shawls," made of wool and at a moderate cost, of varied patterns, making in a single year, 1850, three hundred and fifteen thousand. They attracted much attention and commendation at the International Exposition of 1852, and at the Paris Exposition, 1867.

The first treasurer and general manager was Samuel Lawrence, who, as well as his brothers, Amos and Abbott Lawrence, had taken so deep an interest in the development of American manufactures, and had previously acquired much experience from their connection with the mills at Lowell. The first resident agent was M. D. Ross. Samuel Webber was agent



for a short time, and was succeeded by Captain Oliver H. Perry. After a long service he was succeeded by Captain Gustavus V. Fox, the efficient Assistant Secretary of the Navy during the Civil War.

In the general depression of trade these mills failed in 1857, remained idle two years, and the entire property passed into the hands of a new company, formed largely from the creditors of the former one, and took the name of

WASHINGTON MILLS.—Chartered in 1858 and organized with a capital of one million six hundred and fifty thousand dollars. They introduced several varieties of worsted goods, worsted coatings made of combed wool, heretofore imported and introduced into American mills by Hon. E. R. Mudge; twilled blue flannel coatings and opera flannels. Joseph S. Fay was first treasurer of these mills, succeeded by Jo-hua Stetson, who was followed by Henry F. Coe.

This corporation was the second in size in Lawrence, furnishing employment for about twenty-five hundred persons. The plant consisted of one cotton mill, 19,000 spindles, 65 sets of cards, 320 broad looms; one worsted mill, 8640 spindles, 885 looms; five woolen mills, weekly product, 100,000 yards cottons, 120,000 yards dress goods, 20,000 yards worsted, 40,000 yards woolens and 1000 shawls. Motive-power, seven water-wheels of 1025 horse-power, and two engines of 1000 horse-power.

The resident agents have been Gustavus V. Fox, previously agent of the Bay State Mills; Edward D. Thayer, William H. Salisbury, who engaged in other business in Chicago; Parker C. Kirk and John H. Needham, who yet remains in Lawrence engaged in trade. Mr. Granville M. Stoddard, for a long time superintendent of the worsted department, removed to Worcester. These mills furnished employment to about twenty-five hundred people, were well equipped with machinery and employed persons skilled in manufacturing, and produced goods of excellent quality; but they, as well as their predecessors, failed of ultimate financial success, and are now in liquidation. The mill property and water-rights have been transferred in 1886 to a new organization.

THE WASHINGTON MILLS COMPANY.—This company is now making a radical change. They have taken down the old buildings and replaced them with buildings of more modern style. One of the old mills took fire and was burned to the ground in 1887, but the new mills were so far advanced that but little delay ensued in continuing the operations of the company. The treasurer of the new company is Frederick Ayer, of Lowell; Manager, Thomas Sampson, of Lawrence; Clerk of the corporation, Sidney W. Thurlow; Paymaster, Alfred P. Clark, of Lawrence, who has been in this position through the various vicissitudes of the Bay State and Washington Mills.

THE ATLANTIC COTTON MILLS COMPANY was incorporated in February, 1846. Their original plan was to occupy the entire territory between the Bay

State and Pacific Mills. The westerly and easterly wings of the present building were built independently, and at a later date the two were connected by the large central structure; and, as this gave all the room required, the lower part of the territory was relinquished to the Essex Company, and subsequently sold to the Pacific Company for the Lower Pacific Mills in 1864. The first cotton arrived January, 1849, and was manufactured by the Atlantic in May following. Their second mill was manufacturing cloth in October of the same year. The Central Mill was commenced in February, 1850. These mills were built by the Essex Company, under the direction and in accordance with the plans of Captain Charles H. Bigelow, the company's engineer. The brick-work was under the direction of Levi Sprague and the wood-work under the supervision of Morris Knowles. The Essex Company also built at their machine-shop the machinery for the middle building.

These mills were constructed, as was the custom in the earlier days of manufacturing, more with a view to their practical utility than with regard to beauty, and the addition of the central structure, with its flat-roof and little wooden bell-tower in the centre, gave to the passer-by the idea of an enormous square brick bottle with short neck and stopper. The buildings were subsequently raised by the addition of mansard roofs, thereby giving additional working room, and contributing largely to the architectural appearance of the building, further improved by the removal of the old central bell-tower, and the construction of a handsome brick tower at one of the angles.

Financially, the Atlantic Mills have had their trials, as well as the others. This company, in common with all others, felt seriously the depression of 1857, and in 1876 the company was reorganized; the capital stock, which was originally one million five hundred thousand dollars, was reduced to one million dollars, the stockholders surrendering five shares of old stock for one of new and contributing seven hundred thousand dollars in cash, to make up the new capital—looking to a future of promise and hope. In 1886 they were again somewhat embarrassed by the crooked proceedings of their treasurer, Wm. Gray, Jr., and are at the present time moving forward successfully, it is believed, under new auspices. The mills are well-built, substantial buildings, have always been kept in thorough repair, and under the management of local agents have been models of neatness and order. The number of spindles is over 100,000; the number of looms is 1921; the number of persons employed, about 1100; product, 500,000 yards per week of sheetings and shirtings; motive-power, 4 turbine wheels and 1 double Corliss engine, 1000 horse-power.

The president was Abbott Lawrence, and the Treasurer, Charles S. Storow. Mr. William Gray succeeded Mr. Storow as treasurer, and held that position for thirty years, resigning in 1877. Henry



Saltonstall served as treasurer for a short period, and was followed by William Gray, Jr., who, by the betrayal of his trust, added one more honored name to the list of criminals that has disgraced American annals.

For the first ten years the resident agent was the late Gen. Henry K. Oliver, well-known and esteemed by all who knew him for his social qualities and for his active interest in whatever pertained to the interest and welfare of the city. He was succeeded by Joseph P. Battles, who had been previously cashier, who served the company with marked fidelity for twenty-nine years, till his resignation in 1887.

The present organization is as follows: President, Chas. H. Dalton, of Boston; Treasurer, William Hooper, of Boston; Agent, William A. Sherman, of Lawrence; Paymaster, J. C. Bowker, who has been in the employ of the company since 1856, succeeding Mr. Battles as paymaster in 1858.

PACIFIC MILLS.—Incorporated 1853, with a capital of two million dollars, increased, since, to two million five hundred thousand dollars. The mills and print-works buildings were built by the Essex Company under the direction and superintendence of Capt. Charles H. Bigelow. Large additions have since been made, and another mill for the Pacific is now in process of construction. This corporation is one of the largest textile establishments in the world, manufacturing, printing and dyeing ladies' cotton, worsted and wool dress fabrics.

The number of cotton spindles is 120,000; the number of worsted spindles, 30,000; the number of looms, 4600; the number of printing-machines, 25; the number of mills and buildings, 23, covering 44 acres of floor space, independently of a new large mill in process of erection. For motive-power and other purposes, there are in use in these mills: 11 turbine wheels of 5000 horse-power, 4 large steam-engines of 3500 horse-power, 42 small steam-engines, 50 steam boilers. The annual consumption of coal, 23,000 tons; the annual consumption of gas in 9000 burners, cost \$34,000; the annual consumption of cotton, 15,500 bales; the annual consumption of wool, 4,000,000 pounds. The annual capacity of the mills: Cottons printed and dyed, 70,000,000 yards; worsted goods, 30,000,000 yards; to make this cloth nearly 200,000,000 miles of yarn are required; the pay-roll for the year ending May, 1886, was \$1,790,000; the average earnings per day were for men and boys, \$1.26; for women and girls, 90 cents.

The Pacific Mills Library (connected with which is a reading-room containing daily papers) contains 9000 volumes, and has a fund of over \$13,000.

The relief society has expended annually for several years five thousand dollars for the relief of the sick and disabled. The society has been maintained by a contribution of two cents per week from the people employed, and a weekly contribution of \$2.50 from the corporation. The establishment of the Lawrence

Hospital has rendered this society less needful, and it has been dissolved.

The library was started by contributions of Mr. Lawrence and other directors, and a donation of one thousand dollars made by the Pacific Mills, and was maintained by a contribution of one cent per week from the people employed. The further increase of this library has also been relinquished, the much larger public library, open to all the citizens, affording larger and more varied opportunities for reading.

There was also a savings bank connected with the mills, the deposits amounting at one time to nearly one hundred thousand dollars. The city having now three chartered savings banks, the company have ceased receiving deposits, and all the accounts have been closed.

Of ten prizes (of ten thousand francs each) given by the Emperor Napoleon III., at the Paris Exposition of 1867, for the care of the material, intellectual and moral welfare of employees, the Pacific Mills received the second prize, out of five hundred applicants; and this was the only prize awarded to the United States or Great Britain.

The first treasurer and agent of these mills was Jeremiah S. Young, who was the lessee and manager of the Ballardvale Mills, at Andover. He brought with him to this new enterprise many skilled workmen, and devoted himself intensely to its development. The immense cost of so large an establishment, and of the expensive machinery necessary for its equipment, exhausted the capital and embarrassed its progress; and the stock, the par value of which was one thousand dollars per share, sold at one time at as low a price as one hundred dollars and less. Mr. Lawrence, the president, resolute and enterprising, had no idea of seeing the word "Fail" inscribed upon its banner. In his own name he raised the amount necessary to carry the enterprise forward, and was actively and earnestly engaged in its interest till his death, in 1855.

The treasurer, Mr. Young, died in 1857, and after a short interval, when the duties of treasurer were performed by Mr. George H. Kuhn, J. Wiley Edmands was chosen treasurer and manager. Mr. Edmands received his mercantile education in the firm of A. & A. Lawrence, and his thorough mercantile knowledge contributed not a little to the subsequent success. Associated with him, William C. Chapin came in 1853 from Providence to superintend the print-works, and subsequently became resident agent, while the selling agents of the manufactured goods, who also furnished the designs and patterns, were Messrs. Jas. L. Little & Co., of Boston, thus combining rare financial ability, excellent power of organization and skill in manufacture and taste in adapting manufactured goods to the wants of the public, combined with forecast and sagacity in sales.

Under this combination the mills enjoyed a period of unusual success, the market value of the stock



more than doubling in value. Mr. Chapin resigned in 1871, having been agent eighteen years, and returned to Providence, and Mr. John Fallen, who was his successor as chemist and superintendent of the print-works, became acting agent. Mr. Edmonds died in 1877, and was succeeded by Mr. James L. Little as treasurer. After Mr. Little's resignation and retirement from active business Mr. Henry Saltonstall was chosen treasurer; Mr. Joseph Stone, superintendent of the Lower or new Pacific Mills, and Mr. Walter E. Parker, superintendent of the Upper or old mills.

The present organization is as below,—Henry Saltonstall, treasurer and general manager; Henry Davenport, clerk of the corporation; Walter E. Parker, superintendent of mills; Charles T. Main, assistant superintendent of Lower Pacific; Francis H. Silsbee, assistant superintendent of Upper Pacific; Samuel Barlow, superintendent of print-works.

The cashiers resident in Lawrence have been successively Rev. Alexander H. Clapp, D.D., now treasurer of the American Home Missionary Society, New York; Ebenezer T. Colby, who enlisted in 1862 in the Union Army,—captain and later lieutenant-colonel of his regiment, and since the war in the Custom House at Boston; Benjamin T. Bourne from 1862 to 1866, now of Providence, R. I.; John R. Rollins from 1866 to 1879; and the present cashier, William P. Anderson. Within the past few years extensive repairs have been made, new buildings erected, and new machinery of the most modern and improved kinds furnished, to adapt the mills to the demands of the time, and the mills are in a high state of efficiency and prosperity.

Hon. J. Wiley Edmonds was born in Boston March 1, 1809, received his education at a Boston grammar school and entered the High School when it was founded, in 1821. On leaving school he entered the employ of Messrs. A. & A. Lawrence, was gradually promoted and in 1839 became a member of the firm. In 1843 he retired from the firm and for several years was interested in the Maverick Woolen Mills at Dedham. In the fall election of 1852 he was elected to the House of Representatives in Congress and served one term of two years, declining a re-election. He was not politically ambitious, and though often sought for political positions, the only one which he accepted was that of Presidential elector in the election of 1868. In 1855, when the Pacific Mills stock was at its lowest ebb, Mr. Edmonds, whose well-known energy and capacity were fully appreciated by Mr. Lawrence and the other owners, was requested to take the treasurership of these mills, and under his management, aided cordially by others associated with him, the value of the stock had advanced, until at the time of his decease it had more than doubled in value.

His counsel was sought by many institutions aside from the Pacific Mills. He was a director in the

Arkwright Mutual Fire Insurance Company; the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company; and of the Suffolk Bank; vice-president of the Provident Institution for Savings in Boston, and director and at one time treasurer of the Ogdensburg Railroad. His position also for several years as president of the National Association of Wool Manufacturers brought his knowledge into requisition and enabled him to exert a powerful influence upon national legislation. Moderate and conservative, he believed that the least protective duties should be imposed that would suffice to make our national industry independent, and it was in consequence of his advocacy of equal protection to agricultural and manufacturing interests that he was as well known in other parts of the country as in New England.

Mr. Edmonds was a sterling patriot at the commencement of the Civil War. He gave his time, influence and money to the support of the government, and on the successful termination of the war he was president of the convention at Boston which nominated General Grant for the Presidency.

Resolute and determined, he bore beneath a somewhat stern exterior a very kind and benevolent heart. This was manifest in his management of the people in his employ, all of whom not only respected his great ability, but had equal confidence in his justice, and there were no more sincere mourners at his funeral than in the large delegation from the Pacific Mills.

To the city of Newton, where he resided, he gave toward the founding of a public library ten thousand dollars for the building and five thousand dollars for books, and an annual contribution of five thousand dollars subsequently.

Mr. Edmonds died in the midst of usefulness, but not unexpectedly, of heart-disease, January 31st, 1877. His funeral, which took place February 3d, was largely attended by official delegations of all the organizations with which he was connected, and a detachment of the Grand Army Post of Newton; the flags of Newton were placed at half-mast, the bells tolled during the funeral and business was generally suspended,—while at Lawrence the bells of the Atlantic, Pacific and Washington Mills were tolled from one to two o'clock.

LAWRENCE DUCK COMPANY.—This company was incorporated in 1852, with a capital of three hundred thousand; par value of the shares, one thousand dollars. The original owners were Albert Fearing, Isaac Thatcher and David Whiton.

For more than twenty-five years the mill was managed by Isaac Thatcher, the treasurer, and Isaac Hayden as local agent, the latter-named being a man of considerable inventive genius, to whom the company are indebted for improvements and inventions in the machinery used. The company manufactures cotton duck of several varieties, and sail twine, the duck manufactured being of superior quality and finding

ready sale. The quality of the duck for sails has been well tested on some of the favorite yachts,—“Astor’s,” the “Coronet” and others,—and large amounts of mining duck manufactured here have been used in California and Australia. Harvesting duck for our Western harvesting machines, paper-makers’ cotton felts and tent duck are also manufactured.

Treasurer, Aaron Hobart; agent, William A. Barrell; paymaster, W. L. S. Gilchrist.

The Everett Mills Company was incorporated in 1860, and commenced operations in the summer of 1861, having purchased the large stone building formerly owned by the Lawrence Machine-Shop Co. The company was formed through the efforts of Mr. Samuel Batchelder, one of the pioneers in the Lowell enterprise, and who, in the early days of Lowell, was the first agent of the Hamilton Manufacturing Company at Lowell, 1825 to 1831. The capital stock of the company is \$800,000; the number of employees, 1050 (male, 400; female, 650); goods manufactured, gingham and a general variety of colored fabrics of cotton, cottonade, chevots, denims and dress goods.

The agents have been Daniel D. Crombie, who was subsequently treasurer, 1871-78; John R. Perry; David M. Ayer, who has retired to the independent life of a farmer; Charles D. McDuffie, now in Manchester; and his son, the present agent, Fred. C. McDuffie. The paymaster for a long period was William A. Barrell, who resigned in 1880 to accept the agency of the Lawrence Duck Company. The mill has 33,280 spindles, 1014 looms, 1050 employees, and the product amounts to over 10,000,000 yards per annum, using upwards of 3,000,000 pounds of cotton. Incorporators, James Dana, Samuel Bab and Charles W. Cartwright.

The power is furnished by three turbine wheels driven by water from the Essex Company’s canal, the raceway discharging into the Spicket River near its entrance into the Merrimack. The present management,—Eugene H. Sampson, treasurer; Fred’k C. McDuffie, agent; Isaac Wynn, superintendent; George M. Doe, paymaster.

Mr. Samuel Batchelder, a native of Jaffrey, N. H., was born June 8, 1784, died February, 1879, at the age of ninety-four years, seven months and twenty-eight days. For a large part of his life he had been connected with cotton manufacturing interests as a proprietor and inventor. As early as 1807 he helped to establish and took charge of a cotton-spinning mill of five hundred spindles in New Ipswich, N. H., and soon became known as a skillful manufacturer, eager to discover and apply improved methods in what was at that time the infancy of manufacturing in America. In 1825 he was called upon to assist in the establishment of the second factory, on the site of the present city of Lowell, the Hamilton Manufacturing Company, and was agent of the same until 1831. In 1837 he united with gentlemen in Boston in the purchase of the water-power and in laying the foundations of

another manufacturing city at Saco, Me. He resigned in 1846 and retired to his home in Cambridge, but not for the quiet retirement that he anticipated. He soon became interested as one of the proprietors in the new enterprise at Lawrence in 1847, and in 1855 again took charge of the York Mills at Saco, and continued treasurer and manager of these mills and of the Everett at Lawrence as long as he was able to attend to active business, after he had passed his eightieth year.

THE PEMBERTON MILL COMPANY was incorporated in 1853, and the mill was built the same year. The architecture of the mill varied from the old style of mill-buildings, and on its completion was considered a model of beauty for a building of that character; it was built, however, at an unfortunate period, and owing to the growing depression in manufacturing interests, which culminated in 1857, its early years were unsuccessful, and it remained idle from 1857 to 1859, when Mr. David Nevins and George Howe purchased the entire property for three hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, and operated the new organization under the name of the

PEMBERTON MANUFACTURING COMPANY. It continued under the new owners until the 10th of January, 1860, when, without a moment’s warning, the main building fell, burying beneath its ruins about six hundred persons, of which a fuller account is elsewhere given.

THE PEMBERTON COMPANY, of which David Nevins,¹ George Blackburn and Eben Sutton¹ were controlling owners, rebuilt the mill upon the old foundations in 1860, and commenced operations in 1861. The capital stock of this company is four hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

The resident agent of the original company was John E. Chase, who continued in the service of the company until after the fall of the mill, and was succeeded by the present agent, Frederick E. Clarke, who was the first paymaster. Mr. Clarke was followed as paymaster by Samuel M. Newhall, who died in the service. The present company has been quite successful, interrupted only by a fire, which destroyed the dye-house in 1886.

This mill manufactures a large variety of cotton goods, running twenty-eight thousand spindles, eight hundred and twenty-five looms and employs about eight hundred and fifty persons.

Present organization,—Henry S. Shaw, treasurer; Frederick E. Clarke, agent; Miss E. L. Gleason, cashier.

January 10, 1860, is memorable in the annals of Lawrence for one of the most appalling calamities that had ever occurred in New England—the fall of the Pemberton mill. There were in the employ of the company at this time nine hundred and eighteen persons. In the main mill about six hundred were

¹ Deceased.



industriously employed at their work, when, at about 5 o'clock P. M., in less time than it takes to record the fact, the entire mill was a mass of ruins, with the six hundred buried in the wreck. But very few moments elapsed before the whole city was in commotion; crowds rushing to the scene in an agony of fear and suspense to learn the fate of friends and relatives, and the ruins were as rapidly covered with volunteers equally anxious and earnest to rescue. Many succeeded in working their way out unaided. Others were saved by herculean efforts. As darkness closed in, lanterns and bonfires became necessary (fortunately the gas-lights were all extinguished by the fall of the mill) and the work continued far into the night, and the larger number had either escaped or had been rescued, when the cry of fire in the ruins sent a thrill of horror through all, as it was known that several yet remained, unable to escape. Determined and almost superhuman efforts were made in their behalf; a deluge of water was poured into the ruins from the Washington Mills, the Fire Department and a steam fire-engine from Manchester, even the women taking turns at the brakes to relieve the wearied firemen, but all efforts were unavailing. Fourteen perished in the flames. Eighty-seven in all were killed or died from injuries, forty-three others were severely injured, and of these, two were disabled for life. The remainder escaped unhurt, or with slight wounds.

The City Hall was immediately opened for the reception of the dead and wounded, and not only the physicians of the city, but those of neighboring towns, and others passing through in the cars, volunteered their services and worked with unceasing energy for the relief of the sufferers.

Equally prompt were the tokens of sympathy and pecuniary aid that began to pour in from all quarters. The very next morning the New England Society of Manufacturers started a subscription, and before night two thousand dollars were placed by J. Wiley Edmands in the hands of the mayor, on the next day three thousand dollars more came, and the society continued to send till their donation amounted to over nineteen thousand dollars. Other clubs and citizens of Boston increased the amount to nearly twenty-eight thousand dollars; the chords of sympathy were touched throughout the land, and from many neighboring towns and cities, not only in Massachusetts, but in the New England States, from New York and Philadelphia, and from the distant States of Indiana, Alabama, Georgia, North Carolina and Kentucky, from old and young, from Jew and Gentile, came words of sympathy and contributions of money, until, the thirteenth day after the event, the mayor and trustees issued a circular requesting that no more should be sent. The total amount of gifts sent amounted to \$65,579.29.

The committee in charge of the funds were the mayor, Hon. Chas. S. Storow, Henry K. Oliver, Wm. C. Chapin and John C. Hoadley. They organized on

the 15th, with the mayor, Hon. Daniel Saunders, Jr., as chairman; Chas. S. Storow, treasurer; and Pardon Armington, clerk, appointed an inspector for each ward of the city, who should devote his entire time to looking after the wants of the sufferers in his district, —Sylvester A. Furbush for Ward 1, J. Q. A. Batchelder for Ward 2, Wm. D. Joplin for Ward 3, Henry Withington for Ward 4, Elbridge Weston for Ward 5, and Daniel Saunders for Ward 6.

On the 16th of January the committee requested of the Pemberton Company the use of one of their boarding-houses for a hospital for those who could not be properly cared for at their own lodgings. While they were debating the method of managing this, a letter was received from Mr. James M. Barnard, a Boston merchant, proposing to come with a corps of nurses and physicians at his own expense, and to apply his aid wherever it would be most efficient. Mr. Barnard conducted the "Home" for more than three months, assisted by Dr. J. H. Morse as attending physician, and ladies from Boston and Lawrence, at an expense to himself of nearly one thousand dollars.

In regard to the cause of the fire, but for which fourteen more lives could have been saved, it should be stated, as it has not been, that, at the thoughtful suggestion of the mayor (Mr. Saunders), the kerosene lanterns in use on the ruins had all been carried off and exchanged for sperm-oil lanterns, as less liable to cause accident. Notwithstanding this, a lantern was subsequently broken and probably ignited readily the floating cotton dust, and with fatal results.

An inquest was held, commencing Thursday morning, January 12th, over the bodies of those killed by the catastrophe, and a large amount of evidence was taken, occupying the time of ten days. Much contradictory testimony was brought forward, almost every witness having a theory of his own. Some thought the foundations were not sufficiently strong and that they were not deep enough; but an examination by experts showed that the foundations were in perfect condition and undisturbed, and the mill was subsequently rebuilt upon them. One or two masons testified that the mortar in the walls was not good and that it had too large a proportion of sand; three other practical builders of great experience stated an entirely contrary opinion; others thought the walls were not thick enough, but one of the ablest engineers, who stands at the head of his profession, and who has had a life-time of practical experience, testified that, in his judgment, if the columns had been good, the walls would have been safe, and that the perfect running of the lines (of shafting) (and it appeared in evidence that the machinery had never been running more perfectly during the six years it had been in operation than it was running at the time of the fall) would give him additional confidence, if he felt any apprehension, while it would be a powerful argument that the trouble did not originate in the walls. And still another experienced



engineer testified that if the floors should fall, they would bring down the walls if they were twice as thick.

A large number of witnesses testified to the imperfect character of the cast-iron pillars, the remains of which were found in the ruins; and, in fact, the broken columns exhibited to the jury were the best witnesses of all—very many of them showing great inequality of thickness, some being on one side no more than one-eighth of an inch in thickness. The question was asked, "Why was not as much care taken in the selection of the columns as in the other parts of the mill?" The answer to this may be found in the testimony.

Mr. Geo. W. Smith testified that he was a dealer in general wrought-iron works for store-fronts, &c., and had had a great deal of experience in erecting cast-iron pillars; he never applied any tests.

Mr. Joslyn, superintendent of a foundry in Lawrence and previously at Lowell, testified that the casting must have been badly done: "one so bad as the one exhibited we could have discovered, and should have broken it up; all our pillars are tested" (i. e., before they leave the foundry).

Mr. Hoadley, superintendent of the Lawrence Machine-Shop, testified that he had visited the ruins and seen three pillars, which, if properly tested, should have been rejected. "*I should not willingly send out such columns myself.*"

Mr. Hinchley, superintendent of the Merrimac Manufacturing Company, at Lowell, described the pillars used at the Merrimac—they were tested at the machine-shop; "we never used any test ourselves."

Mr. Burke, superintendent of the Lowell Machine-Shop, testified, "No test is employed for pillars, except such as they receive when the core is extracted, the casting being slung up and rapped to loosen the core. The pillar from the Pemberton has the appearance of being defective from want of care in securing the core; never knew of any pillars from our foundry broken after they were set up; have had some returned because they were crooked, caused probably by inequality of thickness of the opposite sides."

Mr. James B. Francis testified, "As far as I know, there has been no method, in Lowell, of testing columns; this is the first time I ever heard or read of an iron column breaking."

From all the above testimony it is very evident that columns of cast-iron receive whatever test is given them at the foundry. The columns used in the Pemberton received the ordinary inspection; no crooked ones were used; they were received in good faith from what was presumed to be a reliable foundry; the result proved far otherwise, notwithstanding the agent's letter to Mr. Putman given in the evidence, stating that they were *first-rate columns*; and a very significant fact in connection with them is, that the founders could not be found, to be summoned before the jury.

The jury found, in their verdict, that the cause of the fall of the mill was found in the defective columns, and then, notwithstanding the preceding evidence, laid the responsibility of the fall of the building upon the engineer, Capt. Bigelow, for not doing what no one else had ever thought of doing before.

On the strength of that verdict (presumably) Mr. Nason, in his "Gazetteer of Massachusetts," published 1874, speaking of the Pemberton Mill, says the "original structure was built by an *incompetent architect*," and then, in speaking of the Pacific Mills, says, "They occupy a vast area and present a very imposing appearance, and taken together exhibit much architectural beauty and in their colossal proportions indicate the vast design, &c." He does not, however, seem to be aware that these colossal mills, as well as the Atlantic Mills, the Lawrence Machine-Shop and the duck-mill, were all built by the same "incompetent architect."

Of the killed by the fall of the Pemberton Mill, thirteen were mutilated past recognition. For these a burial-lot was purchased in Bellevue Cemetery, and they were buried Sunday, March 4, 1860, Rev. Messrs. Packard and Fisher conducting the services.

A plain granite monument marks their resting-place, bearing the following inscription:

"In memory of the
Unrecognized dead,
Who were killed by the fall of the Pemberton Mill,
January 10, 1860."

For the two persons who were permanently disabled annuities in trust were purchased by a deposit of \$14,000 with the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company, in two separate sums of \$6500 and \$7500, to create these annuities of \$350 and \$400, to be paid in quarterly payments to the annuitants for the remainder of their lives. The provisions of this trust are best shown in Mr. Storrow's own words in his final report,—

"For persons in the enjoyment of ordinary health, the purchase of an annuity is a very simple matter. The tables of mortality show with sufficient accuracy their chance of life according to their age, and the payment once for all of a certain sum purchases for them an annuity of a stipulated amount to be paid to them for life. But what human sagacity could calculate the chance of life of these two young persons in our charge? Would it be one year or fifty? How could we balance on the one hand the effect of wounded limbs, of consequent disease, of long-continued suffering, and, on the other, the restoring power of youth, of patience and of comfortable homes? It was evidently impossible to purchase outright these annuities, because it was evidently impossible to estimate their duration or calculate their value. The only mode to provide for these persons was by annuities in trust—that is, by deposits, the income of which should be paid to them as long as they live.

"But a difficulty here arose. Upon the death of an annuitant in trust, the sum deposited reverts to the person who placed it originally, or to such persons as he may direct in the deed of trust. This event may not happen for fifty years, and where will the committee be then? The poor patients may outlive us all. To provide for this contingency, it was determined that upon the decease of either of the two annuitants, the principal sum should be paid to the members of the committee, or the survivors or survivor of them, or to the executors or administrators of the last survivor, and by them be appropriated to such charitable purpose or purposes as shall be appointed in writing by the actuary of

the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company, the mayor of the city of Lawrence for the time being, and the president of the Essex Savings Bank, or any two of them, in such manner as they shall deem most conformable to the original charity for which the moneys were contributed.

"By this arrangement we secure to our annuitants what is necessary for their comfort as long as they live, without paying at the outset an exorbitant price. We provide that upon their decease the amount no longer needed for their benefit shall again be applied to the charitable purposes for which it was intended, and that this shall be done under the direction of three persons who must all be in existence, whatever may be the uncertainty of human life, two of whom, from the offices they hold, must inevitably be persons especially fit to discharge the duties of a trust, and the third of whom is the principal representative of the city whose people were the objects of the original charity. Beyond all this, the Supreme Judicial Court has power to regulate and enforce the execution of this trust if it should ever hereafter become necessary to do so."

THE LAWRENCE WOOLEN-MILL, known familiarly as Perry's Mill, was projected by Captain Oliver H. Perry, and the company was incorporated in 1864 with a capital stock of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. This mill contained about three thousand two hundred and twenty spindles and forty-seven looms, and furnished employment to one hundred and twenty-five persons. The product was a variety of fancy woolsens, especially cloakings and shawls. Captain Perry, its founder, was a son of Commodore Oliver Hazard Perry, and for a considerable time followed the profession of his father, being an officer in the United States Navy. In the Mexican War he commanded a naval battery at the storming and capture of Vera Cruz. He resigned his position in the navy in 1847, and gave his attention to the peaceful pursuits of industry. In 1848 he accepted the agency of the Middlesex Mills at Lowell, where he remained till he became agent of the Bay State Mills at Lawrence in 1850. In 1856 he became a partner in the house of Lawrence, Stone & Co., the selling agents of the Middlesex and Bay State Mills. On the failure of that firm in the depressed times of 1857, he was retained as manufacturing and purchasing agent of the Middlesex, and in connection with Mr. R. Wendell as selling agent. In 1862 the firm of Perry & Wendell was formed, enlarged by the addition of Mr. S. W. Fay in 1869. Captain Perry continued to operate the Lawrence Woolen-Mill until his death, August 30, 1878. The paymaster and book-keeper was Augustus J. Shove, who continued in the employ of the company till his decease, June 17, 1885. The original company has been dissolved, and it is now a private enterprise, organized 1886, owned by Messrs. Phillips & Kunhardt, of New York. Mr. George E. Kunhardt is the local manager, and the goods are sold in New York by Mr. F. Stanhope Phillips, also the financial manager. Frank E. King, pay-master.

THE ARLINGTON MILLS, the youngest of the large corporations of Lawrence, is located on the Spicket River, occupying the site of the Stevens Piano-Forte Factory.

The power of the river at this point was used nearly sixty years since by Mr. Abiel Stevens, and a mill built for the construction of piano-forte cases.

After the sale of the property by Mr. Stevens the buildings were used successively for the manufacture of hats, then for the manufacture of flax and for other purposes until 1865, when the Arlington Woolen-Mills were incorporated, the stockholders and incorporators being Robert M. Bailey (formerly in business in Lawrence), Charles A. Lombard, Joseph Nickerson and George C. Bosson.

The original capital of the mills was two hundred thousand dollars. The following year, 1866, the buildings were entirely destroyed by fire. A new mill was built in 1867, and the capital stock was increased to two hundred and forty thousand dollars. In 1869, the company having suffered severe losses, the stockholders paid in the whole amount of two hundred and forty thousand dollars of the then existing capital stock, and changed the management of the mills by the election of Joseph Nickerson for president, and William Whitman treasurer and manager, under whose management the company has made great advances, additional buildings have been erected, and the corporation at the present time is one of the most flourishing in the city. The capital stock has been increased to one million five hundred thousand dollars.

The articles now made by this company are fine cotton and fine worsted yarns for manufacturers' uses, women's worsted and cotton dress-goods, fine all-wool dress-goods and worsted suitings, also black and colored alpacas and mohairs, for all of which the company has established an enviable reputation. Mr. Joseph Nickerson died February 29, 1880, and was succeeded as president by his eldest son, Albert W. Nickerson, who now fills this office. The other executive officers are: William Whitman, treasurer; William D. Hartshorne, worsted superintendent; Charles Wainwright, paymaster; Robert Redford, superintendent cotton department; James M. Beeley, paymaster.

LAWRENCE GAS COMPANY.—The works of this company were built by the Essex Company, the Bay State Mills and the Atlantic Cotton-Mills, at their joint expense, for the purpose of supplying themselves with light, each company paying towards the expense of their erection in proportion to the amount of their paid capital stock. The company was afterward incorporated in 1849, with a capital of forty thousand dollars; this has been increased from time to time, with the growth and increasing demands of the city, to four hundred thousand dollars, and the works have been proportionately extended. The first agent was Henry G. Webber, succeeded in 1853 by George D. Cabot, to whose thorough and efficient supervision are due the improvements and extension of the original plant. The company has now thirty miles of mains, seventeen miles of service pipe, and two thousand five hundred meters. The retort-house contains one hundred and thirty-seven retorts, capable of producing seven hundred thousand cubic feet



of gas in twenty-four hours, and holders of a capacity of seven hundred thousand feet for storing gas. The amount of coal used per annum is ten thousand tons, and in purifying the gas ten thousand bushels of lime and three thousand bushels of oxide of iron are used. Mr. Cabot resigned the agency in 1884, after a service of thirty-one years, and was succeeded by C. J. R. Humphreys, the present agent.

Lawrence had two electric light companies, one of which, the Lawrence Electric Light Company, has been absorbed by the gas company, who will hereafter furnish the electric light to those who desire it; and the Edison Electric Light Company, by whom all the streets and many private establishments are at present lighted.

THE WRIGHT MANUFACTURING COMPANY.—This company originated in 1864, when Algernon S. Wright, then head mechanic of the Atlantic Mills, proposed to Mr. A. W. Stearns and Dr. A. J. French to become partners in the manufacture of woolen yarn, and a copartnership was formed under the name of the Wright Manufacturing Company, and a mill was leased. The idea of making yarn was abandoned, and instead, at the suggestion of Mr. Stearns, the mill was equipped with machinery for making braids. The building now owned by the company is one hundred and fifty feet long and three stories high, and has increased from fifty braiding machines to eight hundred.

The company was incorporated in 1874, with a capital of sixty thousand dollars, and organized by the choice of Dr. French president, Mr. Wright superintendent, and Mr. Stearns treasurer and selling agent, who continues in that office to the present time. A large variety of braids is manufactured, especially mohair trimming braid, made at first on imported English machinery, but recently by devices which adapt the common braiding machinery to the production of the mohair. These devices have been perfected and patented by the company. Number of people employed, one hundred and fifty. Goods manufactured, five hundred thousand dollars annually. A. S. Wright, president; A. W. Stearns, treasurer and selling agent; William L. Warden, clerk.

THE MERRIMAC BRAID MILL has more recently been established, and is under the direction of E. W. Pierce.

THE GLOBE WORSTED MILLS, taking their power from the Spicket River, manufacture worsted carpet yarns of all description, and employ about one hundred persons—Thomas Clegg, treasurer; Samuel Robinson, agent; Herbert Robinson, superintendent.

THE PROSPECT WORSTED MILLS, owned by Frederick Butler and Samuel Robinson, formerly located on the Lower Canal, and later on the Spicket River, now grown to larger proportions, occupy a fine mill on the South Canal, employ two hundred

hands, and their monthly product amounts to forty thousand dollars; manufacture fine worsted yarns, using about eight hundred thousand to one million pounds of wool per annum.

THE BUTLER FILE COMPANY, originated by James and Frederick Butler in 1844, and introduced in Lawrence in earlier days, is now owned and operated by G. M. Murray & Co., and manufactures hand-cut files and rasps of every variety. They employ fifteen men, manufacture monthly three hundred dozen files, using for this purpose forty-five tons of steel per annum.

LAWRENCE FLYER AND SPINDLE WORKS are situated on the North Canal, and commenced work in 1862, as a private enterprise; organized as a stock company in 1867, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. They were at first engaged mainly in the manufacture of flyers and spindles, the invention of Oliver Pearl, of the Atlantic Cotton Mills, in addition to which they now manufacture skein winders, card strippers, Jacquard and shedding engines for fancy weaving, and other cotton machinery—Treasurer, Joseph P. Battles; Superintendent, George F. Barker.

THE LAWRENCE COFFEE AND SPICE MILLS, G. H. Hadley & Co., proprietors, have been in successful operation for several years.

DOWNING RUBBER COMPANY, L. H. Downing manager, manufactures gossamer clothing, established 1882; monthly product, twelve hundred garments; employing twelve hands.

STANLEY MANUFACTURING COMPANY.—The buildings owned by this company were built by Gordon McKay, for the manufacture of the well-known McKay sewing-machines. The Stanley Manufacturing Company was incorporated 1882, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. A. P. Tapley, president; F. F. Stanley, treasurer; men employed, one hundred and eighty. They manufacture McKay sewing-machines, the McKay and Bigelow heel-machines, and the McKay and Copeland lasting-machines, also screw-machines, and a general line of shoe machinery. The agent resident in Lawrence is Mr. M. V. B. Paige; Paymaster, Charles E. Hardy.

CARD CLOTHING.—D. Frank Robinson commenced business in 1857, occupying for many years a wooden building on Broadway near Essex Street. He has recently built a fine brick building in the same street, where are employed eighty-two machines operated by twenty persons. The product of these machines is eighty thousand square feet of clothing per annum. Leather used annually, twelve thousand sides; cloth rubber, two thousand square yards; wire, thirty-six tons. Mr. Albert Warren (mayor 1866) was at one time associated with Mr. Robinson. Card clothing was also manufactured here for many years by Messrs. Stedman & Fuller. The partnership was dissolved, and the business was conducted by the Stedman & Fuller Manufac-



turing Company, since removed to Providence, Rhode Island.

Beside the Lawrence Flyer and Spindle Works, named above, there were other works for similar purposes—JAMES McCORMICK & Co., manufacturing six to eight hundred flyers and pressers for cotton flyers per month, and employing six men; and THOMAS HALL, manufacturer of flyers, spindles and caps, to which are added some specialties and improvements of his own invention.

LAWRENCE BLEACHERY, established 1877, by Nathaniel W. Farwell & Son. The bleachery and dye works are located on the South Canal, employ one hundred men, and have a monthly product of one million five hundred thousand yards of bleached goods, and five hundred thousand yards of colored goods—Kirk W. Moses, superintendent.

SPICKET MILL, operated by John W. Barlow, manufactures belt-lacing, picker straps, rawhide baskets, worsted aprons and worsted rolls.

WAMESIT MILL, situated on the Spicket River, was formerly used for the manufacture of leather board by George Ed. Davis, who removed to Maine, and was succeeded by W. B. Hayden & Co., who carried on similar business. It is now used as a shoddy mill operated by Tower, Wing & Co.

THE LAWRENCE MACHINE COMPANY was incorporated 1882. Their works are located on the North Canal, where are manufactured printing presses, dynamometers, centrifugal pumps, etc. Eighty persons are employed here, and the monthly product is about fifty thousand pounds of machinery. Treasurer, A. A. Brooks; Superintendent, William O. Webber.

THE MERRIMAC MACHINE-SHOP is a private enterprise; Albert Blood, proprietor; commenced business in 1853. From twelve to twenty persons are employed here in the manufacture of heavy iron-work, dye-house machinery, steam-engines, steam fire pumps, etc. This is an outgrowth of the old Lawrence Machine Shop, Mr. Blood being formerly in charge of the building of wooden machinery in that establishment.

Other private establishments for the manufacture and repair of machinery are those of,—

STEDMAN & SMITH, established 1882, manufacturing worsted machinery and employing twenty men; monthly production, twenty-five hundred dollars.

WEBSTER & DUSTIN, located on the North Canal, manufacture shafting and gearing and all varieties of mill work.

JOSEPH E. WATTS, machinist and brass finisher and manufacturer of steam and water-pressure regulators of his own invention, which are extensively used.

EDWARD MCCABE, boiler-maker and manufacturer of bleachers and oil tanks, employing twenty men.

WILLIAMS & SMITH manufacture many varieties of mill and other machinery.

JOHN H. HORNE & SONS, have recently erected

a large shop in South Lawrence for the manufacture of paper-mill machinery, in which they have been engaged many years.

LAWRENCE LINE Co., manufacturers of braided and laid cotton lines, and silk fish-lines; bleached and unbleached chalk-lines. Established 1881; employ twenty hands. Hiram F. Mills, president; L. S. Mills, treasurer; J. Marston, clerk.

ARCHIBALD WHEEL Co. manufactures iron-hubbed wheels by Archibald's patent process. Nine-tenths of the wheels in use on steam fire-engines in the United States are of this manufacture, and have been adopted to a certain extent after severe tests by the United States government. D. Arthur Brown, president; Hezekiah Plummer, treasurer; E. A. Archibald, superintendent. Capital, \$60,000.

Lawrence has three iron foundries,—the Merrimac Iron Foundry, founded early by Elbridge Joslyn and Alvah Bennett, at present managed by William H. Joslyn; the foundry of Edmund Davis & Son on the North Canal, now managed by George E. Davis, and the foundry of Webster & Joslyn, located on the Spicket River.

Here are also two brass foundries, one established by James Byrom and one of more recent date by E. T. Davis.

The L. SPRAGUE SHUTTLE Co., established by Levi Sprague & Co. (1864), for the purpose of making bobbins and spools for textile manufacturing purposes. The business was commenced in a small wooden building, which has given way to a two-story brick building, one hundred by fifty feet, in which shuttle manufacturing has been added to the other business. From one hundred and fifty to two hundred men are employed.

The UNION SHUTTLE Co. manufacture power-loom shuttles of every description, also bobbins and spools and patent-expanding cop-spindles. F. G. Page, agent; George F. Barber, treasurer.

Other manufacturers of bobbins are Samuel E. Bass, William E. Bass and Messrs. T. J. Hale & Co.; the latter, established 1881, employs twenty to thirty hands and manufactures from one hundred thousand to three hundred thousand bobbins monthly.

Loom harness is also manufactured here by Thomas Clegg, employing fourteen hands and with a monthly product of two thousand dollars; Emmons Loom Harness Co. (T. A. Emmons, treasurer), employing sixty men; and Joseph Sladdin.

Leather belting is manufactured by Charles L. Place and by E. F. Page & Co.

Roll covering is also carried on by F. W. McLanahan, who employs thirty men, and by Robert P. Burnham.

The car-shop of the Boston & Maine Railroad employs one hundred and forty men in the manufacture of freight and passenger cars.

Lawrence has one brewery, owned and operated by Messrs. Stanley & Co., for the manufacture of ale,



porter and lager beer, and has a capacity of three hundred and fifty barrels per day.

Several cracker bakeries, the largest that of Kent & Bruce, sending out four thousand barrels of crackers per month.

The brush factory of John H. Stafford produces twenty gross of brushes per month.

A broom and basket factory is operated by Collins Brothers (T. F. and J. H. Collins).

BEACH SOAP CO., (Lurandus Beach, proprietor) is one of the oldest establishments in Lawrence, furnishing employment to twenty men, manufacturing family and toilet soaps, also scouring and fulling soaps. The monthly product amounting to twelve thousand dollars monthly. This business was originally established by Beach & Varney.

BRIGGS & ALLYN MANUFACTURING CO. manufacture doors, sashes, blinds, mouldings, frames and all descriptions of house finishings, also counters, tables, furniture, etc. The company is thoroughly provided with tools for the manufacture of every variety of wood-work, employing from forty to seventy men, and turns out monthly about seventy-five hundred dollars' worth of finished work.

LAWRENCE LUMBER CO.—The territory occupied by this company was originally owned and the mills operated by the Essex Company. After the company ceased building mills the property was sold to George W. Ela and others, and by them sold to others who organized a company for furnishing lumber and manufacturing packing cases for the large mills. The monthly sales of the company are a million and a half feet of manufactured lumber and half a million feet made into packing cases. They employ ninety men. While owned by the Essex Company, William M. Kimball (afterward of Minneapolis) was the superintendent. When the new company was organized Luther Ladd, who had had long experience with the Essex Company, became agent and treasurer. The present treasurer is Alfred A. Lamprey. The other lumber yards are those of Hezekiah Plummer (one of the earliest settlers in Lawrence), J. H. Prescott & Co., and Luther Ladd, who, since his retirement from the Lawrence Lumber Co., has established a yard of his own in South Lawrence.

The LAWRENCE FLOUR MILL, situated in South Lawrence, was built by Davis & Taylor, and had machinery for producing two thousand barrels of flour and one hundred thousand bushels of corn meal per month, and was operated for several years. Improved methods of manufacturing flour have rendered the old machinery useless. The mill has passed into the hands of Frank E. Chandler, of Medford, and is now fitted entirely for the production of corn meal, with Joseph Chandler as superintendent. One other grain mill (built in 1868) is situated on the North Canal and is owned and operated by Henry K. Webster & Co., who conduct an extensive business.

The earliest grain and flour mill in Lawrence was

located near the mouth of Spicket River, built and owned by Messrs. Furness & Giles. This mill later passed into the hands of the Russell Paper Co., and Mr. Giles was subsequently foreman of Davis & Taylor's flour mill.

Besides the various dye-houses connected with the large mills, there are in Lawrence—Trees' Dye House, established by John Trees, Spicket River, Lawrence Street; The Essex Dye House, by William Stuart & Co., Spicket River, Vine Street; The Lawrence Dye Works, by L. Sjöström & Son and J. H. Melledge, South Canal.

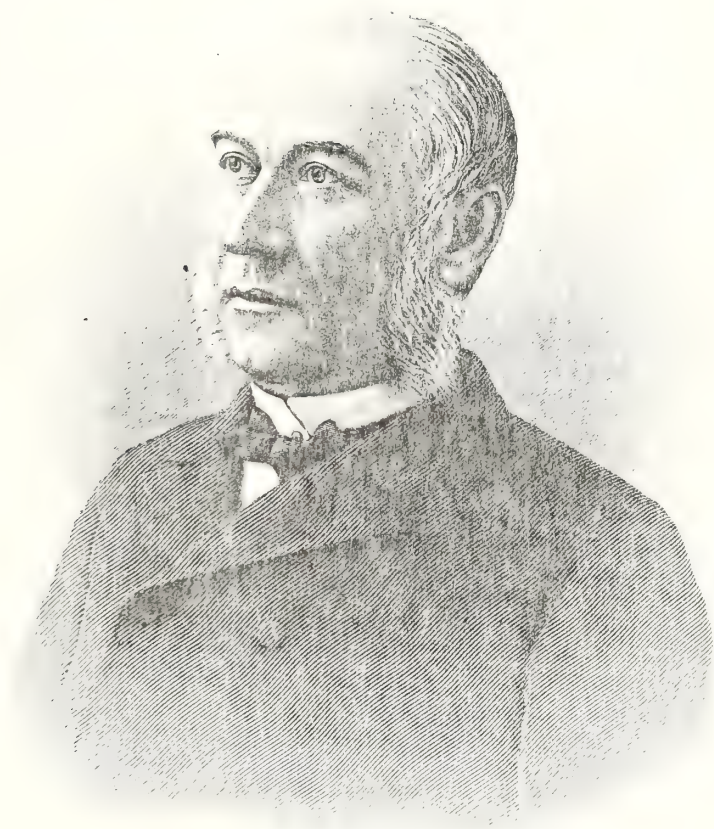
Paper making is one of the most important branches of industry in Lawrence and has grown to large proportions. By Tewksbury's "History of Lawrence," published in 1878, it appears that "soon after the Essex Company's Machine Shop started, experiments were made in the building of paper machinery under the superintendence of John L. Seaverns; a building was erected by the Essex Company in the machine shop yard, and the Charter Paper Company was organized, several directors of the Essex Company forming the Association. The company did not manufacture but printed and embossed papers. William B. Hurd was the local agent; the principal direction being in the hands of Samuel H. Gregory. The capital was fifty thousand dollars. The mill furnished fancy velvet, cloth, gold-leaf, bronze and silver-leaf papers—paper hangings from six and a quarter cents to seven dollars per roll, and bordering of every grade; the enterprise proved unprofitable and was abandoned." Several persons have at different times operated paper mills for the manufacture of paper. Among them A. & A. Norton commencing in 1853; Samuel S. Crocker, Salmon P. Wilder, Joseph L. Partridge, Daniel P. Crocker and others. Prior to all these and before the incorporation of the Essex Company the late Adolphus Durant operated a small mill for the manufacture of paper—the mill being located on the Spicket River.

THE MERRIMAC PAPER COMPANY, in South Lawrence, was organized in May, 1881, the incorporators being A. N. Mayo, Charles S. Mayo, of Springfield, and S. J. Stebbins, of Holyoke (deceased). The company employs two hundred hands and manufactures engine sized cap paper, book and envelope paper, producing about eleven tons daily. The monthly pay roll is four thousand dollars. Agent, Charles S. Mayo; Superintendent, W. G. Finlay; Paymaster, G. E. Miller.

THE BACON PAPER COMPANY, founded by Jerome A. Bacon, is located on Marston Street, receiving water from the North Canal. Manufactures machine and super calendered flat cap and book paper. No. one newspaper and colored paper. Daily product about six tons. Jerome A. Ripley, Superintendent; George S. Sherman, Paymaster.

THE MONROE FELT AND PAPER COMPANY.—This company is located in South Lawrence; was incor-





James A. Russell



porated 1881 with a capital of sixty thousand dollars. They manufacture ingrain wall-papers of their own invention, which have found an extensive sale; carpet, manilla and roofing paper—turning out twelve tons daily. William T. McAlpine, Agent; Henry T. Hall, Treasurer and Paymaster.

At the present time, by far the largest paper making establishments are those of the Messrs. Russell.

William Russell, the oldest living paper maker in the United States, nearly thirty years ago was compelled by ill health to retire from active business: but he had laid the foundation of the paper manufacturing establishment, whose principal mills are at Lawrence, and which, under the ownership and management of his son, Hon. William A. Russell, has become one of the most extensive manufactories of the kind in the United States.

William Russell was the son of a farmer, and was born in Cabot, Vt., in 1805. He received his education in the district school of his native town. When quite young he went to Wells River to learn the trade of paper manufacturing and served an apprenticeship of seven years. He was then employed as a journeyman in Wells River and Franklin, N. H., until 1848, when he removed to Exeter, N. H., and engaged in business for himself, operating two mills until 1851. At this time, his son, William A. Russell, having attained his majority, leased one of the mills, operating it on his own separate account. In 1853 they formed a copartnership, purchased grounds and power, and built a one-machine mill in Lawrence, removing thither their entire business. Shortly after this Mr. Russell withdrew from active business and retired to a farm which he had purchased in North Andover, retaining however a small interest in the establishment which was thenceforth carried on by his son, William A. Russell. The elder Mr. Russell from early life was characterized by untiring industry and acquired a thorough knowledge of his chosen pursuit. Throughout his business career he was esteemed for integrity and uprightness in all his transactions.

After the retirement of his father, William A. Russell purchased the mills of Curtis & Partridge on Marston Street, and subsequently the A. & A. Norton Mill and Hoyt Mill on Canal Street, and later on the Crocker Mill. These mills are all operated by the Russell Paper Company, a corporation organized in 1864. W. A. Russell, President and Treasurer, and George W. Russell, Superintendent. The company employs some three hundred hands and produce about twenty tons per day of book, news and blotting paper. Connected with the paper mills is a large plant for the production of chemical wood pulp both by the soda and sulphite processes.

HON. WILLIAM A. RUSSELL was born in Wells River, Vt., April 22, 1831. His education was regularly pursued in the public schools of that town, and at the Academy at Franklin, N. H., applying himself

assiduously to his studies and acquitting himself with credit. He occupied his vacation with labor in the paper-mills in Franklin.

Subsequently some time was spent at a private school in Lowell, Mass., where his education was completed. In 1848 he commenced work in his father's mill, and remained there until 1852, when he attained his majority.

By diligence and marked forethought he at once established his reputation as a successful manufacturer. Two years later the father and son formed a copartnership, and moved their works to Lawrence, Mass.

The senior Mr. Russell's health soon failed, and he was then compelled to retire from active life, leaving the entire business in the hands of his son.

After the retirement of his father from the business he found it necessary to enlarge his facilities for manufacture in order to meet the demand for his products. With this view he leased and put in operation two mills in Belfast, Me., and subsequently purchased another, in the same city.

During the ensuing five years the business was successful, and in 1861 he purchased a mill contiguous to his former one in Lawrence, from parties who had failed in business as manufacturers, and the same year received his brother, George W. Russell into partnership.

A year later two other mills in Lawrence had stopped for the same reason, and, though business was to some extent prostrated on account of the Civil War, Mr. Russell, looking to the future, availed himself of the opportunity to purchase them. His confidence proved well founded, and after a short period the business received a fresh impetus and continued to increase each year in importance.

In 1869 he established a wood-pulp mill in Franklin, Vt., with the view of supplying the manufacturers; but they, fearing the prejudice against paper manufactured from wood-fiber, shrank from the undertaking. Finding it impossible to sell the pulp, and believing that the prejudice could be overcome, the following year he bought what was known as the Fisher & Aiken mill, in Franklin, for the purpose of manufacturing the paper himself.

His expectations were fully realized, and the same year he purchased the Peabody & Daniel mill, the oldest in the country, and employed it for the same purpose, the manufacture of paper for printing, especially of newspapers. In the same year, to secure better attention and more sure success for this department of the business, he organized the Winipiseogee Paper Company, of Franklin, being himself its treasurer and principal owner. It now employs about 250 hands and produces about twenty-five tons of news paper per day.

The same year he extended his interest to Bellows Falls, building there, also, a wood-pulp mill. The water-power was held at that place by a "lock & canal



Co." In the winter of 1870 the dam which had been built some eighty years previously, suffered serious injury, and Mr. Russell availed himself of the opportunity to secure a controlling interest in the entire water-power. Since that time he has been president of the company and let power to others.

In 1872 he built and put in operation a large paper-mill himself. In these various establishments in Vermont, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, and others in Maine, are employed an aggregate of upwards of 1400 hands, producing no less than eighty-five tons of paper per day; book paper, printing paper, for newspapers, manilla and blotting paper.

Mr. Russell, during his residence in Lawrence, has been a very active and public-spirited citizen, was a member and very large contributor to the Eliot Church, and when the society united with the Central to form what is now Trinity Church, he purchased the building and conveyed it to the Young Men's Christian Association.

In politics an earnest Republican. In 1868 was a member of the city government; in 1869 represented the city in the Legislature. He was sent, in 1868, as one of the delegates from Massachusetts to the National Republican Convention at Cincinnati. In 1878 he was elected Representative of the Seventh District, to the Forty-sixth United States Congress. He was appointed a member of the committee on commerce, and became chairman of the sub-committee to investigate the causes of the decline of American commerce, with the view to investigate some plan to restore the same and bring about closer commercial relations and more extensive trade with other countries.

His report showed a thorough investigation of the subject. It set forth clearly the difficulties to be overcome, and through the presentation of these facts Massachusetts led off in removing one of the greatest obstacles to incorporated maritime investments by the change of the laws in relation to the taxation of property in ships.

He was renominated by acclamation and elected to the Forty-seventh Congress, and promoted to service on the Ways and Means Committee, a position which he was so well qualified to fill through his long and careful observation of and experience in the industrial interests of the country.

The tariff question being prominently before Congress, he gave to the house and country one of the most carefully prepared and exhaustive presentations of this subject that was submitted from the protective standpoint. Mr. Russell's interest in and close application to business have characterized his political life.

His well established and well organized business he confided to others, giving his whole time and energies to new duties. Yielding to a very general demand of his constituents, he accepted a third nomination which was made by acclamation, and he was

elected to the Forty-eighth Congress. Though earnestly solicited by his constituents to accept a renomination to the Forty-ninth Congress, he felt compelled to decline, and upon the close of his three terms of Congressional life turned his attention to improving and enlarging the various paper-mills in which he is interested, necessitated by the increasing demand for their products, and to developing the water powers at Bellows Falls, Vt., and Franklin, N. H.

Another manufacture, operated by machinery similar in character to that of paper mills, has been successfully conducted here, the manufacture of leather-board. Messrs. Clegg & Fisher, employing twenty men and producing monthly fifty tons. Seth F. Dawson, employing about the same number of men and producing eighteen to twenty tons per week.

PUBLIC LIBRARY.—The history of the library dates, in one sense, from the beginning of the town of Lawrence.

The Franklin Library Association was chartered by the Legislature of Massachusetts April, 1847, and the following letter to Captain Charles H. Bigelow, its first president, gives in very concise terms not only the wishes and motives of the donor of the first valuable gift to the library, but is also a key to the motives which inspired its founders.

BOSTON, July 5, 1847.

"MY DEAR SIR,—I was gratified to notice an act passed by the last General Court incorporating the Franklin Library Association in the new Town. Subsequently I have seen in the newspapers an account of its organization, and that you were elected President. I am happy in the knowledge that there exists among the people a just appreciation of the value and importance of early attention being given to schools, churches and public libraries. It is no less the duty than the privilege of those who possess an influence in creating towns and cities, to lay their foundations deep and strong. Let the standard be high in religious, moral and intellectual culture, and there can be no well-grounded fears for the results.

"There will soon gather around you a large number of mechanics and others, who will desire to obtain a knowledge of the higher mechanical arts. You will probably receive into your large machinework (now under construction) a number of apprentices, who are to be trained to the use of tools. The more thorough the education you give them, the more skilfully the tools will be used when placed in their hands.

"If you possess a well-furnished library, containing books, drawings, etc., with the mechanical and scientific periodicals of the day, to which the whole body of those engaged in all the varieties of mechanics have access, you will, I am quite certain, at an early day send forth into the community a class of well-educated machinists, whose labors and influence will be felt throughout the country.

"I feel a deep interest in this question of educating men who can take care of themselves and do something to develop the mental resources of the present and future generations, as well as to make contributions to the common stock of practical knowledge and national resources of this great Union.

"The supply of well-educated, scientific mechanics in our community is entirely inadequate to its wants.

"I wish to live long enough to see the experiment fairly tried, whether this deficiency may not be remedied, and am therefore in favor of placing in the hands of those who are or may be residents in the new town, all the appliances to obtain such an object.

"In furtherance of the plan proposed by your society, I offer, through you, for the acceptance of the Franklin Library Association, the sum of one thousand dollars, which the government of the institution will please invest in such scientific and other works as will tend to create good mechanics, good Christians and good patriots.

"Accept the assurances with which I remain

"Your friend, ABBOTT LAWRENCE.

"TO CAPT. CHAS. H. BIGELOW."

Eight years later, in 1855, Mr. Lawrence "rested from his labors," but he had not lost his interest in the new city to which so much of his attention had been given; nor did he forget his protégé, the Franklin Library, leaving by his will the generous sum of five thousand dollars for the purpose of increasing its value and utility.

Other gentlemen had made some valuable presents of books, but these gifts of money to be invested in books were, it is believed, the only ones received.

The expenses, rent, librarian's salary, etc., must, of course, be defrayed from the income received from the sale of shares and from annual assessments. The price of shares was at first fixed at ten dollars each, the annual assessment at two dollars per annum, and the library was open to any person willing to unite with the society and purchase a share. As the price of a share proved a bar to many, in 1850 the association amended the constitution, so that the use of the library might be granted to persons not members of the association, subject to the regulations thereof, on payment of an annual definite sum, not less than the annual assessment of members.

The membership and the number of readers still remaining comparatively small, and the association being still desirous of enlisting the public more fully, early in 1853 the value of the shares was reduced to five dollars and the assessment to one dollar per annum. In 1857 a vote was passed, authorizing the government to open the library to any persons not members for the nominal sum of one dollar per year.

Other efforts had been made, from time to time, by organizing courses of public lectures, by popular lecturers, at low rates, for the purpose of attracting attention to the library and reading-room, with indifferent success,—the association in some instances sustaining pecuniary loss.

The library had increased to nearly four thousand volumes; the reading-room connected with it contained several of the newspapers of the time and many of the valuable scientific, mechanical and literary periodicals; but the main object of the original founders was not attained.

The number of members and readers was still small, and the annual income only sufficient to pay the current expenses.

In 1867 it was thought advisable, for the purpose of extending the usefulness of the library, to offer the property to the city, under suitable conditions, for a free library. A proposition was made to the city government of 1868, but it was not accepted, a difference of opinion among the members of the government at that time existing as to the expediency of the step.

Four years later aid came from an unexpected quarter. Hon. Daniel A. White, of Salem, placed certain property in Lawrence in the hands of trustees, the income from which should be appropriated to

maintaining a course of lectures, free "to the industrial classes" of Lawrence, and for the purposes of a library.

The income from that fund had furnished a course of lectures for several years, from the best talent of the land, and had reached a point where it was more than sufficient to defray this expense and could furnish a considerable sum annually for books.

In 1872 the Franklin Library Association appointed a committee consisting of George S. Merrill, John R. Rollins and John C. Dow to confer with the city government, and also with the trustees of the White Fund, and this conference (the necessary authority to surrender their trust having been previously obtained from the Legislature) resulted in a renewed offer to transfer the property, consisting of over four thousand volumes and nearly three thousand dollars in money, to the city. The trustees of the White Fund proposed to contribute the first year the sum of one thousand dollars for the purchase of books, and to make an annual contribution thereafter. These propositions were accepted, and an ordinance was passed, 1872, establishing the Free Library of the city.

Soon after the transfer of the property the Agricultural Library, numbering one hundred and fifty-seven volumes, and owned by an association residing in Lawrence and Methuen, was also placed at the disposal of the city, and the circulating library of Messrs. Whitford & Rice, twenty-two hundred and fifty-seven volumes, was also purchased and transferred.

At a meeting of the board of trustees, held August 29, 1872, Mr. William I. Fletcher, whose experience in the Boston Athenæum and in the Bronson Library, of Waterbury, Ct., rendered him peculiarly fitted for the position, was unanimously elected librarian.

Mr. Fletcher remained with the library, arranging it for public use, and preparing a catalogue, till 1874, when he resigned to accept a more favorable position in Hartford, Ct., and he was succeeded by Frederick H. Hedge, Jr., of Cambridge, the present librarian. The library now embraces twenty-five thousand five hundred volumes, or, including duplicates, twenty-eight thousand seven hundred volumes. Connected with the library is a reading-room, where may be found many of the leading newspapers, and a room for books of reference, where the people may freely study upon almost any subject which they desire to investigate.

The various boards of trustees have ever kept in mind the object of the founders, considering the library an educational institution "rather than a medium for the circulation of light literature."

The mayor and president of the Common Council, together with the trustees of the White Fund, are permanent members of the board.

The library now occupies the entire second floor of the Odd Fellows' building. It needs more space and greater security against fire.



Daniel Appleton White (LL.D., Harvard, 1837) was of the sixth generation in descent from William White, who emigrated from Norfolk, England, one of the leading men in the colony at Ipswich, and of the founders of the ancient town of Newbury. He removed to Haverhill in 1640. Judge White was born in 1776, in that part of Methuen (now Lawrence) educated at Atkinson Academy and graduated from Harvard College 1797. He returned to Cambridge in 1799, and pursued the study of law, remaining four years, during which time he was tutor in the college; finished his legal studies in Salem; was admitted to the Essex bar in 1804; opened an office in Newburyport, soon became successful in his profession and advanced to honors; was Senator in the Massachusetts Senate from 1810 to 1815; Presidential elector, 1816; was elected to Congress by an almost unanimous vote in 1814, but having been offered by Governor Strong the position of judge of Probate, he resigned and accepted the more quiet path, which was more congenial to his taste and feelings; this office he held for thirty-eight years, resigning in 1853. He died at Salem in 1861, having removed to that city in 1817. An excellent account of his life may be found in a memorial by Rev. Henry W. Foote, of Boston, published by the New England Historico-Genealogical Society in their series of memorial biographies, who concludes his sketch in these words: "To those who, in the city which was his home for forty-four years, use the treasures of his library, or who, in the other city which covers his native fields, shall receive the benefit of his noble foundation, the value of his gift would be enhanced if the memory of the giver, as he was, could be impressed indelibly upon it, and it would be his best gift if his character could be transmitted. He was a patriot of the lofty type of the founders of the Republic; a Christian in the deepest spirit of the New Testament; a man ruled by justice, tempered with mercy, generous, high-minded, true, with a Puritan conscience and a heart of love, the faith of a disciple and the trusting soul, simple and pure as a little child."

Another and fuller memoir may be found in the Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, Vol. VI. Nos. 1 and 2.

As the history of the White Fund is misapprehended by many, the following account is repeated here, taken from Tewksbury's "History of Lawrence," which was obtained from the original sources of information:

The first conveyance by Judge White embraced the whole of his lands without restrictions. He soon after became aware that provisions in old deeds retained a portion of the lands for a family burial-ground, and to preserve the graves of his ancestors from any possible future desecration, at his earnest request, the associates, in taking their absolute deed, March 28, 1845, relinquished all claim to a lot of about six acres nearly in the centre of the tract they had purchased. It was provided, however, that the six

acres accepted and reserved should be restricted as to use, or reserved as a public or private burial-grounds, a reservoir or some other public work.

Immediately after the organization of the Essex Company the associates conveyed to that company all lands they had purchased; consequently their deed contained the reservations and restrictions.

Judge White seems to have had little enjoyment of this property, yet being in possession; constantly increasing taxes became a burden; there was no income from the property; sanitary considerations prevented its use for a cemetery; no one could purchase any part of it in the condition in which it then stood, and it became evident that the lands could only be utilized by the *joint action of both Judge White and the Essex Company*.

There were upon the land but three graves (now undisturbed and surrounded by dwellings), occupying together a space not larger than an ordinary burial-lot. This left nearly six acres of unoccupied land in the heart of the city.

Joint action of the two parties might give this land a value of many thousand dollars to be divided between them. Happily, at the suggestion of Judge White, cordially acceded to by the Essex Company, both joined in devoting this property to a purpose which would benefit not a class or a single generation, but all who might dwell here in time to come. The indenture conveying the land to trustees, with power to sell, and invest proceeds in a fund for a purpose clearly defined, is a model of precise wording and clearness of detail. So far as it relates to the character of the lectures and use of the fund for that purpose, the language is that of Judge White.

The original proposition of Mr. White, as explained in his letter to Mr. Storrow, June 19, 1852, which first opened the subject, proposed simply the establishment of an annual course of lectures, the special subjects being specified in the deed of trust. These subjects were: 1st. "The importance of good character to success in life;" 2d. "On the unsurpassable value of the riches of character to the young of both sexes;" 3d. "On the virtues, habits and principles most essential to good character;" 4th. "On the best means of intellectual and moral improvement."

Being confident that the value of the lands and the sum eventually derived from them would far exceed the expectations of Mr. White, Mr. Storrow suggested that while the original object which he had in mind should first be fully provided for, precisely as Mr. White intended, it might be well to allow the trustees to select other modes for promoting morality and education, especially to authorize liberal appropriations from the income, in aid of a free library, and provide for the gift of a building-site for such an institution.

Judge White readily assented to this, and the indenture of August 23, 1852, is intended to carry into effect the original and enlarged purposes of the trust. This indenture was signed by Daniel A. White, of the



first part, the Essex Company of the second part, and Charles S. Storrow, Nathaniel G. White and Henry K. Oliver as trustees accepting the trust. Messrs. Storrow and Oliver removed from the city, and George D. Cabot and James H. Eaton, the present trustees, succeeded them.

RELIGIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

In the beginning of Lawrence the directors of the Essex Company, true to the policy of the early settlers of the country, gave their attention to the moral condition of the new town, as might be expected from their well-known character. The president, Mr. Lawrence, writing on one occasion to W. C. Rives, of Virginia, said: "All intellectual culture should be founded on our Holy Religion. The pure precepts of the Gospel are the only safe source from which we can freely draw our morality;" and in the letter which accompanied his gift to the library,—“it is no less the duty than the privilege of those who possess influence in creating towns and cities, to lay the foundations deep and strong. Let the standard be high in religious, moral and intellectual culture, and there can be no well-grounded fear for the result.”

Accordingly, governed by no sectarian bias, they gave to the first churches of several denominations a lot of land on which to erect their building, and to others later they made a discount of one-quarter from regular established prices.

The first building devoted to public worship was the Episcopal Chapel; this stood on the ground now occupied by Grace Church, and was so far completed that services were held there on the second Sunday of October, 1846. By the quarter-centennial address of Rev. George Packard, who was the founder of the church and its rector till his lamented decease, November 30, 1876, it appears the first building, a temporary structure of wood, was completed and consecrated November 19, 1846. The cost of the building was estimated to be one thousand three hundred and fifty dollars, of which sum Mr. Samuel Lawrence contributed one thousand dollars, and the balance was obtained from friends in Boston, the proprietors of the different manufacturing companies who were interested in the moral welfare of the new town. A lot of land, one hundred feet square, was presented to the church by the Essex Company, on condition that in five years from the time it was given, a church of stone or brick should be built upon it. At the close of the first year the number of families worshipping was twenty-five, the number of communicants twenty-six; in 1849 the number of communicants fifty-three; in 1850, seventy-eight; and in 1857 the growth of the church had increased so much as to require better accommodations, and the substantial stone building which now occupies the ground was erected, one-half the amount of the cost being pledged by the members of the parish, and the other half by friends

in Boston, Andover, Lowell and Salem. The building committee were Capt. Oliver H. Perry, Caleb Marvel and Geo. D. Lund. May 5, 1852, this building was consecrated by Rev. Manton Eastburn, bishop of the diocese.

In 1864 the Sunday-school statistics were,—superintendent, librarian and assistant; teachers—male, ten; female, nineteen; scholars, two hundred and seventy. The chapel, the first place of worship removed to Garden Street, was crowded, and in October of that year a mission Sunday-school and service were commenced in the western part of the city, under the charge of Rev. A. V. G. Allen, then a candidate for orders, pursuing his studies at Andover. In 1865 the parish school-teachers numbered twenty-four; scholars, one hundred and eighty; mission school-teachers, twenty-two; scholars, one hundred and seventy-five. The success of this mission work led to the establishment of a Second Parish, under the name of St. John's, which, in 1867, was admitted to union with the convention.

Dr. Packard, who was so long the rector of the church and devoted to its welfare with untiring zeal, was also during his useful life interested and active in every enterprise conducive to the general good of the town and city. Early and for twenty years a member of the school committee and superintendent of schools, his efforts did much to the establishment of our present system of schools and the promoting of their usefulness. He was, besides, an earnest worker in the City Mission for the relief of the poor and unfortunate, and his wise counsel was always valued. He, as well as three of his brothers, were graduates from Bowdoin College,—one brother, the late Rev. Charles Packard, a Congregational clergyman at Lancaster, Mass.; and the Rev. Alpheus Packard, many years professor and later president of Bowdoin College; and Rev. Joseph Packard, for fifty years professor at the Theological School of Virginia, at Alexandria, one of the American members of the commission for the recent revision of the Bible, who survives them. During the later years of Dr. Packard's residence here, owing to failing health, Rev. William Lawrence, of Boston, was appointed to assist in parochial duties, and succeeded as rector in 1876. Mr. Lawrence remained here till December, 1883, when he resigned to accept a professorship in Harvard University, followed by the love and respect, not only of his own people, but of the entire community, and was succeeded by Rev. Augustine H. Amory, of Boston, the present rector.

THE LAWRENCE STREET CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH was formed April 9, 1847. A society called the Merrimac Congregational Society was organized August, 1846, previously, at the house of Nathaniel B. Gordon, its founders being Dr. Moses L. Atkinson (formerly of Newburyport), W. S. Annis, Nathan Wells, Hiram Merrill, Timothy Osgood, Joshua Buswell (deputy sheriff), A. Dickey, Phineas M. Gage



and E. C. Bartlett. The society commenced building, October, 1846, a small chapel in the rear of the present church building. The cost of the building was one thousand dollars, Mr. Abbott Lawrence contributing one hundred dollars, other friends in Boston three hundred and thirty-five dollars. This building was dedicated in January, 1847, and seated two hundred and seventy-five persons. After the organization of the church Rev. Lyman Whiting, who had preached to the society, was invited to become the pastor. He remained here from June 16, 1847, till January 16, 1850. During his ministry the present edifice was completed, and dedicated October 11, 1848. The church remained without a settled pastor till January, 1852, when Rev. Henry M. Storrs was ordained. He remained till March 1, 1855, and, resigning, went to Cincinnati. The pulpit was then supplied by Rev. Alexander H. Clapp, D.D. (now treasurer of American Home Missionary Society), and Rev. Charles Beecher. The former of these declined an invitation to become their pastor, and Rev. George B. Wilcox, of Fitchburg, was installed in September, 1856. He resigned in 1859, and was succeeded by Rev. Caleb E. Fisher, a very sincere and earnest man, of warm sympathies, devoted not only to the spiritual welfare of his parish, but interested in all that pertained to the welfare of the city, especially in educational affairs. Mr. Fisher's pastorate continued more than fourteen years, till October, 1873. Rev. Joshua Coit was installed May 13, 1874, remained till February 25, 1885, when, after repeated solicitations, he accepted the position of secretary of the Massachusetts Home Missionary Society, and was succeeded in February, 1885, by the present pastor, Rev. William E. Wolcott.

THE CENTRAL CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH (now known as Trinity Congregational Church) was organized December 25, 1849, commencing their public services in the City Hall, which they continued to occupy till August, 1854; removed to their new building, a substantial brick building, at the corner of Essex and Appleton Streets, the second story being occupied for religious service and the lower story for stores,—a union of sacred and secular matters, which, happily, does not at present exist in the city. A similar structure once existed in the neighboring city of Lowell, and it is said that some wag chalked the following couplet upon the door:

"A spirit above and a spirit below,
A spirit of weal and a spirit of woe;
The spirit above is the spirit divine,
The spirit below is the spirit of wine."

On the 12th of August, 1859, the Central Church building was destroyed by fire, and the society returned to the City Hall, where they remained a few months, evening services being held in the chapel of Grace Church, on Garden Street. On the second Sabbath in January, 1860, the congregation met for worship in the basement of the new stone building

erected on Haverhill Street. The building was finished and dedicated June 8, 1860.

From March to November, 1850, Rev. Lyman Whiting, previously of Lawrence Street Church, supplied the pulpit, and Rev. E. C. Whittlesey, afterwards prominent in military affairs and the Freedmen's Bureau, from February to October, 1851. The first pastor was Rev. William C. Foster, installed January 16, 1852, a very earnest preacher, and well remembered for his fearless and bold advocacy of anti-slavery sentiments. His successor was Rev. Daniel Tenney, installed September 2, 1857. After a service of five years Mr. Tenney removed to the Springfield Street Church, Boston, and Rev. Christopher M. Cordley became pastor, and remained with the church till his death, June 26, 1866.

The next pastor was Rev. William E. Park; after a service of nine years,—1866 to '75,—he resigned, and removed to Gloversville, N. Y., and was succeeded by George M. Ide.

ELIOT CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH was formed September 28, 1865. Services were held at first in the City Hall and in Grace Church chapel. The formation of this church resulted from a joint meeting of the Lawrence Street and Central Churches held in August, at which meeting it was unanimously resolved that a third church was needed; and a committee, consisting of William C. Chapin, George A. Fuller, Benjamin T. Bourne, Benjamin Coolidge and William A. Russell, was appointed to consider the matter and report. Thirty-two persons constituted the original organization of the society,—twelve from Lawrence Street, sixteen from the Central Church and four from other towns. The church and society immediately took steps for the erection of the building located on Appleton Street, near Essex. This building, erected at a cost of thirty-five thousand dollars, is very conveniently arranged, and, architecturally considered, it would be an ornament to the city, but, unfortunately, it is surrounded by tall brick buildings, among which it is hidden. It was dedicated September 6, 1866.

The first pastor was Rev. William Franklin Snow, born in Boston in 1838; at the age of nine he went with his father's family to the Hawaiian Islands, was there fitted for Harvard College at the Royal School and the Oahu College, of Honolulu; entered Harvard in 1857 and was distinguished as a classical scholar; graduated with high rank in 1861. In August, 1862, he enlisted as a private soldier in the Fifth Massachusetts Regiment, was elected captain and served one year. After the expiration of his service in the army he made a visit to his father's family in the islands. In May, 1864, he became acting pastor of the Congregational Church in Grass Valley, Cal., returned to Andover in 1865 to complete his studies and was installed pastor of the Eliot Church September 13, 1866. Mr. Snow was a thorough scholar, an indefatigable student and thoroughly devoted to the work of



the Christian ministry, and during his five years of service in the Eliot Church the number of its members increased from thirty-two to one hundred and twenty-nine. He died in the midst of his usefulness, at the age of thirty-three, January 11, 1871.

On the 14th of June, 1871, Rev. Theodore T. Munger, of Haverhill, Mass., was installed pastor. He resigned his charge January 20, 1875, on account of ill health of himself and family, and removed to the western part of the State. His resignation was a source of regret to his people and many others, who prized his companionship for his intellectual power and attainments. He has become widely known by several volumes which have issued from his scholarly pen.

March 14, 1875, Rev. John H. Barrows commenced his work at the Eliot, and was ordained April 29th; remained with the church till September 12, 1880. Rev. Edward P. Hooker was installed January 12, 1881, and resigned, after a short residence, to become president of Rollins College, in Florida. The Eliot and Central Churches united to form Trinity Congregational Church in the summer of 1883. The Eliot Church building was sold to Hon. Wm. A. Russell, who afterward conveyed it to the Young Men's Christian Association. The present pastor of Trinity Church is Rev. John L. R. Trask.

THE METHODISTS.—The first preaching was in June, 1846, at Boarding-House No. 5, kept by Mr. Charles Barnes, who built on his own account, about twenty years before, the meeting-house on the corner of Lowell and Suffolk Streets, Lowell. Their house of worship, at the corner of Haverhill and Hampshire Streets, was dedicated in the spring of 1848. Their first pastor was Rev. James L. Gleason. Since the erection of the church building the pastors have been Rev. L. D. Barrows, D.D., 1847-48; Rev. James Pike, D.D., 1849; Rev. Moses Howe, 1850; Rev. Samuel Kelley, 1851-52; Rev. R. S. Rust, D.D., 1853 and '54; Rev. Jonathan Hall, 1855 and '56; Rev. W. A. McDonald, 1857; Rev. F. A. Hughes, 1858; Rev. J. H. McCarthy, D.D., 1859 and '60; Rev. S. Holman, 1861 and '62; Rev. R. S. Stubbs, 1863; Rev. George Dearborn, 1864; Rev. L. J. Hall, 1865-66; Rev. D. C. Knowles, 1867-69; Rev. F. Pitcher, 1870 and '71; Rev. L. D. Barrows, D.D., 1872-74; Rev. D. Stevenson, D.D., 1875-77; Rev. D. C. Knowles again, 1878, who was succeeded in April, 1881, by Rev. E. C. Bass, who served three years; Rev. — followed from April, 1884, to April, 1886, when the present pastor, Rev. Madison A. Richards, commenced his labors. The church is in a flourishing condition, and the Sabbath-school contains about two hundred scholars. Rev. D. C. Knowles has been for several years principal of the New Hampshire Conference Seminary at Tilton, N. H., and Rev. Daniel Stevenson is principal of a seminary at Augusta, Kentucky.

The Garden Street Methodist Episcopal Church was

organized in 1853 by young men and women residing in the easterly part of the town. Meetings were at first held in a school-house and then in Pantheon Hall, but in 1855 the brick church at the corner of Newbury and Garden Streets was erected. The members were few, and the task they had undertaken was a difficult one to complete, and no doubt ultimate success depended largely on the efforts of George P. Wilson, then a layman, a man of indefatigable energy, who was for many years the beloved and devoted city missionary. The first settled minister was Rev. Albert C. Mansur, 1853. Since that the church has been under the pastoral care of Rev. John McLaughlin, 1854 and '55; Rev. Calvin Holman, 1856 and '57; Rev. Warren F. Evans, 1858; Rev. Henry H. Hartwell, 1859 and '60; Rev. Cadford M. Dinsmore, 1861; Rev. Albert C. Mansur, 1862; Rev. Andrew J. Church, 1863 and '64; Rev. A. P. Hatch, 1865; Rev. Charles U. Dunning in 1866, '67 and '68 (who, after an absence of three years, returned to Lawrence and succeeded Mr. Wilson as city missionary, resigning that service on his appointment as one of the presiding elders of the New Hampshire Annual Conference); Rev. Truman Carter, 1869 and '70; Rev. Lewis P. Cushman, 1871-73; Rev. George W. Norris, 1874-75, and again 1880-82; Rev. William E. Bennett, 1876; Rev. A. E. Drew, 1877-79; Rev. Charles Parkhurst, 1883-85; Rev. Jesse M. Durrell, 1886-87.

FIRST BAPTIST SOCIETY.—The First Baptist Society was formed in 1847. Their first temporary house of worship was a small building in the rear of the present one on Haverhill Street, and was occupied the first time in April, 1847, although meetings had been previously held at private houses and in an old school building near the present First Methodist Church. In November following the building was enlarged to accommodate the increasing number of members. The increase of numbers was so great that it was soon found necessary to build a larger and more permanent building. Consequently, in 1849, the construction of the present edifice on Haverhill Street was commenced, and so far completed that services were held in the basement in January, 1850. The first pastor of this church and society was Rev. John G. Richardson, who remained with them till 1853; he was succeeded in December by Rev. Artemas W. Sawyer. In 1856 Rev. Frank Remington followed, resigning in 1859, and subsequently was installed over the Second Baptist Church. For several months the pulpit was supplied by Rev. J. Sella Martin, formerly a slave. Rev. Henry F. Lane was the next pastor, who remained but a short time, leaving in 1862 to accept the chaplaincy of the Forty-first Massachusetts Regiment. Rev. George Knox was next installed, but the same year became chaplain of the Twenty-ninth Maine Regiment. He was killed in Washington by being thrown from his horse. In September, 1865, Rev. George W. Bosworth, D.D., be-



came the pastor. Dr. Bosworth remained three and a half years; removed to Haverhill.

Rev. John B. Gough Pidge was ordained in September, 1869. After laboring with marked ability and popularity for about ten years, he accepted an invitation to Philadelphia, and was succeeded by Rev. Richard Montague, now of the Central Congregational Church, Providence, R. I., who was followed by the present pastor, Rev. O. C. S. Wallace.

FREE BAPTIST SOCIETY.—This was one of the early societies formed in Lawrence. A small number held a meeting in the first boarding-house erected by the Essex Company, on Broadway, in the fall of 1846, at which meeting Rev. Silas Curtis conducted religious service. In January, 1847, twelve persons were duly organized as the Free-Will Baptist Church of Lawrence, with Rev. Jairus E. Davis as pastor. Their services were conducted in public halls and private houses, until a small plain building was erected at the corner of Haverhill and White Streets, on land given them by the Essex Company. Money was not abundant among the members of this society, and for many years they had a hard and patient struggle against adverse circumstances, sustained only by Christian faith and determined perseverance. It was not till 1857 that their new church of brick, at the corner of Common and Pemberton Streets, was dedicated. During the ministry of the first pastor, who remained with them three years, sixty-four members were added to the church. October 1, 1849, Rev. Jonathan Woodman, sometimes known as "Father Woodman," a prominent and influential man in that denomination, became pastor, remaining three years, during which time the church had an accession of sixty-six members. The succeeding pastors were Rev. G. P. Ramsey, two and a half years; addition to the church during his time, sixty-seven; Rev. A. D. Williams, remained two and a half years, from the spring of 1855, and during this time one hundred and eighty members were added to the membership. Mr. Williams resigned in consequence of failing health, and Rev. E. M. Fappan succeeded him in 1857, and died in service, December 12, 1869. In May, 1861, Rev. J. Burnham Davis became pastor, and closed his connection with the church January 1, 1866, one hundred and twenty-four members having been added to the church during his ministry. The next pastor was Rev. E. G. Chaddock.

Other pastors of this church have been Rev. John A. Lowell and Rev. Alphonso L. Houghton.

THE PARKER STREET METHODIST CHURCH is located in South Lawrence. This has grown gradually from a Sunday-school or Bible-class formed in 1869, through the instrumentality of Rev. D. C. Knowles, of the First Methodist Church. The class commenced with five members, but as the number increased a society was organized September 16, 1879, and on the 20th a small lot was purchased on Blanchard Street, and a building twenty-two by forty feet was erected—

Rev. Messrs. Tilton, of Derry; Keyes, of Woburn; and Sargent, of Malden, supplying the desk. The first pastor was Rev. W. J. Parkinson, 1873. July 9th of that year the corner-stone of the church on Parker Street was laid. Rev. Mark Trafton and Rev. D. C. Knowles delivered addresses on the occasion. Succeeding pastors of the church were Rev. Garrett Beckman, Rev. Allen J. Hall, Rev. Converse L. McCurdy, Rev. J. T. Abbott, Rev. W. A. Braman, Rev. — Hambleton, one year, Rev. C. M. Melden, three years, followed in 1887 by Rev. Lewis P. Cushman.

FIRST UNITARIAN CHURCH.—This church was organized August 30, 1847. They met at first in Odd Fellows' Hall, but soon erected a small chapel, in which services were held till May, 1860, when the present church building was dedicated. This building had originally a tall and graceful spire, but in the fire of 1859 it was set on fire by sparks carried across the Common from the fire which consumed the United States Hotel and court-house, and damaged to such an extent that it was taken down and the tower finished in its present form.

The first pastor of this church was Rev. Henry F. Harrington, the present superintendent of schools in New Bedford. Mr. Harrington remained seven years devoted not only to his pastoral duties to the church but active in the early history of the schools of the city and in philanthropic service among the poor. He resigned in 1854. Rev. William L. Jenkins was pastor from 1855 to 1865; then Rev. James H. Wiggin, who, after one year of service, was succeeded by Rev. James B. Moore, a gentleman of much forensic ability, who remained for several years until his decease, from disease contracted in the military service. Rev. Charles A. Hayden was settled here from 1873 to 1876. Rev. Edmund R. Sanborn was the next pastor, and after his resignation the pulpit was supplied from time to time until the present year, when, on its fortieth anniversary, Rev. Edwin C. Abbott was installed.

THE FIRST UNIVERSALIST SOCIETY (now known as the Church of the Good Shepherd) was formed November 15, 1848. Some of the gentlemen active in its formation were George Littlefield, Sullivan Symonds, William D. Joplin, Heaton Bailey and Fairfield White. Meetings were held for public worship for four or five years in various halls, until 1853, when services were held in the vestry of the new church which was erected on Haverhill Street and dedicated June 30th of that year. The first pastor was Rev. George H. Clark, of Lockport, N. Y., who died in Lawrence, December, 1851. The succeeding pastors were Rev. J. R. Johnson, 1852-55; Rev. J. J. Brayton, 1855-58; Rev. Martin J. Steere, 1858-60; Rev. George S. Weaver, 1861-73; Rev. George W. Perry, 1873-77; Rev. A. E. White, 1877-86; followed by the present pastor, Rev. W. E. Gibbs. The church building was remodeled in 1866 and dedicated 1867.

THE SOUTH CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH.—This



church originated from a Sunday-school convened in a school-house on Andover Street, by M. C. Andrews and J. B. Fairfield, in 1852. The school was continued by its founders till 1857. At that time George A. Fuller became interested in it, and it was removed to the engine-house and Boston and Maine passenger station until friends, prominent among whom were Mr. Fuller, Deacon Benjamin Coolridge and others, erected a small chapel in 1859, enlarged 1861. In 1869 the present building was erected and dedicated, the ceremony occurring on Christmas day. Regular services were held in October, 1865, and the pulpit was supplied for three years by Professor E. A. Park, of Andover. This church was organized May 18, 1868, but thus far there was no settled minister. Rev. James G. Dougherty supplied the pulpit one year, October, 1869, to March, 1870, and Rev. L. Z. Ferris two years.

January 30, 1873, the present pastor, Rev. Clark Carter, was installed. The church comprises about one hundred members, and the Sunday-school one hundred and forty-five.

PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.—In June, 1854, Rev. A. McWilliams, of the Presbytery of Boston, organized a church in Lawrence of forty-seven members. Services were held at first in a school-house, but in 1856 a church was built on Oak Street, and Mr. McWilliams continued with the church till 1857. The general depression of business at that time and the stoppage of mills, weakened the congregation, and for a time the church was left without a pastor. In 1859 Rev. James Dinsmore was installed, and remained till 1862. Meetings were suspended and the building was rented to the city for a school-house. In 1867 the building was re-dedicated, and Rev. John Hogg became the pastor, remaining eight years, and during his ministry the present church building on Concord Street was built. Rev. John A. Burns succeeded him, and he in turn was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. Robert A. McAyeal, D.D., from Ohio.

ST. JOHN'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH.—The first meetings of this church were held in Essex Engine-House, on Morton Street, while building a church on land adjoining. The building was first opened for service in May, 1866, and was capable of holding four hundred and fifty persons; three years later it was removed to Bradford Street. The rectors have successively been Rev. A. V. G. Allen, Rev. James H. Lee, Rev. Charles C. Harris, Rev. Belno A. Brown, Rev. William G. Wells.

THE SECOND BAPTIST CHURCH was organized in 1869 by sixty-seven members from the First Baptist Church, a natural outgrowth from the parent stock. Their first pastor was Rev. Frank Remington, who had been previously settled over the original church. Services were held for a time in the City Hall, then in the wooden building erected by the "Christian" Society, on Common Street, west of Lawrence, which

the society purchased in 1861. This was removed and enlarged in 1865, rebuilt and further enlarged 1874, and is on the south side of Common Street, a little east of Lawrence Street. The pastors of this church have been, in succession, Rev. Cyrus F. Tolman, Rev. Henry A. Cooke (1865, afterward settled in Boston), Rev. L. L. Wood (1870, since pastor of a Boston church), Rev. George W. Gile (who, after a pastorate of over six years, was called to the Baptist Church in Pittsfield), Rev. R. B. Moody (from January 1, 1880, who remained nearly four years), and the present pastor, Rev. Frederick M. Gardner (settled in April, 1884). D. Frank Robinson was superintendent of the Sunday-school for twenty-four years, succeeded in 1887 by Deacon S. F. Snell.

THE RIVERSIDE CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH was organized March 9, 1878. This church has grown from a Mission Sunday-school, established in April, 1862, with thirty-eight scholars. In June, 1875, a church was formed under the name of the Union Evangelical Church, and recognized by a council representing Congregational, Methodist and Presbyterian Churches. This church continued as a Union Evangelical body for nearly three years, the church and mission-school being independent of each other in organization and government. In February, 1878, at a meeting called for the purpose, the members voted that the church should take charge of the Sunday-school, and that it should become Congregational, and in March, 1878, it was formally recognized as the Riverside Congregational. The acting pastors of the Union Church were Mr. F. H. Foster, J. H. Fowle and C. A. Dickenson, and of the Congregational, Mr. F. S. Adams, D. H. Colcord, William E. Wolcott.

BODWELL STREET METHODIST CHURCH.—After the dissolution of the Union Evangelical Church the Methodists, who had formed a part of that body, with others increasing their number, formed, in 1880, this new church. This was formed mainly through the instrumentality of Mr. Seth F. Dawson, who had been previously a superintendent of the mission-school and of the Union Church. Present pastor, Rev. William C. Bartlett.

A little prior to 1872 the German population who had found their home in Lawrence had increased so much that it was thought desirable to have a church of their own, in which services could be held in their own language, and a school for teaching the children in the elementary branches; and to this end the German Catholics, as well as Protestants, had planned a building for this purpose; but, as might have been expected, the plan of union of two conflicting beliefs did not succeed. In May, 1872, a meeting of German Protestants was held in what was then the Free Evening School Room, in the City Hall, and at the meeting a resolution was adopted establishing a church and school. Mr. F. M. Victor was chosen chairman of the society, Mr. Herman Bruckmann secretary, and Mr. William Wiesner treasurer. The



Elliot Chapel was rented, and Rev. Mr. Schwartz, of Boston, preached, June 23, 1872, for the first time to a Lawrence audience in German. A preacher was engaged and held services every second Sabbath, and taught the school twice a week till the close of the year.

June 5, 1873, the society was incorporated as a German Church and School Society. The society met at first in Scott & Viotor's Hall, and services were conducted by Rev. M. Schwartz, of Boston, monthly, till May, 1874, when services were discontinued for want of a suitable building. In August following a lot was purchased on East Haverhill Street, a church building erected, which was dedicated December 12, 1875. Here regular Sunday services were conducted by Mr. Viotor till April, 1876, when the Methodist Conference designated Rev. F. F. Hoppmann as pastor, who remained till April, 1878, when a meeting was held by the society, and it was voted thereafter to dispense with the services of a minister sent by the Methodist Conference.

November, 1878, Rev. A. Herman Hager, of Chicago, was invited to become the pastor of the church, and he was installed January, 1879. The church building was enlarged in the summer of 1881, and reopened for worship December 4th.

Mr. Hager resigned June 15th (became pastor of Norfolk Street Church, New York City), and died in New York City, October 21, 1884, and was succeeded by Rev. Ferdinand O. Zesch, of Carlstadt, N. J., who was installed October 24, 1883; the intermediate time the pulpit being supplied by a gentleman from the Theological School of Bloomfield, N. J., and Rev. Fred. Erhardt, of Manchester. Mr. Zesch resigned in August, 1885, to take charge of a German Reformed Church in Cincinnati, Ohio, and was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. Frederick C. Saure. Number of Sunday-school scholars, one hundred and eighty.

GERMAN METHODISTS.—The Methodists, who up to this time had associated with the other Protestants in the Kirchenverein, formed a separate congregation, and services were held with Mr. John Lutz as preacher, the society numbering eighteen members at the end of nine months. Mr. August Wallon (student) preached two years, and the third was settled as pastor, and the society commenced the erection of a church on Vine Street. The building was dedicated December 11, 1881, and at this date there were sixty-eight members. Mr. Wallon was followed by Rev. G. Hauser, two years; Rev. Aldin Wolff, two years; Rev. Philip Stahl, the present pastor, who commenced his service in April, 1886. The church has now one hundred members.

ST. THOMAS (EPISCOPAL) CHURCH is located in Methuen, though its members are mainly from Lawrence. Their first pastor was Rev. Belno A. Brown.

There are also in Lawrence several smaller societies.

The United Congregational Church organized 1877, Rev. John T. Whalley.

The Primitive Methodist, the Olive Baptist, the Second Advent, a small Swedenborgian Society and a Society of "Friends."

ROMAN CATHOLICS.—In 1846 Rev. Charles D. French came to Lawrence, conducting his religious services in private houses at first, but very soon after in a small wooden church building, thought to be sufficiently large for the purpose, but which, in 1848, would hardly contain half of those who sought entrance. From a valuable work, entitled "Catholicity in Lawrence," written by Miss Katharine A. O'Keefe, and published 1882, the information which follows is compiled. Father French was the son of a Protestant clergyman, in the county of Galway, Ireland; shortly after his father's death he came to this country, early in the present century, and after laboring more than forty years in organizing congregations and building churches, in various places, came to Lawrence in 1846. He died in 1851, having, during his short residence, established the First Church and organized a school, the church being known as the "Church of the Immaculate Conception."

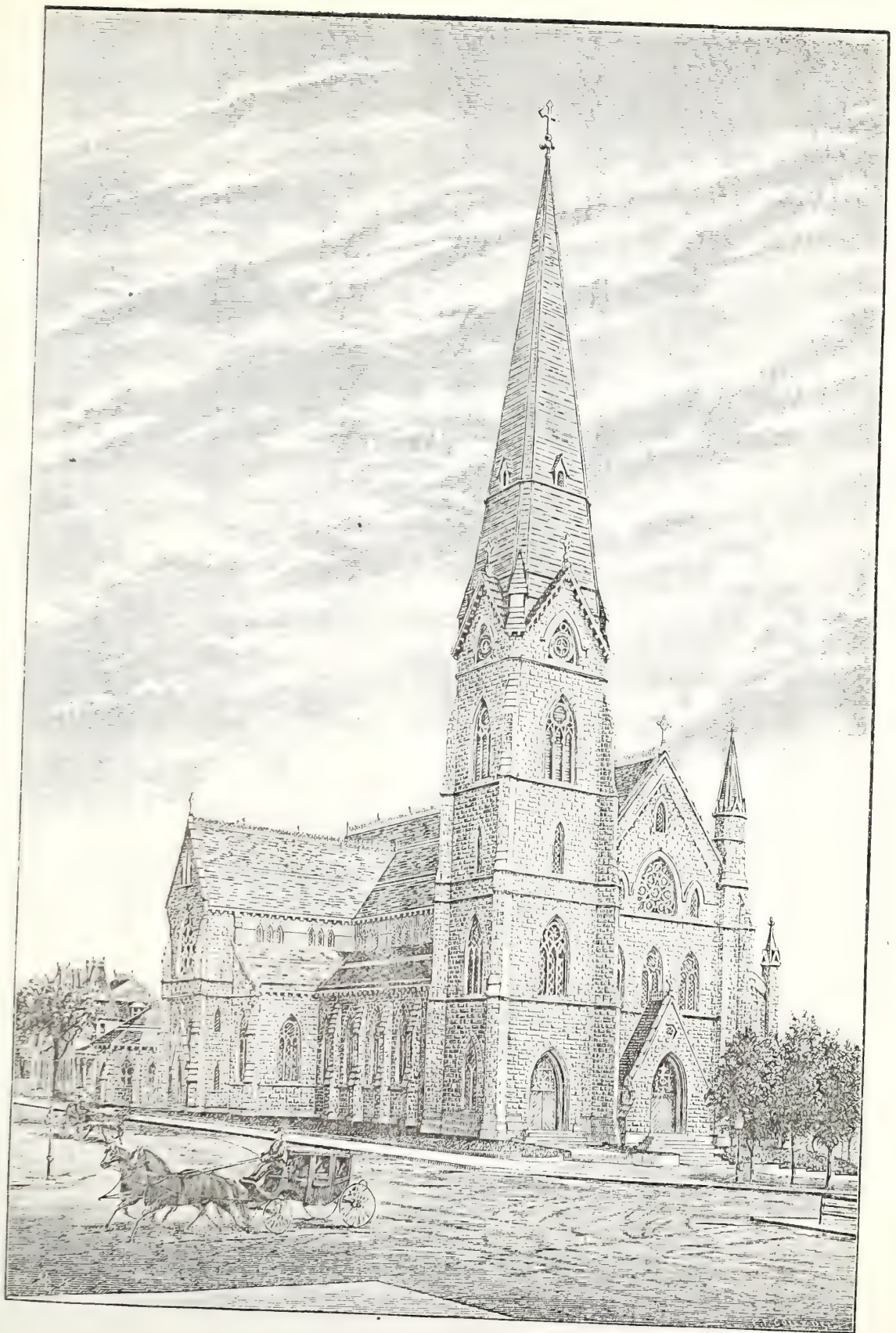
Father French was succeeded in the ministry by Rev. James H. D. Taaffe, born about 1800, in the county of Mayo, Ireland. When ten years of age he went with an uncle, who was an officer of high rank in the British Army, to India, where he remained several years. Before his return to Ireland he entered upon a collegiate course of study at Mauritius, in the Isle of France. At the age of twenty-seven he again took up his studies in the Jesuit College at Carlow. Here he remained a short time, when he went to Tuam, and was ordained a Dominican friar; was superior of a monastery in that neighborhood eight years, came to America in 1849, and in October, 1850, to Lawrence.

During Father Taaffe's ministry the wooden church building gave place to the large brick church of the same name. He also built the "Protectory of Mary Immaculate," an orphan asylum and home for invalids, being aided in this latter work by the "Catholic Friends' Society," a society organized by him in 1856. This asylum was completed and dedicated February 9, 1868, and on its completion it was placed under the charge of the Sisters of Charity, or "The Grey Nuns."

On the 29th of March following, Father Taaffe closed his earnest life after a service here of eighteen years.

Some time before the death of Father French, and two years before the arrival of Father Taaffe, the Catholic population had so far increased that another priest was needed, and in 1848 the want was supplied by the advent of Rev. James O'Donnell. Father O'Donnell was born in Cashel, Tipperary County, Ireland, April 13, 1806, was ordained to the priesthood in New York, 1837, was soon after stationed at





ST. MARY'S R. C. CHURCH,
LAWRENCE, MASS.

REV. JAMES T. O'REILLY, RECTOR



St. Augustine's Church, Philadelphia, which was burned by a fanatical mob in 1844, and Father O'Donnell was obliged to flee for his life. He went, for a time, to Europe, visited France and Italy, returned, after a short absence, to America, and was located in Lawrence.

On the first Sunday in January, 1849, services were held in a wooden building (unfinished), which gave place later to the old St. Mary's Church, a stone structure on Haverhill Street, commenced in 1851 and finished in 1853; this building was subsequently enlarged sufficiently to contain one thousand more persons, and was dedicated January 10, 1861.

Father O'Donnell was a very active and zealous man in the discharge of his duties to his church, establishing schools for the education of the children, and encouraging associations for intellectual improvement. The Catholic Literary and Benevolent Society was formed in August, 1853, with the following officers: President, John Ryan; Vice-President, J. T. Tancered; Treasurer, John Kiley, Sr.; Secretary, Patrick Foster; Librarian, Dan'l C. O'Sullivan.

A second society of similar nature was formed in 1858, the St. Mary's Young Men's Society. The first year's officers of this society were John Hayes, President; Patrick Goodwin, Vice-President; James T. O'Sullivan, Secretary; Michael O'Callaghan, Treasurer; James Kiley, Librarian. To this society Father O'Donnell made a donation of one hundred volumes, —the nucleus of what became a fine library.

The societies continued for several years.

Father O'Donnell also introduced the Sisters of Notre Dame in August, 1859, who, in September following, opened their school for girls (yet in existence), where, independently of religious teaching, they have, no doubt, in a quiet, unostentatious manner, exerted a favorable influence over the moral character of the girls committed to their charge and in charitable work among the needy and unfortunate.

But it was not alone in his religious works that Father O'Donnell was conspicuous; he was a public-spirited citizen and an excellent man of business, interested in whatever pertained to the welfare and good order of the city, of a benevolent disposition and ever ready to help the deserving poor; he had no sympathy for the drunken and lazy. He was a liberal friend to the Lawrence City Mission, contributing to its relief fund and aiding its investigations in behalf of the poor; especially was this the case in the winter of 1857, when the mills were idle and thousands of people were unemployed. At this time Father O'Donnell and Father Taaffe were both earnestly engaged in collecting funds and personally disbursing the necessities of life; and at this time also the former rendered very valuable service in stopping a senseless run upon one of the city savings banks.

Father O'Donnell died April 7, 1861, aged fifty-five, much lamented, not only by his own people, but by those of all denominations, and bearing with him

to his long home the respect and esteem of the entire community. The successor of Father O'Donnell was Rev. Ambrose Mullen, who remained four years, assisted, at different times, by his brother, Rev. Edward Mullen, and Fathers Gallagher and Daley. He left in 1865 to assume the presidency of Villanova College, near Philadelphia, where he remained till 1869, when failing health compelled his retirement from its active duties, and in August of the same year, on the death of Father Gallagher, he was sent to St. Augustine's Church in Andover, where he spent the remainder of his life. He died July 7, 1876.

Father Mullen was succeeded at St. Mary's by Rev. Louis M. Edge, assisted by Fathers William Hartnett, John P. Gilmore and M. F. Gallagher.

Under his administration the corner-stone of the new St. Mary's Church was laid and the building, which is an ornament to the city, and one of the finest buildings in the country, was partially completed. Father Edge was born in 1825, came to America at the age of twenty-two and, shortly after his arrival, joined the Franciscans at Loretto, Pa., and was five years professor in the Catholic College there; went thence to Philadelphia and entered the order of St. Augustine and spent two years at Villanova College in the study of theology and qualifying himself for the priesthood. Being particularly fond of mathematics, he was retained at Villanova as professor of mathematics for six years, and then went to Mechanicsville and Schaghticoke, N. Y., at which latter place he built fine church, coming to Lawrence in 1865. He was interested in the cause of general education, and at the time of his decease was a member of the school committee of Lawrence. He went to Philadelphia to make arrangements for raising the cross on St. Mary's on the following July 4th, and there was thrown from his carriage, receiving injuries which resulted in his death February 24, 1870.

Very Rev. Father Galberry, superior of the Augustinian Order, and later Right Rev. Bishop of Hartford, was the successor of Father Edge; and under him the church (St. Mary's) was completed, and dedicated September 3, 1871. The length of the building is two hundred and ten feet; width, eighty feet, except at the transept, where it is one hundred and two feet. The steeple is two hundred and twenty-five feet high and the top of the cross is two hundred and thirty-five feet from the ground, which makes the building fifteen feet higher than Bunker Hill Monument. It is in Gothic style and built of light granite from Westford (Mass.), Salem (N. H.) and Hallowell (Me.), and is capable of seating over three thousand persons.

On the departure of Father Galberry Rev. John P. Gilmore became pastor, during whose administration a fine chime of sixteen bells (from the foundry of William Blake & Co.) was placed in the tower and consecrated with imposing ceremonies on Sunday, December 13th. The cost of the chime was



ten thousand dollars—three thousand of the amount having been bequeathed by the will of the late Hugh Rafferty and the remainder raised by contributions from the members of the church.

Returning to the first church, the successors of Father Taaffe in this church were Rev. M. J. L. Doherty and C. T. McGrath, the former of whom removed to Millbury in 1859 and Rev. William Orr took his place. Father McGrath removed to Somerville in 1869 and his successor was Rev. Father McShane. During Father Orr's pastorate St. Patrick's Church, in South Lawrence, was built and dedicated March 17, 1870, and St. Lawrence's Church, at the corner of Union and Essex Streets; this church was dedicated by Archbishop William in July, 1873.

The French Catholics began agitating the subject of gathering a church in 1871, holding meetings at first in Essex Hall and soon after in a small building purchased on Lowell Street. They commenced building the present church on Haverhill Street in 1872-73, but it was delayed until 1875, when, under the pastorate of Rev. Oliver Boucher, it was sufficiently completed to be used for divine service, and received the name of St. Anne's.

The limits of this article will not admit of sketches of the many able and earnest clergymen who have been active in the different churches. A full record may be found in Miss O'Keefe's work, above referred to. The various Catholic Churches in 1875 were committed by the Most Rev. Archbishop to the spiritual care and direction of the Augustinian Order, and Rev. D. D. Regan, who had been stationed at St. Mary's since his ordination in 1874, became pastor of the Immaculate Conception Church, succeeded in 1877 by Rev. John H. Devir.

The present head of the Augustinian Order here is Rev. James T. O'Reilly.

LAWRENCE IN THE GREAT REBELLION.—From a Lawrence newspaper, published in the early days of Lawrence, 1846, is the following extract: "If the enormity of a man's sin is just cause for an equal enormity of punishment, the monster who, for the pay of a common soldier, will consent to turn 'human butcher' deserves the punishment in its fullest and broadest extent."

This sentiment did not, however, seem to be very deeply seated in the minds of the people, for no sooner had the echoes of the first guns fired upon Fort Sumter reached their ears, than Lawrence was ready to respond. The Sixth Massachusetts Regiment, of which two companies belonged in Lawrence, was at this time commanded by Col. Edward F. Jones, of Pepperell; the lieutenant-colonel was Walter G. Shattuck, of Groton, who resigned because of age and infirmity; and the major was Benjamin F. Watson, then of Lawrence, now of New York City. Major Watson was elected lieutenant-colonel on the 17th May, 1861, and was promoted to the command

of the regiment, and held that position till the close of the campaign, Capt. Josiah A. Sawtelle, of Lowell, being elected major.

The President's first call for troops to defend Washington was issued on the 15th of April, 1861, reached Boston on the 16th, and the entire regiment, scattered through the towns of Stoneham, Lawrence, Lowell, Acton, Groton, Worcester and adjoining towns, reported in Boston on the 17th, the larger portion of the regiment having arrived there before sunset of the 16th; arrived in New York on the morning of the 18th, at Philadelphia in the evening of the same day; on the 19th made their memorable passage through Baltimore, having lost four killed and thirty-six wounded; but not without inflicting a heavy loss upon the opposing force; and arrived in Washington on the afternoon of the 19th. Company I, of Lawrence, was under the command of Capt. John Pickering, and Company F, under Capt. Benjamin F. Chadbourne and, subsequently, Capt. Melvin Beal.

Of the four killed in Baltimore, Sumner H. Needham, of Lawrence, was, according to Hanson's "History of the Sixth Regiment," the first to fall mortally wounded. He was born in Bethel, Me., March 2, 1828, and had resided in Lawrence about twelve years, was corporal in Company I, having been a member of the company about five years. His body was brought to Boston on the 2d of May, and conveyed to Lawrence May 3d, by a committee of the city government, and placed in the city hall, where funeral service was held. The hall was appropriately draped, and every inch of room occupied. On the rostrum were the clergy of the city, and an eloquent sermon was preached by the pastor of the deceased, Rev. G. S. Weaver, of the Universalist Church—assisted by Rev. Caleb E. Fisher, of Lawrence Street Congregational Church; Rev. W. L. Jenkins, of the Unitarian Church; Rev. Henry F. Lane, of the First Baptist Church; Rev. C. M. Dinsmore, of the Garden Street Methodist Church; Rev. Daniel Tenney, of the Central Congregational Church; and Rev. George Packard, of the Episcopal Church, in the devotional exercises.

The text was in Hebrews xi. 4: "*He being dead, yet speaketh.*"

"He speaks from that scene of conflict, with a silent yet terrible eloquence, which is heard all over our great country, and which stirs the moral indignation of twenty millions of freemen at home, and ten times that number abroad. That blow that broke in upon his brain struck upon the conscience of a nation. That wound has a tongue, speaking with a trumpet of thunder among the Northern hills and along the western prairies. The blood spilt from it is the seed of a mighty harvest of patriots, who will pour upon rebels the indignation of their outraged souls. His shattered form calls from its coffin upon an outraged country, to arouse in its might and crush out the reckless and imperious spirit of treason which has reared itself against our prosperous land and our benignant form of Government. Yes, being dead, our brother calls upon us, his neighbors and friends, to stand up in our patriotism and manhood, and maintain and defend the honor of that country for which he gave his life. He calls upon our State to prove that her sons are worthy descendants of the blood of Plymouth Rock and Lexington; upon our country to prove that her people are worthy of the institutions under which they live."



A granite monument in Bellevue Cemetery marks his resting-place, and bears the following inscription:

"By the City Government this monument is erected, to endure to posterity the memory of Sumner H. Needham, of Co. I, 6th Regt. M. V. M., who fell a victim to the passions of a Secession mob during the passage of the Regiment through the Streets of Baltimore, marching to the defence of the Nation's Capital on the memorable 19th of April, A.D. 1861, Aet. 33. A loyal north in common with his widow and an only child, mourn his loss.

A.D. 1862."

On the base of the monument is this word

"NEEDHAM."

At a later period of the war the Sixth Regiment was again among the first to respond to the call for nine months' troops, and in this campaign Lawrence furnished one company (Company I); Company F was partially recruited (many of the members having enlisted in other organizations for three years), and consolidated with Company I, under the command of Capt. Augustine L. Hamilton.

Again, between the expiration of service of the first three years' regiments and the organization of new, the government called for regiments for one hundred days' service. A third time the Sixth responded, and Lawrence again furnished one company (Company K), under command of Capt. Edgar J. Sherman, who had previously served in the nine months' campaign.

Prior, however, to the commencement of actual war, when General Anderson, in consequence of the hostile attitude of South Carolina, had removed his small force of sixty men from Fort Moultrie to Fort Sumter, in January, 1861, Captain Gustavus V. Fox who had been an officer in the navy, but was then resident in Lawrence, originated a plan for carrying provisions to the beleaguered garrison; this was rejected by President Buchanan, renewed and carried into effect by President Lincoln, but failed of accomplishment for reasons too well known to be related here. Captain Fox gave himself thenceforward to the cause of the Union and became the Assistant Secretary of the Navy, where, by his energy and thorough knowledge of naval affairs, he rendered most valuable service to the end of the war.

While the three months' troops (the Third, Fourth, Fifth, Sixth and Eighth Regiments, Deven's Rifles and Cook's Battery) were in the field, it became apparent to the government that greater effort and a longer struggle were before them, and on the 3d of May, 1861, a call for troops for three years' service was issued. Under this call Lawrence had representatives in the First, Second, Ninth, Eleventh, Twelfth, Thirteenth, Fourteenth, Sixteenth, Seventeenth, Nineteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-second, Twenty-fourth, Twenty-sixth, Twenty-eighth, Thirtieth, Thirty-second, Thirty-third, Thirty-fifth, Thirty-ninth, Fortieth, Forty-first, Fifty-sixth, Fifty-seventh and Fifty-ninth Massachusetts Infantry.

Of the ten men enlisted in the Second, three were killed in battle or died in service. Of the forty men

enlisted in the Ninth, five were killed or died of wounds. In the Tenth Regiment we were represented by Lieutenant-colonel Jefford M. Decker. In the Fourteenth Regiment, which became the First Heavy Artillery, were more than three hundred from Lawrence; of these forty-seven were killed or died in the service. In the Seventeenth Lawrence had sixty men, Company I being largely recruited from Lawrence, and of these nine did not return. In the Twenty-sixth, Companies F and I were mainly composed of Lawrence men; the loss in this regiment being twenty-one. To the Thirtieth Regiment Lawrence furnished sixty-seven men, the majority of Company G; of these twenty-two were killed or died in service. To the Fortieth Regiment Lawrence furnished a full company (C) of one hundred men, of whom nineteen were killed or died in service. In the Forty-first, which became the Third Cavalry, Company B was largely composed of Lawrence men, ninety-five in all, with a loss of sixteen, nine of whom were killed in action. In the Fortieth New York (Mozart Regiment), one company was recruited by Captain William Sullivan, of Lawrence. This regiment suffered severe loss and Captain Sullivan was killed at Fredericksburg.

In the nine months' troops Lawrence was again represented by two companies in the Fourth Massachusetts, one in the Forty-eighth, and a few in the Fiftieth and in the Sixtieth Infantry, one hundred days' service; also in the First, Fourth, Sixth, Seventh, Ninth and Fifteenth Light Artillery, in the Second and Third Heavy Artillery, three years' service; in the Fourth Heavy Artillery, one year's service, fifty men; in the First Battalion Heavy Artillery, three years; in the First and Second Cavalry; in the Fifth Cavalry (colored) by one representative bearing the honored name of George Washington; and in the First Battalion of Frontier Cavalry attached to the Twenty-sixth New York Cavalry for service on the Northern frontier. Besides these, one hundred and seventeen men enlisted in the regular army and a considerable number in the navy, and some in other State organizations, supplying to the Union force twenty-four hundred and ninety-seven men, or two hundred and twenty-four more than were required by all demands of the government.

While men were eager and earnest to do their duty to their country the ladies were no less patriotic. Meetings were immediately formed for supplying the wants of those who had sprung to arms at the shortest notice, and who had sacrificed all the comforts of peaceful homes for the uncertain and unaccustomed life of the soldier.

Some regular associations had been formed on the day that the President issued his first call for seventy-five thousand men. Sewing circles were formed all over the Northern States to prepare clothing, bandages, lint, havelocks, &c., and to furnish delicacies for the hospitals. Lawrence was not behind others in these patriotic efforts. But, as the armies increased



in numbers and the war assumed its gigantic proportions, system became necessary. The ladies of New York City early formed the Woman's Central Relief Society, which was the germ of the Sanitary Commission. Then branches of this association were formed in different parts of the country, the New England Branch having headquarters in Boston with Miss Abby W. May as chairman, and it was as an adjunct to this society that the Lawrence Soldiers' Aid Society was formed. Early in 1862 some Boston friends applied to Mrs. George D. Cabot to inaugurate the movement here, a work which she would have been glad to undertake but for physical inability. Mrs. Cabot called to her aid Mrs. George A. Walton, a lady full-charged with the feeling of the time, and of marked executive power. After consultation with Mrs. Daniel Saunders a call was issued for a meeting of ladies at the City Hall Council Room; the room was filled and an organization at once effected with Mrs. Walton for president, Mrs. Saunders for vice-president and Miss Annie Garland (now Mrs. C. N. Chamberlain), secretary and treasurer. Mrs. Walton and Mrs. Saunders served till the end of the war; Miss Garland till October, when she was succeeded by Miss Ella Payne, who continued in office till the disbanding of the society.

Their first act was to levy an assessment on each member of twenty-five cents; in this way fifty-two dollars was raised with which to purchase materials and to commence work. Contributions from individuals followed, contributions from the various churches and contributions from people employed in the mills. A public entertainment and a Union Fair yielded good results. Without going into minute details, the results of the society may be summed up as follows: Forwarded to the Commission, 2630 articles of clothing, 964 handkerchiefs, 774 articles of bedding, 54 boxes of lint and bandages, 2 boxes of books, besides canned fruit, jellies, old cotton and linen, sponges, soap, &c. Financial statement: received from churches, \$359.26; from individuals, \$414.28; proceeds of entertainment, \$227.45; proceeds of Union Fair, \$6293.32; ten cent contributions, \$795.64; total, \$8989.95. Of this amount, \$2447.32 was expended for materials, \$3500 was given to the Sanitary Commission, \$500 was given to the Christian Commission, and the balance to Rev. George P. Wilson, the city missionary for soldiers or their families in Lawrence.

The finance committee of the Union Fair were Dr. William D. Lamb, Rufus Reed and William R. Pedrick. The executive committee consisted of the above-named, with George P. Wilson (city missionary), Patrick Murphy, Mrs. Daniel Saunders, Mrs. George R. Rowe, Mrs. George A. Walton and Mrs. A. J. French.

The city government was prompt in appropriating money to meet all necessary demands, expending during its continuance, exclusive of State aid, over \$115,000, and for State aid to the families of volunteers, afterward repaid by the State, more than \$192,000.

It would be invidious to attempt an account of the

services of individuals or companies, of their bravery in battle, or the hardships endured in the prisons of the South. These alone would make a volume, interesting as a novel, and which would prove the saying that "truth is stranger than fiction."

It may be pardonable, however, to mention one regiment which, for the extent of its travels and the number of its engagements, was somewhat notable. The Forty-first Infantry was mustered in November 1, 1862, and served under General Banks in Louisiana. In April, 1863, at Opelousas, they were converted into mounted riflemen, drawing their horses from the surrounding country. June 17, 1863, they were joined by three unattached companies of Massachusetts cavalry, and the whole body of thirteen hundred were organized as the Third Cavalry and served in the Red River campaign. June 24, 1864, they were dismounted by special order, armed as infantry again, left Louisiana July 15th with orders to report to General Grant at Fort Monroe, Va., serving six months as infantry in Virginia. February 15, 1865, remounted as cavalry, and May 23d went to Washington and took part in the grand review of the army by the President. June 14th were sent to St. Louis and thence to Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, on account of the Indian troubles on the Western plains, and on the 25th turned over their horses to the Fourth Michigan Cavalry. On the 21st of July the regiment was consolidated into six companies, Captain Charles Stone, of Lawrence, commanding Company D. On the 23d horses were drawn for the regiment and orders were received to report at Fort Kearney, Nebraska. August 23d received six months' pay and on the 24th were ordered to report to Major-General Connor, at Julesburg, Colorado, reaching Cottonwood Springs August 28th. They returned and were mustered out of service October 8, 1865, having marched fifteen thousand miles and having fought in more than thirty engagements.

Roll of Lawrence Volunteers in the Army and Navy, who were killed in battle or died while in service in the Civil War:

Adams, Walter T.	.....	killed Nov. 9, 1863, White Plains, La.
Adams, James	.....	died April 4, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Alison, Charles	.....	died April 16, 1864, Baton Rouge, La.
Ames, Thomas C.	.....	killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
Archibald, William	.....	died February 21, 1863.
Armstrong, Thomas	.....	died October 3, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Atkinson, Robert J.	.....	killed May 19, 1864, Spotsylvania.
Aylward, William	.....	died Dec. 12, 1862, Philadelphia.
Baker, Edward	.....	died Aug. 12, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Barr, Robert G.	.....	killed Dec. 12, 1862, Tanner's Ford, Va.
Barker, Asa	.....	killed May 19, 1864, Spotsylvania.
Barry, Michael S.	.....	died in prison at Danville, Va.
Bateman, Samuel	.....	died Aug. 22, 1862, Carrollton, La.
Bean, Chas. T.	.....	died May 22, 1864, Richmond, Va.
Berry, Charles	.....	died Nov. 14, 1863, New York.
Berry, Horace S.	.....	died Oct. 28, 1862, Miner's Hill, Va.
Bingham, James	.....	died April 25, 1863, Baton Rouge.
Blood, Milton H.	.....	missing in battle May 16, 1864.
Bodwell, Leonard	.....	died Dec. 26, 1862.
Branch, Geo. L. F.	.....	died Jan. 14, 1864, Beaufort, S. C.
Breen, Timothy	.....	died in the hands of the enemy.
Brown, Moses	.....	died March 12, 1863, New Orleans.



- Brown, Stephen.....died Nov. 26, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
 Buckley, James.....died of wounds July 23, 1862.
 Burns, James F.....killed September 1, 1862, Chantilly, Va.
 Buben, Joseph W.....died Oct. 26, 1864, Andersonville.
 Buechel, Francis A.....killed May 11, 1861, Ashland, Va.
 Carlton, Edward.....killed June 3, 1864, Cold Harbor, Va.
 Carr, Geo. W.....died Feb. 19, 1864, Richmond, Va.
 Chandler, Gustavus A.....drowned July 3, 1864, Mississippi River.
 Clarendon, Edw. H.....died of wounds Oct. 17, 1864, Winchester, Va.
 Clark, Miles.....died Oct. 3, 1863, Franklin, La.
 Clifford, Lucius.....died May 2, 1865.
 Clines, Patrick.....killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
 Cozzer, John.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Collins, Wm. H.....died of wounds June 17, 1864, Washington, D. C.
 Connor, Thomas.....died
 Connors, John.....died of wounds June 17, 1864, Washington, D. C.
 Cook, George.....died Aug. 21, 1863, Fort Monroe, Va.
 Cooper, Thomas H.....died Dec. 5, 1862, New Orleans.
 Crawshaw, Richard.....killed June 11, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
 Creighton, John.....missing in action July 2, 1863, Gettysburg.
 Crafty, Chas. H.....died Aug. 8, 1862, New Orleans.
 Crosby, Robert.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Cummings, Geo. P.....died of wounds Sept. 9, 1864, Alexandria, Va.
 Curo, Thomas.....missing in action Dec. 13, 1862.
 Curry, John.....died July 14, 1864, Baltimore.
 Curran, Patrick.....killed June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
 Cushing, William.....died of wounds July 16, 1864.
 Cutter, Chas. H.....died May 30, 1864.
 Cutter, Geo. S.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
 Dacey, Jeremiah.....killed April 8, 1864, Sabine Cross-Roads, La.
 Dancy, Patrick.....died Jan. 20, 1864, New Orleans.
 Davis, Albert A.....died of wounds June 21, 1864, Washington.
 Davis, Thomas B.....died May 31, 1864, Andersonville.
 Davis, Benjamin.....killed May 10, 1864, Laurel Hill, Va.
 Davis, George.....died Oct. 4, 1862.
 DeLoach, John.....died of wounds Sept. 17, 1862, Antietam.
 Denney, Patrick.....died Jan. 29, 1863, New Orleans.
 Dew, Vesley W.....died Aug. 11, 1864, Port Hudson, La.
 Doyle, John.....killed May, 1864, Yellow Bayou, La.
 Drew, Israel L.....died Nov. 6, 1861, Annapolis, Md.
 Dwyer, John.....died June 12, 1865, New Orleans.
 Dwyer, Owen.....died
 Durgin, Alexander.....died May 21, 1863, New Orleans.
 Durgin, Geo. C.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Edmundson, James.....died Aug. 18, 1863, Cleveland, Ohio.
 Edwards, Charles L.....died
 Eberhart, Geo.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania, Va.
 Farren, Joseph.....died Aug. 16, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
 Farnessey, Thomas.....died Alexandria, Va.
 Foye, John.....died June 12, 1862, New Orleans.
 French, Chase C.....died Aug. 1, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
 Frazer, Geo. C.....killed June 1, 1864, Cold Harbor, Va.
 Freeman, John B.....died
 Freeman, et. Huch.....died of wounds June 19, 1862, South Carolina.
 Gafferson, John B.....died Jan. 7, 1865, Lawrence.
 Garland, James S.....died Jan. 20, 1862, Fort Albany, Va.
 Garry, John.....killed June 27, 1862.
 Gaulty, Charles M.....died Aug. 18, 1862, New Orleans.
 Gilleland, James.....died Oct. 19, 1864, in rebel prison.
 Givens, Jasper F.....killed Sept. 19, 1864, Winchester, Va.
 Golden, Michael.....died Nov. 17, 1863.
 Golden, James.....died
 Goodall, George.....died Jan. 6, 1865, Philadelphia.
 Gordon, Chas.....missing in action.
 Gray, Timothy, Jr.....died Dec. 2, 1862, Sharpsburg, Md.
 Gray, Abner.....died July 16, 1862, New Orleans.
 Greenwood, Paul.....killed June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
 Grubin, Jas. R.....went down with his vessel before Vicksburg, Miss.
 Gunning, Thomas.....ship "Congress," killed in action with the "Merrimack," Hampton, Va.
 Hale, John.....died Oct. 18, 1864, Andersonville Prison.
 Hall, Chas. A.....died Feb. 12, 1865, Fort Reno, D. C.
 Hall, Wm. S.....died Sept. 30, 1864, Andersonville.
 Hall, Cornelius.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Ham, Timothy.....died Feb. 11, 1865, Salisbury Prison, N. O.
 Harding, Dennis.....missing in the battle of Chattanooga, 1864.
 Harding, Michael.....died of wounds July 3, 1863, Gettysburg.
 Haskell, Charles.....died of wounds June 19, 1864.
 Hayes, William.....died March 1, 1865, Lawrence.
 Hayes, Patrick.....killed June 15, 1862, John's Island, S. C.
 Hayes, John F.
 Helmer, John.....died of wounds, Lawrence.
 Henderson, Roderick.....died Aug. 16, 1864.
 Hickey, John.....killed 1862, Bull Run.
 Hill, Patrick.....died May 5, 1865, Morehead City, N. C.
 Hinman, Frank.....died June 17, 1863, Aldie, Va.
 Hogle, Wm. H.....died Sept. 5, 1863, Fort Albany, Va.
 Holland, Thomas.....died June 15, 1864, in rebel prison.
 Holt, Alfred A.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Holt, Wm. T.....died of wounds July 12, 1863, in the hands of the enemy.
 Horton, Geo.....died May 9, 1863, New Orleans.
 Houghton, Geo.....died July 30, 1862, Baton Rouge, La.
 Howard, Chas. W.....died Oct., 1862, Davis Island, N. Y.
 Hughes, Michael.
 Huntington, Stephen D.....died July 28, 1862, New Orleans.
 Hutchins, John M.....died June 30, 1862, Savage Station, Va.
 Irish, Chas. S.....killed March 25, 1865, Petersburg, Va.
 Jackson, Frank D.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Johnson, Eliza B.....died May 17, 1862.
 Jones, Fred. O.....died May 10, 1864, Davis Island, N. Y.
 Joy, William H.
 Joy, Henry G.
 Jones, Irwin W.....died Mar. 2, 1865, Annapolis, Md.
 Jones, Thomas.....died Mar. 18, 1865, Philadelphia.
 Kelley, Timothy.....killed in action.
 Kelley, Edward J.....killed June 3, 1864, Cold Harbor, Va.
 Keefe, John.....died in prison, Andersonville, Ga.
 Kenny, Edward.....killed Oct. 19, 1864, Cedar Creek, Va.
 Kenny, John.....killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
 Kenny, M. B.....killed in the battle of the Wilderness, Va.
 Kent, Geo. G.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
 Killoran, Michael.....died Apr. 2, 1864, Andersonville.
 Kimball, Joseph W.....killed June 22, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
 Knox, James R.....died Nov., 1864, Florence, S. C.
 La Bounty, Franklin.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Lamphere, Wm. N.....died Oct. 13, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
 Lane, Wm. A.....died May 16, 1863, Fort Monroe, Va.
 Langley, Geo. W.....died July 4, 1864, Baltimore, Md.
 Lavalley, Joseph.....died Newbern, N. C., June 24.
 Learned, Jonas G.....died Sept. 2, 1864, Andersonville.
 Leary, Simon.....died May 22, 1862.
 Lovering, John.....killed July 3, 1863, Gettysburg.
 Lovejoy, James K.....killed Sept. 19, 1864, Winchester, Va.
 Makin, Thomas.
 McBride, Felix.....died Nov. 8, 1863, New Orleans.
 McCabe, James.....died Oct. 8, 1863, New Orleans.
 McCarthy, Dennis, accidentally killed Jan. 27, 1863, Suffolk, Va.
 McCarthy, Timothy.....died Oct., 1862, Philadelphia.
 McConaick, Patrick.
 McDonald, Michael.....died Sept. 29, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
 McDonald, John.....died Aug. 19, 1862, New Orleans.
 McGowan, Abden T.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 McKean, Wm. J.....died Nov. 28, 1863, St. Augustine, Fla.
 McNamara, Jeremiah.....died of wounds Nov. 28, 1864, at home.
 McNamara, Patrick.....died Apr. 13, 1864, in rebel prison.
 McFee, Angus.....died Oct., 1864, Fort Delaware.
 McQuade, John.....killed June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
 Melvin, John H.....died Oct. 13, 1863, Fort Albany, Va.
 Melvin, Samuel.....died Sept. 29, 1864, Andersonville.
 Merrill, Geo. W.....died Apr. 29, 1862, New Orleans.
 Merrill, Frank H.....killed May 16, 1864, Drury's Bluff, Va.
 Merrow, Geo. W.....died of wounds May 24, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Merrow, George O.....died June 28, 1862, New Orleans.
 Mills, James H.....died June 16, 1863, Brashear City, La.
 Minnehan, Michael.....died Nov., 1862.
 Moore, Joseph W.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
 Morgan, William.....died Aug. 24, 1863.
 Morgan, Geo. W.....killed Apr. 8, 1864, Sabine Cross-Roads, La.
 Moriarty, Daniel.....killed July 13, 1863, Donaldsonville, La.
 Morrison, Alexander.....died May 11, 1864, New Orleans.
 Morse, Roswell E., died of wounds July 9, 1864, Fairfax Seminary, Va.



Munger, Freddied Mar. 9, 1861, Hilton Head, S. C.
 Murlack, Buchanan.....killed Oct. 19, 1864, Cedar Creek, Va.
 Murphy, Stephen.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Murphy, Jeremiah.....died May 9, 1865, Raleigh, N. C.
 Murphy, James.....died Oct. 18, 1864, New Orleans.
 Murphy, Philip.
 Nason, Hiram P., died of wounds Aug. 12, 1864, at New Haven, Ct.
 Needham, Sumner H.....killed in Baltimore, April 19, 1861.
 Newton, Edwin E.....killed Apr. 8, 1864, Sabine Cross-Roads, La.
 Nichols, Wm. W.....died Oct. 26, 1863, New Orleans.
 Norman, Patrick.....killed May 27, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
 O'Brien, James.....died Oct. 8, 1864, Winchester, Va.
 O'Brien, Henry.....died Dec. 6, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
 O'Brien, Thomas.....killed July 2, 1863, Gettysburg.
 O'Leary, John.....killed May 12, 1862, Newbern, N. C.
 O'Doyle, Michael.....killed June 17, 1865.
 Packard, Henry.....died Jan. 29, 1862, off Warsaw Island, Ga.
 Page, Herman L.....died of wounds July 7, 1864, Washington.
 Parker, Dennis M.....died Oct. 10, 1862, New Orleans.
 Parks, John.....died Oct. 30, 1864, Newbern, N. C.
 Parslow, Joseph K.....died at sea Jan. 20, 1863.
 Peaslee, Alpheus, died of wounds Sept. 18, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
 Phelps, S. G.A.....died July 22, 1864, Andersonville.
 Pierce, Turner E.....died Oct. 21, 1862.
 Price, Wm. H.....died of wounds June 5, 1864, Baton Rouge.
 Pray, Oliver L.....died July 5, 1862, New Orleans.
 Quamby, Chas. W.....drowned Apr. 2, 1862, Ship Island, Miss.
 Quamby, John J.....died Apr. 25, 1865, Baltimore.
 Quinn, Thomas.
 Rafferty, Frank.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Raven, Columbia.....died Aug. 16, 1863, Indianapolis.
 Reed, John.....died of wounds May 18, 1864.
 Reed, William.....killed May 16, 1864, Drury's Bluff, Va.
 Remick, C. H.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Reno, Chas. J.....died at sea, Jan. 22, 1863.
 Richards, J. Miltonmissing in action May 14, 1864.
 Richer, Geo. Wm.....died Dec. 8, 1862, New Orleans.
 Risher, Noah C.....died Feb. 6, 1864, Virginia Creek, Va.
 Riddell, Walter S., drowned Dec. 27, 1862, Long Island Sound.
 Ripley, Thomas K.
 Roaf, Thomas.....died Nov. 17, 1862, Fort Warren, Boston.
 Rolle, Isaac A.....killed May 14, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Rowe, Asa.....died Aug. 19, 1864, Andersonville.
 Russell, Zeb H.....died May 14, 1864, Fort Darling, Va.
 Ryder, Stanley.....died of wounds June 12, 1864, Washington.
 Seaborn, Warren P.
 Shea, Thomas.....died May 31, 1865, Portsmouth Grove, R. I.
 Shepard, Augustus.....died Aug. 3, 1864, Port Hudson, La.
 Short, James.....killed Sept. 1, 1862, Chantilly, Va.
 Simonds, Benjamin W.....died Jan. 29, 1863, Harper's Ferry, Va.
 Slattery, John.
 Smith, Benjamin.....died of wounds July 15, 1863, Gettysburg.
 Smith, John F.....died of wounds June 29, 1864.
 Smith, Stewart.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Smith, C. Allen.....killed in action Aug. 3, 1864, Jackson, La.
 Smith, Geo. W.....died July 18, 1862, New Orleans.
 Smith, Michael S.....died July 17, 1862, New Orleans.
 Smith, Charles W.....died Oct. 18, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
 Spaulding, Wm. H.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
 Stafford, Geo. W.....died Nov. 19, 1862, Washington.
 Stead, James.....died June 4, 1863, Baton Rouge.
 Steele, Wm. H.
 Stevens, Geo. F.....died at sea Sept. 16, 1866.
 Stevens, Graham P., died of wounds received at Chancellorsville, prisoner.
 Stevens, William O.
 Stoddard, Haverly A.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Strong, Henry G.....died at sea Mar., 1864.
 Sullivan, Wm.....killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
 Sullivan, John.....died of wound May 22, 1864.
 Sullivan, George.....died Aug. 30, 1864, Andersonville.
 Sullivan, Michael, died of wounds June 29, 1862, Savage Station, Va.
 Sullivan, John.....died Oct. 20, 1862, New Orleans.
 Tainter, William H.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.

Taylor, James Hdied Oct. 22, 1863, Beaufort, S. C.
 Thompson, Andrew G.....died Oct. 20, 1862, at home.
 Thompson, John B.....killed June 3, 1861.
 Thorne, Francis R.....died June 28, 1864, New Orleans.
 Thyng, Daniel G.....died Aug. 19, 1863, Laconia, N. H.
 Varnum, Isaac S.....died Mar. 5, 1863, Carrollton, La.
 Wallace, Webster W., died of wounds July 26, 1864, at Ashburnham, Mass.
 Walsh, Martin.....died Oct. 1, 1864, Danville, Va.
 Walsh, Michael.
 Washburn, Fleazer.....killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Webb, James.....killed May 3, 1863, Chancellorsville.
 Webster, Justus W.....killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
 Welsh, Patrick.....killed Aug. 29, 1862, Bull Run, Va.
 Wheeler, Geo. W.....died July 25, 1864, New Orleans.
 White, Thomas.....died Dec. 12, 1862, New Orleans.
 White, Calvin M.....died Aug. 27, 1862, New Orleans.
 Whittemore, Daniel.....died June 8, 1864, Philadelphia.
 Whitten, Joseph L.....died Aug. 10, 1863, Baton Rouge.
 Wiggin, Mayhew C.....died Nov. 8, 1864, Andersonville.
 Wing, Thomas A.....died June 2, 1863, Brashear City, La.
 Withington, James.....killed in action May 15, 1864.
 Yeaton, Daniel S.....died Nov. 28, 1862, New Orleans.
 Yeaw, Leonard.....died Aug. 25, 1862, New Orleans.
 Yore, Patrick.....died Sept. 13, 1862, New Orleans.

SOLDIERS' AND SAILORS' MONUMENT.—A monument to the memory of the soldiers and sailors of Lawrence was erected on the Common in 1881. The initiatory steps for this purpose were taken by Post 39, of the Grand Army of the Republic, in September, 1879, and five hundred dollars were contributed by the members; but it was early evident that the government or the citizens must be enlisted in the enterprise, in order to build a structure that should be appropriate and worthy of the city. At a meeting of citizens held November 13, 1879, a committee of eleven, consisting of Hon. William A. Russell, Charles D. McDuffie, Emily G. Wetherbee, Corp. J. Clinton White, David C. Richardson, Thomas Cornelie, Robert H. Tewksbury, Frederick T. Lane, H. Francis Dunning, Everard H. Kelley and Captain Daniel F. Dolan, was appointed to consider the subject and report. This committee reported to a largely attended meeting of citizens November 24th that a monument of granite to be placed in some central position on Lawrence Common was the only memorial structure for which funds could be readily obtained, and the only form that would not involve questions of location and future management. Their report was very generally endorsed, and it was further decided that it would be desirable to ask for contributions in very small sums, that the monument might be literally the people's monument to the memory of their dead. The committee were authorized to add to their number the names of other citizens, and an association was at once formed under the name of "The Monument Association;" President, Robert H. Tewksbury; Vice-Presidents, John R. Rollins and Thomas Cornelie; Secretary, Frank O. Kendall; Treasurer, Henry F. Hopkins; Trustees to receive and invest the funds, Hon. James R. Simpson, Hezekiah Plummer, Waldo L. Abbott, Joseph Shattuck, Frederick E. Clarke, James S. Hutchinson, Byron Truell, John Hart, Hon. Edmund R. Hayden.



General Committee, consisting of the original eleven members and Major Edward A. Fiske, Major George S. Merrill, Hon. John K. Tarbox, Joseph Walworth, Dr. David Dana, Rev. John P. Gilmore, Granville M. Stoddard, John Fallon, Joseph P. Battles, Robert Scott, James A. Treat, William R. Spaulding, Colonel Chase Philbrick, James H. Eaton, William R. Pedrick, Hon. Henry K. Webster, J. C. Bowker, John L. Royer, Colonel J. D. Drew, John H. Gilman, Hon. Caleb Saunders, Captain Horatio G. Herrick, Dyer S. Hall, James E. Shepard, Adolph Vorholz, Rev. E. R. Sanborn, David C. Crockett, James Lane, Patrick Donahue, R. A. Harmon, Lewis G. Holt, D. F. Riley, Albert Emerson, Michael Carney, James Noonan, Colonel L. D. Sargent, W. H. Coan, D. F. Robinson, Hon. John Breen, Miss Brassil, Mrs. C. U. Dunning, Mrs. E. P. Poor, M. B. Townsend, John Shehan, R. H. Seaver and E. J. Leonard.

Subsequently a society of ladies was organized in aid of the association, with the following officers: President, Mrs. A. J. French; Vice-President, Mrs. E. P. Poor; Treasurer, Mrs. J. D. Drew; Secretary, Mrs. J. E. Shepard; and active work was at once commenced. The several corporations, by their agents and treasurers, generously contributed three thousand dollars. The school children, through the efforts of Captain Herrick, by a penny and dime contribution, raised over two hundred dollars. A concert by the Ladies' Choral Union, under the direction of Mr. Reuben Merrill, added about two hundred dollars more, and the remainder was contributed by the citizens generally, in the mills, work-shops, stores, and in the post-office, police and other departments of the city, the Grand Army members raising their donation to seven hundred dollars. The total cost of the monument was \$11,111.75,—the total number of subscribers being nine thousand one hundred and thirty-six, and in this list may be found the names of three of the Chinese residents.

The sub-committee finally appointed, to select the design of a monument and carry out the work were Major George S. Merrill, Major E. A. Fiske, Hon. R. H. Tewksbury, Hon. E. R. Hayden, Dr. David Dana, Colonel Chase Philbrick and Captain John R. Rollins.

The sub-committee received many plans from some of our best builders and artists, many of them beau-

tiful, but far exceeding the means at the disposal of the committee. Three important matters were considered: 1st, To select good and durable material; 2d, To agree upon a design acceptable in itself, proper for the locality and not exceeding in cost the amount of funds actually at their disposal; 3d, To place the work in reliable and responsible hands.

The contract for the stone was finally awarded to Messrs. Frederick & Field, of Quincy, Mass., and for the bronze to Maurice J. Power, of New York City, and both parties executed their work in a very prompt and satisfactory manner. The crowning figure of the monument representing "Union" was designed by David Richards and modeled at the foundry of Judge Power. The figure was cut from Concord granite by Mr. Theodore M. Perry at the granite works in Quincy, who also executed the carved work on the capital. The shield bears the legend of the Lawrence municipal seal, "Industria," and the emblematic bee.

On the buttresses, at the base of the column stand three figures in bronze; the first, representing an infantry soldier, is nearly a duplicate of one in Albany, N. Y., was designed and modeled by Henry Ellicott, of New York. Two others, one representing a sailor, the other a dismounted cavalry officer, were modeled by William R. O'Donovan, at the foundry of Mr. Power, where all were cast.

The monument was dedicated and transferred to the city on the evening of November 2d, amid a brilliant display of fire-works and calcium lights, and was accepted by the mayor, Hon. Henry K. Webster, in a short but very appropriate address.

The monument bears the following inscriptions:

"Erected in 1881 by the people of Lawrence
in honor of Soldiers & Sailors
who fought for Liberty & Union.
1861-1865."

The northeasterly space has the following lettering in bronze:

"Time brightens the record of patriotism
Establishes justice
And honors sacrifice."

The easterly tablet bears the following:

"In memory of brave men
Whose sacrifice and death
preserved the Union."

Three bronze tablets contain the names of those who died in service or were killed in battle.



LIST OF LAWRENCE SOLDIERS, (as compiled from the Adjutant General's Reports).

Abernethie, John.....	Co. C 50th	Barnes, Timothy P.....	Co. F 26th	Brady, Frank.....	Co. I 17th
Abbott, James G.....	Lt. Co. H 4th	Barnes, James E.....	Co. F 26th	Brady, James.....	Co. I 17th
Abbott, Geo. A.....	Co. C 4th H. A.	Barnes, Wm.....	Co. B 4th	Brady, Hugh.....	3d U. S. Inf.
Abbott, Wm. H.....	2d H. A.	Bartlett, Alonzo M.....	Co. B 1st H. A.	Bradbury, James.....	Co. C 4th
Adams, John R.....	Co. K 6th & 3d Cav.	Bartlett, Marcus M.....	Co. K 1st H. A.	Bradshaw, Enoch.....	Co. B 4th
Adams, Walter T., Co. B 3d Cav.; killed Nov. 9, 1863, White Plains, La.		Bartlett, Geo. A.....	Q. M. S. 1st H. A.	Branch, Geo. L. F.....	Co. C 40th; died Jan. 14, 1864, Beaufort, S. C.
Adams, James, Co. B 4th; d. Apr. 4, 1863, Baton Rouge.		Bates, Henry C.....	Co. C 4th H. A.	Brannon, Hugh.....	Co. C 4th
Aber, Christian.....	Co. I 6th	Batchelder, Moulton W., 1st Lt. Co. K 6th & 2d Lt. Co. C 40th.		Brannon, John.....	Co. K 6th and Co. B 4th
Aiken, Danl. C.....	unassigned	Batchelder, Henry W.....	Co. C 40th	Breen, Timothy.....	Co. G 2d H. A.; died in the hands of the enemy.
Aikens, Wm.....	8th Unat. Co.	Bateman, Saml., Co. G 30th; d. Aug. 22, 1862, Carrollton, La.		Brigham, Stephen H.....	Co. K 1st H. A.
Airgood, John.....	V. R. C.	Baxter, John.....	Co. B 4th	Briggs, Solon.....	Co. B 2d
Allen, Charles, Co. H 4th; d. Apr. 16, 1863, Baton Rouge.		Beadle, Bodwell D.....	Co. H 4th	Briggs, Simeon.....	7th Lt. B.
Aldred, James.....	Co. B 4th	Beal, Henry.....	Co. F 6th	Brierley, John B.....	Co. K 6th
Allen, Henry H.....	Co. F 6th	Beal, Melvin, 2d Lt. Co. F 6th, Capt., Lt. Col. & Col.		Brisbois, Gabriel A.....	2d U. S. Cav.
Allen, Wm.....	Co. F 26th	Bean, Josiah.....	Co. K 1st H. A.	Bronnan, Kyron.....	8th U. S. Cav.
Ames, Charles J.....	Co. K 1st H. A.	Bean, John.....	Co. B 3d Cav.	Brennan, James.....	Co. F 26th
Ames, Thomas C., Co. K 1st H. A.; killed June 1, 1864, Petersburg.		Bean, Jeremiah R.....	Co. B 22d	Brock, Leonard.....	Co. C 40th
Ambrose, David.....	Co. B 3d Cav.	Bean, Charles T., Co. C 40th; d. May 22, '61, Richmond, Va.		Brown, Ambrose A.....	Co. K 1st H. A.
Annan, Frank.....	1st Lt. Co. K 1st H. A.	Beardsley, John B., 2d & 1st Lt. & Capt. 1st H. A.		Brown, Otis D.....	Co. K 1st H. A.
Anderson, Currie.....	Co. B 4th	Beattie, Wm.....	Co. E 3d H. A.	Brown, John B.....	Co. B 3d Cav.
Archer, Geo. N., 1st Sergt. Co. K 6th & 8th Inf.		Belrose, Geo.....	Co. K 3d H. A.	Brown, Moses.....	Co. B 3d Cav.; died March 12, 1863, New Orleans.
Archibald, Wm.....	d. Feb. 21, 1863, Lawrence	Bell, Anderson.....	Co. I 11th	Brown, Francis E.....	Co. A 16th
Armstrong, Thos., Co. D 30th; d. Oct. 3, 1863, Baton Rouge.		Bell, Thos.....	Co. B 3d Cav.	Brown, James H.....	Co. I 17th
Ashworth, Thos.....	8th Unat. Co.	Benson, John F.....	1st Sergt. Co. H 4th	Brown, John.....	Co. D 20th
Ashworth, Chas.....	Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.	Bennett, Geo.....	Co. H 4th	Brown, John.....	Co. C 40th & V. R. C.
Ashworth, Ralph, Co. C 40th; d. Sept. 29, 1872.		Begley, Wm. H.....	V. R. C.	Brown, Frank.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.
Ashland, James A.....	3d U. S. Inf.	Begor, Lewis.....	Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.	Brown, James P.....	Co. H 4th
Aspell, Patrick K.....	1st U. S. A.	Belcher, Chas. L.....	Co. F 6th & Co. K 1st H. A.	Brown, Chas. S.....	Co. F 48th
Atkinson, Robt. J., Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spotsylvania.		Berry, Chas., Co. K 1st H. A.; d. Nov. 14, '63, N. Y.		Brown, Joseph R.....	9th Lt. B.
Atkinson, Saml. W.....	8th Unat. Co.	Berry, Chas., Jr.....	Co. K 1st H. A.	Brown, Stephen.....	Co. C 40th; died Nov. 26, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
Aylward, Martin.....	8th Unat. Co.	Berry, Horace S.....	Co. 16th	Brown, Elias.....	V. R. C.
Ayer, Augustus S.....	Co. I 4th	Berry, Horace S., Co. C 40th; d. Oct. 28, 1862, Miner's Hill, Va.		Bruton, Robert.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.
Aylward, Wm., Co. K 40th N. Y.; d. Dec. 12, 1862, Philadelphia.		Bessner, Albert.....	3d U. S. Inf.	Bryant, Dan'l.....	V. R. C.
Balb, Joseph A.....	Co. K 6th & Co. H 4th	Bethel, Joseph, Jr.....	Co. C 40th	Bryant, Henry.....	Co. I 17th
Baley, Geo. F.....	Co. F 6th & Co. D 1st Cav.	Bethel, Joseph.....	Co. B 3d Cav.; dead	Bryant, James L.....	8th Unattached
Bailey, Romanzo.....	Co. F 6th	Binnis, Cyrus.....	Co. M 1st H. A.	Buckley, James.....	Co. D 20th; died of wounds July 25, 1862.
Bailey, Wm. A.....	Co. F 6th & Co. B 3d Cav.	Bingham, James, Co. H 4th; d. Apr. 25, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.		Broughton, Sam'l.....	Co. K 6th, Co. C 40th, Sergt. Co. D Frontier Cav.
Bailey, Marcus M.....	Co. G 14th	Birch, Thos.....	Co. F 48th	Buckley, James.....	Co. B 4th
Bailey, Warren.....	8th Unat. Co.	Blaisdell, Ralph.....	9th Lt. Bat.	Buckley, Robert.....	Co. F 1st H. A.
Bailey, Ambrose.....	Co. I 26th	Blake, Uriah.....	Co. K 3d H. A.	Buckley, Joseph.....	Co. K 6th
Bailey, Geo. B.....	Co. C 40th	Blake, Richard.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.	Bunby, Joseph.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.
Bailey, Thomas.....	Co. K 6th	Blake, John.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.	Burbank, Geo. W.....	Co. G 12th
Begley, Wm. M.....	Co. C 40th	Blanchard, Geo.....	Co. I 6th	Burbank, Nathan.....	V. R. C.
Baker, Edward, Co. B 3d Cav.; d. Aug. 12, '63, Baton Rouge.		Blood, Milton H., Co. I 6th & Co. C 40th; missing in battle May 16, '64.		Burnham, Edw'd F.....	8th Unattached
Baker, John A.....	2d Lt. 6th Lt. Bat.	Blyth, David H.....	8th Unat. Co.	Burnham, Joseph A.....	Co. C 4th H. A.
Baker, Geo. W.....	8th Unat. Co.	Blyth, Wm.....	Co. K 6th	Burnham, Wm. H.....	Co. C Fr. Cav.
Barrie, Alexander.....	Co. B 3d Cav.	Blyth, Jonathan.....	Co. F 18th	Burke, Philip.....	Co. F 26th
Barr, Robert G., 2d Lt. Co. I 6th; killed Dec. 12, 1862, Tanner's Ford, Va.		Boardman, E. K.....	Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.	Burke, John.....	Co. F 28th & V. R. C.
Barr, Danl. A.....	8th Unat. Co.	Boardman, James.....	Co. B 4th	Burke, David.....	Co. B 57th
Bardsley, Wm. E.....	Co. I 6th	Bodwell, Stephen B., Co. C 50th & Co. F 1st H. A.		Burke, Edward.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.
Barber, Asa, Co. B 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spotsylvania.		Bodwell, Leonard, Co. B 48th; d. Dec. 26, '62.		Burke, Patrick.....	Co. F 48th & Co. B Fr. Cav.
Barry, Joseph.....	Co. I 9th	Bodwell, Geo. A.....	Co. G 30th	Burns, James C.....	Co. C 4th H. A.
Barry, Dennis.....	Co. F 26th	Bohannon, Michael.....	Co. F 16th	Burns, Peter.....	Co. C 4th H. A.
Barry, James.....	Co. H 4th	Booreman, Fredk.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.	Burns, Wm.....	Co. I 9th & V. R. C.
Barry, Michael, Co. F 57th; d. in prison, Danville, Va.		Boston, Gorham P.....	Co. F 26th	Burns, Michael.....	1st Lt. 17th
Barry, James.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.	Boyle, John.....	Co. K 6th & Co. B 4th	Burns, James F.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed Sept. 1, 1862, Chantilly, Va.
Barrett, Thos.....	Co. F 48th	Bower, Robert.....	Co. C 50th	Burns, Patrick.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.
Barrett, Robt.....	Co. K 40th N. Y.	Bonney, Darius.....	V. R. C.	Burns, Patrick.....	1st U. S. Cav.
Barlow, Alfred.....	Co. C 50th	Boswell, James.....	1st D. C. Inf.	Burns, Patrick.....	8th U. S. Cav.
		Brachett, Darius G.....	Co. A Frontier Cav.	Bullen, Joseph W.....	Co. C 40th; died Oct. 26, 1864, Andersonville Prison.
		Bradley, Geo. V.....	Co. I 1st H. A.	Burbank, Nathan.....	V. R. C.
		Brachett, Danl. G.....	Co. I 6th	Burill, Augustus.....	Co. F 6th & Co. F 26th
				Bushce, Francis A.....	Co. F 1st Cav.; killed May 11, 1864, Ashland, Va.



- Buswell, James C...Co. F 1st H. A., 2d Lt., 1st Lt. & Capt.
- Butler, Geo. F...Co. K 1st H. A., Sergt., 1st & 2d Lt.
- Butler, Edward.....Co. A 1st H. A.
- Butler, Timothy.....Co. K 2d H. A.
- Butler, Austin S...Co. H 4th, Co. I 4th & Co. D Fr. Cav.
- Butler, Henry.....Co. B 4th
- Butler, Thomas M.....Co. B 10th
- Butler, Chas. W.....Sergt. Co. H 4th
- Butler, Coleman.....Co. H 4th
- Butterfield, A. J.....1st Sergt. Co. F 6th
- Burns, Wm.....Co. C 5th
- Byrnell, Wm C.....1st U. S. Cav.
- Cadmus, Wm. B.....Co. F 2d H. A.
- Cahan, Dan'l.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Cahill, Maurice.....Co. H 10th
- Cain, John.....Co. I 4th
- Cain, Michael.....1st U. S. Cav.
- Callahan, Patrick.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Callahan, Thos.....Co. H 4th
- Callahan, Thos.....Co. G 59th & 57th
- Callahan, Bernard.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Caffrey, Dan'l.....Co. F 48th
- Campbell, Joseph.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Campbell, Duncan.....Co. H 4th
- Campbell, Solomon, Jr.....Co. G 30th
- Canfield, Michael.....Co. K 11th
- Canfield, Thomas M.....3d Lt. B.
- Carlton, Edward.....Co. F 6th
- Carlton, Edward.....1st Lt. Co. I 49th; killed June 3, 1862, Cold Harbor, Va.
- Carlton, Frank C.....Co. K 6th
- Carr, John S.....Co. I 4th
- Carpenter, Geo. B.....Co. E 1st H. A.
- Carpenter, George.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Carr, John.....8th U. S. Cav.
- Carr, Charles.....8th Unattached & K 1st H. A.
- Carr, Geo. W...Co. B 3d Cav.; died Feb. 19, 1862, Richmond, Va.
- Carrasco, Felix F.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Carr, J. Patrick.....Co. I 4th
- Carr, James.....Co. I 17th
- Carr, John J.....Co. I 4th
- Carruthers, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Carter, Austin F.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Carter, Levi H...Co. K 1st H. A.; died August 1, 1862.
- Carter, Wm. S.....Co. K 1st H. A. & 8th Unat.
- Carter, Sam'l.....Co. F 26th
- Casey, John.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Casey, John.....Co. B 1st
- Casey, John.....Co. H 4th, re-enlisted 9th Maine, served through the war.
- Casey, Wm.....Co. I 6th
- Casey, Wm. E.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Cassidy, Peter.....Co. D 9th
- Cass, Michael.....1st U. S. Cav.
- Cate, T. J.....2d Lt. Co. F 6th & Lt. U. S. Army.
- Cauhy, Edward.....Co. F 6th
- Cavanaugh, James.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Cavanaugh, Michael.....Co. I 17th
- Cavanaugh, Joseph.....Co. I 17th
- Chambers, B. F.....Capt. Co. F 6th
- Chadwick, Fitz Henry.....Co. H 4th
- Chaffin, Willard.....Co. I 6th & 1st Lt. B.
- Chamberlain, Forest B.....Co. I 6th
- Chandler, Gustavus A...Co. B 3d Cav.; drowned July 3, 1864, Mississippi River.
- Charnock, Thomas.....Co. A 1st H. A.
- Charr, John.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Chard, Edw. F.....Co. F 26th, tr. 1st U. S. Art.
- Charlesworth, Emanuel.....Co. C 30th
- Chapin, Milo J.....Co. H 4th
- Chapman, Wm. H.....Co. C 2d H. A.
- Chapman, Adelbert O.....V. R. C.
- Chase, Silas M.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Chase, Edwin E.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Chelly, John.....Co. K 6th
- Cheney, Bradford.....Co. G 30th
- Chinock, Wm. W.....Co. F 26th
- Clarendon, James A.....Co. B 8th
- Clarendon, Edw. H...Co. H 4th and Co. I 26th; d. of wounds Oct. 17, 1864, Winchester, Va.
- Clark, Alvin S.....8th Unat.
- Clark, Herbert T.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Clark, John.....Co. I 17th
- Clark, Enoch G.....Co. G 30th
- Clark Miles.....Co. G 30th; d. Oct. 3, 1863, Franklin, La.
- Clark, Wm.....Co. F 35th
- Clark, Alonzo B.....Co. C 40th
- Clark, Seth F.....Co. I 6th
- Clark, Rufus B.....Co. C 40th
- Clark, Edward.....Co. F 40th
- Clark Geo. H.....4th Lt. Bat.
- Clair, Robert.....Co. D 20th
- Clary, James.....3d U. S. Inf.
- Cleary, Timothy.....Co. B 4th
- Cleworth, Aaron.....7th Lt. Bat.
- Clifford, Wm.....Co. D 36th
- Clifford, Lucius.....Co. I 1st H. A.; d. May 2, 1865.
- Clifford, Alonzo.....Co. I 16th Wisconsin; killed April 6, 1862, Shiloh, Tenn.
- Cline, Patrick.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Cline, Patrick.....Co. H 4th
- Clines, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
- Clough, Wm. H.....Co. G 12th; trans. to V. R. C.
- Clough, Wm. H...Co. C 40th; d. Aug. 21, 1862
- Colbert, Richard.....1st U. S. Cav.
- Coburn, Wm. A.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Cochrane, Thomas.....Co. I 6th
- Cochrane, Daniel B.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Cochran, Charles.....Co. H 4th
- Cogger, Eugene.....8th Unat.
- Cogger, John.....Co. K 9th; killed May 8, 1864, Spottsylvania.
- Coleord, Daniel.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Collins, Wm. H...Co. K 1st H. A.; d. of wounds June 17, 1864, Washington, D. C.
- Collins, Timothy H.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Collins, Timothy.....Co. H 4th
- Collins, John W.....Co. A 33d
- Collins, Timothy.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Colby, Stephen M...Co. I 6th and 8th Unat.
- Colby, Edwin H.....8th Unat.
- Colby, Eben. T.....Capt. Co. B 4th and Lt.-Col.
- Colby, Wm. K.....2d and 1st Lt., and Capt. Co. C 49th
- Colbert, Edward.....Co. I 2d H. A.
- Colby, Stephen J.....D. 1st N. H. A.
- Colburn, Geo. W.....Co. I 6th
- Coleman, Thomas.....Co. B 4th
- Collopy Michael.....Co. I 19th
- Condon, James.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Condon, John.....Co. H 4th
- Conant, James H.....Co. I 2d
- Conant, James H.....Co. H 4th
- Conant, Albert G.....Co. I 26th
- Connor, Chas. G.....Co. I 2d H. A.
- Connor, Jeremiah.....Co. H 1st Cav.
- Connor, Timothy.....Co. G 1st
- Connor, John.....Co. G 30th
- Connor, Chas. G.....Co. I 6th
- Connors, John.....Co. K 1st H. A.; d. of wounds, June 17, 1864, Washington, D. C.
- Connors, Matthew.....Co. I 6th
- Connors, Thomas.....8th Unat.
- Connolly, John.....8th Unat.
- Constable, W. M.....1st U. S. Cav.
- Converse, Gilbert P.....Co. F 6th
- Connelly, Michael.....Co. C 9th
- Cook, Benj. C.....Co. H 4th
- Cook, Thomas N.....Co. I 26th
- Cook, George.....Co. K 40th N. Y.; d. Aug. 24, 1863, Ft. Monroe, Va.
- Coolidge, Baldwin.....Co. K 6th
- Cooney, Dennis.....1st U. S. Cav.
- Cooper, Thos. H...Co. G 30th; d. Dec. 5, 1862, New Orleans.
- Copp, Joseph F...Co. C 40th; trans. to V. R. C.
- Copp, Geo. E.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Corey, Chas.....8th Unat.
- Corcoran, James.....Co. H 9th; trans. to V. R. C.
- Corning, Samuel.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Corrigan, Andrew.....Co. D 28th
- Corrigan, James.....Co. C 19th
- Coupe, Theophilus.....Co. G 30th
- Cowdrey, Oliver W.....Co. F 6th
- Coyne, Patrick.....Co. E 59th and 57th
- Crawford, Geo. W.....V. R. C.
- Crane, Peter.....8th Unat. and Co. I 6th
- Crawshaw, Richard.....Co. B 4th; killed June 14, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
- Creaden, John.....Missing in action, July 2, 1863, Gettysburg.
- Creaden, John.....Co. F 26th
- Craffly, Chas. M...Co. G 30th; d. Aug. 8, 1862, New Orleans.
- Creighan, John.....Co. K 6th
- Crocker, Frank T.....Co. I 6th
- Crocker, Fred. W.....Co. I 6th
- Crockett, Nelson D.....Co. F 24th
- Crockett, Geo. E.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Crockett, Leander F.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Crosby, Robert.....Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
- Crosby, Alonzo.....8th Unat.
- Crosby, Patrick.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Crosby, James.....Co. G 2d H. A.
- Crosdale, Patrick.....Co. I 30th
- Crouse, Wm. E.....2d Lt. 1st H. A.
- Crouse, John F.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Crowell, Daniel D.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Crowley, Dennis.....Co. I 2d H. A.
- Crowley, John.....Co. E 19th
- Crowther, Wm.....Co. D 20th
- Cruickshanks, Thomas.....Co. H 4th
- Cummings Geo. P.....Co. K 1st H. A.; d. of wounds Sept. 9, 1864, Alexandria, Va.
- Cummings, Chas. E.....1st Lt. Bat.
- Cummock, John.....Co. B 4th
- Cune, Thomas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.; missing in action Dec. 13, 1862.
- Cunningham, Michael B.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Cunningham, John.....Co. I 17th
- Cunningham, Edw.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Curry, Patrick.....Co. K 6th
- Curry, John.....Co. I 17th; d. July 14, 1862, Baltimore.
- Curtin, Patrick.....Co. I 6th
- Curtin, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Curran, Patrick.....Co. I 9th; killed June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
- Currier, Aaron A.....Co. B 4th
- Cushing, William.....Co. K 40th N. Y.; d. of wounds July 16, 1864, Mt. Pleasant Hosp.
- Cutler, Chas. H...Co. M 1st H. A.; d. May 30, 1864.
- Cutter, Geo. S...Co. F 1st H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
- Cutter, James M.....Co. K 6th



Cutting, Chandler.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Cutting, Silas H.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Dacey, Jerome A.....Co. B 3d Cav.; killed Apr.
8, 1864, Sabine Cross Roads, La.
Dacey, Timothy.....1st Lt. Co. I 9th; d. Dec.
10, 1865.
Dacey, Cornelius.....Co. I 19th
Dane, Albert L.....Co. B. 1st H. A.
Dane, Maurice.....Co. I 17th
Daley, John.....Co. F 24th
Daley, Patrick C.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Dane, Sylvanus W.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Dane, Richard G.....Co. F 26th
Danforth, Vespasian.....Co. C 40th
Dana, Patrick, Co. F 26th; died Jan. 2;
1865, New Orleans.
Dana, David M D.....Surgeon
Darell, Geo. G.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Darius, Timothy.....Co. F 48th
Dartmouth, John H.....Co. K 2d H. A.
Davis, Albert A., 2d Lt. and Capt. Co. K 1st H.
A.; died of wounds June 21, 1864, Wash-
ington.
Davis, Daniel.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Davis, Richard H.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Davis, Thomas B., Co. H 1st Cav.; died May
31, 1864, Andersonville.
Davis, W. H. H.....Co. K 6th
Davis, Samuel N.....Co. K 6th
Davis, Wm. F.....Co. C. 16th
Davis, James L.....Co. H 4th
Davis, Isaac S.....Co. H 4th
Davis, Francis, Sergt. to Capt. Co. K 1st H. A.
and Mass.; died May 13, 1865.
Davis, John F.....Co. G 3d
Davis, Joseph, Capt. Co. B 22d Regt.; killed
May 10, 1864, Laurel Hill, Va.
Davis, George.....Co. B 22d; died Oct. 4, 1862
Davis, Fith.....Co. H 4th
Decker, Daniel.....V. R. C.
Decker, Roger.....Co. H 1st H. A.
Decker, John M.....1st Lt. Col. 10th
Decker, Smith M.....Capt. and Col. Co. K 6th
Dean, Samuel P.....Co. I 6th
Deegan, Matthew.....Co. G 4th
Deegan, La Roy.....Co. I 6th
Deegan, Donald.....Co. I 30th
Deegan, J. B.....Co. G 4th
Deegan, John.....Co. B 4th
Deegan, La Roy.....Co. B 1st Cav.
DeForce, John.....V. R. C.
Deegan, Arthur M.....V. R. C.
Deegan, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
Deegan, John L.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Deegan, John.....8th Unattached
Dell, David.....Co. I 17th
Dinneen, John.....Co. G 32d
Dinneen, Patrick.....Co. H 4th
Dinneen, Jeremiah.....Co. I 6th
Dinneen, Robert.....Co. K 6th
Dixon, Abraham.....Co. C 40th
Dodd, Henry.....1st Dist. Columbia Inf.
Dodge, Joseph W.....8th Unattached
Dodge, Thomas H.....Co. M 1st H. A.
Doddler, John.....Co. I 2d
Dodge, John A.....Co. B 11th
Dolan, Bernard.....Co. F 26th and Co. G 30th
Dolan, James.....Co. E 30th
Dolloff, David C.....Co. B 4th
Dolan, Menor B.....Co. C 19th
Donellan, Michael.....1st U. S. Cav.
Donovan, Jerry F.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Donovan, John.....8th Unattached
Donovan, John, Co. H 2d; died of wounds
Sept. 17, 1862, Antietam.

Donovan, Florence.....Co. I 17th
Donovan, John.....Co. I 17th
Donnelly, Thomas Co. C Fr. Cav. and Co. K 6th
Donnelly, Patrick, Co. F 26th; died Jan. 20,
1863, New Orleans.
Donnelly, Frank.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Donahue, Thomas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Dooley, Morris.....Co. G 28th
Dorsey Michael.....Co. H 4th
Dougherty, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
Dougherty, Patrick.....Co. I 6th
Dougherty, John.....Co. I 26th
Dow, John M.....2d Lt. Co. K 1st H. A.
Dow, Charles E.....8th Unattached
Dow, Wesley W., Co. B 3d Cav.; died Aug. 11,
1863, Port Hudson, La.
Dow, Albert I.....2d Lt. Co. B 4th
Dow, Albert.....Co. C 40th
Dowd, Dominick.....Co. I 17th
Doyen, Franklin E.....Co. K 6th
Doyle, Wm. M.....Co. F. 6th
Doyle, Michael.....8th Unattached
Doyle, John.....Co. I 17th
Doyle, Michael O., Co. H 50th; killed June
17, 1865.
Doyle, John, Co. B 3d Cav.; killed May, 1864,
Yellow Bayou, La.
Drow, Israel, 1st Lt. Co. H 4th N. H.; died
Nov. 6, 1861, Annapolis.
Drew, Edgar.....Co. H 4th N. H.
Drew, Clarence E.....Co. B 4th
Drew, Jeremiah D.....Lt.-Col. 4th N. H.
Drew, James W.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Drew, Charles E.....Co. I 6th
Drew, George A.....Co. I 6th
Driscoll, John.....Co. I 3d Cav.
Driscoll, John, Navy; died June 12, 1865, New
Orleans.
Drumney, Patrick.....Co. F 20th
Drummond, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Duchesney, Lawrence N., Co. F 6th; Sergt., 2d
and 1st Lt. Co. H 1st Cav.; in Libby; Capt.
26th N. Y. Cav.; Capt. 1st Batt'n Frontier
Cav.
Duchesney, Felix.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Duffy, Owen.....Co. D 26th
Duffy, Wm.....Co. D 26th
Duffy, Patrick.....3d U. S. Inf.
Duhon, Richard.....Co. D 20th
Dufresne, Edward.....Co. B 4th
Dugal, Charles E.....1st U. S. Cav.
Dugan, Dennis.....Co. D 9th
Dugan, Jeremiah.....V. R. C.
Dunby, Cyrus F.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Duncan, James.....Co. B 11th
Duncan, Edward.....8th Unattached
Duncan, James.....8th Unattached
Duncan, Wm.....Co. B 4th
Dunn, John M.....3d U. S. Inf.
Dunn, John.....8th U. S. Inf.
Dunn, Edward.....Co. I 6th
Dupratine, Calvin W.....Co. M 1st H. A.
Durgan, Jacob R.....Co. H 4th N. H.
Durgin, Geo. C., Co. A 1st H. A.; killed May
19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Durgin, Charles C.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Durgin, Chas. C.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Durgin, A. E.....Co. K 6th
Durgin, Alexander, Co. H 4th; died May 21,
1863, New Orleans.
Durrell, Geo. G.....Co. I 6th
Dwyer, Thomas.....Co. I 9th
Dwyer, Patrick.....Co. D 28th
Dyer, Wm. H.....Co. F 6th
Dyer, Lewis R.....Co. D 12th
Dyer, Joseph.....Co. B 4th

Dyson, Thomas.....Co. K 6th
Eames, James.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Earl, Robert B.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Eastman, John F., Co. M 32d, from 21 Co.
Sharpshooters.
Eaton, J. Frank.....Co. B. 4th & Co. K 6th
Eaton, Wm. C.....Co. E 8th
Eaton, Willis G.....7th Bat.
Eddy, David.....Co. I 9th
Edgerly, Chas. A.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Edgecomb, James, 8th Unattached & Co. F 48th
Edmonds, John.....Co. A 3d H. A.
Edmondson, James, Co. B 4th; died Aug. 18,
1863, Cleveland, O.
Edson, Calvin H. N.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Edwards, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Edwards, Frank A.....Co. K 6th
Eldridge, Ezekiah.....Co. H 4th
Eldridge, James.....8th U. S. Cav.
Eliot, Alvin D.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Eliot, Russell C.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Ellenwood, Eben H., 3d Lieut. Co. 6th (3
months); 1st Lieut. Co. I 6th (9 months);
1st Lieut. 8th Unattached.
Ellenwood, Chas. T.....Co. I 6th
Ellis, Oliver.....Co. H 36th
Ellis, James.....Co. B 4th
Ellsworth, Wm. M.....8th Unattached
Elmerwold, Dearich.....8th U. S. Cav.
Emerson, Horace.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Emerson, Walter F.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Emerson, John D., Co. I 6th; 2d Lieut. Co. K 6th
Emerson, Moses W.....Co. D. 47th
Emery, Solomon D.....Co. M 2d Cav.
Emory, David N.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Emory, John W.....Co. I 26th
Emmons, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Ennis, Wm.....Co. F 26th
Ephraim, Joseph H.....Co. K 31st
Ewings, Samuel.....8th Unattached
Eylward, William.....see Aylward
Fahey, Nicholas.....8th Unattached
Fales, Henry C.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Fagan, Lawrence.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Fagan, Christopher, Co. I 17th; also 10th N. H.
and Navy.
Fannon, John K.....Co. M 3d
Faris, Allen C.....Co. I 26th
Farrell, James.....Co. F 26th
Farrow, Robt.....Co. F 48th
Farrington, Geo., Co. B 1st H. A.; killed May
19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Farmer, Joseph B.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Farquhar, James, Co. B 4th; died Feb. 25, 1862.
Farwell, Fred. M.....Co. I 6th
Favor, Joseph W.....8th Unattached
Faul, Herman.....U. S. Reg. Band
Fearnley, John.....U. S. Reg. Band
Ferns, Frank.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Ferren, Joseph, Co. H. 4th; died Aug. 16,
1863, Baton Rouge, La.
Fernald, Edward I.....Co. D 22d
Finn, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
Fineral, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Finnessy, Thomas, Co. K 40th N. Y.; died Al-
exandria, Va.
Fish, John.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Fisher, James A.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Fish, Chas.....Co. B 4th; died Nov. 15, 1864
Fisher, John M.....Co. K 6th
Fitts, James W.....Co. I 6th
Fitzgerald, John.....Co. H 4th
Fitzgerald, Chas.....Co. M 4th Cav.
Flagg, Charles H.....Co. F 1st H. A.



Flanders, Geo. F., Co. F 26th; trans. to 1st U. S. Art.	Gessing, Wm E.....Co I 2d H. A.	Hackett, Jeremiah.....Co. C 4th H. A.
Flanders, Chas. W.....Co. C 40th	Geureaux, Edward.....Co. C 40th H. A.	Hackett, Jeremiah.....Co. E 1st Cav.
Fletcher, Wm. F.....3d U. S. Inf.	Giddings, James H.....Co. K 2d Cav.	Hager, John.....1st U. S. Cav.
Flavin, Thomas.....Co. B 1st H. A.	Giles, Geo.....Co. C 4th H. A.	Haggerty, John.....Co. C 40th
Fleming, James.....Co. I 6th	Geluk, Martin.....V. R. C.	Haggerty, Wm.....Co. F 25th
Flynn, John.....Co. H 4th	Giles, Geo.....Co. D 9th	Hale, John, Co. F 1st H. A.; died Oct. 18,
Flynn, Thomas.....Co. H 4th	Giles, Chas. H.....Co. F 26th	1864, Andersonville.
Flynn, James, 2d.....Co. D 12th	Gilgan, James.....Co. F 26th	Hale, Joseph F.....Co. G 30th
Flynn, Henry.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Gilleland, James, Co. D 17th; died Oct. 19,	Hall, Chas. A., Co. B 1st N. H. H. A.; died
Flynn, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	1864, in Confederate prison.	Feb. 12, 1865, Fort Reno, D. C.
Foster, Edward.....U. S. Ordnance Corps	Gilford, Henry.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Hall, Wm. S., Co. B 1st N. H. H. A.; died
Foster, Wm. W.....Co. I 29th	Gilmore, Robert.....Co. K 2d H. A.	Sept. 30, 1864, Andersonville.
Folanston, Geo. S.....2d Lieut 1st H. A.	Gilman, John H.....Co. B 4th	Hall, Abraham.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Folsom, Chas. H.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Gilmore, Peter.....Co. D 9th	Hall, Gilson A.
Foran, John.....Co. F 1st H. A.	Gilson, Alpheus L.....Co. F 26th	Hall, Cornelius Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May
Forth, Morris.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Gilloran, Patrick.....Co. I 17th	19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
Forsyth, John.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Gingras Victor G., Co. I 6th; wounded in Bal-	Hall, Samuel A.....Co. I 26th
Ford, Martin.....Co. D 2d Cav.	more April 19, 1861.	Hall, Wm. O.....V. R. C.
Foster, Chas. H.....Co. H 1st H. A.	Gleason Michael, Co. A 3d H. A.; trans to	Halton, Wm.....Co. I 6th
Foster, Maurice.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Navy.	Ham, John F.....8th Unattached
Foster, Wm. K.....Co. G 3d H. A.	Glover, John H.....1st Lt. 1st H. A.	Ham, Federal B.....Co. B 4th
Foster, Chas. H.....Co. B 3d Cav.	Glidden, Jasper F., Co. B 3d Cav.; killed in	Ham, Timothy, Co. I 26th; died Feb. 11, 1865,
Foster, H. Willard.....Co. B 3d Cav.	action Sept 19, 1864, Winchester, Va.	in prison, Salisbury, N. C.
Foster, John D.....Co. C 3d	Golden, James.....Co. C 1st Bat. H. A.	Hamilton, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Foster, Richard H.....Co. F 26th	Golden, Michael, Co. D 17th N. Y.; died Nov.	Hamilton, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Foster, Charles.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	17, 1863.	Hamilton, A Lawrence; 2d Lt. Co. I 6th; and
Foss, Gilman P.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Goldsmith, Melvin H.....Co. I 1st H. A.	Capt; also Capt. 8th Unattached; died.
Foy, John, Co. G 30th; died June 12, 1862,	Goldsmith, Chas.....8th U. S. Inf.	Hamilton, Oliver B.....Co. F 1st H. A.
New Orleans.	Goodrich, Stephen W.....Co. F 1st H. A.	Hammond, Frank E.....Co. C 40th
Fox, Henry L.....Co. C 4th H. A.	Goodrich, Edward.....Co. B 30th	Hanks, John.....8th U. S. Inf.
Frederick, Chas.....3d U. S. Inf.	Goodall, George, Co. F 26th; died Jan. 6,	Hannegan, John.....Co. D 28th
French, Allen T.....Co. B 4th	1865, Philadelphia.	Hannegan, John.....Lt. Co. K 40th Inf.
French, Horace E.....Co. F 1st H. A.	Goodwin, Thomas.....Co. C 50th	Hanning, Obadiah.....V. R. C.
French, Chas. C., Co. H 4th; died Aug. 1,	Goodwin, John J.....Co. B 30th	Hannon, Elias.....Co. G 33d
1863, Port Hudson, La.	Goodwin, Edward.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Hannon, Robt. A.....Co. F 35th
French, Henry F.....Co. B 3d Cav.	Goodwin, Chas., 1st H. A.; missing in action	Hanscomb, Wm. A.....Co. C 40th
French, Geo. W.....Co. E 19th	Goodwin, Ephraim L.....Co. F 48th	Hanscomb, Ivory P.....Co. I 26th
Fredericks, Theodore.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Gordon, Frank A.....Co. I 6th	Hanson, James W.....2d Lt. 1st H. A.
Fremmer, Geo.....Co. H 4th	Gordon, Asa C.....Co. H 4th	Hardacre, Aaron.....Co. C 50th
Fremmer, Jacob.....Co. H 4th	Goulding, Daniel.....Co. F 1st H. A.	Harding, Dennis, Co. H 33d; missing at the
Freeman, Timothy.....Co. F 26th	Goult, Isaac W.....Co. K 1st H. A.	battle of Chattanooga, 1864.
Froom, Mark.....Co. B 4th	Gould, Erastus.....Co. H 3d Cav.	Harding, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Frost, Geo. P.....8th Unattached	Gould, Israel.....Co. C 4th H. A.	Harding, Michael (2d), Co. K 40th N. Y.; died
Frazier, Geo., Co. C 40th; killed June 1, 1864,	Gower, John W.....Co. E 3d H. A.	July 3, 1863, of wounds, Gettysburg.
Old Harbor, Va.	Grady, James.....3d U. S. Inf.	Harkins, Daniel.....Co. I 6th
Fry, Geo.....Co. I 6th	Graffum, Samuel.....Co. L 3d Cav.	Harrison, John M., Co. I 6th, 3 months, and Co.
Frye, Geo.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Graham, William.....Co. I 6th	I 6th, 9 months.
Furbur, Lynnan V. B., Co. D 1st Cav.; died	Graham, William.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Harrison, Rollin E.....Co. B 4th
Oct. 10, 1862.	Grant, Albert H.....Co. B 1st H. A.	Harrison, Edward.....Co. I 17th
Furbush, Chas. H., Co. F 6th and navy, the	Grant, Lewis.....Co. I 6th	Harper, Charles.....Co. K 1st H. A.; colored
"Brooklyn."	Gray, Timothy, Jr., Co. A 2d; died Dec. 2,	Harper, Robt., Co. H 19th, and Co. E 2d H. A.
	1862, Sharpsburg, Md.	Harper, James.....Co. B 11th
Gallagher, Patrick.....Co. I 6th	Gray, Abner Co. D 26; died July 16, 1862,	Harper, James.....Co. E 30th
Gallagher, John.....Co. C 14th	New Orleans.	Harper, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Gallagher, Hugh, Co. D 28th; died of wounds	Gray, William.....Co. F 30th	Harriman, John E.....Co. I 6th
June 13, 1862, South Carolina.	Gray, Otis W.....Co. C 57th	Harriman, Chas. M.....8th Unattached
Gallagher, Patrick.....8th U. S. Inf.	Greenlaw, Chas. E., Co. F 6th, and Co. H 4th	Harrington, Daniel.....Co. B 1st H. A.
Gallagher, John.....Co. B 50th	Green, Michael, Co. I 6th; wounded in Bal-	Harrington, Thomas.....Co. E 2d H. A.
Gamon, Archibald, Co. B 50th; trans. to V. R. C.	more.	Harris, Henry A.....Co. H 13th
Gallison, John B., Co. C 49th; died Jan. 6,	Green, Michael J.....Co. I 26th	Harrison, Wm.....Co. I 6th
1864, Lawrence.	Green, M.....8th U. S. Cav.	Harrison, John.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Gardner, Joseph W.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Greenough, Wm. S.....Co. B 4th	Hart, Jeremiah.....Co. G 28th
Garland, James S., Co. F 1st H. A.; died Jan.	Greenwood, Paul, Co. I 22d; killed June 27,	Hart, Michael.....Co. G 28th
20, 1862, Fort Albany, Va.	1862; Gaines' Mill, Va.	Hart, Daniel.....Co. H 4th
Garraty, John.....Co. I 9th; killed June 27, 1862	Greichen, William.....Unassigned	Hathaway, Chas. C.....Co. B 2d H. A.
Garraty, Peter M.....Co. I 24th	Griffin, James R., Navy; went down with his	Haskell, Chas., Co. C 1st H. A.; died of wounds
Garvin, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	vessel before Vicksburg, Miss.	June 19, 1864.
Gatley, Wm. A.....U. S. hospital steward	Grimshaw, John.....Co. B 4th	Haskell, John G.....Co. B 4th
Gauffy, Chas. M., Co. G 30th; died Aug. 18,	Grogan, James.....1st U. S. Cav.	Haskins, John.....Cos. B and I 17th
1862, New Orleans.	Gurney, Horace M.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Hayes, Chas. H., 1st Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.;
Geary, Wm. F., Co. B 4th; died March, 1867.	Gurney, John.....Co. D 1st Cav.	2d and 1st Lt. Capt. and Major.
Geary, John.....3d U. S. Inf.	Gurney, James M.....Co. D 1st Cav.	Hayes, Gustavus D.....Co. K 1st H. A.
George, John H.....Co. D 1st Cav.	Gunning, Thomas, Navy; (ship "Congress"),	Hayes, William, Co. H 1st Cav.; died Mar. 1,
George, Daniel D., Co. D 1st Cav.; trans. to	killed in action with the Merrimack, Hamp-	1865, Lawrence.
Navy.	ton Roads, Va.	Hayes, John F.....Co. B 4th
	Gustin, Almon D.....8th Unattached	



Hayes, Patrick, Co. H 1st Cav.; killed June 15, 1862, John's Island, S. C.

Hayes, Robert S.....Co. H 4th

Hayes, James L.....Co. C 40th

Hayes, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Hayworth, Robt.....Co. F 26th

Heap, William.....Co. B 4th and Co. K 6th

Heath, Edwin C.....Co. I 6th

Heath, Caleb W.....Co. F 35th

Heavy, J.....3d U. S. Inf.

Helm, John.....40th N. Y.; died of wounds; buried in Lawrence.

Heenan, John C.....Co. D 9th

Henderson, Robert.....2d Lt. Co. F 1st H. A.

Henderson, David.....Co. K 6th

Henderson, Frederick.....Co. F 24th; died Aug. 16, 1864.

Henderson, Wm. V.....Co. H 4th

Henderson, Fredk.....Co. F 25th

Henderson, Wm. Co. F 25th, tr. to 15th V. R. C.

Hederman James F.....Co. B Fr. Cav.

Heathorn, Chas.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Hedley, Daniel.....Co. G 30th

Heron, Thomas.....Co. K 10th

Hersom, Isaac L.....4th Lt. Battery.

Hewes, Robert.....Co. H 1st Cav.

Hickey, Edward.....Co. K 1st H. A.

Hickey, Richard.....8th Unattached.

Hickey, Simon P.....Co. D 9th

Hickey, Thomas.....Co. F 26th

Hickey, Simon P.....Co. A 32d

Hickey, Michael J.....Co. B 32d

Hickey, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed 1862, Bull Run.

Higgins, Abner.....Co. K 1st H. A.

Higgins, Sylvester.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Higgins, Patrick.....Co. I 26th

Hildreth, Seth C.....Co. B 4th, Co. K 6th and Co. B Fr. Cav.

Hill, Enoch T.....Co. F 6th and Co. G 30th

Hill, Joseph.....Co. M 2d H. A.

Hill, Nelson.....Co. B 4th

Hill, Patrick.....Co. I 17th, died May 5, 1865, Marshfield City, N. C.

Hill, Thomas.....Co. I 26th

Himman, Frank.....Co. F 9th & Co. D 1st Cav.; died June 17, 1862, Abbe, Va.

Hinman, David M.....8th U. S. Inf.

Hobbs, Augustus R.....Co. K 1st H. A.

Hoe, Thomas.....Co. H 22d

Hoar, Maurice.....Co. H 22d

Hodge, Andrew L.....Co. I 6th

Hodgdon, Benj. F.....Co. K 6th

Hodges, John M.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Hogle, Wm. H.....Co. K 1st H. A.; died Sept. 5, 1863, Fort Albany, Va.

Hogle, Lucius L.....8th Unattached.

Hogley, James R.....Co. I 6th

Hohendal, Joseph.....1st U. S. Cav.

Holt, Martin D.....8th U. S. Cav.

Holland, Thomas.....Co. I 17th; died June 15, 1864, in rebel prison.

Holland, William.....Co. H 4th

Holden, Wm. G.....Co. B 30th

Holmes, Wm.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Hornes, Stephen.....Co. M 1st H. A.

Hosroyd, Henry.....Co. I 6th

Homans, Arthur L.....Co. B 4th

Hommelsberg, Wm.....1st U. S. Cav.

Holt, Sam'l.....Co. A 1st H. A.

Holt, Amos L.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Holt, Sam'l A.....Co. K 1st H. A.

Holt, Alfred A.....Co. K 1st H. A.; killed Aug. 10, 1864, Spottsylvania.

Holt, Wm. T.....Co. I 26th; died of wounds July 12, 1863, in the hands of the enemy.

Holt, Arthur M.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Holt, Jeremiah.....Co. G 3 th

Holt, Albert E.....Co. F 48th

Holton, Wm. M.....Co. A 3d H. A.

Horne, Damon G.....Co. C 40th

Horne, Joseph.....Co. I 6th

Horne, Geo. F.....8th Unattached.

Horne, Paul.....8th Unattached.

Horner, John.....3d U. S. Inf.

Horner, Wm. S.....Co. C 40th

Horton, Geo.....Co. B 4th; died May 9, 1863, New Orleans.

Horrocks, Thomas.....Co. B 4th

Hesmer, Libridge E.....Co. H 4th

Houghton, John W.....8th Unattached.

Houghton, Geo.....Co. G 30th; died July 30, 1862, Baton Rouge, La.

Howe, Dennis W.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Howard, Richard.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Howard, Chas. E.....Co. K 1st H. A.

Howard, Charles W.....Co. G 12th

Howard, Charles W.....Co. B 2d U. S. Artillery; died Oct., 1862, Davis Island, N. Y.

Howard, Eli.....Co. I 6th

Howard, Bernard.....Co. C 50th

Howard, Leander F.....1st Battery Lt. A.

Hudson, James F.....Co. D 26th

Hughes, Patrick.....Co. M 1st H. A.

Hughes, Thomas.....4th H. A.

Hughes, Michael.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Hulford, John H.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Humphrey, Henry.....Co. K 1st H. A.

Hunt, John.....3d U. S. Inf.

Hunter, Joseph.....V. R. C.

Hunter, Wm.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Hunter, Wm. A.....Co. B 3d Cav.; tr. to V. R. C.

Huntington, Wm. A.....Co. I 6th & Co. I 26th; tr. to V. R. C.

Huntington, James N.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Huntington, Stephen D.....Co. I 26th; died July 28, 1862, New Orleans.

Huntington, David.....Co. G 30th

Hurley, Wm. H.....Co. B 40th

Hussey, Woodbury.....Co. C 40th

Hussey, Walter.....Co. C 40th

Hutchins, John M.....Co. I 23d; died June 30, 1862, Savage Station, Va.

Hyde, Wallace.....Co. C 60th

Iles, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Irish, Chas. S.....Capt. Co. F 1st H. A.; killed Mar. 25, 1865, Petersburg, Va.

Ivory, John.....Co. I 47th

Ivory, William.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Jackman, Frank.....Co. B 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.

Jackson, Joseph.....Co. B 4th

Jackson, Samuel.....Co. B 4th

Jackson, William.....Co. C 50th

Jager, Edward.....3d U. S. Inf.

Jenkins, Edmund P.....Co. C Fr. Cav.

Jerald, Chas. H.....Co. C 40th

Jerald, Albert.....Unassigned, 22d Regt.

Jewell, Harry J.....Co. I 6th

Johnson, Elisha B.....Co. F 1st H. A.; died May 17, 1862.

Johnson, Augustus.....Co. F 26th

Johnson, Samuel.....Co. B 4th

Johnson, Alfred.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Jones, Lorenzo.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Jones, David.....Co. K 1st H. A.

Jones, Irving.....Co. C 4th H. A.

Jones, Charles.....Co. A 2d Cav.

Jones, Charles O.....Co. B 22d

Jones, Amos G.....Co. F 26th

Jones, Josiah N.....Co. F 4th

Jones, Fred. O.....Co. B 30th & Co. I 2d Cav.; died May 10, 1864, Davis Island, N. Y.

Jones, Irwin W.....Co. D 30th; d. March 2, 1863, Annapolis, Md.

Jones, Edward.....Co. C 40th; trans. to V. R. C.

Jones, Thomas, Co. C 40th; d. March 18, 1863, Philadelphia.

Jordan, Wm. G.....Co. C 40th

Joslyn, Elbridge N. B.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Josselyn, Wm. N.....8th Unat.

Joy, Alonzo.....Co. I 6th, 1st Serg't Co. G 30th

Joy, William H.

Joy, Henry G.

Joyce, James W.....Co. I 6th

Judge, Bernard.....Co. I 2d H. A.

Judge, James.....8th Unat.

Judge, Mark.....Co. K 6th

Keating, Mortimer.....Co. F 26th

Kearnen, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Kearns, Thomas.....Co. I 22d

Keely, Michael J.....1st U. S. Cav.

Keeny, Patrick.....8th U. S. Inf.

Kellett, Francis.....8th U. S. Inf.

Kelley, Wm. B.....Co. B 2d Cav.

Kelley, Henry.....Co. H 2d

Kelley, Timothy, Co. I 9th; killed in battle—the first to fall in his regiment.

Kelley, Edward.....Co. G 33d

Kelley, Edward J., Co. C 40th; killed June 3, 1864, Cold Harbor.

Kelley, William.....Co. E 1st H. A.

Keefe, John, Navy, "The Preble;" d. Andersonville, Ga.

Kennedy, Timothy.....Co. — 4th H. A.

Kennedy, Michael.....Co. H 2d

Kennedy, James.....Co. D 20th

Kennedy, James.....Co. K 30th

Kennedy M.....Co. K 4th N. Y.

Kennedy, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Kennedy, Timothy.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Keeny, Thomas.....Co. F 26th

Kenny, Edward, Co. E 30th; killed Oct. 19, 1864, Cedar Creek, Va.

Kenny, Matthew.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Kenny, John, Co. K 10th N. Y.; killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.

Kenny, M. B., Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed in battle of the Wilderness, Va.

Kenny, Stephen.....Co. G 6th

Kent, Geo. E.....Co. B 1st H. A. and Co. F 6th

Kent, Geo. S., Co. F H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.

Kent, Justin H.....Co. B 3d Cav. and Co. F 6th

Kent, Charles E.....8th Unat.

Kemp, Thomas P.....Co. H 4th

Kennison, Geo. W.....Co. B 1st H. A.

Kerin, John.....Co. F 26th

Kerr, Peter.....Co. H 4th

Kerrigan, Henry.....1st Lieut. Co. G 2d Cav.

Kerton, Levi, Co. F 1st N. Y. Cav. and Navy, "The Sabine."

Keyes, Maurice.....3d U. S. Inf.

Keyser, Charles W.....Co. D 6th

Kiley, Dan'l F.....Co. B 4th

Killen, Arthur J.....8th Unat.

Killoran, Michael, Serg't Co. I 17th; d. April 2, 1864, Andersonville.

Killoran, Patrick.....Co. I 17th

Kimball, Joseph W., Captain Co. F 1st H. A.; killed June 22, 1864, Petersburg, Va.

Kimball, Stephen P.....Co. B 4th

Kimball, Charles G.....Co. H 4th

King, Oliver.....Co. C Fr. Cav.

King, Walter S.....Navy, "The Sassacus."



- King, Patrick.....8th U. S. Cav.
 Kingston, Jeremiah.....1st D. C. Inf.
 Kirk, James E.....Co. B Fr. Cav.
 Kirsch, Dan'l.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Kittredge, David.....Co. I 6th
 Klem, Anthony.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Knowles, Geo. F.....Co. F 1st H. A.
 Knowles, James W.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Knowles, Charles E.....Co. G 12th
 Knowles, Geo. H.....8th Unat. & Co. I 6th
 Knott, Wm. G.....Co. F 26th
 Knott, Wm.....Co. I 6th
 Knowlton, Wesley W.....Co. I 6th
 Knowlton, Jas.....8th Unat. Co.
 Knox, James R., Co. C 40th; died Nov., 1864,
 Florence, S. C.
 Knights, Jas. S.....Co. I 6th; 3 mos. & 9 mos.
 Kohler, Leo.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Krauslich, Fred.....8th U. S. Inf.
 Kremer, Adam.....3d U. S. Inf.
- La Bounty, Franklin, Co. K 1st H. A.; killed
 May 14, 1864, Spotsylvania.
- Laffin, John.....8th Unat. Co.
 Lahn, Michael.....Co. I 50th & 57th
 Lahlan, John.....Co. I 17th
 Lahlan, Patrick.....Co. C 40th
 Lakey, Benj.....Co. B 4th
 Lalloy, Thos.....Co. F 1st H. A.
 Lakin, Frank.....Co. C 9th; Serg't & 2d Lt.
 Lamphere, Wm. N., Co. C 40th; d. Oct. 13, '63,
 Folly Island, S. C.
 Lamprey, Geo. H.....Co. K 1st H. A. & Q. M. S.
 Lauson, Ira P.....Co. C 4th H. A.
 Lane, Wm. A., Co. C 40th; d. May 16, 1863,
 Fort M. new.
 Lane, Jesse P.....Co. H 4th
 Lane, Parker W.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Langley, Geo. W., Co. I 50th; d. July 4, 1864,
 Baltimore.
 Langston, Samuel.....Capt. Co.—1st H. A.
 Langston, Andrew.....Co. I 6th
 Lannon, Walter.....Co. B 3d Cav.
 Latta, Wm.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Larrabee, Jas. H.....Co. I 6th; d. Aug. 31, '73.
 Larson, Carl P.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Laxally, Joseph, Co. I 17th; d. Newbern, N. C.,
 June 21th.
- Laveny, Andrew.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Lawler, Joseph.....Co. B 1th
 Lawler, John.....Navy, "The Marston"
 Lawless, Nicholas.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Lawrence, Wm.....1st U. S. Cav.
 Lawry, Robert.....Co. I 6th
 Lawry, Albert B.....Co. K 6th
 Lawry, Jas.....Co. K 6th
 Leacock, Jas. N.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Learned, Jonas G., Co. K 1st H. A.; d. Sept. 2,
 1864, Andersonville.
 Leary, Daniel.....8th Unat. Co.
 Leary, Simon.....Co. I 17th; d. May 22, '62.
 Leavens, Geo. H.....8th Unat. Co.
 Leavitt, Lorenzo S., 2d Maine Regt. & Co. K
 6th.
 Leech, Daniel.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Lever, Jas.....Co. H 4th
 Levonh, Danl.....Co. F 1st H. A.
 Lewis, Geo. W.....Co. F 1st H. A.
 Leighton, Geo. P.....Co. F 1th
 Libbey, Jon.....8th Unat. Co.
 Lindsay, Thos. L.....Co. F 28th
 Lima, Hugh.....Co. C 40th
 Lithgow, John.....Co. I 2d H. A.
 Littlefield, Chas. H.....1st Serg't, Co. F 48th
 Livingston, Chas.....Co. K 10th N. Y.
 Locke, Chas. E.....Co. I 6th & Co. D 3d H. A.
- Logan, John.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Long, Richard.....8th Unat. Co.
 Looby, Edward.....Co. D 11th
 Looley, John.....Co. F 48th & Co. G 2d H. A.
 Looney, Patrick.....Co. K 40th
 Lorenzo, Gotfried.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Lord, Wm.....Co. C 40th
 Lord, Benjamin E.....Co. C 40th
 Lord, Eben.....8th Unat. Co.
 Lord, Hiram F.....Co. B 4th
 Lord, John C.....Co. A 3d H. A.
 Lovering, John, Co. D 26th; killed July 3, '63,
 Gettysburg.
 Lovejoy, Jas. H., Co. B 3d Cav.; killed Sept. 19,
 1864, Winchester, Va.
 Lowe, Geo.....Co. G 9th
 Lowe, John.....Co. G 9th
 Lowe, Henry.....Co. F 26th
 Lowe, Jas.....Co. C 4th
 Lowe, Edward.....Co. F 3d H. A.
 Lowrie, Jas.....8th U. S. Cav.
 Lundy, Mark.....Co. I 6th
 Lunney, John.....Co. I 17th
 Lyle, Wm. H.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Lyle, Wm. C.....Co. H 4th; d. Feb. 12, 1876.
 Lynch, John.....8th U. S. Inf.
 Lynch, Patrick.....1st U. S. Cav.
 Lynch, Timothy.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Lyons, Chas. A.....Co. B 4th
 Lyons, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Lyons, Jas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Mace, Geo.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Madden, Michael.....Co. H 4th
 Madden, Cornelius.....Co. C 28th
 Madden, Dennis.....Co. A 32d
 Madden, John.....Co. G 30th
 Mahoney, Thos.....Co. K 48th
 Mahoney, Michael.....Co. F 48th
 Mahoney, Thos.....Co. I 2d H. A.
 Maken, Thos.....Co. C 40th
 Makinson, Wm. G.....Co. C 11th
 Malone, John.....8th U. S. Cav.
 Malone, Danl.....Co. G 28th
 Maloney, Danl.....Co. B 1st H. A.
 Maloney, John.....Co. B 1st H. A.
 Maloney, John F.....Co. B 3d Cav.
 Mallen, Jas. E.....Lt. Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Maragan, Michael.....Co. B 4th
 Manning, Thos.....Co. I 6th
 Mansfield, Wm.....Co. H 11th
 Martin, Wm. T.....Co. C 40th
 Marchamer, John J.....V. R. C.
 Marston, Philip.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Marsh, Aaron B.....Co. F 1st H. A.
 Marshall, Robt.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Marshall, John.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Martin, John W.....Lt. Co. H 1st Cav.
 Mason, Cyrus.....V. R. C.
 Mason, Eugene J., Lt. 40th & Lt. Co. I 6th;
 dead.
 Masterson, Thos.....3d U. S. Inf.
 Masterson, Wm.....Co. F 26th
 Marston, Henry W.....Co. I 26th
 Mathes, Isaac.....Co. H 4th
 Matthews, John D.....Co. C 40th
 May, Alonzo.....Co. A 1st H. A.
 May, Wm. W.....Co. G 3d H. A.
 May, Henry.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Maynard, Geo. H.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Maynard, Foster.....Co. D Fr. Cav.
 Maynard, Amos F.....Co. I 6th
 Maynard, Frank W.....Co. G 12th
 Maxwell, Loanmi.....Co. B 1st H. A. & Co. A 28th
 McAlpine, Fred.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 McAloon, James.....Co. I 6th
- McAlear, Patrick.....Co. I 6th
 McAlear, John.....Co. I 17th
 McBride, Felix.....Co. F 26th; died Nov. 8, 1863,
 New Orleans.
 McBurke, Edward.....3d U. S. Inf.
 McCabe, James.....Co. F 26th; died Oct. 8, 1863,
 New Orleans.
 McCaffrey, John F.....Co. C 9th
 McCarthy, Charles.....8th Unat.
 McCarthy, Patrick.....Co. G 3d H. A. & Co. I 6th
 McCarthy, Dennis.....Co. I 6th; accidentally
 killed Jan. 27, 1863, Suffolk, Va.
 McCarthy, John.....Co. I 6th
 McCarthy, John.....Co. F 29th
 McCarthy, John.....Co. G. 19th
 McCarthy, Timothy.....Co. K 40th N. Y.; died
 Oct., 1862, Philadelphia.
 McCarthy, Patrick.....1st U. S. Art.
 McCarthy, Patrick.....3d U. S. Inf.
 McCarthy, Charles.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 McChary, James S.....Co. H 4th
 McCragin, John H.....Co. C 1st B. H. A., tr. to
 Navy.
 McCracken, John H.....2d Co. Sharpshooters
 McCragin, John A.....Co. C 40th
 McCrisis, Calvin.....Co. I 6th
 McCormick, Patrick.
 McCullough, Michael.....Co. B 4th
 McCullough, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
 McCune.....Co. E 2d H. A.
 McDade, John.....Co. C 50th
 McDonald, Robt.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 McDonald, Michael.....Co. B 3d Cav.; died Sept.
 29, 1863, Port Hudson.
 McDonald, Michael.....Co. I 9th, tr. to Navy
 McDonald, John.....Co. G 30th; died Aug. 19,
 1862, New Orleans.
 McDonald, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 McDougal, Archibald.....Co. I 2d H. A.
 McDuffie, Henry C.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 McElroy, John.....Co. K 32d; tr. to Navy
 McFarlin, Geo. H.....8th Unat.; dead.
 McGoldrick, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 McGovern, Lawrence.....Co. H 4th & Co. M 2d
 H. A.
 McGovern, John.....Co. F 26th
 McGowan, John A. S.....Co. I 6th & 8th Unat.
 McGowan, Alden T.....Co. K 1st H. A.; killed
 May 19, 1861, Spotsylvania.
 McGowan, Thomas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 McGuire, Edward.....Co. B 4th
 McGuire, Francis.....Co. F 26th
 McGuire, Daniel.....Co. G 34th
 McGuire, John.....1st U. S. Cav.
 McGuire, Joseph.....Co. C 1th H. A.
 McIntyre, Henry M.....Lt. Co. K 1st H. A.
 McKenn, Wm. J.....Co. I 21th; died Nov. 28,
 1863, St. Augustine, Fla.
 McKay, Geo.....Co. C 50th
 McKay, Edwd.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 McKenzie, M. M.....Co. K 6th
 McKering, John.....Co. H 4th
 McKnight, John.....Co. A 1st H. A.
 McLaughlin, John.....Co. C 1st
 McLaughlin, James.....Co. G 19th
 McLellan, John.....Co. H 4th & Co. G 3d H. A.
 McMahan, Thos.....Co. I 17th
 McMullen, Warren.....Co. K 40th N. Y., tr. to
 V. R. C.
 McMurray, James.....Co. F 20th
 McNamara, Jeremiah.....Co. F 1st H. A.; died of
 wounds Nov. 28, 1864, Lawrence.
 McNamara, Patrick.....Co. I 17th; died Apr. 13,
 1864, in rebel prison.
 McNaughton, Alexander.
 McParlin, Robt.....Co. F 26th



- McPhee, Angus.....Co. K 6th; died Oct., 1864,
Fort Delaware.
- McPoland, Wm.....Co. I 9th
- McPoland, Bernard.....Co. E 9th
- McQuade, John.....Co. B 9th; killed June 27,
1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.
- McQuade, James.....Co. I 6th
- McQueeny, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Meadowcroft, Jos.....Co. H 4th & Co. K 2d H. A.
- Mears, Peter C.....Co. F 26th
- Meagher, John.....Co. F 26th
- Meane, James.....Co. F 28th
- Melvin, John H.....Co. K 1st H. A.; died Oct.
13, 1863, Fort Albany, Va.
- Melvin, Saml.....Co. K 1st H. A.; died Sept. 20,
1864, Andersonville.
- Merrill, Wm. F.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Merrill, Chas. G.....Co. F 6th
- Merrill, Carleton E.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Merrill, Geo. S.....Capt. Co. B 4th
- Merrill, Wm.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Merrill, Geo. W.....6th Lt. B; died Apr. 29, 1862,
New Orleans.
- Merrill, Frank H.....Co. C 40th; killed May 16,
1864, Drury's Bluff, Va.
- Merrill, Albert W.....Co. C 40th
- Morrow, Wm. H.....Capt. Co. K 1st H. A. & Q.
M. S.
- Morrow, Geo. W.....Co. K 1st H. A.; died of
wounds May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania, May
24, 1864, Bell Plain, Va.
- Morrow, Joshua.....Co. H 4th
- Morrow, George O.....Co. G 30th; died June 29,
1862, New Orleans.
- Moss, Chas. F.....8th Unat.
- Miller, Wm.....3d U. S. Inf.
- Miller, Joseph.....1st Dist. Columbia Inf.
- Miller, Geo. L.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Miller, Thos.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Miller, Patrick.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Miller, Wm.....Co. I 6th; died
- Miller, Conrad.....Co. B 4th
- Miller, Wm. S.....Co. A Fr. Cav.; dead
- Miller, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Miles, Chas. H.....Co. C 1st Bat. H. A.
- Miles, John A.....Co. F 6th
- Mims, James H.....Co. B 4th; died June 11, 1863,
Branford City, La.
- Mitchell, Michael.....Co. C 50th
- Minnehan, Michael.....Co. B 30th; died at Law-
rence Nov., 1862.
- Moegel, Christian.....Co. C 20th
- Moore, James.....Co. C 40th N. Y.
- Moore, John C.....1st Dist. Col. Inf.
- Moore, Wm. H.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Moore, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Moore, Joseph W.....Co. F 1st H. A.; killed June
19, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
- Morache, Joseph.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Morache, Omer.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Moran, Patrick.....Co. K 1st H. A., tr. to V. R. C.
- Moran, Francis.....Co. F 26th
- Morgan, Joseph H.....Co. B 4th
- Morgan, James.....Co. E 2d H. A.
- Morgan, Henry.....Co. B 4th
- Morgan, Wm.....Co. B 4th; died Aug. 24, 1863,
Lawrence.
- Morgan, Geo. W.....Co. B 3d Cav. & Co. F 6th;
killed Apr. 8, 1864, Sabine Cross Roads, La.
- Morgan, John P.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Morgan, Zachariah.....Co. H 4th
- Morgan, Wm.....Co. G 11th
- Morgan, Robt.....Co. C 40th
- Morey, S. S.....Co. F 1st H. A.
- Moriarty, John, Jr.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Moriarty, Danl.....Co. F 30th; killed July 13,
1863, Donaldsonville, La.
- Morrill, Franklin H.....Co. I 26th & 8th Unat.
- Morrill, Nathaniel H.....Co. C 1st H. A.
- Morrill, Ralph H.....Co. C 1st H. A.
- Morrill, Oliver E.....Co. C 40th
- Morris, William.....Co. C 2d Cav.
- Morris, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Morrissey, James.....Co. C 59th & 57th
- Morrison, Samuel L.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Morrison, Hiram S.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Morrison, Alexander, Co. I 26th; died May 11,
1864, New Orleans.
- Morrow, Wm.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Morse, Benj. G.....Co. F 6th
- Morse, James A.....Co. F 6th & Co. A 3d Cav.
- Morse, Roswell E., Co. K 1st H. A.; died of
wounds July 9, 1864, Fairfax Seminary,
Va.
- Morse, Charles E.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- Morse, Geo. W.....Co. B 4th; trans. to 48th Co. E
- Morse, Wm. H. H.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Morse, B. H.....Co. K 11th
- Morse, Wm. M.....Co. C 40th
- Morse, Julius H., M.D.....Surgeon San. Com.
- Moylan, Philip.....Co. I 6th
- Moynahan, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Mudgett, Horatio R.....Co. H 4th
- Mudgett, Thomas.....Co. H 4th
- Mudgett, Geo. C.....Co. H 4th
- Mudgett, Wm. H.....Co. F 22d
- Mulcaire, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- Mulhane, Joseph H.....Co. H 4th
- Muller, Albert.....8th U. S. Cav.
- Mulineaux, Patrick.....Co. B 1st H. A.
- Mullowney, Michael.....1st U. S. Cav.
- Mulqueeny, Patrick.....V. R. C.
- Mullaney, Dominich.....Co. C. 40th N. Y.
- Munger, Fred, Co. C 40th; died March 9, 1864,
Hilton Head, S. C.
- Munsey, Jacob W.....V. R. C.
- Murdock, Buchan, Co. E 30th; killed Oct. 19,
1864, Cedar Creek, Vt.
- Murphy, Patrick.....16th Regt.
- Murphy, Stephen, Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May
19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
- Murphy, Dennis.....Co. F 2d H. A.
- Murphy, Daniel.....Co. L 2d H. A.
- Murphy, James.....Co. I 9th
- Murphy, Jeremiah, Co. H 17th; died May 9,
1865, Raleigh, N. C.
- Murphy, James, Co. F 26th; died Oct. 18, 1863,
New Orleans.
- Murphy, Patrick.....Co. A 28th
- Murphy, Philip.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Murphy, Hugh.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
- Murray, James.....3d U. S. Inf.
- Murray, Patrick.....3d U. S. Inf.
- Murray, James.....Co. D 9th
- Murray, John.....Band 9th
- Mutharb, Casper.....8th U. S. Cav.
- Nason, Hiram P., Co. F 28th; died of wounds
Aug. 12, 1864, at New Haven, Ct.
- Needham, Sumner H., Co. I 6th; killed in Bal-
timore April 19, 1864.
- Newbert, Charles H.....Co. I 6th
- Newton, Edwin E., Co. B 3d Cav.; killed April
8, 1864, Sabine Cross Roads, La.
- Nichols, Wm. W., Co. F 26th; died Oct. 26,
1863, New Orleans.
- Nichols, Joseph T.....Co. C 40th
- Nichols, James.....Co. H 4th
- Nicholson, James.....Co. K 4th N. Y.
- Noble, Herbert A.....Capt. Co. F 1st H. A.
- Noble, George H.....Co. K 1st H. A.
- Noble, James A.....Co. G 30th
- Nolan, Thomas.....Co. C 1st Batt' H. A.
- Noland, Charles.....Co. I 26th
- Noonan, Patrick, Co. F 48th; killed May 7,
1863, Fort Hudson, La.
- Norris, Alonzo S.....Co. E 16th & Co. E 13th
- Norris, Joseph H.....Co. A 13th
- Norris, William.....Co. B & I 13th
- Norris, Thomas.....Co. K 4th
- North, James D.....Co. D 65d
- Norton, John H.....Co. I 6th
- Norwood, John K.....9th Light Battery
- Noyes, Edward L.....Co. A 30th
- Oakes, Edward F.....Co. F 48th & Co. D 34 H. A.
- O'Brien, Jeremiah.....Co. B 1st H. A.
- O'Brien, Patrick.....Co. B 1st H. A.
- O'Brien, Cornelius.....Co. C 4th H. A.
- O'Brien, Dennis.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- O'Brien, Thomas.....Co. B 3d Cav.
- O'Brien, James, Co. I 26th; died Oct. 8, 1864,
Winchester, Va.
- O'Brien, Henry, Co. G 30th; died Dec. 6, 1863,
Baton Rouge, La.
- O'Brien, Thomas, Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed July
2, 1863, Gettysburg.
- O'Connell, Daniel.....3d U. S. Inf.
- O'Connor, William B.....Co. I 17th
- O'Connor, John.....Co. I 6th
- O'Connor, Daniel.....3d U. S. Inf.
- O'Donald, Thomas.....Co. K. 40th N. Y.
- O'Donnell, John.....Co. M 1st H. A.
- O'Donnell, John.....Co. I 17th
- O'Donnell, John.....Co. D 28th
- O'Donnell, Patrick.....3d U. S. Inf.
- O'Leary, John, Co. I 17th; killed May 12,
1862, Newbern, N. C.
- O'Shea, Michael.....Co. C 50th
- O'Neil, Charles.....Co. H 4th
- O'Neil, Michael J.....8th, Unattached
- Oliver, John.....Co. I 6th, and Co. B 4th
- Ordway, Aaron P., Co. H 4th N. H. and Co. K
6th.
- Osgood, Eldridge B., Co. H 4th trans. to Co. E
48th
- Packard, Henry, Navy, "Isaac Smith;" died
May 29, 1863, off Warsaw Island, Ga.
- Paddock, James.....V. R. C.
- Page, Herman L., Co. K 1st H. A.; died of
wounds July 7, 1864, Washington, D. C.
- Page, Frank.....8th Unattached
- Page, John A., 4th Lt. Bat. and 2d Lt. 1st
Louisiana Native Guard.
- Page, Warren.....Co. C 40th, trans. to V. R. C.
- Parant, Peter Ed.....Co. M 2d H. A.
- Parant, Daniel M.....Co. D 3d H. A.
- Paine, Albert H.....8th, Unattached
- Parker, Warren.....Co. C 9th, tr. to 32d Co. H.
- Parker, Dennis M., Co. B 30th; died Oct. 10,
1862, New Orleans.
- Parkman, Noah.....Co. B 4th
- Parr, Charles J.....1st U. S. Cav.
- Parks, John, Co. I 2d H. A.; died Oct. 30,
1864, Newbern, N. C., and Co. I 6th.
- Palmer, William A.....Co. I 9th
- Parrish, Thomas D.....Co. F 26th
- Parmeter, La Forest.....Co. I 6th
- Partington, James.....Co. H 4th and Co. K 6th
- Parton, James.....Co. I 6th
- Parshley, Joseph, Co. F 48th; died at sea
Jan. 29, 1863.
- Parsons, Philemon C.....Co. B 4th
- Parsons, Thomas A.....Co. B 4th
- Parsons, Stephen C.....Co. C 40th
- Patch, Albia.....Co. C 4th H. A.

Patrick, James O.....Co. I 3d Cav.	Rafferty, Frank, Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.	Rostron, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Patterson, David.....Co. M 2d H. A.	Rankin, Peleg L.....Co. C 40th	Rostron, Samuel.....Co. H 4th
Patterson, Wm. J., Co. F 6th 3 and 9 mos. Co. I and Co. G 3d H. A. Died Nov. 24, '79.	Rawson, Orlando, Co. B 4th; died Aug. 16, 1863, Indianapolis.	Rowe, John.....Co. B 4th
Payson, John C.....8th Unattached	Rea, William.....8th U. S. Inf.	Rowe, Danforth M.....Co. C 40th
Peabody, Edwin W.....Co. C 40th	Reagan, Timothy.....Co. F 26th	Rowe, Asa, Co. K 1st H. A.; d. Aug. 10, 1864, Andersonville.
Peaslee, Alphens, Co. I 22d, died of wounds Sept. 18, 1862, Gaines' Mills, Va.	Reagan, John.....3d U. S. Inf.	Rowell, James H.....Co. K 6th
Peasner, Wm.....1st U. S. Cav.	Reardon, Timothy.....Co. F 26th	Rowton, John W.....Co. M 2d H. A.
Pearl, Lloyd W.....8th Unattached	Redman, James.....Co. B 3d Cav.	Rudloff, George.....8th U. S. Cav.
Pearsons, Edw. G., Co. B 3d Cav., died Oct. 4, 1876.	Reed, Wm. H.....Co. C 4th H. A.	Runk, George.....1st U. S. Cav.
Pendiz, John.....Co. I 17th	Reed, John, Co. D 9th; died of wounds May 18, 1864.	Russ, Frank W.....Co. B 4th
Penham, Leander.....Co. C 4th H. A.	Reed, Wm., Co. C 40th; killed May 16, 1864, Drury's Bluff, Va.	Rushworth, Wm.....Co. K 6th
Perkins, Wm., Co. A 3d H. A., trans. to Navy	Regan, Matthew.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Russell, Frank.....Co. F 6th
Perkins, Albert G.....Co. D 1st	Remick, C. H., Co. B 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.	Russell, Ziba H., Co. C 40th; killed May 16, 1864, Fort Darling, Va.
Peters, Christopher.....8th U. S. Inf.	Reps, Chas. J., Co. F 48th; died at sea Jan. 22, 1863.	Russell, Edward J.....1st Lt. Co. B 1st Cav.
Perry, Franklin.....V. R. C.	Reynolds, John F.....Co. I 6th	Rutherford, Allen, Co. H 4th; died Nov. 9, 1863.
Pettigrew, Jno. S.....Co. B 3d Cav.	Reynolds, Wm. B 2d Regt. U. S. Sharpshooters; promoted to surgeon.	Rush, Louis.....Band U. S. A.
Pfeiffer, John.....1st D. C. Inf.	Rice, Perry M.....Co. B 4th	Ryan, John.....8th U. S. Inf.
Phelps, S. G., 1st Conn. Cav. died July 22, 1864, Andersonville.	Rice, Warren E.....Navy	Ryan, James.....8th Unattached.
Phillips, Horace M.....Co. C 4th H. A.	Richards, John A.....Co. H 4th	Ryan, Patrick.....26th Regt.
Pickles, John.....Co. F 26th	Richards, Simeon W.....Co. C 40th	Ryan, William.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Pickles, Robert.....Co. B 4th	Richards, Charles.....Co. B 1st H. A.	Ryder, Stanley, Co. F 1st H. A.; d. of wounds June 12, 1864, Washington, D. C.
Pickering, John.....Captain Co. I, 6th and 26th.	Richardson, Morton W.....Co. F 6th	Rymes, Albert J.....8th Unattached
Pierce, Frank B.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Richardson, Abraham.....8th Unattached	
Pierce, Saml. B.....Co. I 6th and Co. F 26th.	Richardson, J. Milton, Co. C 40th; missing in action May 16, 1864.	Safford Joseph H., Co. I 6th, 3 mos. and 9 mos.
Pierce, Turner E., Navy, Ship Preble, died Oct. 21, 1862, Lawrence.	Richardson, Samuel.....Co. B 3d Cav.	Sampson, Patrick.....Co. B 56th
Pierson, Joseph N.....1st Lt. Battery	Ricker, Geo. W., Co. G 30th; died Dec. 8, 1862, New Orleans.	Sandborn, Silas M.; Co. G 30th and Co. F 2d H. A.
Pike, Wm. H., Co. G 30th, died of wounds June 5, 1864, Baton Rouge.	Ricker, Noah C., Co. G 33d; died Feb. 6, 1863, Aquia Creek, Va.	Sanderson, Robt.....8th U. S. Inf.
Pilling, Chas. A.....Co. A 11th	Ricker, Oliver A., Co. C 30th; died Aug. 2, 1861	Sanderson, Joseph A.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Place, J. Frank.....Co. B 4th	Ricker, Geo. A.....8th Unattached	Sands, Edward.....Co. I 17th
Plummer, Geo. W.....Co. F 1st H. A.	Riddell, Walter S., Co. B 4th; drowned Dec. 27, 1862, Long Island Sound.	Sands, James.....Co. H 30th
Plummer, Walter S., Co. K 1st H. A. and Co. M 2d H. A.	Rines, John G.....Co. K 6th	Sandquist, Andrew.....Co. F 26th
Fond, Aaron B.,.....Co. K 1st H. A.	Rines, Geo. W.....Co. C 4th H. A.	Sauford, Joseph A.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Poor, Geo. W., Co. L 4th Cav. 1st Lt. & Q. M. S.	Rimmer, Johan.....Co. C 20th	Sargent, Albert.....V. R. C.
Poor, Thos. G.....Co. A 17th	Riley, Wm.....1st U. S. Cav.	Sargent, Chas. F.....8th Unattached
Poor, Amos B.....Co. B 22d	Riley, Patrick.....Co. B 3d Cav.	Sargent, Geo. W., M.D.....Surgeon Co. K 6th
Powell, Alfred G.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Riley, John.....8th Unattached	Sargent, George I.....Co. K 6th
Powers, James.....Co. F 19th	Riley, Judson.....1st H. A. Hospital steward	Sargent, Warren.....Co. B 4th
Powers, Wm. H.....Co. I 17th	Riley, Charles.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Saunders, Geo.....Co. B 50 and 57th
Powers, Frank.....Co. I 17th	Riley, James.....1st Dis. Col. Inf.	Saunders, Caleb.....Co. I 6th & Lt. 1st H. A.
Powers, Thomas.....Co. B 3d Cav.	Ripley, Thomas K., Co. A 20th; died April 9, 1864.	Sawyer, Chas. H.....Co. C 40th
Powers, James H.....8th Unattached	Roach, Patrick.....Co. I 17th	Sawyer, Frank J.....Co. C 40th
Pratt, Edgar G.....Co. B 4th	Roaf, Thomas, Co. B 1st Bat. H. A.; died Nov. 17, 1862, Fort Warren, Boston.	Sault, John.....1st U. S. Cav.
Pray, Oliver L., Co. I 26th; died July 5, 1862, New Orleans.	Roberts, James S. Co. I 6th and 8th Unattached	Scheyler, Arthur T.....Co. C 54th
Preston, Wm., Captain.....1st H. A.	Roberts, Thomas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Schofield, Joseph.....Co. B 4th
Prest, Freeman H.....Co. F 1st H. A.	Roberts, John.....Co. H 4th	Schofield, Henry.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Potter, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Robinson, Alexander.....Co. F 16th	Scott, Henry.....Co. H 4th
Purcell, Patrick.....Co. C 11th	Robinson, John G., 8th Unattached and Co. I 6th	Seales, Caleb S., Co. F 1st H. A.; died Feb. 3, 1878.
Purcell, Patrick.....Co. C 30th	Robinson, Nathaniel D.....2d Co Sharpshooters	Seales, Warren P.....Co. C 40th
Putnam, Heneiah L.....8th Unattached	Robinson, Leander A.....Co. K 6th	Seaver, D. Owen.....Lt. Co. C 40th
Putnam, John C.....Co. B 1st H. A.	Robinson, Hiram.....2d Lieut. Co. H 4th	Scanlan, Matthew.....3d U. S. Inf.
	Rogers, Geo. A.....Co. F 1st H. A.	Scanlan, John.....Navy
Quarrell, Geo.....V. R. C.	Rogers, Saml. D., Co. D 1st Cav. and Co. F 6th	Scully, Wm.....Navy
Quinn, Wm.....1st U. S. Cav.	Rogers, Peter.....Co. I 17th	Shackford, Wm.....Co. H 4th
Quinn, Wm.....2d U. S. Infantry	Roddy, Edward.....Co. F 48th	Shackleton, Roger.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Quinn, Daniel.....Co. H 4th	Rolfe, Henry A.....Co. I 6th and Co. F 23th	Shannahan, Joseph.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Quinn, John.....Co. I 9th	Rolfe, Frank A., Capt. and Maj. 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.	Sharkey, Chas.....Co. F 19th, trans. to U. S. A.
Quinn, Patrick.....Co. K 40th N. Y.	Rollins, John R.....Capt. Co. H 4th	Sharkey, Bernard.....Co. F 26th
Quinn, Thomas, Co. K 40th N. Y.; died June 9, 1861.	Rose, Wm.....8th U. S. Inf.	Sharrcock, Wm.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Quimby, Charles W., Co. G 30th; drowned April 2, 1862, Ship Island, Mass.	Ross, James.....1st U. S. Cav.	Shattuck, Chas. M.....Co. F 6th
Quimby, Orin J., Co. F 33d Maine; died April 25, 1865, Baltimore.	Rossiter, Patrick.....Co. I 6th	Shavers, John.....1st U. S. Cav.
		Shaw, Charles.....Co. B 4th
Rachel, Michael.....Co. F 26th		Shaw, John.....Co. B 4th
Rafferty, John.....8th U. S. Infantry		Shea, Thomas, Co. K 1st H. A.; d. May 31, 1865, Portsmouth Grove, R. I.
Ramsden, Joshua C.....Co. F 6th		Shea, James.....Co. D 9th, trans. to 32d
		Shea, Daniel.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
		Shehan, John.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
		Shehan, John.....Co. G 30th
		Shehan, John.....Co. K 1st H. A.



- Shehan, John E.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Sheldon, Moses.....Co. E 2d H. A.
 Shepard, Augustus, Co. B 4th; d. Aug. 3, 1863, Port Hudson, La.
 Sherman, Charles D.....8th Unattached
 Sherman, Logan J., Capt. Co. K 6th & Co. F 4th.
 Sherman, George W.....Co. H 1st Cav.
 Sherren, Patrick.....V. R. C.
 Shogwood, Wm.....Co. B 1st H. A.
 Shovenall, Wm. H.....Co. C 4th
 Shorey, Geo. W.....Co. I 6th & Co. I 20th
 Short, James, Co. H 28th; killed Sept. 1, 1862, Chantury, Va.
 Shules, John.....V. R. C.; dead
 Shibley, Knashland.....Co. I 6th
 Simmons, Stephen A., Co. B 4th; died Dec. 16, 1863.
 Simonds, Benj. W., Co. B 1st H. A.; d. Jan. 20, 1863, Harper's Ferry, Va.
 Simonds, S.....Co. B 1st H. A.
 Simonds, Richard.....8th Unattached
 Simpson, John.....V. R. C.
 Simpson, David L.....Co. I 6th
 Siner, Wm. H., Co. A 30th; wounded and discharged, re-in. Co. K 6th.
 Sisson, John J.....V. R. C.
 Slattery, Jeremiah, Co. K 40th N. Y.; d. of wounds July 15, 1863, Gettysburg.
 Slattery, John.....Co. C 4th Mass.
 Sloan, Wm.....Co. H 4th
 Sloos, Richard.....Co. H 2d
 Smalley, Valentine.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Small, John F., Co. B 1st H. A.; d. of wounds June 26, 1864.
 Smart, Geo. H.....Co. B 20th
 Smith, Henry.....1st U. S. Cav.
 Smith, James B.....8th U. S. Cav.
 Smith, Hiram H.....V. R. C.
 Smith, John.....Co. F 1st H. A.
 Smith, Robert I.....Co. F 6th
 Smith, Geo. W.....8th Unattached
 Smith, Chas. E.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Smith, Stewart, Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Smith, Charles.....Co. F 2d H. A.
 Smith, Charles.....Co. G 2d H. A. & Co. I 6th
 Smith, William.....Co. A 1st Cav.
 Smith, Wm. C.....8th Unattached
 Smith, Wm. P.....8th Unattached
 Smith, Wm. P. Jr.....8th Unattached
 Smith, Melvin E.....Co. K 6th
 Smith, C. Allen, Co. B 3d Cav.; killed in action Aug. 4, 1863, Jackson, La.
 Smith, Jas. C.....Co. B 3d Cav.
 Smith, Perry S.....Co. I 2d, transd. to V. R. C.
 Smith, William.....Co. F 19th
 Smith, Geo. W., Co. I 26th; died July 18, 1862, N. Orleans.
 Smith, Michael S., Co. I 26th; d. July 17, 1862, N. Orleans.
 Smith, Russell.....Co. I 26th
 Smith, Frank L.....Co. I 6th
 Smith, Barney.....Co. G 30th
 Smith, Charles W., Co. C 40th; d. Oct. 18, 1863, Folly Island, S. C.
 Smith, Austin S.....Co. F 48th
 Smith, James.....Co. F 48th
 Smith, John.....Co. F 48th
 Smith, Thomas.....Co. C 50th
 Smith, Geo. R.....1st Lt. Battery
 Smith, David.....Co. D 61st
 Smith, Henry L.....Co. H 4th
 Smith, Charles F.....Co. H 4th
 Soper, Edmund H.....Co. F 26th
 Sorton, Wm.....Co. K 6th
 Soule, John.....Co. K 6th
 Southwick, Amos.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Spaulding, Wm. H., Co. F 1st H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
 Spicer, Christian, Co. H 20th trans. to V. R. C.
 Spilane, John.....Co. I 9th
 Spofford, Edwin F., Co. I 6th & 19th Regt. Band & Lt. Co. M 1st H. A.
 Sprague, Edwin D.....Co. I 6th
 Springer, Richard.....Co. I 17th
 Springer, Saml. B.....Co. G 12th
 Springer, Chas. S.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Spruch, Ralph.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Stackpole, Tobias, Co. K 1st H. A.; trans. to Navy.
 Stafford, Geo. W., 9th Lt. Batt.; d. Nov. 10, '62, Washington.
 Standing, Geo.....Co. F 28th
 Stanley, James.....8th Unat. Co.
 Stanton, John.....Co. D 59th & 57th
 Staples, Herbert T., Co. H 32d & Co. D 3d H. A.
 Stead, James, Co. H 48th; d. June 4, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.
 Stebbins, John.....8th U. S. Cav.
 Stearns, Elbridge G.....6th Lt. Batt.
 Stearns, Hiram A.....Co. B 4th & Co. I 6th
 Steele, Geo.....Co. H 4th
 Steele, Wm. H.....Co. B 3d Cav.
 Sterling, Jas.....Co. B 3d Cav.
 Stevens, Gilbert.....Co. C 4th H. A.
 Stevens, G. Frank.....Capt. Co. B 3d Cav.
 Stevens, Isaac, Jr.....Co. B 4th
 Stevens, Joseph B.....Co. I 6th
 Stevens, Chas.....Co. C 4th
 Stevens, Anthony.....Co. F 41th
 Stevens, Geo. F., Co. B 3d Cav.; died at sea Sept. 16, 1866.
 Stevens, Gorham P., Co. C 70th N. Y.; d. in the hands of the enemy from wounds at Chancellorsville.
 Stevens, Wm.....73d N. Y.
 Stewart, Chas.....Co. I 17th
 Stokes, Stephen D., Co. I 6th & Capt. 49th; dead.
 Stoddard, Haverly A., Co. K 1st H. A.; killed May 19, 1864, Spottsylvania.
 Stoddard, Alphonso.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Stone, Joel F.....Co. F 1st H. A.; Co. F 48th
 Stone, Chas.....Co. F 6th
 Stone, Hood A.....Co. B 3d Cav.
 Stott, Geo. H.....Co. I 17th
 Stout, Jas.....1st U. S. Cav.
 Strafford, Wm P.....Co. B 1st H. A.
 Straw, Benl.....Co. F 26th
 Strong, Henry G., Navy, "Cambridge"; d. Mar., 1864, at sea.
 Sullivan, Wm., Capt. Co. K 40th N. Y.; killed Dec. 13, 1862, Fredericksburg, Va.
 Sullivan, John, Co. M 1st H. A.; d. of wounds May 24, 1864.
 Sullivan, Geo., 2d Co. G 2d H. A.; d. Aug. 30, 1864, Andersonville.
 Sullivan, Michael, Co. E 9th; d. of wounds June 29, 1862, Savage Sta., Va.
 Sullivan, Michael F.....Co. B 4th
 Sullivan, John S.....Co. F 26th
 Sullivan, John, Co. I 26th; d. Oct. 20, 1862, N. Orleans.
 Sullivan, Simon.....Co. F 48th
 Sullivan, Jerome.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Sullivan, Jeremiah.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Sullivan, Leonard.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Summers, John.....Co. K 6th
 Swaine, Chas. M.....Co. I 6th & Co. I 20th
 Sweeney, Edward.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Tainter, Willard H., Co. A 1st H. A.; killed June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
 Tarbox, Walter S.....Co. C 5th H. A.
 Tarbox, John K.....Lt. Co. B 4th
 Tarrant, Peter A.....1st U. S. Cav.
 Tasker, George W.....Co. G 3th
 Taylor, John.....Co. C 50th
 Taylor, Isaac L.....Lt. Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Taylor, James H., Co. C 40th Mass.; died Oct. 22, 1863, Beaufort, S. C.
 Taylor, Abraham.....Co. K 11th
 Taylor, Edwd. B.....Co. K 6th
 Terrio, Alexander.....Co. B 3d Cav.; tr. to V. R. C.
 Terrio, Edwd.....Co. B 4th
 Tetler, James.....Co. D 20th
 Thayer, Richard F.....Co. C 30th
 Thomas, James.....Co. K 1st H. A.
 Thomas, Richard.....Co. B 3d Cav.
 Thomas, John.....Co. F 26th
 Thomas, John.....Co. K 50th & 57th
 Thompson, Robert.....Co. I 1st H. A.
 Thompson, Andrew G., Co. B 3d Cav.; died Oct. 30, 1862, Lawrence.
 Thompson, John B., Lt. Co. F 19th; killed June 3, 1864.
 Thompson, Sumner.....Co. H 4th; died March, 1880.
 Thompson, Wm. L., 1st Lt. Co. C 5th (previously same Co. So. Danvers).
 Thompson, James.....V. R. C.
 Thorne, Francis R., Co. I 26th; died June 28, 1864, New Orleans.
 Thornton, Geo.....V. R. C.
 Thornton, Thos. V., Co. F 1st H. A., tr. to V. R. C.
 Thyng, Dan, G., Co. B 4th; died Aug. 19, 1863, Laconia, N. H.
 Tibbets, Edwd.....Co. H 60th
 Tibbets, Sewall F.....Co. A 1st
 Tierney, Wm.....Co. D 3d H. A.; dead
 Tierney, John.....Co. K 2d Cav.
 Tilton, Jonathan D.....V. R. C.
 Tobey, Austin B.....Co. H 4th
 Towey, Thos.....Co. C 30th
 Towey, Geo.....Co. B 36th
 Towey, Lewis.....Co. B 36th
 Towle, John W.....Co. H 4th
 Towne, John A.....Co. E 30th
 Travilla, Robert.....1st D. C. Inf.
 Travis, Sam'l.....Co. C 40th, tr. to V. R. C.
 Tredick, Chas. E.....Co. G 30th & 8th Unat.
 Trees, Fred G.....Co. H 4th & 8th Unat.
 Trombley, Cyprine.....Co. G 2d H. A., tr. to 20th Inf.
 Trueworthy, Chas. H.....Co. I 6th
 Tuck, Chas.....Co. F 1st H. A.
 Tufts, David.....Co. F 6th (3 mos.), Co. K 6th (100 days).
 Tutill, Geo. H.....Hosp. Stew. U. S. A.
 Tuttle, Thos. P.....Co. F 6th
 Twomey, Dan'l.....8th U. C.
 Tyler, Fred. G., Co. I 6th (3 mos.), Lt. Co. I 6th (9 mos.), Lt. 8th Unat.
 Tyrrell, Elias.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Ure, Dan'l.....Co. H 6th N. H.
 Valery, Jas.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
 Vallenecourt, Jules.....Co. C 32d
 Varnum, Chas. O.....Co. C 4th
 Varnum, Jos. C.....8th Unat.
 Varnum, Isaac S., Co. B 4th; died March 5, 1863, Carrollton, La.
 Varnum, Ralph.....Co. B 4th
 Vogel, Henry.....Co. C 20th



Vaughn, Smith...Co. I 6th & Co. G 59th & 57th
Vaughn, John.....Co. F 48th
Vatter, Henry.....Co. I 26th

Waddington, James.....Co. K 6th
Wadlin, Gardner L.....Co. B 4th
Walker, Warren G.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Walker, Robert.....Sth Unat.
Walker, Wm. G.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Walker, Edw. K.....Co. I 6th
Wagner, Augustus.....Co. I 6th
Wagner, Ernest.....Co. I 6th
Wagner, Ferdinand.....Co. I 6th
Wallace, Webster W., Sergt. Co. K 1st H. A.;
died wounds July 26, 1864, Ashburnham,
Mass.

Walsh, Wm. M., Co. K 1st H. A.; trans. to V.
R. C.

Walsh, Joseph.....Co. B 4th
Walsh, John.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Walsh, Martin, Co. B 59th; d. Oct. 1, 1861,
Danville, Va.

Walsh, James.....Co. I 6th
Ward, Peter.....Co. I 26th

Ward, Peter.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Warner, Alex.....Co. F 26th

Warner, Frank.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Warren, Andrew.....Co. C 4th H. A.

Washburn, Eleazer, Co. F 1st H. A.; killed
May 19, 1864, Spotsylvania.

Washburn, Alden.....1st H. A. Band & 2d H. A.
Washington, Geo.....Co. H 5th Cav. (C.)

Waterman, Arthur O.....Co. I 6th
Watson, Benj. F.....Lt. Col. 6th Regt.

Watts, Francis.....Sth U. S. Cav.
Watts, John F.....Capt. 40th

Webb, James, Co. I 2d; killed May 3, 1863,
Chancellorsville.

Webster, Justus W., Co. K 1st H. A.; killed
June 16, 1864, Petersburg, Va.

Webster, Chas. O.....Co. B 4th
Webster, Henry A., Co. H 4th & Co. B Front
Cav.

Webster, Walden W., Co. B 3d Cav.; trans. V.
R. C.

Webster, Henry K., Co. B 12th; trans. Co. E
8th.

Webster, Geo.....Co. I 26th
Werner, Frank.....Co. H 4th

Welch, Geo.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Welch, Wm.....Co. G 3d H. A.

Welch, Patrick, Co. K 4th N. Y.; killed Aug.
29, 1862, Bull Run, Va.

Welch, Michael.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Wells, Wm. H.....Co. H 4th & Co. C 4th H. A.

Wentworth, Horace.....Co. I 6th & Co. G 3d

Wentworth, Edwin H. C., Co. I 6th & Co. F
22d.

Wentworth, Russell.....Co. K 6th
Wentworth, Geo. F.....Co. E 2d H. A.

Wentworth, David.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Wentworth, Merrill.....Co. L 3d Cav.

West, Edward.....Co. C 40th
West, Geo. W.....Co. F 26th

West, Chas. E.....Co. H 1st Cav.
Westall, Solomon.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Weston, Geo.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Weston, Chas. H.....Co. H 1st Cav.

Weston, John G.....Co. C 40th
Weston, Justus P.....Band U. S. A.

Weymouth, Chas. J., Co. I 6th & Co. I 26th &
Lt. 14th La. Vol.

Whatmore, Robert.....Co. B 4th
Wheeler, Fredk.....Co. G 2d H. A.

Wheeler, Austin E.....Sergt. Co. I 2d
Wheeler, Geo. W., Co. I 26th; d. July 25, '62,
N. Orleans.

Wheeler, Leonard O.....Co. I 26th
White, Josiah C., Sergt. Co. G 30th & Lt. U. S.
C. T.

White, Thos., Co. F 26th; d. Dec. 12, 1862, N.
Orleans.

White, Calvin M., Co. F 26th; d. Aug. 27, '62,
N. Orleans.

White, Henry L.....Co. F 26th
White, Clarence.....8th U. S. Inf.

White, Patrick.....8th U. S. Inf.
Whitehill, John F.....Co. K 6th

Whitfield, Angus.....Co. A 3rd H. A. tr. to Navy
Whitley, John.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Whitney, Charles C.....Sth, Unattached
Whittaker, Samuel G., Co. C 4th H. A. and
Co. E 30th

Whittemore, William.....Co. B 4th
Whittemore, William F.....Co. C 3d H. A.

Whittemore, Daniel, Co. K 1st H. A.; died
June 8, 1864, Philadelphia.

Whitten, Joseph L.....Co. H 4th
Whittier, Charles.....Co. I 7th

Wholla, Christian.....3d U. S. Inf.
Wholla, James.....Co. E 30th

Wicks, James.....Co. H 7th
Wiggin, Mayhew C., Co. K 1st H. A.; died
Nov. 8, 1864, Andersonville.

Wiggin, Gilman P.....Co. H 4th
Wilde, Joseph B.....Co. H 4th

Wilde, Rt. Allen.....Co. K 40th Mass
Wilder, Henry A.....Co. B 1st H. A.

Wiley, John W.....Co. C 40th
Walkin, Joseph A.....Co. C 10th

Wallard, Benjamin D.....Co. I 26th
Willey, Eben.....Co. C 40th

Willey, Celestino G.....Co. F 1st Bat. H. A.

Williams, John T.....Co. F 6th, and Co. F 26th
Williams, Elias.....1st N. J.

Williams, Albert M.....Co. K 1st H. A.
Williams, George H.....Co. F 26th

Williams, Charles S.....Co. B 32d
Williams, William O.....V. R. C.

Willoughby, Lamont C.....Co. K 8th
Wills, Thomas P.....Co. B 4th

Wilson, William J.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Wilson, Charles.....Co. F 16th

Wilson, William.....Co. I 17th
Willson, John.....Co. E 3d H. A.

Wing, Thomas A., Co. H 4th; died June 2,
1863, Brashear City, La.

Winn, William B.....Co. B, F. Cav.
Winn, Ambrose S.....Co. F 1st H. A.

Winning, James, Co. B 4th; died Nov. 1, 1885.
Winslow, Almon M.....1st U. S. Cav.

Withington, James, Co. B 3d Cav., killed in
action May 15, 1864.

Wolfe, John.....Co. I 6th
Wolfe, Richard.....Co. E 59th

Wood, William.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Wood, Duncan.....Co. K 6th

Wood, Philander.....Co. G 30th
Wood, Henry.....Co. I 6th, and Co. H 1st H. A.

Woods, Peter.....Co. K 2d H. A.
Woodbury, Charles.....Co. I 6th

Woodhouse, James.....Co. K 40th N. Y.
Worthing, John B., Co. A 1st H. A., tr. to V.
R. C.

Worthley, Daniel E.....Co. I 26th
Wright, Levi P.....Col. 1st H. A.

Wright, Dexter.....Co. F 1st H. A.
Wright, William H.....Co. K H. A.

Wright, David.....Co. B 3d Cav.
Wright, George A.....Co. B 3d Cav.

Wright, Clinton M.....Co. H 4th
Wright, Nathaniel.....Co. C 40th

Yates, Eugene S., 8th Unattached, and Co. D;
Fr. Cav.; died July 28, 1886.

Yeaton, Daniel S., Capt. Co. I 6th; died Nov.
28, 1862, New Orleans, and Capt. Co. G.
30th.

Yeaw, Leonard, Co. G 30th; died August 25,
1862, New Orleans.

Yerrington, George E., Co. I 6th and 26th and
Major 13th corps D 'Afrique.

Yore, Patrick, Co. G 30th; died Sept 13, 1862,
New Orleans.

Young, Nicholas.....Co. D 9th
Young, James L.....Co. D 22nd tr. to V. R. C.

Young, William.....Co. K 40th N. Y.

Zeitter, John F.....1st U. S. Cav.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

ARTEMAS W. STEARNS.

Artemas W. Stearns was born in Hill, N. H., March 11, 1816. He was left fatherless at a tender age, and supported by his widowed mother, who was the village milliner.

When, at the age of six, his mother married again, he still remained at home until the death of his step-father, who was accidentally drowned. Mr. Stearns was now ten years of age. His mother, being left with two other children, was unable longer to support all her family with her needle, and he was bound out to a prosperous farmer in Bridgewater until he became of age. At the expiration of the time he was to have one hundred dollars and a freedom suit. He was treated by the farmer as one of his family, attending the district school during the winter months. Mornings and evenings he chopped firewood and took care of the stock of cattle. Being a trustworthy boy, the farmer often sent him to market from Bridgewater to Bristol, a distance of six miles, with an ox-team, carrying butter, cheese and sometimes ashes, which were used in the manufacture of potash. Finally, becoming dissatisfied with his occupation, he bought the remainder of his time, paying five dollars, for which he still carries the receipt.

In August, 1833, in his eighteenth year, he went to Nashua, N. H., and entered the cotton factory, remaining there and in Lowell, Mass., for several years. This occupation not being suited to him, he decided to get a better education, and to this end he attended the academy at Newmarket, N. H., during the fall months, washing dishes and ringing the academy bell for his board. When he left the academy he taught in the district schools of Dracut and Andover, Mass., and Windham and Salem, N. H. In Windham he had a class in algebra, a branch which he had not yet taken in his course of studies, and he was on this account in a dilemma, but his will came to the rescue, and he determined to conquer by studying evenings and keeping ahead of his class, which he did, and no one ever mistrusting that he was not a thorough master of the higher mathematics. Thus it has been all through life by hard labor and close application he has overcome obstacles, and success has crowned his efforts.

In 1840 he began peddling through the country, selling silverware, spectacles, razors, dress silks, &c., from two tin trunks. He always carried the finest goods to be found in the market, and would also take orders for shawls or anything the buyer wanted, and bring it with him on his next trip. He also did the engraving on all the silverware which he sold, doing it evenings, denying himself all pleasure until his work was done.

March 5, 1843, he married Lydia, daughter of James and Abi (Duren) Searles, of Nashua, N. H., and set-

tled in Methuen, Mass., continuing his peddling until the fall when, after buying his stock for the fall trade, he was taken with lung fever and his physician forbade him travelling during the winter. He then put his goods in a small shop quite near his house and hung out his sign. Success attended this venture and his small store soon became the scene of so much activity that the village people gave it the name of the *Bee Hive*. Here he remained about eighteen months, when, finding his business had outgrown his accommodations, he sought a larger place for it.

In 1846 he started a branch store in the new city of Lawrence, remaining in a store on Amesbury Street two years, when he removed to Essex Street to get more room. In three years he was forced to move into a still larger store, and another three years found his business so much increased as to require still larger accommodations.

He now resolved to buy land and build for himself which he did on his present site. In 1877-78 he enlarged and beautified his store, and the present year he has again remodeled and enlarged his building, which is unquestionably the finest business structure in Essex County. It is thirty feet wide, ninety feet deep, four stories and basement, the whole being occupied by him. The new building has a massive front of brown stone, with heavy plate glass windows. Mr. Stearns is justly proud of this building, which stands as a monument to crown the long years of untiring devotion to business.

When a young man Mr. Stearns united with the Orthodox Church in Methuen, Rev. John C. Phillips pastor. On coming to Lawrence he formed one of a new church, called the Central Congregational (now Trinity), and has always been one of its most liberal supporters. He has been chairman of the Board of Assessors for many years, but has never sought public office, being of a retiring nature. He was, however, in the Board of Aldermen in 1861, and has been very generous in donations for public enterprises.

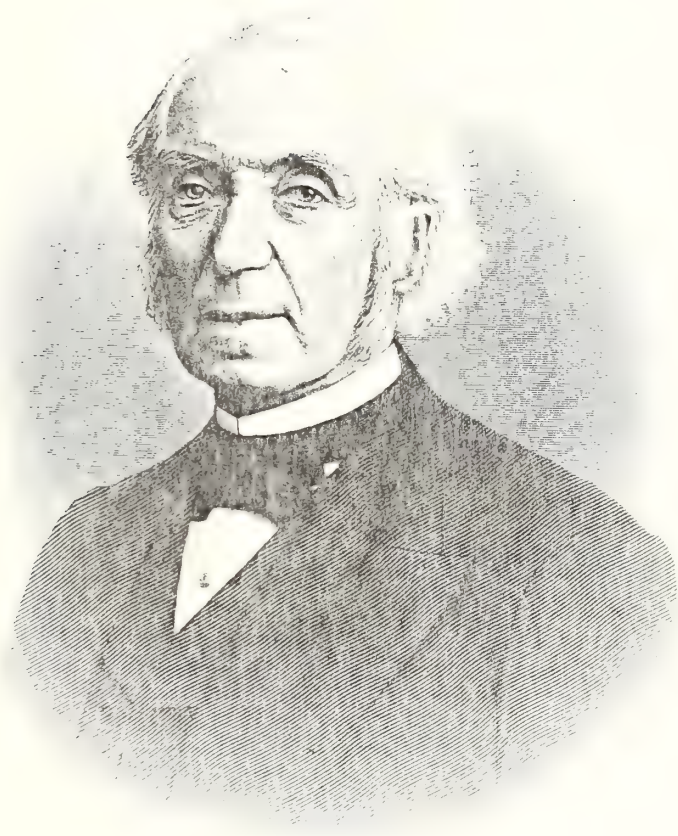
In 1864 A. S. Wright, the head mechanic of the Atlantic Mills, proposed to Mr. Stearns and A. J. French to become partners in the manufacture of woollen yarns. At Mr. Stearns' suggestion the machinery for yarn was sold, and the mill equipped with machinery for making braid; and a co-partnership formed under the firm-name of the Wright Manufacturing Company. At first fifty braiders were used. In 1874 the company was incorporated with A. J. French, president; A. S. Wright, superintendent; Mr. Stearns, treasurer and selling agent. The company are now running more than one thousand machines, being one of the largest and most complete works of the kind in the United States, a large proportion of their product being goods of high class, heretofore imported. But for Mr. Stearns' pluck and effort this venture would not have been a success.

Mr. Stearns was chosen one of the directors of the



A. W. Stearns





Aaron Ordway

Lawrence National Bank, upon its organization in 1872, and in 1878 he was elected its president, and still holds the position. He is also one of the trustees and first vice-president of the Broadway Savings Bank.

He is one of the original stockholders of the Merrimack Valley Horse Railroad, and has been one of its directors since its organization, and is at present the largest stockholder.

AARON ORDWAY.

Among men who, during a long residence in Lawrence, have exhibited strongly marked individuality and intense activity in business and in general affairs, Dr. Aaron Ordway is a prominent veteran. A powerful ally in any cause he espoused, he has been, also, a wily and determined enemy to schemes and plans that he found well-grounded reason to oppose.

He came to the city in 1847, having previously been a trader in general merchandise at Springfield, Mass., and a practicing physician in Rumney, N. H. For twenty years, after coming, he was one of the busiest physicians of the city, and, for a long time, added to professional duties a thriving retail drug business. Faithful care of these interests called for uninterrupted action, and the doctor's temperament and physique fitted him to throw a vast amount of energy into the conduct of his private business, and yet continue active in matters of public concern, as a private citizen and as an alderman during two terms of service. So active was his life that his fellow-citizens wondered when he slept and rested, for he was the last man seen on the street or at business at night and the first abroad in the morning. Later in life he became financially interested in timber-lands and in the manufacture of lumber, and was at one time president of Brown's Lumber Company, of Whitefield, in Northern New Hampshire, and also of the Whitefield and Jefferson Railroad, in the same locality.

In religious matters Dr. Ordway has never been committed to any form of doctrine or wording of creeds, because of others' declaration, having well-grounded faith and opinion of his own, but he has liberally assisted many a struggling church and society in time of financial strait. He has also been a persistent and unswerving friend of the City Hospital.

In politics Dr. Ordway has been a party man of the intensest kind when he believed his party right, holding that right cannot be too boldly asserted or vigorously advocated; nevertheless, he could see a party desert its principles without joining in the stampede. He was a pioneer among early Abolitionists and an active sympathizer with the boldest reformers, whether in the anti-slavery or woman's suffrage cause. Long-continued intensity of action has undermined and broken a strong constitution and hardy physique, and, at the age of seventy-four, he is an invalid, yet his courage is unabated and his mind unclouded.

In his active days his favor was much courted and his opposition feared by aspirants for political honors. Never on the fence or slow to declare himself, he was, in politics, as in all else, a determined opponent and a fast friend. It was said by some, that, when he appeared in a political contest as a cavalryman with a sorrel charger there was terror in the host he opposed.

He was born in Hebron, N. H., May 4, 1814. His father, Stephen Ordway, went from Amesbury, Mass., in childhood, to Dunbarton, N. H. From thence, at nineteen years, he removed to the northern plantation of "Cockamouth" (afterwards called Hebron), there founding a home, where he lived to the age of ninety-three years. John Ordway, brother of Stephen and uncle of the subject of this sketch, was the clerk and historian of the Lewis and Clark Exploring Expedition, an enterprise that opened up hitherto unknown regions of the West in the early years of the century and made the participants therein famous in American History.

Dr. Ordway married, for his first wife, Mary M. Kelley, of New Hampton, N. H., and four children survive her; for his second wife, he married Mary Ann Kelley, of Franklin, N. H., and with her he is enjoying as much of rest and quiet as broken health allows.

CHAPTER LXII.

MIDDLETON.

BY DAVID STILES.

FROM THE FIRST GRANT OF LAND BY THE GOVERNMENT TO RICHARD BELLINGHAM, ESQ., IN NOVEMBER, 1639 TO 1887.

In compiling this work (for I do not claim to be author), I have selected material according to my best judgment. If no fault is found I shall accomplish that which no other one to my knowledge has ever done before in a town history. Nearly every town in the county has a published history by some qualified author, but nothing worthy of such a title has ever been produced of this town, therefore I am left without any help, and your charitable judgment I implore.

In making up chapters some repetitions occur of persons and places, which are unavoidable; some mistakes in dates no doubt have been made, though not very far away from the truth. In many cases it has been almost impossible to find the exact times and places of even some of the most important events.

THIS town is about five miles long from north to south, and about three miles wide, bounded north by Andover and North Andover, west by North Reading, south by Danvers and east by Topsfield and Boxford. The larger part of the town is on the left bank of Ipswich River, which runs from southwest to northeast. Another principal stream is Beech Brook, named from the original beech trees along its bank. Its rise is in Andover, and its mouth is near the box-mill of J. B. Thomas, into Ipswich River. Pout

Pond Brook is an outlet of Swan Pond, in North Reading; its mouth is near the knife-factory buildings, into Ipswich River; and there are other small streams of less note.

The largest body of water has always been called Middleton Pond, which now supplies Danvers as well as our village, with the best of water. Pout Pond is on Pout Pond Brook, a sunken hole said to be the centre of the town. There are also other small bodies of water.

The most elevated land, Will's Hill, named from the last Indian inhabitant, who lived and died upon its summit, and whose squaw survived till after the town was incorporated,—and Bear Hill, near Topsfield line.

The town is well diversified by hills and valleys, and has many productive farms.

In population the village has largely increased within the last fifty years, while other portions have remained nearly the same, and in some parts gone back.

The wild beasts of the early years have disappeared. A few of the smaller varieties still remain.

This town was settled sixty-eight years before the act of incorporation. After passing those years, both the civil and ecclesiastical history commence. We then take up the latter and pursue it up to the present time, and then resume the civil history, after which, items of interest.

1639. This town was an unbroken wilderness, save an Indian plantation near the great pond. Richard Bellingham's grant, dated November 5, 1639, says: "in it is a pond¹ and an Indian plantation." This grant contained seven hundred acres. Some years previous to this time it is supposed that there were two other large Indian plantations, one at the east side on the plains, and one east of the house of H. A. Stiles; at these locations many Indian implements from time to time have been found.

Other grants followed that of Bellingham's; of Major General Daniel Dennison, of Ipswich, east of Bellingham's, running north, followed by Henry Bartholomew, near New Meadows, now Topsfield. These grants from General Court covered the larger portion of the present town.

The very first settler within the present limits of the town was William Nichols, in 1651, near William Peabody's, then New Meadows, from whom came two of our church officers; and all, so far as we know, by that name, many of whom have blessed the world and bear an honor to the name.

This William Nichols bought two hundred acres of Henry Bartholomew, mostly beyond the "six-mile extent" (meaning the circuit or swing-round bounds of Salem, which reached a half-mile south of our present village). William Nichols lived to the age

of one hundred and two, and for many years his posterity were quite numerous in town; all of that name have now left town.

Bray Wilkins came from Wales and was among the first to land in this State. He was a very enterprising man, and of great vigor of constitution, and for many years was licensed as boatman on Naponset River, and to charge a penny a person. He subsequently moved to Lynn, Mass., and was engaged in some way in the iron business. Then, in 1659, he entered upon the bold operation (with his brother-in-law, John Gingle), of buying out the claim of Bellingham, amounting to seven hundred acres, paying therefore two hundred and fifty pounds and a ton of bar-iron. But with a strong constitution and six stout sons, with the help of Gingle, a tailor by trade, and two trusty kinsmen, Aaron Way and William Ireland, conveyed to them good farms. Aaron Way's houses were on the site of the old Estys tavern, now standing; subsequently Mr. Wilkins purchased more than he had sold, and yet, in 1676, the mortgage given to Bellingham was discharged, and his sons had bought out Gingle, and the work was done, says Upham.

It is curious to note that Bellingham inserted in Wilkins' deed that if minerals were found on this claim he was to pay him, or his heirs, ten pounds per year more.

Bray Wilkins' father was Lord John Wilkins, of Wales, and the family had borne many honorable titles and is traced back to 1090, or nearly eight centuries. Wilkins died 1702, aged ninety-seven.

On Dennison's claim was found iron-ore, and a mill was erected on the site of the knife-factory; and Thomas Fuller, an Englishman, who came over about 1638, and had resided in Cambridge, was engaged by Dennison to run the mill, and subsequently became owner in 1663, and erected his dwelling on the site of the house now owned by Charles O. Frost; and his little blacksmith-shop stood across the brook, called Piercies Brook, near the present tomb—the foundation can be now seen.

This iron-puddling mill remained in the Fuller family, in company with the Cave family, who lived on the farm now owned by Mr. O. L. Carleton for many years, and was subsequently set on fire, as is supposed, and destroyed by one of the parties to the ownership, then in a quarrel.

The wealth of this Thomas Fuller and his enterprising spirit and sound judgment gave to his posterity good positions in society, which have been sustained wherever they have been scattered over the world.

He had three wives. He died June 3, 1698. He came to this country on a tour of observation, intending to return in one year, but was converted under the preaching of Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Cambridge, Mass., on account of which he wrote some verses, the last of which is as follows:

¹This pond was subsequently called Wilkins' Pond, and may now rightfully belong to Bray Wilkins' heirs.

"Christ cast his garments over me,
And all my sins did cover;
More precious to my soul was He
Than dearest friend and lover."

Augustus Shepard, of this town, is a descendant of this Rev. Thomas Shepard. This information was obtained in Boston.

The farms of the earlier settlers for some years were but imperfectly fenced and their cattle and flocks were watched by herdsmen, assisted by boys and girls. The court decreed that in every town the chosen men are to take care of such "as are sett to keep cattle that they sett some other employment withall, as spinning upon the rock, knitting & weaving tape, &c., that boyes and girls be not suffered to convers together."

Thus the watchers had to be watched.

Before the incorporation of this town, which was sixty-eight years after Wilkins bought Bellingham's claim, several occurrences took place which we shall mention. Wilkins, and those owning under him, were, in 1661, annexed to Salem Village, which gives the long and peculiar shape to the village boundaries, and there, where the witchcraft delusion began, they attended church and were identified with that people.

The families of Wilkins and Fuller increased rapidly, and with others who had moved in, it is supposed that in 1692 the population had increased to nearly three hundred. At the above date Francis Elliott lived a little west of the red house near the cemetery, and William Way who, with his wife Percy, united with the church at Salem Village May 12, 1689, lived in a house, the remnant of the cellar of which is seen just opposite the house of the late Addison Tylor. These houses, however, came within the bounds of Rowley Village, now Boxford, but nearly all the settlers as far away as William Nichols' farm came under the name of Will's Hill men. The line of Rowley crossed the river forty rods above Indian Bridge on a northwest course, passed in front of William Way's house, thence by Pond Pond to Beech Brook, where two brooks meet below the house of Mr. Ogden.

This little settlement became greatly disturbed by the witchcraft delusion, and one man of no little note was selected as a victim and hung on Gallows Hill, Salem, and here we insert the proceedings from Upham's work as a part of our own history:—

TRIAL OF JOHN WILLARD.

"May 19, 1692, a warrant was issued against John Willard, 'husbandman' to be brought to Thomas Bealle's house in Salem. On the 12th John Putnam, Jr., constable, made return that he had been 'to the house of the usual abode of John Willard and made search for him, and in several other places and houses, but could not find him,' and that his neighbors and friends said 'that to their best knowledge he was fled.' On the 15th a warrant was issued to the marshal of Essex, and the constable or constables within this their majesty's colony or territory of Massachusetts, in New England, requiring them to apprehend said Willard 'if he may be found in your precincts, who stands charged with sundry acts of witchcraft, by him done or committed on the bodies of Bray Wilkins and Samuel Wilkins, the son of Henry Wilkins, and others, upon complaint made by Thomas Fuller, Jr., and Benjamin Wilkins, Sr.,

yeoman, who, being found, you are to convey from town to town, from constable to constable, . . . to be prosecuted according to the direction of Constable John Putnam, of Salem Village, who goes with the same.' On the 18th of May Constable Putnam brought in Willard, and delivered him to the magistrates. He was seized in Groton. There is no record of his examination, but we gather from the papers on file the following facts relating to this interesting case: It is said that Willard had been called upon to aid in the arrest, custody and bringing in of persons accused, in acting as deputy-constable; and from his observation of the deportment of the prisoners, and from all he heard and saw, his sympathies became excited in their behalf, and he expressed in more or less terms his disapprobation of the proceedings. He seems to have considered all hands concerned in the business—accusers, accused, magistrates and people—as alike bewitched. One of the witnesses against him deposed that he said in a 'discourse' at the house of a relative,—'Hang them; they are all witches.' In consequence of this kind of talk, in which he indulged as early as April, he incurred the ill-will of the parties engaged in the prosecutions, and it was whispered about that he was himself in the diabolical confederacy. He was a grandson of Bray Wilkins, and the mind of the old man became prejudiced against him, and most of his family connections and neighbors partook of the feeling. When Willard discovered that such rumors were in circulation against him, he went to his grandfather for counsel and the aid of his prayers. He met with a cold reception, as appeared by the deposition of the old man, as follows: 'When John Willard was first complained of by the afflicted persons for allying of them, he came to my house, greatly troubled, desired me, with some other neighbors, to pray for him. I told him I was then going from home and could not stay, but if I could come home before night, I should not be willing. But it was near night before I came home, and so I did not answer his desire, but I heard no more of him upon that account. Whether my not answering his desire did not offend him, I cannot tell, but I was jealous afterwards that it did.' Willard soon after made an engagement to go to Boston on election week with Henry Wilkins, Jr. A son of said Henry Wilkins, named Daniel, a youth of seventeen years of age, who had heard the stories against Willard, and believed them all, remonstrated with his father against going to Boston with Willard, and seemed much distressed at the thought, saying, among other things,—'It were well if the said Willard were hanged.' Old Bray Wilkins must go to election, too, and so started off on horseback—the only mode of travel then practicable, from Will's Hill to Winesmit Ferry—with his wife on a pillion behind him. He was eighty-two years of age, and she probably not much less; for she had been the wife of his youth. The old couple undoubtedly had an active time that week in Boston. It was a great ovation, and the whole country flocked in to partake in the ceremonies and services of the anniversary. On Election day, with his wife, he rode out to Dorchester to dine at the house of his brother, Lieutenant Richard Way. Deodat Lawson and his new wife, and several more, join them at the table. Before sitting down Henry Wilkins and John Willard also came in. Willard, perhaps, did not feel very agreeably towards his grandfather at the time for having shown an unwillingness to pray with him. The old man saw, or imagined he saw, a very unpleasant expression in Willard's countenance. To my apprehension, he looked after such sort upon me as I never before discerned in any. The long and hard travel, the fatigues and excitements of election week, were too much for the old man, tough and rugged as he was; and a severe attack of a complaint, to which persons of his age are often subject, came on. He experienced great sufferings, and, as he expressed it, 'was like a man on a rack.'

"I told my wife immediately that I was afraid that Willard had done wrong; my pain continuing, and finding no relief, my jealousy continued. Mr. Lawson and others there were all amazed, and knew not what to do for me. There was a woman accounted skilful came, hoping to help me, and after she had used means, she asked me whether none of those evil persons had done me damage. I said I could not say they had, but I was sore afraid they had. She answered she did fear so, too. As near as I can remember, 'I lay in this case three or four days at Boston, and afterward, with the jeopardy of my life (as I thought), I came home.' On his return he found his grandson, the same Daniel who had warned Henry Wilkins against going to Boston with John Willard, on his death-bed, in great suffering. Another attack of his own malady came on. There was great consternation in the neighborhood, and throughout the village. The devil and his confederates, it was thought, were making an awful onslaught upon the people at Will's Hill. Parris and others rushed to the scene. Mercy Lewis and Mary Walcott were carried up to tell who it was that was bewitching old Bray, and young Daniel, and others of the Wilkinses who had caught

the contagion and were experiencing or imagining all sorts of bodily ails. They were taken to the room where Daniel was approaching his death agonies; and they both affirmed that they saw the spectres of old Mrs. Buckley and John Willard upon his throat and upon his breast, and pressed him and choked him; and the cruel operation, they insisted upon it, continued until the boy died. The girls were carried to the bedroom of the old man, who was in great suffering; and, when they entered, the question was put by the anxious and excited friends in the chamber to Mercy Lewis, whether she saw anything. She said, yes; 'they are looking for John Willard.' Presently she pretended to have caught sight of his apparition, and exclaimed, 'there he is upon his grandfather's belly.' This was thought wonderful, indeed, for, as the old man says in a deposition he drew up afterwards, 'At that time I was in grievous pain in the small of my belly.' Mrs. Ann Putnam had her story to tell about John Willard. Its substance is seen in a deposition drawn up about the same time, and is in the same vein as her testimony in other cases, presenting a problem to be solved by those who can draw the line between semi-insane hallucination and downright fabrication.

"Her deposition is as follows:

"The shape of Samuel Fuller and Lydia Wilkins this day told me at my own house by the bedside who appeared in a windingsheet, that if I did not go and tell Mr. Hathorne that John Willard had murdered them, they would tear me to pieces. I knew them when they were living, and it was exactly their resemblance and shape. And, at the same time, the apparition of John Willard told me that he had killed Samuel Fuller, Lydia Wilkins, Goody Shaw and Fuller's second wife, and Aaron Way's child, and Ben Fuller's child, and this deponent's child Sarah, six weeks old, and Philip Knight's child, with the help of William Hobbs, and Jonathan Knight's child and two of Ezekiel Cheevers children with the help of William Hobbs; Anne Eliot and Isaac Nichols with the help of William Hobbs; and if Mr. Hathorne would not believe them,—that is, Samuel Fuller and Lydia Wilkins, perhaps they would appear to the magistrates. Joseph Fuller's apparition the same day also came to me, and told me that Goody Covey had killed him. The spectre aforesaid told me that vengeance, vengeance, was cried by said Fuller. This relation is true. ANN PUTNAM."

"It appears by such papers as are to be found relating to Willard's case, that a coroner's jury was held over the body of Daniel Wilkins, of which Nathaniel Putnam was a member.

"It is much to be regretted that the finding of that jury is lost. It would be a real curiosity. That it was very decisive to the point, affirmed by Mercy Lewis and Mary Walcott. That Daniel was choked and strangled by the spectres of John Willard and Goody Buckley is apparent from the manner in which Bray Wilkins speaks of it. In an argument between him and some persons who were expressing their confidence in that John Willard was an innocent man he sought to relieve himself from responsibility for Willard's conviction by saying, 'It was not I, nor my son Benjamin Wilkins, but the testimony of the afflicted persons, and the jury concerning the murder of my grandson, Daniel Wilkins, that would take away his life, if anything did.'

"Mr. Parris, of course, was in the midst of these proceedings at Will's Hill; attended the visits of the afflicted girls when they went to a seer, who were the witches murdering young Daniel Wilkins and torturing the old man; was present, no doubt, at the solemn examination and investigation of the seers who sat as a jury of inquest over the former, and, in all likelihood, made, as usual, a written report of the same. As soon as he got back to his house he discharged his mind and imposed the verdict of the coroner's jury by this characteristic insertion in his church records: 'Dan Wilkins, bewitched to death.' The very next entry relates to a case of which this obituary line in Mr. Parris' church book is the only intimation that has come down to us. 'Daughter to Anna Douglas by witchcraft I doubt not.' Willard's examination was at Beadle's, on the 15th. With this deluge of accusations and tempest of indignation beating upon him, he had but little chance, and was convicted. While the marshals and constables were in pursuit of Willard, the time was well improved by the prosecutors."—UTHAM.

This is a part of our town history, and gives a very good idea of the prevailing sentiment on the public mind in regard to witchcraft at that time.

John Willard appears to have been an honest and amiable person, an industrious farmer, having a comfortable estate, with a wife and three young children. He was called grandson of Bray Wilkins, but whether by marriage or blood relation we know not. He

came from Groton; and whether he was a brother or relative of Rev. Samuel Willard, of Boston, it is for the local antiquaries to discover. If so it would add still greater interest to this narrative. Margaret, the widow of John Willard, married William Towne.

1700. - Ebenezer Stiles (son of Robert, who married Elizabeth Fry October 4, 1660, came from Yorkshire, England, with Rev. Ezekiel Rogers), came from Boxford (born on the site of Deacon Cowles' house), and bought a tract of land of "Lawrence Lacy, of Andover, and in the township of Andover, four-score rods long and three-score rods wide." Lacy, in deeding it to Stiles, says it is the same that I had of the town of Andover for "quality." Duality, a state of being two, most of the land is still owned by his descendants. He was the first of the name settled here (his house stood on the left bank of Beech Brook, cellar now seen), and with his son Ebenezer, Jr., helped form the church here in the new town in 1729, his house just coming within its bounds. This son Ebenezer married Sarah Howe April 23, 1733, and built the house now standing, owned by H. A. Stiles, brother of the writer.

In this same neighborhood, soon after, was Timothy Perkins, now G. H. Tufts' place (this house perhaps the oldest in town), and further down that of Joseph Fuller, grandson of Thomas—house now standing called the old Fuller farm-house, and quite ancient.

As this town belonged in four parts to other towns before incorporated, it is only by great labor that these far away days' doings can be brought to light, mixed as they are, with the records of other places and people. The house of Bray Wilkins stood near the end of the walk, as it comes down the hill near the Emerson house, on Pond Road. An old house was taken down by Maj. Solomon Wilkins (near the Weston place), supposed to have been very old, and for many generations the home of Bray Wilkins' descendants, also the Thomas house, near by, belonged to this Wilkins family, and is very ancient.

The house in which Mr. George A. Currier now lives was built about 1710, by a son or grandson of the first Thomas Fuller; also the gambrel-roof house near by was the home of Timothy Fuller's son, and is older than the town. There was an old house a little south of the Esq. Daniel Fuller house, occupied by the Fuller's descendants of the first Robert.

The Peabodies and Symonds families resided in the east part of the town. Three brothers (Peabody's), as follows: Samuel M. Peabody place, Augustus Curtis place and John Averill place. Samuel Symonds was on the box-factory place many years before the town was incorporated, and remained in the family till within forty years. Samuel H. Wilkins' house belonged to the Elliot family, and east of this was John Willard's, the victim of witchcraft.

The Asa Howe farm has long been in the family, and the house was the residence of John Howe,

father of Esquire Asa Howe, who was the grandfather of said Asa, now upon the place. Just beyond this place (the cellar is now seen) was the residence of Isaac Berry, brother of Nathaniel Berry, grandfather of the late Deacon Allen Berry.

On the cross-road, a little east of the farm of David Richardson, (whose house and building were recently burned), was a farm owned by a Berry family, all of whom died of small-pox; the buildings tumbled down; no one cared to go near the place. Their remains were buried in the corner of the field on the other side of the road. The disease was conveyed to them by their dog from Andover, at the house of Peter Towne, (the house is now standing), whose wife died with the small-pox, which is supposed to have been given her in a pinch of snuff by a rejected lover. The Berrys owned a wood-lot a little beyond this house and the dog, in company with the team, rolled as is supposed, on some of the waste thrown out at the back-door. This occurred more than a century ago.

The original home of the Esty family was across the railroad, east of the house of Mr. Walden Batchelder.

The town records of Topsfield, July 2d, 1728. To see what the town will do concerning the families that have petitioned not to be set off to Will's Hill, (their names), Thomas Robinson, Job Averill, John Cummings and Daniel Towne (the latter probably was the one chosen for schoolmaster), which might have a good influence at that time, to bring them into the town limits, though for some years Topsfield pretended to claim to the foot of the hill, by the road below the house of Mr. George P. Wilkins. All these families resided in the neighborhood of Nichols' Brook. There are quite a number of cellar holes now seen in this portion of the town.

North and west of this Nichols Brook settlement, was Boxford, which lost by the setting off of Middleton, six hundred acres of land, and one hundred of their population. Incorporation of Middleton, June 20th, 1728.

The original charter has recently been found, though in three pieces, can yet be read; it is written in a bold and elegant hand. After briefly stating the boundary lines, two years are allowed "to procure a suitable place for the worship of God, and likewise to settle a learned orthodox minister, and hire a school-master to instruct their young."

The town met (as they then had a suitable place), at the house of Dr. Daniel Felch, (cellar now seen opposite house of the late Addison Tyler). (Formerly this place was owned by William Way).

This charter was presented to the people by Jonathan Fuller (a grandson of Thomas). Two years previous to this time the bounds of the town had been contemplated, and probably made for the action of the court to grant their prayer for to be organized into a town, and had mutually engaged

in putting up an oak frame building for a place of worship forty feet square and about twenty-two feet post; the frame stood several years before being covered, as the location did not give entire satisfaction, but subsequently "voted to finish our meeting-house where it now stands," yet it was in bad condition till 1731, and even up to 1802, the house was in the form of a barn with only a few windows, with no inner doors, or porches, or plastering, save the walls, which were plastered to the gable-ends, with no plastering over-head, till the latter date. During this time the great braces of oak timber remained, which went from the floor to the posts about mid-way up, then another long brace from the same mortice in the post up to the great beam overhead, and these beams or plates were only eight feet distance apart, which with all these braces must have caused the interior of the house to look like a dense wood lot. Doubtless a small boy could lay close upon one of these braces undiscovered by the tithing man through the service. The wall pews were sold when the house was first occupied, and the seats in the body of the house gave way to pews in 1802, when there were added, the porches, new windows and a sounding-board or canopy, and all was newly painted, even the roof, after which it went to decay, and was bought by the writer forty years ago, and taken down.

THE FIRST MINISTER.—A meeting was called Tuesday, the 16th day of November, 1729. Lieutenant Thomas Fuller was chosen moderator, and the answer of Rev. Andrew Peters to the town accepted, and the second Wednesday in November appointed for ordination. A committee was chosen to join with Mr. Peters in the choice of some neighboring elders to assist in the ordination.

Mr. John Berry, Lieutenant Thomas Fuller and Joseph Wright composed the committee.

"Voted, to support the charges of ordination by a free contribution. *Resolved*, to raise seven shillings upon single votes to a hundred-pound vote. Mr. Peters' salary was a hundred pounds per year in province bills or passable money so long as he should continue his work among us, and that his salary shall rise or fall as money shall."

The town met again the 23d of October (1729), and chose David Kenney moderator; Francis Elliott, Sergeant Jonathan Fuller, Isaac Wilkins and Daniel Kenney to receive both money and provisions for the ordination; the house of Jonathan Fuller appointed for entertainment of ministers and messengers, and the house of Francis Elliott for the scholars.

The next thing in order was to form a church. This took place October 22, 1729, with fifty-two members; eleven more were added the following year. From this we judge the population to have been about four hundred or four hundred and fifty. The November 26th following, Rev. Andrew Peters, a graduate of Harvard College, and son of Samuel Peters, of Andover, was settled as minister, and Daniel Towne as schoolmaster.

Of those who formed the church, twenty-five came from Salem Village, nine from Topsfield and eleven from Boxford.

The ordination of a minister, which was for life, was a great event in those days. From all the towns around they flocked to Middleton for a feast; all doors were opened, and tables loaded with the best of good things, and it was not an uncommon thing for individuals to boast that they had called at every house on the way home, and took something to eat or drink at each, and in some cases they rested on the way till their stomachs were relieved of its unwonted burden.

As near as can be ascertained, the ordination took place on the 26th day of November, 1729. Mr. Peters was then twenty-nine years of age. He remained twenty-seven years. He was a devoted minister, and the church prospered under his ministry. He died October 6, 1756, aged fifty-five years. His remains were interred in the Fuller burying-ground, and a stone marks his last resting-place. For nearly five years before his death he was unable to supply the pulpit from sickness. What his complaints were we have not learned. Very little is recorded of his wife Hannah; her name is not found on the church records. Mr. Peters was of a very social nature, and perhaps a little eccentric.

It is said that Mr. Peters had a negro servant that drove his master's cows to pasture up by the pond, and at that time the road went round by the old Timothy Fuller house (now standing by the graveyard). Fuller was rather a lawless man, and often loved to bother people, especially those whom he could intimidate. The negro complained to his master of these insults, and forthwith Mr. Peters undertook to drive the cows, and he found the hectorer of his negro and expostulated with him, but without satisfaction. Then Mr. Peters took off his coat and laid it upon a stump, saying, "Lay there divinity, while I whip a rascal," and gave him a sound thrashing. At another time, when looking after his cattle near Wild's Hill, he entered the hut of old Willis, the Indian (the last of his race in town), and his squaw asked him to take dinner with her. He first asked what she had; she answered, "Skunk." Well, he thought he would not stop then, but perhaps some other time would. Not long after he again found himself under the cover of her tent or shanty, and, knowing that he loved eels, she had prepared a most tempting dish, which he did not decline, and ate heartily; after which the old, cunning squaw came to his side and said,—"You say you no eat skunk, but you eat rattlesnake," and so he had, but without any harm, as all Indians know they are good eating.

Mr. Peters was born near the old North meeting-house, and the cellar of his old home is now visible, and still in the Peters possession up to a late death. Mr. Peters bought the Dr. Daniel Felch place, took down the house, and built a new one back of the

meeting-house, which was taken down about fifty years since; cellar now seen.

We will now follow the succession of pastors and the ecclesiastical history up to the present time.

After the death of Mr. Peters, for nearly three years several votes were passed by the town to supply the pulpit with some young gentleman from month to month (Dana, Brown and others preached in turns); and finally gave a call to Rev. Elias Smith (I think he was from Baintree; not sure). Mr. Smith was then thirty years of age, and was a graduate of Harvard College and a successful pastor. He was settled January 10, 1759.

We notice a vote passed to give Mr. Smith one hundred and sixty pounds lawful money for his settlement (a sort of bonus in those days), and then voted sixty-five pounds, thirteen shillings and four pence for his salary; and at a subsequent meeting the town voted thirteen shillings, and another meeting soon after thirteen shillings more; and, to add more attractiveness to the old meeting-house, voted two pounds for repairs, and this clinched the bargain, and the ordination went on, and money was voted to be taken out of the town treasury to pay its expenses.

Mr. Smith once had a call from Marblehead, which he refused, saying,—"I would not leave my little flock in Middleton for all Marblehead." He was one of the trustees of Philips Academy, and so remained till his death, which took place October 17, 1791, aged sixty-one years. His was a ministry of nearly thirty-three years. His remains were placed in the tomb near his house.¹ Two of his daughters were school-teachers, and one of them taught in the old Fuller house, which stood a little south of the house now occupied by Jeremiah Fuller, referred to before.

Rev. Elias Smith owned the farm which belonged to the late Abijah Fuller, but his house was moved about sixty years ago to the turnpike road, and now owned by George A. Currier. This, however, is but half of the house; the other half was the same size, and stood at right angles with the other, one facing south, the other west. Timothy Fuller owned a mill just below Smith's farm (the old dam is yet visible), which flowed the meadow in front of his house. Few men dared to tackle Fuller in the law, as he was almost always successful, and he was very often in the law, in which he had plenty of money to spend to gratify his overbearing spirit. But Mr. Smith beat him this time, to the great satisfaction of the people. Smith employed as counsel John Adams. Probably this trial took place before Adams was President of the United States.

Perhaps it would be well here to state that it was the practice in those early times in New England to seat the meeting-house (so-called) once in a year; or

¹ This tomb was built about a century ago by Captain Joseph Peabody, of Salem (the millionaire), and Mr. Smith in company. Peabody married two of Smith's daughters, whose remains rest in the tomb with their father.

twice, at most. While the wall pews extended all around the house, and were sold to some of the first families in town (and occupied by their descendants till since the remembrance of the writer), the body of the house contained seats, and a committee was chosen to seat the meeting-house. First, regard was had for old age, and they were probably seated up towards the pulpit. Next in order were those who paid the highest rates. The question as to who was the richest, and, by good rights, deserved the higher seat, when so little care was taken in assessing taxes, for which no compensation was made (till within sixty years), was a most difficult question, and many were dissatisfied; and on some dark and stormy night the seats were all torn down, and so found on the following Sabbath morning. Says an old lady (who first entered the church on Sunday morning and the first to discover the wanton act), "If judgment begin at the house of God what will the end be?" The town met and voted to build them up; again they came down; now they voted to build them up, and if they come down again, each man should build up his own seat. After this they stood till 1802.

After the death of Mr. Smith, the town hired, from month to month, preachers till October 23, 1793, when they settled Rev. Solomon Adams, a graduate of Harvard College, who remained twenty years. He died September 4, 1813, aged fifty-two years. His remains rest in the tomb with his predecessor, and the last of our ministers, whose remains are found among the people of their charge.

The health of Mr. Adams failed some few years before he gave up preaching, and with great difficulty he ascended the high pulpit, by reason of a palsy shock, and an extra rail was spiked on to the great protruding timbers near the pulpit to raise himself up step by step. He would often forget the order of exercises, and put the singing in where it did not belong. During this time Deacon Benjamin Peabody (brother of old Captain Joseph, the millionaire of Salem) would read a sermon while Mr. Adams would offer the prayers and, with the help of Peabody, would conduct the other exercises.

Adams owned the farm of his predecessor, which, with school-teaching and his little salary, gave him a comfortable support.

"There is an intention of marriage, entered with me, between the Rev. Solomon Adams, of Middleton, and Miss Abigail Fiske, of Waltham, July 11th, 1793.

"BENJAMIN PEABODY, Town Clerk."

Mrs. Adams and her young family the writer well remembers; their pew in the church was the first at the foot of the pulpit stairs, which was at its right-hand side. Some ten years after Mr. Adams' death the widow sold the farm to Mr. Abijah Fuller (a descendant of the first Thomas who had located on this very site one hundred and sixty-one years before), who took down half of the old house and sold the other half to be moved to the turnpike, as before

mentioned, and built the house now standing, owned by Charles O. Frost. Mrs. Adams, in conveying the house and farm to Fuller, sold also the old eight-day clock, supposed to have been bought by Adams soon after his marriage. This clock remained in the family till after Mr. Fuller's death, when Mr. Edward Page, of Boston (who married a daughter of Rev. Solomon Adams, of Boston, and granddaughter of the old minister), and moved the clock to Boston, where it now gives the correct time, as it did nearly a century ago.

Then again the town was without a minister about three years, when Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard was settled November 27, 1816, and dismissed April 30, 1828,—he remained twelve years. His salary was five hundred dollars. He owned a farm near the church, now the Richardson place. Mr. Hubbard was a very pleasant speaker, and gave great satisfaction, especially to those who liked liberal views of Christian doctrines. Long sermons were listened to by a full house, discontented ones who had signed to other places of worship out of town (for, by the law then, all must pay a minister tax somewhere), came back, and there was a great show of prosperity outwardly, but soon the storm came, by the unwise speeches and words dropped by Mr. Hubbard, a meeting was called, and, as Mr. Hubbard was settled for life (and the last of our ministers so settled), they voted him five hundred dollars to relinquish the bargain between them.

We well remember his farewell discourse, in which he said "you would have plucked out your own eyes and have given them to me, but now you are offended because I have told you the truth."

Mr. Hubbard was born in Marblehead, and a graduate of Harvard College of the class of 1805. He resided for some time in Ipswich, had a call from Boxford in 1808, which he refused on account of insufficient salary being offered, and subsequently settled in West Newbury in 1811. After leaving Middleton he was settled in Lunenburg, Mass., and remained but a few years. He made the last call on us in Middleton in the spring of 1835. He had an interesting wife and family. While here he lost a son about fourteen years of age, whose remains were laid in the old tomb, with the consent of old Captain Peabody; and when the latter's widow died, a few years ago, at an advanced age, and, by her son George, her remains were brought to this tomb as the last to be laid therein (before the last great slab was to cover it forever), the body of Mr. Hubbard's child was discovered, and great inquiry was made as to who it was, this inquiry was soon settled by the writer, as this young man was an intimate friend of his.

Then for the fourth time the three years again elapsed before the call was given to Rev. Forrest Jefferds, in 1831. Meanwhile, students from Andover, and a Rev. Mr. Farley and others, had sup-

plied the pulpit, and but little interest was taken in religious matters, except by a few who had, with the Andover students, re-established the Sabbath-school, we say re-established, because Solomon Adams, son of the old minister, had started the school as early as 1819, but it was soon run down when he and David Russell, its main supports, left town.

This call, however, was subsequently voted down by one majority (after one or two meetings of tie votes, of those who desired unevangelical preaching. When the last vote was made known, Deacon Joseph Peabody said, "Those of you who approve of such preaching as we have had for the last four Sabbaths, please to withdraw to the southeast corner of the house," and leading the way, they then and there resolved to leave the house of worship occupied by them and their fathers a hundred years. Till within a few years the house had no warming apparatus; now the stove, Sabbath-school library, church furniture and the old tankards and cups, together with the church funds and even the church records must be given up. The records were subsequently returned, though not for twenty years, and after the death of one of the two male members who did not go with the church. There were only four of the church members left behind. Such fidelity in bearing testimony to the truth, as shown by these now outcasts, was a wonder after such unevangelical doctrines had been preached by the two last settled pastors. Such occurrences, however, took place in a large number of towns in New England about the same time.

Those few left behind soon died; none were even added to their number; the parish held now and then a meeting on the Sabbath; never organized a Sabbath-school, or held a meeting, and subsequently passed a vote calling themselves the First Universalist Society, by which name they now are known. The old house stood some fifteen years longer and became very dilapidated, and was sold to the writer for sixty dollars and taken down and sold for fire-wood. A few of its boards and timbers are still preserved as relics.

This was the saddest day the Church had ever seen. They hired the Centre school-house for a place of worship. Mr. Jefferds cast in his lot with them, and was settled May 2d, 1832. The same year the new meeting-house was built; the builder was Jacob Dodge Wenham, (which is now occupied as a dwelling-house by Mr. Samuel Peabody, son of Joseph, before mentioned), costing two thousand dollars, of which only about seven hundred dollars could be raised on account of the poverty of the people. The balance was given by outside parties, through the intercession of Mr. Washington Berry, (God bless their memories), whose sympathies were enlisted in our behalf, and for many years the Home Missionary Society aided us in the sum of two hundred and fifty dollars per year. In twenty-eight years the society had not only become self-supporting, but had out-grown their house of worship, purchased

the land on which the ancient church had stood, and erected the present beautiful place of worship, and thus, after an exile of twenty-eight years returned to the spot once dedicated by their ancestors to the worship of God.

Mr. Jefferds was dismissed May 15th, 1844, and died a few years since, in South Boston, about 75 years of age. Mr. Jefferds was a most faithful pastor, proclaiming the doctrine of evangelical truth without fear of man and church discipline was kept up by him, without which, little good can be expected of its influence. Mr. Jefferds spent the best of his days here and laid well the foundations under which we have prospered. His memory should ever be held by this people in grateful remembrance.

Mr. Jefferds was settled in Epping, N. H., before coming to Middleton. He married President William Stearns' sister, by whom he had a very large family of children.

Rev. Thurston Searle settled May 8, 1845; dismissed December 23, 1846. Mr. Searle married a daughter of Colonel Jesse Putnam, of Danvers, Mass., and died in that town a few years since.

Rev. J. Augustin Hood, ordained January 2, 1850; dismissed May 17, 1854. Mr. Hood was son of Rev. Jacob Hood, who died a few weeks since in Lynnfield, Mass., aged ninety-four years.

Rev. A. H. Johnson, ordained January 1, 1857; dismissed April 5, 1865. Mr. Johnson is now a practicing physician in Salem, Mass.

Rev. James M. Hubbard, installed April 8, 1865; resigned December 28, 1868. The same council that dismissed Mr. Johnson settled Mr. Hubbard.

Rev. Lucien H. Frary, ordained October 7, 1869; dismissed March 16, 1875. Mr. Frary went from here to Weymouth, and is now settled over a large and flourishing society. Mr. Frary is a very interesting preacher, and commanded a larger salary than this people could pay. The church and society prospered under his ministry.

A sad event took place just before Mr. Frary left, which was the partial burning of the church by an incendiary. A fire was kindled, as is supposed, in a cabinet organ standing at the right of the pulpit, which spread to the adjoining pews, twelve of which were consumed; and if it had not been for the woolen carpet, the fire would have spread all over the house. When discovered the blaze reached the plastering overhead, and so great was the heat that all the paint, even to the entry, was blistered, and the desk, table, chairs and the organ in the gallery, that cost some five hundred dollars, was destroyed. The damage was about two thousand dollars.

This fire was discovered Saturday morning after Thanksgiving, 1873, about half-past six o'clock, by Benjamin Parker, who was at that time on his way to work at J. B. Thomas' box-mill. It is thought that in less than ten minutes more the heat was so great that the flames would have flashed all over the

house. The house was closed tight; otherwise it would certainly have been burned.

After Mr. Frary left several candidates preached, among them Kingsly F. Norris, of New York, who received a call which he declined, it being his intention to go West.

Rev. A. H. Tyler was settled October 24, 1877; dismissed April 29, 1880.

For the last three years the pulpit has been supplied by Rev. S. K. B. Perkins, who is a scholarly preacher and faithful, devoted pastor. Mr. Perkins¹ was born in Braintree, Mass., where his father, Rev. Jonas Perkins, was pastor for more than forty-five years over the same church where Mr. Frary is now settled.

The present house of worship was erected in 1859 by Abel Preston, of Peabody, Mass.; cost about five thousand dollars. Building committee, Wm. A. Phelps, David Stiles and Francis P. Merriam.

LIST OF DEACONS.

1723. John Berry.	1820. Joseph Symonds.
Samuel Symonds.	1821. Joseph Peabody.
1738. Edward Putnam, Jr.	1829. David S. Wilkins.
1750. Samuel Nichols.	1831. David Stiles, Sr.
1756. Francis Peabody, Jr.	1840. Allen Berry.
1778. John Flint.	1859. William A. Phelps.
1780. Samuel Symonds.	1868. James N. Merriam.
1796. Benjamin Peabody.	1874. Edward W. Wilkins.
John Nichols.	

About eight years since a Methodist Society started here, built a neat chapel, and are now in a flourishing condition. A new house of worship has also been erected by the Universalist Society.

We will now resume the civil history. The first town clerk was Mr. Edward Putnam, son of first deacon of Salem village, and lived near the Crawford house, the site of which was his father's house. This son Edward's house came within the new town, which stood just a little down the hill, south of Mr. J. J. H. Gregory's present farm-house.

The first selectmen were, Thomas Fuller, Thomas Robinson, John Nichols, Samuel Symonds and Edward Putnam.

The second pew from the front door on the west side, was sold to Joseph Fuller, for ten pounds more than what he hath recently done, (this Joseph was the grandson of Thomas), and his descendants occupied this pew, so long as it was used as a place of worship.

Soon after incorporation the town was fined for not maintaining a public-school.

"SPECIMEN OF TOWN ORDERS.

"Mr. Robert Bradford (Bradford lived on the Maj. Elias Wilkins place, east side, Sir, please to pay unto Joseph Symonds two pounds eight shillings, charging for Miss Betsey Bixby, keeping School three weeks, and charge the same to the town.

"Minutes, January ye third day, 1772.

"Andrew Fuller, Joseph Symonds, Archlaus Fuller, Selectmen. Andrew Fuller was called Capt., and built the house near the church in 1735, and also the same year built the Porter Gould house, for his son

David. Archlaus Fuller, grandfather of Jeremiah Fuller now occupies the old house of his ancestors."

1732.—There was a long and bitter contest in regard to the common lands with Salem village people, and General Court was appealed to. These lands lay along Nichols Brook, called Stickey meadows, (a proper name certainly). Afterwards this territory was called the disputed lands between Topsfield and Middleton, and so laid down in maps. Notwithstanding our charter laid the bounds by the northerly branch of said brook, yet as it could not be found, and that the other branches had been cut out as a nearer course to the river, to drain the meadows, many years before, had caused the northerly branch to grow over in bushes and nearly obliterated; but finally traced out, and the heap of stones found on the meadow completely covered with soil, that was placed there by those who run the line probably two years before the act of incorporation was passed.

In the early settlement of this place, the highways were not fenced, and gates or bars to be opened or taken away and again replaced on going through every man's farm. They however were to be in good condition. The roads were not only crooked, but in many places dangerous to travel, and so narrow in raised places that it was often with great difficulty that teams passed each other.

Soon after incorporation, alewives were taken from Cochitwick Brook, Andover, and placed in Middleton pond; then again in 1764, and at several times subsequently till within a few years, all to little purpose; and black-bass at last, of which few of the people who paid for the operation have ever seen one.

A clerk of market for many years was annually chosen, and a vote passed each year, whether the hogs should go at large, if well yoked and ringed; this vote came up at March meeting till 1814.

Also "the choosing of a man to take care of ye Deer, and see that they were not killed in an improper time." Mark Howe filled this office several years. He was the father of Esquire Asa, who was grandfather of Mr. Asa Howe, now living on the same farm, and in the same house.

1736.—Another specimen showing the condition of the old church.

"To see if the town will grant ye petition of Hannah Nichols, wife of Joseph Nichols, and Abigail Burton, wife of John Burton, Jr., to build a back pew over the womans stairs from ye womans back seat in the front gallery to ye east corner of ye meeting-house and from thence to ye womans sets in the east gallery" (same meeting), "3d to see if ye town will grant the petition of Joseph Wilkins and Ebenezer Nichols for their two daughters, viz.: Mary Wilkins, and Keziah Nichols, and others with them to build a back seat in ye east gallery of our meeting-house."

1739.—Two men were sent to Boston to present a petition to General Court, to get a grant passed to abate a fine imposed for not sending a representative.

¹The home of the Perkins family was Ipswich, Mass.

Till within almost eighty years the expense of a representative to General Court was borne by the towns, and for *eleven* years after incorporation voted not to send every year, and only five times in the first sixty years. Timothy Fuller three times, and Archalaus Fuller twice. Subsequently Dr. David Fuller offered his services gratuitous at an informal town meeting, the Court refused him a seat, and afterwards the town called a meeting and disowned him as its representative. Dr. Fuller lived on the B. P. Richardson farm.

1740.—"To see if ye town will vote Land-Bank money, to pay town rates," and was unanimously passed, "that Land-Bank money or manufactory bills should pay the town rates for time to come," was also passed.

In the scarcity of money in those days, this scheme to make paper money was devised by leading wealthy men in nearly all parts of the State, one of whom lived in Worcester. Cornet Francis Peabody of this town, a wealthy man, and of much influence in the county, entered deeply into it, and pledged his property to defend it, and the scheme went so far that Parliament had to take notice of it and pronounced the scheme unlawful, and in the name of the Crown they were all prosecuted, were heavily fined, and made to redeem every particle of it.

"Cornet" stood for "Captain of the troop of Horse;" for the county, and the original commission issued by the officers of the Crown of England are still in existence.

1744.—"Voted Rev. Andrew Peters fifty-three pounds, six shillings and eight pence lawful money for his salary this present year."

1745.—"Isaac Wilkins and Timothy Fuller chosen to keep the way clear for fish to pass to the great pond."

1749.—Ezra Putnam was given liberty to cut a window in the back part of his pew on his own charge and cost.

1750.—"Voted to pay Asa Foster, of Andover, twenty pounds lawful money if he would keep the long cussway in good repair, that it may be good passing at all times in the year for twenty years to come." This was Foster's offer, because, in his route to Salem, he had either to turn off and go by Emerson's Mill, or turn to the left and pass over at the outlet of Pout Pond, and go out by the Roger Elliott's place, thence over to John King's place and thence to Indian Bridge. Four years before the town had voted to discontinue this crossing, and an appeal had been made to the county for help, and even a lottery scheme was asked for from the State, to raise funds to fill up this sunken vale, and not till 1808 was it safe at "all times of the year" for public travel. In building the railroad across these meadows one morning it was found that during the night the road, which was nearly fitted for the rails, had gone

down out of sight. As early as 1688 the people of Andover had petitioned court to fill up this swamp as the diverging roads, before named, were hilly and rocky at that time, and for many years subsequently the crossway hill was avoided by a road east of it now seen.

1752.—"Isaac Kenney and Andrew Fuller were chosen to go to ye General Court held at Concord with a petition to get ye town in a regular way or method by reason of the warrants granted by the selectmen have been deficient in time past."

1755.—"Voted to raise forty pounds lawful money in raising the long cussway with timber and gravel."

1756.—"Voted to supply the pulpits of those ministers who were bearers at Mr. Peters' funeral."

1757.—"Rev. Mr. Ames preached part of the year also Mr. Dana one month, and tried to settle him on a salary of sixty pounds a year."

1758.—December 7th "Voted to pay charges of ordination, also charges for ministers, messengers and gentlemen to dine" (Mr. Smith's ordination).

1759.—"To see if the town will vote to have Mr. Nathaniel Peabody's rates abated, that is to say, what he was rated for his negro servant."

"To the town of Middleton.

"BRETHREN—By your committee I am informed of your desire that I might begin my salary the first of January, which I now tell you is very agreeable to me, and then there can be no difficulty in after time relating thereunto, and if you comply I expect you to give me an order upon the treasurer for eighty-two pounds, old tenor, which is what will be due to that time. So, brethren, I wish you peace and happiness and that you will not forget to pray for your unworthy pastor,

"ELIAS SMITH.

"Middleton, March 29, 1759."

1762.—"Voted to repair the school-house that stands by the meeting-house, provided proper papers be given of the house to the town." Said house was moved to Danvers in 1819 by John Fuller.

The schools were often kept in private houses or buildings erected by individuals, for which they received a small income besides accommodating their own children near home, and do some work while being instructed, as at an early age they were required to be almost self-supporting.

1764.—"At a venue at John Estys' tavern the town sold vacant places for pews in the west end of the meeting-house to Captain Andrew Fuller for ten pounds and ten shillings."

1769.—Jonathan Knight, Benjamin Peabody, Joseph Symonds, Eunice Hobbs, Elizabeth Hobbs, Sarah Fuller, Phebe Peabody, Margaret Peabody, Sarah Russell, Elizabeth Peabody, Mercy Knight, Susannah Wilkins, Mary Wilkins, Rebecca Holt and Lucy Kenney were appointed to say how the seats should be moved to build the pew as mentioned in the petition of Jonathan Knight and others, and met March 13, 1770, and agreed that the seats should be moved to the pew built in the same manner as they are done in the men's gallery.

1771.—"Voted to give liberty to sundre persons be-

longing in towne to set in our school-house on Sunday between meetings."

1775.—"Captain Archealus Fuller was chosen to represent the town in the Provincial Congress to be holden at Cambridge Feb. ye first day, 1775."

Same year, on account of the oppressive Post Bill to the people of Boston, the people met at Estys' Tavern and subscribed for their relief. Then follows the names of one hundred and four who contributed from four pounds ten shillings to three shillings nine pence. The sum total exceeded five hundred and sixty pounds. This was headed by Rev. Elias Smith, and among them were the names of several prominent ladies.

The killing of those volunteer farmers, the 19th of April, by the order of the British commander, produced a thrilling effect all over the United States. The blood of the patriots was stirred as never before; all rushed to the rescue with guns or no guns, and with whatever weapon or by whatever means they were intent upon driving the invaders from the soil. As the news reached this town, old Tim Fuller with his characteristic energy and bold spirit started on his old white horse for the scene of action; he overtook the army on the retreat, and with his gun blazed away at their rear; returning a short distance was furnished with a fresh loaded gun, then, again, putting spurs to his horse would overtake the fast retreating army, and at each shot would produce a startling effect in their ranks. They called him death upon the white horse. But the long ride and the chafing he received in such active exhibitions, when cooled off caused such a soreness that he walked home, and a boy from Danvers, who was there by the name of Daniel Brown, was induced to take the horse home.

Again, at the battle of Bunker Hill, the old man's blood was stirred up, and mounting his old mare rode to the scene of action, pushed his way in among his countrymen to aid them in the fight. How many "red-coats" he killed or wounded will never be known. One creature, however, bit the dust, and this time it was his old mare.

Mr. Fuller's widow died in 1824; she was many years younger than her husband. As the story goes Mr. Fuller when at work on his land, near where the old road crosses the turnpike at Danvers Centre, went into an ordinary (Tavern) and called for a drink of cider. Mrs. Smith said "you rock the cradle while I draw the cider." When she returned Fuller asked for the gift of the child; this request was granted, provided he would wait till she was eighteen years old. True to his promise he appeared at the expiration of the time, and took her to Middleton and exhibited her before his forty negroes which he then owned, little and great, and in all conditions, and said "you are mistress of them all." "What can I do, with such a black, dirty-looking company?" The answer came quick as lightning, "get one nigger to lick

another." These slaves were domiciled in the house now owned by Mr. George A. Currier, and was built in 1710. Fuller lived in the gambrel-roof house, now standing near the burying-ground. We have no reason to doubt the above statement. The dates upon their grave stones show the disparity of their ages.

1776.—A company of Minute-Men were immediately formed, and the town voted unanimously "if the Continental Congress declares Independence upon the Kingdom of Great Britain, that we the inhabitants of Middleton solemnly engage with our lives and fortunes to support the measure so far as we are able."

Colonel Benjamin Peabody was in command of his company at West Point, and assisted in laying the second cable, the first having been broken. This second cable was made in the form of a clevis instead of welded links as before.

Col. Peabody was a leading man in the county, and caused the widening and straightening of the road between the present village and Danvers Plains, in 1811. He was a brother of Joseph, the merchant of Salem and the older of a large family; he was the son of Francis, and born August 9, 1741.

Dr. Silas Merriam, of Middleton, married his sister.

Captain Andrew Fuller was an officer, and his son, John Fuller, also served in the war of the Revolution. We can give only a few names of those patriots, in the absence of the muster rolls which cannot be found, and these mostly come from those, now living, who have heard of their serving from their own lips. Samuel Gould, Robert Picket, Abner Wilkins, Jonathan Lemons, David Fuller (sons of Andrew) were taken prisoners, carried to England, and remained some time in prison; Capt. Andrew died in the year 1802.

One man when he heard of the battle of Lexington, was on his way to Salem with a load of wood; he immediately threw off his wood and, with his team started for home in great haste, stopped on his way at Joshua Wright's blacksmith shop, (in our present village, which stood just north of Grothe's blacksmith shop), and ordered a spear and hook combined, made to use against the invaders. This circumstance indicated the scarcity of fire-arms. This man lived on a farm now owned by H. A. Stiles. When he arrived home his wife told him that he had more courage than conduct, and bid him wait till he was called for. What became of the savage weapon he had ordered we never knew. Certainly if it had ever been seen in his home, tradition would have made it known to us, as it was, the fact that two of his family went to the war and had died, and when the procession with his remains were near the burying-ground just below the captain Ephraim Fuller house they met the other soldier on his way home upon a litter borne on the should-

ers of men. He lived for some years, but had so long slept on the ground and floors, that for a long time he would not sleep on a feather-bed.¹ This story was related to the writer more than sixty-five years since by an aged aunt. An old French gun of the best make was a few years since in the family, and had been for many years, the history of which if known, we think would be very interesting.

1777.—In June

"The town made prices for grain of all kinds, produce and merchandise of every kind, for days' work; prices for shoeing horses, tanning boots and shoes, for dinners, supper and breakfast. For liquor not over one-fourth part water.

"By order of the Selectmen.

"ASA STILES, Town Clerk.

"Stiles lived on the Upton farm."

In war time, Washington took a large number of prisoners, and eight of them were boarded in this town as their portion. By some reason or other one of them by the name of Joshua Daniels, a Frenchman, was never exchanged, became a resident, lived in a hut a little east of the house of John Smith; in the pasture the cellar hole is now seen. Daniels was a weaver, and wove twilled cloth. The art was then unknown by the girls here, and as a good recommendation for house-keepers they must be good weavers, and young girls eagerly sought to acquire all they could in this line of business.

1779.—"Voted to raise Sogers if any are called for, and provisions if any are called for."

1780.—Now they vote "to see if the town will procure the Beef called for by the great and General Court, or pay the money in Lieu of said Beef. Fourth to see if the town will make good to the committee that was chosen to procure the Beef that was called for by the Court, the money that was condemned to be counterfeit."

Among the state papers of New Hampshire on the muster rolls of those who served, in 1776, are found thirty-eight pages of highly interesting diaries and memoranda of Lieutenant Jonathan Burton, of Wilton.

Lewis Burton was born in Middleton, September 18th, 1741, a third of a mile south of William Peabody's, near Topsfield line. He married Hulda Nichols, (a near neighbor as is supposed), February 29th, 1764, by whom he had nine children. He was appointed Captain in 1786, by president John Sullivan, and Brigade-Major August 5th, 1798. Mr. Burton filled all the important offices in Wilton, and often represented the town in General Court. He died April 30th, 1811.

In 1764, Mrs. Burton united with the church in Middleton, just before she and her husband left for

New Hampshire, (under the ministry of Mr. Smith). The late Rev. Warren Burton, once chaplain of the Senate in Massachusetts, and a grandson of this Jonathan Burton, informed us of this fact himself, more than forty years since. The father of Jonathan Burton was the adopted son of William Nichols, and the land on which this Jonathan was born, was given by said Nicholas to his father, which was a part of the large claim from Henry Bartholomew.

1779.—The town voted to choose a committee to take under consideration the frame of government agreed upon by the delegates of the people of the State of Massachusetts Bay, in convention began and held at Cambridge the first day of September, 1779, and continued by adjournment to the second of March, 1780. This committee were Rev. Elias Smith, Lieut. Isaac Kinney, Lieut. Amos Curtis, Mr. Israel Kinney, and Lieut. Jonathan Lemon.

The above committee subsequently laid before the town the doings of this convention or in other words our State Constitution, and each article voted on with the following results: First article, 35 for, 12 against; second article, 42 for, 5 against; third article, 36 for, 9 against; fourth article, 32 for, 6 against; fifth article, 35 for, 5 against. Then all the articles from the fifth to the thirtieth stood 31 for, 7 against. Then all the articles together 33 for, 7 against.

This meeting was held May 30, 1780. Benjamin Peabody was moderator; selectmen,—Asa Stiles, Samuel Wilkins, Andrew Elliott, Asa Howe.

1780. "To see if the town will pay the school-master to learn the youth the rules of Psalmody."

1781. "Voted to raise nineteen thousand pounds in old Continental currency to procure beef now called for by the Great and General Court." We find that Stephen Richardson paid a marriage fee of one hundred and seventy-five dollars in this currency about this time.

A week's board then cost \$105, but in gold \$2. People were greatly in debt; there was but little coin in circulation; those taking this emission money in payment for sales were ruined. Asa Stiles sold his farm (the Upton place) and took his pay in this money, and lost it all. Said Stiles was the father of the late David Stiles, Esq., of New Hampshire.

At the close of the Revolutionary War, the muskets that were brought home, that were furnished by the town, were sold at auction to the towns people.

1783. Whoever took in people without knowing their financial standing were required to have their names recorded on the town-books, that the town officers might, at their discretion, warn them out, so as to prevent their gaining a residence.

"MIDDLETON, May 13th, 1783.

"Mr. Benjamin Berry and his wife, Sarah, with the following children, came from Andover to live in the house of the Rev Andrew Peters, late of Middle-

¹These soldiers might have served in the French and Indian Wars, instead of the Revolution, which took place some twenty years before.



ton,—Mehitable, Timothy, Phebe, Peabody, Lucy, Betsey and Nancy Robinson Berry.

"BENJAMIN PEABODY.

"One of the Selectmen.

"Middleton May 9th."

"Nov. 13.

1787. "To the selectmen, Gentlemen this is to inform you that on the second day of November, Instant, I hired Frank Francis into my house as a labor, and he came last from Danvers, his circumstances I am unacquainted with.

"REBECCA HOBBS.

"BENJAMIN PEABODY.

"One of the Selectmen.

1787. The town "voted to joine in a petition with George Cabot and others that a Bridge be Bult over the River near Beverly Ferry, if done without cost to this town." This, we think, must be between Salem and Beverly, near railroad bridge.

1791. "Voted to allow on the highways a team of three good creatures, Four Shillings per day, and a greater or less team in proportion, and a man two shillings per day." Same meeting, "Voted to keep the school at the schoolhouse by the meetinghouse this season, and voted to repair said house."

This school-house stood a little east of the church, on the site of Mrs. Gillingham's house, and from the first had been the principal school in town. Schools had been kept in other parts of the town in private houses.

1792. Not till this year was the town divided into districts. Even after that date private individuals for some time furnished places for the schools. At the Dean Fuller place, on the North Road, was a school-house afterwards used by said Fuller for a carriage-house, and now said building is used for a dwelling-house by Mr. Coleman, near the depot.

The few opportunities afforded the children of a century ago to obtain an education, were well improved by some of them. Self-education was more practiced then by those who really desired an education than now.

1793. "Voted to supply the pulpit, Mr. Smith being unable by sickness. Subsequently "voted to be at the cost of burying Mr. Smith and find mourning for Mrs. Smith."

1798. "Voted to sell the common lands. A great part of these lands was in the southwest corner of the town, near the old Hutchinson house, and part on Nichols Brook (Stickey Meadows).

1786. Up to this date the red deer were still in our forests, and were protected by law so as not to be killed in an improper time, a deer rief being chosen annually with all other town officers.

"MIDDLETON, Sept. 10th 1786.

"Mr. Timothy Farnum of Andover made application to be cryed to Miss Susannah Berry, of Middleton, and was cryed."¹

The method of crying was to pass round the meeting-house, outside on Sunday, three times, stop and ring the hand-bell and declare the intention of marriage, and make a record of that fact.

1796. The town voted unanimously that it is the opinion of the inhabitants of this town that the treaty negotiated between Great Britain and the United States is for the honor and interest of our country.

1798. "Voted to allow Capt. Solomon Wilkins for powder at sixty cents per pound for General Muster."

1802.—About thirty persons petitioned for a town-meeting to choose an agent or agents to confer with the petitioners for the turnpike road leading from Newburyport to Boston, and use their endeavors to have said road lead through this town by or near the meeting-house. Same meeting voted to paint the pulpit and canopy or sounding-board. Voted that the negroes shall have the north end of the second seat in each end gallery. (These seats were occupied by colored people till since the writer's remembrance).

1803.—New road by Asa Howe's. The road formerly went a third of a mile west of this place.

"Voted to pay for the powder used by Captain Roger Flint's company at the regimental muster (date 1805)."

The long crossway was made safe at all times of the year 1808, when about seventy men from Andover and Middleton gave from one to three days' work each to build it up. Those who did not choose to work themselves were to give seventy-five cents, which would then secure a good day's work.²

1800.—Theodore Ingalls moderator. "2d, Voted to take notice of the 22d of February agreeable to the recommendation of Congress and our General Court which was the birthday of General George Washington." "3d, Voted that it be the desire of the town that our reverend pasture, Solomon Adams, deliver an oration on the 22d Feb. Instant, Beginning the exercises at eleven o'clock on said day." "4th, Voted that it be the desire of the town that the militia of said town meet at half past ten o'clock at the 'pasture's house with their badges of mourning & escort him to the meeting-house & back a gain after the solemnity of the day.'" "5th, Voted that the militia take the body seats in the said meeting-house." "6th, Voted that the solemnity of the day should be opened by prayer & musick, then an oration and close with prayer and musick suitable for the oration." "7th, Voted to choose a committee to require the Rev. Solomon Adams to deliver an oration and also desire the militia to attend a greable to the vote of the town." "Voted Samuel Small, Lieu. John Flint and Chaplain Joseph Symonds a committee to arange musick on said day."

1802.—The meeting-house was thoroughly repaired,

¹ This couple were the grandparents of the writer.

² Never heard of any one of them striking for higher wages.



porches added, new windows, pews took the place of seats in the body of the house and hewed stones for underpinning instead of rough stone, which were removed and the ground lowered about the sides of the house, leaving the floor upon the timbers that lay upon the ground. Stumps of a heavy forest were cut away to lay down these timbers, and still sound above ground when the house was taken down more than a century afterward.

A committee was chosen to repair the house, and tradition says that John Fuller undertook the job without specifications, and before he was able to satisfy the committee had expended more than the appropriation, and lost money. Subsequently his farm was sold to Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard.

1806.—The Essex Turnpike was built through town; toll-gates were placed, according to law, at each end of the town—one stood near the house of Daniel G. Berry, Andover, the other below Ipswich River, on the hill. This road, we think, never paid a dividend. After trying to keep it in good repair for a little over twenty years, the stockholders asked the town through which it passed to take it off their hands. This town voted to take the gift of it, but some voted against it. Daniel Fuller, Esq., was a director and had the management of the section in this vicinity. It was intended to take the principal part of the travel from Canada, and along its route to the great markets of Salem and Boston. At the former town were the heavy merchants and a large foreign trade, and this market had a wide reputation. The small crafts of that day could land their cargoes at their wharves with ease; subsequently larger vessels were employed, and they were obliged to seek ports with deeper water.

1811.—“Voted to build a powder-house.” It was built of brick by John Fuller, and on his land, on a hill southeast of the present church.

“Sold the right to take Alewives for the season to Samuel Wilkins for one dollar and seventy-five cents,” also “the right to take shad in Ipswich River for three dollars and fifty cents.”

1811.—“Voted that the commanding officer shall provide for the company when called out of town on muster days at the expense of the town, not to exceed two shillings each.” At this date there were a few over one hundred voters.

1812.—“Voted to give soldiers 35 cts. a piece on muster days when called out of town to ‘git’ dinner, and one dollar and a half to drafted men if they train more than the other part of the company, and when in actual service fifteen dollars per month more than the continental pay.”

1812.—William Estey was chosen clerk of market.

WAR OF 1812-14.—In 1814 some British men-of-war lay off Salem harbor and old Parson Stone, of North Reading, preached one Sabbath. He drawled out his words (a habit of many preachers in the early days, and talked a little through his nose) and is said

to have used in his prayer these words, “We pray, Lord, that there may come a storm and sink them all in the deep.” It is said that soon a storm did come, and they moved off, and many thought Stone’s prayer was answered. This old divine was the father of Deacon Giles, of Deacon Giles’ distillery of Salem.

The presence of these men-of-war was the cause of an alarm (the firing of three cannon in succession at Montserrat), which thrilled this whole community. The alarm came about by a little misunderstanding and bickerings between Colonel Jesse Putnam of Danvers, and Captain Jedediah Farnham of Andover. When the news reached this town the minute-men rushed to arms. Captain Samuel Wilkins (father of S. H. Wilkins) was in command, but was a long time, it is said, in putting his company in marching order; it was at last accomplished, and the command given “forward march.” Just at that moment had come “fals alarm.”

At this time politics ran very high, and the town was about equally divided between Republicans and Federals; the latter, in a close vote, secured an old Republican, a negro by the name of Charles Snow, and kept him secreted till election, in the cellar at the house of John Fuller, near the meeting-house. The Federal party was what is now called the Democrat party, and were opposed to the war. When the alarm took place before-mentioned, many of the enrolled militia did not appear, and when the word came that it was a false alarm the soldiers were jubilant, and felt like accomplishing something, and it being then in the evening, but probably moonlight, as Ezra Bradstreet, a soldier that did not respond, though living close by, and in the house now standing, occupied by Mr. Benjamin McGlaughlin, was seen to run into the swamp in his night dress as a soldier came into his yard, which very much frightened him, not knowing but that he was about to be dragged before the British muskets and cannon. However, his mother, an old woman, came to the door and asked what the matter was, when a rather excited soldier, by name of James Wilkins, said: “I will let you know,” and then fired off his gun near her feet, at which she screamed and ran into the house; how long her son (whom we well remember) remained in a nearly nude state in the swamp was not told.

Others of these soldiers started for some who did not respond that lived in the east part of the town; but George Drakes (a colored man), had been sent by John Fuller (before named), to warn them of the proposed raid by the soldiers; they, however, caught Drakes, and while some held him, others went on and gave them an awful fright, broke in some windows by firing off guns close to the houses and so spent nearly the whole night in this kind of sport.

These facts were told the writer by one of these raiders, whose word was never doubted.

1813.—“To see if the town will defray the funeral

expenses of Rev. Solomon Adams." "Voted to continue the salary of Rev. Solomon Adams until the first of January, admitting Mrs. Adams will supply the Desk."

About this time an intention of marriage was posted on the meeting-house, and if one of the parties lived in another town, a duplicate had to be pasted in that town. These notices had to be pasted a specified number of days before the marriage was to take place.

In the early history of New England it was the duty of the sexton to ring the bell at noon and at nine o'clock in the evening, and keep and "turn the glass," meaning the hour glass, that stood on or near the pulpit, and it was understood that the sermon was to be one hour long. Whether the glass was used or not in this town we are not informed, but certainly there were but few clocks and watches among the first settlers, and the glass and sun dials were their dependence, the former in stormy weather, the latter as a regulator when the sun shone. This town was without a bell till 1835, when the writer drew up a subscription paper and obtained about two hundred dollars, with which a bell was purchased, of the Holbrook make, weighing five hundred and twenty-seven pounds. After the present church was erected the present bell was purchased (and the former broken up and sold for old metal). Present bell was bought in Westboro, Mass., where it had done service on a Unitarian Church, which had become weak, and to strengthen themselves, offered their house of worship to the orthodox society (then without a place of worship), provided they would repair the house. This offer was accepted, and the bell was taken down and put upon the cars, to be transported to Boston, to have the wooden yokes removed and replaced with one of cast-iron. The former society being in debt, a few of its leading men depended on the sale of the bell to discharge the same, but the orthodox claimed the bell with the church, and a dispute arose, which threatened a suit and disruption, whereupon a delegation of the Unitarians, with a good team, boarded the cars, and by force, removed the bell and secreted it in an old shoemaker's shop; then, after the other society had purchased a new bell, and peace preserved, the old bell was advertised for sale in the *Plowman*, and the writer being employed to go and see the bell, found it, as before-mentioned; it was raised up a few inches, and sounded, and found to be perfect; the price paid was the same as for old metal. The bell is one of Henry N. Hooper's, of Boston, best make, and they claim that it would injure the tone of the bell to have a cast-iron yoke placed upon it, and the old yoke of wood still remains upon it.

The bell weighs about twelve hundred and fifty pounds, and the people of Westboro claimed that the bell was the best of the six bells that had been hung in that town. Its present location is unfavorable on account of the falling away of the ground near the

church, causing the sound to rise in the air, and therefore is not heard at so great a distance.

1814.—"Let out the care of the meeting-house; to be swept twelve times a year; to be unlocked and locked on all occasions, both public and private; shovel snow from the doors when necessary. Set up and struck off to John Fuller, Jr., for seventy-five cents." The usual price paid was about \$2.50. Probably there was a little steam on at this time.

Trouble began about religious matters, and large numbers flowed into a new society, called the Christian Society. Others joined themselves to neighboring societies in Danvers and other places, as the law at that time compelled all to pay minister rates somewhere. Asa Howe, Esq., signed to Danvers under the ministry of Rev. Jeremiah Chaplin (Baptist); Dr. David Fuller to St. Peter's Church, Salem. But in 1816, when Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard commenced preaching here, he was liked, and they all came back, and things went on very smoothly till near the close of his ministry.

1817.—All the poor were put up at auction at the annual meeting in March, and struck off at the lowest bidder, none of which received over \$1.50 per week. Some of the most feeble, who were nearly helpless, were bid in by their relatives for seventy-five cents per week, rather than have them go into the hands of unfeeling strangers. However, this was the custom in all towns where there was no poor-farm. A century ago there were a smaller number of poor people here than before or since; also more independent farmers according to the population. The lands had not begun to be exhausted, and they had large flocks and herds, and everywhere these families were distinguished, not only by their social acquirements, but by their dress and daily deportment, from the poor and unfortunate.

1832.—The first manufactory started here (except the little grist and saw-mills, of which there were a number) was the paper-mill on Ipswich River by Colonel Francis Peabody, of Salem, Mass. (and son of Captain Joseph Peabody, a man who was born here, and married first and second daughters of Rev. Elias Smith), and has continued in operation since by other proprietors. A few years later the shoe business was started by Elias T. Ingalls (father of Senator John James Ingalls, of Kansas), who soon after removed to Haverhill, the home of his wife, and continued in the business with success.

About 1835 Francis P. Merriam began the shoe business here, and has continued the same. At the present time, under the firm of Merriam & Tyler, employing at times more than a hundred hands. Other smaller manufacturers have done business here, and are now employed in other business. A knife-factory was started here a few years ago by S. A. Cummings on the site of the old iron-works, which was started by Major-General Daniel Dennison, of Ipswich, about 1665, who employed Thomas



Fuller as foreman, who afterward bought Dennison's claim, which was bounded south by Pierce's Brook, and near this brook, on the site of the house of Charles O. Frost, was his dwelling, and just over the stream is seen the foundation of his blacksmith-shop.

The box-mill of J. B. Thomas was started a few years since, and has done a large business, employing quite a number of men and teams.

With the business of the firm of Merriam & Tyler, which gives employment to a large number of hands, the village has grown up and many tasteful dwellings erected, and bears favorable comparison with many other places. Churches and schools are well maintained, and prosperity seems to pervade the whole community; and peace follows the wars, privations and contentions that have troubled past generations.

If those who complain of low wages would look over the pages of history written by past generations, they would not only feel contented, but thank God that their lines had fallen to them in so pleasant places. As I cast my eyes upon the portraits of those long since passed away, who sacrificed so much to lay the foundations of religious and civil society, I cannot but feel to maintain and perpetuate these blessings.

GRADUATES OF COLLEGES.—This town compared with others about the same size in the county, has produced as many distinguished men as any. Little or no labor has been employed to bring their names and deeds to notice, and we feel that we shall fail to do them justice.

Rev. Daniel Wilkins, the first minister of Amherst, New Hampshire, was born here, (and the house is now standing in which he was born). His labors in that then frontier town are beyond calculation. Once or twice the people were about to abandon the settlement on account of the depredations of the Indians, but Wilkins with true courage, again and again rallied the people in calling on the government to sustain them, and finally lived to see the town in a flourishing condition, (grandson of Henry Wilkins).

Rev. Daniel Fuller born here was settled over the second church in Gloucester, Massachusetts, more than a century ago. His wife was a member of the church here in 1770.

When Phillips' academy was established a century ago, fourteen young men from this place entered, and their names stand upon this catalogue. All but one left town in early life to bless other places. Among this number was Andrew Peabody, born here, father of Rev. Andrew P. Peabody, LL. D., graduate of Harvard College, class of 1826, editor of the *North American Review* from 1853, to 1863; Plummer, professor of Christian morals. Also sons of Benjamin P. Richardson,—Hazen K. and Benjamin Richardson.

Margaret Fuller, the noted authoress, whose tenantless grave is now seen in Mount Auburn, (she

was lost at sea, having refused to be saved unless with her husband and child), sprang from this Fuller family we have so often mentioned.

The father of Dr. Andrew Peabody was born here, and many of this distinguished family of Peabody's are still among us. "Cornet" Francis Peabody and Col. Benjamin Peabody, afterwards chosen deacon, (and died since my remembrance), a leading man in the county who took an active part in the Revolutionary War. Other names deserve honorable mention, for which space cannot be had. But I would not forget the matrons and maidens of that early day, who spun and wove to clothe the family, but the skilled weavers went further, and made cloth for the market. These were the pioneers in manufacturing industries of the country. And the beautiful maidens who were not afraid of work. Hear what the poet says.

"Then as he opened the door, he beheld the form of the maiden
Seated beside her wheel, and the carded wool like snow-drift
Piled at her knee, her white hands feeding the ravenous spindle,
While with her foot on the treadle she guided the wheel in its motion.
She rose as he entered, and gave him her hand in a signal of welcome,
Saying, I knew it was you, when I heard your foot-step in the passage,
For I was thinking of you as I sat here singing and spinning."

Charles L. Flint, late Secretary of the State Board of Agriculture, and a large contributor to the Flint library was born here.

Honorable John Haskell Butler of Somerville, was in the state legislature, is a lawyer, and was born in Middleton, August 31st, 1841; a graduate at Yale College in 1863; in 1880 and 1881 was a member of the House of Representatives, and in 1884, was elected by the Legislature to fill a vacancy in the Council, caused by the death of Honorable Charles R. McLean of Boston. He was elected in the district at the ensuing election.

Benjamin Peters Hutchinson, now a Chicago grain dealer, estimated to be worth twelve million dollars, was born here in 1829.

Dean Peabody, lawyer, now Clerk of Courts in this county, was born here, his father having filled the office of deacon here for many years.

Franklin O. Stiles, graduate of Amherst College, class of 1856, died the same year.

Rev. Henry J. Richardson, graduate of Amherst College, now in his twenty-fifth year of pastorate at Lincoln, Massachusetts. Rev. Daniel W. Richardson, brother of the above graduate at Union College, New York, late pastor of the Congregational Church in Derry, New Hampshire.

Jesse Fuller, graduate of Amherst College, now residing in the west.

Rev. Jesse Wilkins now residing in Connecticut.

Rev. Solomon Adams, son of Rev. Solomon Adams, was born here; died in Boston a few years since.

Dr. Archelaus Fuller, a college graduate, son of Daniel Fuller, Esquire, died a few years since in the State of Maine, aged about eighty years.

Edwin Berry, son of Jonathan Berry, now a lawyer in New York city, was born here.



William Weston, son of Samuel W. Weston, graduated at Amherst College about 1868, and is now in the employ of the United States government.

Samner B. Stiles, born January 13th, 1851, graduated at Phillips Academy, Andover, Massachusetts, in 1872, at Harvard University in 1876, and at the Harvard Law school in 1881; admitted to the New York Bar, in May, 1883; married September 10th, 1884.

James H. Flint born 1852, graduated at Phillips Academy, Andover, Massachusetts, 1871, at Harvard University in 1876, at Boston University Law School in 1881, admitted to Suffolk Bar, Boston in 1882.

Andrew Preston Averill, a graduate of Harvard College class of 1882.

SCHOLARS AT PHILLIPS ACADEMY.—The following is a list of the first scholars at Phillips Academy, Andover:

1778. Benjamin Fuller, aged twelve years. Died in Norway, Maine, son of Archelaus; Elias Smith, aged twelve, son of the minister Smith.

1779. Andrew Fuller, aged thirteen.

1780. Samuel Symonds, aged twenty-four, son of the deacon; David Putnam, aged ten.

1785. Daniel Fuller, aged fourteen, son of Archelaus; Silas Merriam, aged fifteen, son of Dr. Silas, died in Norway, Maine, at a great age.

1786. John Lamon, aged twenty, moved to and married in Danvers, Mass.

1790. Andrew Peabody, aged sixteen, father of Dr. Andrew P. Peabody, of Harvard College.

1791. Benjamin Smith, aged fourteen, son of the minister.

1792. Simon Kenney, aged twenty-five, moved to Milford, N. H.

1795. Israel Fuller, aged seventeen, son of Timothy.

1812. Solomon Adams, aged fifteen, son of the minister.

1820. William Johnson Curtis Kenney, aged eleven, now superintendent of the freights on the Boston and Maine Railroad.

This list might be continued up to the present time, but space is not allowed.

POST-OFFICE.—It is now only a little more than fifty years since a post-office was kept in this town. Now we receive and discharge two mails per day. When Abraham wished to send a message to Lot he put a man upon a running horse and it was conveyed with a speed of twelve miles an hour, and since the writer's remembrance we could do no better than that; and this mode of sending letters was the only way practiced by the early settlers of New England. At a later day stage routes carried the mail bags to the principal cities and towns, for which they received large pay, while the small out of the way towns had no post-offices, and this town was one of them. As a sample, while in Hallowell, Me., in 1834, we sent a letter to Middleton; after a week or two it was found

in the South Danvers (now Peabody) post-office, and the one who took it out paid twenty-five cents postage; another from the same place arrived at Danvers Plains, and some one informed the one to whom it was directed that a letter in one of the grocery stores was waiting for him. The postage on that letter was eighteen cents.

It seems that all the improvements for two thousand years have been crowded into the last half century.

In the late rebellion, this town did more than its full share, more than one-tenth part of the whole population (one hundred and four) enlisted in the army for a longer or shorter time, and fifteen of their number either fell in battle or died of disease contracted in the war.

Justin Flint, died of disease; Henry A. Smith, died of disease; Joseph M. Richardson, died of disease; Lemuel F. Esty, died of disease; George W. Peabody, died of disease; Asa W. Brooks, killed in skirmish near Richmond; George S. Esty, died of disease; Charles Manning, killed in battle at White Hall, N. C.; Joseph A. Guilford, killed in battle at Fredericksburg, Va.; Jeremiah Peabody, died of disease; Charles H. Guilford, killed in battle of Gettysburg; Solomon Richardson 2d, killed in battle in front of Petersburg, Va.; George J. Danforth, died at Andersonville Prison; Abishai A. Higgins, died at Andersonville Prison; Samuel O. Wilkins, died at Andersonville Prison. And many others returned with disease, and were soon laid in a soldier's grave like their fallen comrades. Others still now linger among us, unable by reason of impaired health (due to exposure in the war) to enjoy the blessings their labors have helped to purchase.

PUBLIC-HOUSES AND STORES.—The old tavern stand was purchased from a man by the name of Goodale by John Estey, about 1760; how long this Goodale had been in possession is not known; but eighty years previously was in possession of Aaron Way, and bought by him of Bray Wilkins, Sr. Estey was proprietor till 1816, when his son-in-law, Daniel Fuller, with others, bought him out and sold about 1821, to Capt. Joseph Batchelder, of Topsfield (grandfather of our postmaster, Joseph A. Batchelder, Esq.), who subsequently let it, among whom was William Goodhue; afterwards Mr. Batchelder's son Joseph was proprietor for a few years, and then his son Amos, and since his death it has ceased to be a public house.

After Mr. Estey sold out, his son William erected across the way what is now the Fuller house, which was used as tavern and store for a few years only, and, subsequently, this place was purchased by Ephraim Fuller, who lived in it for many years and kept a store in a building, now standing south of the house where now a little store is kept.

1795.—About this time, a tavern was kept in an old house taken down some years ago by Samuel F. Estey, a little south of his present dwelling. This



was then owned by John Stiles, who also kept a little store across the way under the hill, the foundation of which is now seen.

Francis Peabody kept a few groceries in the house, now occupied by Mr. Witham, in the east part of the town; this was a century ago.

Daniel Fuller, Esq., when a young man (nearly a century ago) kept a little store in his mother's house, or rather the lean-to, now occupied by his daughter, Sophronia Fuller.

1780.—Dr. Silas Merriam, about the same time, kept groceries for sale, as well as corn-meal and rye, and run the grist-mill the year round to accommodate the people, so say the town records as they gave him liberty to put on flash boards for this purpose.

1821.—Mr. Daniel Richardson built a grocery-store, and continued in the business about twelve years. This building is now standing and is a part of the dwelling-house of the writer.

1838.—Capt. Stephen Wilkins, Amos Batchelder and Francis P. Merriam & Co. kept groceries for sale in the Ephraim Fuller store, but only a few years.

1845.—Daniel Emerson and Hiram Moore carried on the store business in a building, since burned, that stood on the site of the present Merriam & Tyler's shoe-factory.

1848.—Elisha Wilkins bought out the above store, and it took fire and consumed the following year.

1850.—A large store and shoe-factory was run by F. P. and James N. Merriam for several years, and then sold to W. A. Merriam, who continued the grocery-store. The building was enlarged, and the previous firm of Merriam & Co. continued the shoe business exclusively, which was nearly the first shoe-factory in town, and subsequently W. A. Merriam moved to the new building which was erected by Joseph and John A. Batchelder for a grocery and shoe manufactory (and occupied by them for a short time), and continued the general store business for about twenty-five years, and then sold to M. E. Tyler, who soon after sold out to Capt. Thomas Hoyt and John Beckford. Beckford soon died, and the business was continued by Hoyt for some years, and for the last eight years the building has stood unoccupied.

After selling out to Hoyt & Co., M. E. Tyler erected a new building at East Middleton, and continued the grocery business there a few years, and subsequently turned the building into a dwelling-house, and put up another store building near the old grist-mill in the village (which building has recently been moved to near the parsonage), and built a little store near his present stable, and continues both the store business and livery stable.

1856.—Henry Wilkins and Ruel Phelps carried on the shoe business and grocery store in the same building, now occupied by Wilkins & Sons.

1812.—A store was kept by John Fuller, Jr., located on the site of the carriage house of the late Daniel Richardson. A dance hall in the upper story,

and in 1812 a school was kept for a short time by the Rev. Jacob Hood in this hall. (Mr. Hood died a year since, aged ninety-four years.) This building was moved across the way about 1820, and was used for a dwelling-house. The last owner was Richard Green, and the house was burned about 1872.

Some fifteen or twenty years since there were several small manufactories of shoes here. Edward and A. A. Averill, near the town hall; Wm. H. Hutchinson, in the village; and Augustus Hutchinson, near Howe Station.

In the early days there were no butchers in town; each farmer killed and salted his own meat, and when fresh meat was wanted a neighbor killed and lent it around, to be paid for in the same way. The first butcher to set up here was Abraham Sheldon, about 1830; and six years subsequently he carried on a larger business and extending into other towns. He had several good double teams and a large number of men employed. He owned the farm now owned by Jesse W. Peabody, and built the large barn now on the place. Subsequently J. Augustus Estey carried on the business in the same place. Since, the business has been carried on by Jesse F. Hayward and A. W. Peabody.

CEMETERY.—The land was bought and laid out by the town about 1858, at which time several lots were sold.

Subsequently the remains from many of the old burying-lots in town were removed to the new cemetery, and stone monuments erected or the old stones reset. There are yet known to be not less than forty-five old family burying-lots in town, many of which are indistinguishable, being hid in the forests and jungles. Among these now unknown graves must be those who when alive, were the leading men in our early history.

PUBLIC LIBRARIES.—A social library was formed here in 1772 (just forty years after the first library in the city of Philadelphia). The Constitution was drawn up by Rev. Elias Smith, and contained twenty-two articles. The officers were chosen annually and the committee were required to meet once a quarter. Library to be kept within a mile of the meeting-house. No book to be kept out more than three months, after which time a fine was imposed. The library at first contained seventy-one volumes; some of these were given. These volumes were mostly sermons of old divines, Morse's Geography, History of South America and other histories, Mason on "Self-knowledge and Family Instruction," etc. Elias Smith, librarian; Archelaus Fuller, Silas Merriam and Elias Smith, committee. Admission fee, six dollars, according to the value of money of that day. Proprietors could sell or give away their right, but all were, if able, required to be present at the annual meeting, or not allowed to take out a book for three months. All through the years from 1772 to 1826 this library was run with remarkable success.



The last records were made by Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard, who left town two years subsequently, and the library was put into the hands of Daniel Fuller, Esq., and a few years ago handed over to the Flint Library. A few of these old volumes are still well preserved.

In 1838 Dr. E. S. Phelps started a social library organization with forty six members and eighty-four volumes of books, which had only a short run, as but little interest was taken in it.

In 1865 an association was formed, of which John M. Peabody was president. Three dollars was required to become a member, and one dollar annually. This gained in importance till 1879, when it was given to the town and valued at upwards of one thousand dollars, at which time Charles L. Flint made a donation of about one thousand dollars and four hundred volumes of books, and the library was made free and called the Flint Library. Since that time Mr. Flint has made other donations, aggregating more than fifteen hundred dollars. Many other individuals have contributed valuable volumes to this library, which is now in a very prosperous condition, and numbers three thousand one hundred and thirty-seven volumes, and supported by the town. By the will of Benjamin Franklin Emerson, who died in Boston April 5, 1887, the Flint Library receives the interest of ten thousand dollars after the decease of his mother. This sum is to remain in a fund to be called the B. F. Emerson Trust Fund, with six trustees. Mr. Emerson was the son of Stephen and Sarah Emerson, born in this town, received his early education here, and subsequently in Oxford and Townsend (Vt.), academies. For fifteen years he was superintendent of the Copper Falls Mining Company, Mich. His death was caused by falling from a coal bridge while giving directions for extinguishing a forest fire that was fast approaching their quarters. In this fall he received a fracture of the spine, after which he lived seven months, some of the time in terrible agony. His age was forty-nine, unmarried and highly esteemed by all who knew him.

N. B. Since writing the above, Mrs. Emerson, the mother, has died.

SCHOOLS.—A century ago there was but one school-house owned by the town, and that stood by the church, and was moved to Danvers in 1810 by John Fuller. Subsequently the town owned three, and they were located at the east side, on the north road and in the centre, or present village. For a short time private enterprise maintained, in part, a school at the Paper Mill Village. This same state of things prevailed before the three districts were set off as before mentioned, at which time the east side of the town was the most thickly settled, and the school there and at the North District had double the scholars of the present day. The manufacturing of shoes at the village and the accommodation of the railroad, stores, churches and a higher grade of teaching in the schools had caused many to abandon the farm and

move to the village; and the people have spent their money freely to make these schools at the centre what they should be, while the others have not been neglected, and the advantages to gain an education here are as good as in any town in the county of the same size.

The following are the physicians of the town, with the date of their practicing as near as can be ascertained: Dr. Daniel Felch, 1728; Dr. Silas Merriam¹ came from Lexington, Mass. (his birth-place still standing in that town), about 1759; Dr. David Fuller, an old resident, 1815; Dr. Smith, 1816; Dr. Wallis, 1818; Dr. Ezra Nichols came here about 1830, left about 1837; Dr. E. S. Phelps came here about 1837, died 1882; Dr. Odlin, 1870; Dr. Metcalf, 1874; Dr. Knight, 1880; Dr. Henry T. Batchelder came here 1884.

The following are a few persons known to have held the office of Justice of the Peace: Captain Ephraim Fuller, 1777; Asa Howe, 1815; Daniel Fuller, 1825; Ezra Nichols, 1835; E. S. Phelps, 1850; W. A. Phelps, 1880; Joseph A. Batchelder, 1880.

The following are the blacksmiths, with date and place of location: Thomas Fuller, shop between Pierce's Brook and the tomb, 1663; Joshua Wright, shop on the street just north of Grothe's shop, 1760; Kenney and his brother's shop on the John B. King farm, 1780; Asa Stiles, shop on west side of the road at Upton place, moved to New Hampshire 1785; Eben Putnam, grandfather of Mrs. Henry Wilkins, his shop on the corner by the house of Mr. Augustus Hutchinson, 1790; Theodore Ingalls, shop at Ingalls' place, 1798; Silas Lake, of Topsfield, shop at shoe factory corner, 1824; Hammond Berry, from North Andover (same shop as the latter), 1825; Moody Ingalls, son of the above T. Ingalls, shop moved down to front of Captain Hoyt's house 1829, and subsequently sold to Timothy Sanders, who left town 1833; John Richardson, shop in the Bush Corner (so called), 1820; George W. Winslow, shop as above stated, 1834; David Stiles, shop of the above, 1835; George Webb, shop now the house of Mrs. Timothy Wilkins, 1837; Cushing, the same shop, 1839; followed by Whitney, Shaugnessy and Grothe, 1875.

ROADS.—The oldest road entered town over the hill by the Allen Porter place, thence near William Peabody's and Nichols' house to the corner east of Box factory, thence to the corner, as the road now traveled, below Samuel H. Wilkins', and so on to North Andover, by Asa Howe's. This road is supposed to have been traveled by Richard Bellingham, Esq., and the first settlers on the Cochichawicke (Andover) in 1639; some writers put it five years earlier.

The next road through town is the old north road, as now traveled till it came to the sunken hole called the long causeway, then it diverged, part of the travel

¹ Dr. Silas Merriam was born in Lexington, Mass., and the house in which he was born is still standing. He came to this town about 1759, died suddenly in 1812.



going to the left, by what is called Black Pole, coming out at the Roger Elliott place, thence across the road and by John B. King's to the Indian Bridge; the other to the right, going by Emerson's Mill and across Andover road towards the great pond, and coming out by the William Berry place. In 1802 this road was straightened above William Berry's place, and not till 1808 was the long crossway made perfectly safe for travel. As the country began to be settled further in the interior the South Andover road (so-called) was opened, and settlements along its route made. The Essex turnpike in 1806. It may be well to state that the west branch of the old North road, in its earliest travel, passed the present village to the house of Benjamin P. Richardson, where it turned a short angle to the left and forded Ipswich River, coming out at J. J. H. Gregory's Seed Farm, and thence over the hills, on nearly a straight line, by Mr. Gregory's two other farms, to the road first mentioned by the Allen Porter place. This old ford-way and the entire route is now visible.

The road from the village to Danvers Plains was widened and straightened in 1811, and took most of the travel to Salem; before this time the most traveled was by the old log bridge and Danvers Centre, and strike the great traveled at Felton's corner and avoid the toll gate on the turnpike just over Ipswich River.

The first town road was laid out, beginning at the Symonds' place and Averill's, thence across Beech Brook at Wilkins' mill and knife factory, coming out by the house of John Gage. The Paper Mill road is much older than the town, and was used by the first settlers. No records are anywhere to be found of its being laid out. Probably it went through the common lands, and for its commerce, no one cared to disturb the public title.

A town way was laid out in 1744 for Joseph Foy, then living in Charles Mason's house across the woods to come out on the Andover road by ye saw-mill lately erected. This mill was near the Dempsey place. Subsequently a road was laid out through the land of Ezekiel Stiles to the old highway to North Andover, by Asa Howe's. Many such cart ways were laid out by the early settlers to shorten distance from house to house, all the roads being mere cart paths.

The Paper Mill road to North Reading, as now traveled is much older than the incorporation of the town.

The Essex Railroad was opened September 5, 1848.

MILLS.—There has been but one mill on Ipswich River, though it runs nearly the length of the town, and that is where the paper-mill now stands, and for several generations a saw and grist-mill was owned by the Flint family, and must date back further than the mills at North Reading, as the latter were obliged to hoist their gate when short of water at the former. A mill once stood near the wood-

shed of Mr. Sylvanus Flint's. On the stream from Middleton Pond two mills were erected, one owned by Silas Merriam and the other a little below the Abijah Fuller place, owned by Timothy Fuller. Dr. Merriam's was a grist-mill, and highly valued by the towns people to purchase grain for food, and about 1770 the town voted that "Dr. Merriam be allowed to put on flash boards and raise the pond three feet that he might be able to grind throughout the year to accommodate ye people."

M. J. Emerson's mill stands on Swan Pond Brook and the privilege is an old one and formerly belonged to John Estey, and subsequently to his son-in-law, Daniel Fuller, Esq. On the same stream was the Nichols grist-mill, and last owned by Stephen Nichols in 1820, and soon after taken down. On the same stream a little below stood the ancient iron-works owned by Major Daniel Dennison, of Ipswich, of which Thomas Fuller was foreman and subsequently owner.

A saw-mill was erected in 1740, on a little stream that empties into Beech Brook near the Dempsey place, owned by Timothy Perkins, who lived on G. H. Tuft's place.

Only one mill on Beech Brook, and that on the site of E. W. Wilkins' mill, and was owned by a Peabody family; here more than a century ago two brothers quarrelled and one lost his life; the survivor said he threw him a crow-bar which his brother failed to catch, and it struck him in the head and killed him; they were alone, but soon it is said that the women folks appeared upon the scene, but too late; they feared there would be trouble between them; tradition says the survivor hastened to the brook and filled his hat with water and threw in his brother's face, but without effect.

A man by the name of Gray set up a carding-mill about 1810, near Dr. Merriam's grist-mill, but other mills in larger places, with better machinery, took the business. Mrs. Sarah Conlan's house was formerly a saw-mill which had been moved from Bald Hill woods.

EARTHQUAKES.—On June 1, 1638, about two o'clock P. M., was an earthquake throughout New England, which caused the pewter in many places to be thrown off the shelves, and tops of chimneys in some places to be shaken down.

Sabbath day, October 29, 1727, a little more than half past ten o'clock in the evening, the first and great shock was felt, when the heavens were most serene and the atmosphere perfectly calm, and it was repeated several times that night, and afterwards to January 6th, next following, when about two o'clock in the afternoon there was a very great shock, which exceeded any other since the first night. This day was warm and calm. This has been denominated the great earthquake in New England. The tops of many chimneys were thrown down.

On November 18, 1755, was another great earth-



quake, doing much damage to property. On March 12, 1761, between the hours of two and three P. M., there was a slight shock. On Sabbath, March 1, 1801, about half past three o'clock, P. M., was a slight shock, resembling a coach passing over frozen ground. (Gage's "History of Rowley.")

The dark day took place May 19, 1780, accounted for by a peculiar state of the atmosphere and passing clouds.

The rude appliances for the performance of female labor in generations past severely taxed their energies and patience, yet their loveliness still remained to bless their households and hand down to us the fruits of virtuous lives.

"From the early history of New England up to within a little more than half a century, the wearing apparel for the family was manufactured by the females. The daughters were early taught to run the spinning wheel, and as years and strength increased mounted the loom and drove the cloth together with the great swinging beam; such exercise produced a muscular frame and was transmitted to their posterity. They enjoyed the labor and ate the fruit thereof with joy; nor were these active beings content only with household work and manufacturing, but were often seen in the field doing the most rugged work with a cheerfulness that made life all about them most pleasant; the gentle cow was still more gentle when the young maiden sat by her side."

All good farmers kept sheep sufficient to produce wool for clothing and bedding, raised beef, mutton and poultry, with plenty of grain for subsistence. The cordwainer once a year came round with his bench and tools, sat down in the kitchen, took the measure of the feet of not only the little ones but the stalwart sons and daughters, and made shoes which were supposed to last from November to November, from leather either tanned from the hides of their own cattle or purchased from the leather store, and should they not last a whole year, even the great girls often went barefoot till the time when the shoemaker again appeared on his yearly rounds. The sandy floor of that day was no friend to shoe leather, but many a maiden had rather go barefoot a part of the year than to lose the chance of a good dance now and then.

PEOPLE OF COLOR.—A few wealthy farmers owned servants, of which Timothy Fuller, Sr., had the largest number (about forty); other families, numbering perhaps half a dozen, had from one to five each, all of which were liberated when the State Constitution was adopted, a little more than a century ago.

By a vote of the town, the second seat on the east gallery was set apart for the colored people. This was a long seat that would accommodate perhaps ten or twelve persons. The last of this old stock of colored people, by the name of Snow, lived in a hut on the spot now occupied by the house of Isaac Gates.

It was no unusual occurrence seventy years ago to see an Indian tramp on the road, begging bread in

broken English language, and presenting by no means a pleasant appearance.

BURIAL GROUNDS.—The oldest in town is near the box-factory of J. B. Thomas, which was a part of Rowley Village (now Boxford), and contains the remains of those who lived beyond the Ipswich River. The latter town was incorporated fully forty-three years before Middleton. The one known as the "Granny Tim's," named from Timothy Fuller's widow, is near the centre of the town, and contains the remains of many of this ancient family, and also of the first minister—Rev. Andrew Peters. There are forty-five places where the dead have been deposited, at least. Almost every old farm has its burying-ground. About 1860 the present cemetery was laid out, and very few are now buried elsewhere. The tomb near the residence of Charles O. Frost was built a little more than a century ago by Rev. Elias Smith and his son-in-law, Joseph Peabody, of Salem, who married two of Smith's daughters, both of whom were interred in this tomb. This tomb also contains the remains of Rev. Mr. Smith, Rev. Solomon Adams and several others. This tomb was finally closed about fifteen years since.

These partial genealogies are inserted to give the different names of families who have resided in this town. A full genealogy of a single family would fill a larger volume than we have now written.

AVERILL.—Of the Averill family there appears to have been two brothers—Paul and Samuel. Paul had a family of eight children, and was the ancestor of the family by that name now living in town. His oldest child was born in 1738, and the oldest child of Samuel was born about the same time, and his children numbered seven, and we think that this family soon left town. Joseph, born 1757 (son of Paul); Benjamin, born 1781; Hannah, 1808. This family doubtless settled here about the time the town was incorporated, while the Wilkins and Fuller family were here sixty-eight years before that date. The Averill family does not appear to be so numerous as many others found on the town records.

ADAMS.—Rev. Solomon Adams and Abigail, his wife, had six children; the oldest was born in the year 1795.

BERRY.—Joseph Berry and Sarah, his wife, had eight children. His oldest son, John, was born in 1721; Bartholomew, born 1734, whose daughter Betty married Oliver Perkins 1796. Samuel Berry appears to have been a brother of this Joseph, as his oldest daughter was born in 1721, whose children numbered eight, and among them was Nathaniel, who was the grandfather of the late Deacon Allen Berry. Who their father was is not known, but Joseph names his oldest son John, and perhaps was named for his grandfather John, who was the first deacon chosen when the church was formed eight years after. Bartholomew Berry lived in a house now standing on the turnpike, near Andover line, now owned by



Mr. Charles Mason. This house was built by Joseph Fey in 1742, and sold to Joseph Berry in 1750.

NEHEMIAH BERRY, son of Bartholomew, was drowned March 5, 1811, by falling from a stringer (the bridge being gone) on going in the night across Beech Brook, just above the mill-pond of Wilkins' saw-mill, and near the James Wilkins' house. Mr. Berry's son Nehemiah, a well-known citizen of Lynn, Mass., died there two years since, eighty-four years of age, and of his children was A. Hun Berry, late of the Governor's staff.

BURTON.—John Burton lived in the east part of the town, on the side of the large hill near Topsfield line, and a little west of Conant's house in that town. This family were here when the town was incorporated, but left for New Hampshire about 1750. The late Rev. Warren Burton, chaplain of the Senate, was a descendant. One of the family is referred to in another part of this history as filling an important position at the time of the Revolutionary War from New Hampshire.

BATCHELDER.—Captain Joseph Batchelder, of Topsfield, bought the old tavern-stand here about 1824, which was subsequently owned by his son, Colonel Amos, father of Joseph A. Batchelder, Esq., who for many years has been postmaster here, and continues to occupy the old tavern house.

CARROLL.—CROWE.—John and James Carroll, brothers, as we suppose, were here before the incorporation of the town, both of whom had families. The last was born in 1745, and all records of them cease. Also about the same time John Crowe and his wife Mary had three children. The parents were members of the church here, and that is all we know of the family.

CUMMINGS.—John Cummings, and Mary, his wife, had eight children; the oldest was born in 1717. His son, John Cummings, Jr., had a small family, but all the family left town before 1740.

CURTIS.—Israel Curtis, and Abigail, his wife, eight children, the oldest born in 1744; some of their descendants are still living here.

COD.—William Cod, and Abigail, his wife, had two children, date, 1743 and 1745, a name long forgotten.

CASE.—Humphrey Case (he was born November 17, 1753), and his wife, Elizabeth, had five children; the first was born in 1781, and named Elijah, and was with Nehemiah Berry when he was drowned, near Wilkins Mill, before named, but was unable to save him. (Case married Berry's sister.)

CRISPAN.—Richard Crispan, and Seviah, his wife, had four children; the last was born in 1809. He moved to Derry, N. H., more than fifty years since. John W. Dempsey is a grandson (now of this town).

CRANE.—The Crane family lived here in 1834, and run the paper-mill.

DWINEL.—In 1786 Jonathan Dwinel had three children, and subsequently William Dwinel, having four children, in 1818 to 1823.

DEMSEY.—Samuel Demsey and his wife had five children, of whom John Wyman Demsey is now in town.

DANIELS.—Lucy Daniels had six children from 1820 to 1832. Her father was a Frenchman, and taken by Washington in time of war, and never returned to his country.

DALE.—Osgood Dale, and Susannah, his wife, had two children, 1831 and 1832.

ESTEY.—Jonathan Estey was the son of John Estey, who was the son of Isaac, whose wife, Mary, was hung for witchcraft, in 1692. This John came here from Topsfield, a few years after the execution of his mother. The blood of the family has been quite generally diffused throughout this town, and they are well known as a long-lived race. The larger part of the family moved to Framingham after the execution of the wife and mother, hoping they had escaped the laws of Massachusetts, but subsequently found that they were still in the hated State; but they had cleared away too many fields to take up stakes again, and have remained, some of them, there to the present day. (This also has been referred to elsewhere).

ELLIOTT.—Francis Elliott was one of the original purchasers of land here, and the birth of his eldest son dates 1717, and though the name does not appear now upon our town records, yet the blood of the family is still here; the family was once quite numerous.

Stephen Emerson, father of Stephen, Daniel, and Darius, and others, seven in all, died many years ago; a grandson now owns the saw-mill above the present village. Stephen, Jr., died some two years since, aged seventy-five years.

The Fuller family have always been quite numerous here, and among the leading people in town, and it would be quite interesting to trace them down to 1663.

FELTON.—Amos Felton and Sarah, his wife, had eight children from 1790 to 1804. Felton lived on the old Samuel Gould farm, now owned by Mr. Gregory.

FULLER.—In the early history of this town this family were quite numerous, and held important trusts in society. All of this name in town can be traced to Thomas Fuller, who was the second man to settle in this village. The Abijah Fuller family sprang from a son or grandson of Thomas, named Joseph, and the family of Daniel Fuller sprang from Benjamin, grandfather of Daniel Fuller, Esq.

FLINT.—Stephen Flint and Hannah, his wife, had five children, the youngest of whom was Hannah, born in 1727, married John Estey about 1773, whose family of ten children averaged eighty-three years of age. This Flint family were first known in Salem Village; the original one known there built the first church at Salem Village, and of his descendants several large families were residents here in our



early history, of whom quite a number still live in the neighborhood of the paper-mill, where Charles L. Flint, late secretary of the State Board of Agriculture was born.

FAIRFIELD.—Moses Fairfield married Polly Russell, had ten children, married about 1828 or '29. He and his wife died some years since in Kansas.

FRANCIS.—Charles Francis (a man of color) and his wife, Betsy, had ten children, the youngest of whom was Edmund, who was born in 1811; he wore a fourteen size shoe, and is remembered by some now living. All the family have passed away.

EAMES.—John Eames, 1820, had three children to 1826; moved away.

FISH.—Levi Fish married Nancy Wilkins, had two children born in 1839 and 1840; moved to Danvers.

GOODEL.—Thomas Goodel and Hannah, his wife, had one child born here (Joseph) in 1745.

GAGE.—Abraham Gage and Mary, his wife, had four children; oldest born 1767.

GIDDINGS.—Zaccheus Giddings and his wife, Hannah, had ten children; oldest born in 1783. He built the red house, so called, near the cemetery.

GRAY.—William Gray and his wife, Sarah, had five children; oldest born 1791. He built a carding-mill near the Merriam grist-mill. A son of this man came here in 1845, and erected stones at his parents' graves in the Fuller lot.

GOULD.—Nathaniel Gould and Lydia, his wife, had three children, oldest born 1796, one of whom was Henry Lawrence Gould, born in 1798. The home of this family was on Bear Hill, now owned by Mr. Gregory.

Andrew Gould and Pamela, his wife had seven children, one of whom was born 1805, and is now living in Topsfield, viz., Andrew Gould, now eighty-two years of age, and is yet quite a smart man. Two other families by the name have lived in this place since this Nathaniel's day, supposed to be distant connections.

GOULDTHWAIT.—Benjamin Gouldthwait and Lucy, his wife, had three children—date of the birth of the oldest 1821—none of the family now are in town.

GOODHUE.—HADLOCK.—William Goodhue and Sally, his wife, had one child born here 1829; none by this name are here now. Samuel Hadlock and Prudence, his wife, had one child born 1781.

HOBBS.—Joseph, Benjamin, William and Humphrey Hobbs had respectively four, four, seven and four children, all born from 1735 to 1750. William built the house now standing, owned by John Wallis Peabody. They were probably brothers; all the family left more than a century ago.

HOWE.—The Howe family sprang from James Howe, of Ipswich, Mass. He married Elizabeth Dane, 1637; John Howe (1st), John Howe (2d) and Mary, his wife, (the oldest child born 1737,) seven in all; Joseph Howe and Sarah, his wife, had also seven children about the same ages, and must have been a

brother; also Mark Howe and Dorothy, his wife, had eleven children, and all born from 1732 to 1756. From this family we have those of that name now in town. These families lived in the north part of the town, house of Mark, now standing. Joseph and Hannah Hutchinson had five children from 1747-57.

HOPPIN.—John Hoppin and Abigail, his wife, one son, John, born in 1797.

HUTCHINSON.—Joseph and Hannah, his wife, had four children, the oldest born in 1781. This family lived in a house now standing in the south part of the town, and came from Danvers Centre. The well-known singers by that name, the sons and daughters of "Jesse" sprang from this family.

HOLT.—Timothy Holt and his wife had one child 1804. Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard and Charlotte, his wife, had four children,—Charles Augustus Peabody, born 1818; William McKean, 1820; Catharine Elizabeth, 1823; Ebenezer Augustus, 1825.

HASKEL.—Daniel Haskel and his wife had two children born here in 1824 and 1826.

HAYWARD.—Octavius Hayward and his wife had two children born here in 1831 and 1833.

IRONSON.—John Ironson and Tabitha had two children, 1767 and 1769; same name by wife Sarah, seven children from 1790 to 1800.

INGALLS.—Edman Ingalls was born in 1627, and died 1719, aged ninety-two years. He was a tanner by trade. His son Henry Ingalls, of Lynn, moved to Andover in 1653, married Mary Osgood, and in 1689 married again, the widow of George Abbot, and died at the age of eighty-three. (These wives were Andover women.) His descendants owned a large tract of land in the neighborhood of the Farnham District, and not far from the residence of the late Jonathan Ingalls, whose brother, Theodore Ingalls, commenced blacksmithing at this place, Middleton, and continued business here till his death about 1814. In the early days of manufacturing edged tools Mr. Ingalls stood very high; his axes were sent to Maine to cut down those great forests; his scythes also were very good, though clumsy, compared with those made at the present time. The writer's father well remembered these scythes. Mr. Ingalls also made hoes and shovels, etc., and these tools were made in a common blacksmith-shop which stood on the north side of the long crossway.

This Theodore Ingalls was the grandfather of Senator John James Ingalls. He was married three times. His first wife was a Berry, by whom he had two sons, and subsequently married two sisters of Deacon Addison Flint, of North Reading, the latter of which was the grandmother of the Senator.

The home of the Ingalls family was Lynn, from whence they scattered over the land, some remaining still in Lynn. In early history they were tanners, and a few years since an old tan vat (in Lynn) was unearthed, belonging to them, containing a few hides, which were still somewhat preserved.



JEFFERDS.—Rev. Forrest Jefferts and Sarah Caroline had eight children from 1828 to 1839.

Jonathan Knight, and **Phœbe**, his wife, had seven children from 1751 to 1777. But **Benjamin Knight**, and his wife, **Ruth**, appear to have been here before the act of incorporation; we find him with a family of seven children born from 1720 to 1734. Though the name has passed from our books, yet some of their descendants remain.

KENNEY.—The Kenney family date 1735. They lived on the left bank of Ipswich River, known now as the King place. The family of **Simeon** numbered nine from 1767 to 1789. Moved to Milford, N. H.

MERRIAM.—Dr. **Silas Merriam**, by his first wife, who was a **Deal**, or **Dale**, had four children from 1767 to 1772; and by his wife **Peabody**, sister of **Capt. Joseph**, the millionaire of **Salem**, eight children, born from 1776 to 1790. The Merriam house is still standing.

MCINTIRE.—The McIntire or Mackintire family lived in the northwest part of the town. **Benjamin** and his wife, **Experience**, had three children born from 1751 to 1755.

MOORE.—**Thomas Moore** and **Betsy**, one son, born here, **Hiram**, 1811.

NICHOLS.—**William Nichols** and **Elizabeth** had four children, from 1704 to 1714. The origin of the Nichols family dates from this **William** or his father of the same name, who settled in the east part of the town, near **Nichols' Brook**, as early as 1652, then known as **New Meadows**, **Topsfield**; none of this family now in town.

PERKINS.—**Timothy Perkins** and **Phebe**, his wife, had five children, from 1744 to 1754. This man lived on the **Tufts place**, where the house still stands, one of the oldest in town. **Timothy, Jr.**, had ten children, from 1760 to 1782; the family not numerous here.

PUTNAM.—**Ezra** and **Lucy** had six children from 1751 to 1757; lived in the southeast part of the town.

PERRY.—**Jonathan Perry** and **Mehitable** three children, from 1836 to 1840.

PEABODY.—This family has always remained one of the largest since the town was incorporated.

Francis Peabody, of **St. Albans**, **Hertfordshire**, **England**, born 1614, who came to **New England** 1635, and traced as follows: from his second son, **Joseph**, born 1644; **Samuel**, born 1678; **Moses**, born 1708; **Samuel**, born 1741; **Joseph**, born Aug. 3, 1770; the last named was the **deacon** here for some years, and father of **Samuel J. Flint**, **Ann**, **Joseph** and **Dean**, the latter now clerk of court.

All the others bearing the name of **Peabody** in this town can be traced to the first named **Francis**.

The original name was **Boadie**, who made a raid upon the tyrant emperor **Nero**, of **Rome**, in the year of our Lord 61, in defence of the **Queen of the Britons**, who had been publicly whipped before her grown up daughters, by the order of this noted ruler, and for this exploit and others of like character the **Pea**, which

means the big hill, or mountain, was added, "**Big man**, or **mountain man**—**Peabodie**." In the expedition named above **Boadie** entered the emperor's palace and carried away a miniature picture of **Nero's** wife, which was retained in the family till the eleventh century.

ROBINSON.—**Daniel Robinson** and **Elizabeth** had six children born from 1730 to 1747.

ROLF.—The families of **Daniel** and **Jesse Rolf** had respectively one and two children from 1726 to 1756.

RICHARDSON.—**Solomon Richardson** and **Elizabeth** had three children from 1730 to 1735. The Richardson family have lived mostly in the southeast part of the town. Several of them had large families.

RUSSELL.—**Joseph Russell** and **Mary**, his wife, had thirteen children born from 1793 to 1821, one of whom was **David**, born in 1795, late of **Amherst**, **N. H.**

RAY.—**Fry Ray** and **Mary** had four children from 1801 to 1810.

STILES.—The Stiles family came from **Rowley Village (Boxford)** in 1700; commenced settlement in the north part of the town on land now owned by **John Brown**. The cellar of the house is now seen across the meadows east of the **Demsey place**.

SYMONDS.—First settled in **Boxford**, subsequently near the box factory in this town (then a part of **Boxford**). There were several families from first settlements till the commencement of the present century.

SMITH.—Rev. **Elias Smith** and **Catharine**, his wife, had nine children from 1760 to 1777.

SMITH.—**Aaron Smith** and **Mary** had eight children from 1766 to 1781.

STEARNS.—**Samuel Stearns** and **Dorothy**, his wife, had fourteen children from 1739 to 1757; moved to **Salem**, **Mass.**

SAUNDERS.—**Timothy Saunders** and **Rhoda**, his wife, had two children from 1831 to 1832.

SHELDEN.—**Herman Shelden** and **Angeline**, his wife, had four children from 1836 to 1841.

TOWN.—**Daniel Town** and **Dorothy**, his wife, had eight children from 1722 to 1739; he lived in the east part of the town once belonging to **Topsfield**, and was chosen schoolmaster when the town was incorporated. He opposed the annexation to **Middleton**.

THOMAS.—**Rowland Thomas**, and **Margaret**, his wife, had eight children from 1708 to 1731.

TOWN.—**Richard Town**, and **Margery**, his wife, had three children from 1752 to 1756.

Lewis Tyler, and **Sally**, his wife, had three children from 1834 to 1837.

UPTON.—**Jeremiah Upton**, and **Elizabeth**, had six children from 1788 to 1804.

WILKINS.—This family has always flourished here from the first. The children of **Joseph** and **Margaret** date from 1710 to 1728. This man was doubtless a son of the original **Bray Wilkins**, whose pos-





Charles L. Fries



terity exceed in numbers any families found on our town books.

WOODMAN.—Moses Woodman, and Olive, his wife, one son, Moses, 1811.

WHITE.—Perley White, and Eliza, his wife, had three children from 1827 to 1836.

WRIGHT.—Hiram Wright, and Lydia, his wife, had five children from 1830 to 1838.

WINSLOW.—Washington W. Winslow and Phoebe Ann, his wife, two children from 1833 to 1835; since moved away.

WESTON.—Samuel W. Weston and Polly, his wife, four children from 1836 to 1842.

WAKEHAM.—Samuel G. Wakeham and Lucy, his wife, three children from 1837 to 1840.

"Trio," a negro servant to Jonathan Wilkins, and "Cute," servant to Benjamin Fuller, of Middleton, married by Rev. Peter Clarke (of Salem village), November 22, 1757.

The number of deaths since the first settlement, and that have been buried here, is estimated at about two thousand. The average for the last sixty-five years has been a little over eleven a year, or about seven hundred and fifty. During the last named period the death rate remained about the same, while the population nearly doubled.

CHIEF FROM ACCOUNT BOOK OF COL. BENJAMIN PEABODY.

"March 24, 1755.—Lost Brother Joseph have 12 lbs." (This Joseph was a carpenter the millwright of Salem, Mass.)

"Feb. 8, 1756.—Lost Joseph Wright took the Jack (mule we suppose)." (We suppose he was a millwright.)

"Aug. 17, 1758.—Archelus Kenney took a cow for a year at one pound."

"Aug. 20, 1758.—To two days' work at the sawmill, 8 shillings, 6 pence."

"1758.—To a cow for Mr. Robert Bradford 1 lb. 4 shillings."

"Nov. 24, 1758.—Making a coffin for Mr. Robert Bradford that day 6 shillings, 6 pence."

"Nov. 24.—To a quarter of tea & 2 lbs. sugar—Same day one shilling's worth of bread and two quarts Rum."

"Nov. 24 & 25, 1758.—To killed two cows and two hogs, three shillings, 6 pence."

"1758.—Bought 2 bushels Rice, gave 8 shillings."

"1758.—Bought one bushel corn, gave 6 shillings."

"1758.—Wright to mend plow share, one lb."

"1758.—To a cow for Mr. Robert Bradford, 1 lb."

"1758.—To two days to Salem after sheriff, did not find him; my two days lost shillings; expenses 6 pence. To one day setting glass in Meeting house and making O. H. Deberry's coffin."

"Joseph Symonds, Dr, to making Coffin 8 shillings; to putting in axle and wheels 4 shillings."

"1758.—Making small coffin 3 shillings; also his making cyder at my mill."

"Dr. Silas Merriam, Dr, a long account for work at the Dr. grist mill embracing almost every part of the machinery."

"Nov. 1758.—To sitting on arbitration three times and expenses 7 shillings & 6 pence."

"My oxen 4 hours & 1/2 8 pence."

"Silas Kenney to killing a lamb 3 pence."

"To putting log back to chimney 3 shillings."

"To putting nose to pump for Amos Felton 23 cts."

"Benedict Peabody, Dr, 1759. To half bushel apples and running four pence, one shilling 6 pence." (We find a long account against the town, some of the charges for important business. Through his influence the road between this village and Danvers' Plain was widened and straightened in 1811.)

"Oct. 28, 1759.—Mark Avrill borrowed my wheelbarrow, broke it home, one shilling."

Asa Howe to putting in 4 felloes & 4 spokes in cart wheel, 4 shillings."

"1797.—To a day shoeing oxen at Kimball's." (This was Moses Kimball; his shop was Howe road.)

"1797.—Collering chimney & other things 4s. 6p."

"Dec. 12th, 1809.—Laying hearth in his oven and plastering, one pound (account with David Peabody)."

"May 8th, 1800.—Archelus Kenney, Dr, to 24 spokes in cart wheel, 8 shillings."

"Feb. 20th, 1802.—To making coffin for Wd. Jerusha Nichols \$2.66 cts., also wrighting her will 66 cts."

"Oct. 17th, 1802.—Dr. John Merriam, Dr, to one and half days work on his barn 9 shillings; to a cannon (but we suppose) 6 shillings."

"1802.—Building stages round the meetinghouse for John Fuller \$1.50; Sept. 25th making coffin for his father \$3.75."

"1804.—Dr. Silas Merriam, three days on his new house, \$3.00; one day and half stoning cellar, \$1.50."

"1805.—Blooding and Roweling his horse, 33 cts. Aug. 19 & 20, going to see his cow that was shot, and another journey, & taking of her hide & my boys coming to Symonds for me \$1.00."

("This cow was accidentally shot by the Doctor's son Jonas, who was driving his father's cows on the pond road to pasture tradition says.)"

"May 10th, going to his pigg, 25 cts. Sick one, we suppose."

"Oct. 16, 1804.—Anne Jane and Martha Nickson came to board with me 13, the horse and cart to move their goods 50 cts. These children and their parents came from Ireland about this time in consequence of the Rebellion. Anne subsequently became the wife of Dr. Merriam's son, Andrew, and now their posterity, are among our most honored people."

"Dr. Merriam married Col. Benjamin Peabody's sister, whose daughter is now 102 years old, living in Danvers."

"1801.—Paid \$1.75 and cost in Mr. Capt. Thomas Cushens office to Mr. Appletons for the Salem Gazette and discontinued the paper."

This most wonderful old account book and memorandum runs through about thirty years, and is full of historical events, to say nothing of what this man undertook, as a jack of all trades, and in filling important offices. He must have made nearly all the collars, repaired and built buildings, mill machinery, blacksmith, wheelwright, mason, cow, and horse doctor, etc. He was an honest and just man. He died since our remembrance, at an advanced age. His height was full six feet (we should judge), and walked very erect. Had a long queue that reached half way down his back.

Till within sixty years the sexton chosen must be a carpenter, at least enough to make a coffin, for which and digging the grave and attending the funeral, he received a fee of five dollars.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

CHARLES L. FLINT.

Charles Louis Flint, born in Middleton on the 8th of May 1824, was the second son of Jeremiah and Mary (Howard) Flint. His father was a farmer, and occupied a part of the estate that had been the ancestral inheritance for several generations.

The first American ancestor of this branch of the Flint family, Thomas Flint, is reported to have come from Wales about the year 1640, and to have settled soon after in what was then known as Salem village, now called Peabody. The farm he then acquired by purchase was held till recently by one of his lineal descendants. Charles L. is of the seventh generation by direct descent from this agricultural colonist.

Like most farmers' sons, his early years were spent on the farm and in the district school, and were, of course, quite uneventful, given to acquiring the first rudiments of an education, and to the innumerable chores and lighter kinds of farm work which usually



fall to the lot of country boys. These occupations, though often irksome and gladly shunned as distasteful by most boys on the farm, really constitute by far the best foundation for the practical education of life. The influences of the farm are healthful, mentally, morally and physically. Other things being equal, that is with equal natural gifts, equal advantages for education, and equal opportunities for advancement and mental discipline, the boy on the farm will in the long run come out ahead of the boy in the city.

At the age of twelve, when scarcely able to realize the loss, came the great misfortune of his life—the death of a devoted mother. This led to some change in the family, and at the age of fourteen he went to live with an uncle, who was a large farmer, in the town of Norway, Oxford County, in Maine. There too, he enjoyed a few weeks of schooling in the winter, and for the rest of the year worked diligently on the farm. The experience then acquired enabled him to speak and write with clearness and intelligence on the practical as well as the scientific elements of agriculture in subsequent years of public and official toil.

Among the few judicious friends with whom he there came in contact, and who inspired him with a desire to obtain a liberal education, was an excellent teacher, who had been unable to realize his own wishes in that direction, and by his advice, at the age of seventeen, young Flint repaired to Phillips Academy at Andover, a town adjoining his native town of Middleton, to prepare for college. Here, almost unaided, and in the midst of many obstacles arising from the want of means, and the necessity of relying wholly upon his own resources, he fitted for college in little over three years, and entered Harvard in 1845. It required a brave heart, a clear brain, a strong will and a high hope and trust in the future, with a stubborn determination to enter upon the activities of life with all the advantages of a thorough intellectual training, to lead a young man wholly dependent upon his own energy to enter upon a long and expensive course of education like that at Harvard College, but with native vigor, self-reliance and indomitable persistence, obstacles are apt to vanish as we approach them, and it is a question whether the very effort required to triumph over them does not result in a firmer, more compact and more complete manhood. "Where there's a will there's a way," and the energy that finds it has much to do in moulding the character, and gives increasing self-confidence to meet and overcome future difficulties which lie in the way of success in life. A busy brain can devise many ways to meet emergencies, and to work one's way through college, though hard and unpleasant enough at times, is not without its compensations. By writing for the press, by utilizing the vacations in framing essays, stories, poems, anything that the reading public was willing to pay for, the object was accomplished and he graduated, not without honor and free from debt, in 1849.

In 1850 Mr. Flint entered the Dane Law School at Cambridge, and spent two years there in preparing for the profession of the law. Previous to this time he had competed for the Bowdoin prize of forty dollars for the best dissertation, open to the senior class in college, and had won it triumphantly against the strongest competition in his class, the subject assigned being "The Different Representations of the Character of Socrates, by Plato, Xenophon and Aristophanes." This essay, prepared under difficulties, gained for the earnest student the highest commendations from a wide circle of friends.

About the same time in his senior year in college, he had competed for the Boylston prize in declamation, and in this effort had come off second best, receiving a second prize. While connected with the Law School he also competed for the post-graduate prize of fifty dollars for the best essay upon the "Representative System at different Times and in different Countries," and won it.

At the end of two years in the Law School, a part of which time he was connected as computer with the American Nautical Almanac office, then located at Cambridge, under the superintendence of Commodore afterwards Rear Admiral Charles Henry Davis, he entered the office of a lawyer in New York City, studied the New York code of practice, and was admitted to the New York bar on examination in October, 1852.

The Massachusetts State Board of Agriculture was organized as a department of State government by the Legislature of 1852. It was designed as a representative body, but ultimately connected with the civil government, having the Governor, the Lieutenant Governor and the Secretary of the Commonwealth as members *ex officio*, three members to be appointed by the Executive for the purpose of bringing, so far as possible, a scientific element into the Board, and one delegate elected by each of the County Agricultural Societies, each member, when elected, to hold his office for three years. Since the original organization of the Board, the members *ex officio* have been increased by the addition of the president of the Massachusetts Agricultural College, and the State Inspector of Fertilizers, both which positions were created subsequently to the establishment of the State Board of Agriculture.

After the organization of the Board, the first effort was to secure the services of a competent secretary. The position was thought to be of great importance as the character, reputation and usefulness of the department would depend very largely upon its executive officer.

Mr. Flint had previously become somewhat identified with agriculture, and had gained some reputation from having written for and received two prizes for "Essays from the Essex County Agricultural Society," a diploma and a silver medal from the New York State Agricultural Society, etc., and the attention of



the Board was thus naturally turned to him. A member of the Board having written to ask for his opinion as to what the duties of such a position ought to be, he replied at considerable length, without having the slightest idea that he had been thought of as a candidate. He was asked, soon after, to become a candidate, when he promptly and positively declined, on the ground that it would involve a complete and radical change of his plan for life, and that his education had not been designed as a preparation for such a life's work as its acceptance would involve, and that his prospects in his position were too flattering to be given up for any salaried position. These objections were finally overcome by the committee appointed to consider and report upon a candidate, and after much persuasion and a full consultation of many judicious friends, he finally accepted the responsibility, and entered upon the performance of his duties as secretary on the 14th of February, 1853, spending the first few months, however, in the laboratory of the Sheffield Scientific School at New Haven, Conn.

Agricultural science and literature were then, as they always had been, in comparative neglect. Few agricultural works had been published in this country at that time, and most of those were reprints of English works, with little pretension to finish or beauty of style. The literature of the farm was highly discreditable as compared with what it is at the present time, and as compared with what it was in other departments of labor and of thought, and Mr. Flint determined to bring both the science and the literature of the subject into due prominence.

To accomplish this he planned a series of consecutive reports, with some special subject to be developed in each, and the scheme was carried out with only such modifications as were necessary to keep the reports within proper limits.

The fourth Report, for example, contained a practical treatise upon "Grasses and Forage Plants," which was subsequently made the basis of a separate work, which has passed through several editions, and had a wide distribution throughout the country. Hon. P. A. Chadbourne, President of the Massachusetts Agricultural College, said of it: "Mr. Flint's treatise embodies the most practical and scientific information on the history, culture and nutritive value of the grasses and the grains. His style of writing is plain, simple, forcible and judiciously adapted to the ends he has in view. The large number of illustrations of the different species of grasses are drawn with great care and accuracy, and greatly facilitate the study and identification of unknown specimens." A revised edition of the work appeared in 1887.

His next publication was a work of over 450 pages on "Milk Cows and Dairy Farming," which also passed through many editions and received the most intelligent praise for its practical and scientific value. At the request of the State Board of Agriculture he, with George B. Emerson, prepared a "Manual of Ag-

riculture for the use of Schools and Colleges," each writing one-half of the work. This has also passed through several editions.

In 1859, pursuant to a Resolve of the Legislature, he issued a new edition of Dr. Harris's admirable treatise on "Insects Injurious to Vegetation," with very numerous additions and illustrations. Neither pains nor labor was spared to secure the nearest possible approach to perfection, and the work commanded universal admiration as the finest specimen of printing and word-engraving ever produced in this country. All the illustrations were prepared under Mr. Flint's careful supervision.

In 1878, after holding the office for twenty-five years, Mr. Flint thought it desirable to tender his resignation, and, thanking the Board for the entire cordiality, confidence and unanimity with which the members had always co-operated with him, he did so. The resignation was referred to a committee consisting of Hon. P. A. Chadbourne, president of Williams College; Hon. William S. Clark, president of the Massachusetts Agricultural College; and Messrs. Moore, of Concord and Plinney, of Barnstable, and Wakefield, of Palmer; who, after full consideration, submitted the following preamble and resolution:

"WHEREAS, Hon. Charles L. Flint has presented to the Board a statement concerning his connection with the same during the past twenty-five years, and has offered his resignation as secretary:

Resolved, That the Board desires to express its high appreciation of the valuable services of Secretary Flint, and hereby earnestly requests him to withdraw his resignation and continue the good work in behalf of the agricultural interests of the commonwealth, in which he has achieved so enviable a reputation."

Hon. Marshall P. Wilder also submitted the following resolutions:

Resolved, That the thanks and gratitude of the Massachusetts State Board of Agriculture are eminently due to the Hon. Charles L. Flint for the ability and fidelity with which he has discharged the duties of secretary for the last twenty-five years in a manner alike honorable to the commonwealth and beneficial to its people.

Resolved, That we tender to Mr. Flint our personal acknowledgment for the courtesy and kindness which have ever characterized his intercourse with the Board, with the sincere desire that the remainder of his days may be as happy and prosperous as the past have been honorable and useful."

The resolutions, after a full expression of opinion, were unanimously adopted, and Mr. Flint withdrew his resignation.

In May, 1879, Mr. Flint was unanimously elected president of the Massachusetts Agricultural College at Amherst, but without relinquishing his duties as secretary of the Board. He held the office one year, during which the college was freed from a burdensome debt.

But the annual reports to the Legislature, twenty-seven of which Mr. Flint prepared, constituted an essential part of the work of the office. They were necessarily written and prepared out of regular office hours, and were chiefly the result of night-work, the constant calls at the office and the very extensive correspondence making it impracticable to do any connected literary work in office hours. Of these re-

ports Col. Marshall P. Wilder, in a History of the Progress of the State Board, said :

"These annual volumes, embracing in all an issue of more than two hundred and fifty thousand copies, have gone forth not only to the farmers of this commonwealth, but have been distributed throughout our own and foreign lands. They constitute a comprehensive library in themselves, embracing essays, reports and discussions on almost every subject in agriculture, and are eagerly sought for with every issue. These reports have greatly promoted the objects for which the Board was established, and extended its influence far and wide. No similar publication within my knowledge contains more practical and useful information for farmers. Complete sets have already become very valuable, and are more and more appreciated. By these reports young men have been stimulated to become farmers and by the example of the Board and the correspondence of its members, other States have been led to establish State Boards of Agriculture on the plan of ours."

Twelve thousand copies of these reports were published annually for many years and distributed throughout the State, while by a system of exchange with other States and countries, they have reached nearly every farm-house in New England, and found their way to almost every part of the civilized globe.

A few years ago the Chilean Government, in connection with an International Exposition held at Santiago, awarded and sent Mr. Flint a magnificent diploma and a beautiful bronze medal, in recognition of the high quality and value of his reports.

The salary attached to the office was never liberal. For the labor required and the responsibility of the position it was extremely meagre. In 1880, having had a much "louder call," Mr. Flint resigned the office to assume the presidency of the New England Mortgage Security Company, a business corporation established to loan money upon real estate securities at the west and south.

Mr. Flint was married on the 14th of February, 1857, to Ellen Elizabeth, daughter of Joseph and Charlotte (Merriam) Leland, of Grafton, Mass. His children are,—1, a daughter, Charlotte Leland, born December 1, 1858; 2, a son, Charles Louis, born March 9, 1861; 3, a second son, Edward Rawson, born September 8, 1864.

Mrs. Flint died on the 25th of September, 1875. She was a direct descendant of Edward Rawson, secretary of the colony of Massachusetts Bay from 1650 to 1686, a period of thirty-six years.

DANIEL FULLER.

Daniel Fuller, son of Col. Archelaus and Betty Dale (Putnam) Fuller, and grandson of Benjamin and Mary Fuller, great-grandson of Benjamin and Sarah (Bacon) Fuller, great-great-grandson of Thomas Fuller, who came to this country in 1638, was born November 14, 1771; died April 5, 1855. He was a man of superior natural abilities, honest, upright and conscientious in his dealings. He was a farmer and for many years a town officer, and ever manifested a lively interest in its welfare. From time to time he held every office of importance which a town can confer on a citizen.

In 1820 he was constituted and appointed to be one of the justices of the peace, within and for the county of Essex, for the term of seven years, by Gov. Brooks, by and with the advice and consent of the Council. Commission renewed by Gov. Levi Lincoln, by and with the consent of the Council in 1833. Commission renewed by Gov. Marcus Morton, by and with the advice and consent of the Council in 1840. Commission renewed by Gov. George N. Briggs, by and with the advice and consent of the Council in 1847.

In politics he had been a Whig—died a Republican. He was a firm believer in the final restoration of all mankind to holiness and happiness.

At the age of fourteen he was a student at Phillips' Academy in Andover. His opportunity for a more full development of his mental energies was lost by the sudden death of his father, who was born May 4, 1727, in that part of Salem which was incorporated as a town and called Middleton in 1728.

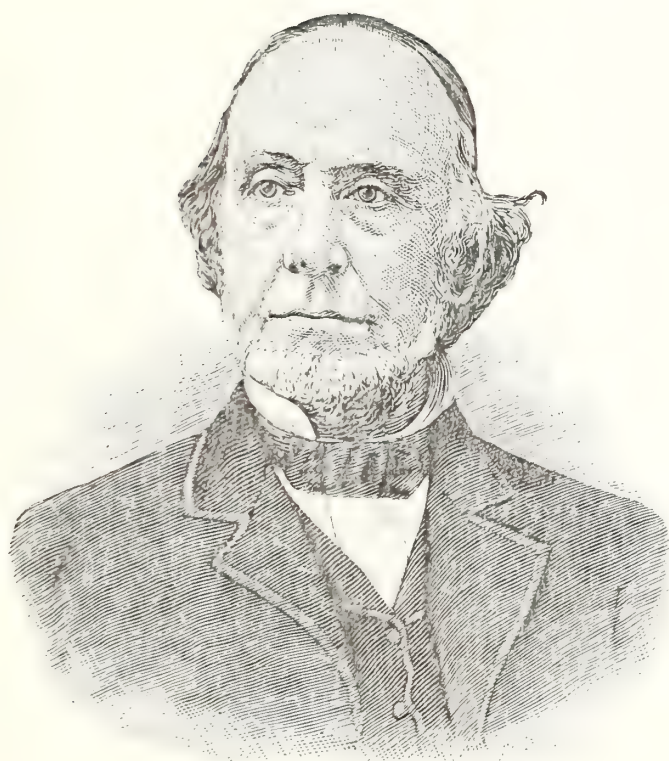
His father (Archelaus) was a member of the first, second and third Provincial Congress. From the journal of the Provincial Congress it appears that he was a member of a committee over sixty times. In the Revolutionary War he served in the capacity of colonel, and while connected with the army was attacked by a disease of which he died, and was buried at a place in Cheshire County, N. H., called Charlestown No. 4, through which at that time the road from Boston to Quebec passed. He had been much honored and was much lamented. His earthly mission was comparatively short, ending in forty-nine years, three months and twenty-one days.

Daniel Fuller married Sally Estey, daughter of John and Hannah (Flint) Estey, and granddaughter of Samuel Flint and Lydia (Andrews) Flint.

Their children were,—Archelaus, born February 12, 1799, received a medical education, settled as a physician in the town of Fairfield, Me., practiced in several towns in Kennebec County. He married Elizabeth A. Craig, of Fayette, Me. She died May 6, 1874. They had seven children, all of whom died before the close of the year 1863. None were married. He passed away October 6, 1880; was buried in Albion, Me. Daniel, born February 2, 1801; died May 19, 1891. Nancy, born March 29, 1802; married Joseph W. Batchelder, of Topsfield, Mass.; died August 6, 1842. He died May 19, 1887, in Topsfield. Sophronia, born December 19, 1803. Thomas, born November 29, 1805; was offered the command of a ship about to sail from Boston, Mass., but declined the office, and sailed in the capacity of mate for Rio Janeiro, December 4, 1830; since then his relatives have never heard from the ship nor from any who were on board; he was unmarried. George W., born October 4, 1807; removed to Galena, Illinois, and became a wholesale grocer. He married, first, Emeline Fowler, of Guilford, Ct. All their children died in infancy; married, second, Sarah W. Putnam, of Danvers. Their child, Jessie P., is totally blind. He died February 1, 1884.



Daniel Fuller



David Stiles



Jeremiah, born June 17, 1809, cultivates the homestead acres which have descended through a long line of Fullers to him and his sister, Sophronia. He married Eunice L. Pike, of Ossipee, N. H., who died June 30, 1886. Sarah P., born August 23, 1811, married Nathaniel H. Johnson, of Haverhill, Mass., October 6, 1836; died August 6, 1888. He died July 29, 1864. Samuel, born November 25, 1814; died August 16, 1848. His integrity and kindness endeared him to those who made his acquaintance; unmarried. Caroline, born May 17, 1817; died October 8, 1821. Elbridge, born August 11, 1816; died February 12, 1847; unmarried. Beloved and respected, he gave promise of a useful life.

Sisters and brother of Daniel Fuller. Betty, born February 6, 1760, married, first, Nehemiah Putnam, born October 14, 1753; died December 14, 1792. She next married Samuel Wilkins, November 13, 1796; he died September 11, 1803. She died August 25, 1838. Sarah, born February 27, 1762; married Eleazer Putnam, Esq., who died May 31, 1836; she died December 21, 1802. Mary, born January 6, 1764; married William Symonds, son of Joseph Symonds and Lucy Kimball; she died September, 1833. Benjamin, born September 13, 1767; married Abigail, daughter of Dr. Silas Merriam, of Middleton. They removed to Norway, Me., and both ended their days there, she in March, 1838; he in March, 1850. In 1794 no roads had been located, but settlers cut down trees so that they could get from one to another. They went with an ox-wagon, one yoke of oxen and two horses.

Mr. Fuller built a house twenty by thirty-eight feet,

and a story and a half high, and a barn thirty-two by fifty feet. His was the largest establishment in that place.

DAVID STILES.

David Stiles, son of the deacon of the same name, was born in Middleton, Massachusetts, June 19th, 1813. He received a common school education, and afterwards chose the profession of farrier, which he has pursued for fifty-three years in his native town. He has lectured on the subject in various places in Essex County, and once before the New England Agricultural Society in Boston. He has also written for the press on various subjects for more than fifty years, many of his articles being marked with originality of thought, and the one on "The Decay of Iron" being extensively copied. He has been especially interested in genealogical, historical and agricultural matters. In 1850 he obtained a United States patent on a hay and stalk cutter. He married Miss Rebecca Perry, of Danvers, by whom he had five children. He passed his golden wedding, April 21, 1886, and his wife died February 2, 1887. Mr. Stiles is more than ordinarily well acquainted with the history and interests of Essex County, and especially of the town of Middleton. He is a man of firm convictions, has always maintained a lively interest in public and church affairs, and is a good representative of our steady, New England country life.

In December, 1887, Mr. Stiles was appointed a Justice of the Peace by His Excellency, Oliver Ames, Governor of Massachusetts.



